

974.4

M38



*Presented to the*  
LIBRARY *of the*  
UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO  
*by*  
Ontario  
Legislative Library

38











Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation





**COLLECTIONS**

OF THE

**MASSACHUSETTS**

**HISTORICAL SOCIETY.**

**VOLUME VII.**  
OF THE SECOND SERIES.

**SECOND EDITION.**

**BOSTON :**

**PRINTED BY NATHAN HALE, CONGRESS STREET.**

**1826.**

1875

January

The first of the month was a fine day, with a light breeze from the west. The temperature was in the 40's. The wind shifted to the south in the afternoon, and the temperature rose to the 50's. The day was clear and pleasant.

February

The first of the month was a fine day, with a light breeze from the west. The temperature was in the 40's. The wind shifted to the south in the afternoon, and the temperature rose to the 50's. The day was clear and pleasant.

March

The first of the month was a fine day, with a light breeze from the west. The temperature was in the 40's. The wind shifted to the south in the afternoon, and the temperature rose to the 50's. The day was clear and pleasant.

April

The first of the month was a fine day, with a light breeze from the west. The temperature was in the 40's. The wind shifted to the south in the afternoon, and the temperature rose to the 50's. The day was clear and pleasant.

May

The first of the month was a fine day, with a light breeze from the west. The temperature was in the 40's. The wind shifted to the south in the afternoon, and the temperature rose to the 50's. The day was clear and pleasant.

June

The first of the month was a fine day, with a light breeze from the west. The temperature was in the 40's. The wind shifted to the south in the afternoon, and the temperature rose to the 50's. The day was clear and pleasant.

July

The first of the month was a fine day, with a light breeze from the west. The temperature was in the 40's. The wind shifted to the south in the afternoon, and the temperature rose to the 50's. The day was clear and pleasant.



# COLLECTIONS, &c.

---

## WONDER-WORKING PROVIDENCE OF SIONS SAVIOUR.

*Being a Relation of the first Planting in New England, in the Yeare  
1628.*

[Continued from p. 51 of the fourth volume, second series.]

---

CHAP. VII. Of the first Synod holden in New England, whereby the Lord in his mercy did more plainly discover his ancient truths, and confute those cursed errors that ordinarily dogg the reforming Churches of Christ.

THE Lord Christ deeming it most expedient for his people to adde some farther help to assist them in cutting downe those cursed errors (that were the next dangerous difficulty they were to meet with) sends in the Reverend and bright shining light Mr. Davenport, and the cheerfull, grave, and gracious soldier of his, Mr. Allen, as also Mr. Thompson, Mr. Browne, Mr. Fish, with divers other of the faithfull servants of Christ, the much honoured Mr. Eaton and Mr. Hopkins: and now the time being come, the Synod sate at Cambridge, where was present about 25. Reverend and godly Ministers of Christ, besides many other graciously-eminent servants of his. A Catalogue of the severall Errors scattered about the Countrey was there produced, to the number of 80. and liberty given to any man to dispute *pro* or *con*, and none to be charged to be of that opinion he disputed for, unlesse he should declare himself so to be. The Weapons these Souldiers of Christ warred with, was the Sword

of the Spirit, even the Word of God, together with earnest prayer to the God of all Truth, that he would open his truths unto them. The clearing of the true sense and meaning of any place of Scripture, it was done by Scripture, for they so discerned by the grace of God that was given them, that the whole Scripture must be attended unto. Foure sorts of persons I could with a good will have paid their passage out, and home againe to England, that they might have been present at this Synod, so that they would have reported the truth of all the passages thereof to their own Colledges at their return. The first is the Prelates, who both in Theorie and Practice might have made their owne Eyes Judges in the case, Whether would prevaile most, (to the suppressing of Error, and advancing of Unity in the true worship of God) either their commanding power backt with the subordinate sword of Princes, or the Word of God cleered up by the faithfull labour and indefatigable pains of the sincere servants of the Lord Christ, and mightily declared through the demonstration of his blessed Spirit. This well waighed, may (through the Lords blessing) stop the yet running fancie in the brains of many, that their Lordly power is the onely means of suppressing Error.

Secondly, the Godly and Reverend Presbyterian Party, who, had they made their eye-witnessess of this worke, they had assuredly saved themselves much labour which I dare presume they would have spent worthily otherwayes, then in writing so many books to prove the Congregationall or Independent Churches to be the sluice, through which so many flouds of Error flow in: nay, my deare and reverend brethren, might not so much work of yours in writing, and ours in answering, have been a meanes to have stopt the height of this overflowing floud? and through the Lords assisting have settled Peace and Truth in a great measure throughout the three Nations.

Thirdly, those who with their new stratagems have brought in so much old error; for although they had a party here, yet verily they durst not bring their New Light to the Old Word, for fear it would prove but Old Darknesse, (as indeed they doe.) But here might they



have seene the Ministers of Christ (who were so experienced in the Scripture, that some of them could tell you the place, both Chapter and Verse, of most sentences of Scripture could be named unto them) with Scriptures light, cleering up the truths of Christ clouded by any of these Errors and Heresies, as had not been done for many Ages before : and verily this great work of Christ must not be lightly over-past, the Author of this History \*pauseth not for the shrewd censures of men : nor, can it be any matter of disparagement to the reverend and highly honoured in Christ, remaining in England, that their fellow brethren have done so worthily here ? it is well knowne to all our English Nation, that the most able-preaching Ministers of Christ were most pursued by the lording Clergy, and those that have spent all their dayes, even from a child, in searching the Scriptures, the Lord Christ preparing them by his blessed spirit for this very work. Besides, their continued practice in studying and preaching the wayes of truth ; and lastly, their meeting with the opposition of so many crafty, close couched errors, whose first foundation was laid cheke by joule with the most glorious, heavenly and blessed truths, to dazle the eyes of the beholders, and strike terrour into the hearts of those should lift up their hands against them, for fear they should misse them, and hit their stroke upon the blessed truth : and also to bring up a slanderous and evil report on all the able Orthodox Ministers of Christ that withstand them, perswading men they withstand the holy, heavenly, and blessed truth, which they have lodged there, which this Synod did with strong and undeniable arguments fetch from Scripture, to overthrow and pluck up by the roots, all those Errors, which you have heard mentioned in the former Book, the which they divided for the more full answering of them. Among all those valiant Champions of the Truth whom you have heard named, to some six, some five, some foure, &c. it had assuredly been worth the work to have related the particular manner of putting to the sword every one of them : but besides the length of the discourse, there must have been a more able Penman : but however they were so

put to death, that they never have stood up in a living manner among us since, but sometimes like Wizards to peepe and mutter out of ground, fit for such people to resort unto, as will goe from the living to the dead. But blessed be the Lord Christ, who girded his people with strength against this day of battaile, and caused the Heavens to cleere up againe in New-England, after these foggy dayes.

The fourth and last sort of persons, whose presence I could most of all the other three former have desired, was, those whose disease lay as chiefly in despising all Physitions, and that upon this ground for one, because some for filthy lucre sake have nourisht Diseases rather than cured them. Many pamphlets have come from our Countrey-men of late, to this purpose, namely, scurrilously to deride all kind of Scholarship, Presbytery, and Synods. Experience hath taught Gods people here, that such are troubled with some sinfull opinion of their owne, that they would not have touched; but had they been at this Synod, they must, per force, have learned better language, or their speech and their knowledge would fall foule one of the other; here might they have beheld the humility of the most learned of these servants of Christ, condemning the high conceitednesse of their ignorance, and then also the framing of arguments in a Schollar-like way, did (the Lord assisting) cleare up the truths of Christ more to the meanest capacity in one hour, then could be clouded again in seaven yeare by the new notion of any such as boast so much of their unlettered knowledge, diversity of languages, although a correcting hand of God upon the whole world, when they joyned together in that proud Edifice: yet now is it blest of God, to retaine the purity of the Scriptures; if any man should goe about to corrupt them in one language, they should remain pure in another; and assuredly, the Lord intending to have the wayes of the Gospel of Christ to be made more manifest at this time, then formerly, not by tradition of our forefathers, or by mans reason, but by the revealed will of God in the holy Scripture, did accordingly prepare Instruments for this work, earthen vessels, men subject to



like infirmities with ourselves ; sorry men, and carrying about with them a body of sinne and death, men subject to erre ; yet these did the Lord Christ cause to be train'd up in Learning, and tutor'd at the Universities, and that very young, some of them, as the reverend Mr. John \*Cotten at 13. yeares of age. The mighty power of God sanctified and ordained them for this work, and made them a defenced city, an iron pillar, a wall of brass, against all the opposers of his truth ; and now coupled them together in this Synod, to draw in Christs yoke, and warre with the weapons he had furnished them withall, and cause the blessed truths of Christ to shine forth in their splendour and glory, farre more after the dispersing of this smoak, which of a long time hath filled the Temple and hindered the entring in of those great number of Converts, which shall flow in at the fall of all antichristian Errors ; and verily as the Lord Christ had called forth this little handfull to be a model of his glorious work, intended throughout the whole world, so chiefly in this suppressing of Errours, Sects and Heresies, by the blessed word of his truth, causing his servants in this Synod, mutually to agree ; and by his gracious providence, break in pieces a contrived plot of some, who, by mis-reports, insinuating jealousies, and crafty carriage of matters to the wrong mark, with a writing of thrice twenty strong, would have drawne away one of the valiant Souldiers of Christ from this worthy worke, who both then, and since, hath been very helpfull to cast downe many a strong fort erected by the Sectaries ; but the Lord Christ would not suffer this blow to be given, intending all people (by way of restitution) for their slanderous reports, cast upon his New England Churches (as being the inlet to Errours) shall honour them with this victorious conquest, given them by Christ herein ; yet willing they would, their brethren in England might win the prize by out-stripping them, more abundantly in length, bredth and height, which the same God is able to performe, that hath been thus abundantly good to us.

About this time the Churches of Christ began to be diligent in their duty, and the civil government in looking after such as were like to disturb the peace of this

new erected government ; some persons being so hot headed for maintaining of these sinfull opinions, that they feared breach of peace, even among the Members of the superiour Court, but the Lord blessing them with agreement to prevent the wofull effects of civill broyles ; those in place of government caused certain persons to be disarmed in the severall Townes, as in the Towne of Boston, to the number of 58. in the Towne of Salem 6. in the Towne of Newbery 3. in the Towne of Roxbury 5. in the Towne of Ipswitch 2. and Charles Towne 2. others there were, that through the help of the faithfull servants of Christ, came to see how they had been misled, and by the power of Christ in his Word, returned again with an acknowledgement of their sinne ; but others there were, who remained obstinate, to the disturbing of the civill power, and were banished, of whom you shall heare farther hereafter. Some of the Churches of Christ being more indulgent, waited long ere they fell upon the work : and here you must tak notice, that the Synod, Civil Government, and the Churches of Christ, kept their proper place, each moving in their own sphear, and acting by their own light, or rather by the revelation of Jesus Christ, witnessed by his Word and Spirit, yet not refusing the help of each other (as some would willingly have it) some of the Churches prosecuting the Rule of Christ against their hereticall Members, were forced to proceed to excommunication of them, who when they saw whereto it would come, they would have prevented it with lying, but the Lord discovered it ; and so they were justly separated from the Churches of Christ for lying : which being done, they fell to their old trade again.

CHAP. VIII.—Of the planting of the fourth Colonie of New-Englands godly Government, called New-Haven.

THE Lord Christ having now in his great mercy taken out of the way these mountains that seemed in the eye of Man to block up his Churches further proceedings, they had now leisure to welcome the living stones that the Lord was pleased to adde unto this building, and with thankfull acknowledgmt to give him of his owne for



his mercyes multitude, whose was the work in planting, not onely more Churches, but another Colony also; for the honoured Mr. Eaton being accompanied with many worthy persons of note, whom the Lord had furnished with store of substance for this wilderness-work, although they would willingly have made their abode under the government of the Mattachusetts; yet could they find no place upon the Sea-coasts for their settling: the Lord intending to enlarge his peoples border, caused them, after much search, to take up a place somewhat more southwardly, neare the shalles of Cape cod, where they had very flatt water; yet being entred in, they found a commodious harbour for shipping, and a fit place to erect a Towne, which they built in very little time, with very faire houses, and compleat streets; but in a little time they overstockt it with \*Chattell, although many of them did follow merchandizing, and Maritime affairs, but their remotenesse from the Mattachusetts Bay, where the chiefe traffique lay, hindered them much. Here did these godly and sincere servants of Christ, according to the rule of the Word, gather into Church Estate, and called to the office of a Pastor the reverend, judicious and godly Mr. John Davenport, of whom the author is bold to say as followeth:

When Men and Devils' gainst Christs flock conspire,

For them prepar'd a deadly trapping net;

Then Christ to make all men his work admire,

Davenport he doth thee from thy country fet

To sit in Synod, and his folk assist:

The filthy vomit of Hels Dragon deepe

In earths womb drawn, blest they this poyson mist,

And blest the meanes doth us from error keep.

Thy grave advice and arguments of strength

Did much prevaile, the Erronist confound.

Well hast thou warr'd, Christ drawes thy dayes in length

That thou in learn'd experience maist abound:

What though thou leave a city stor'd with pleasure,

Spend thy prime dayes in heathen desart land,

Thy joy's in Christ and not in earthly treasure,

Davenport rejoice, Christs Kingdome is at hand;

Didst ever deem to see such glorious dayes?

Though thou decrease with age and earths content,

\* cattle?

Thou live'st in Christ, needs then must thy joy raise ;  
His Kingdome's thine, and that can ne'r be spent.

This Church and Town soon procur'd some Sisters to take part with her, and among them they erected a godly and peaceable Government, and called their frontier towne New-haven, of which the Government is denominated, being inhabited by many men eminent in gifts for the populating thereof, and managing of affaires both by Sea and Land ; they have had some shipping built there, but by the sad losse of Mr. Lambertons ship and goods also, they were much disheartened, but the much honoured Mr. Eaton remaines with them to this very day.

Thou noble thus, Theophilus, before great Kings to stand,  
More noble far, for Christ his war thou leav'st thy native land ;  
With thy rich store thou cam'st on shore Christs churches to assist ;  
What if it wast ? thou purchast hast that Pearl that most have mist,  
Nay rather he hath purchast thee, and whatsoever thou hast,  
With graces store to govern o're his people, he thee plac't.  
Our State affaires thy will repaires, assistant thou hast bin  
Firm league to make, for Gospels sake, four Colonyes within ;  
With Sweades, French, Dutch, and Indians much, Gods peoples peace  
this bred,  
Then Eaton aye, remember may the Child that's yet unfed.

This government of New-haven, although the younger Sister of the foure yet was she as beautifull as any of this broode of travellers, & most minding the end of her coming hither, to keep close to the rule of Christ both in Doctrine and Discipline ; and it were to be wished her elder Sister would follow her example, to nurture up all her children accordingly : here is not to be forgotten the honoured Mr. Hopkins, who came over about this time a man of zeale and courage for the truths of Christ, assisting this blessed work, both in person and estate ; for the which the Author cannot forget him, being oft in commission for the good of all the united Colonyes.

Hopkins thou must, although weak dust, for this great work prepare,  
Through Ocean large Christ gives thee charge to govern his with care ;  
What earthen man, in thy short span throughout the world to run  
From East to West at Christs behest, thy worthy work is done :  
Unworthy thou acknowledge now, not unto thee at all,  
But to his name be lasting fame, thou to his work doth call.

CHAP. IX.—Of the planting the fourteenth Church of Christ under the government of the Mattachusetts Bay, called Dedham.

THE latter end of this yeare 'twas the Towne of Dedham began, an inland Towne, scituate, about ten miles from Boston, in the County of Suffolk, well watred with many pleasant streames, abounding with Garden fruits fitly to supply the Markets of the most populous Towne, whose coyne and commodities allures the Inhabitants of this Towne to make many a long walk ; they consist of about a hundred Families, being generally given to husbandry, and, through the blessing of God, are much encreased, ready to swarme and settle on the building of another Towne more to the Inland ; they gather into a Church at their first settling, for indeed, as this was their chiefe errand, so was it the first thing they ordinarily minded ; to pitch their Tabernacles neare the Lords Tent : To this end they called to the office of a Pastor, the reverend, humble, and heavenly-minded, Mr. John Allen, a man of a very courteous behaviour, full of sweet Christian love towards all, and with much meeknesse of spirit, contending earnestly for the faith and peace of Christs Churches.

All you so slite Christs sanctifying grace,  
 As legall workes, what Gospel worke can be  
 But sinne cast out, and spirits work in place,  
 They justified that Christ thus reigning see :  
 Allen, thou art by Christs free spirit led  
 To warre for him in wilderness awhile ;  
 What, doe for Christ, \*I man thou art in's stead,  
 Sent to beseech, in's Vineyard thou must toyle.  
 John Allen joy, thou sinfull dust art taken  
 To spend thy days in exile, so remote,  
 Christs Church to build, of him that's ne'er forsaken,  
 Nor thou, for now his truths thou must promote.  
 He guides thy tongue, thy paper, pen and hands,  
 Thy heart's swift motion, and affections choice ;  
 Needs thou thus flead, must doe what he commands,  
 And cry aloud when he lifts up thy voice :  
 Seven yeares compleat twice told, thy work hath bin,  
 To feed Christs flock, in desert land them keep,  
 Both thou and they each day are kept by him ;  
 Safe maist thou watch, being watcht by him ne'er sleeps.

Mr. Allen a  
 great help  
 against the  
 Errors of  
 the time.

\* aye?

† led?



This Church of Christ hath in its bosome neere about 70. souls joyned in Covenant together, and being well seasoned with this savoury salt, have continued in much love and unity from their first foundation, hitherto translating the close, clouded woods into goodly corn-fields, and adding much comfort to the lonesome travellers, in their solitary journey to \*Canectico, by eying the habitation of Gods people in their way, ready to administer refreshing to the weary.

CHAP. X.—Of the planting of the fifteenth Church of Christ at the Towne of †Waymoth.

THE Towne and Church of Christ at †Waymoth had come in among the other Townes before this, as being an elder Sister, but onely for her somewhat more than ordinary instability; it is battered with the brinish billows on the East; Rocks and Swamps to the Southwest, makes it delightfull to the nimble tripping Deere, as the plowable places of Medow land is to the Inhabitants. This Towne was first founded by some persons that were not so forward to promote the Ordinances of Christ, as many others have been: they desired the reverend Minister of Christ Mr. †Gennors, to be helpfull in preaching the Word unto them; who after some little space of time, not liking the place, repaired to the Eastern English: but the people of this place, after his departure, being gathered into a Church, they called to office the reverend and godly Mr. Newman; but many of them unwilling to continue in this Towne, as supposing they had found a fitter place for habitation, removed into the next Government, carrying with them their Pastor; by which means, the people that were left behinde, were now destitute, and having some godly Christians among them, who much desired the sincere milk of the Word, that they might grow thereby: upon diligent use of meanes they found out a young man able gifted for the work, brought up with the reverend and judicious Mr. §Chancie, called Mr. Thomas Thatcher.

\* Connecticut.

† Weymouth.

‡ Probably the same person, whose letter from Saco, 26 April, 1641, to Governor Winthrop, signed Th. Jenner, is given in Hutchinson's Collection of Papers, p. 111. Ed.

§ Chauncey.

Yet againe, after some few yeares, for want of sufficient maintenance, with mutuall consent they parted with him, and are forced to borrow help of their Neighbours, wherein all of them \*to the Author is bold to say as followeth :

Oh people, reason swayes mans actions here,  
 You sanctified, o're these long seas doth look,  
 With heavenly things your earthly toyle to cheere ;  
 Will lose the end for which this toyle you tooke.  
 Christ comes in's Word, let their bright feet abide  
 Your Towne, among whose grace and gifts excell  
 In preaching Christ, it's he your hearts hath try'd,  
 They want no store that all for him doe sell.  
 Gennors, dost love thy Christ ? I hope he's deare  
 Belov'd of thee, he honour'd would thee have  
 To feed his flock, while thou remainest here ;  
 With's Word of truth thy soule and others save.  
 With little flock doth Newman pack away ;  
 The righteous lips sure might a many feed ;  
 Remov'st for gain ? its most where most men stay,  
 Men part for land, why land least helps at need.  
 Thatcher, what mean'st to leave thy little flock ?  
 Sure their increase might thee much profit bring :  
 What, leave Christs Church ? Its founded on a rock ;  
 If rock not left, their ebb may suddain spring ;  
 Pastor and People, have you both forgot  
 What parting Paul and Christs deare people had ?  
 Their loves melt teares, it's ve'mently so hot,  
 His heart-strings break to see his folk so sad.

This yeare came over, besides the former, for the furthering of this blessed work of Christ, Mr. William Thompson, Mr. Edm: Browne, and Mr. David Frisk, who were called to office in severall Churches, as you shall after hear. And now to end this yeare, that abounded in the wonder-working Providence of Christ, for his Churches, in the exaltation of his truths, that all may take notice the Lord cast in by the by, as it were, a very fruitfull crop, insomuch that from this day forward, their increase was every year more and more, till the Country came to feed its owne Inhabitants ; and the people who formerly were somewhat pinchd with hunger, eat bread to the full, having not onely for their necessity but also for their conveniency and delight.

\* Perhaps this preposition should stand before *all*. Ed.

CHAP. XI.—Of the increase of the people of Christ. Printing brought over, and the sixteenth Church of Christ planted at \*Rowly.

FOR the yeare 1638. John Winthroe Esq. was chosen Governour, and Tho: Dudly Esq. Deputy Governour; the number of Freemen added were about 130. The peace of this little Common-wealth being now in great measure settled, by the Lords mercy, in overthrowing the Indians, and banishing of certaine turbulent spirits, The Churches of Christ were much edified in their holy faith by their indefatigable pains of their Ministers, in their weekly Lectures extraordinary, as well as by their Sabbath Assemblies, and continuall visiting of their people from house to house, endeavouring to heale the hurts these false deceivers had made, with double diligence showing downe the sweet dewes of the blessed Gospel of Jesus Christ, to the converting of many a poor soul, and indeed, now were the glorious days of New England; the Churches of Christ increase dayly, and his eminent Embassadours resort unto them from our native Country, which as then lay under the tyranny of the Monarchall Archprelates, which caused the servants of Christ to wander from their home. This yeare the reverend and judicious Mr. Jos. Glover undertook this long voyage, being able both in person and estate for the work he provided, for further compleating the Colonies in Church and Common-wealth-work, a Printer, which hath been very usefull in many respects; the Lord seeing it meet that this reverend and holy servant of his should fall short of the shores of New England: but yet at this time he brought over the zealous affected and judicious servant of his, Master Ezekiel Rogers, who with a holy and humble people, made his progress to the North-Eastward, and erected a Towne about 6. miles from Ipswich, called \*Rowly, where wanting room, they purchased some addition of the Town of Newbery; yet had they a large length of land, onely, for the neere conveniency to the Towne of Ipswich, by the which meanes they partake of the continued Lectures of either Towne: these people being very industrious every way, soone built many houses, to the

\* Rowley.



number of about threescore families, and were the first people that set upon making of Cloth in this Western World; for which end they built a fulling mill, and caused their little ones to be very diligent in spinning cotten wooll, many of them having been clothiers in England, till their zeale to promote the Gospel of Christ caused them to wander; and therefore they were no lesse industrious, in gathering into Church-society, there being scarce a man among them, but such as were meet to be living stones in this building, according to the judgement of man; they called to the office of a Pastor this holy man of God, Mr. Ezekiel Rogers, of whom this may be said:

Christ for this work Rogers doth riches give,  
 Rich graces fit his people for to feed,  
 Wealth to supply his wants whilst here he live,  
 Free thou receiv'st to serve his peoples need.  
 England may mourne they thee no longer keep,  
 English rejoice, Christ doth such worthyes raise,  
 His Gospel preach, unfold his mysteries deep;  
 Weak dust made strong sets forth his makers praise:  
 With fervent zeal and courage thou hast fought  
 'Gainst that transformed Dragon and his bands,  
 Snatcht forth the burning thou poore soules hast caught,  
 And freed thy flock from wolves devouring hands.  
 Ezekiel mourn not, thou art severed farre,  
 From thy deare Country, to a desart land;  
 Christ call'd hath thee unto this worthy warre;  
 By him o'recome, he holds thy Crowne in's hand.

For the further assisting of this tender flock of Christ, the reverend Mr. John Miller did abide among them for some space of time, preaching the Word of God unto them also, till it pleased the Lord to call him to be Pastor of the Church of Christ at Yarmouth, in Plimoth \*patten, where he remaineth at this very day.

With courage bold Miller through Seas doth venter,  
 To toyle it out in this great Western wast,  
 Thy stature low one object high doth center;  
 Higher then Heaven thy faith on Christ is plac't:  
 Allarum thou with silver trumpet sound,  
 And tell the world Christs Armyes are at hand,  
 With Scripture-truths thou Errors dost confound,  
 And overthrow all Antichristian bands:

It matters not for th'worlds high reputation ;  
 The World must fall and Christ alone must stand ;  
 Thy Crown's prepar'd in him, then keep thy station,  
 Joy that Christs Kingdome is so neare at hand.

CHAP. XII.—Of the great Earthquake in New England, and of the wo-  
 full end of some erronious persons, with the first foundation of Har-  
 verd Colledge.

THIS yeare, the first day of the Fourth Month, about two of the clock in the after-noone, the Lord caus'd a great and terrible Earth-quake, which was generall through-out all the English Plantations ; the motion of the Earth was such, that it caused divers men (that had never knowne an Earth-quake before) being at worke in the Fields, to cast downe their working-tooles, and run with gastly terrified lookes, to the next company they could meet withall ; it came from the Westerne and uninhabited parts of this Wildernesse, and went the direct course this brood of Travellers came, the Ministers of Christ many of them could say at that very time (not from any other Revelation, but what the word holds forth) that if the Churches of New England were Gods house, then suddenly there would follow great alterations in the Kingdomes of Europe.

This yeare the civill government proceeded to censure the residue of those sinfull erroneous persons, who raised much commotion in this little Common-wealth ; who being banished, resorted to a place more Southward, some of them sitting down at a place called Providence, others betooke them to an Island about 16. miles distant from the former, called Rode Island, where having Elbow-roome enough, none of the Ministers of Christ, nor any other to interrupt their false and deceivable Doctrines, they hamper'd themselves fouly with their owne line, and soone shewed the depthlesse ditches that blinde guides lead into ; many among them being much to be pittied, who were drawne from the truth by the bewitching tongues of some of them, being very ignorant and easily perverted : and although the people were not many in all, yet were they very diverse in their opinions, and

glad where they could gaine most Disciples to heare them; some were for every day to be a Sabbath, and therefore kept not any Sabbath-day at all; others were some for one thing, some for another; and therefore had their severall meetings, making many a goodly piece of Preachment; among whom there were some of the female sexe (who deeming the Apostle Paul to be too strict in not permitting a roome to preach in the publique Congregation) taught, notwithstanding they having their call to this office, from an ardent desire of being famous, especially the grand Mistresse of them all, who ordinarily prated every Sabbath day, till others, who thirsted after honour in the same way with her selfe, drew away her Auditors, and then she withdrew her self, her husband, and her family also, to a more remote place; and assuredly, although the Lord be secret in all the dispensation of his providences, whether in judgement or mercy, yet much may be learn'd from all, as sometimes pointing with the finger to the lesson; as here these persons withdrawing from the Churches of Christ (wherein he walketh, and is to be found in his blessed Ordinances) to a first and second place, where they came to a very sad end; for thus it came to passe in the latter place, The Indians in those parts forewarned them of making their abode there; yet this could be no warning to them, but still they continued, being amongst a multitude of Indians, boasted they were become all one Indian: and indeed, this woman who had the chiefe rule of all the roast, being very bold in her strange Revelations and mis-applications, tells them, though all nations and people were cut off round about them, yet should not they; till on a day certaine Indians coming to her house, discoursing with them, they wished to tie up her doggs, for they much bit the man, not mistrusting the Indians guile, did so; the which no sooner done, but they cruelly murthered her, taking one of their daughters away with them, and another of them seeking to escape is caught, as she was getting over a hedge, and they drew her back againe by the haire of the head to the stump of a tree, and there cut off her head with a hatchet; the other that dwelt by them betook.



them to boat, and fled to tell this sad newes ; the rest of their companions, who were rather hardened in their sinfull way and blasphemous opinions, than brought to any sight of their damnable Errours, as you shall after hear ; yet was not this the first loud-speaking hand of God against them ; but before this the Lord had poynted directly to their sinne by a very fearfull Monster, that another of these women brought forth, they striving to bury it in oblivion, but the Lord brought it to light, setting forth the view of their monstrous Errours in this prodigious birth. This yeare, although the estates of these pilgrim people were much wasted, yet seeing the benefit that would accrew to the Churches of Christ and Civil Government, by the Lords blessing, upon learning, they began to erect a Colledge, the Lord by his provident hand giving his approbation to the work, in sending over a faithfull and godly servant of his the reverend Mr. John \*Harverd, who joyning with the people of Christ at Charles Towne, suddainly after departed this life, and gave near a thousand pound toward this work ; wherefore the Government thought it meet to call it Harverd Colledge in remembrance of him.

If Harverd had with riches here been taken,  
 He need not then through troublous Seas have past,  
 But Christs bright glory hath thine eyes so waken,  
 Nought can content, thy soule of him must tast :  
 Oh tast and tell how sweet his Saints among,  
 Christ ravisht hath thy heart with heavenly joyes  
 To preach and pray with teares, affection strong,  
 From hearts delight in him who thee imployes.  
 Scarce hast thou had Christs Churches here in eye,  
 But thou art call'd to eye him face to face ;  
 Earths scant contents death drawes thee from, for why ?  
 Full joy thou wouldst that's onely in heavens place.

CHAP. XIII.—Of the coming over of the honoured Mr. Pelham, and the planting of the seaventeenth Church of Christ at the Towne of Hampton.

THIS yeare 1639. John Winthroe Esq.. was chosen Governour, and Thomas Dudley Esq. Deputy Governour, the number of freemen added were about 83. This yeare came over the much honoured Mr. Herbert Pel-

\* Harvard.

ham, a man of a courteous behaviour, humble, and heavenly minded.

Harbertus, hie on valiant, why lingerst thou so long ?

Christs work hath need of hasty speed, his enemies are strong :  
In wilderness Christ doth thee blesse with vertues, wife, and seed,  
To govern thou, at length didst bow to serve Christs peoples need ;  
To thine own soyle thou back dost toyle, then cease not lab'ring there,  
But still advance Christ Ordinance, and shrink no where for fear.

Much about this time began the Town of Hampton, in the County of Northfolk, to have her foundation stone laid, scituate neare the Sea-coast, not farre from the famous River of Merimeck, the great store of salt marsh did intice this people to set downe their habitations there, for as yet Cowes and Cattell of that kinde were not come to the great downfall in their price, of which they have about 450. head ; and for the form of this Towne, it is like a Flower-de-luce, two streets of houses wheeling off from the maine body thereof, the land is fertile, but filled with swamps, and some store of rocks, the people are about 60. Families ; being gathered together into Church covenant, they called to office the reverend, grave, and gracious Mr. \*Doulton, having also for some little space of time the more ancient Mr. Batchelor (of whom you have heard in the former Book) to preach unto them also : here take a short remembrance of the other.

\*Doulton doth teach perspicuously and sound,  
With wholesome truths of Christ thy flock dost feed,  
Thy honour with thy labour doth abound,  
Age crownes thy head in righteousness, proceed  
To batter downe, root up, and quite destroy  
All Heresies, and Errors, that draw back  
Unto perdition, and Christs folk annoy :  
To warre for him thou weapons dost not lack :  
Long dayes to see, that long'd-for day to come,  
Of Babels fall, and Israels quiet peace :  
Thou yet maist live of dayes so great a sum  
To see this work, let not thy warfare cease.

CHAP. XIV.—Of the planting the eighteenth Church of Christ at the Towne of †Salsbury.

FOR further perfecting this Wilderness-work ; not far from the Towne of Hampton was erected another Towne,

\* Dalton.

† Salsbury.

called Salisbury, being brought forth as Twins, sometime contending for eldership : This being seated upon the broad swift torrent of Merrimeck, a very goodly River to behold, were it not blockt up with some suddaine falls through the rocks ; over against this Towne lyeth the Towne of Newberry, on the Southern side of the River a constant Ferry being kept between ; for although the River be about half a mile broad, yet, by reason of an Island that lies in the midst thereof, it is the better passed in troublesom weather : the people of this Towne have of late, placed their dwellings so much distanced the one from the other, that they are like to divide into two Churches ; the scituation of this Towne is very pleasant, were the Rivers Navigable farre up, the branches thereof abound in faire and goodly medowes with good store of stately Timber upon the uplands in many places, this Towne is full as fruitfull in her Land, \*Chattel and Inhabitants, as her Sister Hampton ; the people joyned in Church-relation or brotherhood, nere about the time the other did, and have desired and obtained the reverend and graciously godly, M. Thomas Woster to be their Pastor.

With mickle labour and distressed wants,  
 Woster, thou hast in desart's depth remain'd  
 Thy chiefest dayes, Christs Gospel there to plant,  
 And water well, such toyle shall yield great gaine.  
 Oh happy day ! may Woster say, that I  
 Was singled out for this great work in hand ;  
 Christ by distresse doth Gold for's Temple try :  
 Thrice blest are they may in his Presence stand,  
 But more, thou art by him reserved yet,  
 To see on earth Christ's Kingdom's exaltation :  
 More yet, thou art by him prepared fit  
 To help it on, among our English Nation.

CHAP. XV.—Of further supply for the Church of Christ at Waterton. And a sad accident fell out in Boston Towne.

The Lord intending to strengthen his poore Churches here, and after the overthrow of these damnable Errors, to trample Satan under their feet ; he manifesteth his mindefulness of them, in sending over fresh supplies a-



gaine and againe : although weak and sory men in themselves, yet strong in the Lord, and the power of his might, the last that this yeare is to be named, is the reverend, judicious, and godly-affected Mr. John Knowles, who was desired of the Church of Christ at Waterton, to be a two-fold cord unto them, in the office of a teaching Elder, with the reverend Mr. Phillips, of whom you have heard in the former Book.

With courage bold and arguments of strength,  
 Knowles doth apply Gods word his flock unto,  
 Christ furnisht hath (to shew his bountyes length) .  
 Thee with rich gifts, that thou his work mayst do :  
 New England is too scant, for thy desire  
 Inkindled is, Christs truths abroad to spread,  
 Virginia may his grace to them admire,  
 That thee through Seas for their instruction led ;  
 Thy labours Knowles are great, far greater hee,  
 Not onely thee, but all his valiant made,  
 Forth sinful dust, his Saints and Warriors be ;  
 He thee upheld, thy strength shall never fade.  
 John come thou forth, behold what Christ hath wrought  
 In these thy dayes, great works are yet behinde,  
 Then toyle it out till all to passe be brought,  
 Christ crowne will thee, thou then his glory minde.

To end this yeare 1639. the Lord was pleased to send a very sharp winter, and more especially in strong storms of weekly snows, with very bitter blasts : And here the Reader may take notice of the sad hand of the Lord against two persons, who were taken in a storme of snow, as they were passing from Boston to Roxbury, it being much about a mile distant, and a very plaine way, One of Roxbury sending to Boston his servant maid for a Barber-Chirurgion, to draw his tooth, they lost their way in their passage between, and were not found till many dayes after, and then the maid was found in one place, and the man in another, both of them frozen to death ; in which sad accident, this was taken into consideration by divers people, that this Barber was more then ordinary laborious to draw men to those sinfull Errors, that were formerly so frequent, and now newly overthrowne by the blessing

of the Lord, upon the endeavour of his faithfull servants with the word of truth) he having a fit opportunity, by reason of his trade, so soone as any were set downe in his chaire, he would commonly be cutting of their haire and the truth together ; notwithstanding some report better of the man, the example is for the living, the dead is judged of the Lord alone.

CHAP. XVI.—The great supply of godly Ministers for the good of his People in New England.

FOR to govern and rule this little Common-wealth, was this year chosen the valiant Champion, for the advance of Christs truth, Thomas Dudly Esq. and Richard Bellingham Esq. Deputy-Governour ; the freemen added to the former were about 192. this yeare the reverend Mr. Burr (a holy, heavenly-minded man, and able gifted to preach the Word of God) was exercised therein for some space of time, in the Church of Christ at Dorchester, where they were about calling him to the office of a teaching Elder ; but in a very little time after his coming over he departed this life, yet minde him you may in the following Meetre

Well didst thou minde thy work, which caus'd thee venter  
 (Through Ocean large) thy Christ in's Word to preach,  
 Exhorting all their faith on him to center,  
 Souls ravisht are by him in thy sweet speech,  
 Thy speech bewrayes thy heart, for heaven doth look,  
 Christ to enjoy, Burr from the earth is taken,  
 Thy words remaine, though thou hast us forsook,  
 In dust sleep sound till Christ thy body waken.

There are divers others of the faithfull Ministers of Christ that came over for to further this his work ; somewhat before this time, as the godly and reverend Mr. Rayner, who was called to office in the Church of Christ at Pli-moth, and there remaines preaching the Word instantly, with great paines and care over that flock, as also the reverend and faithfull servant of Christ Jesus, Mr. William Hook, who was for some space of time at the Church in Taunton, but now remaines called to office in the Church

of Christ at Newhaven, a man, who hath received of Christ many gracious gifts, fit for so high a calling, with very amiable and gracious speech labouring in the Lord ; and here also the Reader may minde how the Lord was pleased to reach out his large hand of bounty toward his N. England people, in supplying them abundantly with Teachers, able and powerfull to break the bread of life unto them, so long as their desires continued hot and zealous ; but after here grew a fulnesse in some, even to slight, if not loath the honey comb ; many returned for England, and the Lord was pleased to take away others by death, although very few, considering the number ; but let N. England beware of an after-clap, & provoke the Lord no longer. But seeing this yeare proved the last of the yeares of transportation of Gods people, only for enjoyment of exercising the Ordinances of Christ, and enlargement of his Kingdome (there being hopes of great good opportunity that way at home) it will be expedient onely to name some others in the Southwest parts, among the lesser Colonyes, and so passe on to the story : And first, not to forget the reverend Mr. Eaton, a man of love and peace, and yet godly zealous, he came over with those who planted the Colony of Newhaven, spending his labours in the Lord with them in Plimoth Plantation : also here is to be minded the reverend Mr. Chancie, a very able preacher, both learned and judicious ; as also the reverend, able, and pious M. Huet, who came over this year, or rather, as I suppose, the yeare before, who did spend his time and labour with a people that came over with him ; at length the greatest part of them they settled downe in the Government of Canecticoe, where they planted the Towne of Windsor, and Church of Christ there, where this gracious servant of Christ continued in his labours, till the Lord laid him in his bed of rest : somewhat before this time came over the reverend Mr. Smith, being another of that name, beside the former, he laboured in the Word and Doctrine with a people at \*Withersfield in those parts also ; Mr. Henry Whitefield, another Minister of the Gospel of Christ, of

\* Weathersfield.



reverend respect, who being returned for England, the latter of his labours, the Lord assisting, will sufficiently testify his sincerity, for the truth and labours of love in the Lord ; here may also be named the reverend Mr. Peck, Mr. Saxton, and Mr. Lenten, the residue will be spoken of in the ensuing story to those that yet remaine. Of these persons named the Author doth tender this following Meetre.

When reasons Scepter first 'gan sway your hearts,  
 Through troublous Seas, this Western world to enter  
 Among Christs Souldiers, here to act your parts ;  
 Did not Christs love on you cause him to center ?  
 All those strait lines of your inflam'd desire  
 Unto his truths, 'cause him in them you finde ;  
 From wilderness, not from his truths retire ;  
 But unto death this wonderous work you'l minde,  
 No place can claime peculiar interest in  
 Christs worship, for all nations are his own ;  
 The day's at hand down falls that man of sin,  
 And Christs pure Gospel through the world is blown ;  
 Harvest is come, bid ease and sleep adieu,  
 What, trifle time when Christ takes in his Crop ?  
 A Harvest large of Gentil and of Jew  
 (You) fil'd of Christ, let his sweet Doctrine drop.

CHAP. XVII.—Of the planting of Long-Island. And of the planting the nineteenth Church in the Mattachusetts government, called Sudbury.

THIS yeare came over divers godly and sincere servants of Christ, as I suppose, among whom came over the reverend godly M. Peirson : This people finding no place in any of the former erected Colonies to settle in, to their present content, repaired to an Island, severed from the continent of Newhaven, with about 16. miles off the salt Sea, and called Long-Island, being about 120. miles in length, and yet but narrow : here this people erected a Town, and called it South Hampton, there are many Indians on the greatest part of this Island, who at first settling of the English there, did much annoy their Cattel with the multitude of Doggs they kept, which ordinarily are young wolves brought up tame, continuing of a

very ravening nature. This people gathered into a Church, and called to office Mr. Peirson, who continued with them about 7. or 8. yeares, and then he, with the greatest number of the people, removed farther into the Island; the other part that remained invited Mr. Foor-dum, and a people that were with him, to come and joyne with them, who accordingly did, being wandered as far as the Dutch plantation, and there unsettled, although he came into the Country before them.

This yeare the Town and Church of Christ at Sudbury began to have the first foundation-stones laid, taking up her station in the Inland Country, as her elder Sister Concord had formerly done, lying farther up the same River, being furnished with great plenty of fresh marsh, but it lying very low is much indammaged with land-flouds, in-somuch that when the summer proves wet, they lose part of their hay; yet are they so sufficiently provided, that they take in Cattel of other Townes to winter: these people not neglecting the chief work, for the which they entered this wilderness, namely, to worship the Lord in the purity of his Ordinances, and according to the rule of his Word, entred into covenant with him, and one with another professedly to walk together in Church-fellowship; and according to the same rule they called to the office of a Pastor the reverend, godly, and able Minister of the Word, Mr. Edmond Brown, whose labours in the Doctrine of Christ Jesus hath hitherto abounded, wading through this wilderness-work with much cheerfulness of spirit, of whom as followeth:

Both night and day Brown ceaseth not to watch  
 Christs little flock, in pastures fresh them feed,  
 The worrying wolves shall not thy weak lambs catch;  
 Well dost thou minde in wilderness their breed;  
 Edmond, thy age is not so great but thou  
 Maist yet behold the Beast brought to her fall,  
 Earth's tottering Kingdome shew her legs gin bow,  
 Thou 'mongst Christs Saints with prayers maist her mawle;  
 What signes wouldst have faith's courage for to rouse?  
 See Christ triumphant hath his armies led,  
 In wilderness prepar'd his lovely Spouse,  
 Caus'd Kings and Kingdomes his high hand to dread.



Thou seest his Churches daily are encreasing,  
And thou thy self amongst his worthyees warring,  
Hold up thy hands, the battel's now increasing,  
Christ's Kingdom's ay, it's past all mortall's marring.

This Towne is very well watered, and hath store of plow-land, but by reason of the oaken roots, they have little broke up, considering the many Acres the place affords; but this kinde of land requires great strength to break up, yet brings very good crops, and lasts long without mending; the people are industrious, and have encreased in their estates, some of them, yet the great distance it lyes from the Mart Towns maketh it burdensome to the Inhabitants, to bring their corne so far by land; some Gentlemen have here laid out part of their estates in procuring farmes, by reason of the store of meadow: this Church hath hitherto been blessed with blessings of the right hand, even godly peace and unity: they are not above 50. or 60. families, and about 80. souls in Church fellowship, their Neat-heard about 300.

CHAP. XVIII.—Of the planting of the twentieth Church of Christ at a Towne called Braintree.

ABOUT this time there was a Town and Church planting at Mount Wollestone, and named Braintree, it was occasioned by some old planters and certain Farmers belonging to the great Town of Boston; they had formerly one Mr. Whelewright to preach unto them, (till this Government could no longer contain them) they many of them in the mean time belonging to the Church of Christ at Boston, but after his departure they gathered into a Church themselves; having some enlargement of Land, they began to be well peopled, calling to office among them, the reverend and godly Mr. William Tompson, and Mr. Henry Flint, the one to the office of a Pastor, the other of a Teacher; the people are purged by their industry from the sowre leven of those sinful opinions that began to spread, and if any remain among them it is very covert, yet the manner of these Erronists that remain in any place, is to countenance all sorts of sinful opinions,

as occasions serves, both in Church and Commonwealth, under pretence of Liberty of Conscience, (as well their own opinion as others) by this Symbol they may be known in Court and Country. This Town hath great store of Land in tillage, and is at present in a very thriving condition for outward things, although some of Boston retain their Farms from being of their Town, yet do they lye within their bounds, and how it comes to pass I know not; their Officers have somewhat short allowance, they are well stored with cattel and corn, and as a people receives, so should they give: And Reader, I cannot but mind thee of the admirable providence of Christ for his people in this, where they have been in a low condition, by their liberality they have been raised to much in a very little time: And again, in withdrawing their hands have had their plenty blasted: The reverend Mr. Tompson is a man abounding in zeal for the propagation of the Gospel, and of an ardent affection, insomuch that he is apt to forget himself in things that concern his own good, both him, and the like gracious M. Flint is here remembred.

With twofold cord doth Flint and Tompson draw  
 In Christ's yoke, his fallow ground to break,  
 Wounding mens hearts with his most righteous Law,  
 Cordials apply to weary souls and weak.  
 Tompson thou hast Christ's folk encouraged  
 To war, their warfare putting them in mind,  
 That Christ their King will make his sons the dread,  
 The day's at hand when they shall mastery find.  
 Flint be a second to this Champion stout,  
 In Christ's your strength, while you for him do war,  
 When first doth faint, a second helps him out,  
 Till Christ renew with greater strength by far.  
 From East to West your labours lasted have,  
 The more you toil the more your strength encreaseth,  
 Your works will bide, when you are laid in grave,  
 His truth advance, whose kingdom never ceaseth.

CHAP. XIX.—Of the first promotion of learning in New-England, and the extraordinary providences that the Lord was pleased to send for furthering of the same.

TOWARD the latter end of this Summer came over the learned, reverend, and judicious Mr. Henry Dunster, be-

fore whose coming the Lord was pleased to provide a Patron for erecting a Colledg, as you have formerly heard, his provident hand being now no less powerful in pointing out with his unerring finger, a president abundantly fitted this his servant, and sent him over for to mannage the work; and as in all the other passages of this history the Wonder-working Providence of Sions Saviour hath appeared, so more especially in this work, the Fountains of learning being in a great measure stopped in our Native Country at this time, so that the sweet waters of Shilo's streams must ordinarily pass into the Churches through the stinking channel of prelatical pride, beside all the filth that the fountains themselves were daily incumbered withall, insomuch that the Lord turned aside often from them, and refused the breathings of his blessed Spirit among them, which caused Satan in these latter daies of his transformation into an Angel of light (to make it a means to perswade people from the use of learning altogether, that so in the next generation they might be destitute of such helps, as the Lord hath been pleased hitherto to make use of, as chief means for the conversion of his people, and building them up in the holy faith, as also for breaking downe the kingdom of Antichrist; and verily had not the Lord been pleased to furnish N. E. with means for the attainment of learning, the work would have been carried on very heavily, and the hearts of godly parents would have vanished away with heaviness for their poor children, whom they must have left in a desolate wilderness, destitute of the meanes of grace.

It being a work (in the apprehension of all, whose capacity could reach to the great sums of money, the edifice of a mean Colledg would cost) past the reach of a poor Pilgrim people, who had expended the greatest part of their estates on a long voyage, travelling into Forraign Countryes, being unprofitable to any that have undertaken it, although it were but with their necessary attendance, whereas this people were forced to travel with wives, children, and servants; besides they considered



the treble charge of building in this new populated desert, in regard of al kind of workmanship, knowing likewise, that young Students could make but a poor progress in learning, by looking on the bare walls of their chambers, and that Diogenes would have the better of them by far, in making use of a Tun to lodg in, not being ignorant also, that many people in this age are out of conceit with learning, and that although they were not among a people who counted ignorance the mother of devotion, yet were the greater part of the people wholly devoted to the Plow, (but to speak uprightly; hunger is sharp, and the head will retain little learning, if the heart be not refreshed in some competent measure with food, although the gross vapors of a gluttoned stomack are the bane of a bright understanding, and brings barrenness to the brain) but how to have both go on together, as yet they know not; amidst all these difficulties, it was thought meet learning should plead for itself, and (as many other men of good rank and quality in this barren desert) plod out a way to live: Hereupon all those who had tasted the sweet wine of Wisdoms drawing, and fed on the dainties of knowledg, began to set their wits a work, and verily as the whole progress of this work had a farther dependency then on the present eyed means, so at this time chiefly the end being firmly fixed on a sure foundation, namely the glory of God, and good of all his elect people, the world throughout, in vindicating the truths of Christ, and promoting his glorious Kingdom, who is now taking the heathen for his inheritance, and the utmost ends of the earth for his possession, means they know there are, many thousands uneyed of mortal man, which every daies Providence brings forth; upon these resolutions, to work they go, and with thankful acknowledgment, readily take up all lawful means as they come to hand, for place they fix their eye upon New-Town, which to tell their Posterity whence they came, is now named Cambridg, and withal to make the whole world understand, that spiritual learning was the thing they chiefly desired, to sanctifie the other, and make the whole lump holy, and that learning



being set upon its right object, might not contend for error instead of truth; they chose this place, being then under the Orthodox and soul-flourishing Ministry of Mr. Thomas Shepheard, of whom it may be said without any wrong to others, the Lord by his Ministry hath saved many a hundred soul: The scituation of this Colledg is very pleasant, at the end of a spacious plain, more like a bowling green, then a Wilderness, neer a fair navigable river, environed with many Neighbouring Towns of note, being so neer, that their houses joyn with her Suburbs, the building thought by some to be too gorgeous for a Wilderness, and yet too mean in others apprehensions for a Colledg, it is at present enlarging by purchase of the neighbour houses, it hath the conveniences of a fair Hall, comfortable Studies, and a good Library, given by the liberal hand of some Magistrates and Ministers with others: The chief gift towards the founding of this Colledg, was by Mr. John \*Harnes, a reverend Minister; the Country being very weak in their publike Treasury, expended about 500. l. towards it, and for the maintenance thereof, gave the yearly revenue of a Ferry passage between Boston, and Charlestown, the which amounts to about 40. or 50. l. per annum. The Commissioners of the four united Colonies also taking into consideration, (of what common concernment this work would be, not only to the whole plantations in general, but also to all our English Nation) they endeavoured to stir up all the people in the several colonies to make a yearly contribution toward it, which by some is observed, but by the most very much neglected; the Government hath endeavoured to grant them all the privileges fit for a Colledg, and accordingly the Governour and Magistrates, together with the President of the Colledg, for the time being have a continual care of ordering all matters for the good of the whole: This Colledg hath brought forth, and nurst up very hopeful plants, to the supplying some Churches here, as the gracious and godly Mr. Wilson, son to the grave and zealous servant of Christ Mr. John Wilson, this young man is Pastor to the Church of Christ at Dor-

chester ; as also Mr. Buckly, son to the reverend Mr. Buckly of Concord ; as also a second son of his, whom our Native Country hath now at present help in the Ministry, and the other is over a people of Christ in one of these Colonies, and if I mistake not, England hath I hope not only this young man of N. E. nurturing up in learning, but many more, as M. Sam. and Nathaniel Mathers, Mr. Wells, Mr. Downing, Mr. Barnard, Mr. Allin, Mr. Bruster, Mr. William Ames, Mr. Iones : Another of the first fruits of this Colledg is imployed in these Western parts in Mevis, one of the Summer Islands ; beside these named, some help hath been had from hence in the study of Physick, as also the godly Mr. Sam. Danforth, who hath not only studied Divinity, but also Astronomy, he put forth many Almanacks, and is now called to the office of a teaching Elder in the Church of Christ at Roxbury, who was one of the fellows of this Colledg ; the number of Students is much encreased of late, so that the present year 1651. on the twelfth of the sixth moneth, ten of them took the degree of Batchelors of Art, among whom the Sea-born son of Mr. Iohn Cotton was one, some Gentlemen have sent their sons hither from England, who are to be commended for their care of them, as the judicious and godly Doctor Ames, and divers others : This hath been a place certainly more free from temptations to lewdness, than ordinarily England hath been, yet if men shall presume upon this to send their most exorbitant children, intending them more especially for Gods service, the Justice of God doth sometimes meet with them, and the means doth more harden them in their way, for of late, the godly Governors of this Colledg have been forced to expell some, for fear of corrupting the Fountain, wherefore the Author would ye should mind this following verse.

You that have seen these wondrous works by Sions Savior don,  
Expect not miracle, lest means thereby you over-run ;  
The noble Acts Jehovah wrought, his Israel to redeem,  
Surely this second work of his shall far more glorious seem ;  
Not only Egypt, but all Lands, where Antichrist doth raign,  
Shall from Jehovahs heavy hand ten times ten plagues sustain :

Bright shining shall this Gospel come, Oh glorious King of Saints,  
 Thy blessed breath confounds thy foes, all mortal power faints,  
 The rattling bones together run with self-same breath that blows,  
 Of Israels sons long dead and dry, each joynt there sinew grows,  
 Fair flesh doth cover them, & veins (lifes fountain) ~~likes~~ there place.  
 Smooth seamless coats doth cloath their flesh, and all their structure  
 grace.

The breath of Life is added, they no Antinomians are,  
 But loving him who gives them life, more zealous are by far  
 To keep his Law, then formerly when righteousness they sought,  
 In keeping that they could not keep, which then their downfal  
 brought.

Their ceremonies vanisht are, on Christ's all their desires,  
 Their zeal all Nations doth provoke, inkindled are loves fires :  
 With hast on horseback, bringing home their sons and daughters, they  
 Rejoyce to see this glorious sight, like Resurrections day ;  
 Up and be doing, you young plants, Christ calls his work unto  
 Polluted lips, touch'd with heav'ns fire, about this work shall go.  
 Prostrate in prayer parents, and you young ones on Christ call,  
 Suppose of you he will make use, whereby that beast shall fall :  
 So be it Lord thy servants say, who are at thy disposing,  
 With outward word work inward grace, by heavenly truths disclosing,  
 Awake stand up from death to life, in Christ your studies enter,  
 The Scriptures search, bright light bring forth, upon this hardship  
 venter.

Sound doctrine shall your lips preach out, all errors to confound  
 And rid Christ's Temple from this smoke, his glory shall abound ;  
 Precipitant doth Dagon fall, his triple head off cut,  
 The Beast that all the world admires, by you to death is put :  
 Put hand to mouth, with vehement blast your silver Trumpets sound,  
 Christ calls to mind his peoples wrongs, their foes hee'l now confound :  
 Be strong in God, and his great might, his wondrous works do tell,  
 You raised are unwonted ways, observe his workings well.  
 As Jordans streams congeal'd in heaps, and Jerico's high walls  
 With Rams horns blast, and Midians Host, with pitcher breaking falls ;  
 Like works your faith, for to confirm in these great works to come,  
 That nothing now too hard may seem, Jehovah would have don.  
 The rage of Seas, and hunger sharp, wants of a desert Land,  
 Your noble hearts have overcom, what shall this work withstand ?  
 Not persecutors pride and rage, strong multitudes do fall,  
 By litle handfulls of least dust, your Christ confounds them all ;  
 Not Satan and his subtil train with seeming shew reforming,  
 Another Gospel to bring forth, brings damned errors swarming :  
 Your selves have seen his paint washt off, his hidden poysons found,  
 Christ you provides with Antidotes, to keep his people sound :  
 There's nought remains but conquest now, through Christs continued  
 power,

His hardest works have honors most attend them every hour.



What greater honor then on earth, Christ's Legat for to be,  
 Attended with his glorious Saints in Church fraternity.  
 Christ to behold adorning now his Bride in bright array,  
 And you his friends him to attend upon his Nuptial day,  
 With crowned heads, as Conquerors triumphant by his side ;  
 In's presence is your lasting joy, and pleasures ever bide.

Mr. Henry Dunstar is now President of this Colledg, fitted from the Lord for the work, and by those that have skill that way, reported to be an able Proficient, in both Hebrew, Greek, and Latine Languages, an Orthodox Preacher of the truths of Christ, very powerful through his blessing to move the affection ; and besides he having a good inspection into the well-ordering of things for the Students maintenance (whose commons hath been very short hitherto) by his frugal providence hath continued them longer at their Studies then otherwise they could have done ; and verily it's great pity such ripe heads as many of them be, should want means to further them in learning : But seeing the Lord hath been pleased to raise up so worthy an instrument for their good, he shall not want for incouragement to go on with the work, so far as a rustical rime will reach.

Could man presage prodigious works at hand,  
 Provide he would for's good and ill prevent,  
 But God both time and means hath at's command,  
 Dunster in time to his N. E. hath sent.  
 When England 'gan to keep at home their guides,  
 N. E. began to pay their borrowed back :  
 Industrious Dunster, providence provides,  
 Our friends supply, and yet ourselves no lack :  
 With restless labour thou dost delve and dung,  
 Surculus set in garden duly tended,  
 That in Christs Orchard they with fruit full hung,  
 May bless the Lord, thy toil gone, them expended,  
 Thy constant course proves retrograde in this,  
 From West to East thy toil returns again,  
 Thy husbandry by Christ so honored is,  
 That all the world partaketh of thy pains.

CHAP. XX.—Of the planting of the one and twentieth Church of Christ at a Town called Gloucester, and of the Church and Town of Dover, and of the hardships that befel a certain people, who thirsted after large liberty in a warm Country.

FOR the Government of this little Commonwealth, this year was chosen for Governour Richard \*Bellingham, Esquire, and John †Endicut Esquire for ‡Governours; the number of Freemen added this year, were about 503.

There was another Town and Church of Christ erected in the Mattachuset Government, upon the Northern-Cape of the Bay, called Cape Ann, a place of fishing, being peopled with Fishermen, till the reverend Mr. Richard Blindman came from a place in Plimouth Patten, called Green-Harbour, with some few people of his acquaintance, and settled down with them, named the Town Gloucester, and gathered into a Church, being but a small number, about fifty persons, they called to office this godly reverend man, whose gifts and abilities to handle the word, is not inferiour to many others, labouring much against the errors of the times, of a sweet, humble, heavenly carriage: This Town lying out toward the point of the Cape, the access there unto by Land becomes uneasie, which was the chief cause it was no more populated: Their fishing trade would be very beneficial, had they men of estates to mannage it; yet are they not without other means of maintenance, having good timber for shipping, and a very sufficient builder, but that these times of combustion the Seas throughout hath hindered much that work, yet have there been Vessels built here at this Town of late: Their reverend Elder is here remembered.

Thou hast thy prime and middle age here spent,  
 The best is not too good for him that gave it,  
 When thou didst first this Wilderness frequent,  
 For Sions sake it was, that Christ might save it.  
 Blindman be blith in him, who thee hath taken  
 To feed his Flock, a few poor scattered sheep,  
 Why should they be of thee at all forsaken,  
 Thy honour's high, that any thou may'st keep.

\* Bellingham.

† Endicot.

‡ Deputy Governour?

Wait patiently thy Masters coming, thou  
Hast hitherto his peoples portions dealt,  
It matters not for high preferment ; now  
Thy crown's to come with joyes immortal felt.

About this time the people inhabiting the Town of Dover, although they lay out of any of these Colonies mentioned, (yet hearing and seeing with what sweet harmony, both in Churches and civil Government, the Massachusetts peopled patten was carried on prosperously) desired greatly to submit unto the same, by putting themselves under their protection ; and for that end they petitioned their General Cort to admit of them, and administer Justice as occasion served, by the hands of their godly Magistrates, which accordingly was granted, and they have been partakers of the benefit hitherto, having also the benefit of some one Minister to preach unto them, till it pleased God to fit stones by the continual hewing of his word for his Temple-work, and they gather a Church according to the rule of the word, and called to office of a Pastor one M. Maude, both godly and diligent in the work : This Town is scituate upon Pascataque river, lying to the Northeast of Boston, which river, although it be not nigh so broad as Merrinaeck river, yet is it navigable, being very deep, and her banks in many places fil'd with stately timber, which hath caused one or two Saw-Mills to be continued ; there they have a good quantity of Meddow Land, and good ground for India corn. To end this year 1641. the Lord was pleased to send a very sharp Winter, insomuch that the Harbor where ships ordinarily Anchor, was frozen over of such a thickness, that it became passeable, both for horse, carts, and oxen, for the space of five weeks. And here the Reader must be minded of the wonder-working providence of Christ for his poor Churches, in altering the very season for their comfort, to the wonder of English and Indians, the Winter and Summer proving more moderate, both for heat and cold, unmasking many by this means, it being a frequent thing with some, that after the novelties of a new land began to be stale with them, and the sweet nourishment of



the soul by the presence of Christ in the preaching of his Word began to dry up through the hot heady conceit of some new conceived opinion : Then they wanted a warmer country, and every Northwest wind that blew, they crept into some odd chimney-corner or other, to discourse of the diversity of Climates in the Southerne parts, but chiefly of a thing very sweet to the pallate of the flesh, called liberty, which they supposed might be very easily attain'd, could they but once come into a place where all men were chosen to the office of a Magistrate, and all were preachers of the Word, and no hearers, then it would be all Summer and no Winter : This consultation was to be put in practise speedily, as all headstrong motions are, but the issue proved very sad, both to these and others also ; for thus it befell, when the time of the year was come that a sea voyage might be undertaken, they having made sale of a better accommodation than any they could afterward attain unto, prepare for the voyage with their wives and children, intending to land them in one of the Summer Islands, called the Isle of Providence, and having wind and seas favouring them, as they supposed, or to speak more proper, the provident hand of the most High God directing it, they were brought so neer the shore for convenient landing, that they might have heaved a Bisket cake on land ; their Pilate wondring he could not see the English colours on the Fort, he began to mistrust the Island was taken, and more especially, because they saw not the people appear upon the shores as they usually did when any Vessel was a coming in, but now and then they saw some people a far off wafting to them to come in, till they were even come to an Anchor, and then by the hoising up and down the heads of those on shore, they were fully confirmed in it, that the Island was taken, as indeed it was by the Spaniards, who as soone as they tackt about to be gone, made shot at them, and being in great fear they make all the sail they could, but before they could get out of shot, the Master of the Vessel was slain, the main sail shot through, and the Barque also ; the people some of them returned back

again for New-England, being sore abashed at this providence that befel them, that they would never seek to be governed by liberty again to this very day; yet others there are were so strongly bent for the heat of liberty, that they indured much pinching penury upon an uninhabited Island, til at length meeting some others like-minded with themselves, they made a voyage to another Island, the chiefest part of their Charter of Freedom was this, That no man upon pain of death should speak against anothers Religion where they continued, till some of them were famished, and others even forced to feed on Rats, and any other thing they could find to sustain nature, till the provident hand of God brought a ship to the place, which took them off the Island, and saved their lives: But upon this the Winters discourse ceased, and projects for a warmer Country were husht and done.

CHAP. XXI.—Of the suddain and unexpected fall of Cattel, and the great blessing of God in giving plenty of provision.

FOR this year 1642, John Winthrope Esquire was chosen Governour, and John Endicut Esquire Deputy Governor: The number of Freemen added were about 1232. This Spring Cowes and Cattle of that kind (having continued at an excessive price so long as any came over with estates to purchase them) fell of a suddain in one week from 22. l. the Cow, to 6. 7. or 8. l. the Cow at most, insomuch that it made all men admire how it came to pass, it being the common practise of those that had any store of Cattel, to sell every year a Cow or two, which cloath'd their backs, fil'd their bellies with more varieties than the Country of it self afforded, and put gold and silver in their purses beside. Here the Reader is desired to take notice of the wonderful providence of the most high God toward these his new-planted Churches, such as was never heard of, since that Jacobs sons ceased to be a people, that in ten or twelve years planting, there should be such wonderful alteration, a Nation to be born in a day, a Commonwealth orderly brought forth from a few Fugitives, all the Forraign plantations that are of forty, fifty,

or a hundred years standing, cannot really report the like, although they have had the greatest encouragements earth could afford, Kings to countenance them, staple commodities to provoke all manner of Merchants to resort unto them, silver, gold, precious stones, or whatever might intice the eye or ear to incline the motion of man toward them, his remote, rocky, barren, bushy, wild-woody wilderness, a receptacle for Lions, Wolves, Bears, Foxes, Rockcoones, Bags, Bevers, Otters, and all kind of wild creatures, a place that never afforded the Natives better then the flesh of a few wild creatures and parch't Indian corn incht out with Chesnuts and bitter Acorns, now through the mercy of Christ becom a second England for fertility in so short a space, that it is indeed the wonder of the world; but being already forgotten of the very persons that tast of it at present, although some there be that keep in memory his mercies multitude, and declare it to their childrens children.

First to begin with the encrease of food, you have heard in what extream penury these people were in at first planting, for want of food, gold, silver, rayment, or whatsoever was precious in their eyes they parted with (when ships came in) for this their beast that died, some would stick before they were cold, and sell their poor pined flesh for food, at 6.d. per pound, Indian Beans at 16.s. per bushel, when Ships came in, it grieved some Master to see the urging of them by people of good rank and quality to sell bread unto them. But now take notice how the right hand of the most high hath altered all, and men of the meaner rank are urging them to buy bread of them, and now good white and wheaten bread is no dainty, but even ordinary man hath his choice, if gay cloathing, and a liquerish tooth after sack, sugar, and plums lick not away his bread too fast, all which are but ordinary among those that were not able to bring their own persons over at their first coming; there are not many Towns in the Country, but the poorest person in them hath a house and land of his own, and bread of his own growing, if not some cat-tel: beside, flesh is now no rare food, beef, pork, and



mutton being frequent in many houses, so that this poor Wilderness hath not onely equalized England in food, but goes beyond it in some places for the great plenty of wine and sugar, which is ordinarily spent, apples, pears, and quince tarts instead of their former Pumpkin Pies, Poultry they have plenty, and great rarity, and in their feasts have not forgotten the English fashion of stirring up their appetites with variety of cooking their food ; and notwithstanding all this great and almost miraculous work of the Lord, in providing for his people in this barren desart, yet are there here (as in other places) some that use these good creatures of God to excess, and others to hoard up in a wretched and miserable manner, pinch themselves and their children with food, and will not tast of the good creatures God hath given for that end, but cut Church and Commonwealth as short also : Let not such think to escape the Lords hand with as little a stroke, as the like do in other places.

Secondly, For rayment, our cloth hath not been cut short, as but of late years the traders that way have encreased to such a number, that their shops have continued full all the year long, all one England ; besides the Lord hath been pleased to encrease sheep extraordinarily of late, hemp and flax here is great plenty, hides here are more for the number of persons then in England ; and for cloth, here is and would be materials enough to make it ; but the Farmers deem it better for their profit to put away their cattel and corn for cloathing, then to set upon making of cloth ; if the Merchants trade be not kept on foot, they fear greatly their corne and cattel will lye in their hands : assuredly the plenty of cloathing hath caused much excess of late in those persons, who have clambered with excess in wages for their work, but seeing it will be the theam of our next discourse, after the birds are settled, it may be here omitted.

Further, the Lord hath been pleased to turn all the wigwams, huts, and hovels the English dwelt in at their first coming, into orderly, fair, and well-built houses, well furnished many of them, together with Orchards filled with

goodly fruit trees, and gardens with variety of flowers : There are supposed to be in the Mattachusetts Government at this day, neer a thousand acres of land planted for Orchards and Gardens, besides their fields are filled with garden fruit, there being, as is supposed in this Colony, about fifteen thousand acres in tillage, and of cat-tel about twelve thousand neat, and about three thousand sheep : Thus hath the Lord encouraged his people with the encrease of the general, although many particulars are outed, hundreds of pounds, and some thousands, yet are there many hundreds of labouring men, who had not enough to bring them over, yet now worth scores, and some hundreds of pounds ; to be sure the Lord takes notice of all his talents, and will call to accompt in time : This brief survey of things will be of good use when time serves, in mean time you shall understand,

CHAP. XXII.—Of the manner of planting Towns and Churches in N. E. and in particular of the Church and Town at Wooburn, being the three and twentieth Church of Christ in the Mattachusetts Government.

THERE WAS a Town and Church erected called Wooburn, this present year, but because all the action of this wandering people meet with great variety of censures, the Author will in this Town and Church set down the manner how this people have populated their Towns, and gathered their Churches, that the reverend Mr. Rathbone may be better informed, then when he wrote his book concerning the Churches of N. E. and all others that are experienced in the holy Scriptures, may lay the actions of N. E. to the Rule, and try them by the ballance of the Sanctuary, for assuredly they greatly desire they may be brought to the light, for great is the truth, and will prevail, yet have they their errings as well as others, but yet their imperfections may not blemish the truths of Christ, let them be glorified, and these his people will willingly take shame to themselves, wherein they have miscarried : But to begin, this Town, as all others had its bounds fixed by the General Court, to the contents of four miles square,

(beginning at the end of Charles Town bounds) the grant is to seven men of good and honest report, upon condition, that within two year they erect houses for habitation thereon, and so go on to make a Town thereof, upon the Act of Court ; these seven men have power to give and grant out lands unto any persons who are willing to take up their dwellings within the said precinct, & to be admitted to al common priviledges of the said Town, giving them such an ample portion, both of Medow and Upland, as their present and future stock of cattel and hands were like to improve, with eye had to others that might after come to populate the said Town ; this they did without any respect of persons, yet such as were exorbitant, and of a turbulent spirit, unfit for a civil society they would reject, till they come to mend their manners, such came not to enjoy any freehold : These seven men ordered and disposed of the streets of the Town, as might be best for improvement of the Land, and yet civil and religious society maintained ; to which end those that had land neerest the place for Sabbath assembly had a lesser quantity at home, and more farther off to improve for corn, of all kinds ; they refused not men for their poverty, but according to their ability were helpful to the poorest sort, in building their houses, and distributed to them land accordingly ; the poorest had six or seven acres of Medow, and twenty five of Upland, or thereabouts : Thus was this Town populated, to the number of sixty families, or thereabout, and after this manner are the Towns of New England peopled, the scituation of this Town is in the highest part of the yet peopled land, neere upon the headsprings of many considerable rivers, or their branches, as the first rise of Ipswitch river, and the rise of Shashin river, one of the most considerable branches of Merri-meck, as also the first rise of Mistick river and ponds, it is very full of pleasant springs, and great variety of very good water, which the Summers heat causeth to be more cooler, and the Winters cold maketh more warmer ; their Medows are not large, but lye in divers places to particular dwellings, the like doth their Springs ; their Land is



very fruitful in many places, although they have no great quantity of plain land in any one place, yet doth their Rocks and Swamps yeeld very good food for cattel; as also they have Mast and Tar for shipping, but the distance of place by land causeth them as yet to be unprofitable, they have great store of iron o're, their meeting house stands in a small Plain, where four streets meet, the people are very laborious, if not exceeding some of them.

Now to declare how this people proceeded in religious matters, and so consequently all the Churches of Christ planted in New-England, when they came once to hopes of being such a competent number of people, as might be able to maintain a Minister, they then surely seated themselves, and not before, it being as unnatural for a right N. E. man to live without an able Ministry, as for a Smith to work his iron without a fire; therefore this people that went about placing down a Town, began the foundation-stone, with earnest seeking of the Lords assistance, by humbling of their souls before him in daies of prayer, and imploring his aid in so weighty a work, then they address themselves to attend counsel of the most Orthodox and ablest Christians, and more especially of such as the Lord had already placed in the Ministry, not rashly running together themselves into a Church, before they had hopes of attaining an Officer to preach the Word, and administer the Seals unto them, chosing rather to continue in fellowship with some other Church for their Christian watch over them, till the Lord would be pleased to provide: They after some search meet with a young man named Mr. Thomas Carter, then belonging to the Church of Christ at Water-Town, a reverend godly man, apt to teach the sound and wholesome truths of Christ; having attained their desires, in hopes of his coming unto them, were they once joyued in Church-estate, he exercising his gifts of preaching and prayer among them in the mean time, and more especially in a day of fasting and prayer. Thus these godly people interest their affections one with the other, both Minister and people:

After this they made ready for the work, and the 24. of the 6. moneth 1642. they assemble together in the morning about eight of the clock ; After the reverend Mr. Syms had continued in preaching and prayer about the space of four or five houres, the persons that were to joyn in Covenant, openly and professedly before the Congregation, and messengers of divers Neighbour Churches, among whom the reverend Elder of Boston, Mr. Cotton, Mr. Wilson, Mr. Allen of Charles-Town, Mr. Shepheard of Cambridg, Mr. Dunster of Water-Town, Mr. Knowles of Dedham, Mr. Allen of Roxbury, Mr. Eliot of Dorchester, Mr. Mather : As also it is the duty of the Magistrates (in regard of the good and peace of the civil Government) to be present, at least some one of them (not only to prevent the disturbance might follow in the Commonwealth by any, who under pretence of Church-Covenant, might bring in again those cursed opinions that caused such commotion in this and the other Colony, to the great damage of the people) but also to countenance the people of God in so pious a work, that under them they may live a quiet and peaceable life, in all godliness and honesty ; for this cause was present the honored Mr. Increase Nowel, the persons stood forth, and first confessed what the Lord had done for their poor souls, by the work of his Spirit in the preaching of his Word, and Providences, one by one ; (and that all might know their faith in Christ was bottomed upon him, as he is revealed in his Word, and that from their own knowledge) they also declare the same, according to that measure of understanding the Lord had given them ; the Elders, or any other messengers there present question with them, for the better understanding of them in any points they doubt of, which being done, and all satisfied, they in the name of the Churches to which they do belong, hold out the right hand of fellowship unto them, they declaring their Covenant, in words expressed in writing to this purpose.

*The Church Covenant.*

WE that do assemble our selves this day before God and his people, in an unfeigned desire, to be accepted of

him as a Church of the Lord Jesus Christ, according to the Rule of the New-Testament, do acknowledg our selves to be the most unworthy of all others, that we should attain such a high grace, and the most unable of our selves to the performance of any thing that is good, abhorring ourselves for all our former defilements in the worship of God, and other wayes, and resting only upon the Lord Jesus Christ for atonement, and upon the power of his grace for the guidance of our whole after course, do here in the name of Christ Jesus, as in the presence of the Lord, from the bottom of our hearts agree together through his grace to give up our selves, first unto the Lord Jesus as our only King, Priest and Prophet, wholly to be subject unto him in all thing, and therewith one unto another, as in a Church-Body to walk together in all the Ordinances of the Gospel, and in all such mutual love and offices thereof, as toward one another in the Lord; and all this, both according to the present light that the Lord hath given us, as also according to all further light, which he shall be pleased at any time to reach out unto us out of the Word by the goodness of his grace, renouncing also in the same Covenant all errors and Schismes, and whatsoever by-wayes that are contrary to the blessed rules revealed in the Gospel, and in particular the inordinate love and seeking after the things of the world; every Church hath not the same for words, for they are not for a form of words.

The 22. of the 9, moneth following Mr. Thomas Carter was ordained Pastor, in presence of the like Assembly. After he had exercised in preaching and prayer the greater part of the day, two persons in the name of the Church laid their hands upon his head, and said, We ordain thee Thomas Carter to be Pastor unto this Church of Christ; then one of the Elders Priest, being desired of the Church, continued in prayer unto the Lord for his more especial assistance of this his servant in his work, being a charge of such weighty importance, as is the glory of God and salvation of souls, that the very thought would make a man to tremble in the sense of his own inability to the



work: The people having provided a dwelling house, built at the charge of the Town in general, welcomed him unto them with joy, that the Lord was pleased to give them such a blessing, that their eyes may see their teachers: After this there were divers added to the Church daily; after this manner the person desirous to joyn with the Church, cometh to the Pastor, and makes him acquainted therewith, declaring how the Lord hath been pleased to work his conversion, who discerning hopes of the persons faith in Christ, although weak, yet if any appear, he is propounded to the Church in general for their approbation, touching his godly life and conversation, and then by the Pastor and some brethren heard again, who make report to the Church of their charitable approving of the person; but before they come to joyn with the Church, all persons within the Towne have publike notice of it, then publikely he declares the manner of his conversion, and how the Lord hath been pleased by the hearing of his Word preached, and the work of his Spirit in the inward parts of his soul, to bring him out of that natural darkness, which all men are by nature in and under, as also the measure of knowledg the Lord hath been pleased to indue him withal. And because some men cannot speak publikely to edification through bashfulness, the less is required of such, and women speak not publikely at all, for all that is desired, is to prevent the polluting the blessed Ordinances of Christ by such as walk scandalously, and that men and women do not eat and drink their own condemnation, in not discerning the Lords body: After this manner were many added to this Church of Christ, and those 7. that joyned in Church-fellowship at first, are now encreased to 74. persons, or thereabout; of which according to their own confession, as is supposed, the greater part having been converted by the preaching of the Word in N. E. by which may appear the powerful efficacy of the word of Christ in the mouth of his Ministers, and that this way of Christ in joyning together in Church-Covenant, is not only for building up of souls in Christ, but also for

converting of sinners, & bringing them out of the natural condition to be ingrafted into Christ, for if this one Church have so many, then assuredly there must be a great number comparatively throughout all the Churches in the Country. After this manner have the Churches of Christ had their beginning and progress hitherto, the Lord continue & encrease them the world throughout: The Pastor of this Church hath much encreased with the encreasings of Christ Jesus, of whose labours in the Lord as followeth.

Carter, Christ hath his wayes thee taught, and \*them,  
 Hast not withheld his Word, but unto all,  
 With's word of power dost cause stout souls to bow,  
 And meek as Lambs before thy Christ to fall:  
 The antient truths, plain paths they fit thee best,  
 Thy humble heart all haughty acts puts by,  
 The lowly heart, Christ learns his lovely hest,  
 Thy meekness shews thy Christ to thee is nigh;  
 Yet must thou shew Christ makes his bold to be,  
 As Lions, that none may his truths tread down,  
 Pastoral power he hath invested thee  
 With, it maintain, least he on thee do frown;  
 Thy youth thou hast in this New-England spent,  
 Full sixteen years to water, plant, and prune,  
 Trees taken up, and for that end here sent,  
 Thy end's with Christ, with's Saints his praises tune.

This year the General Court made an order about preparing houses for Salt-peter, that there might be powder made in the Country, but as yet it hath not gone on.

CHAP. XXIII.—Of the uniting of the four English Colonies in N. E. and the battel fought between the Narragansets and Mawhiggins.

THE yeare †1653. the honored John Winthrop Esquire was chosen Governour again, and John Endicut Esquire Deputy Governour, the freemen added were about 87. this year, the four Colonies, the Mattachusetts, Plimoth, Canectico, and New-haven, taking into consideration the many Nations of Dutch, ‡Zewes, and French, that were on either side of them; as also how apt they were to lay claim to lands they never had any right unto,

\* thou?

† 1643?

‡ Swedes?

but only a paper possession of their own framing ; and further, that the inhumane and barbarous Indians would be continually quarrelling and contending, could they see any hopes of prevailing, together with the contestation begun in our Native country, and withal, that although providence had cast them into four several Colonies, yet Religion had already united them, coming over all for one and the same end. Hereupon by Commissioners sent from the several colonies, they concluded a firm confederation to assist each other in all just and lawful war, bearing an equal proportion in the charge, according to the number of persons inhabiting each colony ; but herein the Mattachuset had the worst end of the staff, in bearing as much, or more charge, then all the other three, and yet no greater number of Commissioners to negociate and judg in transacting of affairs concerning peace and war, then the least of the other, and any one of the other as likely to involve them in a chargeable war with the naked Natives, that have neither plunder, nor cash to bear the charge of it, nay hitherto the most hath risen from the lesser colonies, yet are the Mattachuset far from deserting them, esteeming them highly, so long as their Governments maintain the same purity in Religion with themselves, for indeed this is that they have spent their whole travel for, and therefore if Plimoth, or any of the other shall draw back herein, the chiefest end of their confederacy would be lost ; for should it come to pass (that in venturing their persons and estates so far for purity in the Ordinances and Discipline of Christ) they should lose the purity in doctrine, all their cost and labour were lost : This confederacy being finished, there came in certain Indian Sachims, and submitted to the English Government, as Pomham, and Soecananocoh to the Mattachuset ; also Miantonemo and Uncas ; but between these two latter Princes arose a very hot quarrel, the English seeking by all means to quench it, but could not, it being, as is supposed, fomented by a small company of vagabond English, who were then for their crimes banished from their own complices at Rhode Island, the Ringleader of them, being one Samuel Gorton, by whose mean they were drawn in-



to damnable errors, : These Gortonists, as is said, lent Miantonemo a Corslet for safeguard of his own person in the following fight, and he promised each of them a Mawchiggin papoose, which was the people Uncas was Prince of. For, although Miantonemo were the more potent Prince by far, and a very austere man, yet did he chuse rather to take Uncasses life away by treachery if he could ; and to that end hired a young man of the Pegod Nation to murder him, as is supposed, for in an evening, when it was very neer dark, this Sachim passing without any of his Retinue, from one wigwam to another, was suddainly shot through the arm with an arrow, seeing not whence it came ; but yet recovering the Palace he was passing unto, without receiving any more shot, he had the arrow drawn forth, and the wound cured in a short time after ; the young man, who was suspected to have done the fact, having great store of Wampumpeage, about this time being questioned how he came by it, could give no good accompt, which encreased the suspition the more, that he had received it as hire from Miantonemo for this fact ; and hereupon the young man fled unto him, which caused Uncas to complain to the English, who having the hearing of the case at a General Court holden at Boston, at the same time Miantonemo coming thither with his attendance, and sending one of his Councillors to follow the matter in hand, the young man was examined in presence of Miantonemo, being, as is supposed, tutored by him, he told this tale, that while he was in Uncasses Court, on a day travelling alone by a thick swamp, Uncas call'd him out of the swamp, charging him to be true to him, in declaring to the English what he required to him, which was, that he should say he had been hired of Miantonemo to kill him, and to make his matter good, quoth the young man, he then cut his arm on the top, and underneath with the flint of his Gun, to make men think he had beene shot through with an arrow : This tale made the English more to suspect Miantonemo then before ; and therefore desired to examine the young man alone, which he was very unwilling they should do ; but upon further examination alone, they did verily believe this young man

had done the fact, yet for present they let him depart with Miantonemo, advising him to send him home to Uncas, but by the way, he instead of returning him home, cut off his head, and forthwith gathered an army of about a thousand men to fight with Uncas, who feared not to meet him in the field with half the number ; the battel being come within shot one of another, with a great hubbub they let their long shafts fly one at another, and after came to a close with other weapons, till the Narrowgansets multitude being sorely distressed by the Mawhiggins valour, they began to cry out Wammeek, which is to say, enough : Uncas like a stout commander, with others of his bloud-royal that were about him, sought to perfect his victory, by possessing himself with the person of their Prince, which he effected, by putting his Life-guard to flight, and taking hold on the Sachim himself, carried him victoriously away to the Town of Hartford, neer the which he kept his residence at this time, and then made the English acquainted there with his noble design, and desired to have the advise of the united colonies what to do with his prisoner ; the Narrowgansets sought to ransom him home, being much abashed, that so mean a Prince as Uncas was should scape scotfree with such a victory ; but the honored Commissioners have had proof of Miantonemo's treachery, both toward this Prince that had him in possession, and toward the English in falsifying his promise with them ; they advised Uncas to put him to death, but withall, that he should forbear to exercise any barbarous cruelty toward him, as their manner is, and by this means the English prevented another war, both with English and Indians, which was very neer joyning in battel. Not many \*years after, the Indian Sachim upon this advise, caused Miantonemo to be led forth, as if he would remove him to a more safer place of custody, and by the way caused him to be executed : the Indians, his kindred and subjects, were much grieved at his death,

\* This is a striking instance of the errors that infest this book, printed at London, while its author was in Massachusetts. For *years* we should read *days*. The Indian Prince was murdered, as appears from Gov. Winthrop's MS. History, 28 Sepr. 1643. ED.

yet took it quietly at present, but the lesser Princes, his Neighbours, rather rejoyced, he having tyrannized over them, and enforced them to subject to his will, right or wrong.

CHAP. XXIV.—Of the proceeding of certain persons called Gortonists, against the united Colonies and more especially against the Mattachusets, and of the blasphemous doctrines broached by Gorton, deluding a company of pōor ignorant people therewith.

FOR not long before, those persons that we spake of, who encouraged Miantonemo to this war, and with the help of him enforced Pomham and Socananocho to set their hands to a writing which these Gortonists had framed, to take their land from them ; but the poor Sachems, when they saw they were thus gull'd of their land, would take no pay for it, but complained to the Mattachusets Government, to whom they had subjected themselves and their lands : As also at this time certain English inhabiting those parts, with the Indians good leave and liking, desired to have the benefit of the Mattachusets Government, as Dover formerly had done, to whom this Government condescended, in hope they might encrease to such a competent number of godly Christians, as that there might be a Church of Christ planted, the place being capable to entertain them in a comfortable measure for outward accommodation, but hitherto it hath been hindered by these Gortonists, and one of Plimoth, who forbad our people to plant there : These persons thus submitting, came at this time also to complain of certain wrongs done them by these Gortonists, who had thus incroached, and began to build on the Indians land ; upon these complaints, the Governor and the honored Mr. Dudley issue forth their Warrant, to summon them to appear, they being then about five or six persons, without any means for instructing them in the wayes of God, and without any civil Government to keep them in civility or humanity, which made them to cast off most proudly and disdainfully any giving accompt to man of their actions, no not to the chiefest in authority, but returned back most insolent, scornful, scurrilous speeches. After this, the Gov-



ernment of the Mattachusets sent two messengers on purpose to perswade them to come and have their cause heard, assuring them like justice in their cause with any other; but Samuel Gorton being the ring-leader of the rout, was so full gorged with dreadful and damnable errors, (the which he had newly insnared these poor souls with) that soon after the departure of the messenger, he layes aside all civil justice, and instead of returning answer to the matter in hand, he vomits up a whole paper full of beastly stuff, one while scoffing and deriding the ignorance of all beside himself, that think Abraham, Isaac, &c. could be saved by Christ Jesus, who was after born of the Virgin Mary, another while mocking at the Sacraments of Baptism and the Lords Supper, in an opprobrious manner, deriding at the Elements Christ was pleased to institute them in, and calling them \*Negromancers that administer them at all; and in a word, all the Ordinances of the Gospel abominable Idolatry he called, and likened them to Molock, and the Star of the Idol Rempham; his paper was thrust full of such filthiness, that no Christian ear could hear them without indignation against them, and all was done by him in a very scornful and deriding manner, upbraiding all that use them; in the mean time magnifying his own glorious light, that could see himself to be personally Christ, God-Man, and so all others that would believe as he did: This paper he got to be subscribed, with about twelve or thirteen hands, his number of Disciples being encreased, for assuredly the man had a very glosing tongue, but yet very deceitful, for when he had but a few with him, then he cried out against all such as would rule over their own species, affirming, that the Scripture termeth such to be Gods of the world, or divels; but after his return from England, having received some incouragement from such as could not look into the depth of his deceits, being done at so large a distance, he getting into favour again with those, who had formerly whipt him out of their company, turns divel himself; the godly. Governors of the Mattachusets seeing this blasphemous Bull of his, resolved to send forty persons well-

\* necromancers?

appointed with weapons of war for apprehending of him, who accordingly, with some waiting, did apprehend him and the rest of his company, except two or three which ran away without any hurt to any person, although he gave out very big words, threatening them with bloud and death so soon as they set foot on the ground, and yet this brazenface'd deceiver published in print the great fear their women were put unto by the souldiers, whereas they came among them day by day, and had it not been that they intended peaceably to take them, they would never have waited so long upon their worships as they did, but being apprehended, and standing to that they had written (yet would they willingly have covered it with some shifts if they could) the greatest punishment they had, was to be confin'd to certain Towns for a few moneths, and afterward banished ; but to be sure there be them in N. E. that have Christ Jesus and his blessed Ordinances in such esteem, that the Lord assisting, they had rather lose their lives, then suffer them to be thus blasphemed if they can help it ; and whereas some have favoured them, and endeavoured to bring under blame such as have been zealous against their abominable doctrines, the good God be favourable unto them, and prevent them from coming under the like blame with Ahab, yet they remain in their old way, and there's somewhat to be considered in it to be sure, that in these daies, when all look for the fall of Antichrist, such detestable doctrines should be upheld, and persons suffered, that exceed the Beast himself for blasphemy, and this to be done by those that would be counted Reformers, and such as seek the utter subversion of Antichrist.

To end this year, or rather at the beginning of it, the Lord caused another Earthquake, much less then the former, it was on the fifth of the first moneth called March in the morning.

CHAP. XXV.—Of the planting the twenty fourth Church of Christ at the Town of Readding, and the twenty fifth Church of Christ in the Massachusetts Government, called Wenham.

THIS year was chosen to the place of Governor John Endicut Esquire, and Iohn Winthrope Esquire Deputy Governour; the number of freemen added about 145. this year.

The Town of Readding had her foundation stone laid about this time, this and the Town of Wooburn were like the twins in the womb of Tamar, Readding thrusting forth the hand first, but Wooburn came first to the birth, this Town is well watered, and scituate about a great pond, besides it hath two mills, the one a Saw-mill, the other a Corn-mill, which stand on two several streams; it hath not been so fruitful for children as her Sister hath, her habitation is fallen in the very center of the country, they are well stocked with cattel, for the number of people they have they gathered into a church, and ordained a Pastor from among themselves at the same time, a young man of good abilities to preach the Word, and of a very humble behaviour, named Mr. Green, he having finished his course, departed this life not long after, whose labours are with the Lord; after him succeeded in the place one Mr. Hoph, a young man, one of the first fruits of N. E. a man studious to promote the truths of Christ, they are both remembred in the following verse.

On earths bed thou at noon hast laid thy head,  
 You that for Christ (as Green) here toyl have taken,  
 When nature fails, then rest it in earths dead,  
 Till Christ by's word with glory thee awaken.  
 Young Hoph thou must be second to this man,  
 In field incounter, with Christ's foes shalt thou  
 Stand up, and take his bright sword in thy hand,  
 Error cut down and make stout stomacks bow;  
 Green's gone before, thy warfare's now begun,  
 And last it may to see Romes Babel fall;  
 By weakest means Christ mighty works hath done,  
 Keep footing fast, till Christ thee hence do call.

The next Town and church of Christ planted in this colony, was between Salem and Ipswitch, Salem the eld-



est of all the Sisters was very helpful to this her little Sister, nourishing her up in her own bosom, till she came of age, being beneficial to her besides, in giving her a good portion of Land; this Town is called Wenham, and is very well watered, as most in-land Towns are, the people live altogether upon husbandry, New-England having train'd up great store to this occupation, they are increased in cattel, and most of them live very well, yet are they no great company; they were some good space of time there before they gathered into a Church-body, the godly and reverend Mr. John Fisk went thither with them, at first setting down as a planter among them, yet withal he became helpful in preaching the Word unto them, when they were but a few in number, they afterward call'd him to the office of a Pastor, with whom he now remains, labouring in the Word and Doctrine, with great industry of whom, it may be thus said :

To wade through toyl of Wilderness, thou hast  
 Doubled thy work, thy wages treble are,  
 Christ hath thee call'd, and in his vineyard plac't,  
 He'l bear thee up above all fainting far.  
 Sions strong Mount must now again be built,  
 Thy faith, oh Fisk, the Lord hath holpen much;  
 With dreadful sighs the Prelates power hath spilt,  
 All pride he'l stain by his almighty touch.  
 His truths unstain'd by liberty keep thou,  
 To please the most, authority must fall,  
 What Christ hath given, it safely keep with you,  
 Till he to thee for thine accompt do call.

CHAP. XXVI.—Of the military affairs, the forts of Boston, and Charles, the Castle erected anew by the six neerest Towns, with the manner of putting the Country in a posture of war, to be ready upon all occasions.

THESE souldiers of Christ Jesus, having made a fair retreat from their Native country hither, and now being come to a convenient station, resolved to stand it out (the Lord assisting) against all such as should come to rob them of their priviledges, which the Lord Christ had purchased for them at a very high rate, and now out of the riches of his grace was minded to give them, yet would

he have them follow him into this Wilderness for it : although the chieftest work of these select bands of Christ, was to mind their spiritual warfare, yet they knew right well the Temple was surrounded with walls and bulworks, and the people of God in re-edifying the same, did prepare to resist their enemies with weapons of war, even while they continued building : This people no less diligent to make use of such means as the Lord afforded them, ordered and decreed, That all the souldiers belonging to the 26. bands in the Mattachusetts Government, should be exercised and drill'd eight daies in a yeare, and whosoever should absent himself, except it were upon unavoidable occasion, should pay 5. s. for every daies neglect, there are none exempt, unless it be a few timorous persons that are apt to plead infirmity, if the Church chuse them not for Deacons, or they cannot get to serve some Magistrate or Minister ; but assuredly the generality of this people are very forward for feats of war, and many have spent their time and estates to further this work ; the Town of Boston hath afforded many active, Charles-Town hath not been inferiour, unless it be in number : This year the Court appointed certain persons to spend their skill in putting the people possessing this desolate desart in a ready posture of drawing their forces together, upon any suddain accident that might befall them, to mannage, guide, order, and direct all things, as may be best for the good of the whole, they being a poor and mean people, laboured to avoid high titles, yet order they knew was necessary, therefore ordained they only one General Officer in time of war, under the name of Major General, the Governor and Magistrates for the time being are the standing Councel for peace or war, and either they or the General Court may appoint any to the office of a General ; the first Major-General was the much honoured Tho. Dudley Esquire, whose faithfulness and great zeal and love to the truths of Christ, caused the people to choose him to this office, although he were far stricken in years ; the Government is divided into four Counties, which to shew, they would their posterity

should mind whence they came, they have named, Suffolk, Middlesex, Essex, and Northfolk, each containing a regiment, over whom, the chief Commander is only a Sergeant Major ; the first chosen to this office over the Regiment of Suffolk, was Major Edw. Gibbons, who hath now the office of Major-General also, he is a man of a resolute spirit, bold as a Lion, being wholly tutor'd up in N. E. Discipline, very generous, and forward to promote all military matters ; his Forts are well contrived, and batteries strong, and in good repair, his great Artillery well mounted, and cleanly kept, half Canon, Culverins and Sakers, as also field-pieces of brass very ready for service, his own company led by Capt. Lieutenant \*Sarag, are very compleat in their arms, and many of them disciplin'd in the military garden, beside their ordinary trainings ; the Captains under him, are Capt. Humphrey Atherton of the Band of Dorchester ; a very lively courageous man, with his stout and valiant Lieutenant †Clapes, strong for the truth, of the band of Roxbury, Capt. Prichard, and Ensign Johnson ; of the band of Weymouth, Capt. Perkins, and his proper and active Lieutenant Torry ; of the band of Hingham, Capt. Bozoan Allen ; of the Band of Deadham, Capt. Eliazer Lusher, one of a nimble and active spirit, strongly affected to the ways of truth ; of the Band of Braintree, Capt. William ‡Tinge, these belong to the Regiment of Suffolk ; the first Serjeant-Major chosen to order the Regiment of Essex, was Major Robert Sedgwick, stout and active in all feats of war, nurst up in Londons Artillery garden, and furthered with fifteen years experience in N. E. exact theory, besides the help of a very good head-piece, being a frequent instructor of the most martial troops of our Artillery men ; and although Charles Town, (which is the place of his own companies residence) do not advantage such o're-topping batteries as Boston doth, yet hath he erected his to very good purpose, insomuch that all shipping that comes in, either to Boston or Charles-Town, must needs face it all the time of their coming in ; the cost he hath been at, in helping on the Discipline of his Regiment hath profited much ; his own

\* Savage.

† Clap.

‡ Tyng.



company are led by the faithful Capt. Lievtenant Francis Norton, (a man of a bold and cheerful spirit) being well disciplin'd, and an able man ; the companies under his service have not all Captains at present, Water-Town Band was led by Capt. Ienings, who is supposed to be now in England, his Lievtenant remains Hugh Mason ; the band of Cambridg led by Capt. George Cook, now Colonel Cook in the wars of Ireland, but now led by Capt. Daniel Gookin, a very forward man to advance Marshal discipline, and withal the truths of Christ ; the Band of Concord led by Capt. Simon Willard, being a Kentish souldier, as is Capt. \*Goggin ; the Band of Sudbury lately led by Capt. Pelham, who is in England at present, his Lievtenant remains, Edm. Goodinow ; the band of Wooburn led by another Kentish Captain ; the Band of Reading led by Lievtenant Walker ; the Band of Malden, being as yet a young Town, who have not chosen their Officers, are led by Mr. Joseph Hill : These belong to the Regiment of Middlesex, the two Counties of Essex and Northfolk are for the present joyned in one Regiment, their first Major, who now commandeth this Regiment, is the proper and valiant Major Daniel Denison, a good souldier, and of a quick capacity, not inferiour to any other of these chief Officers, his own company are well instructed in feats of warlike activity, his Capt. Lievtenant departed this life some few years since, a godly and faithful man, which is indeed the fountain of true validity ; named Mr. Whitingam ; the Band of Salem led by the bold and worthy Capt. William Hawthorn, a man of an undaunted courage, with his Lievtenant Lothrop ; the Band of Lyn led by the honored and much respected Capt. Robert Bridges, who is also a Magistrate, being endued with able parts, and forward to improve them for the glory of God and his peoples good ; the Band of Nuberry led by Capt. Gerish, with his antient and experienced Lievtenant †Greenlife ; the Band of Rowly led by Capt. Brigham ; the Bands of Glocester, Wenham and Andover, have not yet made choice of Superior Officers, being in their minority ; these are the Bands

\* Gookin, just before mentioned.

† Greenleaf.

of the Regiment of Essex, to the which are joyned the three Bands of the County of Northfolk, Salisbury, Hampton, and Haverhil: there are none chosen to office in any of these Bands, but such as are freemen, supposed to be men indued with faith in Christ Jesus, wherefore let all that truly love the Lord Christ say with Deborah, My heart is toward the Governors of Israel, that offered themselves willingly among the people, their Officers are chosen by the major Vote of the souldiers, being installed into their place by the Major of their Regiment: There are of late a very gallant horse-troop listed, it being a frequent thing with the Officers of the foot companies, to turn Troopers, (when their own Regiment is not in exercise) for encouragement of others, the Regiments are exercised once a year by turns; they are also very observant to keep their armies in good order; each souldier is to keep constantly by him powder, bullet and match, besides every Town is enjoyned to have a common stock in like manner, as also the country have their ammunition exactly looked unto, by Surveyor General Johnson, one very well qualified for the work, ready at all times to put the General Court in mind of keeping their store renewed by fresh supply, and to say right, some particular persons may be penurious in laying out their estates upon ammunition, but the general of Officers and souldiers are very generous that way; the reverend Doctor Wilson gave bountifully for the furthering this Wilderness-work, the which was expended upon great Artillery, his gift being a thousand pound, beside many persons that came over, the Lord was pleased to indow with a large portion of the things of this life, who were not backward liberally to dispose of it, to procure means of defence, and to that end there was a castle built on an Island, upon the passage into the Mattachu-Bay, wholly built at first by the country in general, but by reason the country affords no Lime, but what is burnt of Oyster-shells, it fell to decay in a few years after, which made many of the Towns that lay out of the defence thereof to desert it, although their safety (under God) was much involved in the constant

repair and well-mannaging thereof: hereupon the next six Towns take upon them to rebuild it at their proper cost and charges, the rest of the country upon the finishing thereof gave them a small matter toward it; upon this there was a Captain ordained, and put in possession thereof by the country, having a yearly Stipend allowed him for himself and his souldiers, which he is to keep in a constant readiness upon the Island, being about eight acres of ground; the Castle is built on the North-East of the Island, upon a rising hill, very advantageous to make many shot at such ships as shall offer to enter the Harbor without their good leave and liking, the Commander of it is one Captain Davenport, a man approved for his faithfulness, courage and skill, the Master Canoneer is an active Engineer; also this Castle hath cost about four thousand pounds, yet are not this poor pilgrim people weary of maintaining it in good repair, it is of very good use to awe any insolent persons, that putting confidence in their ship and sails, shall offer any injury to the people, or contemn their Government, they have certain signals of alarums, which suddenly spread through the whole country; were there but one Town more erected in this Government, which were one and thirty, it would joyn all the Towns in the same neighbourly together, excepting Spring-field. Thus are these people with great diligence provided for these daies of war, hoping the day is at hand wherein the Lord will give Antichrist the double of all \*her doings, and therefore they have nursed up in their Artillery garden some who have since been used, as instruments to begin the work; but that which gives the greatest hope concerning this particular, is this, that these times afford more souldiers depending on the Lord Christ through faith for deliverance and true valour, then any age since Antichrist began to fall, without which, all these preparations were but as so many traps and snares to catch a people in, and to the which these Commanders and souldiers are daily exhorted, and therefore let all people know that desire the downfall of New England, they are not to war against a people only exercised in feats



of war, but men who are experienced in the deliverances of the Lord from the mouth of the Lion, and the paw of the Bear; and now woe be to you, when the same God that directed the stone to the forehead of the Philistine, guides every bullet that is shot at you, it matters not for the whole rabble of Antichrist on your side, the God of Armies is for us a refuge high. Shela.

[To be continued.]

---

---

A SUMMARY NOTICE OF THE FIRST SETTLEMENTS MADE BY WHITE PEOPLE WITHIN THE LIMITS WHICH BOUND THE STATE OF TENNESSEE.

I. *In East Tennessee.*

IN the spring of 1768, a few adventurers, from the neighbourhood of Raleigh in North Carolina, crossed the mountains, westwardly, in search of a new place of residence. And, having explored the country on Watauga River, they selected a spot there, made some preparation, returned, and, the same year, moved over their families, ten in number, to live in the interminable wilderness.

At the head of this little colony was James Robertson, afterwards so extensively known by the title of General; whose name the early history of Tennessee, if ever written in detail, will exhibit on many a page.

This now became a place of rendezvous to all who followed their footsteps over the same stupendous heights. And so many gathered in, from the Carolinas and Virginia, that, within three years, they could muster nearly three hundred soldiers.

But, in the very infancy of the settlement, by a treaty with the Cherokees, held under authority from the government of the last mentioned province, a boundary was established, to run from the White-Top Mountain in a west direction to Holston River, on a parallel of latitude of about  $36^2$  degrees. The inhabitants of Watauga were, consequently, left on Indian ground, in no better condition

than that of trespassers. And it was not long before they were ordered by Alexander Cameron; to move off. Cameron was deputy agent from the government of England, resident among the Cherokees. But part of the Cherokees, notwithstanding his zeal, expressed a desire that the trespassers might be permitted to remain, provided they would make no further encroachments.

This favourable symptom was not long neglected. But Robertson and John Bean were deputed by these tenants at will, in 1771, to treat with their landlords, and agree upon articles of accommodation and friendship. The attempt succeeded. For, though the Indians refused to give up the lands gratuitously, they consented, for a stipulated amount of merchandize, muskets and other articles of convenience, the value of the whole estimated at five or six thousand dollars, to lease for eight years, all the country on the waters of Watauga. After this the settlement increased with still greater rapidity than before.

The next year, Jacob Brown, with a family or two, migrated from North Carolina, and settled on Nolichucky River, a step nigher to the scalpers. There he kept a little supply of goods suited to their taste and convenience, in order to maintain a traffic with them to advantage. And, by this means, ingratiating himself into their favour, he soon courted them to a treaty, in which he contracted for the lands on the Nolichucky, as had been done on the Watauga.

The property paid to the Indians in fulfilment of these covenants, was compensated for, in both cases, by sales of the lands. Those who advanced it reimbursed themselves from the settlers.

Thus a nursery of population was planted in East-Tennessee never to be eradicated.

But, far removed from the parent provinces, separated not only by trackless forests, but by numerous ranges of mountains, they were as little protected, controlled, or recollected, by any government whatever, as their cotenants, the bears. What people ever approached nearer to the imaginary state of nature? Yet they lived in extraordinary harmony among themselves, and in perfect amity with

the Cherokees, the only power by which they were recognized.

Multiplied, however, as they were, some more formal act of association had been considered as expedient. And, accordingly, a code of laws was drawn up to be signed by every individual. If any one should refuse he was to be debarred from its benefits. But there was no recusant.

What example does history furnish of a government more perfectly democratical than this? Magistrates were elected, under the denomination of trustees, by whom all controversies were to be decided, conformably to the written code. There was much energy in the system, and it proved very satisfactory.

Thus organized, their affairs continued prosperous, till the commencement of the revolutionary war. And so great had been the augmentation, that, in 1776, they could have raised seven or eight hundred riflemen.

But, when it appeared, that this grand conflict would inevitably become universal, Cameron sent very enticing letters to them, endeavouring with many fine promises of protection in case of their loyalty, to attach them to the British interest. The peril of their situation was too obvious; but they unanimously resolved, whatever the issue should be, to participate in the struggle for independence.

As soon as Cameron had ascertained this determination, a project was contrived to spread desolation over the whole settlement at once, by making a sudden incursion, and attacking it on all quarters by surprise. But the barbarous design was happily frustrated. The electrical flame of liberty, so spontaneous, so efficacious, was not confined to the atmosphere of civilization. Four white men, having long sojourned among the Cherokees, were entrusted with the bloody secret. But, true to the cause of humanity and freedom, they made their escape, and gave seasonable notice of the meditated invasion.

These tidings produced no inconsiderable terror. A large proportion of the people recrossed the Alleghany, and fled back for shelter to the several places of their nativity.



But the panic was not universal. Enough remained to man and maintain a garrison, situated on the Holston, near the Sycamore Shoals. Yet so sensible they were of their comparative weakness, that they delegated John Carter and George Russell, to repair to North Carolina, make a representation of matters, and solicit the interposition of that state, and the necessary assistance. The application was attended to, and measures adopted preparatory to their relief. All this new country was erected into a county, by the name of Washington. And the little republic, which originated not in opposition, but convenience, now became an integral part of the great commonwealth, within the chartered limits of which it was situated. The act of Assembly for this purpose bears date in December, 1777. But the settlers, at the suggestion of Robertson, had called their territory Washington District, several years before.

Robertson was captain of the garrison; and the next in command was Lieutenant John Sevier, so often afterwards elected governor of Tennessee.

In the fall of the same year, troops arrived from North Carolina and Virginia, who were joined by Robertson and seventy men from the garrison; the whole amounting to about eighteen hundred. They marched rapidly, struck home upon the Cherokees, vanquished wherever they came, ruined many towns, and destroyed stocks of provisions, and so crippled those savage enemies, that they were obliged to submit to terms. A treaty was agreed upon; and poor Cameron hurried himself to Pensacola.

The treaty was held in the spring following, at a place in the Holston called Long Island, under the joint authority of Virginia and North Carolina. Peace was mutually promised; and Robertson was appointed agent, to reside at some central place in the Cherokee nation, in behalf of the two associated states.

Only a paragraph more will be added to this article; the design being simply to trace the progress of the settlement till it required rank and permanence.

A powerful Cherokee chief had refused to join in the treaty, persisting in his attachment to the British; and,

with a few adherents, went down the Tennessee River, dissatisfied, and commenced a new settlement at a place called Chickamauga. Numbers followed him, prompted by a disposition to plunder and carnage. Discord ensued; and injuries to the whites, perpetrated by this mischievous party, became so frequent, following almost in contact with each other, that chastisement could no longer be delayed. Accordingly, in 1779, an expedition for that purpose was undertaken, commanded by Isaac Shelby, the late celebrated governor of Kentucky, then a resident in Washington county. It was directed specially against Chickamauga. Peaceable Indians were not to be molested. It proved effectual. Chickamauga fell; and the hostile wretches, partly disabled, and partly intimidated, were for the present innocuous.

---

## II. *In West Tennessee.*

A treaty, it is said, was held with the Cherokees in 1775, by Colonel Richard Henderson, by which they ceded to the whites the whole Kentucky country, and all the lands on the waters of Cumberland River. Room being thus presented, the same enterprising Robertson with ten men, including a negro, started, on the 6th of February, 1779, from the Holston settlement, to explore and take possession of the country on the Cumberland.

To appreciate the greatness of the undertaking, we must pause long enough to picture in our minds, an immeasurable forest in front, infested by ferocious beasts, and not without singular danger from ferocious bipeds; and follow in imagination these eleven heroes, as they penetrate three hundred miles into an untrodden undelineated wilderness.

Some information, it is true, had been obtained respecting the country from a daring company of hunters; who passed over Cumberland Mountain in 1768, and down the river almost to its junction with the Ohio, in quest of peltry and furs. Oby River lay in their route;

which then received its appellation from one of their party, named Obadiah Tyrrell. But the principal characters were Colonel Isaac Bledsoe and Gaspér Mansker.

From the tedious time of their absence, which was nearly a year, combined perhaps with the unrivalled length of their venatic excursion, they were afterwards currently styled the long hunters. To what privations will not man submit ! Flesh was their only food. And their other accommodations can be easily imagined.

But it proved a lucky adventure. And some of them built canoes, which they loaded with the spoils of the forest ; and then extended their trip to New Orleans by water, for the sake of a better market.

More than ten years had elapsed afterward, when Robertson and associates made their ingress into this land of fertility. They too passed along Oby River. And having arrived at its mouth, constructed a boat, in which they put three of the company, together with the baggage, to navigate down stream to a specified place on the Cumberland, near where the town of Nashville now flourishes. There they were rejoined by the rest of the eleven, who pursued their devious course on horseback. And there they vigorously engaged in the planting of corn.

But before the month of May, they had received an accession of thirty or forty persons more ; some from Holston ; some from Carolina ; some from Virginia ; and some from the new settlement at Lexington in Kentucky. And the planting of corn was still continued.

At length, leaving three men to hold possession and take care of the corn, the rest returned, to bring out their families in the fall following. But Robertson with several more went over to the Illinois country, to visit the French settlement there. And such was their speed, in this peregrination, that in July they had accomplished their return to Holston.

A new country is the place for migration. In October they started.

Robertson himself, with a number of men, driving their cattle and other live stock, set forward in the path to Kentucky, as the most practicable route, though circuit-



ous. And they had the good fortune to arrive at their corn patches on Cumberland some time in November, and to find all safe.

The families were put afloat, to descend the Tennessee River in boats ; and from its mouth to work up the stream to the place of their destination. But the veil of futurity covered many of the difficulties which they had to encounter. They lost in their way thirty or forty of their number, some killed and some taken prisoners, by a party of Indians, who collected about Chickamauga, to attack them unexpectedly. And, besides other accidents, they were much delayed by the unusual freezing of the river. The severest winter ensued, that white people have ever experienced in the Mississippi valley : it was April before their voyage was completed.

And trials were yet in reserve. The greetings were scarcely over, when, in the same month of April, 1780, the Indians recommenced hostilities, which they continued, till the termination of the war then existing with England. And they were frequently troublesome afterwards, till retaliative vengeance, inflicted upon a number of their villages, taught them to dread a people of such martial energy, so rapidly increasing in numbers and extent against every obstacle and every pressure.

There were few on my arrival in the country in 1796, but could recite scenes of barbarity. General and Mrs. Robertson enumerated to me about twenty persons, then living, in West Tennessee, who had lost their scalps. The number that had lost their lives was unknown.

But the days of perturbation were past. In 1783, the country had been formed into a county, called Davidson, and taken under the protection of North Carolina, to which state it belonged. This was of some consequence to the people ; though their own prowess, under favour of the Deity, was their best security.

On their first arrival, they had adopted a mode of government, suited to their exigencies, and similar to that, of which we have seen a specimen on the waters of Holston. It proved equally salutary, and continued, till their organization into a county.

Those who admire fortitude will not fail to contemplate the circumstances of the first settlers about Nashville. Notwithstanding they were surrounded by so many concentric circles of danger and perplexity, human assistance was impracticable. Their nearest neighbours, of the same complexion, were two hundred miles distant, the settlement at Lexington scarce able to protect itself. And to that in Holston it was three hundred, and roadless. But they were preserved, and are now a rich and vigorous people.

HILHAM, *July* 1, 1816.

NOTE ON THE COUNTY OF HILLSBOROUGH, N. H. DECEMBER 1, 1816. BY JOHN FARMER.

*Situation and Boundaries.* **T**HE tract of country which constitutes the county of Hillsborough, extends from the southern line of the state of New Hampshire to north latitude  $43^{\circ} 27'$ . It has Grafton county on the north, Rockingham on the east, Middlesex in Massachusetts on the south, and Cheshire on the west. The boundaries as established by a law passed 16 June, 1791, are as follow; Beginning at the southeast corner of Nottingham-West, thence westerly by the state line to the south east corner of Rindge, thence by the easterly side lines of Rindge, Jaffrey, Dublin, Packersfield, Stoddard and Washington to the north easterly corner of Washington, thence by the northerly side line of Washington to the south westerly corner of Fishersfield, thence on the westerly side line of Fishersfield and New London to the north westerly corner of said New London, thence on the north easterly lines of New London and Kearsarge, and the northerly side line of Andover to Pemigewasset River, thence on the line of the county of Strafford and Rockingham to the bounds first mentioned. Hillsborough was made a county in 1771, when the state was divided into five counties.

The courts were for many years holden at Amherst; but as the population increased, the convenience of the inhabitants required a half shire town, and Hopkinton was selected. The courts are now holden at Amherst in February and October; at Hopkinton in April and September. The settlement of the county commenced previous to the memorable war with the Indians, called "King Philip's war." The first English inhabitants seated themselves at Dunstable, which was for many years a frontier town, and suffered considerably from the Indians.

*Rivers.* The county of Hillsborough is watered by Merrimack,\* Nashua, Souhegan, Piscataquog, Contoocook and Blackwater Rivers. The River Merrimack forms the boundary on the eastern line for a few miles below Hooksett Falls, and above the town of Boscawen to the northern line of the county. Nashua runs through the south eastern part of the county and empties into the Merrimack at Dunstable. Souhegan rises in Worcester county and enters the county of Hillsborough at New Ipswich, pursuing a course through Mason, Wilton, Milford, Amherst and Merrimack, and empties into Merrimack River in the town of Merrimack. Piscataquog, which is formed of numerous branches, rises in the vicinity of Lyndeborough and Weare, and empties into the Merrimack, in Bedford. Contoocook is a long, narrow stream, watering the towns in the western part of the county, and empties into the Merrimack near the divisional line between the towns of Concord and Boscawen. Blackwater River passes through the northern part of the county, and empties into the Merrimack at Salisbury.

*Climate.* In order to shew the difference of temperature, according to Fahrenheit's thermometer, in the southerly and northerly part of the county, the following result of thermometrical observations from August, 1810, to August, 1811, is subjoined.

\* It is not known when the River Merrimack was discovered. It was anciently spelled Merramacke and Monnomacke. In Moll's folio Geography, printed in 1701, it is spelt Marimake.



<i>At Amherst, Lat. 42° 57'.</i>					<i>At Salisbury, Lat. 43° 27'.</i>				
	greatest.	least.	mean.			greatest.	least.	mean.	
1810. August,	85°	55°	71°	20'	1810. August,	86°	50°	77°	
Septemb.	87	41	67	17	Septemb.	80	45	68	
October,	83	30	54	58	October,	76	22	54	
Novemb.	60	16	33	27	Novemb.	57	17	37	
Decemb.	54	3	31	96	Decemb.	51	5	29	
1811. January,	57	*4	30	86	1811. January,	50	*11	25	
February,	51	*13	30	30	February,	44	*2	28	
March,	64	1	41	06	March,	62	10	45	
April,	78	22	51	40	April,	76	26	56	
May,	80	35	63	95	May,	76	36	65	
June,	95	60	74	67	June,	92	45	77	
July,	98	60	75	98	July,	94	54	78	
	Mean—52° 20'					Mean—53° 25'			
* Below zero.					* Below zero.				

The observations at Amherst were made by the writer of this article near the meeting house, about 7 miles from Merrimack River and 12 from the southern line of the state. Those at Salisbury were made by Doctor Job Wilson, author of an Enquiry into the nature and treatment of the Prevailing Epidemic called the Spotted Fever, from which the foregoing statement is taken. In comparing the mean of the two statements, it will be found that in the spring and summer months there was a greater mean degree of heat at Salisbury; that in the winter months a greater degree prevailed at Amherst. The number of fair days at Amherst was 244, of rain 90. At Salisbury during the same period the number of fair days was 236, of rain 75.

*Population.* The following table exhibits the population of each town at every period an enumeration has been made. The numbers for 1775, are taken from the appendix to the third volume of Dr. Belknap's Hist. N. Hamp. The numbers at the other periods have been taken from the official account published by Col. Daniel Warner, who took the census in 1790, 1800 and 1810.

*Population of the several towns in the county of Hillsborough, in 1775, 1790, 1800 and 1810.*

<i>Towns.</i>	<i>1775.</i>	<i>1790.</i>	<i>1800.</i>	<i>1810.</i>	<i>Remarks.</i>
Amherst	1428	2369	2152	1554	One of the Narraganset townships, No. 3, called Souhegan-West.
Andover	179	645	1133	1259	
Antrim	"	528	1059	1277	
Bedford	495	898	1182	1296	One of the Narraganset townships, denominated No. 5.
Boscawen	585	1108	1414	1828	
Bradford	"	217	740	1034	Formerly called Raby, and joined with Mason in the enumeration of 1775.
Brookline	"	338	454	538	
Deering	"	928	1244	1363	Formerly very extensive in its limits, and granted by Massachusetts.
Dunbarton	497	917	1222	1257	
Dunstable	705	632	862	1046	First called Dantzick : joined with Sutton in 1775.
Fishersfield	130	331	526	567	
Francistown	200	982	1355	1451	Taken from Lyndeborough and other towns.
Goffstown	831	1275	1612	2000	
Greenfield	"	"	934	990	Antrim, H and Hillsboro' were joined with this town in enum. of 1775.
Hancock	"	634	1120	1184	
Henniker	367	1127	1476	1608	Formerly part of Dunstable : Indian name Nisitisset.
Hillsborough	"	798	1311	1589	
Hollis	1255	1441	1557	1529	Formerly called Derryfield.
Hopkinton	1085	1715	2015	2225	
Litchfield	284	357	372	384	No. 5 of the Narraganset townships, called Souhegan-East.
Lyndeborough	713	1280	976	1074	
Manchester	285	362	557	624	No. 5 of the Narraganset townships, called Souhegan-East.
Mason	501	922	1179	1077	
Merrimack	606	819	926	1048	

<i>Towns.</i>	1775.	1790.	1800.	1810.	<i>Remarks.</i>
Milford	"	"	939	1117	Taken from Amherst.
Mont Vernon	"	"	"	762	Taken from Amherst.
New Boston	569	1202	1491	1619	
New Ipswich	960	1241	1266	1395	
New London	"	311	617	692	First called Heidleburg.
Nottingham-West	649	1064	1267	1386	
Peterborough	546	861	1333	1529	
Salisbury	498	1372	1767	1913	
Sharon	"	259	428	446	
Society land	177	319	146	199	
Sutton	"	520	876	1328	Joined with Fishersfield in 1775.
Temple	491	747	867	941	
Warner	262	863	1569	1838	
Weare	837	1924	2517	2634	
Wilnot	"	"	"	298	Composed of part of New London and Kearsarge Gore.
Wilton	623	1105	1017	1017	
Windsor	"	120	249	238	Formerly called Campbell's Gore.
Duxbury	83	169	"	"	Does not exist as a town.
Derryfield Gore	"	30	"	"	
Kearsarge Gore	"	"	179	128	
Lyndeboro' Gore	38	38	"	"	
Peterboro' Gore	107	"	"	"	
Total	15986	32871	43911	49282	



The increase in 15 years, from 1775 to 1790 was 16,885, in ten years from 1790 to 1800, 11,040, in ten years from 1800 to 1810, 5,371. Hillsborough ranks as the second county in population in New Hampshire, and has but 893 inhabitants less than the county of Rockingham. The number of votes for governor returned to the Secretary's office from Hillsborough county in 1813, was 8074; in 1814, 8811.

*Academies.* There are two incorporated Academies in the county. The first, the New Ipswich Academy, was incorporated in 1789, and is still in operation. "Its fund is about 2,333 dollars." The Aurean Academy at Amherst was incorporated in 1790, but for want of efficient funds discontinued about 1801. A public school succeeded, which has been generally supported by assessments for tuition. This is usually kept about half the year.

*Manufactures.* According to a statement furnished by Col. Warner, there were in the county of Hillsborough, in 1810, 56 tanneries, which tanned yearly, 150 hides and 12,000 skins;—1 paper mill, making 12,000 dollars worth of paper, annually;—2 distilleries, producing 5000 gallons of spirits, annually;—38 fulling mills, which fulling 126,500 yards of cloth, annually; and dressed about 90,000 yards of thin cloths;—10 shearing machines;—35 carding machines, going by water, which carded 158,000 pounds of wool, yearly;—2 woollen spinning mills,—2 oil mills, producing 6000 gallons per annum;—5 nail cutting machines, making 10 tons per annum;—6 trip hammers;—16 hatters, making 4000 fur, and 6000 wool hats, annually;—5490 private looms, which wove 1,158,160 yards of cloth, annually. The number of these manufactures has since greatly increased.

*Newspapers.* The first printing press set up in the county, was established at Amherst by Nathaniel Coverly, who died at Boston, the present month at the age of 75. The newspapers, with the dates of their establishment, the names of the editors, will be exhibited in the

following table. They have all been published at Amherst.

<i>Newspapers.</i>	<i>Editors.</i>	<i>Date of establishment, &amp;c.</i>
"Amherst Journal and the New Hampshire Advertiser."	{ Nathaniel Coverly.	16 January, 1795.
"The Village Messenger."	{ William Biglow and Samuel Cushing.	9 January, 1796.
	{ Samuel Cushing alone.	Com. 12 July, 1796.
	{ Samuel Preston.	18 April, 1797.
"The Farmers Cabinet."	{ Joseph Cushing.	11 November, 1802.
	{ Richard Boylston.	10 October, 1809.

The first of these papers was discontinued about the close of the year 1795, and the "Village Messenger" December, 1801. The "Farmer's Cabinet" still continues.

*Professional men.* The number of attorneys in the preceding towns is between thirty and forty;—the number of settled clergymen of all denominations is about forty. One of the Judges of the Superior Court, and two of the Court of Common Pleas, one of the senators elect and representative to Congress, reside in this county.

REV. A. HOLMES, D. D. Cambridge.

LETTER FROM DR. FRANKLIN TO DR. HEBERDEN, 1759, ON  
INOCULATION FOR SMALL POX.

AMHERST, N. H. October 8, 1816.

*Rev. Sir,*

AT this time I send you an account of the success of Inoculation in Boston, written by Dr. Franklin, and sent by him to Dr. Heberden of London. I have transcribed it from a pamphlet printed in London in 1759.

With much respect,

Your obedient servant,

JOHN FARMER.

REV. DR. HOLMES.

LONDON, Feb. 16, 1759.

HAVING been desired by my greatly esteemed friend Dr. William Heberden, F. R. S. one of the principal physicians of this city, to communicate what account I

had of the success of Inoculation in Boston, New-England, I some time since wrote and sent to him the following paper, viz. About 1753 or 54, the Small Pox made its appearance in *Boston, New England*. It had not spread in the town for many years before, so that there were a great number of the inhabitants to have it. At first endeavours were used to prevent its spreading by removing the sick or guarding the houses in which they were; and with the same view Inoculation was forbidden; but when it was found that these endeavours were fruitless, the distemper breaking out in different quarters of the town, and increasing, Inoculation was then permitted.

Upon this, all that inclined to inoculation for themselves or families, hurried into it precipitately, fearing the infection might otherwise be taken in the common way; the numbers inoculated in every neighbourhood spread the infection likewise more speedily among those who did not choose Inoculation; so that in a few months, the distemper went thro' the town, and was extinct; and the trade of the town suffered only a short interruption, compar'd with what had been usual in former times, the country people during the seasons of that sickness fearing all intercourse with the town.

As the practice of Inoculation always divided people into parties, some contending warmly for it, and others as strongly against it; the latter asserting that the advantages pretended were imaginary; and that the Surgeons, from views of interest concealed or diminished the true number of deaths occasion'd by Inoculation, and magnify'd the number of those who died of the *Small Pox* in the common way: It was resolved by the Magistrates of the town, to cause a strict and impartial enquiry to be made by the Constables of each ward, who were to give in their returns upon oath; and that the enquiry might be more strictly and impartially, some of the partisans for and against the practice were join'd as assistants to the officers, and accompany'd them in their progress through the wards from house to house. Their several returns being received, and summ'd up together, the numbers turn'd out as follows,



Had the Small Pox in the common way.		Of these died.		Received the distem- per by Inoculation.		Of these died.	
Whites.	Blacks.	Whites.	Blacks.	Whites.	Blacks.	Whites.	Blacks.
5059	485	452	62	1974	139	23	7

It appeared by this account that the deaths of persons inoculated were more in proportion at this time than had been formerly observed, being something more than one in a hundred. The favourers of Inoculation however would not allow that this was owing to any error in the former accounts, but rather to the Inoculating at this time many unfit subjects, partly through the impatience of people who would not wait the necessary preparation, lest they should take it in the common way; and partly from the importunity of parents prevailing with the Surgeons against their judgment and advice to inoculate weak children, labouring under other disorders; because the parents could not immediately remove them out of the way of the distemper, and thought they would at least stand a better chance by being inoculated, than in taking the infection, as they would probably do, in the common way. The Surgeons and Physicians were also suddenly oppressed with the great hurry of business, which so hasty and general an Inoculation and spreading of the distemper in the common way must occasion, and probably could not so particularly attend to the circumstances of the patients offered for Inoculation.

Inoculation was first practised in *Boston* by Dr. Boylstone in 1720. It was not used before in any part of *America*, and not in *Philadelphia* till 1730. Some years since, an enquiry was made in *Philadelphia* of the several Surgeons and Physicians who had practised Inoculation, what numbers had been by each inoculated, and what was the success. The result of this enquiry was, that upwards of 800, (I forget the exact number) had been inoculated at different times, and that only four of them had died.—If this account was true, as I believe it was, the reason of greater success there than had been found in *Boston*, where the general loss by Inoculation used to be estimated at about one in 100, may probably be from this circumstance; that in *Boston* they always

keep the distemper out as long as they can, so that when it comes, it finds a greater number of adult subjects than in *Philadelphia*, where since 1730 it has gone through the town once in four or five years, so that the greatest number of subjects for Inoculation must be under that age.

Notwithstanding the now uncontroverted success of Inoculation, it does not seem to make that progress among the common people in *America*, which was at first expected. *Scruples of conscience* weigh with many, concerning the *lawfulness* of the practice: And if one parent or near relation is against it, the other does not choose to inoculate a child without free consent of all parties, lest in case of a disastrous event, perpetual blame should follow. These *scruples* a *sensible Clergy* may in time remove.—The *expence* of having the operation performed by a Surgeon, weighs with others, for that has been pretty high in some parts of *America*; and where a common tradesman or artificer has a number in his family to have the distemper, it amounts to more money than he can well spare. Many of these, rather than own the *true motive* for declining Inoculation, join with the scrupulous in the cry *against it*, and influence others. A small Pamphlet wrote in plain language by some skilful Physician, and published, directing what preparations of the body should be used before the Inoculation of children, what precaution to avoid giving the infection at the same time in the common way, and how the operation is to be performed, the incisions dressed, the patient treated, and on the appearance what symptoms a Physician is to be called, &c. might by encouraging parents to inoculate their own children, be a means of removing that objection of the expence, render the practice much more general, and thereby save the lives of thousands.\*

B. FRANKLIN,  
of Philadelphia.

NOTE. I have copied this without any alteration, having preserved the orthography and words italicised.

\* A Pamphlet of this description, entitled PLAIN INSTRUCTIONS FOR INOCULATION IN THE SMALL POX, was written by Dr. Heberden, who, generously, and at his own private expence, printed a very large impression of them, and put them into the hands of Dr. Franklin for gratuitous distribution in *America*.

## RHODE ISLAND STATE PAPERS.

[The following papers, transcribed from the Records of Rhode Island, were lately transmitted to the Secretary by SAMUEL EDDY, Esq. a Corresponding Member of the Society. Selected and authenticated by himself, the Secretary of that State, they have the fullest claim to credence, as official and correct. Extracts from some of them have been printed; but none of them are known to have been published entire. Sensible of the importance of State Papers to the Illustration of the early history of our country, we readily insert these valuable documents in our Collections. The notes accompanied the papers. EDIT.]

## DEPOSITION OF ROGER WILLIAMS, 1682.

Narragansett, 18 June, 1682, Ut Vulgo.

**I TESTIFY**, as in the presence of the all making and all seeing God, that about fifty years since, I coming into this Narragansett country, I found a great contest between three sachems, two (to wit, Connonicus and Meantinomy) were against Ousamaquin, on Plymouth side. I was forced to travel between them three to pacify, to satisfy, all their and their dependants spirits, of my honest intentions to live peaceably by them. I testify that it was the general and constant declaration, that Connonicus his father had three sons, whereof Connonicus was the heir, and his youngest brother's son Meantinomy (because of his youth) was his marshal and executioner, and did nothing without his uncle Connonicus' consent. And therefore I declare to posterity, that were it not for the favour that God gave me with Connonicus, none of these parts, no, not Rhode Island, had been purchased or obtained, for I never gat any thing of Connonicus but by gift. I also profess, that being inquisitive of what root the title or denomination Nahiganset should come, I heard that Nahiganset was so named from a little island (between Puttequomscut and Musquomacuk on the sea and fresh water side. I went on purpose to see it, and about the place called Sugar Loaf Hill I saw it, and was within a pole of it; but could not learn why it was called Nahiganset. I had learnt that the Massachusetts was



called so from the Blue Hills.) A little island thereabout, and Connonicus' father and ancestors living in those southern parts transferred and brought their authority and name into these northern parts, all along by the sea side, as appears by the great destruction of wood all along near the sea side. And I desire posterity to see the gracious hand of the Most High (in whose hands is all hearts) that when the hearts of my countrymen and friends and brethren failed me, his infinite wisdom and merits stirred up the barbarous heart of Connonicus to love me as his son to the last gasp; by which means I had not only Meantinomy, and all the Corveset sachems my friends, but Ousamaquin also, who, because of my great friendship with him at Plymouth, and the authority of Connonicus, consented freely (being also well gratified by me) to the Governor Winthrop's and my enjoyment of Prudence, yea of Providence itself, and all the other lands I procured of Connonicus which were upon the Point, and in effect whatsoever I desired of him. And I never denied him nor Meantinomy whatever they desired of me, as to goods or gifts or use of my boats and pinnace, and the travels of my own person, day and night, which though men know not, nor care to know, yet the all seeing eye hath seen it, and his all powerful hand hath helped me, blessed be his holy name to eternity.

ROGER WILLIAMS.

---

DEPOSITION OF WILLIAM CODDINGTON, 1677.

WILLIAM CODDINGTON, Esq. aged about seventy six years old, testifieth upon his engagement, that when he was one of the magistrates of the Massachusetts Colony, he was one of the persons that made a peace with Canonicus and Meantinomy, in the behalf of all the Narragansett Indians, and by order from the authority of the Massachusetts, a little before they made war with the Pequod Indians. Not long after, this deponent went from Boston to find a plantation to settle upon, came to Aqued-neck, now called Rhode Island, where was a sachem

called Wennametonomey, and this deponent went to buy the island of him, but his answer was, that Canonicus and Meantinomy were the chief sachems, and that he could not sell the land. Whereupon this deponent, with some others, went from Aquedneck Island unto the Narragansett, to the said sachems, Canonicus and Meantinomy, and bought the island of them, they having, as I understood, the chief command, both of the Narragansett and Aquedneck Island. And further saith not. Taken upon engagement in Newport, on Rhode Island, the 27th day Sept. 1677.

Before P. SANFORD, *Assist.*

See Williams' Letter, Hazard, vol. I. 613.

FORM OF GOVERNMENT, AGREED TO BY THE FIRST SETTLERS ON  
THE ISLAND OF RHODE ISLAND.

"The 7th day of the first Month 1638.

WE whose names are underwritten do here solemnly, in the presence of Jehovah, incorporate ourselves into a body politic, and as he shall help, will submit our persons, lives, and estates, unto our Lord Jesus Christ, the King of Kings and Lord of Lords, and to all those perfect and most absolute laws of his, given us in his holy word of truth to be guided and judged thereby." In the margin are these references: Exod. 24. 3. 4. 2 Chron. 11. 3. 2 King. 11. 17.

The first act passed under this form is in these words: Dated 3 Month 13 day 1638. "It is ordered that none shall be received as inhabitants or freemen, to build or plant upon the Island, but such as shall be received in by the consent of the body, and do submit to the government that is or shall be established according to the word of God."

This form continued till the 12th of March, 1640. On the 16th of March, 1641, they thus describe their government. "It was ordered and unanimously agreed upon, that the government which this body politic doth attend unto in this Island and the jurisdiction thereof, in favour

of our Prince, is a Democracy, or popular government (that is to say) it is in the power of the body of freemen, orderly assembled, or major part of them, to make or constitute just laws by which they will be regulated, and to depute from among themselves such ministers as shall see them faithfully executed between man and man.

It was further ordered by the authority of this present Court, that one be accounted a delinquent for doctrine, provided it be not directly repugnant to the government, or laws established." And on the 17th Sept. following (1641) they passed this act. "It is ordered that that law of the last Court, made concerning liberty of conscience in point of doctrine, is perpetuated."

---

#### LAWS OF RHODE ISLAND, 1647.

THE Charter from the Earl of Warwick, &c. bears date March 17, 1643 (4.) The first election under this Charter, was held at Portsmouth, May 19, 1647. A code of laws was then agreed on, which is introduced with the following words.

#### *"For the Province of Providence.*

Forasmuch as we have received from our Noble Lords and Honoured Governors, and that by virtue of an Ordinance of the Parliament of England, a free and absolute charter of civil incorporation, &c. We do jointly agree to incorporate ourselves, and so to remain a body politic by the authority thereof. And therefore do declare to own ourselves and one another to be members of the same body, and to have right to the freedom and privileges thereof, by subscribing our names to these words following, viz.

We whose names are here underwritten, do engage ourselves, to the utmost of our estates and strength, to maintain the authority, and to enjoy the liberty, granted to us by our charter, in the extent of it according to the letter, and to maintain each other, by the same authority, in his lawful right and liberty.



And now sith our Charter gives us power to govern ourselves, and such other as come among us, and by such a form of civil government as by the voluntary consent, &c. shall be found most suitable to our estate and condition, It is agreed by this present Assembly, thus incorporate, and by this present act declared, that the form of government established in Providence Plantations is Democratical,\* that is to say, A government held by the free and voluntary consent of all, or the greater part of the free inhabitants.”†

And now to the end that we may give each to other (notwithstanding our different consciences touching the truth as it is in Jesus, whereof upon the point we all make mention) as good and hopeful assurance as we are able, touching each man's peaceable and quiet enjoyment of his lawful right and liberty, We do agree unto, and by the authority abovesaid enact, establish and confirm these orders following.”‡

This code concludes with these words.

“These are the [a word wanting] laws that concern all men, and these are the penalties for the transgressions thereof, which by common consent are ratified and established throughout the whole Colony. And otherwise than thus, what is herein forbidden,§ all men may walk as their consciences persuade them, every one in the name of his GOD. AND LET THE LAMBS OF THE MOST HIGH WALK

\* This word is recorded in large capitals.

† The charter requires, not only that the form of government be agreed to “by the voluntary consent of all or the greatest part of them,” but that the laws, constitutions, &c. “be agreed unto by the free consent of all, or the greatest part of them.” And this was literally the case until the granting of the second charter, (1663.) The laws passed by the Court of Commissioners (six representatives from each of the towns of Providence, Portsmouth, Newport and Warwick) were not obligatory, until ratified by a majority of the freemen in their town meetings.

‡ There is nothing in this code that savours of the bigotry or superstition of the times, unless the act against witchcraft may be considered such, which is expressed in these words. “Witchcraft is forbidden by this present Assembly to be used in this colony, and the penalty imposed by the authority that we are subjected to, is felony of death.” In the margin 1 Jac. 12. is referred to. Their charter required “that their laws, constitutions and punishments, be conformable to the laws of England, so far as the nature and constitution of the place will admit.”

§ There is nothing in these laws on the subject of religion or conscience, except what is contained in the act respecting oaths, and which is transcribed in a note to the answer of the General Assembly to the “proposals” of Carr, Cartwright, &c. May 13, 1665.

IN THIS COLONY WITHOUT MOLESTATION, IN THE NAME OF JEHOVAH THEIR GOD, FOREVER AND EVER."\*

---

LETTER FROM O. CROMWELL TO RHODE ISLAND COLONY.

*To our trusty and well beloved the President, Assistants, and Inhabitants of Rhode Island, together with the rest of the Providence Plantations, in the Narragansett bay, in New England.*

Gentlemen,

YOUR agent here hath presented unto us, some particulars concerning your government, which you judge necessary to be settled by us here. But by reason of the other great and weighty affairs of this commonwealth, we have been necessitated to defer the consideration of them to a further opportunity. In the mean time we were willing to let you know, that you are to proceed in your government according to the tenor of your charter, formerly granted on that behalf; taking care of the peace and safety of these plantations, that neither through any intestine commotions, or foreign invasions, there do arise any detriment, or dishonour to this Commonwealth, or yourselves, as far as you, by your care and diligence, can prevent. And as for the things which are before us, they shall, as soon as the other occasions will permit, receive a just and fitting determination. And so we bid you farewell, and rest

Your very loving friend  
OLIVER P.

29 March, 1655.

\* The men, who at such a time, and under such circumstances, could frame such a law, and undeviatingly adhere to its principle, though stigmatized as "hereticks," "schismatics," "antinomians," "anabaptists," "quakers," "seekers," "soul murderers," "children of Korah," "beasts of prey," "the very dregs of familism," "incendiaries of commonwealths," "troublers of churches," (and even in the year 1809) the "rebel band;" or by any, or all the opprobrious epithets that bigotry, or party zeal can cast upon them, yet will I,— "reverence on this side idolatry."

## LETTER OF COMMISSIONERS TO CAPTAIN DENNISON.

*To our Honoured and beloved friends, Capt. Dennison and Mr. Thomas Stanton, to be communicated to such of the English as it may concern, at Pequot, or other parts of the Country.*

Beloved Countrymen,

IN the Consideration of the great charge that lieth on every one, to endeavour the preservation of the peace of this country, and every member thereof, we do therefore make use of this present occasion to the end premised. And you may please to understand that we have, at this very instant, a very solemn and serious information from the Narraganset Sachems, by a chief Counsellor of them, that they take it ill of some English who live near to Uncas his fort, for that (as they say) those English by their scouts discover to the Nanhegans the approach of the Narragansetts, and thereby to defeat their designs in war against Uncas. And further these Indians do say, that they think those English that so do, doe not do it by order of any Colony or Court, but for money given under hand by Uncas. And further they tell us, that the inlanders, called Mocquages, are in great number coming down against Uncas. And these Indians fear that those Inlanders, finding any such carriage from those English, by making signs, or shouting, to give Uncas notice as aforesaid of his enemies approach, that then those inlanders may be enraged, and either take or kill such scout or scouts. And now on this information, these Narragansett Sachems desire us so to inform you, for they desire a fair corresponding with the English. Thus much only we shall add, that is, that you our loving countrymen do well consider of the matter, and weigh the grounds of those actions, so as, if possible, the peace of the country, and therein your own safety, with ours, may be preserved, for that is the utmost extent of our desires. And we only desire to inform you, but no way to judge in either part



of the Indians quarrels, one with another. And so we rest your affectionate countrymen and friends.

From the General Court of Commissioners  
held for the Colony of Providence Plan-  
tations, at Warwick,

pr. mo JOHN SANFORD,

Dated July 4, 1657.

*Gent. Recorder.*

'This was written "upon the request of the Narragansett Sachems."

---

FROM THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY TO THE COMMISSIONERS OF THE  
UNITED COLONIES.\*

Honour'd Gentlemen,

THERE hath been presented to our view, by our Honoured President, a letter bearing date Sept. 25th. last subscribed by the Honour'd Gentlemen

\* The proceedings of the Commissioners of the United Colonies to which this paper refers, we have thought it useful to extract from Hazard's Collections, II. 370. EDIT.

The Commissioners being informed that divers quakers are arrived this summer at Road Island and entertained there, which may prove dangerous to the Colonies, thought meet to manifest their minds to the Governor there as followeth :

GENT.

We suppose you have understood that the last year a company of quakers arrived at Boston upon no other account than to disperse their pernicious opinions, had they not been prevented by the prudent care of that Government, who, by that experience they had of them, being sensible of the danger that might befall the Christian religion here professed by suffering such to be received or continued in the country, presented the same unto the Commissioners at their meeting at Plimouth, who upon that occasion commended it to the General Courts of the United Colonies, that all quakers, ranters, and such notorious heretics might be prohibited coming among us, and that if such should arise from amongst ourselves speedy care might be taken to remove them (and as we are informed) the several jurisdictions have made provision accordingly ; but it is by experience found that means will fall short without further care by reason of your admission and receiving of such from whence they may have opportunity to creep in amongst us or means to infuse and spread their accursed tenets to the great trouble of the Colonies if not to the subversion of the professed in them ; notwithstanding any care that hath been hitherto taken to prevent the same, whereof we cannot but be very sensible, and think no care too great to preserve us from such a pest, the contagion whereof (if received) within your Colony were dangerous, &c. to be diffused to the other by means of the intercourse especially to the places of trade amongst us ; which we desire may be with safety continued between us. We therefore make it our request that you, as the rest of the Colonies, take such order herein, that your neighbours may be freed from that danger, that you remove those quakers that have been received, and for the future prohibit their coming amongst you,

Commissioners of the United Colonies, concerning a company of people (lately arrived in these parts of the world) commonly known by the name of Quakers ; who are generally conceived pernicious, either intentionally, or at leastwise in effect, even to the corrupting of good manners, and disturbing the common peace and societies of the places where they arise or resort unto &c.

Now whereas freedom of different consciences, to be protected from inforcements, was the principal ground of our Charter, both with respect to our humble suit for it, as also to the true intent of the Honourable and renowned Parliament of England in granting of the same unto us ; which freedom we still prize as the greatest happiness that men can possess in this world ; therefore we shall, for the preservation of our civil peace and order, the more seriously take notice that those people, and any other that are here, or shall come amongst us, be impartially required, and to our utmost constrained, to perform all duties requisite towards the maintaining the dignity of his Highness, and the government of that most renowned commonwealth of England, in this Colony ; which is most happily included under the same dominions, and we so graciously taken into protection thereof. And in case they the said people called quakers which are here, or shall arise or come among us, do refuse to submit to the doing all duties aforesaid, as training, watching, and such other engagements as are upon members of civil societies, for the preservation of the same in justice and peace ; then

whereunto the rule of charity to yourselves and us, (we conceive) doth oblige you, wherein if you should we hope you will not be wanting ; yet we could not but signify this our desire ; and further declare that we apprehend that it will be our duty seriously to consider what further provision God may call us to make to prevent the aforesaid mischief ; and for our further guidance and direction herein, we desire you to impart your mind and resolution to the General Court of the Massachusetts which assembleth the 14th of October next. We have not further to trouble you at present, but to assure you we desire to continue your loving friends and neighbours, the Commissioners of the United Colonies.

Boston, Septem. 12. 1657.

Simon Bradstreet, President.  
Daniel Denison,  
Thomas Prence,  
John Mason,  
John Talcott,  
Theophilus Eaton,  
William Leete.

we determine, yea and we resolve (however) to take and make use of the first opportunity to inform our agent residing in England, that he may humbly present the matter (as touching the considerations premised, concerning the aforementioned people called quakers) unto the supreme authority of England, humbly craving their advice and order, how to carry ourselves in any further respect towards those people (     \*) that therewithal there may be no damage, or infringement of that chief principle in our charter, concerning freedom of consciences. And we also are so much the more encouraged to make our addresses unto the Lord Protector his highness and government aforesaid, for that we understand there are, or have been, many of the aforesaid people suffered to live in England, yea, even in the heart of the nation. And thus with our truly thankful acknowledgments of the honourable care of the honoured gentlemen Commissioners of the United Colonies, for the peace and welfare of the whole country, as is expressed in their most friendly letter, we shall at present take leave and rest,

Yours most affectionately, desirous of  
your Honour and welfare.

JOHN SANFORD, *Clerk of the  
Assembly.*

PORTSMOUTH, March 13th, 1657-58.

From the General Assembly  
Of the Colony of Providence Plantations.

To the much honoured John Endicot, Gov. of the Massachusetts. To be also imparted to the Hond. Coms. of the United Colonies at their next meeting, These.

\* obliterated.



## LETTER OF COMMISSIONERS TO JOHN CLARKE.

Worthy Sir and trusty friend, Mr. Clarke.

WE have found not only your ability and diligence, but also your love and care to be such concerning the welfare and prosperity of this Colony, since you have been intrusted with the more publick affairs thereof, surpassing that no small benefit, which formerly we had of your presence here at home, that we in all straits and incumbrances are emboldened to repair to you, for your further and continued council, care and help, finding that your solid and christian demeanour hath gotten no small interest in the hearts of our Superiors, those noble and worthy senators with whom you have had to do on our behalf, as it hath constantly appeared in your addresses made unto them, which we have by good and comfortable proof found, having plentiful experience thereof.

The last year we had laden you with much employment, which we were then put upon by reason of some too refractory among ourselves, wherein we appealed unto you for your advice, for the more publick manifestation of it with respect to our Superiors. But our intelligence it seems fell short in that great loss of the ship, which is conceived here to be cast away. We have now a new occasion, given by an old spirit, with respect to the Colonies about us, who seem to be offended with us, because of a sort of people called by the name of quakers, who are come amongst us, and have raised up divers who seem at present to be of their spirit, whereat the Colonies about us seem to be offended with us, being the said people have their liberty amongst us, as entertained into our houses, or into any of our assemblies. And for the present, we have found no just cause to charge them with the breach of the civil peace, only they are constantly going forth amongst them about us, and vex and trouble them in point of their religion and spiritual state, though they return with many a foul scar in their bodies for the same. And the offences our neighbours take against us, is be-

cause we take not some course against the said people, either to expel them from among us, or take such courses against them as themselves do, who are in fear lest their religion should be corrupted by them. Concerning which displeasure that they seem to take, it was expressed to us in a solemn letter, written by the Commissioners of the United Colonies at their sitting, as though they would bring us in to act according to their scantling, or else take some course to do us greater displeasure. A copy of which letter we have herewith sent unto you, wherein you may perceive how they express themselves. As also we have herewith sent our present answer unto them to give you what light we may in this matter. There is one clause in their letter which plainly implies a threat, though covertly expressed, as their manner is, which we gather to be this, that as themselves (as we conceive) have been much awed, in point of their continued subjection to the State of England, least, in case they should decline, England might prohibit all trade with them, both in point of exportation and importation of any commodities, which were an host sufficiently prevalent to subdue New-England, as not being able to subsist; even so they seem secretly to threaten us, by cutting us off from all commerce and trade with them, and thereby to disable us of any comfortable subsistence, being that the concourse of shipping, and so of all kind of commodities, is universally conversant amongst themselves; as also knowing that ourselves are not in a capacity to send out shipping of ourselves, which is in great measure occasioned by their oppressing of us, as yourself well knows; as in many other respects, so in this for one, that we cannot have any thing from them for the supply of our necessities, but in effect they make the prices, both of our commodities and their own also, because we have not English coin, but only that which passeth among these barbarians, and such commodities as are raised by the labour of our hands, as corn, cattle, tobacco and the like, to make payment in, which they will have at their own rate, or else not deal with us, whereby (though they gain extraordinarily by us) yet for the safeguard of their religion

may seem to neglect themselves in that respect, for what will not men do for their God.

Sir, this is our earnest and present request unto you in this matter, that as you may perceive in our answer to the United Colonies, that we fly, as to our refuge in all civil respects, to his highness and honourable Council, as not being subject to any others in matters of our civil State, so may it please you to have an eye and ear open in case our adversaries should seek to undermine us in our privileges granted unto us, and to plead our case in such sort as we may not be compelled to exercise any civil power over mens consciences, so long as human orders, in point of civility, are not corrupted and violated, which our neighbours about us do frequently practice, whereof many of us have large experience, and do judge it to be no less than a point of absolute cruelty.

Sir, the humble respects and acknowledgments of this Court and Colony, with our continued and unwearied desires and wishes after the comfortable, honourable and prosperous proceeding of his highness and honourable Council, in all their so weighty affairs, departs not out of our hearts, night nor day, which we could humbly wish (if it might not be too much boldness) were presented.

Sir, we have not been unmindful of your great care and kindness of those our worthy friends and gentlemen in that supply of powder and shot, and being a barrel of furs was returned in that ship, whereof Mr. Garret had the command, wherein was betwixt twenty and thirty pounds worth of goods shipped, the Colony hath taken order for the recruiting of that loss, which we cannot possibly get in readiness to send by this ship, but our intent is, God willing, to send by the next opportunity. And so with our hearty love and respects to yourself, we take our leave.

Subscribed, JOHN SANFORD *Clerk of the  
Assembly.*

From a Court of Commissioners  
held in Warwick, this present  
November the 5th 1658.



## THE COLONY OF RHODE ISLAND TO RICHARD CROMWELL.

May it please your Highness,

It was inexpressible sorrow to us to receive the tidings of your, and the three nations, and our own so great a loss in the late departure of your and the nations most renowned Lord and father. And it was and is as great a joy unto us, that it hath pleased God to provide for the three nations and ourselves, such a cordial as your Highness is, both in respect of your renowned stock, and also of that high worth and hope of which we have heard your Highness self to be. In whom our humble desires are, that the three nations and ourselves may find a healing of our so great a wound and stroke.

May it please your highness to know, that this poor Colony of Providence Plantations, mostly consists of a birth and breeding of the providence of the Most High. We being an outcast people, formerly from our mother nations in the Bishops days, and since from the rest of the New English over zealous Colonies: Our whole frame being much like unto the present frame and constitution of our dearest mother England, bearing with the several judgments and consciences each of other, in all the towns of our Colony, the which our neighbour Colonies do not, which is the only cause of their great offence against us. Notwithstanding this our outcast state, May it please your Highness to be informed that God was pleased to turn the heart of the late first great parliament towards us, in vouchsafing us a charter of incorporation and government, so that it pleased the then Lord Admiral (the Earl of Warwick) and the Honourable Commissioners, in the name and by the authority of parliament, by many of their gracious letters and orders to confirm and strengthen us. We have found (notwithstanding our sister Colonies' anger against us) high favour with the most honourable Council of State (established by authority of parliament) from whose noble hands we also received letters of gracious confirmation and refreshing. And lastly which is unspeakable mourning and joy unto us) your

Highness dearest father was pleased, under his own hand and seal, to refresh us also, as with the dew upon the grass, and as with a cloud of the latter rain unto us.

Illustrious Sir, for your Highness person, our deepest wishes and humble desires unto God (the father of lights) are for a double portion of your blessed father's spirit to be poured down into your Highness noble breast. And instead of an earthly crown (which his heavenly mind refused) we most earnestly wish your Highness and the Lords of your most Honourable Council to be crowned with the crown of wisdom and fortitude, prosperity and success, obedience and love of the nation; and, however, of humble patience and submission of the nations (in all your trials and changes) unto the most wise God, his most holy will and pleasure.

For ourselves, Gracious Sir, we dare not interrupt your high affairs with the particulars of our wilderness conditions, only we beg your eye of favour to be cast upon our faithful agent Mr. John Clarke, and unto what humble addresses he shall at any time present your Highness with, in our behalf.

And this we humbly pray at present, that as your Highness illustrious father, when he was necessitated, by his great hindrances, to suspend the determination of our matters, yet he was graciously pleased presently to refresh us with some gracious lines of confirmation and encouragement to our poor plantations and government (a copy of which our agent Mr. Clarke can present your Highness with) so is it our humble suit that we may rejoice in some such present gracious refreshment from the hand of your Highness also. Unto whom, Sir, we humbly hope to approve ourselves your Highness most humble and faithful subjects and servants.

The Colony of Providence Plantations in the Narraganset Bay in New England.

To the Sovereign and Illustrious his Highness the most renowned Richard Lord Protector of the commonwealth of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and the Dominions thereunto belonging. These in most humble wise presented.

This was ordered to be sent to Mr. John Clarke their agent, to be presented to his Highness for confirmation of their charter. It is without date, but was drawn at the Session of the Court of Commissioners (General Assembly) which commenced its Session the 17th. of May 1659.

[This address was never presented, as the power of Richard Cromwell had begun to decay before its date, and was wholly departed before it reached England. Ed.]

---

#### COMMISSION TO JOHN CLARKE.

WHEREAS we the Colony of Providence Plantations, in New England, having a free charter of incorporation given and granted unto us, in the name of King and Parliament of England, &c. bearing date An. Dom. one thousand six hundred forty three, by virtue of which charter this Colony hath been distinguished from the other Colonies in New England, and have ever since, and at this time, maintained government and order in the same Colony by administering judgment and justice, according to the rules in our said charter prescribed: And further, whereas there have been sundry obstructions emerging, whereby this Colony have been put to trouble and charge for the preservation and keeping inviolate those privileges and immunities, to us granted in the fore-said free charter, which said obstructions arise from the claims and encroachments of neighbours about us to and upon some parts of the tract of land, mentioned in our charter to be within the bounds of this Colony.

These are therefore to declare and make manifest unto all that may have occasion to peruse and consider of these presents, that this present and principal Court of this Colony, sitting and transacting in the name of his most gracious and royal Majesty Charles the second by the grace of God the most mighty and potent king of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, and all the dominions and territories thereunto belonging, &c. Do by



these presents make, ordain and constitute, desire, authorize and appoint, our trusty and well beloved friend, Mr. John Clarke, physician, one of the members of this Colony, late inhabitant of Rhode Island, in the same Colony, and now residing in Westminster, our undoubted agent and Attorney, to all intents and purposes, lawfully tending unto the preservation of all and singular the privileges, liberties, boundaries and immunities of this Colony, as according unto the true intent and meaning of all contained in our charter, against all unlawful usurpations, intrusions and claims, of any person or persons, on any pretences, or by any combination whatsoever, not doubting but the same gracious hand of Providence, which moved the most potent and royal power abovesaid to give and grant us the abovesaid free charter, will also still continue to preserve us, in our just rights and privileges, by the gracious favour of the power and royal Majesty abovesaid, whereunto we acknowledge all humble submission and loyal subjection, &c.

To our trusty and well beloved friend and agent, Mr. John Clarke of Rhode Island, Physician, now residing in London or Westminster.

Given in the twelfth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, Charles the second, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, &c. at the General Court holden for the colony of Providence Plantations, at Warwick, the 18th. day of October An : Dom. 1660.

---

#### DECISION OF CARR &C. RELATIVE TO MISQUAMACOCK.

WE, by the power given us by his Majesty's commission, having heard the complaints of some of his Majesty's subjects, purchasers of certain lands called Misquamacock, lying on the Eastern side of Pawcatuck river, and having likewise heard all the pretences of those by whom

they have suffered great oppressions, and considering the grounds from whence these differences and injuries have proceeded, and endeavouring to prevent the like for the future, do declare, that no colony hath any just right to dispose of any lands, conquered from the natives, unless both the cause of that conquest be just, and the lands lie within those bounds which the King by his charter hath given it, nor to exercise any authority beyond those bounds; which we desire all his Majesty's subjects to take notice of for the future, lest they incur his Majesty's displeasure, and suffer a deserved punishment. We likewise declare, that all those gifts or grants of any lands, lying on the eastern side of Pawcatuck river, and a North line drawn to the Massachusetts, from the midst of the ford near to Thomas Shaw's house, and in the King's Province, made by his Majesty's Colony of the Massachusetts, to any person whatsoever, or by that usurped authority called the United Colonies, to be void. And we hereby command all such as are therein concerned to remove themselves and their goods from the said lands, before the nine and twentieth day of September next. In the mean time, neither hindering the Pequot Indians from planting there this summer, nor those of the King's province, who are the purchasers, from improving the same, as they will answer the contrary. Given under our hand and Seals, at Warwick, April 4th. 1665.

ROBERT CARR	[L. S.]
GEORGE CARTWRIGHT	[L. S.]
SAMUEL MAVERICK	[L. S.]

---

COMMISSION FROM CARR &C. 1665.

WHEREAS by the authority given us by his sacred Majesty, our dread Sovereign, to provide for the peace and safety of all his Colonies here in America, and in a more especial manner for that part of it called the Narraganset country, and by his Majesty commanded now to be called the King's province: We did, by commission under our hands and seals, dated at Petaqumskocte

March the twentieth 1664, appoint, authorize, and in his Majesty's name require, Benedict Arnold, William Brenton, Esquires, John Coggeshall, James Barker, Joseph Clarke, William Field, Thomas Olney, Roger Williams, William Baulston, John Sanford, Randall Howldon, Walter Todd, John Porter and John Greene, Gentlemen, to exercise the power and authority of Justices of the peace or magistrates, throughout the whole compass of this his Majesty's province, and to do whatsoever they think best for the peace and safety of the said province, and as near as they can to the English laws, till his Majesty's pleasure be farther known therein; and in matters of greater consequence; any seven of them, whereof the Governor or Deputy Governor shall be one, shall be a Court to determine any business: Our intent and meaning was and is, that the said commission should be no longer in force, than until the 3d. of May next, and that then and thenceforward, the Governor and Deputy Governor, and all the Assistants for the time being of his Majesty's colony of Rhode Island &c. shall be Justices of the peace. And therefore by the power given us from his Majesty, we order and appoint the Governor and Deputy Governor, and all the Assistants of the said Colony, for the time being, to be and to exercise the authority of Justices of the peace in this the King's province, and to do whatever they think best for the peace and safety of the said province, and as near as they can to the English laws, till his Majesty's pleasure be farther known therein; and in matters of greater consequence, any seven of them, whereof the Governor or Deputy Governor shall be one, shall be a Court to determine any business. Given under our hands and seals, at Warwick, April 8th. 1665.

ROBERT CARR, [L. S.]  
GEORGE CARTWRIGHT, [L. S.]  
SAMUEL MAVERICK, [L. S.]



## PROPOSITIONS OF COMMISSIONERS CARR &amp;C. TO THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY.

WHEREAS the will and pleasure of his royal Majesty our Sovereign Lord and King is declared unto this Assembly (May 13. 1665) under the hands of his honourable Commissioners, and here presented by the Governor, consisting of five particulars, being as followeth, and recorded in the general records by order of the General Assembly.

It is his Majesty's will and pleasure,

1. That all householders, inhabiting this Colony, take the oath of allegiance; and that the administration of justice be in his Majesty's name.

2. That all men, of competent estates and of civil conversation, who acknowledge and are obedient to the civil magistrate, though of differing judgments, may be admitted to be freemen, and have liberty to choose and to be chosen officers, both civil and military.

3. That all men and women, of orthodox opinion, competent knowledge and civil lives, who acknowledge and are obedient to the civil magistrate, and are not scandalous, may be admitted to the sacrament of the Lord's supper, and their children to baptism, if they desire it, either by admitting them into the congregations already gathered, or permitting them to gather themselves into such congregations, where they may enjoy the benefit of the sacraments; and that difference in opinion may not break the bands of peace in charity.

4. That all laws and expressions in laws, derogatory to his Majesty, if any such have been made in those late troublesome times, may be repealed, altered and taken of (a word obliterated)

5. That this Colony be put in such a posture of defence that if there should be any invasion upon this Island, or elsewhere, in this Colony (which God forbid) you might in some measure, be in a readiness to defend yourselves, or if need be, to relieve your neighbours, ac-

ording to the power given you by the King in your charter, and to us in commission and instruction.

ROBERT CARR,  
GEORGE CARTWRIGHT,  
SAMUEL MAVERICK.

To the Governor or Deputy Governor,  
assistants and freemen of the colony  
of Rhode Island and Providence  
Plantations (part of a line obliterated)

It appears by an after entry, that these "proposals" bore date March 4. 1664, 5.

"Whereupon, and in a deep sense of his Majesty's most royal and wonderful grace and favour, more particularly and at large expressed in his gracious letters patents, lately given and granted unto this colony, in which is expressed and declared his Majesty's especial and tender care and indulgence extended to tender consciences, differing in matters of religious worship and concerns, and more especially in matters of forms of oaths, and ceremonies or circumstances relating thereunto, giving and granting to this corporation power to give and take such engagements as they shall think fit, being ordered by the General Assembly of this Colony, not contrary to, but as near the laws and customs of England as the constitution of the place will admit: Considering therein the liberty of conscience therein granted, the Assembly do, with one consent, acknowledge with all humble thankfulness the most tender respect and care by his royal Majesty expressed in the said royal charter, as also in these five propositions, for the good and welfare of this his Majesty's colony, and therefore, in all cheerful obedience to and observation of the premises, and therein minding the privilege granted to tender consciences, do in the first place order and declare, that whereas in this colony it hath been always accounted and granted a liberty to such as make a scruple of swearing and taking an

oath,\* that instead thereof they shall engage, under the penalty of false swearing, though they swear not in public engagement, as well as if they did swear, that therefore this most loyal and reasonable engagement be given, by all men capable within this jurisdiction, for their allegiance to the King &c. The form of which engagement shall be as followeth. You A. B. solemnly and sincerely engage true and faithful allegiance unto his Majesty, Charles the second, king of England, his heirs and successors, to bear, and due obedience unto the laws established, from time to time, in this jurisdiction to yield, unto the utmost of your power, according to the privilege by his said Majesty granted, in religious and civil concernments, to this colony, in the Charter; which said engagement, you make, under the peril and penalty of perjury." They then declared "that none shall have admission to vote for publick officers or deputies, or enjoy

\* Coddington's engagement under the *first* government, on the Island of Rhode Island, was in these words. "I William Coddington Esquire, being called and chosen by the freemen incorporate of this body politic to be a Judge amongst them, do covenant to do justice and judgment impartially according to the laws of God, and to maintain the fundamental rights and privileges of this body politic, which shall hereafter be ratified according unto God, the Lord helping me so to do.

WM. CODDINGTON."

The freemen engaged thus. "We that are freemen incorporate of this body politic do elect and constitute William Coddington Esquire, a Judge amongst us, and do covenant to yield all due honour unto him, according to the laws of God, and, so far as in us lies, to maintain the honour and privileges of his place, which shall hereafter be ratified according to God, the Lord helping us so to do." (March 7, 1638.)

Under the *second* government on the Island, the engagement was in these words. "To the execution of this office I judge myself bound before God to walk faithfully, and this I profess in the presence of God." (March 16, 1641.)

Among the laws of 1647 is this. "Forasmuch as the consciences of sundry men, truly conscionable, may scruple the giving or taking of an oath, and it would be no ways suitable to the nature and constitution of our place (who professeth ourselves to be men of different consciences, and not one willing to force another) to debar such as cannot so do, either from bearing office among us, or from giving in testimony in a case depending, Be it enacted by the authority of this present Assembly, That a solemn profession or testimony, in a Court of Record, or before a Judge of Record, shall be accounted throughout the whole Colony of as full force as an oath; and because many, in giving engagement or testimony, are usually more overawed with the penalty which is known, than with the Most High, who is little known in the Kingdoms of men, It is therefore further agreed and ordered, that he that falsifieth such a solemn profession or testimony, shall be accounted among us as a perjured person, and his penalty shall be" &c.

From the first settlement of the Colony to the present time, an *oath* could not be required of any one.



any privilege of freemen, till " they had taken this engagement.\*

\* It was " his Majesty's will and pleasure " thus expressed by his Commissioners, and the resolution of the Assembly thereon, relative to the oath of allegiance, and not the militia law which probably occasioned the difficulty mentioned by Brinley, (vol. 5. page 219) in his incorrect and partial account, and in which he says " the government and council passed an order for outlawing the people called quakers, because they would not bear arms, and to seize their estates." By the militia law now passed, the number of training days in each year were reduced from eight to six ; and the obligation to perform military duty, was not extended to any who were not obliged by the former law.

That the " engagement " of allegiance, and not the militia law, occasioned the difficulty mentioned above, is probable from the correspondence which appears to have taken place between the Commissioners and Coddington. The latter addressed a *paper* to the Commissioners dated March 9, 1664, 5, a reply to which was made by the Commissioners dated March 13, 1664, 5. " Coddington, Nicholas Easton and others," at the request of the Assembly, attended May 15, 1665, and received from them a copy of the Commissioner's reply and proposals, " for his and the rest's consideration to mind and obey accordingly. (These *papers* are not on record.)

This is farther evident from what took place at the session March 27, 1666. " There having been a long agitation about the engagement, that was enacted and agreed upon by the General Assembly in May last, that is thought to be too hard on the conscience by many, the Assembly, after much debate, have thought fit to choose a committee to consider of a way to mitigate the abovesaid engagement," &c. The committee were Benedict Arnold and Nicholas Easton. The following was the result, (agreeably to their report.) " The Assembly having seriously weighed the inconveniences that at present appear in this colony, by reason that many such as have been able and well qualified, active members in carrying on the affairs of this corporation, are now made incapable, for that they cannot give the engagement in that very form that was contrived by the serious advice of the General Assembly, in May 1665, and judged to be suitable to answer the most tender consciences, in the performance of their duty to his Majesty and to the colony : But some terms therein seeming to some too much touching on the conscience, which, whether it happen for want of understanding the scope of the terms, or by indeed seeing somewhat that is inconsistent with religious concerns, the Assembly being (as far as they can justify themselves therein) really willing to indulge men conscientious, or that solemnly profess so to be, do therefore, for the satisfaction of all such, order and declare, that such as are free in their consciences so to do," may take the engagement prescribed the May preceding, or if they choose, the oath of allegiance as prescribed in England. " But if any profess there are some words in either, which in conscience they cannot consent to say or use, yet if either in open Court, or before two magistrates that are engaged, as by a former law of the colony is therefore made, any such person that so doth solemnly profess his conscience is straitened, as afore is said, yet can and do, in words significant, there declare his allegiance and submission to his Majesty's government, as he is supreme head of the nation, and do profess seriously, that they resolve and intend to yield obedience, actively or passively, to the laws made by virtue of his Majesty's authority, every such, so promising or engaging," to be admitted to the privilege of a freeman. The difficulty probably consisted in that part which promised " due obedience unto the laws established from time to time," as by this they promised obedience to the militia law. And yet by the engagement to office prescribed May 3. 1665, the officer promised not only " true allegiance unto his Majesty, his heirs and successors, to bear," but " equal right and justice to do unto all persons, within this jurisdiction, to the utmost of his skill and ability, without partiality, according to the laws established, or that should be established." Coddington and Easton must both have taken this engagement, as they both were members from Newport in March 1666, and at the election in May 1666 the latter was chosen Deputy Governor, and the former assistant, and no alteration made in the engagement to office, or allegiance, or in the militia law.

To the third "proposal," they say, "This Assembly do, with all gladness of heart and humbleness of mind, acknowledge the great goodness of God, and favour of his Majesty, in that respect, declaring that as it hath been a principle held forth and maintained in this colony, from the very beginning thereof, so it is much on their hearts to preserve the same liberty to all persons within this colony, forever, as to the worship of God therein; taking care for the preservation of civil government, to the doing of justice, and preserving each other's privileges from wrong and violence of others."

To the fourth "proposal" "That all acts in the late troublesome times past" "derogatory to his Majesty" "were made void," &c. Then follows a long act respecting the militia, providing magazines, &c.

---

ADDRESSES TO THE KING, AND THE EARL OF CLARENDON, RESPECTING CHARTER RIGHTS.\*

To the King's most excellent Majesty,

*The humble petition and address of the Governor and Company of his Majesty's Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, in New England,*

Most humbly sheweth,

THAT whereas your Majesty's most humble subjects and supplicants, as soon as we heard of the joyful tidings of your Majesty's happy restoration to the possession of your royal crown and dignity, making our humble addresses by petition unto your royal majesty, in

\* These Addresses were dated May 3d. 1665, and sent by Col. Cartwright and lost, as appears by an entry Sept. 1666; when the Governor (W. Brenton) W. Baulston, W. Harris, J. Greene and J. Clarke were "desired and authorized to draw up the Colony's address to his Majesty, a letter to the Lord Chancellor, together with a letter to Col. Cartwright, and the ordering the manner of sending them. Also the copies of those formerly sent is left to the said committee, as they, in their wisdoms shall judge meet." Cartwright was taken by the Dutch, and lost all his papers, as Hubbard, p. 685, informs us.

which we employed that faithful and trusty agent Mr. John Clarke, did thereupon, by your Majesty's royal bounty, obtain a most free and ample Charter of incorporation, for our possessing, improving and governing the lands and islands in and of the Narragansett Bay and country in New England, which grant your Majesty was graciously pleased to make firm and good, to us and our successors forever, under the great seal; and that also done, after your Majesty had taken cognizance of the Indian Sachems submission of the said Country unto your Majesty, in the year 1662, in which they remembered an address of the same nature made some 18 years before, to your royal father of blessed memory, which their address was never, nor could be taken notice of until their late address aforementioned in 1662. In mean time we living and governing here, by virtue of a Charter granted in his late royal Majesty's name, by the Lords and Commons in 1643, the said Indians sold several considerable tracts of the Narragansett country unto people of this Colony, and received therefor full satisfaction, as in their said late address they do acknowledge: And indeed some thousand of pounds it hath cost the people of this Colony, in those purchases, even more than the other Colonies hath expended for ten times as much which they possess, who yet could not content themselves, but encroached on this small corner, not only dispossessing, molesting, captiveing and fining your Majesty's leige people here living, but also claiming all the Country by strange pretences of free purchases, and gifts by forced mortgages, from the Indians, therein including the Indians' rights unsold, with those aforesaid sold to some of this Colony. Whereupon it pleased your Majesty, in your royal wisdom, to send your honourable Commissioners to enquire into these matters, who have with exceeding travail and care, pains and patience, judgment and discretion, accordingly most honourably discharged the trust in them reposed: And upon finding the Indians to own their subjection, former and latter, and seeing the hard dealings by the other Colonies used to them and us, did for a present expedient, distinguish those lands from the rest of this your Majes-



ty's Colony, by the name of the King's province, and prohibited all Colonies from the exercise of jurisdiction therein : And after by a special commission, under their Honours hands and seals, did commit the government to the Governor and Council of this Colony, till your Majesty's pleasure be further known : All which being the effect of your Majesty's gracious and fatherly care of us your poor unworthy subjects : Thereby we feel much ease at present from great oppressors, and for it we return all humble thanks, as in duty bound : And however by this late result, our charter seemeth to be very much impaired, and as it were in part suspended for the present, yet we in all humility do confess and own your Majesty's royal wisdom, and the justice of those honourable persons, your Majesty's Commissioners, believing there is not any the least intent to make void our charter in any part, but rather to reconfirm and enlarge it. Wherefore we have made bold, in some other papers, humbly presented to the Right honourable the Earl of Clarendon, Lord high Chancellor of England, to declare some reasons why of right and necessity, the whole country of Narragansett, as in the very letter of the Charter, should belong to this your Majesty's Colony ; as also why the line between your Majesty's Colony of New Plymouth and us, should be settled accordingly, though at present somewhat shortened ; and for the more clear demonstration of the same matters, we have caused a draught to be made of Plymouth and Connecticut, and more particularly of this your Majesty's Colony lying between them, and herewith humbly presented it.

Therefore in the great experiences of your Majesty's most wonderful grace and favour shewed unto us, we prostrate ourselves in all loyalty and humility at your Majesty's feet, most humbly imploring your royal grace and favour, to restore your Majesty's royal grant to its former state and extent, readjoining the King's province to the rest, and so reconfirm unto us that your Majesty's said late royal grant, as it is under the great seal, and to set and settle our eastern bounds also accordingly. So shall we be encouraged to go on in propagating plan-

tations of that which lieth waste, and by God's help and your Majesty's gracious favour, shall be able to serve your Majesty in protecting and directing the Indians here living, instructing their children in learning and civil education, as also in putting this Colony in a posture of defence, promoting of trade, husbandry and fishing, and governing ourselves in peace and justice, under your Majesty, and forever devoted to pray for your Majesty's long life and greatness here, and eternal glory hereafter.

*These to the right honourable Edward Earl of Clarendon, Lord high Chancellor of England, most humbly presented.*

Right Honble.

HOWEVER there are upon us so very many and great obligations to your Lordship, for those unmerited favours hitherto extended unto this his Majesty's Colony, which here to recount would but add to your Lordship trouble to read, and to ourselves greater measure of shame, in that we have not, nor as yet cannot, save in empty words, any way return your Lordship any the smallest token of our acknowledgments, but are even in a wanting, and consequently in a craving condition for your Lordship's favour to be still our defender and relief. May it please your honour, this poor, suppressed, and almost extinguished Colony, next under God and his Majesty, owe even their all unto your Lordship; And however have not wherein else to shew their grateful acknowledgments did design to choose and set apart, out of this small tract, a competent and convenient tract of land for a farm of a thousand acres or thereabouts, and to have begged your Lordship's acceptance of the same, so as to own and dispose of it at your honour's pleasure and should take it as the greatest favour possible, your Lordship's acceptation thereof.

Now it so falls that a present seeming cloud passing over our Colony, hath eclipsed the splendour of our charter, and rendered us in sort incapable of disposing aught



in the far greater part of his royal Majesty's grant and of our absolute clear purchases from the Indians. But believing there is no intent, but that all will be restored to its clear and full extent unto us, in which we humbly implore your Lordship's favour to be our helper and protector. Some reasons we have made bold to present to your Lordship in two papers, shewing why of right and necessity that now called the King's province be still continued and adjoined to the rest of this Colony, and why the line between Plymouth Colony and us be established as in the map described, it being according to the very letter of the Charter to us granted. And have yet a further humble petition to your Lordship, concerning some help or encouragement towards fortification of this bay; which in very deed is the most excellent in New-England. Considering the climate, most healthful; site, most commodious; in the middle of the colonies; harbours most safe for the biggest ships that ever sailed the sea, and of all sorts whatsoever; and for outlet and inlet, so good as none can equal it; that in the hardest winters, when the Massachusetts and others, to the East and West, are fast locked up with strong doors of ice, this is always open; besides the conveniency of the main land and islands, at the very entrance so near each other, easy to be secured by forts in either channel. One means, may it please your Lordship, to encourage the growth of, and give strength to, this his Majesty's Colony, would be by some act of grace, extending some peculiar privilege, in point of freeness of commerce, hence to other his Majesty's dominions, with some ease, in some measure, as to taxes upon that is imported or exported, though but for some years. But we dare not direct your Lordship's wisdom, but only implore your Honble. countenance in what shall seem best, only one thing shall be bold to propose, concerning an estate that is bequeathed in England for the pious end of propagating the gospel, in converting, or at least instructing, the Indians in the knowledge of moral virtues, and by degrees to know God. Here are the greatest number of Indians living in the confines of this little spot, that are in any part of New-



England besides ; and however those which are grown up to ripe years, in their wild and uncivil manners, will hardly leave their own sensual customs, yet were there a school erected, with means to maintain it, for the bringing their children, some to learning, and some to handicrafts for the increase of manufactory, there woud in a few years, by the blessing of the Lord, appear a very hopeful change, and in one generation, they would, in a great measure, be made happy, and also be a mean of good advance unto his Majesty's interest in these parts, under the government by his Majesty already here established unto us under the great seal : And therefore we humbly implore your Lordship's favour in furthering this good word, if so it shall in your honour's wisdom appear to be.

And thus craving your Lordship's pardon for our extreme boldness and importunity, we shall humbly recommend to your Honble. consideration the perusal of our humble petition to his royal Majesty, herewith presented to your Lordship's view, humbly craving your Lordship's favour to cover or excuse our boldness, or any other errors therein (to us unawares) committed ; and so far to extend your Honour's favour to us, as we may thereby be restored to that happiness of enjoying that most ample grant, in its full extent, the which we own ourselves your Lordship's greatly obliged for procuring the same at first, but most exceedingly bound to your Lordship for those high favours mentioned in your Honble. letter to us, therein declaring such unexpected regard to us, as was and is wonderful, and hath emboldened us thus to presume to give your Lordship this further trouble by the hands of this noble and Honble. gentleman, Colonel Cartwright, to whom and the other Honble. Commissioners we are most deeply engaged for that exceeding care, pains and travail, taken in our behalves, and the most unbiassed resolutions by their Honour's proceeds declare, upon the hearing of all differences, so as we have cause, and hope shall have, to bless the Lord and the King's Majesty, and return all humble thanks to your Lordship for this happy visitation by these Honble. persons, whereby those incredible oppressions we indured, of

scorn and contempt, slander and reproach, threatening and molestation, captiveing and imprisoning, fining and plundering the people of this Colony, is now made clear before their Honours: And therein clearly discovered a combination of all the Colonies to root us up and expose us to ruin in seeking out new places of the wilderness, there to struggle with all sort of difficulties, as in the beginning of the plantation they forced us to, and denied us relief in greatest dangers, which our sufferings could not be known to any but God and ourselves, until this time of hearing was come. But not to give your Lordship more trouble at this time, we humbly cast ourselves and cause at your Lordship's feet, and with all cheerfulness subscribe ourselves, in behalf of this his Majesty's Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations,

Your Lordship's most humbly and  
faithfully devoted servants.

*Some reasons humbly presented unto the Right Honble. Edward Earl of Clarendon, Lord high Chancellor of England, by the Govr. and Compy. of his Majesty's Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, shewing why it is both right and of necessity, that the part of the said Colony, distinguished by the name of the King's province, should remain to the said Colony.*

1. FORASMUCH as we have had possession, by free purchase, in some part of the middle of the Narragansett country, by the Indian sale, about seven or eight and twenty years, besides what was before (that time) granted to the four towns of Providence, Portsmouth, Newport and Warwick.

2. For that the said country is wholly and clearly contained in the grant made in his late Majesty's name, by the Lords and Commons, in 1643, before the Indians surrendered themselves and lands unto his late Majesty's government and protection, which grant was since confirmed, and that which Mr. Wells under hand got of the same country was prohibited, being never passed at Council table nor registered.

3. For that the Indians, since the said grant, have sold several parts of the said country, and taken full satisfaction for it of people of this Colony, who bought and possessed it quietly, until in this four or five years the other Colonies, by clandestine purchases and forced mortgages, have encroached both upon that these people had purchased as aforesaid, and the rest as yet unsold, and this is fully cleared to be true by the Indian Sachems own acknowledgments, in their address to his royal Majesty in April, 1662, which address was, by the honourable Commissioners, Sir Robert Carr, Knight, George Cartwright and Samuel Maverick, Esqrs. here produced, and to the said Sachems read, and by them clearly understood and owned.

4. Forasmuch as the whole is contained in his Majesty's late royal grant to this Colony in 1663, and to divide the same in two several parts will render both so inconsiderable as that neither will in any measure be sufficient for any competent number of people to live upon, besides the inconveniences that will arise by mixture of one with the other which would render both in a state of much trouble and discouragement to people for building or settling upon it except contained in one entire tenure as granted to the Colony aforesaid and under that one government.

5. For that the whole is considered to be fully granted in our patent under the great seal containing all that is now called the King's province, and the rest is no way answerable unto the least of the other Colonies in quantity, as by map calculated in that respect according to true information and knowledge, and herewith presented, it doth appear, so that on either part (if parted) there can be no competency to raise any considerable supply of provisions for trade for his Majesty's other plantations; nor can this Colony grow to any maturity of strength to serve his Majesty, but groan under the weight of poverty, and be subjected still to the will of the other Colonies to give what they please for the little we raise, we being not able to transport it, as being not worth while, far abroad,



to make the best of it, because of the little quantity thereof.

6. For that by experience we have found, that by reason of the interruption this Colony hath had in the possessing the Narraganset, now called the King's province, which interruptions was by force from the other Colonies, as it is cleared to the Honourable Commissioners aforementioned, many of the people of this Colony have been forced to expose themselves to seek out other plantations, to their utter ruin and undoing, and some into Plymouth claims 12 or 16 miles from Rhode Island ; which had we had the use of that said Narraganset Country, would have in a good measure sufficed and encouraged our own people, and have given strength and growth to the Colony to have set upon trading and fishing, &c.

7. And lastly that country of the Narraganset of right belongs to this Colony, not for the aforesaid reasons only, but also for that although the Sachems did about 20 years since submit it and selves to his Majesty's late royal father, of glorious memory, yet no cognizance could be or was then or ever after by his said Majesty taken of the same, nor until the Sachems made their last address unto his royal Majesty, in the year 1662, which their address being taken notice of and it mentioning the said country and owning it to be contained in our former grant, &c. his most royal Majesty was thereupon and thereafter however graciously pleased to give and grant the said Narraganset country expressly unto this corporation, all it and the rest under the name of the English Colony of Rhode Island, &c. as in the said charter, under the great Seal, is more particularly mentioned, which said grant we humbly and cheerfully expect to be firm and good, and will so be accounted and confirmed by his Majesty's royal grace to us and ours forever : And the rather because his Majesty granted that which the Indian Sachems had so freely and fully surrendered to his royal will and pleasure to order and dispose.

*Some reasons humbly presented to the Right Honble. Edward Earl of Clarendon, Lord high Chancellor of England, by the Gov. and Company of his Majesty's Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, for settling the Eastern line according to the meaning and letter of the Charter.*

1. BECAUSE that line entrencheth not on Plymouth patent (such as it is) for that it is not bounded by the sea on the south in that grant, but by a river called Narraganset river, no such river being known.

2. Because Rhode Island lieth as enclosed, and in a manner embayed, within the land which Plymouth would have to be within their jurisdiction: And yet it is the Narraganset bay and therefore good reason that the main land inclosing and so near adjoining to the island should pertain to it, especially being expressly granted by his royal Majesty in our late charter, in express words, three miles to the east of the most easterly and north easterly part of the said bay.

3. Because the Island being small, scarcely holding three miles broad, any great part of it, and fifteen long, the inhabitants, especially on that side the island lying very near the main, are forced there to winter their cattle, and otherwise also to keep them there, which land hath otherwise never been improved by Plymouth, but it hath lain waste near forty years since they first began that plantation. Besides, many of ours for mere necessity, have bought lands near the water on that side of the Indian owners, and possessed it many years peaceably; it being so very remote from Plymouth town and from any town of that Colony, as that it would be of little use to them if they had it.

4. Because the nearness of that land on the east side is by experience an annoyance to this government, by being only at present out of the jurisdiction of this Colony there being farms made by some of this Island people, just over the river within call of the Island, where any that are culpable ( ) by the law here,

make their escape over and there are out of reach, even ( ) Plymouth town so very remote, that under three or four days time we (

) whatever the occasion be, in which time the offender is enabled to make a final escape, nor can we make the chief \*part of this colony but on this Island, having none else fit, as this, which is indeed hard to be equalized in New-England for reception and safe riding of vessels of all sorts and in all seasons, and hardest frosty winters, which is not so in any other parts of this country.

5. Because the main land on the east side as aforesaid is so near the Island, and the river between so convenient, that a town on that side would answer to them on this side very commodiously on all occasions of relief or defence; and indeed this Colony can never be secured from invasions, if that side (for such a quantity as is mentioned in our charter) be not in this jurisdiction and at its devotion, it lying so remote from Plymouth, as aforesaid, that it cannot answer them to fortify it, it being near fifty miles from them by land, but above 100 by water.

6. Because the people of this Island there settled and settling themselves, having been used to and lived in this government, do earnestly long still to be under the protection and direction thereof, as also they being so near us and so very remote from Plymouth, by which means it is very difficult for them to attend their Courts of Justice.

7. Because the native Indians, both Sachems and others, not only, and often, in former times have mentioned and desired to be in, or under this government, but even also of late, since we received the late royal grant under the great seal, have by word and writing desired they might be esteemed, deemed and owned, within this jurisdiction, having always for near thirty years had very near, frequent and friendly commerce and intercourse with us,



GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF RHODE ISLAND TO GOVERNMENT OF  
PLYMOUTH.

Newport, November. 2d. 1671.

Much Honrd. and beloved friends,

THESE are to give you to understand, that your loving and welcome lines, both of Sept. 14th. and 29th. last past, hath been communicated unto us by our Honrd. Govr. &c. the contents of both being very much obliging, and doth indeed move us to be thankful unto the Most High, for preserving us yet in peace, and diverting the cloud which he was pleased to let hang over the country, threatening a storm of war, or the sad effects that attend thereupon as burning, massacring, and destroying persons and estates, which would inevitably have followed upon an absolute breach with the natives, as we were well aware of. And it exercised our minds, and put us upon labour and charge to withstand or prevent it. Neither can we but, together with you, acknowledge the goodness of the Lord, in so mercifully sparing the country. Also acknowledge your prudent and patient proceedings in that matter, and your candid respect and great affection expressed unto us, in giving us seasonable information of your apprehensions, resolutions and conclusions had, taken and made, concerning those matters. And you may assure yourselves, that you may expect from us, as occasion shall require it, such demonstrations of our love and duty to yourselves, as is becoming us, not only as we are English subjects, to one and the same king, but also as neighbours and friends, very nearly obliged to love and serve your Honrs. in all sincerity. And it is not a little grievous unto us, that we cannot procure the like cause from our honored the Colony of Connecticut, from whom we meet with very hard, harsh and undesirable passages, which we would be glad they would forbear. But they are put upon it by the ambition and covetousness of some few. And truly it presseth upon us very much, to complain to our Sovereign for relief, which, if we be forced to do, it

is not difficult to conclude what issue it may produce over the whole country. But were it possible to prevent such an issue without evident ruin to ourselves, &c. we should willingly adhere to such advice as might tend unto the peace and safety of the whole. But not further to trouble your Honors at present we rest,

Your very affectionate friends and neighbours, the General Assembly of his Majesty's colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, convened October 25. 1671. Signed by order of said Assembly, pr. JOHN SANFORD, *Clerk*.

To the Right Worshipful Thomas Prince Esq. Govr. of his Majesty's colony of New Plymouth, to be communicated to the rest of the Honord. Council and Genrl. Court there. These present with care.

---

GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF RHODE ISLAND TO GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
OF CONNECTICUT.

Newport, Oct. 25th. 1676.

Honrd. Gentlemen,

WE cannot omit to manifest to you our absolute dislike of your late proceeds (if our information be true) which from credible persons of our Colony have been asserted, and confirmed by several of yours, and some in authority, that you have, by order of your Court, determined to deprive us of our just rights and privileges in the Narraganset country (alias King's province) graciously granted to us in our charter by his Majesty, and confirmed by his Honrd. Commissioners. By virtue of which power, we have peaceably enjoyed the government, disposition, and other privileges therein, for several years past. Therefore much strange that you should, under pretence of subduing the Indians, monopolize our privileges, by warning our inhabitants from settling upon their own plantations in said Narraganset, that were

forced, by reason of the late war with the natives, to desert their habitations for the security of their lives, with what else of their stock and moveables they could preserve, till way, by the providence of God, should be made for their return to their own as aforesaid. It is well known that the United Colonies did desert several of their out plantations, and some were by the enemy drove and necessitated so to do, for safety of their lives. If for that cause only, the colonies should lose their charter rights, and particular persons their lands and privileges, it would to them (and all rational men) appear ridiculous, and without doubt disapproved by his Majesty, if it should come to a hearing. We are very apt to believe, that if matters come to a just inquiry concerning the cause of the war, that our Narraganset Sachems, which were subjects to his Majesty, and by his foresaid Commissioners taken into protection, and put under our government, and to us at all times manifested their submission by appearing when sent for.\* Neither was there any manifestation of war against us from them, but always the contrary, till by the United Colonies they were forced to war,† or such submission at it seems they could not subject to, thereby involving us into such hazards, charge and losses which hath fallen upon us in our out plantations, that no Colony have received the like, considering our number of people. But admit the cause never so just, approved and allowed by his Majesty, on your parts, as to the said war, as its well known and owned that his subjects have liberty to pursue his known enemies, in order to subdue them, in any part of his dominions where they come, and cannot but be owned a great favour, and that for such kindness or privilege, the said inhabitants should lose their possessions, cannot but be looked at a great oppression and ingratitude, which to deal plainly is our case (if information be true as

\* There is evidently an omission here.

† By the charter of 1663, it is declared "That it shall not be lawful to or for the rest of the Colonies to invade or molest the native Indians, or any other inhabitants, inhabiting within the bounds and limits hereafter mentioned (*that is of the Colony*) (they having subjected themselves unto us, and being by us taken into our special protection) without the knowledge and consent of the governor and company of our Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations."



aforesaid.) Is it not sufficient that, as God hath made you (with the assistance of the Pequods and other Indians) instruments to subdue those you made war with, and have had many privileges in our said Colony without interruption from us : and for our said kindness you endeavour to reward us with the depriving us of our just rights, and our inhabitants of their settlements upon their own again, will appear very unjust. And further to suggest, that the land was left void, and therefore free for others to settle, we say, in as much as our authority saw cause to draw our people into a nearer compass, thereby to preserve their lives and estates (which true wisdom would lead all men to) did thereby maintain our Colony in being. But had our Colony been wholly deserted, and the people and authority vanquished, there might have been some colour. So hoping you will take the premises into your serious consideration, and avoid any future provocations by threats or actions, in our aforesaid boundaries ; otherwise you must expect our opposition to the utmost of our abilities. And further know, that our intentions are (if violated of our just rights by your authority) do purpose with all expedition to make application to his Majesty, the consequence of which may prove inconvenient to some. But blame not us who are forced thereto ; but its rather our hearts desire, peaceably to enjoy our own, and with you and all men to live neighbourly and friendly, which is the true desire of your very loving friends and neighbours.

Signed by order of the General  
Assembly sitting Oct. 25. 1676.  
Pr. JOHN COGGESHALL, *Clerk*  
*of the Assembly.*

To the Honrd. the Genl. Assembly of Connecticut  
Colony, if sitting, or to the Honrd. the Govr. and  
Council of said Colony, these present with care.

## NUMBER OF INHABITANTS IN RHODE ISLAND.

Counties.	Whites.	Blacks.	Indians.	Total.	Towns.
1730.					
Newport,	4,958				Newport, Portsmouth, New Shoreham and Jamestown.
Providence,	5,884				Providence, Warwick and E. Greenwich
King's County,	4,460	1,648	,985	17,935	Westerly, N. Kingstown and S. Kingstown.
1748.	19,755	3,101	1,272	34,128	
1755.	35,939	4,697	Blacks & Indians.	46,636	
1774.	54,435	3,761		1,482	59,678
<hr/>					
1783.					
Newport,	10,194	837	168	11,199	
Providence,	16,962	428	150	17,540	
Washington,	11,835	782	516	13,133	
Bristol,	2,309	119	43	2,471	
Kent,	7,238	176	112	7,526	
				<hr/>	51,869 total.
1791.					
Newport,	-	-	-	14,300	
Providence,	-	-	-	24,391	
Washington,	-	-	-	18,075	
Bristol,	-	-	-	3,211	
Kent,	-	-	-	8,848	
				<hr/>	68,825 total.

Years.	Whole number.			
1730	-	-	-	17,935
1748	-	-	-	34,128
1755	-	-	-	46,636
1774	-	-	-	59,678
1783	-	-	-	51,869
1791	-	-	-	68,825

HISTORY AND DESCRIPTION OF ABINGTON, (MASS.) AUG. 1816.

**ABINGTON** is an interior town of the county of Plymouth. It lies in latitude  $42^{\circ} 9'$  N. longitude  $70^{\circ} 47'$  W. ; and is bounded northerly on Hingham, Weymouth and Randolph, about six miles ; easterly on Scituate one, and on Hanover five miles ; southerly, on Pembroke and Bridgewater ; and westerly also on Bridgewater several miles. It is distant from Plymouth twenty miles N. W. ; from Boston (by turnpikes) seventeen S. S. E. ; from Hingham cove ten miles S. ; from Weymouth landing seven S. ; and from Hanover four corners, six miles W. Incorporated June, 1712.\*

The original growth of this township was chiefly walnut, oak, beech, birch and white pine. This tract, which is a moist and strong soil, and in some degree rocky, has general elevation ; yet not of very unequal surface. It may be, as an entire township, the best grazing district in the county of Plymouth.

Much of the southeast section of this town was, and yet continues swampy, as well as rocky. Hence the popular name, "Little Comfort," yet in use for that region ; a tract of cedar swamp, with an intermixed growth, exists there, while in the northeast a long ridge of elevated pasture of a good soil continues, from its original growth, to be called "Beech Hill." With this exception, there seems to be not any other remarkable hills.

Abington and its vicinity formerly afforded large supplies of square and ranging timber, as well as masts, to the numerous ship yards seated below. The hurricane or gale of October, 1804, prostrated an extensive tract of timber forest trees, chiefly white pine, of which it was remarked, that the second growth fell while the first then

\* *Abington* in Berkshire, England, is 56 miles N. W. of London, and 7 south of Oxford. It has stated fairs, chiefly for horses and cattle, and is a well built town. It furnishes malt, sacking and sail cloth. There was a period when several towns in the American colonies took this name ; in some instances, probably, from the title of a popular nobleman, the Earl of Abington.



survived the gale. The loss of one or two persons only in this place, in timber trees, was then estimated at \$10,000.\* Forest trees, have in some instances become an article of nurture; one lot of oak, now of size to be felled as fuel, was, in 1780, in part a tilled field.

Uplands produce the best timber trees, those of the swamps not being in equal estimation.

Fuel is now valued, as it may be more or less remote from Weymouth Landing, being from five to four dollars the cord. The remaining wood lands are chiefly in the northwest section, while the northeast also, near Accord Pond, is in woods, and unsettled.

The inhabitants of Abington, an emigration chiefly from Weymouth, have hitherto pursued, in some respects, similar modes in the improvement of lands; an attention generally to the breed and subsistence of cows, with the productions of the dairy, being the prime object. It also takes the lead in the county, in supplies for the flesh market of beef and mutton; many are professed butchers, who are constant in their attendance at the markets of Boston, Plymouth, Duxbury, and intermediate shore towns. The cattle are purchased at the Brighton fairs, and the sheep chiefly at Scituate, Marshfield, and other places, not depending on itself for either, although some sheep are reared for their wool, yet not in great numbers. There may be 1500 sheep or more kept in Abington.

The arable lands are productive. Indian corn, winter rye, and oats, yield, on an average, corn twenty five, rye fifteen, and oats forty bushels the acre.

From the prevalent moisture of the soil, the crops of upland hay are abundant, while the fresh meadow, of which there is some near the brooks, is not of the best quality. One of its brooks, after passing into Pembroke, and then into Bridgewater, took the name "Poor Meadow Brook," in the last named town, before the year 1680.

\* In a tract of 500 acres, owned by the Mr. Reeds, the gale of Sept. 23, 1815, caused similar and more extensive destruction of timber trees.

Attention is given to orchards, and some cider is sent to market, yet not in great quantity.

The "Bicknell apple," so termed, is here cultivated. It yields a great proportion of juice, but as to quality is rather watery. Some other kinds, better adapted to the purposes of cider, should be introduced, for the soil and situation is generally propitious to fruit, we should suppose, in the northwest section of the town.

With respect to cider, as to quality as well as abundance, Middleborough has ever been unrivalled, as producing the best in the country; the soil and aspect, and it may be the species of fruit, having peculiarities of adaptation.

It were to be wished, therefore, that an attention to the planting of new orchards should be excited and encouraged in that extensive township, as combining both private and publick utility, for even in case of emigration, the value of the alienated farms would be enhanced. The price of cider, as well as its scarcity, at the present period, compared with ten or twenty years since, shows a remarkable deficiency.

A gentleman, who dwelt on a farm in the north section of the town of Plymouth, made these remarks, under the year 1742—3. "A failing fruit year, canker worms, drought, a failure of herbs, roots and grain. My farm yielded but fifteen barrels of cider, which produced forty eight the year before." At that period, more cider was made, even in the town of Plymouth, in a year, than at the present period in some interior towns; but the annals of agriculture and orcharding will doubtless ever present unequal comparative results, attributable to a variety of causes.

*Ponds and Brooks.* *Accord Pond*, an half mile in diameter, and intersected in early annals by the colony line,\* N. E. and S. W., is common to Hingham, Scitu-

\* 1640. The commissioners, who ran the colony line, thus describe it. — "From the mouth of the brook that runneth into Conohasset marshes (which we call by the name of the Bound Brook) with a strait and direct line to the middle of a great pond that lyeth on the right hand of the upper path, or common way, that leadeth between Weymouth and Plymouth; close to the path as we go along; which was formerly named (and still we desire may be called) Accord Pond; ly-

ate, and Abington, the town first named taking near half of it, while the remainder is again bisected by the corner bounds of the other two. The water is deep. An outlet, which admits alewives from the sea, after traversing the whole length of Hingham, mingles with tide waters at Gen. Lincoln's mills.

The name of this pleasant pond, which is situated near the post road from Boston to Plymouth, was probably first given by the planters of Hingham and Scituate, when adjusting their town lines. It affords to anglers a place of agreeable pastime, being almost within view of two taverns.\*

This is the only permanent natural pond in which Abington has any claim.

On the northern confines of the town is the source of several brooks, running through the Town, S. E. indicating a general elevation on the north border, being a part of the ridge which separates the waters of Neponset and Weymouth from those of North River and Taunton River. All these brooks are in dry seasons in a degree intermittent.

*Beaver Brook*, the most permanent, arises near the limits of Randolph, traverses the west part of this town and the east of Bridgewater, where it becomes a tributary to the great river.

Another brook, a longer stream,† passes, as has been noticed, into Pembroke, and then into Bridgewater, yet more easterly.

There are two others, one of which is a tributary to North River in Hanover. It is very rare that any fish other than eels, are taken in the brooks. The mill ponds

ing about 5 or 6 miles from Weymouth southerly, and from thence with a strait line to the southernmost part of Charles River, and 3 miles southerly inward into the country, according as it is expressed in the Patent."

Signed, William Bradford,  
Israel Stoughton,  
John Endicott,  
Edward Winslow.

This line was completed in 1664, and is now the north bound of Scituate, Abington, Bridgewater, Easton, Marshfield, Attleborough and Cumberland, to Patucket River.

\* Leonard's in Scituate, and Whiton's in Hingham.

† The longest tributary, in this quarter, to Taunton River.



afford pickerel and perch. This town is an exception to any alewife fishery privileges within its boundaries. All these brooks run from Abington and none into it. In very wet seasons, when the ponds are full, some of the water of the great pond in Weymouth, will flow southerly, which shews that the colony line is, in this part of it, on the height of land. This pond in Weymouth is one hundred and three feet above tide water level.

The description of mill erections on the several brooks is as follows: Grist mills five; saw mills seven; woollen factories two.

*Roads.* The turnpike road from New Bedford to Boston, passes through this town, and the common road from the upper part of Pembroke to Boston, with several cross roads to the sea coast towns, and those of the interior. The quality of the soil affords firm and pleasant roads, occasionally wet however in the eastern section, in the vernal and autumnal seasons.

*Schools.* There may be ten school districts conveniently dispersed. The annual average of such indigent persons as are supported by the town is generally fifteen persons.

In military affairs this place is an integral part of the third regiment, fifth division, furnishing nearly five companies, viz. one of artillery, one uniformed light infantry, two without uniform, and lately a company of riflemen.

*Manufactures.* An air furnace, now extinct, was erected many years since, by the late Aaron Hobart, Esq. who, during the revolution, furnished the publick with cannon and shot, made here. Bells have also been cast at this furnace, one of which 900lb. the largest in the county, still continues on the meeting house in the first precinct.

*Men's Shoes*, the making of which may employ a hundred persons, are made in quantity for the Boston market, where the leather is mostly purchased. This business is more peculiar to the north section of the town.

*Bricks* are made in sufficient quantity for the use of the inhabitants, and some for distant sale, from clay, which is found not far from the old meeting house. The clay of inferior quality.

*Cold Tacks*, so termed from the manner in which they are made, have become an article of important manufacture in this town. Their history is as follows. About the year 1786 Mr. Ezekiel Reed, who lived in the north part of Bridgewater, invented a machine to cut tacks and nails,\* which was immediately introduced at Abington, where it in a short period received great improvements, which progressed from that date to the present time. In the year 1815 not less than 150 millions of tacks were made here, and sold in Boston, New York, Philadelphia, and Baltimore, while some were sent to a greater distance.

Capt. Jesse Reed, son to Ezekiel, has lately invented a machine to make tacks *by one operation*, by which means one hand has made *sixty thousand* in a day. He has already six machines in operation, and six others nearly completed, which, together with the patent right, he has sold to Mr. Elihu Hobart of this town for 11,000 dollars. These machines were built in Pembroke, where they are now in operation. Their use will probably soon supersede the manual operation, so that an hundred and fifty persons in this vicinity, accustomed to the latter, must seek other employments. These tacks are chiefly used by saddlers, chaise-makers, trunk-makers, card-makers, upholsterers, cabinet-makers, and also for wafer-boxes, &c. &c. By examining a pair of wool cards, we shall notice four dozen, at the least, in each pair. One pound of iron will make six thousand, and of the smallest size, ten thousand. Packed in papers, they are afforded at from one shilling to two shillings and three pence the thousand. The flat rolled plates are procured at slitting mills; the rest of the process, cut with shears and headed cold, is a manual operation; hence their name.

*Publick Buildings.* There are three Congregational meeting houses, two of which have bells. The second was erected at an expense of \$8000, and has two cupolas; the others spires. All are constructed of wood and painted.

\* It is confidently asserted in Abington, that "this was the first invention to cut nails in this or any other country."

The private dwellings are neat and commodious, conferring value on well cultivated farms, beside which there are a few well accustomed stores. Populous in itself, and within the circle of several towns of similar description, Abington is an agreeable, healthy, and pleasantly situated village. Its proximity to Weymouth Landing, and to Hingham, gives it an immediate and easy water communication with the metropolis, thereby commanding local benefits over more inland towns.

*Population.* Census of souls,

A. D. 1790,	souls	1453,	heads of families	254
1800,	"	1623,	houses	200
1810,	"	1704.		

In the autumn of 1805 a mortal fever prevailed, causing an unusual number of deaths of adults. The annual average in the bills of mortality may be stated *seventeen*, for a series of years, in the whole town, fifteen and twenty being the extremes. Three persons died in 1814, each of whom was about ninety years of age, and there are now (1815) living the following persons above that age: William Hersey, Caleb Chard,\* Daniel Lane, Mrs. Farrow.

### *Ecclesiastical History.*

*First Church.* Succession of ministers.

Rev. Samuel Brown, ordained Nov. 17, 1714; died Sept 12, 1749, æt. 62.

Ezekiel Dodge, ordained May 23, 1750; died June 5, 1770, æt. 48.

Samuel Niles, ordained Sept. 25, 1771; died January 16, 1814, æt. 69.

Holland Weeks, installed Aug. 9, 1815.

Rev. Mr. Brown was born at Newbury, 1687, graduated at Harvard College, 1709; there are some of his descendants, who continue in Abington. Rev. Mr. Dodge was born at Ipswich Hamlet\* (now Hamilton) 1722, and was graduated at Harvard College, 1749.

\* William Chard was clerk of writs in Weymouth, 1669.

† Or in Manchester.



Rev. Mr. Niles was born in Braintree, Dec. 14, 1745, (a son of the late Hon. Samuel Niles) and was graduated at Princeton College, about 1768. For the two last years of his life his publick labours were suspended by paralytic affections. His surviving widow was a daughter of his predecessor, Mr. Dodge.

*Second Church.* In the year 1808 a number of the inhabitants of the south part of Abington and of the east of Bridgewater were incorporated as the "Union Calvinistic Society." The meeting house, already noticed under publick edifices, is in Abington.

Rev. Daniel Thomas, a graduate of Brown University, 1803, was ordained June 1, 1808.

*Third Church.* 1813 "The third society in Abington" was incorporated in the northerly part of the town. Rev. Samuel W. Colbourn, who is a graduate of Dartmouth, 1795, was installed, October 27, 1813.

There seems a large proportion of religious societies in Abington, compared with its population and territory, yet comprising, as is common, parts of border towns, it may have local convenience, of the expediency of which those who reside in more compact towns may not be exact judges.

### *History.*

The Court of Plymouth Colony early intended a future town on the territory above Scituate and below Bridgewater. The first grants, which fall within it were made as follows :

1654. A considerable tract to Mr. Nathaniel Souther,\* who had been their first Clerk of Court, "above Weymouth path."

1664, a further grant to his heirs ; and also, under the same date, to the heirs of Clement Briggs,† another tract in that vicinity.

\* Mr. Souther, who had removed, was dead, 1659. He was first chosen clerk, 1636. His heirs and children were John Blake and Mrs. Hannah Johnson of Boston.

† Clement Briggs (felt-maker) arrived at Plymouth in the *Fortune*, 1621, and removed to Weymouth. Another grant was made to his heirs above Bridgewater, which falls in Mansfield. This name is common in these places.

1672. Subsequent to this date, the heirs of Phineas Pratt\* have grants located there. He was of the Weymouth first planters, coming from thence to Plymouth in 1623, when that plantation was broken up.

1656. Three miles square from Accord Pond southerly above Scituate was granted Mr. Hatherley and others. This grant was sold in 1663; the greater part of it to Otis, Thaxter, Jacob, &c. Hingham partners, and yet bears the name "great and small shares," now partly in Abington and partly in Hanover.

1668. A tract two miles long by three fourths of a mile wide, was sold by the colony to James Lovell, John Holbrook and Andrew Ford of Weymouth for 23*l.* above Mr. Hatherley's grant, and adjoining the colony line.† These two latter grants, therefore, constitute nearly the whole north line of the town. Under this date also, Robert Studson and others, bought a tract south of the Hatherley grant, (laid out in 1684) and which probably falls in Abington, or it may be Pembroke.

Lieut. Peregrine White of Marshfield at a certain period (before 1660) had a grant of land, which falls in Abington, described as being between two brooks, in the fork of them, and in which description the aboriginal names of the brooks are given, which clearly proves them to be the Beaver Brook, and the one east of it, and enables us to affix, with historical truth, an aboriginal name to Abington, which is *Manamooskeagin*, "much or many beavers"—a type of industry and of mechanical ingenuity.

When the colony line was completed, 1664, many gores of lands remained, and were assigned to the towns respectively, on either side; thus it seems Bridgewater and this plantation below it shared one. In the year 1683, "Accord Pond Shares" paid a colonial tax of 22*s.* and the "Ford's Farm Lands" 13*s.*, while the whole plantation was, as to civil concerns (but not the soil) an-

\* Phineas Pratt, (joiner) was in Plymouth about 1623. He removed to Charlestown, and was living there, 1677. He married at Plymouth a daughter of Cuthbert Cuthbertson, 1630.

† This grant took the name "Ford's Farm Lands," and became a general name for the plantation.

nexed to the constablerick of Bridgewater, 1690, and received corporate privileges under Massachusetts, 1712. Settlements began, probably, about 1668 or 9.

The first town meeting was held March 2, 1712—13, when William Reed was chosen town clerk, and William Hearsey, William Tirril, William Reed, Selectmen.

As to the origin of the population, it is evidently, the greater part, from Weymouth, Hingham and Scituate, with a few early names from Duxbury, Bridgewater, Pembroke, Braintree, Dorchester, &c. The census of 1790 gives these proportions of origin.

*Weymouth.*

Ford	Bates	Tirril	Hunt	Chard
Lovel	French	Whitmarsh	Torry	Orcutt
Holbrook	Pratt	Paine	Briggs	
Shaw	Bicknell	Reed	Burrill	
Dyer	Vining	Pool	Norton	

*Hingham.*

Thaxter	King	Norton	Porter
Cushing	Whiten	Lane	Hobart
Lincoln	Hearsey	Ripley	Chubbuck

*Scituate.*

House	Damon	Curtis	Colson	Dunbar
Stetson	Jenkins	Hobart	Totman	

*Duxbury.*

Alden	Sprague	Nash	Samson
-------	---------	------	--------

*Braintree.*

White	Beal	Wales
-------	------	-------

There are many miscellaneous names, most of which are probably from Weymouth and Hingham.

When we began these inquiries in Abington, the territory which it comprises seemed to be a chasm in Plymouth colonial history, for which, while tracing the history of older corporations, we could not account to our



satisfaction. It is an opinion on the spot, that it was taken from Bridgewater ; but a critical research evidences that it was only from its temporary civil jurisdiction.

Under the heads of church and ministerial dates and manufactures, much assistance has been afforded by the accurate and intelligent communications of Mr. Jacob Dyer of Abington, to whom this publick tribute of acknowledgment is due.

It may be further remarked, that the aboriginal name for the beaver, which we find here, seldom occurs in the Narraganset dialect, where another and a very different name prevailed for that animal, and which is typical of "*floods*," indicating the dams, which they construct.

---

SKETCH OF WALPOLE, (N. H.) BY MR. A. BELLOWES.

**W**ALPOLE is a post town in the county of Cheshire, N. H. It is situated on the eastern bank of Connecticut River, opposite to Westminster, (Vermont.) It has Charlestown on the north, Alstead and Surry on the east, and Westmoreland on the south. Its distance from Portsmouth is 118 miles ; from Dartmouth College, 48 ; from the Massachusetts line 25, and from Boston, (Mass.) 90, with which it has easy and frequent communication.

The face of the town is beautifully diversified with hills and vales. Its soil is characterized by nothing distinct from other towns on Connecticut River. The meadows afford excellent tillage and the uplands are inferior to none in the state. Cold River passes through the north part of this town, and forms a junction with the Connecticut.

There are two toll bridges here across Connecticut River ; one of which is directly over the well known Cataract, Bellows' Falls, affording to the traveller, as he passes, a view most sublime and interesting. Two turn-pike roads pass through the town. The first settlement was made in 1749 ; and two years after was granted by

charter to Col. Benjamin Bellows, who was a principal proprietor and whose numerous posterity continue to occupy a large proportion of it.

The population of the town has been regularly progressive; it has never experienced any extraordinary pestilential epidemic to retard it. The present number of inhabitants is about 2000. It has been regularly supplied with a Congregational preacher since the year 1761, without any ecclesiastical difficulties: at this time the whole town is happily united under the ministrations of the Rev. Pliny Dickinson. It has but one meeting-house, which is large and commodious, built of wood in the year 1787, and furnished with a good bell and organ.

Although there is no incorporated academy in this town, yet its advantages of school education are not exceeded in any town in this section of the State. In addition to the common district schools, (twelve in number) which are kept three or four months in winter by a man, and about the same in summer by a woman, there is constantly kept in the village a grammar school, and, during the summer months, a young ladies' academy for the instruction of misses of this and the neighbouring towns, in all the useful and ornamental branches of female education.

As to mechanics, Walpole enjoys every convenience that is common in a country town. There are a variety of grist and saw mills, one oil mill, two clothier's works, two cotton factories, carding machines, distilleries, &c. eight stores and six publick houses.

---

[The following paper, extracted from Vol. I. p. 77, of the Massachusetts Colony Records, was written in November, 1635. The occasion of this humble confession may be found in Gov. Winthrop's Journal, p. 90, but nothing more was known of the subject, until the discovery of his unpublished manuscript, from which we learn that the writer of the apology, was drowned in a shipwreck on the coast of Spain, as he was returning home. This was in December, 1644, though Hubbard, pp. 524, 5, has fallen into error in transcribing, abbreviating and compounding the narrative, and made it occur the year after. Pratt was accompanied by his wife. It may be interesting to copy

from the inedited part of Winthrop his report. "This man [Pratt] was above sixty years old, an experienced surgeon, who had lived in New England many years, and was of the first church at Cambridge in Mr. Hooker's time, and had good practice, and wanted nothing. But he had been long discontented, because his employment was not so profitable to himself as he desired; and it is like he feared, lest he should fall into want in his old age, and therefore he would needs go back into England (for surgeons were then in great request there by occasion of the wars) but God took him away childless."

It is amusing to notice how the equivocations of the writer are received as satisfaction for his calumnies against the barren rocks, sands and salt marshes of our country; but the ministers and magistrates seem to have exhibited more policy in receiving than he did in making his explanations. Similar complaints against the ungrateful soil of New England are often heard in our days, but they are left to a more effectual correction than that of civil or ecclesiastical advisers. Σ.

#### PRATT'S APOLOGY.

*The answer of me John Pratt to such things as I hear [torn] perceive objected against me, as offensive in my letter.*

**FIRST** generally whatsoever I writ of the improbability or impossibility of subsistence for ourselves or our posterity without tempting God, or without extraordinary means, it was with these two regards; first, I did not mean that which I said in respect of the whole country, or our whole patent in general, but only of that compass of ground, wherein these towns are so thick set together, and secondly I supposed that they intended so to remain, because (upon conference with divers) I found that men did think it unreasonable that they or any should remove or disperse into other parts of the country; and upon this ground I thought I could not subsist myself, nor the plantation, nor posterity; but I do acknowledge that since my letter there have been sundry places newly found out as Newbury, Concord, and others (and that within this patent) which will afford good means of subsistence for men and beasts, in which and other such like new plantations, if the towns shall be fewer and the bounds larger than these are, I conceive they may live comfortably. The



like I think of Connecticut, with the plantations there now in hand ; and what I conceive so sufficient for myself, I conceive so sufficient also for my posterity ; and concerning these towns here so thick planted, I conceive they may subsist, in case that besides the conveniences which they have already near hand, they do improve farms somewhat farther off, and do also apply themselves to, and do improve the trade of fishing and other trades. As concerning that intimation of the commonwealth builded upon rocks, sands, and salt marshes, I wish I had not made it, because it is construed contrary to my meaning, which I have before expressed. And whereas my letters do seem to extenuate the judgment of such as came before, as having more honesty than skill, they being scholars, citizens, tradesmen, &c. my meaning was not so general as the words do import, for I had an eye only to those, that had made larger reports into England of the country, than I found to be true in the sense aforesaid. And whereas I may seem to imply, that I had altered the minds or judgments of the body of the people, magistrates and others, I did not mean this in respect of the goodness or badness of the land, in the whole plantation, but only in point of removal, and spreading farther into other parts, they afterwards conceiving it necessary, that some should remove into other places, here and there, of more enlargement. And whereas I seem to speak of all the magistrates and people, I did indeed mean only all those with whom I had any private speech about those things ; and as for the barrenness of the sandy grounds, &c. I spake of them as then I conceived, but now by experience of mine own, I find that such ground, as before I accounted barren, yet being manured and husbanded doth bring forth more fruit than I did expect. As for the not prospering of the English grain upon this ground, I do since that time see that rye and oats have prospered better than I expected ; but as for the other kinds of grain, I do still question, whether they will come to such perfection as in our native country from whence they come. And whereas I am thought generally to charge all that have written into England by way of commenda-

tion of this land as if what they had written were generally false, I meant it only of such excessive commendations as I see did exceed and are contrary to that which I have here expressed. And as concerning that which I said, that the gospel would be as dear here as in England, I did it to this end, to put some which intended to come hither only for outward commodity to look for better grounds, ere they look this way. As for some grounds of my returning, which I concealed from my friends, for fear of doing hurt, I meant only some particular occasions and apprehensions of mine own, not intending to lay any secret blemish upon the state; and whereas I did express the danger of decaying here in our first love, &c. I did it only in regard of the manifold occasions and businesses which here at first we meet withal, by which I find in mine own experience (and so I think do others also) how hard it is to keep our hearts in that holy frame which sometimes they were in, where we had less to do in outward things, but not at all intending to impute it as necessary to our condition, much less as a fruit of our precious liberties which we enjoy, which rather tend to the quickening of us, we improving the same as we ought. This my answer (according with the inward consent and meaning of my heart) I do humbly commend to the favourable consideration and acceptance of the Court, desiring in this, as in all things, to approve myself in a conscience void of offence towards God and man.

JOHN PRATT.

This answer of John Pratt before written, voluntarily by him made, as we are witnesses, so do we also join with him in humble desire unto the Court, that it may be favorably accepted, and whatever failings are in the letter in regard of the manner of expressions (which may seem hardly to suit with these his interpretations) we do desire the indulgence of the Court to pass over without further question.

Peter Bulkley,  
John Wilson,  
Thomas Hooker.

Whereas John Pratt of Newtown being called before us at this present Court and questioned for a letter which he wrote into England dated (blank) wherein he raised an ill report of this country, did desire respite till the next day to consider of his answer, he hath now delivered in this before written, whereupon his free submission and acknowledgement of his error the Court hath accepted for satisfaction, and thereupon pardoned his said offence, and thereupon order that it shall be recorded, and such as desire copies thereof may have the same.

John Haynes, Govr.	William Coddington,
Richard Bellingham,	Willm. Pinchon,
John Winthrop,	Allerton Hough,
Thomas Dudley,	Increase Nowell,
John Humfrey,	Simon Bradstreete.

NOTE ON EZEKIEL CHEEVER. BY WILLIAM LYON ESQ.  
OF NEW HAVEN.

**I**N a note [COLL. HIST. SOC. VOL. VIII. p. 66.] under the account of Ezekiel Cheever, some further information is desired respecting him. I am ignorant whether he came from England with Governor Eaton, 1637, or joined him at Boston; but he came to New Haven with him. His name appears in the plantation covenant, signed in Newman's barn, June 4, 1639. Although a poor man, he must have been of considerable estimation, as he signed among their principal men. Every thing was done with much formality at that time. By their doomsday book, I find his family consisted of himself and wife only; she died in 1649. His estate was set at 20*l*. and a few acres of wild land beside. He taught school, and sometimes conducted publick worship. It is probable that he wrote his *Accidence* at New Haven. In 1644 his salary was raised to 1.30 per annum; for three years before he had received but 1.20 per annum. When the church was gathered, John Davenport directed them "to select eleven of their most godly men, as a nomination for church pillars, that there might be no blemish in church



work." Cheever was chosen for one. These were to select seven among themselves, because we read in Proverbs, "Wisdom hath hewn out her seven pillars." I suppose he left this town about the year 1650 (his name does not appear on the records after that) and spent the remainder of his long life in the Bay. In Cambridge Catalogue I see that *Thomas Cheever* was graduated in 1677; perhaps a son of Ezekiel by a second wife.

*Additional Note.* EDIT.

DR. COTTON MATHER, in "An Historical Introduction" to his funeral sermon upon Mr. EZEKIEL CHEEVER, after learned remarks on grammarians and schoolmasters, gives the following account of his own revered preceptor. "We generally concur in acknowledging, that New England has never known a better. I am sure, I have as much reason to appear for him, as ever *Crito* for his master *Socrates*. The short history of his long usefulness is to be comprised in the ensuing articles."

"He was born in London many years before the birth of New England. It was January 25, 1614, [i. e. 16<sup>14</sup><sub>15</sub>.] He arrived into this country in June, 1637, with the rest of those good men, who sought a peaceable secession in an American wilderness, for the pure evangelical and instituted worship of our great Redeemer, to which he kept a strict adherence all his days. He then sojourned first a little while, part of a year, at Boston; so that at Boston he both commenced and concluded his American race. His holy life was a married life. He began the laborious work of a schoolmaster at New Haven; where he continued for twelve years. From New Haven he removed unto Ipswich, in Dec. 1650, where he laboured eleven years. From Ipswich he removed unto Charlestown, in Nov. 1661, where he laboured nine years. From Charlestown he came over to Boston, January 6, 1670, where his labours were continued for eight and thirty years. He died on Saturday morning, August 21, 1708, in the ninety-fourth year of his age; after he had been a skilful, painful, faithful schoolmaster for seventy years; and had the singular favour of heaven, that though he

had usefully spent his life among *children*, yet he was not become *twice a child*, but held his abilities, with his usefulness, in an unusual degree to the very last.

In the SERMON, Dr. Mather says, "It was noted, that when scholars came to be admitted into the *College*, they who came from the *Cheeverian education*, were generally the most unexceptionable. He flourished so long in this great work, of bringing our sons to be men, that it gave him an opportunity to send forth many *Bezaleels* and *Aholiab*s for the service of the tabernacle : and men fitted for all good employments. He that was my master, seven and thirty years ago, was a master to many of my betters, no less than seventy years ago ; so long ago, that I must even mention *my father's tutor* for one of them." Particular notice is taken of "his piety, and his care to infuse documents of piety into the scholars under his charge, that he might carry them with him to the heavenly world. He so constantly prayed with us every day, and catechised us every week, and let fall such holy counsels upon us ; he took so many occasions to make speeches to us, that should make us afraid of sin, and of incurring the fearful judgments of God by sin ; that I do propose him for imitation." Having shown what his "Master was *in the school*," he adds, "Out of the school he was one, *antiqua fide, priscis moribus* ; a Christian of the old fashion ; an OLD NEW ENGLISH CHRISTIAN ; and I may tell you, that was as venerable a sight, as the world, since the days of primitive Christianity, has ever looked upon. He was well studied in the body of divinity ; an able defender of the faith and order of the gospel ; notably conversant and acquainted with the scriptural prophecies. He lived as a *Master*, the term which has been for above three thousand years, assigned for the life of a *Man* ; he continued to the *ninety-fourth* year of his age—his intellectual force as little abated as his natural."

In a poetical "Essay" on his memory, Dr. M. ascribes the learning of New England to him and to Corlet, another eminent schoolmaster, who taught the gram-

mar school in Cambridge for many years, and who is celebrated in the *Magnalia*.

“Tis CORLET’s pains, and CHEEVER’s, we must own,  
That thou, New England, art not Scythia grown.”

In the following description, we perceive characteristics of the *writer* as well as of the *master*.

“He *liv’d*, and to vast age no illness knew ;  
Till Time’s scythe waiting for him rusty grew.  
He *liv’d* and *wrought* ; his labours were immense ;  
But ne’er *declin’d* to *preterperfect tense*.”

To the Essay is subjoined the following

## EPITAPHIUM.

EZEKIEL CHEEVERUS ;

Ludimagister ;

Primo Neoportensis ;

Deinde, Ipsuicensis ;

Postea, Carolotenensis ;

Postremo, Bostonensis :

cujus

Doctrinam ac Virtutem

Nostri,\* si sis Nov-Anglus,

Colis, si non Barbarus ;

GRAMMATICUS,

a Quo non pure tantum, sed et pie,

Loqui ;

RHETORICUS,

a Quo non tantum ornate dicere

coram Hominibus,

sed et Orationes coram Deo fundere

Efficacissimas ;

POETA,

a Quo non tantum Carmina pangere,

sed et

Cœlestes Hymnos Odasque Angelicas,

canere,

Didicerunt,

Qui discre voluerunt ;

LUCERNA,

ad Quam accensa sunt,

\* Nōsti ?



Quis queat numerare,  
 Quot Ecclesiarum Lumina?  
 ET  
 Qui secum Theologiæ abstulit,  
 Peritissimus THEOLOGUS,  
 Corpus hic suum sibiminus charum,  
 deposuit.  
 Vixit Annos, XCIV.  
 Docuit, Annos, LXX.  
 Obiit, A. D. M. DCC. VIII.  
 Et quod mori potuit,  
 HEIC  
 Expectat Exoptatque  
 Primam Sanctorum Resurrectionem  
 ad  
 Immortalitatem.

---

#### ANNIVERSARY OF THE LANDING OF THE FOREFATHERS.

**T**HE 187th anniversary of this memorable event was celebrated at Plymouth on Monday, the 22d of December, in the usual style. The discourse on this occasion was delivered by the Rev. Horace Holley, whose well known oratorical powers were exerted on this occasion in the happiest manner, and afforded great delight and satisfaction to his numerous auditors. The festival was concluded with a publick dinner, and a ball in the evening. It is intended to erect a publick hall in this ancient town, devoted to the particular purposes of this celebration, which must every year acquire increasing interest, as those blessings are multiplied, which have followed from the heroic constancy of the founders of the colony.

Three years more will complete the second century ; it may be presumed that the jubilee will then be celebrated with greater efforts to commemorate this epoch.

We intend, on a future occasion, to collect the facts connected with this celebration from the commencement, and give a list of those who have delivered addresses on the occasion. ED.



The Deaths abovementioned were caused by Diseases and Casualties, as follows:—

Abscess	-	-	-	1	Diseases unknown	-	84	Fever Pulmonic	-	61	Insanity	-	-	2	Scalds	-	-	-	2
Apoplexy	-	-	-	18	Drowned	-	12	" Typhus	-	15	Marasmus	-	-	37	Scarlatina anginosa	-	-	-	1
Burns	-	-	-	3	Dropsey	-	12	Fits	-	16	Measles	-	-	6	Scirrhus Liver	-	-	-	1
Cancers	-	-	-	2	Dysentery	-	6	Hæmoptysis	-	-	Mortification	-	-	13	Still-Born	-	-	-	31
Casualty	-	-	-	5	Elephantiasis	-	1	Hæmorrhagia	-	-	Murdered	-	-	2	Sudden	-	-	-	21
Cholera	-	-	-	6	Fever Inflammatory	-	7	Hepatitis	-	-	Neurosis	-	-	1	Suicide	-	-	-	4
Consumption	-	-	-	180	" Bilious	-	10	Hooping Cough	-	-	Old Age	-	-	37	Tetanus	-	-	-	7
Cramp	-	-	-	2	" *Malignant	-	11	Hydrocephalus	-	-	Palsy	-	-	8	White Swelling	-	-	-	1
Croup	-	-	-	4	" Rheumatic	-	3	Jaundice	-	-	Phrenitis	-	-	1	Worms	-	-	-	1
Cynanche Tracialis	-	-	-	2	" Pleurisy	-	1	Infantile Diseases	-	195	Polypus in the nose	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
Dyspepsy	-	-	-	18	" Puerperal	-	12	Intoxication	-	3	Quincy	-	-	16	-	-	-	-	-
																			904

Published by order of the Board of Health,

NATHANIEL GREENOUGH, Secretary.

Boston, February 5, 1817.

Boston lies in 42, 23, 15, N. lat. and 70, 52, 42, W. lon.—The Census of 1810, in the month of August, states the number of inhabitants at 33,250.

\* 10 of these cases occurred in the Hospital on Rainsford Island.

TO THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

Gentlemen,

Boston, February, 1817.

WITH the respects of the Board of Health, I inclose you the Bill of Mortality of this town for 1816.

Your humble Servant,

NATHANIEL GREENOUGH, Secretary.



## BOSTON VOTES.

The following regulations, adopted on the 30th November, 1635, I have transcribed from the third page of the first volume of Records of this town, as fairly exhibiting the views of the earliest settlers. To such sources, which have not been exhausted even by the unequalled diligence of Hutchinson and Hazard, must every man resort, who would thoroughly investigate the causes of modern customs, the *cunabula gentis nostrae*. The last item will be duly appreciated, when the reader recollects, that Vane, who was next year chosen governour, had arrived in our colony only in the preceding month. Σ.

“**A**T a general meeting upon publique notice,  
 Imprimis it is agreed that noe further allotment shall be graunted unto any new comers, but such as may be likely to be received members of the congregation. Item that none shall sell their houses or allotments to any new comers, but with the consent and allowance of those that are appointed AllotTERS. Item that all such as have allotments for habitations allotted unto them shall build thereon before the first of the first month next, called March, or else it shall be in the power of the allotters to dispose of them otherwise. Item that Mr. William Hutchinson, Mr. William Colborne and Mr. William Brenton shall set pryses upon all cattell, comodities, victualls and labourers and workmens wages and that noe other prises or rates shall be given or taken. Item that none of the members of this congregation or inhabitants amongst us shall sue one another at the lawe before that Mr. Henry Vane and the twoe Elders, Mr. Thomas Ollyver and Thomas Leverett have had the hearing and desyding of the cause if they cann.”

## A DESCRIPTION OF BRIDGEWATER, 1818.

**BRIDGEWATER**, which is now one of the largest towns in the commonwealth, was originally a plantation belonging to Duxbury. Soon after that town was incorporated, the inhabitants applied to the Court at Plymouth for a grant of lands, or, as they expressed it, "an extension to the westward." The first order of court respecting it was in August 1644, as follows.

"Upon the petition of Duxbury men, it is thought good by the Court, that there be a view taken of the lands described by them, namely, seven miles up into the woods from Plymouth bounds at Jones' river. And if it prove not prejudicial to the plantation to be erected at Teightaquid, nor to the meadows of Plymouth at Winnytuckquett, it may be confirmed unto them; provided also the herring or alewife river at Namassachusett shall be equally between the two towns of Duxbury and Marshfield."

The next year, 1645, the grant was made as follows. "The inhabitants of the town of Duxbury are granted a competent proportion of lands about Saughtuckquett towards the west for a plantation for them, and to have it four miles every way from the place where they shall set up their centre; provided it entrench not upon Winnytuckquett formerly granted to Plymouth. And we have nominated Capt. Miles Standish, Mr. John Alden, George Soule, Constant Southworth, Joseph Rogers, and William Brett, to be feoffees in trust for the equal dividing and laying forth the said lands to the inhabitants."

The whole number of inhabitants in Duxbury at that time, who were entitled to this grant, was fifty-four, each of whom, "by agreement among themselves," had one share, and they reserved two shares, one for a minister to be settled among them, and one for a miller, mak-

ing in the whole 56 shares. The names of the proprietors were

William Bradford,	William Clarke,
William Merrick,	William Ford,
John Bradford,	Mr. Constant Southworth,
Abraham Pierce,	John Cary,
John Rogers,	Edmund Weston,
George Partridge,	Samuel Tompkins,
John Starr,	Edmund Chandler,
Mr. William Collier,	Moses Simons,
Christopher Wadsworth,	John Frisk,
Edward Hall,	Philip Delano,
Nicholas Robbins,	Arthur Harris,
Thomas Hayward,	Mr. John Alden,
Mr. Ralph Partridge,	John Fobes,
Nathaniel Willis,	Samuel Nash,
John Willis,	Abraham Sampson,
Thomas Bonney,	George Soule,
Mr. Miles Standish,	Experience Mitchell,
Love Brewster,	Henry Howland,
John Paybody,	Henry Sampson,
William Paybody,	John Brown,
Francis Sprague,	John Haward,
William Basset,	Francis West,
John Washburn,	William Tubbs,
John Washburn, jun.	James Lindell,
John Ames,	Samuel Eaton,
Thomas Gannett,	Solomon Leonardson,
William Brett,	Mr. James Keith,
Edmund Hunt,	Samuel Edson.

The two last, Mr. James Keith, who was afterwards their minister, and Samuel Edson, their first miller, were neither of them inhabitants of Duxbury, or originally proprietors, but became so afterwards when they settled in the town. Mr. Keith was from Scotland, and Edson from Salem.

This grant was considered as a preemptive right only, and before they entered therefore upon the lands they, "by the approbation and appointment of the court,"



purchased the soil of the natives agreeably to the following deed.

“Witnes these presents, that I Ousamequin Sachim of the Contrie of Pocanauket, have given, granted enfeofed and sould unto Myles Standish of Duxborough Samuel Nash and Constant Southworth of Duxborough aforesaid in the behalf of all y<sup>e</sup> townsmen of Duxborough aforesaid a tract of land usually called Saughtucket extending in length and the breadth thereof, as followeth, that is to say from y<sup>e</sup> weare att Saughtuckett seven myles due east and from the said weare seven (miles) due west, and from the said weare seven myles due north and from the said weare seven myles due south; the w<sup>ch</sup> tract the said Ousamequin hath given granted enfeoffed and sould unto y<sup>e</sup> said Myles (Standish) Samuel Nash and Constant Southworth in the behalfe of all y<sup>e</sup> townsmen of Duxborough as aforesaid w<sup>th</sup> all the emunities priveleges and profitts whatsoever belonging to the said tract of land w<sup>th</sup> all and singular all woods underwoods lands meadowes Rivers brooks Rivelets &c. to have and to hould to the said Myles Standish Samuel Nash and Constant Southworth in behalfe of all the townsmen of the towne of Duxborough to them and their heyers forever. In Witnes whereof I the said Ousamequin have here unto sett my hand this 23 of March 1649.

the m<sup>k</sup> of



Ousamequin

In consideration of the aforesaid bargain and sale wee the said Miles Standish Samuel Nash and Constant Southworth doe bind ourselves to pay unto y<sup>e</sup> said Ousamequin for and in consideration of y<sup>e</sup> said tract of land as followeth

7 Coats a y<sup>d</sup> and half in a coat

9 Hatchets

8 Howes

20 Knives

4 moose skins

10 y<sup>ds</sup> and half of cotton

} Myles Standish

} Samuel Nash

} Constant Southworth”

The above is a literal and exact copy of the original deed in the hand writing of Capt. Standish, which is now in the possession of the writer of this article.

Ousamequin, or Ossamequin, sometimes written Woosamequin, was Massasoit himself, who in the latter part of his life had adopted that name. This contract is said to have been made and executed on a small rocky hill where Seth Latham now lives, anciently called Sachem's Rock, a little south of Whitman's Mills in the east parish. The wear, which they at first established as their centre, was a little above the mills, back of Deacon William Harris' house, and near the ancient fording place. The first mill erected on this stream stood near the wear, which consequently became useless and was discontinued as a fishing place. Traces of the old road at the fording place on the south side of the river, and also of the old wear at the bottom of the river, are still to be seen.

This river and the pond from which it proceeds, as well as the neighbourhood in which they are situated, still retain the name of Satucket, a contraction of Saquatuckett, or Massaquatuckett, as it was sometimes written. While the grant from the court was only four miles each way, equal to eight miles square, this purchase from the Indians was seven miles each way, equal to fourteen miles square. The reason of this difference is not very obvious; but the purchase was probably made thus extensive, either in reference to the "seven miles" mentioned in the first order of court, or with a view to additional grants in future.

The plantation was incorporated into a distinct town in the year 1656, agreeably to the following act of court. "Ordered that henceforth Duxbury new plantation be allowed to be a township of itself, distinct from Duxbury, and to be called by the name of Bridgewater; provided that all public rates be born by them with Duxbury upon equal proportions." This proportion appeared, by a public tax assessed about that time, to have been established at one third; as Duxbury paid  $l. 6 : 0 : 9$ , and Bridgewater  $l. 2 : 0 : 3$ . The name was probably adopted from fancy, as most of the names of towns were in the "old Colony," and not because any of the settlers came from Bridgewater in England.

The inhabitants soon discovered, that they had not left themselves four miles on the east of their centre at the wear, without encroaching upon the Major's purchase, so called (now part of Pembroke,) and, what was probably a more important discovery to them, they found also, that there was a large tract of swamp and meadow lands, called Hockomock, lying on the west beyond their four miles towards Taunton (now Easton and Raynham.) They therefore began very early to make application to court for leave to move their centre, and extend their limits, westward, so as to include these lands; as appears, as well as the reasons they assigned for it, in the following order in 1658. "It is agreed by the court that there shall be chosen such as the town of Bridgewater shall think meet, that are no way engaged in the new plantation of Duxbury, to view out the land and meadow desired by Bridgewater, and to consider of the reasonableness of their desire in reference to the accommodating of some useful men in church and Commonwealth and make true report of the same to the court." And in 1662 the same was granted them as follows.

"In answer to a petition preferred to the court by Bridgewater, it is agreed, that the meadow land lying northward and westward from the centre within the seven miles is granted them."

They afterwards, by the leave of court, removed their centre about one mile and a half west from the wear and constituted a large oak Tree, near the old dwelling house of the present Thomas Hayward, their central monument: which was ever afterwards, as long as it stood, called the "centre tree," and the place still retains the name of "the Centre." Some remains of the stump are still visible in the wall on the south side of the road, and are in the divisional line between the east and west parishes.

In 1668 the court, "in answer to a petition of Bridgewater desiring their enlargement may extend to the six miles they purchased of the Indians by order of court," made another grant to the town of "six miles from the centre on the north side, if the line of the Colony hindreth not, and on the west side up to Taunton



bounds," now Easton and Raynham, "and on the south and southeasterly sides unto Titicut river, as far as the six miles extends, and so likewise on the east side, that is to say, the whole six miles from the centre, east, west, north and south; always provided, that grants of lands formerly made by court be not molested. It is also ordered that those lands, that are between Bridgewater and Namasket," now Middleborough, "already granted, shall be determined by the court unto what township they shall belong; and that the Indians be not molested; and that they be careful to provide a competency of land for Mr. Keith."

This was commonly called "the two miles additional grant," as the first was, "the old four mile grant." It would seem by some expressions in this grant, as if it were understood, that the original purchase of the Indians had been only six miles each way, and not seven, as the fact was. There seems also to have arisen about that time a question in the court as to the extent of it; for we find the depositions of Constant Southworth and Samuel Nash, two of the purchasers, respecting it, upon record, in which they say, "they purchased six miles every way from the wear, and have for it the writing or deed under Ossamequin's own hand, which is *seven* miles." Probably they had ascertained, that six miles would comprehend all the land around them, not included in other grants, and had therefore asked of the court for that extent only, and doubts had arisen whether they had purchased that quantity of the Indians. These depositions were probably introduced to show they had purchased six miles and more, even "seven."

By this additional grant, they obtained their two miles on the north towards the colony line, and some on the east, north of "the major's purchase," in the north east corner of the town; but, very little, if any, elsewhere. Their original four miles would extend to the "major's purchase" on the east, and "the Taunton north purchase" on the west, and the Indian plantation at Teightaquid had been reserved by the Court in all their grants. This plantation had been granted to the Titicut Indians by Chick-

atabut, a sachem of Massachusetts living on Neponset river, being "three miles, on each side of the river," and was called Keketicut, or Keticut, or Teightaquid, and now commonly written Titicut. So much of it, however, as lies north of the river was contained within the six miles, and they were afterwards allowed to purchase it of the Indians, and Elder Brett, Mr. Nicholas Byram, and Mr. Samuel Edson, were appointed by court for that purpose. They accordingly, November 20, 1672, procured a deed of it from Pomponoho, alias Peter, chief of the Titicut Indians; being "all the land lying north of Titicut river, within the bounds of Bridgewater, what lands were mine or were either my father's or grandfather's or any otherwise conferred on me, excepting one hundred acres lying up the river to the eastward of Small Brook, given to an Indian called Charles, my brother in law, and a certain parcel of land lying against the wear and bounded by the landing place, running to the head of my field containing about ten acres to the utmost;" signed with his mark, p, witnessed by Joseph Hayward and John Cary, sen. and acknowledged before Josiah Winslow, governor. The consideration was 16*l.* viz. "6*l.* current money, and 10*l.* in good merchantable corn." The two lots reserved were afterwards purchased of the individual Indians owning them by some of the settlers of the town. The 100 acres were purchased of Charles by Edward Mitchell and Elisha Hayward. Thus all the lands within the most extensive limits of the town, appear to have been fairly purchased of the natives; and we have the above named Governor Winslow's attestation upon record, that this was the case in all the towns in the old colony.

If there were any lands within the last grant, "lying between Bridgewater and Namasket," besides those contained in the Titicut plantation, the Court, having reserved the right to themselves to determine unto which town they should belong, settled that question afterwards by constituting the river the boundary between Bridgewater and Middleborough.

In the year 1685, the Court of Assistants were empowered to examine, allow, and confirm, from time to time, all claims and titles to lands formerly granted to



towns or individuals by the General Court, and when allowed they were to "pass the seal of the government for confirmation." In pursuance of this order, the grants above mentioned were confirmed by Thomas Hinckley, Esq. governor, March 6, 1686, and the boundaries of the whole town, generally described. The deed was attested by Nathaniel Clark, secretary. And on the 23d of December, of the same year, a deed of confirmation was also procured from "Josiah, son of Josiah Wampatuck," called an Indian sachem, living at Mattakeset, now Pembroke, of all the town lying "north of the south four mile line," that is, all excepting the late "Titicut purchase" contained in the deed of Pomponoho, which needed no confirmation. The consideration of Wampatuck's deed was "ten pounds in money, and one hundred acres of land lying on the upper end of poor meadow on both sides of the river." These one hundred acres were afterwards bought and are now owned by individuals in the town. This deed of confirmation was made to Samuel Edson, sen. Ensign Haward, and John Willis, sen. in behalf of all the proprietors, signed with Wampatuck's mark, witnessed by John Soule, Joseph Bearstow, and Samuel Tinsley, probably inhabitants of Mattakeset, and acknowledged before William Bradford, deputy governor. It appears, therefore, that the greatest part of the town has been twice purchased of the natives, once of Massasoit, and again of Wampatuck, a valuable consideration having been paid to each. The original "four mile grant" was never allotted, but remained in common among the proprietors, who, in 1662, after "some of the committee, originally named in the grant for laying it out, were dead, and others taken off by other occasions," were authorized by court to appoint a committee from among themselves to lay out their lands, and all their agreements respecting their proprietary were to be recorded by the clerk of the town, who was consequently made clerk also of the proprietors. There was an attempt however made to divide the whole "commons" at once among the proprietors; but William Brett, their elder, wrote to Gov. Winslow requesting him with "the honored Court" to prevent it. His letter is long and par-



ticular, stating the arguments on both sides. He also states, that a majority in the town had been procured in favour of it, by the influence of "Nicholas Byram, Samuel Edson and others." His letter still remaining, bears date February 20, 1671. The proprietors had their meetings, officers, and records distinct from the town, and were accustomed, from time to time, to make grants of a certain number of acres, from five to twenty, which each proprietor had a right to pitch, and call on the committee to lay out for him; which being done, and a return of the survey made and entered on their books, created a perfect title in such proprietor. Any person, not a proprietor, finding common land, might purchase a right of any one, who had not taken up his full quantity upon any of the grants then existing, and procure to himself a title to it in the same manner. Instances of common land having been taken up in this manner have occurred even to the present day.

But all the lands obtained by the additional two mile grant, together with the lands contained in the deed from Pomponoho, were divided into lots and drawn by the proprietors. They were divided in the first place into four parcels or tracts, three on the north and one on the south. That on the south was called "the Titicut purchase." Those on the north were differently designated. One was called "the three miles at the east end and beginning next to the Colony line." Another was called "the easterly two miles, commonly called the young men's shares." Another was called "the two miles in the west, commonly called the west shares." They were however mistaken in supposing their six miles north carried them to the old colony line; as there was a gore of land remaining, beginning at a point at the north west corner of the town and widening so that between the north east corner and the colony line there was a great distance. This fact was awhile zealously disputed, but at last settled in the long contested case of Abraham Thayer vs. Daniel Howard and others. The westerly part of this gore, commonly called "the Howard farms," having been purchased of the Massachusetts pro-

vince, after the union of the two colonies, by Daniel Howard and Robert Howard, was annexed to Bridgewater on the petition of the Selectmen of the town. The remainder of it had before been incorporated with the town of Abington. Indeed by the plain and express language of the statue the whole gore was included in Abington; but for some reasons, which do not appear, the "Howard farms" seem to have been considered as "belonging to no town," till they were annexed to Bridgewater, October 15, 1730. These several grants and additions constitute all the territory ever belonging to Bridgewater in its greatest extent. There have been some considerable diminutions of it since. June 10th, 1712, the north east corner of the town, containing all the land lying east of Beaver Brook and north of the present bounds of the east parish was incorporated with the town of Abington. The greatest part of this town was taken from Bridgewater. The petitioners call themselves inhabitants of the east part of Bridgewater, who, with others, desire to be incorporated into a town. A small gore also on the east side of the town beginning at a point at Halifax and extending northerly, was annexed to Pembroke June 7, 1754. Excepting in these instances, the town has never been curtailed, and its boundaries as finally settled may therefore now be generally described as follows. On the east it is bounded by Pembroke and Halifax; on the north by Abington, Randolph and Stoughton; on the west by Easton and Raynham: and on the south by Middleborough. It is the north west town in the county of Plymouth; adjoining the county of Norfolk, or old colony line, on the north, and the county of Bristol on the west. Titicut river, often called Taunton great river, is its boundary on the south, adjoining Middleborough. It is a little more than ten miles long from north to south, and seven miles wide from east to west, and contains about seventy three square miles. The centre of the town is about 26 miles from Boston.

The first settlement of the town commenced in the west parish in the year 1651. Each settler had a house lot of six acres on the town river, then called Nunketest, or

Nunketetest. The new settlement itself was sometimes called by this name, while the plantation received the more general name of Saughtucket. These were the respective names of the two principal ponds in the town, and of the rivers issuing from them. These house lots were contiguous and the settlement compact, extending on each side of the river from the house where Seth Lathrop lately lived, down to the four corners by the dwelling house of Ansel Hayward. It cannot now be precisely ascertained how many of the first proprietors ever became inhabitants of the town ; but probably not more than one third part of them. Some of them after a short residence returned or removed to other places. It has been said that Capt. Miles Standish resided there one or two years : but this is not certain. His son, Ensign Josiah Standish, was there several years. The following were permanent settlers there. Thomas Hayward, John Haward, Nathaniel Willis, John Willis, William Basset, John Washburn, John Washburn, Jun. Thomas Gannett, William Brett, John Cary, Samuel Tompkins, Arthur Harris, John Fobes, Experience Mitchell, Solomon Leonardson, Mr. Keith, and Samuel Edson. Of these, William Basset and Experience Mitchell are the only persons, who arrived at Plymouth in the three first ships ; and the only two, of all the " forefathers," ever known to have lived in the town. They were both original owners of lands at Plymouth, Duxbury and Bridgewater, and lived in all these places as they were successively settled. The former came over in the second ship, *Fortune*, in 1621, was a blacksmith, a large landholder, and one of the land committee in the Colony. He lived in the south parish, and died in 1667. His library was large and valuable for that period. His wife, Elizabeth, was probably a Tilden. William Hatch, sen. married one of his daughters, and Lieut. Peregrine White another, named Sarah. His son William lived at Sandwich, and was a marshal. His son Joseph lived on the paternal estate at Bridgewater ; and the late Joseph Basset, Esq. one of his descendants was the largest landholder in the town.



Experience Mitchell came in the third ship, *Ann*, in 1623. He married Mary, daughter of Francis Cook. His son Edward was an early settler in Bridgewater, while he himself remained at Duxbury till, having become old, he settled his estate among his sons, and removed and lived with his son Edward in the east parish, where he died in 1689 about 90 years of age. His son Jacob settled in Dartmouth, where he and his wife were both killed by the Indians in 1675, on which event their infant children were removed to Bridgewater; one of whom, Jacob, settled afterwards at North Yarmouth, and another, Thomas, was the ancestor of part of the present family at Bridgewater. Five great grandsons of Experience are now living, one of whom, Cushing Mitchell, owns the paternal estate. It is believed there are no male descendants living of any other of the forefathers related in the same degree. These are sons of the late Col. Edward Mitchell, an only son; and at the time of his birth his father Edward was nearly seventy years old; and his mother was Alice Bradford, great grand daughter of governour Bradford. Experience had two other sons, John and Thomas. A son of John by the name of Experience early settled in Providence, one of whose sons of the same name lately died in Uxbridge nearly one hundred years of age. The first Experience was the ancestor of most, if not all, of the name in New England.

Early settlers came in also from other towns; as Nicholas Byram, Thomas Whitman, Joseph Shaw, and John Kingman, from Weymouth; Jonathan Hill, from Dorchester; John Field, from Providence; Samuel Packard, Isaac Lazell, William Hudson, and Isaac Johnson from Hingham; and David Perkins, from Beverly. Some of them were "purchasers of rights;" but the best knowledge of the early proprietors may be obtained from their names, as they appear, in the allotments of the additional grants as early as 1682. They are

Samuel Edson,  
 Samuel, } his sons,  
 Joseph, }

Joseph Alden,  
 Isaac, his son,  
 Robert Latham,

James, son of Rob't Latham,	William,	} sons of Wil-
John Field,	Nathaniel,	
Joseph Lapham,	Elihu,	
John Washburn,	Edward,	} sons of John
John,	William,	
Samuel,	Isaac son of Arthur Harris,	} Fobes, dec'd.
Joseph,	deceased,	
Thomas,	Samuel Allen,	
Jonathan,	Samuel, his son,	
Guido Bailey,	Giles Leach,	
Guido, his son,	Samuel, his son,	
Mark Lathrop,	Samuel Tompkins,	
Samuel,	Solomon Leonard,	
Edward,	Solomon,	} his sons,
Thomas Hayward,	Samuel,	
Lt. Thomas,	John,	
Nathaniel,	Isaac,	
Joseph,	Mr. James Keith,	
Elisha,	John Cary,	
John,	John,	} his sons,
Ensign John Haward,	Francis,	
John,	Jonathan,	
James,	James,	
Jonathan,	William Snow,	
Nathaniel Willis,	William,	} his sons,
Elkanah,	Joseph,	
Comfort,	Joseph, son of William Bas-	
Benjamin,	set, deceased,	
John Willis,	John, son of Thomas Whit-	
John, his son,	man, deceased,	
Samuel Packard,	John Aldrich,	
Samuel,	Jonathan Hill,	
Zacheus,	Samuel Sheverick,	
Nathaniel,	Richard Holt,	
John,	Edward Mitchell,	
John Ames,	Nicholas Byram,	
John, his nephew,	Nicholas, his son,	
Thomas Snell,	John Gordon,	
William Brett,	George Turner.	

Many of these fathers had other sons, who were probably not of age or not proprietors. Samuel Edson had another son, named Josiah; Joseph Alden, two other sons, Joseph and John; Robert Latham, a son, Chilton; John Haward, a son, Ephraim; Samuel Allen, five other sons, Nathaniel, Ebenezer, Josiah, Elisha, and Nehemiah; Thomas Whitman, two other sons, Nicholas and Ebenezer; and so of others. Other settlers were not at that time proprietors or "purchasers of rights," and therefore their names do not appear.

The first officers chosen in the town, which was in 1657, were John Willis, deputy, Arthur Harris and John Haward, surveyors, and Samuel Tompkins, constable. Mark Lathrop, John Ames, John Cary, and Thomas Hayward, were town officers as early as 1660. In the same year, John Willis was appointed to administer oaths, and was therefore the first magistrate there. Thomas Hayward, Jun. was the next, and Elihu Brett the third. The two first militia officers, "allowed and approved" by the Court, were Thomas Hayward, Jun. lieutenant, and John Haward, ensign. They were afterwards promoted. The "Town Council" in Philip's war were William Brett, Samuel Edson, and John Willis. The selectmen in 1690 were Capt. Thomas Hayward, Lieut. John Hayward, John Willis, John Field, and John Kingman. The town clerks have been John Cary, Samuel Allen, Nathaniel Brett and Eliakim Howard.

The settlements extended first into the south part of the town, and towards Taunton, as their principal intercourse was with the people of that place, where was the nearest mill for grinding their corn, whither they were accustomed to go frequently on foot, and carry their *grists* on their backs. There were not many settlements in the easterly part of the town, till 1685, when we find on record a petition from Samuel Allen, William Brett, Isaac Harris, John Haward, Jun. Jonathan Hill, Thomas Whitman, and Samuel Allen, Jun. praying for a road and stating, "that God by his providence had placed their habitations on the east side of the town, some two, and some three miles from the meeting house, the mill, and the chief part



of the town, and that they had a horse bridge over Matfield river," since called "John's river," probably from John Haward, Jun. who lived on the banks of it, near where the late Col. Edward Mitchell lived.

The orthography, as it respects the names of the early settlers, has in many instances considerably changed. John Haward and his descendants, who originally omitted the *y* in their name, finally changed it to Howard. This is said to have been first done by Doct. Abiel Howard, who graduated at Cambridge in 1730, and had his name so inserted in the catalogue. Thomas and his descendants have retained their original name of Hayward. They were undoubtedly both of the same name of Hayward, and probably of the same family; but the relation between them, if any, is not known. There is a letter remaining with the descendants of John, from some one of their ancestors in England, subscribed Hayward, or Haward. Both names have however been uniformly there spoken, as if written Howard. Cary was sometimes written Carew. Leonard was written Leonardson, sometimes Lennerson; Harris, Harrison; Lathrop, Laythorpe; Packard, Packer, and was always so pronounced; Harden, Harding; Fobes, Vobes; Alger, Agur, or Auger, and formerly so pronounced. Minister Keith uniformly wrote Agur, Packer; and also Byron, for Byram.

Thomas Gannett died in 1655, before the incorporation of the plantation, and is the first death there on record. Matthew Gannett of Scituate was his brother. Caleb Gannett, Esq. of Cambridge, is of this family.

Francis Godfrey, a carpenter, "an aged inhabitant," and one of the "colony troopers," died there in 1669. The family is now extinct there, as well as those of Tompkins, Turner, Lapham, Holt, Sheverick, Gordon, Bacon, and Bailey.

Thomas Hayward was one of the eldest of the settlers. He died in 1681, and his descendants are more numerous than those of any other name in town. The present Register of Probate, the High Sheriff of the County, and the Minister at Barnstable, are of this family.

John Howard was brought up in the family of Capt. Miles Standish; was a carpenter; and his descendants are numerous, and have been, and still are, one of the most influential families in the town. The late Rev. Simeon Howard, D. D. of Boston, Zechariah Howard of Canton, and the present Bezaliel Howard of Springfield, descended from him.

Nathaniel and John Willis died early, the former the first schoolmaster, and the latter the first Deacon, Deputy and Magistrate in the place. They were brothers. Lawrence Willis was also early in the town. Richard Willis was at Plymouth, in 1630; and Henry Willis was a volunteer in the Pequot war. These were probably of the same family, but in what degree related does not appear. The Rev. Zephaniah Willis of Kingston is of this family.

Thomas Whitman settled in the east parish, and married Abigail, daughter of Nicholas Byram. His son John had no children, Ebenezer settled in the south, Nicholas remained in the east parish. His descendants are very numerous in Bridgewater, and more of them have received a publick education, than of any other name in town. Several of them have been clergymen. Nine of this name, and all of them his posterity, are now in the profession of the law in this Commonwealth. The family is remarkable for longevity. Nicholas had four children, who lived to above 85, two of them above 90 years; and others above 70. Others of the same family have lived to above 80, and one to above 90 years. Four are now living of the respective ages of 94, 87, 84, and 80.

Samuel Edson was one of the first deacons, and his posterity have spread into different and distant parts of our country. He erected the first mill in the town. This family appears to be the only one of the name. Edson is not to be found in any foreign list of names. It is supposed to be a contraction of Edwardson. He was from Salem. Three of his descendants by the name of Josiah, have been distinguished in their day and representatives of the town. The first was his son and has been known in latter times by the appellation of "old Justice Edson."

He was the donor of the "school lands." He left no children. The second was grandson, son of Joseph, and has been called "old Capt. Edson." The third was the late Col. Edson, son of the last, and one of the seventeen Rescinders, so called, and a Mandamus Counsellor. He died early in the revolution at New York, or on Long-Island. Before that period he had been a deacon in the south parish, where he lived, and had been a very respectable and influential man in the town. Old Samuel Edson died 9th July, 1692, aged 80 years. His wife Susanna died 20th Feb. 1699, aged 81 years.

John Washburn, sen. died there before 1670. His descendants settled principally in the south part of the town, but became very numerous and spread into the neighbouring towns and even to the remotest parts of the country.

Joseph Alden, second son of the Hon. John Alden of Duxbury, settled in the south. This family has been also remarkable for its longevity. Abundant information has been given respecting them in "the Collection of American Epitaphs," the author himself being one of them.

Robert Latham settled in the east parish, and was probably son of William, one of the "forefathers." He married Susanna Winslow of Boston, daughter of John Winslow, brother of the Governor. Her mother was Mary Chilton, daughter of James Chilton, who arrived at Plymouth in the first ship, May Flower. She is said to have been the first person, who leaped from the ship, at their landing. Robert had two sons, who together bore the name of their ancestor above named, James and Chilton. And these were long continued as christian names in the family, which is not so numerous in the town as formerly, many of them having emigrated into Hampshire, the District of Maine, and other places. Arthur Latham of Lyme is one of this family and also a descendant of Arthur Harris.

John Ames had no children ; and in 1697 gave his estate by deed principally to his nephew John Ames, son of his brother William of Braintree. These brothers were sons of Richard Ames of Bruton in the county of Somersetshire in England. John the nephew, (born in 1651,)



removed to Bridgewater, and had five sons, John, Nathaniel, Thomas, William, and David. Nathaniel, (born in 1677,) was the father of old Dr. Ames of Dedham, (born 1708,) father of the late Hon. Fisher Ames. Dr. Ames had two wives successively of the name of Fisher; and a son by each, named Fisher. The first, dying young, but not till after his mother, and her estate having vested in him, gave rise to the famous law suit, in which it was first determined, that real estate *ascended*, contrary to the English rule, to the father as next of kin by the Province law. The family of Ames is still numerous in Bridgewater.

Samuel Packard's descendants are the second in point of numbers in the town and are principally settled in the north parish. The Rev. Asa, Hezekiah and Theophilus Packard, are of this family; so also was Elijah Packard, formerly a minister at Manomet Ponds in Plymouth.

Thomas Snell was one of the largest landholders in town, and his family numerous. The Rev. Thomas Snell of North Brookfield, who delivered the last election sermon, is one of his descendants.

John Fobes' descendants are principally in the south part of the town. The late Rev. Perez Fobes, D. D. of Raynham, was one of them.

John Cary was among the most respectable of the first settlers and his family one of the most influential in the town. He was the first Town Clerk; one of his name and family was afterwards Town Clerk at Bristol. He died in 1681. Some of his family are still remaining in the east, north and south parishes. Others of them removed to New Jersey.

Samuel Allen settled in the east parish, and was the second Town Clerk. He married a daughter of George Partridge, and his posterity are very numerous. Capt. Jacob Allen, who was killed at the capture of Burgoyne, was his great grandson.

Nicholas Byram settled also in the east parish; his wife was Susanna Shaw of Weymouth. He died about 1687. He had but one son; his name was Nicholas, who had four sons, Nicholas, Josiah, Ebenezer and Joseph.

This family was formerly numerous and influential, but most of them removed many years ago. Nicholas and his family only remained. Josiah's family went to N. Yarmouth; Ebenezer's to N. Jersey. Joseph was a physician; one of his sons, Joseph, went to Maine; another, Benjamin, to Vermont.

Arthur Harris was one of the first settlers in the west parish. He married Mercy, youngest daughter of the above named John Winslow of Boston. His descendants settled early in the east parish. He finally lived and died in Boston, and his will is there on record; but his estate and even his house was in Bridgewater, as appears by his will.

Some of the descendants of Constant Southworth, Solomon Leonard, Giles Leach, William Snow, Mark Lathrop, and Jonathan Hill, still remain in different parts of the town, as well as in the adjoining towns. There are other families, and some of them numerous, whose names are not to be found among those of the early proprietors. Such are Alger, Copeland, Kingman, Robinson, Chamberlin, Pratt, Shaw, Orcutt, Benson, Lazell, Hudson, Johnson, Hooper, Thayer, and others.

Emigration from the town has been so great, that there has been but little increase in its population for twenty years. Formerly they went to the westward, and northerly into Hampshire, but latterly more into the District of Maine. The census of 1790, was 4975; in 1800 it was 5200, the number of houses was 740. The last census of 1810 was 5157; and the relative population of the different parishes was as follows. West 1065—south 1234—east 1195—north 1354—Titicut 318. The last U. States land tax was in the West 505,47—south 552,99—east 579,82—north 598,52—Titicut 150,54—Total \$2387,34.

Bridgewater was the first interior settlement in the county of Plymouth, and many of the settlers were probably young men, born in this country, and therefore well calculated to encounter the troubles and dangers they were soon called to meet. In Philip's war, which commenced in 1675, they displayed great resolution and intrepidity. Surrounded by a savage foe, "they were strongly advis-

ed and solicited to desert their dwellings, and repair down to the towns by the sea side." They however resolutely kept their ground and defended their settlement ; and encouraged and assisted other towns to do the same. They erected a stockade or garrison on the south side of the river, and also fortified many of their dwelling-houses. At the commencement of hostilities, June 21, 1675, seventeen of their number "well armed and furnished with horses, the first that were on the march in all the country," went to Metapoiset, a small settlement about twelve miles from Swanzey, "to strengthen the garrison at that place." They were met by people from Swanzey, driven from their habitations, and filled with terror, who advised and persuaded them to return ; but they fearlessly pursued their course and accomplished their object. They were in "many perils" while there, but returned safe, after the greatest part of the garrison, consisting of seventy persons, most of whom were women and children, were safely conducted on to Rhode Island. Six persons, who were killed at that time as they were with their teams, conveying their corn into the garrison, were the first that fell in that war.

April 9th, 1676, being Sunday, the enemy burnt a house and barn, and rifled several other houses in the town ; but they soon fled and were not to be overtaken, though closely pursued. May 8th, about three hundred Indians with Tispaquin for their leader made another assault on the east end of the town on the south side of the river, and set fire to many of the houses ; but the inhabitants, "issuing from their garrison houses," fell upon them so resolutely, that the enemy were repelled ; and, a heavy shower of rain falling at the same time, the fires were soon extinguished. The attack was then renewed on the north side of the river, but the enemy was soon defeated, and the next morning entirely disappeared, after having burnt two houses and one barn. On this occasion thirteen houses and four barns only were burnt, and but five of these were in the village. The rest were on the borders of the settlement, and deserted at the time. There is a tradition that, excepting the garrison houses, every house but one in town was burnt. This was probably true as it respected



the out-houses or dwellings on the borders or skirts of the town only, and not those in the centre or village, which were considered in some degree as fortified or garrison houses. This is the more probable, as the house expected is said to have belonged to Nicholas Byram, which was in the easterly part of the town, and quite distant from the principal settlement. It stood where Capt. Isaac Whitman now lives. July 14 and 15, a party of Indians came upon the north side of the town, but, after killing a few cattle, retired. July 18, 19 and 20, the inhabitants pursued the enemy and took sixteen of them, of whom two only were men.

The following extract from an ancient manuscript, supposed to have been written by Comfort Willis,\* who then held the office of "town trooper," was furnished by the Hon. Daniel Howard.

"On Saturday Capt. Hayward, Sergeant Packard, John Willis and Isaac Harris went out to see if the Indians were coming down upon them, and they saw an Indian, which made them think the enemy was at hand; and they immediately *pressed* Comfort Willis and Joseph Edson to go *post* to the governor the same day at night to tell him of it. And he went to Plymouth with them the next day to send Capt. Church with his company. And Capt. Church came with them to Monponset [a large pond in Halifax] on the Sabbath and came no further that day, and he told them he would meet them the next day. And Comfort Willis and Joseph Edson *came* home at night and told their friends of it, and Ensign Haward, Samuel Edson, Josiah Edson, Joseph Edson, John Washburn, Samuel Washburn, Thomas Washburn, John Field, Nicholas Byram, Samuel Allen, Samuel Allen, Jun. John Gordon, John Haward, John Packard, John Ames, Comfort Willis, Guido Bailey, Nathaniel Hayward, John Whitman, John Hayward, and Samuel Leach, went out on Monday, supposing to meet with Capt. Church; but they came upon the enemy and fought with them and took seventeen of them alive and also much plunder. And they

\* It has been suggested that Comfort and Benjamin Willis were sons of John, and not of Nathaniel, as before stated.

all returned, and not one of them fell by the enemy ; and received no help from Church."

This was probably July 31, 1676, when some of Philip's "special friends" were killed, and among others his uncle, who fell by his side. Had the soldier known, "which had been the right bird," as Hubbard expresses it, Philip himself might have fallen, and the war been thus brought to a more speedy termination. The party "were few and not able to keep close together, so that the cunning fox escaped through the bushes undiscerned in their rear." Hubbard relates that a remarkable "trembling fear was discerned to be upon the Indians at this time, so that one of them having a gun in his hand well laden was not able to discharge it, but suffered an English soldier to come up and shoot him." This happened in the south part of the town, near the great river. John Ames is said to have distinguished himself on this occasion by his undaunted resolution in rescuing some of his companions from the hands of the enemy.

They joined Capt. Church the next day, and pursued the enemy till the third of August, when, "having no provision but what they took from the enemy, they hastened to Bridgewater, sending an express before to provide for them, their company being now very numerous, having killed and taken one hundred and seventy-three. The gentlemen of Bridgewater met Capt. Church with great expressions of honour and thanks, and received him and his army with all due respect and kind treatment." The prisoners were conveyed into the town pound at night, and an Indian guard set over them. "They were well treated with victuals and drink, and had a merry night ; and the prisoners laughed as loud as the soldiers, not having been so well treated for a long time." The next day Capt. Church arrived safe at Plymouth with all the prisoners.

Amidst danger, and often actually assaulted, it is remarkable that not only at this time, as above stated, but during the whole of that war, in which from time to time great numbers of them were engaged, not one of the inhabitants was killed. All the narratives of that conflict describe Bridgewater as a fortunate and highly favoured

town, while they unite in giving them high encomiums for their courage and activity in the service.

Capt. Jacob Allen, who was killed at the capture of Burgoyne, was the second inhabitant of the town, who ever fell in battle ; and one John Snell, who was killed in the old French war was the first.

Hubbard informs us that in " June, 1676 (it was 1675) a man and a woman were slain by the Indians, and another woman wounded and taken," in Dartmouth. These were Jacob Mitchell and his wife before mentioned, and one Dorothy Hayward, as appears by her deposition, taken June 25, 1677.

From June 3, 1656, the time when the town was incorporated, to the year 1691, inclusive, when the two colonies were united, the representatives to old Plymouth Court appear in the following order : 1657, John Willis ; 1661, William Brett ; 1676, Samuel Edson ; 1678, John Haward ; 1684, Thomas Hayward ; 1691, Josiah Edson.

From that period to the present time the representatives to the General Court of Massachusetts appear in the following order.

1692 Josiah Edson and	to 1713 Samuel Edson,
David Perkins,	1714 Josiah Edson,
1698 Samuel Allen,	1715 Edward Fobes,
1694 David Perkins,	1716 John Field,
1695 Elihu Brett,	to 1719 Rich. Davenport,
1696 David Perkins,	to 1722 Edward Fobes,
1697 Samuel Edson,	1723 Ephraim Howard,
1698 Josiah Edson,	1724 Rich. Davenport,
to 1700 Elihu Brett,	1725 Thomas Ames,
1701 } none	1726 Joseph Keith,
1702 }	1727 Isaac Johnson,
1703 Edward Fobes,	to 1729 Isaac Johnson and
1704 David Perkins,	John Alden,
to 1707 William Brett,	1730 Isaac Johnson,
1708 Edward Fobes,	*1730 Neh. Washburn,
to 1710 Joseph Hayward,	1731 Isaac Johnson,
1711 Edward Fobes,	to 1734 John Holman,

\* There were two courts this year. The governor, being dissatisfied with the court because they would not render his salary permanent, dissolved them and issued a new precept.



- |                          |                           |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1735 Josiah Edson, 2d.   | David Kingman,            |
| to 1737 John Holman,     | 1781 Nathan Mitchell,     |
| 1738 Ebenezer Byram,     | 1782 Hugh Orr,            |
| 1739 Josiah Edson,       | 1783 Nathan Mitchell,     |
| to 1741 Ebenezer Byram,  | to 1785 Nathan Mitchell & |
| 1742 Neh. Washburn,      | Elisha Mitchell,          |
| 1743 Josiah Edson,       | 1786 Daniel Howard 2d.    |
| 1744 John Holman,        | 1787 Elisha Mitchell,     |
| 1745 Josiah Edson,       | to 1790 James Thomas,     |
| 1746 Josiah Edson, 3d.   | 1791 Simeon Dunbar,       |
| to 1748 Daniel Howard,   | 1792 Beza Hayward,        |
| to 1750 Josiah Edson,    | 1793 Daniel Snow,         |
| to 1755 Daniel Howard,   | to 1795 Beza Hayward,     |
| to 1766 Josiah Edson,    | 1796 Daniel Snow,         |
| to 1769 Edward Mitchell, | to 1798 Nahum Mitchell,   |
| to 1771 Josiah Edson,    | to 1803 Daniel Snow,      |
| 1772 Daniel Howard,      | to 1806 Daniel Mitchell,  |
| 1773 Josiah Edson,       | to 1808 William Baylies,  |
| 1774 Edward Mitchell,    | 1809 Nahum Mitchell,      |
| 1774 } Edward Mitchell   | 1810 Daniel Mitchell,     |
| 1775 } and Richard Per-  | to 1812 Nahum Mitchell,   |
| kins were delegates      | William Baylies,          |
| to the Provincial        | Ezra Kingman,             |
| Congress, at their       | Gideon Howard,            |
| several meetings at      | Daniel Crane,             |
| Salem, Concord,          | Caleb Cary,               |
| and Cambridge.           | 1813 Daniel Howard,       |
| 1776 Edward Mitchell,    | Gideon Howard,            |
| Hugh Orr,                | Daniel Crane,             |
| Eliphalet Cary,          | Nathan Mitchell,          |
| Nathl. Reynolds,         | Ebiezer Alger,            |
| Oakes Angier, and        | 1814 Daniel Howard,       |
| Thomas Hooper,           | to 1816 Daniel Howard,    |
| 1777 Edward Mitchell,    | Bartholom. Brown,         |
| Nathl. Reynolds,         | Ezra Kingman,             |
| 1778 Nathan Mitchell,    | Abiezer Alger,            |
| Oakes Angier,            | Noah Fearing,             |
| 1779 Oakes Angier,       | Caleb Howard,             |
| Josiah Hayden,           | 1817 Daniel Howard.       |
| 1780 Nathan Mitchell,    |                           |

Benjamin Willis and Nathan Mitchell were delegates to the convention at Cambridge for forming the constitution of this Commonwealth, in September, 1779.

Daniel Howard, Elisha Mitchell, Hezekiah Hooper, and Daniel Howard, Jun. were the delegates to the convention of this state for adopting the constitution of the United States, in 1788.

The county was incorporated in 1685. The Senators, which Bridgewater has furnished are Hugh Orr, from 1785 two years—Nathan Mitchell, 1787—Daniel Howard, from 1788, six years—Beza Hayward, from 1796, nine years—Nahum Mitchell, from 1813, two years.

[When 2d or 3d is affixed to a name, it means only that it is the second or third person of the name, who has represented the town.]

### *Ecclesiastical History.*

The first settlements being in the west parish, the first church was of course formed there ; but they were few in number, and although they might and probably did meet together on the Sabbath for social worship, yet were unable to maintain a minister, and thus form themselves into a regular church, and enjoy the full benefits of the christian institutions. In this situation they remained from 1651 to 1664 ; about twelve years. The Rev. James Keith was their first ordained minister, and the record of his settlement, in which the terms of it are particularly expressed, bears date the 18th day of Feb. 1664. He is there called “ a student of divinity, having some competent time improved his gifts amongst them in the work of the ministry, and having also due approbation by the testimony of the Rev. Elders of other churches of Christ, to whom he was known.” He was a Scotchman, educated at Aberdeen, and probably came to Boston about the year 1662, and was introduced to the church at Bridgewater by Dr. Increase Mather, whom he always considered as his best friend and patron. In the second preface to the “Bridgewater’s Monitor” (the first having been written by Increase and Cotton Mather) it is said that they had not an ordained minister till 1663. This had reference probably to the old style. He had preached with them,

as appears by the above vote of the town, for some time, but was not ordained till the spring of 1664. The terms of his settlement were liberal. They granted him a house lot of twelve acres "with a house built thereon by the town," and a purchase right so called, being one fifty-sixth part of the town, and also 40*l.* annual salary; 20*l.* to be paid in Boston and the other half at home. In 1667 they made him an additional grant of thirty cords of wood annually, "the cutters of the wood to have five groats and the drawers seven groats a cord." In 1681 they raised his salary from 40 to 50*l.*; 20*l.* to be paid at Boston in money, and 30*l.* at home in corn and provisions. In 1689 they agreed to allow him annually 10*l.* in corn in lieu of his thirty cords of wood. He married Susannah, daughter of Samuel Edson. She died quite advanced in years, and he married in his old age (1707) the widow Mary Williams, relict of Thomas Williams of Taunton. He died July 23, 1719, aged 76; of course was about 21 years of age when he was ordained.

In Mather's *Magnalia* he is numbered among the third class, "who were all such ministers as came over after the reestablishment of the episcopal church government in England, and the consequent persecution of the non-conformists." This must have been a mistake with regard to Mr. Keith, as he was from Scotland; and besides could not have been a minister before he came over, being very young and but a student when he arrived. He had six sons, James, Joseph, Samuel, Timothy, John, and Josiah, and two daughters, Margaret Hunt, and Mary Haward. James settled in Mendon, and the others in Bridgewater and Easton. His posterity are exceedingly numerous, two hundred persons in Bridgewater alone bearing his name in the late census. A great many of them are also in Easton, Middleborough, Mendon, and the District of Maine. Israel Keith, formerly Adjutant General of the Commonwealth, is one of his descendants.

William Brett, who was among the first planters of the town, was a ruling elder in the church, and probably assisted and aided them in their public worship from the commencement of their settlement to the time of Mr. Keith's ordination, as well as afterwards. He was a well



educated and intelligent man, as appears by his letters to Governor Winslow; and was much esteemed by his brethren, and often employed in their secular affairs. He lived to a good old age, and died in 1682, leaving three sons before named, who were respectable and valuable men. William was a representative; Nathaniel, a deacon and town and proprietor's clerk; and Elihu, a magistrate.

The following extract is from the early church records of Plymouth. "The worthy church of Christ at Bridgewater have for their pastor Mr. James Keith, who came by the wise disposing hand of Providence out of Scotland. William Brett, a grave and godly man, is their ruling elder, and John Willis their deacon, a good man and one that hath approved himself faithful. They carry on in a way of peace, holiness, and good gospel order."

The Rev. Daniel Perkins, successor of Mr. Keith, was ordained Oct. 4, 1721. He was a native of Topsfield in the county of Essex, and was graduated at Harvard in 1717. He married Ann Foster of Charlestown, and had one son and one daughter. His son, the late Dr. Richard Perkins, married Mary Hancock, sister of the Governor; old Mr. Perkins having previously married her mother, the widow Hancock, for his second wife. Dr. Perkins left a numerous family, all of whom excepting Daniel and George W. Perkins, now live in Boston. These two and their families still live in Bridgewater. The daughter of the Rev. Mr. Perkins married the Rev. Mr. Bridge of Framingham, and afterwards the Rev. Mr. Harrington of Lancaster. The Rev. Mr. Perkins died Sept. 29, 1782, in the 86th year of his age, and in the 62d of his ministry. His son, the late Dr. Perkins, died Oct. 16, 1813, aged 83.

The Rev. John Reed, D. D. the present successor of Mr. Perkins, was ordained as colleague, June 7, 1780. He was graduated at Yale in 1772, and is son of the late Rev. Solomon Reed of Middleborough.

#### *South Parish.*

A second precinct was incorporated June 1, 1716. This division of the society was made in pursuance of a

report of John Cushing, Edmund Quincy, George Leonard, Henry Hodges and Jacob Tomson, a committee appointed by the General Court for this purpose. The line of partition was made easterly and westerly across the town, leaving much the largest part on the northerly side, "regard then being had to the erecting of other parishes in future," as increasing settlements should require. The new parish was called the South, and the old one the North. The new meeting-house was erected on the "easterly side of John Washburn's field," and was dedicated on the 14th June, 1717, on which occasion Mr. Keith delivered a sermon, which is published in the "Bridgewater's Monitor." The Rev. Benjamin Allen, their first pastor, was a native of Tisbury of Martha's Vineyard, graduated at Yale in 1708, and ordained July 9, 1718. He continued with them about ten years, but, being an unsuccessful manager of his secular concerns, he fell into debt, and the parish, after often relieving him, became at last weary of it, and he was dismissed by an ecclesiastical council. He afterwards, about 1730, was installed at Cape Elizabeth, and was the first minister of that place, where he died May 6, 1754, aged 65. He had several daughters; one married a clergyman in Barnstable county, of the name of Upham; another, a clergyman of the name of Emery; two married gentlemen of the name of Jourdan; the daughter of one of them, Clement Jourdan, Esq. was wife of the late Rev. Enos Hitchcock, D. D. of Providence. A grandson of his, Clement Jourdan, lives in Buxton.

The Rev. John Shaw, his successor was a native of the east parish of Bridgewater, son of Joseph Shaw; was graduated at Harvard 1729, and ordained Nov. 17, 1731. His grandfather was probably John Shaw of Weymouth, whose sister married Nicholas Byram. He died April 29, 1791, aged 82 years, and in the 60th year of his ministry. He married a daughter of the Rev. Samuel Angier of Watertown, and had five sons, Oakes, Bezaliel, William, John, and Samuel. The four first were clergymen; and Samuel is a physician, and lives on the paternal estate at Bridgewater. He left also a daughter, who

is the wife of Gen. Nathaniel Goodwin of Plymouth. He delivered the sermon at the ordination of Mr. Taft of Braintree, (now Randolph) which is in print.

The Rev. Zedekiah Sanger, D. D. his present successor, was born at Sherburne, graduated at Harvard 1771; was formerly minister of Duxbury, and afterwards installed as colleague at Bridgewater, Dec. 17, 1788. There is a small ministerial fund in this parish; the trustees of which were incorporated Feb. 7, 1803. It was then nearly one thousand dollars, and has been augmented since.

### *East Parish.*

Dec. 14, 1723, the east end of the north parish, then so called, ever since called the west parish, together with nine persons of the south parish, namely, Barnabas Seabury, Thomas Latham, Charles Latham, Nicholas Wade, Nathaniel Harden, Thomas Hooper, William Conant, Isaac Lazell and Joseph Washburn, with their families and estates, were constituted a precinct, called the east parish. This was done also in pursuance of a report of a viewing committee of court, consisting of Isaac Winslow, Samuel Thaxter, Josiah Cotton, Isaac Little and John Quincy. The boundaries were a due north line from the south parish through the "centre-tree," and the old Plymouth road on the south-easterly side.

The Rev. John Angier, (son of the Rev. Samuel Angier of Rehoboth, and afterwards of Watertown,) graduated at Harvard in 1720, was their first minister, ordained October 28, 1724. He married a daughter of Ezra Bourne, Esq. of Sandwich. His mother was daughter of the Rev. Urian Oakes, formerly President of Harvard University, and her mother was daughter of the famous Dr. William Ames of England, author of "*Medulla Theologiæ*." He died April 14, 1787, in the 86th year of his age, and in the 63d of his ministry.

His son, the Rev. Samuel Angier, graduated at Harvard in 1763, was ordained colleague with him Dec. 23, 1767, and died Jan. 18, 1805, in the 62d year of his age. His other son, Oakes Angier, was an attorney, settled at Bridgewater, and a man of some distinction and emi-



nence in his profession. He had a daughter also, who married the Rev. Ephraim Hyde of Rehoboth. Samuel left no children. Oakes left a family, one of whom, John, is settled in Belfast. Dr. Eliot, in his Biographical Dictionary, supposed the late Hon. Fisher Ames to have been descended from the above named Dr. William Ames, and the same is repeated in the preface to Fisher Ames' works; but the account here given of the family of Ames, (page 153) drawn from authentic sources, renders this supposition altogether improbable.

The present successor of the Rev. Samuel Angier is the Rev. James Flint, who is a native of Reading in the county of Middlesex, was graduated at Harvard in 1802, and ordained Oct. 29, 1806.

#### *North Parish.*

January 3, 1738, the north part of the west parish and a small part of the north-west corner of the east parish were incorporated into a precinct, and called the north parish. The boundaries are a due east line from Easton, a half a mile north of "the white oak tree at Jonathan Packard's corner" to the east parish line; and thence north easterly to Beaver Brook, together with three families and their estates, on the east side of the river.

The Rev. John Porter was their first pastor, a native of Abington, was graduated at Cambridge in 1736, ordained Oct. 15, 1740, and died March 12, 1802, in the 87th year of his age, and the 62d of his ministry. He had four sons, who received a publick education. One of them, Huntington, is a minister at Rye, N. H. The Rev. Eliphalet Porter, D. D. of Roxbury, is also one of them. One of his daughters also married the Rev. Thomas Crafts of Middleborough.

The Rev. Asa Meech, his successor, was ordained Oct. 15, 1800, and was dismissed by a mutual council in 1811, and was afterwards installed, and still continues, minister of Canterbury, Connecticut. He is a native of that state.

His successor, the present Rev. Daniel Huntington, was born in Norwich, Conn. and ordained Oct. 28, 1812. He received a degree at Yale College in 1816. He is

brother of the Rev. Mr. Huntington of Boston, and son of Gen. Jedediah Huntington of New London. His salary is \$700, the highest in the town.

Feb. 4, 1743. The south-west part of the south parish with a part of Middleborough, was incorporated into a precinct commonly called Titicut parish. It lies south of the old four mile line so called. The Rev. Solomon Reed before mentioned, a native of Abington, and graduated at Cambridge in 1739, was their first minister; the late Rev. David Gurney a native of Bridgewater, and graduated at Cambridge in 1785, was their second; and the present Rev. Philip Colby is now their pastor. The meeting house is in Middleborough, and all their ministers have resided there, the largest part of the parish belonging to that town.

Besides these territorial precincts there is a small Episcopal church in the south parish, consisting of about thirty or forty members, who, with their families and estates, were incorporated June 14, 1815, by the name of "Trinity church." It is of much longer standing, being nearly sixty-eight years old, and originated in a grant of about fourteen acres of land made 23 Jan. 1747, by one Samuel Edson to the society in England for the propagation of the gospel in foreign parts, on condition that the income be applied to the support of publick worship according to the usage of the church of England. The present house was erected in 1748 by individual subscription. They formerly became much reduced in numbers, but have lately revived and increased. In April, 1812, they conveyed the glebe to the Trustees of donations at Boston, and it is leased for nine hundred and ninety-nine years to John Edson, one of the members, for 21 dollars a year. June 12, 1816, having expended about 80 dollars in repairing their house, and voted 30 dollars to be assessed for the support of public worship, it was solemnly consecrated by Bishop Griswold and the Rev. Messrs. Blake and Crocker.

There is also a Baptist meeting house in the west part of the west parish. The society consists of members,

partly from Easton and partly from Bridgewater. It was formed about the time that Dr. Reed was ordained, and has been lately incorporated. Their ministers have been Mr. Robertson, Mr. Rathburn, Mr. Smith, and the present, Mr. Shurtliff.

It is very remarkable that each of the Congregational parishes are now enjoying the labors of their third minister. The general longevity of their pastors is also worthy of notice. Four of them, Mr. Perkins, Mr. J. Angier, Mr. Shaw, and Mr. Porter, who were cotemporaries, lived to the great ages respectively of 86, 86, 83, 87, and died in the 62d, 63d, 60th, and 62d year of their ministry. These, with Mr. Keith, who was 76, and Mr. Samuel Angier, who was 62 years of age, are the only ministers that ever died in the town.

The census of the several parishes, taken Sept. 24, 1764, is as follows :

West parish	106	dwell'g houses,	121	families,	880	persons.
South	162	"	173	"	1056	"
East	142	"	157	"	959	"
North	120	"	131	"	833	"
Titicut	41	"	48	"	262	"
	<hr/>			<hr/>		<hr/>
	571			630		3990

This, compared with the census of 1810, (page 155,) will show the comparative increase in the population, which has been greatest in the aggregate in the north, that being the youngest and largest parish ; but for a few years past it has been equally great, if not greater, in the east.

### *Schools and Education.*

This town has been remarkable for its attention to education both public and private. Mr. Keith and Elder Brett, in the infancy of the town, procured a subscription of about 12*l.* to be paid in Indian corn for the use of the College at Cambridge, "according to the order given by the court." Assessments were also formerly made very liberally both in town and parishes for the maintenance of



schools. Latterly the town assessments have been increased, and those of the parishes consequently discontinued. There are in the town upwards of thirty school houses, and as many districts, in which from two to three thousand dollars are annually expended.

There is also in the south parish an academy, which was established and the trustees thereof incorporated on the 28th February, 1799. The half township of land, granted by the General Court in the act of incorporation, was sold by the trustees for 5000 dollars. The building was erected by individuals, who subscribed the sum of 3000 dollars for that purpose. It has had the reputation of a good seminary of instruction, and is still in a flourishing condition.

The following are the names of those, who have received collegiate education and degrees, arranged under the parishes, to which they respectively belonged, with the years and colleges annexed, in which they received them.

*West Parish.*

Abiel Howard	1729	Jonas Hartwell	1787 D.
Ephraim Keith	1729	Bezer Snell	1789
Joseph Snell	1735	Charles Angier	1793
Nathaniel Snell	1740	Francis Howard	1797 B.
Richard Perkins	1748	Geo. W. Perkins	1801 B.
Elijah Packard	1750	John Reed	1803 B.
Simeon Howard	1758	Daniel Johnson	1806 B.
Daniel Johnson	1767	Barzillai Hayward	1807 B.
Asa Dunbar	1767	John Willis	1807 B.
Silvanus Ames	1767	John E. Howard	1815 B.
Simeon Dunbar	1772	George Copeland	1815 B.
Bezaliel Howard	1781	Caleb Reed	1817
Jonathan Burr	1784		

*South Parish.*

Josiah Edson	1730	Bezaliel Shaw	1762
Benjamin Willis	1740	William Shaw	1762
Silvanus Conant	1740	Timothy Alden	1762
Oakes Shaw	1758	Perez Fobes	1762

John Shaw	1772	David Leonard	1792 B.
Beza Hayward	1772	Zenas L. Leonard	1794 B.
Jonas Whitman	1772 Y.	Richard Sanger	1800
Martin Kinsley	1778	Gaius Conant	1800 B.
Zephaniah Willis	1778	Nathan Fobes	1803 B.
Thomas Perkins	1779	Noah Whitman	1806 B.
James Allen	1785	Cyrus Alden	1807 B.
Seth Pratt	1785	Zedekiah Sanger	1807 B.
Nathan Hayward	1785	Ralph Sanger	1808
Kilborn Whitman	1785	John A. Shaw	1811
Jonathan Leonard	1786	Seth Alden	1814 B.
Benj. Whitman	1788 B.	Levi W. Leonard	1815
Hezekiah Hooper	1789	Zebulon L. Shaw	1815

*East Parish.*

John Shaw	1729	Ebenezer Lazell	1788 B.
Eliab Byram	1740	Nahum Mitchell	1789
Samuel Angier	1763	Hector Orr	1792
Thomas Gannett	1763	Ezekiel Whitman	1795 B.
Caleb Gannett	1763	Asa Mitchell	1802
Oakes Angier	1764	Jacob Hill	1807 B.
William Conant	1770 Y.	Eliab Whitman	1807 B.
James Thomas	1778	Nathl. Whitman	1809
Levi Whitman	1779	Daniel Whitman	1809 B.
Ebenezer Dawes	1785	Willard Phillips	1810
Barzillai Gannett	1785	Welcome Young	1814 B.
Allen Pratt	1785	Silvanus L. Mitchell	1817
David Gurney	1785		

*North Parish.*

James Thompson	1761 N.	Joshua Cushman	1787
John Porter	1770 Y.	Naphtali Shaw	1790 D.
Huntington Porter	1777	Daniel Howard	1797
Jonathan Porter	1777	Issachar Snell	1797
Eliphalet Porter	1777	Lucius Cary	1798 B.
Thomas Crafts	1783	Daniel Noyes	1813 Y.
Asa Packard	1783	Jonas Perkins	1813 B.
Zechariah Howard	1784	Jonathan P. Crafts	1817 B.
Hezekiah Packard	1787		

*Titicut.*

Ephraim Keith	1762	Daniel Crane	1796 B.
Adam Edson	1775 Y.	Oliver Hayward	1804 B.
Jael Edson	1784 Y.	Jonathan Keith	1805 B.

D. affixed to the year stands for Dartmouth College—B. for Brown University—Y. for Yale College—N. for Nassau or New Jersey College. Where no letter is affixed Harvard University is to be understood.

By comparing this list with the catalogue of Harvard, it will appear that one quarter of the class, who were graduated in the year 1785, were from Bridgewater.

*Ponds and Rivers.*

There are but two ponds of any considerable dimensions in the town. The largest lies on the south-west part of the town, adjoining Raynham, and was anciently called Nunketest, but afterwards and now called Nippenicket, being different names given it by the Indians. The other lies in the easterly part of the town, adjoining Halifax, and was anciently called by the Indians Satucket; but has latterly been called Robin's Pond; after an Indian family of that name, who came from Mattakeset (now Pembroke) and lived on the margin of it. Several families of the natives formerly settled and owned the land on the shores of this pond. They have generally been under the care and protection of guardians appointed by the General Court; but they are now nearly extinct, only one family remaining.

There is a river proceeding from the pond first above mentioned, which anciently bore the same name, Nunkest, but for a long time past, and perhaps ever since the incorporation of the town, has been called Town River. It first runs in a north-easterly course through the centre of the west parish, and then taking a more easterly and southerly direction passes through the south parish. On this river is the principal mill seat in the west parish, and two of the principal water privileges in the south parish. There are several tributary streams, which augment this river in its course, as Cowesit, and West Meadow Brook in the west, and South Brook in the south parish, and other smaller brooks.



There is another river, which takes its rise in Stoughton, south of the blue hills, and passes through the north parish, and is there called Salisbury river, from the circumstance of its running on the easterly side of Salisbury plain, so called, lying in that parish; and thence continues its course into the east parish, where it unites with Beaver brook, and is then called Matfield river, from an Indian of that name, who is said to have lived on the banks of it, and lower down it unites with Byram's brook and is then called John's river, which has already been explained (page 151.) It thence passes into the south parish, and there unites with the town river. There are in the north parish five or six mill seats on this river and Beaver brook, and seven in the east parish, including those on Beaver and Byram's brook. This river passes the whole length of the town, and may well be called middle river, as it is the middle one of the three principal streams, which compose the great river.

Another river, passing through Abington and the north west corner of Pembroke, enters the east parish on the easterly side, and is called poor meadow river, and uniting with the river coming from Halifax and through Robin's pond is then called Satucket river, and after receiving a small increase from black brook unites with John's river, and continuing its course a short distance into the south parish unites also with the town river as before stated, and thus is formed the Great river. Hobart's works in Abington, and Cushing's in Pembroke (formerly called More's forge) stand on the poor meadow branch, and the extensive works at Halifax between Monponset and Robin's pond are on the other branch of the Satucket river. Whitman's mills in the east parish are on this river; and just below the confluence of these three rivers in the south parish stand the new mills so called. The Great river after receiving the waters of the Winnetuxet from Plimpton and Namasket from Middleborough, is commonly called Titicut river, but from thence to the sea is called Taunton great river.

There are several other small mill seats in various parts of the town, on the minor brooks and rivulets, which af-

ford sufficient water however in many instances for the winter and spring seasons only.

Taunton river is *great* in comparison only with its branches, but is nevertheless large enough, even so high up as the south parish of Bridgewater, as to admit of ship-building there. Vessels of near one hundred and fifty tons have been built there and carried down in time of freshets.

### *Soil and Agriculture.*

Bridgewater is a very level township of land, having few or no hills. The only one, which may be properly so called, is Sprague's hill situated between the east and south parishes, and this is but small: but the north-west corner in the north parish, commonly called the "west shares," is perhaps the highest land in the town. The soil, as might be supposed, in so large an extent of territory, is various. In some parts, and particularly in those adjoining the rivers and brooks, it is of a good quality and very productive. In other parts, as on the plains, it is very suitable for tillage, being of a light mould; and produces good crops of corn, rye, oats or flax, with a moderate quantity of manure, and with little labour. In other parts more elevated and broken the soil is thin and poor, producing however at proper periods tolerable crops of corn and rye, and, when laid down again, yields for a considerable part of the season a scanty but sweet and nourishing feed for sheep and cows. There are large tracts of low and swampy lands in the town, which, while left unimproved, afford great quantities of wood and timber, and when subdued, produce large crops of hay of an indifferent quality, but suitable for the support of young cattle through the winter, which enables the farmers to increase their stock. There is a very large tract of these lands lying in the west parish called "the Hockamock meadows," which produces great crops of hay of a very good quality, and renders that parish with its other advantages of soil, perhaps the best agricultural part of the town. Besides meadows of this description, there are others lying along the margins of the rivers and brooks, yielding spontaneously hay of a better quality. These meadows

constitute the most peculiar advantage it enjoys as an agricultural town. The uplands and tillage grounds are kept in better heart by the increase of manure derived from the larger stock of cattle thus kept by the farmer ; and these meadows, especially on the rivers, being frequently overflowed, are thus naturally fertilized ; and besides yield a valuable feed after mowing, and at a season when the high grounds are generally dry and unproductive.

The town has always been more remarkable for raising grain than English grass ; not perhaps because it is more naturally suited to the one than the other, but because the soil is generally easy to till, and they have consequently been more naturally drawn into this mode of husbandry. If less grain were raised, the soil would unquestionably be less exhausted, and of course produce greater crops of grass. All English grasses, cultivated there, as herd's grass, clover, red top and blue grass, are usually sown so as to succeed two, and sometimes three, crops of grain. The farmers in general, not having sufficient manure to support the land under such severe tillage and repeated crops, often unreasonably complain of disappointment in their subsequent crops of grass. This is not peculiar to Bridgewater, but undoubtedly happens in all easy and similar soils. There is probably as much corn annually produced there as in any town in the commonwealth ; and it is also a very good soil for English grass with a proper and suitable cultivation. It has the reputation indeed as far as it is known, of being a very excellent township of land ; and its inhabitants are distinguished by their steady and industrious habits. The grains usually cultivated are corn, rye, and oats. Flax was formerly raised there in great abundance, but much less latterly. Wheat and barley are also produced in considerable quantities, and the attention of the inhabitants has of late been more turned towards their cultivation. Forty and fifty bushels of corn frequently to an acre, and sometimes sixty are produced ; but the average, one year with another, is thought to be about twenty : and from eight to ten bushels an acre, the average of rye ; although twice or thrice that quantity is often obtained.



Orchards were there formerly large and productive ; but have become old and decayed, and the setting and rearing of young trees has been too much neglected. The inhabitants are now however beginning to turn their attention to the reproduction of apple orchards, as well as to more delicate fruits, such as pears, cherries and peaches, which have been also very much neglected. They find more care and cost necessary to produce a good orchard now, than formerly when the land was new.

The wood of the forest is also various ; white oak, walnut, red oak, and black or yellow oak, being most common among the hard wood of the uplands ; and maple, beach, black birch, hornbeam, ash and elm, among those of the swamps and low lands. There is abundance of white pine also both on the uplands and in the swamps ; and hemlock and pitch pine are also to be found in various parts of the town. There are also cedar swamps, which furnish the inhabitants with fencing timber. Much of their cedar, however, is derived in the south and east part of the town from the "major's purchase," or great cedar swamp in Pembroke. Great quantities of timber, planks, boards, shingles, wood and coals, are carried from this town annually to Taunton, and the several shore markets extending from Plymouth to Weymouth, and some even to Boston. The price of wood in the town is from two to four dollars a cord.

#### *Manufactures and Mechanics.*

Notwithstanding Bridgewater has the reputation abroad of being a very good agricultural town, and might therefore be supposed to be almost wholly engaged in husbandry, yet it is among the first manufacturing towns in the state. Being large, some parts are more agricultural than others, and different pursuits occupy different portions of it. The west and north parishes are more employed on their farms, while in the other parishes there are more mechanics and manufacturers. This is probably owing to there being more mill seats in the easterly and southerly part of the town. In the easterly part of the town indeed there are but a few, who depend wholly on their farms for subsistence. Most of those, who are not mechanics

and manufacturers, are engaged occasionally in making wrought nails, or in procuring timber, planks and boards for the neighbouring markets, particularly at Kingston and the north river, between Pembroke and Hanover, or in carrying wood and coals to market. There are also a great number of mechanics in the town employed abroad as house-wrights and mill-wrights. Perhaps no other town furnishes so many of the latter class. It also abounds in iron workers of various descriptions. There were formerly more wrought nails made there, than in any other town in the commonwealth. The second slitting mill, erected since the revolution, and the oldest now standing in New-England, is in this town. Since the manufacturing of cut-nails commenced, the making of wrought nails has very much declined, but many tons are still manufactured there annually. The making of anchors, scythes, other edged tools, and small arms, is carried on there also to a considerable extent.

There are now in the town three forges, two slitting mills, two anchor shops, four trip-hammer shops, three nail factories, one air furnace, two cotton and woollen factories, two fulling mills, eleven grist mills, and eighteen saw mills.

The late Hon. Hugh Orr introduced many branches of manufactures into the town, and was the friend and promoter of all. He was born in Scotland, January 13, 1717, and came over early in life and settled in the east parish, where he died December 1798, in the 82d year of his age. A particular account of his manufacturing improvements may be seen in the 9th vol. of the Hist. Coll. page 264.

### *Militia.*

Bridgewater with Abington constitutes a regiment. There are nine companies in the town, two of which are light infantry and grenadiers. There is besides a company of cavalry and part of a company of artillery. The men enrolled, rank and file, in the several parishes are as follows. West 116—South with Titicut 145—East 192—North 126.

*Bridgewater, Feb. 12, 1818.*

## BIOGRAPHICAL NOTICE OF REV. PETER WHITNEY, A. M. AND S. H. S.

**T**HE Rev. Peter Whitney was born at Petersham, September 6, 1744. His father was the Rev. Aaron Whitney of that place.\* He was educated at Harvard College, and took his first degree in 1762, and on the 4th of November, 1767, was ordained as the pastor of the Church in Northborough. He continued in the ministry to the period of his decease, February 29, 1816.

Few men gave in life a fairer exemplification of the virtues and graces of a Christian minister, as these are portrayed by the apostle, than the subject of this biographical sketch. His disposition was mild and benevolent; he possessed urbanity of manners, and was "given to hospitality." He was the friend of the poor and distressed, and "ready to every good work." As a Theologian he was catholic. Disapproving an exclusive spirit among the disciples of the same Master, in his ministerial and christian intercourse he readily extended his charity to all, who by their lives evinced that they loved "the Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity and truth." His method of preaching was evangelical, and his sermons partook of the mild and charitable spirit of the gospel. He was attentive to the various duties of his office, and unwearied in their performance; and, wherever his agency was directed, he manifested a disposition to diffuse the kindly influences of our religion.

Industrious in his habits, Mr. Whitney found time to labour for the publick beyond the strict line of his profession. Having previously printed a number of occasional sermons,† in 1793 he published "a History of the

\* Rev. Aaron Whitney was the first minister of Petersham, where he was ordained Dec. 1738, and continued in the ministry till Sept. 8, 1779, when he died in the 66th year of his age.

† Two Sermons on the dark aspect of affairs, July 2, 1774.

A Sermon, Sept. 12, 1776, at a Lecture appointed for publishing the Declaration of Independence.

A Sermon occasioned by the death of General Washington, Feb. 22, 1800.

A Sermon at the ordination of his son at Quincy, Feb. 5, 1800.



County of Worcester.”—Correct in its dates, and authentic in its facts, its utility is acknowledged by all who become acquainted with its merits. It is a book to which recourse is frequently had ; and it should be found in the library of every gentleman who desires to make himself acquainted with the first settlement and subsequent growth of the county. This publication brought the author into the notice of our literary institutions, and in consequence he was elected a member of the Historical Society of Massachusetts. With much care Mr. Whitney had collected materials to amend and enlarge his History, and had nearly put them into form for a second edition : we hope that it will be presented to the publick for the benefit of his family.

Mr. Whitney had the happiness to be connected with a people truly christian and generous, who ever manifested towards him their attachment, sympathy and beneficence. In the former part of his ministry his dwelling, with his library and a great part of his manuscripts and household furniture were consumed by fire. On this occasion, they very generously administered to his relief ; and at no subsequent period did they cease from their friendly and benevolent attention to him and his family.

Mr. Whitney passed his long ministry in perfect peace and harmony both with the church and society. At his death he left but one male who was a member of the church at his ordination ; and but one couple, who at that period were married.

Having filled up the measure of his life, having been active and useful unto the end, encircled with domestic endearments, possessed of the affection and esteem of the people of his charge, and respected by numerous and valuable friends and acquaintances, Mr. Whitney, without suffering the pain of disease or the decrepitude of age, was gathered to his fathers in peace.

A Funeral Discourse occasioned by the death of Mrs. Sumner, the wife of the Rev. Joseph Sumner, D. D. Feb. 16, 1810.

Also Charges, and the Right Hand of Fellowship at several ordinations : and “ An Account of a singular Apple-tree, &c.” in the first volume of the Memoirs of the American Academy.

ACCOUNT OF THE BOOKS AND MANUSCRIPTS, LATELY DEPOSITED  
BY THE OLD SOUTH CHURCH AND SOCIETY IN THE LIBRARY  
OF THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

**F**OR this rare collection the publick are indebted, originally, to the Rev. THOMAS PRINCE, of Boston. That well known chronologist was indefatigably engaged, for more than fifty years, in collecting books, pamphlets, and manuscripts, relating to New England. By the labels in some of his books it appears, that he commenced this collection as early as the year 1703, when he was a student at Harvard College. While in Europe, from 1709 to 1717, he assiduously pursued this object. In England and on the continent he found books and tracts relative to America, which could be found no where else. From his collections he compiled "A chronological History of New England in the form of Annals." It was his intention, that it should contain "a summary and exact account of the most material transactions and occurrences relating to this country, in the order of time wherein they happened, from the discovery by Capt. Gosnold in 1602, to the arrival of Governor Belcher in 1730." He published a small volume of this work in 1736; but, enlarging his plan beyond what was stated in the proposals, and becoming tedious by the minuteness and extent of his introductory chronology of the world, he did not receive sufficient encouragement for a second volume. This, indeed, was attempted in successive numbers, three only of which were ever published. The volume brought the Annals to 1630; the three succeeding numbers brought them to 1633. These three numbers, containing an accurate account of three of the first years of New England, subsequent to the settlement of Massachusetts, having become very scarce, are reprinted in this volume of the Collections of the Historical Society.

From 1758, the year of Mr. Prince's death, to this time, a period of sixty years, no person has entered into



his labours. His inestimable collection of books and manuscripts he bequeathed to the Church and Society in Boston, of which he was pastor. Many of the books, from an inscription within, appear to be given "To the New-England Library;" others, "To the South Church and Society in Boston." It seems to have been his purpose to establish a distinct library under the first of these titles; all the books, however, were ultimately given to the Old South Church and Society, in whose care they have remained ever since Mr. Prince's death. The historical part of the collection was eminently entitled to the name of "The New England Library." What printed books and tracts it contained, we learn from two catalogues; the one entitled "New English Books and Tracts collected by Thomas Prince of Boston, N. E.;" the other, "New English Tracts belonging to Thomas Prince of Boston." Both catalogues are in Mr. Prince's hand writing: and they are, in every respect, worthy of that diligent and exact historian and antiquary. The titles of the books are arranged, according to their sizes, in chronological order, with the place where and the time when printed; and, it is believed, they furnish a more full and accurate account of the publications, in Europe and America, relating to New England, than has ever appeared. These catalogues were found, some years since, at the house of the late Moses Gill, Esq. in Princeton, by the Secretary of the Historical Society; and, at his instance, they have been presented by Moses Gill, Esq. a nephew of the late lieutenant governor Gill, to the Historical Society.

The books and manuscripts, collected by Mr. Prince, were placed by his direction in an apartment in the steeple of the Old South Church in Boston. This church was used by the British troops for a riding school in the revolutionary war, and many of the books and manuscripts were destroyed, or scattered and lost. It was from the reliques, which escaped this depredation, that the very valuable selection was made for the use of the Historical Society.



No considerable use appears to have been made of the collection since Mr. Prince's death. Individual members of the Historical Society had occasional access to it during the ministry of the late Rev. Dr. Eckley, whose obliging attentions are gratefully remembered. Since the settlement of his successor, the same indulgence has been kindly given, whenever requested ; and the proposal for the deposit uniformly favoured.

A motion to make application for this privilege was made to the Historical Society, at a meeting, 22 December, 1813 ; when it was voted, "That Rev. Abiel Holmes, D. D. Aaron Dexter, M. D. and Alden Bradford, Esq. be a committee to apply to the Trustees of the New England Library, for the deposit of the same in the Society's room ; and, if they shall consent, to agree to the conditions of the deposit, give a receipt for the books, and, in general, to act for this Society on the subject."

The committee, in executing their commission, stated to the Proprietors of the New England Library, "That many of the books in said Library, on account of the subjects on which they treat, and the style in which they are written, are not adapted to engage the perusal, nor even the attention, of but few readers, and yet, if open to the examination of those, who have leisure and inclination for historical researches, may throw great light on the early history of our country ; that the Massachusetts Historical Society was founded for the purpose of preserving books, manuscripts and records, containing historical facts, biographical anecdotes, and other things, conducing to mark the genius, delineate the manners, and trace the progress of society in the United States ; that this Society was incorporated by the Legislature of the Commonwealth in 1794, and has since been presented with a spacious, safe, and convenient apartment for the deposit of its books and manuscripts, and for the meetings of the Society, in the Crescent at Franklin place, in the town of Boston ; that a large and valuable collection of books and manuscripts, illustrative of the aboriginal, natural, civil, and ecclesiastical history of the country has been made, principally by donation, and deposited in the

said apartment ; that the Society, in 1792, commenced a publication of Historical Collections, which has already extended to the 12th volume ; that, beside giving original matter, this publication, by multiplying copies of rare and valuable records, has effectually secured them from those various accidents, which might otherwise obliterate or destroy them ; that, were the Society permitted to have access to the New England Library, their future volumes might be enriched by the materials to be derived from it, and the choicest historical portions of said Library be thus preserved ; and that the great and original design of the Founder would be thus respected and accomplished, to the perpetual honour of his memory, and to the great benefit of the community."

To this statement the committee subjoined a respectful request and proposal, "That a selection might be made, from the said Library, of such books as are peculiarly adapted to the purposes of the Historical Society, to be deposited in the Society's room, on such conditions, and under such regulations, as shall be satisfactory to the Trustees or Proprietors of said Library ; that, should this request be complied with, the books shall be placed in separate cases, and be always kept distinct from those of the Historical Society ; and that all persons, who, by the will of the founder, have a right to the use of said Library, shall still have a right to the use of it, under such regulations as shall be mutually agreed on."

The complete success of this application appears in the following record :

"At a meeting of the Old South Church and Society, held in their meeting house on the first day of December, A. D. 1814,—Voted, that our beloved Pastor, the Rev. Joshua Huntington, with such a committee as the Old South Church and Society may appoint, make a selection of such historical Tracts, Manuscripts, and Treatises, relating to the History of our country, from the New England Library belonging to the Old South Church and Society, now under his care, as they may think proper, and for the benefit of said Church and Society, and the Publick ; and the same, when so se-

" lected, to list, index, or number, on two separate lists,  
 " which said lists shall contain and be headed with this  
 " Vote, and all the Regulations respecting said subject,  
 " passed at this meeting ; and one of said lists he shall  
 " deposit in said New England Library, the other of said  
 " lists, after the same has been signed by the said Histori-  
 " cal Society, their officers or agents, shall be by him de-  
 " livered over to the Clerk of the Old South Church and  
 " Society, to be by said Clerk kept among the records of  
 " said Church and Society. And said Tracts, Manu-  
 " scripts, and Treatises, so as aforesaid by said Hunting-  
 " ton selected, shall be by him delivered over to said  
 " Historical Society, to be by them carefully kept in their  
 " room, in Boston, and under their care, for the use of the  
 " Old South Church and Society, said Historical Society,  
 " and the Publick, upon the terms and conditions follow-  
 " ing, viz.

" I. Said Tracts, Manuscripts, and Treatises, shall  
 " always be kept by said Historical Society safely, in  
 " apartments by themselves, in their room in Boston, and  
 " a fair record of the disposition and situation of the same  
 " so kept by said Historical Society, that the said Old  
 " South Church and Society may always know where,  
 " and in what situation, the same are, and may always  
 " have access to said record. And over the place, where  
 " the said Tracts, Manuscripts, and Treatises are or shall  
 " be kept, the said Historical Society shall always keep  
 " inscribed, in fair legible letters, the following Inscrip-  
 " tion: THE DONATION OF THE REV. MR. PRINCE  
 " TO THE OLD SOUTH CHURCH AND SOCIETY.

" II. The Pastor, or Pastors of the Old South Church  
 " and Society shall, at all times hereafter, have a right,  
 " and liberty, to inspect or use, or take away for inspec-  
 " tion or use, any of said Tracts, Manuscripts, or Trea-  
 " tises, leaving a receipt for the same with said Historical  
 " Society, to return the same, after the purpose for which  
 " the same were taken away has been answered. And  
 " any member of the said Old South Church and Society  
 " shall have like right and liberty, under like conditions,



“and for like purposes, producing to said Historical Society a written order therefor, signed by the Pastor or Pastors of the said Old South Church and Society.

“III. The Old South Church and Society shall, at any time hereafter, have a right to receive and take back from said Historical Society said Tracts, Manuscripts, and Treatises, whenever by their vote, at any meeting of said Church and Society, they shall so vote and determine.”

The committee proceeded, in consultation with the pastor of the Old South Church and Society, to designate such books and tracts, as were thought to be most conducive to the design of the deposit; and, in conclusion, were presented by the pastor and the committee of said Church and Society, with a list of such as they were willing to have deposited. The selection comprises 261 bound volumes, many of which pertain to the early history of New England; also a large number of MSS. of great value, among which is the inestimable MS. Journal of Governour Winthrop, from 1644 to 1649, hitherto unpublished; and many pamphlets, illustrative of every period of our history. Winthrop's Journal, a particular account of which was given in a former volume, was found well preserved; the most valuable of the other MSS. the committee arranged in chronological order, and procured to be bound in boards, so as effectually to secure their preservation. Many detached parcels of these MSS. had the name *I. Mather*, written on them by Mr. Prince; these, making collectively seven folio volumes, are lettered on the back MATHER. Other parcels had the name *Hinckley*, written by the same hand,—a collection, probably, of Governour Hinckley of Plymouth; these, making three folio volumes, are lettered HINCKLEY. The whole, thus bound, together with the Winthrop MS. and a volume relating to the Narraganset lands, compose 12 folio volumes of MSS. In this Collection are contained many original letters of the principal magistrates and ministers, from the first settlement of Massachusetts to the revolution of William and Mary; some.

to a later period, and many official state papers of the British and Provincial governments. A considerable number of MSS. and very many pamphlets remain unbound.

The Committee have placed all the bound books and MSS. in ten moveable cases, open in front, and deposited them, by themselves, in the room of the Historical Society, with the Inscription required. On reporting their doings to the Historical Society, at their meeting in October, 1817, it was voted, That the thanks of the Society be given to the Old South Church and Society, for their generosity in making this deposit, and for the facilities, which their Committee, especially their respected pastor, afforded, in effecting this important object; with the assurance, that the conditions of the deposit shall be faithfully observed."

[From the original in the Old South Collection of MSS. deposited in the Library of the Historical Society. *Hinckley, Vol. II.*]

LETTER FROM WILLIAM PENN, FOUNDER OF PENNSYLVANIA, TO  
GOVERNOUR HINCKLEY.

Respected Friend,

**T**HE Duty and Decency of my Station as a Governour as well as mine own inclination oblige me to begin and observe a kind and friendly Correspondence with Persons in the like Capacity, under the same imperial authority. This single consideration is inducement enough to this Salute, and I have no reason to doubt its acceptance because such an intercourse is recommended both by the Laws of Christianity and those of Civil Policy; which said, Give me leave to wish thee and y<sup>e</sup> People under thy Conduct all true Felicity, and to assure Thee that with God's Assistance I shall herein endeavour to acquit and behave myself worthy of y<sup>e</sup> Title and Character of

Thy real Friend  
and Loving Neighbour  
WM. PENN.

*Philadelphia, y<sup>e</sup> 2 of y<sup>e</sup> mo<sup>o</sup> 1683.*

[At the bottom of the Letter]

I take the freedom to present thee with a Book.  
The Letter is superscribed

“*For my well respected Friend  
the Governour  
of Plymouth Colony  
New England.*”

From the “*Mirror of the Times, and General Advertiser*,” a newspaper, printed at Wilmington in the State of Delaware, 16th July, 1803.

[The following Letter from William Penn to Richard Turner is again published, on account of the very incorrect copy in our last.]

LETTER OF WILLIAM PENN TO RICHARD TURNER.

Dear Friend.

MY true love in the Lord salutes thee and dear friends that love Lords precious truths in those parts. Thine I have, and for my business here, know, that after many writings, watchings, solicitings, and disputes in Council, this day my country was confirmed to me under the great seal of England, with large powers and privileges, by the name of Pennsylvania: a name the King would give it, in honour to my father. I chose New Wales, being as this a pretty healthy country; but Penn being Welch for a head, as Penmanmore in Wales, Penrith in Cumberland, and Penn in Buckinghamshire, the highest land in England, called this Pennsylvania, which is the high or head wood land; for I proposed, when the Secretary a Welchman, refused to have it called New Wales, Sylvania, and they added Penn to it: and though I much opposed it, and went to the King to have it struck out and altered; he said it was passed, and he would take it upon him—nor could twenty guineas move the under Secretary to vary the name; for I feared, lest it should be looked upon as a vanity in me, and not as a respect to my father, who he often mentioned with praise. Thou mayst communicate my grant to Friends, and expect my proposals; it is a clear and just thing; and my God that has given it me, through many difficulties, will, I believe, bless and make it the seed of a nation. I shall



have a tender care to the government, that it be well laid at first. No more now, but dear love in the truth.  
1st *Month* 5th. 1681. W. PENN.

LETTER OF ANTHONY WOOD TO REV. DR. INCREASE MATHER.

Rev. Sir, *Amherst, (N. H.)* Nov. 20, 1817.

**T**HE following is a copy from an original letter of Anthony Wood, author of *Athenae et Fasti Oxoniensis* to Rev. Dr. Increase Mather of Boston. I have transcribed it from the original for the Historical Society.

Very respectfully, J. FARMER.

“ Sir,

Your kind and civil letter I have received for which I doe by these returne you thanks. As for the age of Sam. Newman (65) it agrees with my manuscript, but the county, you say wherein he was borne (Yorkshire) doth not. For my Sam. Newman whom I take to be him of Rehoboth and author of the *Concordance*, was borne in Oxfordshire.

Now I have full satisfaction of your brother Sam. I shall God willing mention him in his place, and when I see Mr. Danson, which is twice or more in an yeare (for I am well acquainted with him) I shall enquire of him.

The method that I use if speaking of writers is this—  
(1) The towne or parish, or at least the county where they were borne. (2) The College or Hall wherein educated, and sometimes the school. (3) The names of the benefices or employments in church and state that they have successively enjoyed. (4) The titles of books, pamphlets, sermons, with their texts, that they have written and published, the time when and where printed and in what vol.\* (5) The day or month, or at least yeare of their death and the place of buriall.

Now if you can tell me as much as you can, according to this method concerning Will. Bartlett and his son John, Mr. John Rowe—Mr. Tim. Taylor, Mr. Will.

\* Probably whether 12mo. 8vo. or 4to. &c.

Ben—Mr. Thom. Vincent if he be dead and Mr. Thankfull Owen you'd do me and the publick good service. As for Phil. Nye and Theoph. Gale I think I have enough of them.

I have been perusing the matriculation books for Will. and John Bartlett and Will. Ben—and cannot find them in Exeter Coll. and Queens Coll. therefore quere whether you have not mistaken their Colleges.

You mention not Mr. Sam. Lee, sometime of Wadham Coll. If he be dead, I would willingly know the time when he died, and where buried. Of the same college was also Mr. Tho. Nye a learned nonconformist, who hath also been dead several yeares; and how to find him out I cannot tell. If you know of any active and understanding person who will undertake to solve such queries that I shall send to him, I will recompence him for his services.

I thank you for your kind proffer of N. E. books, because there is no doubt but that I may find something to my purpose among them. If the authors names be not put to them you would do well to write them at the bottom of their respective titles—So with thanks for your civilities,

I remaine, Your most obliged servant,  
ANTH. WOOD.

From my lodging neare  
Merton Coll. in Oxford.  
12 June, 1690.

Why do you not give me an account of yourself that I may bring you in when I speak of your Fathers. In the last terme Catalogue, I saw the title of a book lately by you published."

Superscribed thus—

"For Mr. Increase Mather  
at Mr. Whiteings house  
in Copt hill court  
Throgmorton Street."

In transcribing the above I have regarded the ancient orthography, but where the words are contracted by abbreviation, or expressed by characters, I have in general written them at length.

The abbreviations are Sr. y<sup>e</sup>. y<sup>t</sup>. w<sup>n</sup>. rec<sup>d</sup>. w<sup>h</sup>. y<sup>r</sup>. &c. Only one kind of character is used, to wit, (—) which represents *and*.

[The Historical Society has long been desirous of reprinting the continuation of Prince's Annals of New England, being the second part. Only three numbers, comprising ninety six pages, were ever published. They are become very scarce, having only the frail form of occasional pamphlets, and the last is seldom to be found even by the curious antiquary. It seemed better to give the new impression as nearly like the old one, as possible, in our Collections, and the pages are therefore preserved for the consistency of citations in former and later authors. These numbers came out in 1755. Ed.]

# ANNALS

OF

## NEW-ENGLAND.

BY THOMAS PRINCE, A. M.

VOL. II. NUMB. I.

Deut. xxxii. 7, &c. Remember the Days of old, consider the Years of many Generations: ask thy Father, and He will shew thee; thy Elders, and they will tell thee: When the most HIGH divided to the Nations their Inheritance, when he separated the Sons of Adam, he set the Bounds of the People:—He found Him in a desert Land, in the waste howling Wilderness; he led him about, he instructed him, he kept him as the Apple of his eye:—As an Eagle stirreth up her Nest, fluttereth over her young, spreadeth abroad her Wings, taketh them, beareth them on her Wings; So the LORD alone did lead him, and there was no strange God with him.

BOSTON:

PRINTED AND SOLD BY S. KNEELAND IN QUEEN STREET, AND BY J.  
AND T. LEVERETT IN CORNHILL.

(Price Six Pence Lawful Money each Number.)



## ADVERTISEMENT.

HAVING brought our Annals of NEW-ENGLAND down to the Settlement of the Massachusetts Colony, in the 1st Volumn; and having lately received a most authentick and valuable Journal of Events relating to said Colony,—From the time when their 1st Gov Winthrop, Dep Gov Dudley, Eleven Assistants, with their Charter, Four Ministers & about 1500 people were waiting at the Isle of Wight & other Places in the South and West of England, to sail for this desired Land; viz. from Monday March 29. 1630, to Jan. 11. 1648, 9: Wherein are many Remarkables not to be found any where else; and whereby alone we are enabled to correct many Mistakes and ascertain the Dates of many Articles in others:—all wrote with the said Gov WINTHROP's own hand, who deceas'd in the very house I dwell in the 26th of March after: I may now proceed with a further Enlargement of Intelligence, and with a greater certainty and Exactness.

And for my Readers greater Satisfaction I shall also go on, as I did before, to give them, not my own Expressions, but those of the Authors who lived in the times they wrote of; excepting now and then a Word or Note of mine for Explanation Sake, distinguished from theirs by being inclosed in such Marks as [These]. So that we may as it were hear those eminent Persons, Gov Bradford, Gov Winslow, Gov. Winthrop, Mr. Secretary Morton of Plymouth; Gov Bradstreet, Mr. Secretary Nowell, &c. in the Massachusetts Colony Records; the Rev. Mr. Hubbard, and Others, telling us the remarkable Events of the Times they liv'd in.

But as I was unhappily obliged to close the former Volumn abruptly in September 1630, about 2 Months after our entering the 2d Section of the IId Part; I must refer to That, and begin the IId Volumn with September 28, in Continuation of the

## 2d SECTION

Containing Articles from the Beginning of the Settlement of the Massachusetts or 2d Colony, to the Settlement of the 7th and last, by the Combination of 41 Persons into a Form of Government at Piscataqua, on Oct. 22. 1640, afterwards call'd the Province of New-Hampshire.

N. B. See the Marks explained at the End of this Cover

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

## SECT. II. Continued.

Sept. 28. **T**HE 3d Court of Assistants at Charleston. Present the Governour, Deputy Governour, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Ludlow, Nowell, Coddington, Bradstreet, Rossiter, Pynchon. Ordered that no Person permit any Indian to use any Peece [or Gun] on any occasion, under 1.10 for the first Offence; for the second, to be Fined and Imprisoned at the Discretion of the Court; —that no Person give, sell, truck or send any Indian Corn to any English out of this Jurisdiction, nor to any Indian, without Licence from the Governour and Assistants:—\*That 1.50 be levied out of the several Plantations, for Mr. Patrick and Mr. Underhill; [I suppose for some Military Purpose] viz.

1. Charlestown to pay	1.7	6. Meadford, to pay	1.3
2. Boston	11†	7. Salem	3
3. Dorchester	7	8. Wessagusset, after	
4. Roxbury	5	call'd Weymouth	2
5. Waterton	11	9. Natasket	1
			—
			(Mcr) 50

\* English and Indian Corn being 10s. a Strike, and Bever at 6s. a Pound; we made Laws to restrain selling Corn to the Indians; and to leave the Price of Bever at Liberty, which was presently sold for 10s. and 20s. a pound. (*d.*)

† [By this it seems as if the much *greater part* of the People at Charlestown were *now* removed to Boston, and the Rev. Mr. Wilson with them.]

Sept. 30. Thursday, About 2 in the Morning, Mr. Isaac Johnson dies: He was a holy Man and Wise, and died in sweet Peace; leaving Part of his Substance to the Colony. (*w*) This Gentleman was a prime Man among us, having the best Estate of any; zealous for Religion, one of

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.	+	Philip IV.

of the *Five Undertakers*,\* and the greatest Furtherer of this Plantation : He made a most godly End : dying willingly ; professing his Life better spent in promoting this Plantation, than it could have been any other Way : He left to us a great Loss. (*d*) The first Magistrate that died in the Massachusetts : (*s d*) [And Capt. Johnson says] The Beginning of this Work seemed very dolorous ; first for the Death of that worthy personage, Isaac Johnson Esq ; whom the Lord had endued with many precious Gifts ; insomuch as he was had in high Esteem among all the people of God, and as a chief Pillar to support this new erected Building. *He very much rejoiced at his Death, that the Lord had been pleas'd to keep his Eyes open so long, as to see one Church of Christ gathered before his Death* : At whose Departure, there were not only many weeping Eyes, but some fainting Hearts, fearing the Fall of the present Work. (*j.*) [And the late chief Justice Samuel Sewall, Esq. inform'd me ; That this Mr. Johnson was the principal Cause of settling the Town of Boston, and so of its becoming the Metropolis, and had removed hither ; had chose for his Lot the great Square lying between Cornhill on the S E, Treemount Street on the N W, Queen-Street on the N E, and School-Street on the S W ; and on his Death-Bed desiring to be Buried at the upper End of his Lot, in Faith of his rising in it, He was accordingly buried there ; which gave Occasion for the *first Burying Place* of this Town to be laid out round about his Grave.]

\* The five Undertakers were Governour Winthrop, Dep. Governour Dudley, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Isaac Johnson, Esq. and Mr. Revil. (*d*)

[Oct.] 'The *first Execution* in Plymouth Colony : 'which is a Matter of great sadness to us, is of one John 'Billington ; for Way-laying and Shooting John Newco- 'men, a young Man, (*br*) in the Shoulder, (*h*) whereof he 'died : The said Billington was one of the profanest among 'us : He came from London, and I know not by what 'Friends shuffled into our Company. We used all due Means



K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630 Lewis XIII.	Charles I. °	Philip IV. †

‘ Means about his Trial : was found guilty both by Grand  
‘ and Petty Jury ; and we took the Advice of Mr. Win-  
‘ throp, and others, the ablest Gentlemen in the Massa-  
‘ chusetts-Bay, who all concurred with us, that he ought  
‘ to Die, and the Land be purged from Blood. (*b r.*)\*

\* [N. B. This is the Order wherein Governour Winthrop sets this Article, who was consulted about it : though Mr. Hubbard says,—*about September ; and Gov. Bradford—in the latter part of the Year.*]

Mr. Phillips the Minister of Watertown, and others, have their Houses burnt. (*w*).

Oct. 19. The first General Court of the Massachusetts Colony—and this at Boston : Present the Governor, Dep. Governor, Sir Richard Saltōnstall, Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Nowell, Pynchon, Bradstreet, (Mcr) [N. B. For the Form of Government in the Massachusetts under Dep. Governor Endicot, subordinate to the Governor and Company in England before they arrived with the Charter ; See April 20. 1628, and April 30. 1629 ; But since their Arrival Here ; the (1st) Form of their Government was that of Governor, Dep. Governor, and Assistants ; the Patentees with their Heirs, Assigns and Associates being Freemen, &c. But now in this General Court, they agree on a (2d) Form as follows—] Proposed as the best Course—For the FREEMEN to have the Power of chusing ASSISTANTS, when they are to be chosen : and the ASSISTANTS, from among themselves to chuse the GOVERNOR, & Dep. GOVERNOR, who with the Assistants to have the Power of making Laws, and chusing Officers to execute the same : This was fully assented to by the General Vote of the People. (Mcr)

And now the Mcr gives the first List of Persons desiring to be made Freemen, to the Number of 108, as follows.  
Mr.

K. of <i>France</i> . 1630 Lewis XIII.	K. of <i>Great Britain</i> . Charles I.	K. of <i>Spain</i> . Philip IV.
<p>Mr. Samuel Maverick, Mr. Edward Johnson, Mr. Edward Gibbins [or Gibbons, after, Major General] Mr. William Jeffries, Mr. Samuel Sharp, Mr. Thomas Graves, [after, a Rear Admiral in England,] Mr. Roger Conant, Mr. Nathaniel Turner, Mr. Samuel Freeman, Mr. William Clerke, Mr. Abraham Palmer, Mr. William Pelham, Mr. William Blackstone, [formerly a Minister ; after, went to Provi- dence. Mr. Richard Brown, Mr. George Ludlow, James Penn, [after—Ruling Elder of the 1st Church in Boston.] Henry Woolcot, Thomas Stoughton, Roger Williams, [a Minister, who went (1) to Plymouth (2) to Salem (3) to Providence.] Capt. Walter Norton, James Pemberton, Mr. John Dillingham, John Johnson, George Alcock, Thomas Lamb, Mr. Charles Gott, Mr. George Phillips, [Minister of Watertown.] Mr. John Wilson, [Minister of Bos- ton,]</p>	<p>Mr. John Maverick } Ministers And } of Mr. John Wareham, } Dorchester. Mr. Samuel Skelton, [Minister of Salem.] Mr. William Colborn, [after, Ruling Elder of the 1st Church in Bos- ton.] Mr. William Aspinwall, [after, Sec- retary of Rh: Island Colony.] Edward Converse, Richard Church, Richard Silvester, William Balstone, John Phillips, Nathaniel Bowman, Daniel Abbot, Mr. Samuel Pool, &amp;c. (Mer)</p>	<p>[But many of them seem not to be made Freemen till May 18. 1631 ; which see. But Capt. Johnson says, that] at the Court in October marry of the 1st Planters came and were made free ; yet afterward none were admitted to this Fellowship, but such as were at first join'd in Fellowship with one of the Churches of Christ ; their chiefest Aim being bent to pro- mote this Work altogether ; [and that] the Number of Freemen this Year was about 110. (j) [But he mistakes in calling this their 2d Court on the S. Side of the River.]</p>

Oct. 23. Mr. Rossiter, one of the Assistants Dies : (*w*)  
a godly Man, and of a good Estate ; which still weakens

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

us : so that now there are left, of the 5 Undertakers, but 3, viz. Gov. Winthrop, D. Gov. Dudley, and Sir R. Saltonstall ; and 7 other Assistants, (*d*) [viz. Capt. Endicot, Mr. Ludlow, Nowell, Pyncheon, Coddington, Bradstreet & T. Sharp : See Oct. 20. 1629, March 23, Aug. 23, & Sept. 7. 1630.]

Oct. 25. Mr. Colborn, who was chosen Deacon by the Congregation a Week before, [is now] invested by Imposition of Hands of the Minister [i. e. Mr. Wilson] and Elder [i. e. Mr. Nowell] (*w*)

The Governor in Consideration of the Inconveniences which had grown in England by *Drinking one to another*, restrained it at his own Table, and wished others to do the like : so as it grows by little and little to [be] disused. (*w*)

Oct. 29. 'The Handmaid arrives at Plymouth ; having been 12 Weeks at Sea, and spent all her Masts : of 28 Cows, lost 10 : has about 60 Passengers, who 'come all well.' (*w*)

The first Recorded as Baptized in Boston Church, are said to be Baptized in said Church in this Month, and are only 3, viz. Joy and Recompense, Daughters of Brother John Milles : and Pitie, Daughter of our Brother William Baulstone. (*bcr*)

Oct. e. The Gov. D. Gov. and Mr. [Samuel] Maverick join in sending out our Pinnace to the Narragansets, to trade for corn to supply our Wants. After doubling Cape Cod, she put into the next Harbour she found ; and there meeting with Indians who shewing their Willingness to truck, she made her Voyage there, and bro't us an 100 Bushels of Corn, which helped us something. From the Coast where they traded, they saw a very large Island 4 leagues to the East, which the Indians commended as a fruitful Place, full of good Vines, and free from sharp Frosts ; having one only Entrance into it by a Navigable River ; inhabited by a few Indians, which for a Trifle would leave the Island, if the English would set them upon the Main. (*d*) [This is, no doubt, the Island of Aquethneck, after called Rhode-Island.] About



---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.	‡	Philip IV.

---

About November, the Gov. and Dep. Gov. with most of the Assistants, remove their Families to Boston. (*h*)

Nov. 9. The 4th Court of Assistants, but the 1st at Boston: Present, Gov. D. Gov. Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Coddington, Pynchon, Bradstreet: Ordered that every Englishman who kills a Wolf within this Patent, shall have 1 Penny for every Beast and Horse, and 1 Farthing for every weaned Swine and Goat, in every Plantation, to be levied by the Constables of said Plantations: And whoever will first give in his Name to the Gov. that he will undertake to set up a Ferry between Boston and Charlestown, and begin the same at such Time as the Gov. shall appoint; shall have 1 Penny for every Person, and 1 Penny for every 100 Pound Weight of Goods he shall so transport. (*Mer*)

Nov. 10. Firmin of Waterton has his Wigwam burnt. (*w*) Divers have their Hay-Stacks burnt, by burning the Grass. (*w*)

Nov. 11. The Master [of the Handmaid] comes to Boston, with Capt. Standish, and 2 Gentlemen Passengers who come to Plant Here; but having no Testimonials, we wou'd not receive them. (*w*)

Nov. 30. The 5th & last Court of Assistants this Year, but the 2d at Boston. Present, Gov. D. Gov. Sir R. Saltonstall, Mr. Ludlow, Nowell, Pynchon, Coddington, Bradstreet: 1 of the Assistants fined 5*l*. for whipping 2 Persons without the Presence of another Assistant, contrary to an Act of Court formerly made; Ordered that a Man be whipt for shooting a Fowl on the Sabbath Day; and that 60*l*. be collected for the Maintenance of Mr. Wilson and Mr. Phillips: viz. out of

Boston	1.20	Charlestown	1.10	Meadford	1.3
Waterton	20	Roxbury	6	Winnesemet	1

(*Mer*)

Of the People who came over with us, from the Time of their setting Sail from England in April [this Year] to December, there Died by Estimation 200 at the least: So low

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.	+	Philip IV.

low hath the Lord brought us. Yet they who survived were not discouraged, but bearing God's Corrections with Humility, and trusting in his Mercies; and considering how after a lower Ebb he had raised up our Neighbours at Plymouth, we began again, in December, to consult about a fit place to build a Town upon. (*d*)

Dec. 6. The Gov. and most of the Assistants and others meet at Roxbury, and agree to build a Town fortified upon the neck between That and Boston: And a Committee is appointed to consider of all Things requisite, &c. (*w*)

Dec. 16. The Committee meet at Roxbury: And upon further Consideration for [3] Reasons it is concluded we shou'd *not* have a Town in the Place aforesaid; (1.) Because Men would be forc'd to keep 2 Families; (2) There is no running Water; and if there are any Springs, they won't suffice the Town; (3) The most of the People have built already, and wou'd not be able to build again: So we agree to meet at Waterton, this Day sennet, and in the mean Time other Places should be viewed. (*w*)

Capt. Neale and 3 other Gentlemen come to us [at Boston]: He came in the Bark Warwick this Summer to Pascatoway, sent as Governor there for Sir Ferdinand Gorge and others. (*w*)

Dec. 21. We meet again at Waterton: And Here, upon View of a Place a Mile beneath the Town, all agree it a fit Place for a fortified Town; and we take Time to consider farther about it.

Dec. 24. Till this Time there was (for the most Part) fair open Weather, with gentle Frosts in the Night: But this Day the Wind comes N W very sharp and some Snow; but so Cold that some have their Fingers froze and in Danger to be lost. (*w*)

Dec. 26. [Lord's-Day] The Rivers are froze up: and they of Charleston could not come to the Sermon at Boston till the Afternoon at High-Water. (*w*)

Many of the Cowes and Goats are forced to be still Abroad for want of Houses. (*w*)

Dec.

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.	+	Philip IV.

---

Dec 23. After many Consultations at Boston, Roxbury and Watertown, by Gov Winthrop [D. Gov Dudley] and Assistants, about a fit Place to build a Town for the Seat of Government, they this Day agree on a Place on the W [rather N W Side of Charles-River, about 3 Miles W from Charlestown: And all, except Mr. Endicott and [T] Sharp,\* oblige themselves to build houses there the following Spring, and remove their Ordnance and Munition thither: and first call the Place Newtown, but after—[viz. in 1638] Cambridge. (*d.ml*)

\* [The former living at Salem and [the latter purposing to return by the next Ship to England (*d*)

Dec. 22. Richard Garret of Boston, with 1 of his Daughters a young Maid, and 4 others, against the Advice of their Friends, went towards Plymouth in a Shallop: and about the Gurnet's Nose, the Wind blew so much at N W as they were put to Sea, and the Boat took in much Water, which froze so hard as they could not free her: so that they gave themselves for Lost; and committing themselves to God dispos'd themselves to die. But one of their Company espying Land near Cape-Cod, they made a shift to hoist up Part of their Sail, and by God's special Providence were carried thro' the Rocks to the Shoar: where some got on Land; but some had their Leggs frozen in the Ice, so as they were forced to be cut out. Being now on Shoar they kindle a Fire; but having no Hatchet, they can get but little Wood, and are forc'd to lie in the open Air all Night, being extreemly cold. In the Morning 2 of their Company go towards Plymouth. (Supposing it within 7 or 8 miles, where as it is near 50 from them) [and not an English House nearer] by the Way they meet 2 Indian Squaws, who telling their Husbands they had met 2 Englishmen that had been Shipwract, make after them and bring them back to their Wigwam, and entertain them kindly: and one of them [viz. of the Indians] next Day goes with them to Plymouth: and the other [Indian] goes to find out their Boat and



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.	+	Philip IV.

---

and the Rest of their Company which are 7 Miles off: and having found them, helps them what he can, returns to his Wigwam, fetches a Hatchet, builds them a Wigwam, covers it, gets them wood: (for they were so weak and frozen, as they cou'd not stir) and Garret dies about 2 Days after his Landing; and the Ground so frozen as they could not dig his grave, the Indian, with his Hatchet, hews a Hole about half a Yard deep, [puts the] Corps in it, and lays over it a great Heap of Wood to keep it from the Wolves. By this time the Gov of Plymouth sends 3 Men to them with Provisions; who launch'd their Boat, (which the wind had driven up to high Water Mark) and with a fair Wind get to Plymouth; where another of their Company dies, his flesh being mortified with the Frost: and the 2 who went towards Plymouth died also; one of them being not able to get thither, and the other had his foot so frozen as he died of it after. The girl escaped best: and one Harwood, a godly Man of the Congregation of Boston, lies long under the Surgeon's Hand. (*w*)

---

## APPENDIX to 1630.

## I. Articles of Uncertain Dates.

**H**ALF our Cowes and almost all our Mares and Goats sent us out of England died at Sea; and those intended to be sent us out of Ireland, were not sent at all: All which together with the Loss of our 6 Months Building, occasioned by our intended Removal to a Town to be fortified, weaken our Estates; especially the Estates of the Undertakers, who were 3 or 4 thousand Pounds [Sterling] engaged in the joint Stock, which is now not above so many Hundreds: Yet many of us labour to bear it as comfortably as we cou'd; remembering the end of our coming hither; and knowing the Power of God, who can support and raise us again, and useth to bring his Servants low, that the Meek may be made glorious by Deliverance. (*d*)

It

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

It goes harder with this poor People in their Beginnings, because of the Scarcity of all Sorts of Grain this Year in England: Every Bushel of Wheat Meal standing them in 14 Shillings [Sterl.] and every Bushel of Peas 10 Shillings; and not easy to be procured neither. (h) [And] coming into this Country, we found some English at Salem, and some few at Charlestown, who were very destitute: And Planting Time being past; shortly after, Provision was not to be had for Money. And the unsubdued Wilderness yielding little Food, many were in great Straits for want of Provision for themselves and their little Ones. We quickly built Boats, and some went a Fishing. Bread was with many a very scarce Thing, and Flesh of all Kinds as scarce: and Oh the hunger that many suffered, and saw no Hope in an Eye of Reason to be supplied, but with Fish, Clams and Mushcles. But God caused his People to be contented with mean Things, and to trust in him. (c)

## II. A List of Ships which arriv'd in New-England this Year.

No	Names	whence set sail	when set sail	when arriv'd	where arriv'd
		<i>England</i>	1630	1630	<i>New-Engl.</i>
1	Lyon	Bristol	Feb. (d)	May e.	Salem
2	Mary-John	Plymouth	March 20	May 30	Nantasket
3	Arbella	} Yarmouth at the Isle of Wight S. Hampton	April 8	June 12	} Salem
4	Jewell		ditto	June 13	
5	Ambrose		ditto	June 18	
6	Talbot		ditto	July 2	
7	May Flowr	S. Hampton	May	} July 1	Charleston
8	Whale	ditto	ditto		
9	Hopewell	ditto	ditto	} July 3	[Salem]
10	Wm & Fran.	ditto	ditto		
11	Tryal	ditto	ditto	} July 5	} Charleston
12	Charles	ditto	ditto		
13	Success	ditto	ditto	July 6	[Salem]
14	Gift.		May e.	Aug. 20	Charleston
15	Another (d)		June (d)		
16	Handmaid		Aug. 6	Oct. 29	Plymouth
17	Another set out by a private Merchant. (d)				

These 17 Ships arrived all safe in New-England, for the Increase of the Plantation here this Year 1630. (d)

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.	+	Philip IV.

---

### III. Accounts of the 13 Magistrates who came this Year with the Charter, as far as I have met with.

1. John Winthrop, Esq; Gov. His Ancestor was Adam Winthrop; a worthy Gentleman [in England:] who had a Son of the same Name, a discreet, learned Gentleman, eminent for Skill in the Law, not without Remark for his Love to the Gospel under the Reign of K. Henry VIII; and [another son] a memorable Favourer of the Reform'd Religion in the Days of Q. Mary, into whose Hands the famous Martyr Philpot committed his Papers, which afterwards made no inconsiderable Part of our Martyr Books. This Mr. Adam Winthrop had a Son of the same Name, Endowments and Employments with his Father. And this 3d Mr. Adam Winthrop was Father to this renowned John Winthrop, who is the Founder of a Colony, which on many Accounts like him that founded it, may challenge the 1st Place among the Glories of America. Born at the Mansion House of his Ancestors at Groton in Suffolk on July 12 1587: [had] an agreeable Education: But the Accomplishments of a Lawyer were those wherewith Heaven made his chief Opportunities to be serviceable. Being at the Age of 18 made a Justice of the Peace, his Vertues began to fall under a more general Observation [was] not only exemplary for his Conformity to the Laws of Christianity in his Conversation, but also discover'd a more than ordinary Measure of those Qualities which adorn an Officer of human Society. His Justice was impartial: His wisdom excellently temper'd Things according to the Art of Governing: His Courage made him dare to do Right: All which Vertues he rendered the more illustrious, by emblazoning them with the constant Liberality and Hospitality of a Gentleman. This made him the Terror of the Wicked, the Delight of the Sober, and the Hope of those who had any hopeful Design in Hand for the good of the Nation and the Interest of Religion. Accordingly when the noble Design of carrying a colony of chosen People into an American Wilderness, was by some eminent Persons undertaken; this eminent person was, by the Consent of all, chosen for the Moses, who must be the Leader of so great an Undertaking: Wherefore having sold a fair Estate of 6 or 7 Hundred [Sterling] a Year, He [now] transmitted Himself with the Effects of it into New-England; (*cm*) [in the 43d Year of



---

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	+ Philip IV.

---

of his Age : Is the 1st Governour of the Massachusetts Colony ; one of the 5 Undertakers ; the 1st Member who join'd in forming the Congregational Church of Charlestown and Boston, and the Principal Cause of fixing on Boston for the Metropolis.]

2. Thomas Dudley, Esq. D Gov. Born at Northampton in 1574 [rather 1576] the only Son of Capt. Roger Dudley ; who being slain in the Wars left this our Thomas ; who in the Family of the E of Northampton [learn'd] the Points of good Behaviour, and fitted himself to do many Benefits to the World : Next became a Clerk to Judge Nichols (who being his Kinsman by the Mother, took the more special Notice of Him) [improv'd the] Advantage to attain such skill in the Law, as was of great Advantage in the future Changes of his Life : and the Judge wou'd have prefer'd him to higher Employments, whereto his prompt Wit not a little recommended Him, if he had not been by Death prevented. But before he cou'd do much at the Pen for which he was very well accomplished, He was called to the Sword : For being a young Gentleman well known for Ingenuity, Courage and Conduct ; when Soldiers were to be rais'd by Order of Q Elizabeth for the Service of K Henry IV [of France against the Spaniards on the Borders of the Netherlands in 1597] none of the [Youths] about Northampton were willing to enter the Service till a Commission was given to young Dudley to be their Captain ; and then presently 4 Score listed under him. At the Head of these he went over ; was at the Siege of Amiens ; and thus came to be furnished for the Field as well as the Bench : But [the French and Spaniards making Peace in June 1, 1598,] He return'd to England, settled [near] Northampton ; married a Gentlewoman, whose Extract and Estate were considerable, and the Scituation of his [Dwelling] help'd him to enjoy the Ministry of Mr. Dod, Cleaver, Winston, and Hildersham, excellent and renowned Men : which Puritan Ministry so seasoned his Heart with Religion, that he was a devout Christian, and a Follower of the Ministers that most effectually Preached Real Christianity all his Days. The Spirit of Real Christianity in him now also disposed him to sober Nonconformity, and from this Time, (tho' none more hated the Fanaticisms and Enthusiasms of Wild Opinionists) He became a judicious Dissenter from the unscriptural Ceremonies retained in the Church of England. Not long after this, the Lords Say and Compton,

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

Compton, and other Persons of Quality, made such Observations on him as to commend him to the service of the E of Lincoln, then a young Man and newly come to the Possession of his Earldom: [whose] Grandfather had left his Affairs under vast Intanglements, out of which his Father was never able to extricate himself, which caus'd [the young Earl] to apply to Mr. Dudley for Assistance; who prov'd so able, careful and faithful a Steward, that in a little While the Debts of near 20 Thousand Pounds were happily [discharged.] By this Means also a Match was procur'd between the young Earl and the L Say's Daughter, who prov'd a most virtuous Lady and a great Blessing to the whole Family. In this [Business] Mr. Dudley continued about 9 or 10 years: but then growing desirous of a more private Life, retir'd to Boston [in England] where the Ministry and Acquaintance of Mr. Cotton [were] no little Satisfaction to him. But the Earl cou'd be no more without Mr. Dudley, than Pharaoh without his Joseph, and prevailed with him to resume his former Employment; till the Storm of Persecution on the Nonconformists caused many Men of great Worth to transport themselves to New-England. Mr. Dudley was not the least of the worthy Men [who] bore a Part in this Transportation, in Hopes that in an American Wilderness they might peaceably enjoy the pure Worship of Christ. And when the Undertakers for [this] Plantation came to know him, they soon saw That in him, that caus'd them to chuse him their Dep Gov; in which Capacity he [now] arrived (*cm*) [here, in the 54th Year of his Age: was one of the 5 Undertakers; the 2d Member in forming the Congregational Church of Charlestown and Boston; and a principal Founder of the Town of Newtown, after called Cambridge; being zealous to have it made the Metropolis, and is one of the 1st who builds and settles there in the Spring ensuing.]

3. Sir Richard Saltonstall. [was the Son or Grandson to Sir Richard Saltonstall; who Mundy in his Chronicle mentions as L. Mayor of London in 1597, and Son to Gilbert Saltonstall of Hallifax in Yorkshire. He was the 1st Associate to the 6 Original Patentees mentioned in K Charles I. his Charter of the Massachusetts, of March 4. 1628, 9, and the 4th Assistant made therein; now comes over their 1st Assistant, a worthy Puritan, one of the 5 Undertakers; and the 1st Founder of the Town, and 'tis likely of the Congregational Church, of Watertown.]

4. Isaac

---

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

---

4. Isaac Johnson, Esq:—[He had married the Lady Arabella, of the House of the Earls of Lincoln; was the 2d Associate to the 6 Original Patentees mention'd in said Charter, and the 5th Assistant made therein: who now comes over their 2d Assistant and one of the 5 Undertakers; was the 3d Member, who join'd in forming the Congregational Church of Charlestown and Boston; and the principal Founder of the Town of Boston. And for the Rest, see July 25, Aug. e. Sept. 7, and Sept. 30. 1630.

5. Increase Nowell, Esq: [His Father or Grandfather was Brother to the famous Alexander Nowell Dean of St. Paul's in the Reign of Q Eliz, and Prolocutor of her 1st Convocation: He was the 7th Associate mention'd in said Charter, and the 8th Assistant made therein: And Capt Endicot being the 3d Assistant, Mr. Nowell, as their 4th now comes over: one of the owners of the Jewel; a zealous Puritan; the 5th who joins in forming the Congregational Church of Charlestown and Boston; and the principal Person who continues at Charlestown.]

6. William Vassal, Esq:—[The 18th Associate mention'd in said Charter, and the 17th Assistant made therein: comes over as their 5th Assistant: But this last summer returned.]

7. William Pynchon, Esq: [a Gentleman of Learning and Religion: The 19th Associate mention'd in said Charter, and the 13th Assistant made therein: as their 6th Assistant now comes over: is the principal Founder of the Town of Roxbury, and the 1st Member who joins in forming the Congregational Church there.]

8. Edward Rossiter, Esq; [comes over as their 7th Assistant; 1st chosen Oct. 20. 1629; and

10. Roger Ludlow, Esq; as the 9th Assistant, 1st chosen Feb. 10. 1629,30: Both pious Gentlemen of good Families in the West of England; who are the principal Founders of the Town of Dorchester; and the 1st who join'd in forming the Congregational Church, even at Plymouth in England, a little before they came away, and bro't their Pastor, Teacher, and whole Church with them. See at the beginning of this Year.

9. Thomas Sharp, Esq; [comes over as the 8th Assistant: 1st chosen Oct 20. 1629; and is the 6th Member who joins in forming the Congregational Church of Charlestown and Boston.]

11. John Revell, Esq; [comes over as the 10th Assistant: 1st chosen Oct. 20. 1629,30; and was one of the 5 Undertakers: but returned this last Summer with Mr. William Vassal.]



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	+ Philip IV.

---

12. William Coddington, Esq; [was on March 18. 1629,30, chosen at Southampton the 11th Assistant; in this Capacity now comes over; and is one who joins to the Congregational Church of Charlestown and Boston.]

13. Simon Bradstreet, Esq; Son of a Minister in Lincolnshire; and Born at Horbling, March 1603. His Father (Son of a Suffolk Gentleman of a fine Estate) was one of the 1st Fellows in Emanuel College, under Dr. Charderton; after highly esteemed by Mr. Cotton & Dr. Preston; and was always a Nonconformist at Home, as well as when a Preacher at Middleborough [in Zealand.] Our Bradstreet was bro't up at the Grammar School, till he was about 14 Years of Age, [when] the Death of his Father put a Stop for the present to the Designs of his further Education. But 2 or 3 Years after, was taken into the religious Family of the E of Lincoln (the best Family of any Nobleman then in England) where he spent about 8 Years under the Direction of Mr. Dudley, sustaining successively diverse Offices. Dr. Preston, who had been my Lord's Tutor, then mov'd my Lord, that Mr. Bradstreet might have their Permission to come to Emanuel College, in the Capacity of Governor to the L Rich, Son of the E of Warwick: which they granting, he went with the Doctor; who provided a Chamber for him, with Advice that he should apply to Study till my Lord's Arrival. But my L Rich not coming, Mr. Bradstreet after a Year returned to the E of Lincoln's; and Mr. Dudley then removing to Boston, his Place of Steward was confer'd on Mr. Bradstreet. Afterwards he with much ado obtain'd the Earl's Leave to answer the Desires of the aged and pious Countess of Warwick, that he would accept the Stewardship of her noble Family; which, as the former, he discharged with an exemplary Discretion and Fidelity. [and] Here he married [Mrs. Ann] the Daughter of Mr. Dudley. (cm) [By which Means, he became one of the Massachusetts Company, and on March 18. 1629,30 chosen at Southampton their 12th Assistant; in this Capacity comes over, about the 27th Year of his Age; and is the 7th Member who joins in forming the said Congregational Church of Charlestown and Boston.]

[For John Endicot, Esq: Assistant being Here before; of the 18 Assistants, there were 12 this last Summer Here together, besides the Gov and D. Gov.]

An

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	+ Philip IV.

---

An Account of the Ministers now come over, I refer to the Appendix of the Year ensuing, when we shall have more to join them, and conclude this Year with,

#### IV. The most material Events in England and Other Places which concern'd this People.

April 12. Dr. Laud, Bp of London, made Chancellor of Oxford. (*s.*)

May 29. Saturday, Born at St. James's to K Charles I, [by his Q a Papist] a 2d son [the 1st being Dead:] Lord's-Day, June 27, Christened by the Name of Charles, [by Bp Laud:] his Godfathers being the French K Lewis [a Papist] the Prince Palatine [a Protestant] and Godmother, the Q Mother of France (*hs*) [a Papist\* He is afterwards K Charles II.]

[\*Papists join'd with Protestants—2 Papists to 1 Protestant—and why not one of the Protestant Kings and Queens of Sweden or Denmark?]

The Pope having made anti Bishops over all the Seas in Ireland, makes Richard Smith (titulary Bp of Chalcedon) Bp over all the Romish Catholics in Eng; who is now very Buisy in his Employment; and the Insolvency of the Regulars daily increases in England. (*Fl*)

Dr. Leighton a Scotchman, for Publishing a Book, entitled, an Appeal to Parliament, or a Plea against Prelacy, sentenc'd (*s*) in the Star-Chamber to be whipt, have his Forehead branded, his Nose slit, and his Ears cut off, (*Fl*) which is soon after inflicted. (*pn*)

Oct. 3. O S, [13 N S] Born [at the *Hague*] to Frederick the [Protestant] Elector Palatine, by his Lady Elizabeth [only] Daughter to K James I, the Princess Sophia: [in the time of their Banishment from the Palatinate by the Popish Emperor] afterwards married, viz. in 1658, to Ernest Augustus [the Protestant] Duke of Hanover: by whom in 1660, she becomes the Mother of K George I. (*Anderson*)

Dec. 5. O S, Being the Lord's-Day, Peace between England and Spain proclaim'd at London; and at Madrid Dec. 15; (*hs*) [I suppose N S, the same Day with the other. And Pointer and Salmon no doubt mistake in writing—Nov. 27.]

The

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

The War which was renew'd between the Dutch & Spaniards in 1622, yet continues.

The war having raged in Germany between the Emperor Ferdinand the II a Papist and the Protestant Princes, ever since 1618 ; wherein the Emperor had reduced Bohemia, Moravia and Silesia, conquer'd the Palatinate, banished the Protestant Elector from his Dominions, and over-run the lower Saxony ; beat the K of Denmark, and forc'd him to a disadvantageous Peace ; grievously oppressed the Protestants, and in the fairest Way to subdue them intirely : and the Protestant Princes having no hope from Eng, and implor'd the Help of the pious & heroic Gustavus K of Sweden ; He this Year on June 24. N S, with an Army lands in Pomerania, bends down his Knees on the Shoar, offers Thanks to the most High for the prosperous Beginning of his Expedition, implores Him to succeed his future Undertakings for the Help of his People : and then rising up, He quick like Lightning, carries all before Him, and begins their Deliverance.

N. B. See the most accurate and concise Account of this German War in Alsted : who thus begins this glorious Enterprize.—July 24. 'Rex Sueciac instructus numerosis Copiis appellit in Pomerania, Nominis sui 'Fama non mediocrem Timorem Hostibus injicit : Inde Fulgure violentior omnia celerrime pervadit : ' Which I have partly construed in the Words above.

---

### 1631.

[N. B. The Principal Stage of our Annals is from This Time forward, at BOSTON.]

Jan. **A** House at Dorchester burnt down. (*w*)  
 Jan. 3. Dies [at Boston] the Daughter of Mr. Sharp [I suppose Thomas Sharp Esq ; one of the Assistants] a godly Virgin, making a comfortable End after a long Sickness. The Plantation here [i. e. I suppose at Boston] received not the like Loss of any Woman since we came hither : and therefore she well deserves to be remembered in this Place. And among those who died [at Boston] about 'the end of Jan, was the Daughter of John Ruggles, a Girl of Eleven Years old ; who in the Time of her Sickness, express'd to the Minister and those



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

those about her, so much Faith and Assurance of Salvation, as is rarely found in any of that Age; which I tho't not unworthy here to commit to Memory: and if any tax me with wasting Paper with Recording these small Matters, such may consider, that small Things in the Beginning of Politick Bodies, are as remarkable as greater in Bodies full grown. (*d*)

As the winter came on, Provisions are very scarce [in the Massachusetts-Bay] and People necessitated to feed on Clams and Musles, and Ground Nuts & Acorns; and these got with much Difficulty in the Winter-Season. Upon which People grow much tired and discouraged; especially when they hear that the Gov himself has his last Batch of Bread in the Oven. And many are the Fears of the People that Mr. Pierce, who was sent to Ireland for Provision, is either Cast-away or taken by the Pirates. Upon this a Day of Fasting and Prayer to God for Relief is appointed [to be on the 6th of *Feb.*] But God, who delights to appear in the greatest Straits, works marvellously at this Time: (*ctr*) For on

Feb. 5. (*w*) The very Day before the appointed Fast, in comes (*ctr*) the Ship Lyon, Mr. William Pierce Master, now arriving at Natasket, (*w*) laden with Provisions. Upon which joyful Occasion the Day is chang'd, and ordered to be kept [on the 22d] as a Day of Thanksgiving. (*ctr*)

Feb. 8. The Gov goes aboard the Lyon riding at Long-Island: [next Day] the Ship comes to an Anchor before Boston [to the great Joy of the People] where she rides very well, notwithstanding the great Drifts of Ice. (*w*) And the Provisions are by the Gov distributed to the People proportionable to their Necessities. (*ctr*)

The Lyon [had] set Sail from Bristol Dec. 1, brought about 20 Passengers, and had a very stormy Passage: yet thro' God's Mercy all the People come safe; except one (*w*) of the Sailors, who not far from our Shoar, in a Tempest having help'd to take in the Sprit-sail, as he was coming down fell into the Sea, where after long Swimming,

was

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

was drowned, to the great Dolour of those in the Ship, who beheld so lamentable a Spectacle, without being able to help him; the Sea was so high, and the Ship drove so fast before the wind, tho' her Sails were taken down. (*d*)

By this Ship (*d*) [we hear that] the Ambrose [having been] masted at Charleston, [returning to Eng] spent all her Masts near Newfoundland, and had perished if Mr. Pierce in the Lyon her Consort had not towed her home to Bristol. Of the other ships which returned (*w*) last Summer (*d*) 3, viz. the Charles, the Success & the Whale were (*w*) with 2 English Men of War (*d*) set upon (*w*) by 14 Dunkirks (*d*) near Plymouth in England: and after a long Fight, having lost (*u*) 13 or 14 Men out of our 3 Ships (*d*) and being much torn, especially the Charles (*w*) a stout Ship of 300 Tons, so torn that she had not much of her left whole above Water; (*d*) they got into Plymouth. Of those who went back in the Ships [last] Summer for Fear of Death or Famine, many Dy'd by the Way, and after they were landed, and others fell very sick and languishing. (*w*)

*Feb.* 10. The Frost breaks up in [Boston Harbour]: and it has been observ'd ever since this Bay was planted by English, viz. 7 Years, that the Frost hath broke up every Yea atthis Day. (*w*)

The Poorer Sort of People who by long lying in Tents (*w*) and small Huts (*j*) are much afflicted with the Scurvy, and many Die, especially at Boston and Charleston. And it has been always observ'd here, that such as fell into Discontent, and linger'd after their former Conditions in England, fell into the Scurvy & Died. Of the old Planters and such as came the Year before, there were but 2 which have the Scurvy in all the Country. At Plymouth not any have it, no not of those who came this [last] Year, whereof there were above 60: whereas at their 1st Planting there, near half their People died of it. (*w*) Of which Mortality, it may be said of us almost as of the Ægyptians,

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

Ægyptians, there is not an House wherein there was not one Dead, and in some Houses many. The natural Causes seem to be ; the Want of warm Lodging & good Diet, to which English [People] are habituated at Home ; and the sudden Increase of Heat they endured who landed here in the Summer ; the Salt Meats at Sea having prepared their Bodies thereto : For those only these 2 last Years Died of Fevers, who landed in June and July ; as those of Plymouth who [formerly] landed in Winter died of the Scurvy ; as did our Poorer Sort, whose Houseing and Bedding kept them not sufficiently warm, nor their Diet sufficiently in Heart. (*d* But when this) Ship came, which bro't Store of Juice of Lemmons ; many recover speedily. (*w*)

Feb. 18. \* (*w*) Among others who died about this Time, was Mr. Robert Welden (*d*) a hopeful young Gentleman, and an experien'd Soldier, (*w*) whom in the Time of his Sickness we had chosen to be Captain of 100 Foot : but before He [cou'd] take his Place, He Dies (*d*) at Charleston of a Consumption, and is buried at Boston with a Military Funeral (*w*) 3 Vollies &c, (*d*)

\* D Gov Dudley's printed Letter says Feb. 16 : but I chuse to keep to Gov Winthrop's Mss Journal.

A Shallop of Mr. Glover's cast-away on the Rocks about Nehant ; but the Men are saved. (*w*)

The Provisions came this [last] Year at excessive Rates; in Regard of the Dearness of Corn in Eng ; so as every Bushel of Wheat Meal stands us in 14*s*. Sterl. Peas 11*s*; &c. (*w*) besides the Adventure (*d*) Tunnage 1.6 11*s*. (*w*) which is 3 or 4*s*. a Strike : An higher Price than I ever tasted Bread before. (*d*)

Feb. 22. We hold a Day of Thanksgiving for this Ship's Arrival, by Order from the Gov & Council, directed to all the Plantations (*w*) throughout the [Massachusetts] Colony. *d*.

March 4. First Court of Assistant this Year at Boston : Present, Gov, D. Gov, Sir R. Saltonstall, Mr. Ludlow, Capt.



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

Capt. Endicot, Mr. Pynchon, Nowell, [T] Sharp, Coddington, Bradstreet. (1.) Ordered that 6 Persons be sent to Eng in the Ship Lyon, now returning thither, as Persons unmeet to inhabit here; also that Sir Christopher Gardiner \* & another be sent as Prisoners in her. (2.) A Man fined 1.5 for taking upon him to cure the Scurvy, by a Water of no Value, which he sold at a very dear Rate; to be imprison'd till he pay his Fine, or give Security for it, or else be whipt; and shall be liable to any Man's Action of whom he has receiv'd Money for the said Water. (*Mcr*)

\* Sir Christopher Gardiner; [who it seems came over the last Year] a great Traveller, receiv'd his 1st Honour of Knighthood at Jerusalem, being made Knight of the Sepulcher there, [who] came into these Parts under Pretence of forsaking the World and to live a private Life in a godly Course; not unwilling to put himself on any mean Employments and take any Pains for his Living, and offers himself to join to the Churches in sundry Places; [had] bro't over with him a Servant or two & a comely young Woman, whom he call'd his Cousin, but (is) suspected to be his Concubine; [first sojourn'd] in the Massachusetts. (*br*)

March 8. From fair Day-light till 8 a m, fly over all the Towns in our Plantations, so many Flocks of Doves; each Flock containing many Thousands; and some so many that they obscure the Light; that it passeth Credit, if but the Truth should be written, they are all Turtles;—somewhat bigger than those of Europe; and fly from N E to S W. (*d*)

March 8. At a Court at Watertown: Present, Gov, D. Gov, Sir R. Saltonstall, Mr. Ludlow, Nowell, Pynchon, Coddington, Bradstreet. (1.) Sagamore John and [his Subject] Peter complaining of 2 Wigwams burnt, occasioned by a Servant of Sir R. Saltonstall; Ordered that Sir Richard satisfy the Indians; which he did by 7 Yards of Cloth, and that his Servant pay him for it at the End of his Time 50s. [Sterl.] \*: (2) In Regard that the Number of Assistants is but few, and some of them are going for England; Order'd that when the Number of As-

sistants

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

sistants resident within this Jurisdiction shall be fewer than 9; it shall be lawful for the major Part of them to keep a Court; and whatever Orders or Acts they make, shall be as legal & authentical, as if there were the full Number of 7 or more. (*Mer*)

\* [Said] Wigwams were not inhabited, but stood in a Place convenient for their Shelter when they should travel that Way. By examination we found that some English Fowlers having retir'd into that which belong'd to the Subject [of the Sagamore] and leaving a Fire therein carelessly, which they had kindled to warm them, were the Cause of Burning thereof. For that which was the Sagamore's [own] we could find no certain Proof how it was fired: Yet least he should think us not sedulous enough to find it out, and so should depart discontentedly from us; we gave both Him and his Subject Satisfaction for them both. (*d*)

*March 15.* Dies at Salem, Mrs. Skelton the Wife of the Minister there: a godly, helpful Woman, liv'd desired, dies lamented, and well deserves to be honourably remembred. (*d*)

The Ship Lyon now waits but for Wind, which when it blows [fair] there are ready to go aboard for Eng; Sir R. Saltonstall, Mr. [T] Sharp, Mr. Coddington and many others: the most of which purpose, if God will, to return to us again. In the mean Time we are left a People, poor and contemptible; yet such as trust in God, and are contented with our Condition; being well assured, that he will not fail us nor forsake us. (*d*)

*March 16.* \* About Noon, the Chimney of Mr. [T] Sharp's House in Boston takes Fire; and taking the Thatch, burns it down: and the Wind being N W, drives the Fire to Mr. Colbron's House, [some] Rods off, burns that down also. (*w*) Which Houses, as Good and as well furnished as the most in the Plantation, are in 2 Hours burned to the Ground, with much of their Houshold Stuff, Apparel, and other Things, as also some Goods of others who sojourned with them: God so pleasing to exercise us with this Kind of Correction: For  
Prevention

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

Prevention whereof, in our new Town intended to be built this Summer ; we have order'd that no Man There shall build his Chimney with Wood, nor cover his House with Thatch ; which was readily assented to ; for that divers other Houses have been burned since our arrival. (*d*)

[\*In D. Gov Dudley's printed Letter tis March 17 : but I keep to Gov Winthrop's Mss]

March 22. Court of Assistant at Boston : Present Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Coddington, Nowel, Sir R. Saltonstall, Mr. Pynchon, [T] Sharp, Bradstreet. Order'd (1.) That Artificers be left at Liberty to agree for Wages : [See Aug. 23. 1630](2.) That every Town within this Patent, before April 5, take Care that every Person in them (excepting Magistrates and Ministers) as well Servants as others be furnish'd with sufficient Arms, allowable by the Captains or other Officers ; those who are able, to buy them ; the Town to provide for those who are unable, and to receive Satisfaction from them when they are able : (3.) That all who have Cards, Dice or Tables in their Houses, shall make away with them before the next Court. (*Mer.*)

March 23. Chickatabot [the chief Sachim of the Massachusetts] comes with his Sannups and Squaws [i. e. married Men and their Wives] to Boston, Presents the Gov with a Hogshead of Indian Corn. After they had all Dined, had each a Cup of Sack & Beer, and his Men Tobacco ; He sent away all his Men and Women : (tho' the Gov wou'd have stay'd them in Regard of the Rain & Thunder) Himself and 1 Squaw and 1 Sannup stay all Night : and [He] being in English Cloaths, the Gov sets Him at his Table ; where he behaves himself as soberly &c. as an Englishman. Next Day, after Dinner, they return home ; the Gov giving him Cheese and Pease, a Mug and some other 'Things. (*w*)

March 25. One of Watertown having lost a Calf ; about 10 at Night hearing the Howling of Wolves, raises his Neighbours out of their Beds, that by discharging their  
Muskets,



---

	K. of France.	K. of Great-Britain.	K. of Spain.
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

Muskets, they might put the Wolves to Flight and save his Calf: the Wind serving to carry the Report of the Muskets to Roxbury, the Inhabitants There take an Alarm, beat up their Drum, arm themselves, and send in Post to us to Boston: [But] in the Morning, the Calf is found safe, our Danger past, &c. (*d*)

March 28. D. Gov. Dudley seals his Letter at Boston in the Massachusetts-Bay to the Countess of Lincoln; wherein he writes as follows.

Having some Leisure to discourse of the Motives for other Mens coming to this Place, or their abstaining from it; after my brief Manner I say this; That if any come hither to Plant for Worldly Ends that can live well at Home, he commits an Error of which he will soon repent him. But if for Spiritual, he may find here what may well content him; viz. Materials to build, Fewel to burn, Ground to plant, Seas and Rivers to fish in, a pure air to breath in, good Water to drink till Wine or Beer can be made; which with the Cows, Hoggs and Goats bro't hither already, may suffice for Food. For Cloaths and Bedding, they must bring them with them, till Time and Industry produce them Here. In a Word, we yet enjoy little to be envied, but endure much to be pittied, in the Sickness and Mortality of our People. If any godly Men out of Religious Ends will come over to help us in the good work we are about; I think they cannot dispose of themselves, nor their Estates more to God's Glory, and the Furtherance of their own reckoning: But they must not be of the poorer Sort yet for divers Years.—And for profane and debauched Persons: their Oversight in coming hither, is wondred at, where they shall find nothing to content them. If there be any endued with Grace, and furnished with Means to feed themselves and their's for 18 Months, and to build and Plant; let them come into our Macedonia and help us, and not spend themselves and their Estates in a less profitable Employment: For others, I conceive they are not yet fitted for this Business. (*d*)

March 29. Sir R. Saltonstall, and his 2 Daughters, and 1 of his younger Sons, (his two Elder still remaining in the Country) come down to Boston, stay this Night with the Governour: (*w*) and

March

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

March 30. This Morning, at 7, They, with Mr. Pierce and others in 2 Shallops, depart [for] the Ship at Salem. Mr. [T.] Sharp goes away at the same time in another Shallop. At 10, Mr. Coddington, Mr. Wilson, and divers of the Congregation meet at the Governour's, and there Mr. Wilson praying and exhorting the Congregation to Love, recommends to them [in their necessity] the Exercise of Prophecy [i. e. Exhorting to Christian Duties] in his Absence, and designed those whom he thought most fit for it, viz. the Gov, Mr. Dudley, and Mr. Nowell the Elder; [who were men of eminent Piety and Learning.] Then he desires the Gov. to commend Himself & the Rest to God in Prayer: which being done, they accompany him to the Boat; and so they go over to Charlestown, to go by Land to the Ship: which sets Sail from Salem April 1, \* and arrives at London (all safe) April 29. (*w*)

\* Mr. Hubbard therefore mistakes, in placing their going from Boston, on April 1, as also in placing after this, the account of Capt. Pierce's carrying the Ambrose into Bristol, and the Fight at Sea, mention'd under Feb. 5. last.

April 4. Wahgumacut a Sagamore, up the River Conaatacut, which lies W of Narraganset, comes to the Gov at Boston, with John Sagamore and Jack Straw an Indian who had liv'd in England [with] Sir Walter Raleigh and divers of their Sannups, and brings a Letter to the Gov from Mr. Endicot to this Effect; that the said Wahgum is very desirous to have some English to plant in his Country, and offers to find them Corn, and give them yearly 30 Skins of Bever; [says] the Country is very fruitful, and wishes there may be 2 Men sent with him to see the Country. The Gov entertains them at Dinner; but would send none with him: discovers after, that the said Sagamore is a very treacherous Man, and at War with the Pekash [or Pequots, under] a far greater Sagamore. His Country is not above 5 Days Journey from us by Land. (*w*)

April 12. Court of Assistants at Boston: Present the Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Nowell, Pynchon, Bradstreet. Order'd (1.) That a Watch of 4 be kept every Night at

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

at Dorchester, and another of 4 at Watertown, to begin at Sun-set : (2.) That whoever shoots off any Peece after the Watch is set, shall forfeit 40s ; or if the Court judge him unable, then to be whipt : (3.) That every Man who finds a Musket, shall before the 18th of this Month, and so always after have ready 1 Pound of Powder, 20 Bullets, and 2 Fathom of Match, under Penalty of 10s. for every Fault : (4.) That every Captain shall train his Company every Saturday : (5.) That none shall travel single between their Plantations and Plymouth ; nor without some Arms, tho' 2 or 3 together. (*Mcr*) (6.) Upon Information that they of Salem had call'd Mr. [Roger] Williams to the Office of a Teacher ; a Letter is written from the Court to Mr. Endicot to this Effect ; That whereas Mr. Williams had refused to join with the Congregation at Boston, because they would not make a publick Declaration of their Repentance for having Communion with the Churches of England while they lived There, and besides had declared his Opinion that the Magistrate might not punish the Breach of the Sabbath, nor any other Offence, as it was a Breach of the first Table ; therefore they, [i. e. the Court] marvelled they would chuse him without advising with the Council ; and withall advising him that they would forbare to proceed till they had confer'd about it. (*w*)

April 13. Chickatabot comes to the Gov, and desires to buy some English Cloaths for himself : the Gov tells him that English Sagamores did not use to truck ; but calls his Taylor and gives him Order to make him a Suit of Cloths : whereupon he gives the Gov 2 large Skins of Coat Bever : and after He and his Men had dined, they depart, and said they would come for his Suit 3 Days after. (*w*)

April 15. Chickatabot comes to the Gov again ; [who] puts him into a good new Suit from Head to Foot : and after, sets Meat before him ; but he would not eat till the Gov had given Thanks ; and after Meat desired him to do the like, and so departed. (*w*)

April



	K. of France.	K. of Great-Britain.	K. of Spain.
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

April 21. The House of Jo Page of Waterton burnt : by carrying a few Coals from one House to another, a Coal fell by the Way and kindled the Leaves. (*w*)

May 3. Court of Assistants at Boston ; Present Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Nowell, Pynchon, Bradstreet. [A Man] fined 10*l*. and He and his Wife enjoin'd to depart this Patent before Oct. 20 under Pain of Confiscation of Goods ; for Contempt of Authority and Confronting Officers. (*Mcr*)

' Sir Christopher [Gardiner having been] accused to ' have 2 Wives in Eng, was sent for ; but had Intelligence and escaped, and travel'd up and down among ' the Indians (*w*) especially in Plymouth Colony (*br*) ' about a Month : but by Means of the Gov of Plymouth, ' is taken by the Indians about Namasket, and bro't to ' Plymouth : (*w*) [When] the Indians came to Gov ' [Bradford] and told where he was, and asked if they ' might kill him ; he told them No, by no Means, but ' watch their Opportunity and take him : And so [after ' a vigorous Fray] they did, and bro't him to Gov Bradford.] In his Lodging those who made his Bed, found ' a little Note-Book which by Accident had slipt out ' of his Pocket or some private Place ; in which was a ' Memorial what Day he was reconciled to the Pope and ' Church of Rome, and in what University he took his ' Scapula, and such and such Degrees. It being bro't ' to Gov [Bradford ;] he keeps it and sends Him and the ' Notes to Gov [Winthrop] (*br*) [being] bro't by Capt. ' Underhill, and his Lieut. on May 4, to Boston. (*w*) ' Gov Winthrop takes it very thankfully, (*br*) and ' May 5. 1631, writes to Gov. [Bradford] the following ' Letter. (*br*)

' Sir, It hath pleased God to bring Sir Christopher Gardiner safe to ' us, with those that came with him. And howsoever I never intended ' any hard Measure to him, but to respect and use him according to his ' Quality ; yet I let him know your Care of him, and that he shall speed ' the better for your Mediation. It was a special Providence of God to ' bring those Notes of his to our Hands. I desire you will please to speak to

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

‘to all who are privy to them not to discover them to any one ; for  
‘that may frustrate any further use to be made of them. The good  
‘Lord our God, who hath always ordered Things for the Good of his  
‘poor Churches here direct us in this aright, and dispose it to a good  
‘Issue. I am sorry we put you to so much trouble about this Gentleman ; especially at this time of great Employment : But I knew  
‘not how to avoid it. I must again entreat you to let me know what  
‘Charge and Trouble any of your People have been at about him ;  
‘that it may be recompenced. So with the true Affection of a Friend ;  
‘desiring all Happiness to yourself and yours, and to all my worthy  
‘Friends with you whom I love in the Lord ; I commend you to his  
‘Grace and good Providence, and rest

Your most assured Friend,

John Winthrop. (*br*)

But after Sir Christopher gets to Eng, he shows his Malice ; but God prevents him. (*br*) [See next Year]

May 16. An Alarm to all our Towns in the Night, by a Peece shot off ; (but where cou’d not be known) and the Indians having sent us Word the Day before, that the Mohawks are coming down against them and us.

May 18. Wednesday, [and not 17, as by a Mistake in Gov Winthrop] General Court at Boston : Present Mr. Winthrop Gov, Mr. Dudley D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Nowel, Pynchon, Bradstreet, Assistants. JOHN WINTHROP, Esq ; chosen Gov for this Year by the general Consent of the Court, and THOMAS DUDLEY, Esq ; D. Gov.\* (1.) For Explanation of an Order of last General Court of Oct. 19, now ordered with full Consent of all the Company present ; that once every Year at least a General Court be holden, at which it shall be lawful for the Commons to propound any Person or Persons whom they shall desire to be chosen Assistants. (2.) The like Course to be held, when the said Commons shall see Cause for any Defect or Misbehaviour to remove any one or more of the Assistants : And (3.) To the End the Body of the Commons may be preserv’d of honest and good Men ; Order’d and agreed that for the Time to come, no Man shall

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

be admitted to the Freedom of this Body Politick, but such as are Members of some of the Churches within the Limits of the same. (4.) Thomas Williams having undertaken to set up a Ferry between Winnesemet and Charleston, he is to have 3d. a person, and from Winnesemet to Boston 4d. (5.) Chickatabot and Sagamore John promise the Court to make Satisfaction for whatever Wrong any of their men shall do, to any of the English, to their Cattle or any otherwise. (6.) 116 take the Oath of Freemen, of whom are

1 Mr. John Maverick,	Mr. William Clarke,
2 Mr. John Warham,	William Noddle,†
3 Mr. William Blackstone,	10 William Balstone,
4 Mr. George Philips,	11 Mr. George Alcock,
Mr. Richard Brown,	12 Robert Moulton,
Capt. Daniel Patrick,	Mr. Edward Belchar,
Capt. John Underhill,	13 Roger Williams,
5 Mr. Thomas Graves,	Mr. Richard Saltonstall,
6 Capt. Walter Norton,	14 Edward Gibbons,
7 Mr. William Colbron,	15 Mr. William Jeffry,
8 Mr. Roger Conant,	16 Edward Converse,
9 Thomas Stoughton,	17 Mr. John Dillingham,
Robert Seely,	18 Thomas Lamb,
William Agar,	19 Mr. Edward Johnson, &c.

*Mcr.*

\* In the like Manner did the Choice proceed among the Assistants. (*h*) [And that which makes me think Mr. Bradstreet was again chosen Secretary, is ; that in the *Mcr*, the Title of Captain is always put before Endicot, and of Mr. prefixed to every other Assistant, but before his own name He in Excess of Modesty only puts the Letter S.]

† Perhaps Noddle's-Island might derive its name from him.

[N. B. Those number'd are mention'd as desiring Freedom on Oct. 19. 1630 : and now as taking their Oaths to the Government.]

At noon a House burnt down, all the People being present. (*w*)

May 27. There comes from Virginia into Salem a Pinace of 18 Tuns, laden with Corn and Tobacco : was bound to the North ; and [happily] put in here by fowl Weather : she sells her Corn at 10s. [Sterl.] the bushel. (*w*.)



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

June 14. Court at Boston : Present Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Nowell, Mr. Pynchon, S. Bradstreet. Order'd (1.) That none shall travel out of this Patent by Sea or Land without Leave from the Gov, D. Gov or some Assistant, under such Penalty as the Court shall think meet to inflict : (2.) Mr. John Maisters having undertaken to make a passage from Charles-River to the new Town, 12 feet broad and 7 deep ; the Court promises him Satisfaction : (3.) Order'd, that none buy Corn or other Provision, or any Merchantable Commodity of any Ship or Bark that comes into this Bay, without Leave from the Gov or some Assistant : (4.) Edward Converse having undertaken to set up a Ferry between Charlestown and Boston ; he is to have 2*d*. for a single Person, and 1*d*. a [Person] if there be 2 or more. (*Mcr*)

June 25. [not 14, as by Mistake in Mr. Hubbard] comes [to Boston] a Shallop from Piscatoway, which brings News of a small English Ship come thither with Provisions, and some Frenchmen to make Salt. By this Boat Capt. Neal Gov of Piscatoway sends a Pacquet of Letters to Gov [Winthrop] directed to Sir Christopher Gardiner ; which are opened because directed to one who is our Prisoner, and had declared himself an Ill-Willer to our Government : which when the Gov opened, he finds it came from Sir Ferdinando Gorges : in the Packet is [another] Letter to Thomas Morton (sent Prisoner before to Eng) By both which Letters it appears, He [i. e. Sir Ferdinand] had some Design to recover his pretended Right to Part of the Massachusetts-Bay, and reposed much Trust in Sir Christopher. (*w*)

June 27. Come to Gov [Winthrop] Letters out of the White-Angel, lately arriv'd at Saco : [which] bro't Cows, Goats, Hogs, and many Provisions both for the Bay and Plymouth : Mr. Allerton returns [hither] in this Ship ; and by him we hear that the Friendship, which put out from Bastable [some] Weeks before the Angel was forc'd Home again by a Tempest. (*w*)

July

as occasions serves, both in Church and Commonwealth, under pretence of Liberty of Conscience, (as well their own opinion as others) by this Symbol they may be known in Court and Country. This Town hath great store of Land in tillage, and is at present in a very thriving condition for outward things, although some of Boston retain their Farms from being of their Town, yet do they lye within their bounds, and how it comes to pass I know not; their Officers have somewhat short allowance, they are well stored with cattel and corn, and as a people receives, so should they give: And Reader, I cannot but mind thee of the admirable providence of Christ for his people in this, where they have been in a low condition, by their liberality they have been raised to much in a very little time: And again, in withdrawing their hands have had their plenty blasted: The reverend Mr. Tompson is a man abounding in zeal for the propagation of the Gospel, and of an ardent affection, insomuch that he is apt to forget himself in things that concern his own good, both him, and the like gracious M. Flint is here remembred.

With twofold cord doth Flint and Tompson draw  
 In Christ's yoke, his fallow ground to break,  
 Wounding mens hearts with his most righteous Law,  
 Cordials apply to weary souls and weak.  
 Tompson thou hast Christ's folk encouraged  
 To war, their warfare putting them in mind,  
 That Christ their King will make his sons the dread,  
 The day's at hand when they shall mastery find.  
 Flint be a second to this Champion stout,  
 In Christ's your strength, while you for him do war,  
 When first doth faint, a second helps him out,  
 Till Christ renew with greater strength by far.  
 From East to West your labours lasted have,  
 The more you toil the more your strength encreaseth,  
 Your works will bide, when you are laid in grave,  
 His truth advance, whose kingdom never ceaseth.

CHAP. XIX.—Of the first promotion of learning in New-England, and the extraordinary providences that the Lord was pleased to send for furthering of the same.

TOWARD the latter end of this Summer came over the learned, reverend, and judicious Mr. Henry Dunster, be-

fore whose coming the Lord was pleased to provide a Patron for erecting a Colledg, as you have formerly heard, his provident hand being now no less powerful in pointing out with his unerring finger, a president abundantly fitted this his servant, and sent him over for to mannage the work; and as in all the other passages of this history the Wonder-working Providence of Sions Saviour hath appeared, so more especially in this work, the Fountains of learning being in a great measure stopped in our Native Country at this time, so that the sweet waters of Shilo's streams must ordinarily pass into the Churches through the stinking channel of prelatical pride, beside all the filth that the fountains themselves were daily incumbered withall, insomuch that the Lord turned aside often from them, and refused the breathings of his blessed Spirit among them, which caused Satan in these latter daies of his transformation into an Angel of light (to make it a means to perswade people from the use of learning altogether, that so in the next generation they might be destitute of such helps, as the Lord hath been pleased hitherto to make use of, as chief means for the conversion of his people, and building them up in the holy faith, as also for breaking downe the kingdom of Antichrist; and verily had not the Lord been pleased to furnish N. E. with means for the attainment of learning, the work would have been carried on very heavily, and the hearts of godly parents would have vanished away with heaviness for their poor children, whom they must have left in a desolate wilderness, destitute of the meanes of grace.

It being a work (in the apprehension of all, whose capacity could reach to the great sums of money, the edifice of a mean Colledg would cost) past the reach of a poor Pilgrim people, who had expended the greatest part of their estates on a long voyage, travelling into Forraign Countryes, being unprofitable to any that have undertaken it, although it were but with their necessary attendance, whereas this people were forced to travel with wives, children, and servants; besides they considered



the treble charge of building in this new populated desert, in regard of al kind of workmanship, knowing likewise, that young Students could make but a poor progress in learning, by looking on the bare walls of their chambers, and that Diogenes would have the better of them by far, in making use of a Tun to lodg in, not being ignorant also, that many people in this age are out of conceit with learning, and that although they were not among a people who counted ignorance the mother of devotion, yet were the greater part of the people wholly devoted to the Plow, (but to speak uprightly, hunger is sharp, and the head will retain little learning, if the heart be not refreshed in some competent measure with food, although the gross vapors of a gluttoned stomach are the bane of a bright understanding, and brings barrenness to the brain) but how to have both go on together, as yet they know not; amidst all these difficulties, it was thought meet learning should plead for itself, and (as many other men of good rank and quality in this barren desert) plod out a way to live: Hereupon all those who had tasted the sweet wine of Wisdoms drawing, and fed on the dainties of knowledg/ began to set their wits a work, and verily as the whole progress of this work had a farther dependency then on the present eyed means, so at this time chiefly the end being firmly fixed on a sure foundation, namely the glory of God, and good of all his elect people, the world throughout, in vindicating the truths of Christ, and promoting his glorious Kingdom, who is now taking the heathen for his inheritance, and the utmost ends of the earth for his possession, means they know there are, many thousands uneyed of mortal man, which every daies Providence brings forth; upon these resolutions, to work they go, and with thankful acknowledgment, readily take up all lawful means as they come to hand, for place they fix their eye upon New-Town, which to tell their Posterity whence they came, is now named Cambridg, and withal to make the whole world understand, that spiritual learning was the thing they chiefly desired, to sanctifie the other, and make the whole lump holy, and that learning

being set upon its right object, might not contend for error instead of truth; they chose this place, being then under the Orthodox and soul-flourishing Ministry of Mr. Thomas Shepheard, of whom it may be said without any wrong to others, the Lord by his Ministry hath saved many a hundred soul: The scituation of this Colledg is very pleasant, at the end of a spacious plain, more like a bowling green, then a Wilderness, neer a fair navigable river, environed with many Neighbouring Towns of note, being so neer, that their houses joyn with her Suburbs, the building thought by some to be too gorgeous for a Wilderness, and yet too mean in others apprehensions for a Colledg, it is at present enlarging by purchase of the neighbour houses, it hath the conveniences of a fair Hall, comfortable Studies, and a good Library, given by the liberal hand of some Magistrates and Ministers with others: The chief gift towards the founding of this Colledg, was by Mr. John \*Harnes, a reverend Minister; the Country being very weak in their publike Treasury, expended about 500. l. towards it, and for the maintenance thereof, gave the yearly revenue of a Ferry passage between Boston, and Charlestown, the which amounts to about 40. or 50. l. per annum. The Commissioners of the four united Colonies also taking into consideration, (of what common concernment this work would be, not only to the whole plantations in general, but also to all our English Nation) they endeavoured to stir up all the people in the several colonies to make a yearly contribution toward it, which by some is observed, but by the most very much neglected; the Government hath endeavoured to grant them all the privileges fit for a Colledg, and accordingly the Governour and Magistrates, together with the President of the Colledg, for the time being have a continual care of ordering all matters for the good of the whole: This Colledg hath brought forth, and nurst up very hopeful plants, to the supplying some Churches here, as the gracious and godly Mr. Wilson, son to the grave and zealous servant of Christ Mr. John Wilson, this young man is Pastor to the Church of Christ at Dor-

\* Harvard.

chester; as also Mr. Buckley, son to the reverend Mr. Buckley of Concord; as also a second son of his, whom our Native Country hath now at present help in the Ministry, and the other is over a people of Christ in one of these Colonies, and if I mistake not, England hath I hope not only this young man of N. E. nurturing up in learning, but many more, as M. Sam. and Nathaniel Mathers, Mr. Wells, Mr. Downing, Mr. Barnard, Mr. Allin, Mr. Bruster, Mr. William Ames, Mr. Iones: Another of the first fruits of this Colledg is imployed in these Western parts in Mevis, one of the Summer Islands; beside these named, some help hath been had from hence in the study of Physick, as also the godly Mr. Sam. Danforth, who hath not only studied Divinity, but also Astronomy, he put forth many Almanacks, and is now called to the office of a teaching Elder in the Church of Christ at Roxbury, who was one of the fellows of this Colledg; the number of Students is much encreased of late, so that the present year 1651. on the twelfth of the sixth moneth, ten of them took the degree of Batchelors of Art, among whom the Sea-born son of Mr. Iohn Cotton was one, some Gentlemen have sent their sons hither from England, who are to be commended for their care of them, as the judicious and godly Doctor Ames, and divers others: This hath been a place certainly more free from temptations to lewdness, than ordinarily England hath been, yet if men shall presume upon this to send their most exorbitant children, intending them more especially for Gods service, the Justice of God doth sometimes meet with them, and the means doth more harden them in their way, for of late the godly Governors of this Colledg have been forced to expell some, for fear of corrupting the Fountain, wherefore the Author would ye should mind this following verse.

You that have seen these wondrous works by Sions Savior don,  
 Expect not miracle, lest means thereby you over-run;  
 The noble Acts Jehovah wrought, his Israel to redeem,  
 Surely this second work of his shall far more glorious seem;  
 Not only Egypt, but all Lands, where Antichrist doth reign,  
 Shall from Jehovahs heavy hand ten times ten plagues sustain:



Bright shining shall this Gospel come, Oh glorious King of Saints,  
 Thy blessed breath confounds thy foes, all mortal power faints,  
 The ratling bones together run with self-same breath that blows,  
 Of Israels sons long dead and dry, each joynt there sinew grows,  
 Fair flesh doth cover them, & veins (lifes fountain) takes there place.  
 Smooth seamless coats doth cloath their flesh, and all their structure  
 grace.

The breath of Life is added, they no Antinomians are,  
 But loving him who gives them life, more zealous are by far  
 To keep his Law, then formerly when righteousness they sought,  
 In keeping that they could not keep, which then their downfal  
 brought.

Their ceremonies vanisht are, on Christ's all their desires,  
 Their zeal all Nations doth provoke, inkindled are loves fires :  
 With hast on horseback, bringing home their sons and daughters, they  
 Rejoyce to see this glorious sight, like Resurrections day ;  
 Up and be doing, you young plants, Christ calls his work unto  
 Polluted lips, touch'd with heav'ns fire, about this work shall go.

Prostrate in prayer parents, and you young ones on Christ call,  
 Suppose of you he will make use, whereby that beast shall fall :  
 So be it Lord thy servants say, who are at thy disposing,  
 With outward word work inward grace, by heavenly truths disclosing,  
 Awake stand up from death to life, in Christ your studies enter,  
 The Scriptures search, bright light bring forth, upon this hardship  
 venter.

Sound doctrine shall your lips preach out, all errors to confound  
 And rid Christ's Temple from this smoke, his glory shall abound ;  
 Precipitant doth Dagon fall, his triple head off cut,  
 The Beast that all the world admires, by you to death is put :  
 Put hand to mouth, with vehement blast your silver Trumpets sound,  
 Christ calls to mind his peoples wrongs, their foes hee'l now confound :  
 Be strong in God, and his great might, his wondrous works do tell,  
 You raised are unwonted ways, observe his workings well.

As Jordans streams congeal'd in heaps, and Jerico's high walls  
 With Rams horns blast, and Midians Host, with pitcher breaking falls ;  
 Like works your faith, for to confirm in these great works to come,  
 That nothing now too hard may seem, Jehovah would have don.

The rage of Seas, and hunger sharp, wants of a desart Land,  
 Your noble hearts have overcom, what shall this work withstand ?  
 Not persecutors pride and rage, strong multitudes do fall,

By little handfulls of least dust, your Christ confounds them all ;  
 Not Satan and his subtil train with seeming shew reforming,  
 Another Gospel to bring forth, brings damned errors swarming :  
 Your selves have seen his paint washt off, his hidden poysons found,

Christ you provides with Antidotes, to keep his people sound :  
 There's nought remains but conquest now, through Christs continued  
 power,

His hardest works have honors most attend them every hour.

What greater honor then on earth, Christ's Legat for to be,  
 Attended with his glorious Saints in Church fraternity.  
 Christ to behold adorning now his Bride in bright array,  
 And you his friends him to attend upon his Nuptial day,  
 With crowned heads, as Conquerors triumphant by his side ;  
 In's presence is your lasting joy, and pleasures ever bide.

Mr. Henry Dunstar is now President of this Colledg, fitted from the Lord for the work, and by those that have skill that way, reported to be an able Proficient, in both Hebrew, Greek, and Latine Languages, an Orthodox Preacher of the truths of Christ, very powerful through his blessing to move the affection ; and besides he having a good inspection into the well-ordering of things for the Students maintenance (whose commons hath been very short hitherto) by his frugal providence hath continued them longer at their Studies then otherwise they could have done ; and verily it's great pity such ripe heads as many of them be, should want means to further them in learning : But seeing the Lord hath been pleased to raise up so worthy an instrument for their good, he shall not want for encouragement to go on with the work, so far as a rustical rime will reach.

Could man presage prodigious works at hand,  
 Provide he would for's good and ill prevent,  
 But God both time and means hath at's command,  
 Dunster in time to his N. E. hath sent.  
 When England 'gan to keep at home their guides,  
 N. E. began to pay their borrowed back :  
 Industrious Dunster, providence provides,  
 Our friends supply, and yet ourselves no lack :  
 With restless labour thou dost delve and dung,  
 Surculus set in garden duly tended,  
 That in Christs Orchard they with fruit full hung,  
 May bless the Lord, thy toil gone, them expended,  
 Thy constant course proves retrograde in this,  
 From West to East thy toil returns again,  
 Thy husbandry by Christ so honored is,  
 That all the world partaketh of thy pains.

CHAP. XX.—Of the planting of the one and twentieth Church of Christ at a Town called Gloucester, and of the Church and Town of Dover, and of the hardships that befel a certain people, who thirsted after large liberty in a warm Country.

FOR the Government of this little Commonwealth, this year was chosen for Governour Richard \*Belingham, Esquire, and John †Endicut Esquire for ‡Governours; the number of Freemen added this year, were about 503.

There was another Town and Church of Christ erected in the Mattachuset Government, upon the Northern-Cape of the Bay, called Cape Ann, a place of fishing, being peopled with Fishermen, till the reverend Mr. Richard Blindman came from a place in Plimouth Patten, called Green-Harbour, with some few people of his acquaintance, and settled down with them, named the Town Gloucester, and gathered into a Church, being but a small number, about fifty persons, they called to office this godly reverend man, whose gifts and abilities to handle the word, is not inferiour to many others, labouring much against the errors of the times, of a sweet, humble, heavenly carriage: This Town lying out toward the point of the Cape, the access there unto by Land becomes uneasie, which was the chief cause it was no more populated: Their fishing trade would be very beneficial, had they men of estates to mannage it; yet are they not without other means of maintenance, having good timber for shipping, and a very sufficient builder, but that these times of combustion the Seas throughout hath hindered much that work, yet have there been Vessels built here at this Town of late: Their reverend Elder is here remembered.

Thou hast thy prime and middle age here spent,  
 The best is not too good for him that gave it,  
 When thou didst first this Wilderness frequent,  
 For Sions sake it was, that Christ might save it.  
 Blindman be blith in him, who thee hath taken  
 To feed his Flock, a few poor scattered sheep,  
 Why should they be of thee at all forsaken,  
 Thy honour's high, that any thou may'st keep.

\* Bellingham.

† Endicot.

‡ Deputy Governour :



K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1631 Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

Sept. 27. Court of Assistants at Boston : Present Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Nowell, Pynchon, S. Bradstreet : Order that a Man for stealing 4 Baskets of Corn from the Indians (*Mcr*) viz. from Chickatabut and his Men, who are present (*w*) shall return them 8 Baskets, be fined *L.* 5, and hereafter call'd Josias, and not Mr. as formerly; and that 2 others (*Mcr*) viz. his Servants (*w*) be whipt for being accessory to the same Offence. (*Mcr*)

Oct. 18. Court of Assistants at Boston : Present Gov, D. Gov. Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Nowell, Pynchon, S. Bradstreet : Order (1.) That if any Man have carnal Copulation with another Man's Wife, they shall both be punished with Death : (2.) That a Man's House at Marble-Harbour be pulled down, and no Englishman give Him House-Room, or entertain Him under such Penalty as the Court shall think meet ; (3.) That Corn shall pass for Payment of all Debts at the usual Rate 'tis sold for, except Money or Bever be expressly named. (*Mcr*)

Oct. 22. Gov. [Winthrop] receives a Letter from Capt. Wiggin of Pascataquack, [sometimes wrote Pascataqua, but commonly called Pascatowa] informing of a Murther committed the 3d of this Month, at Richmond Isle (*w*) being a Part of a Tract of Land granted to Mr. Trelane, a Plimouth Merchant [in England] where he had settled a Place for Fishing, built a Ship there, and improved many Servants for Fishing and Planting, (*sc*) by an Indian Sagamore called Squidecasset, and his Company, on one Walter Bagnall, and one Jo P, who kept with him ; having kill'd them, burnt their House over them, and carried away their Guns, and what else they liked ; perswading the Gov to send 20 Men presently to take Revenge : But the Gov advising with some of the Council, tho't best to set still a while ; partly because he heard that Captain Neal, &c. were gone after them, partly because of the Frost and Snow, and want of Boats fit for that Expedition. This Bagnall was sometime Servant to one in the Bay, and these 3 Years had dwelt alone in the said Isle,

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

Isle, and had got about l. 400, was a wicked Fellow, and had much wrong'd the Indians. (*w*)

Oct. 25. Gov. [Winthrop] with Capt. Underhill and other Officers go a Foot to Sawgus ; [after called Lyn] and next Day to Salem, where they are courteously entertained by Capt. Endicot, &c. and the 28th return'd by Mistick to Boston. (*w*)

A plentiful Crop [in the Massachusetts.] (*w*)

Oct. 30. Gov. [Winthrop] having erected a Building of Stone at Mistick ; there comes so violent a Storm of Rain for 24 Hours from N E and S E, as (being laid with Clay instead of Lime, and not finished) two Sides of it are wash'd down to the Ground ; and much Harm done to other Houses by the Storm : [and] Mr. Pynchon's Boat coming from Sagadahock is cast away at Cape-Ann : but the Men and chief Goods saved, and the Boat recovered. (*w*)

According to the Agreement of Gov. Winthrop, D. Gov. Dudley and Assistants, on Dec. 28 last, to build at Newtown ; D. Gov. Dudley, Secretary Bradstreet and other principal Gentlemen, in the Spring went forward with their Design, and intended to carry it on amain. The Gov has the Frame of his House set up where he first pitch'd his Tent : and Mr. Dudley had not only fram'd but finished his House there, and remov'd his Family thereinto before Winter : But on other Considerations, which at first came not into their Minds ; the Gov. [about this Time as I guess] takes down his Frame and brings it to Boston ; where He intends to take up his [abode] for the future : which is no small Disappointment to the Rest of the Company who were minded to build [at Newtown,] and accompanied with some Disgust between the two chief Gentlemen ; but they are soon after satisfied with the Grounds of each others proceedings : \* Mr. Dudley and others, being without any settled Minister, till Mr. Hooker comes over in 1633 ; Gov Winthrop still continuing

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

ning at Boston, which is like to be the Place of chiefest Commerce, He prepares his dwelling accordingly. (*h*)

\* Governor Winthrop gives this as one Reason of Removing his House to Boston ; viz. that the People at Boston had under all their Hands petition'd Him, that according to the promise He made them when they first set down with Him at Boston, (viz. that He would not remove except they went with Him) He would not leave them. (*w*)

Nov. 2. The Ship Lyon, William Pierce Master, arrives at Natasket, [with] Gov [Winthrop's] Wife, his eldest Son [Mr. John Winthrop, Jun.] and Wife and other of his Children, Mr. [John] Elliot a Minister, and other Friends, being about 60 persons, all in Health, having been ten Weeks at Sea ; and lost none of their Company but two Children, whereof one was the Governor's Daughter about one year and a half old. Nov. 3. The Wind being contrary, the Ship stays at Long-Island : But the Gov's Son comes ashore, and the Gov. goes to the Ship, abides all Night : Next Morning, Nov. 4. The Wind coming fair, [the Ship] comes to an Anchor before Boston : the Gov. his Wife and Children come ashore with Mr. Pierce, in his Ship's Boat : The Ship gives them 7 [guns] at their Landing ; the Captains with their Companies in Arms, entertain them with a Guard and divers Vollies, and 3 Drakes : [a Sort of great Guns, perhaps invented by Sir Francis Drake] and divers of the Assistants, and most of the People of the near Plantations come to welcome them, and bring and send (for divers Days) great Store of Provisions, as fat Hogs, Kids, Venison, Poultry, Geese, Partridges, &c. so as the like Joy and Manifestation of Love had never been seen in New-England. It was a great Marvel that so many People, and such Store of Provisions could be gathered together at so few Hours warning. (*w*)

[The Rev.] Mr. Elliot left his intended Wife in England, to come next Year : (*rcr*) soon (*cm*) joins to the Church at Boston : and there exercises in the absence of Mr.



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

Mr. Wilson the Pastor, who was gone back to England for his Wife and Family. (*rer*)

Nov. 11. We keep a Day of Thanksgiving at Boston, (*w*)

Nov. 17. Gov. [Bradford] of Plimouth comes to Boston, and lodges in Mr. Pierce's Ship. (*w*)

Nov. 23. Mr. Pierce goes down to his Ship at Natas-  
ket : divers go Home with Him to England by Virginia ;  
as Sir R. Saltonstall's eldest Son and others ; and are 6  
Weeks going to Virginia. (*w*)

The Congregation at Waterton, whereof Mr. George  
Phillips is Pastor had chosen [Mr.] Richard Brown [see  
the List of Oct. 19. 1630] for their Elder before named ;  
who persisting in his Opinion of the Truth of the Roman  
Church, and maintaining other Errors, and being a Man  
of a very violent Spirit, the Court wrote a Letter to the  
Congregation, directed to the Pastor and Brethren, to  
advise them to take into consideration, whether Mr.  
Brown were fit to be continued their Elder, or not : to  
which He returned Answer to this Effect ; that if we  
would take the Pains to prove such Things as were ob-  
jected against Him, they would endeavour to redress  
them. (*w*)

Dec. 8. The Congregation [at Waterton] being much  
divided about their Elder, both Parties repair to Gov  
Winthrop for Assistance : whereupon he goes to Waterton  
with the D. Gov and Mr. Nowell : and the Congregation  
being assembled, the Gov tells them, that being come to  
settle Peace &c. ; they might proceed in three different  
Respects, (1.) As the Magistrates, (their Assistance being  
desired)-(2.) As Members of a neighbour Congregation,  
(3.) Upon the Answer we received of our Letter, which  
did no way satisfy us : But the Pastor, Mr. Phillips desires  
us to set with them as Members of a neighbour Congre-  
gation only ; whereto the Gov &c. consent : after much  
Debate they are reconciled, and agree to seek God in a  
Day of Humiliation ; and so to have a solemn uniting ;  
each

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

each Party promising to reform what had been amiss &c. and the Pastor gives thanks to God, and the Assembly brakes up. (*w*) [Mr. Hubbard says, that] said Brown had been one of the Separation in England ; [and seems to intimate as if the Occasion of his Opinion was, that] the Reformed Churches did not use to Re-baptize those that renounced the Religion of Rome, and embraced that of the Reformation. (*h*)

## ARTICLES OF VARIOUS DATES.

[Capt. Johnson says—the Number of Freemen of the Massachusetts added this Year was about 83. But in the Records of May, 18, I find 116 take the Oaths of Freemen, as then observ'd, besides two more scored out : and as these are all I find admitted this Year, and the first that are mention'd in said Records, as taking the Oaths of Freemen ; I am apt to think the 110 He mentions as made Freemen in 1630 [See p. 4.] are included in the 116, who take their Oaths on May 18. 1631, and that these 116 are the first admitted after the Arrival of the Gov and Company.

[Josseline says] that Capt. John Smith Gov of Virginia [i. e. President in 1608] and Admiral of New-England, [i. e. made so in 1615] dies in 1631 : [but where, He does not say. And He mistakes in placing] under 1631. (1.) the Arrival of Sir R. Saltonstall, and the Rev. Mr. Maverick and Wilson, in the Massachusetts, [which was in May & June 1630 ;] (2.) Mr. Harlackenden a Magistrate and leader of their Military Forces, [which is not till 1636. And I guess He mistakes in placing] in 1631, the Rev. Mr. Wilson's Brother, Dr. Wilson's Gift of a Thousand Pounds to New-England ; [which seems to be some Time after.]

---

---

	K. of France.	K. of Great-Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

## SUPPLEMENT TO 1630.

*Containing Accounts of the four Ministers who arrived in 1630.*

1. THE Rev. Mr. John Maverick, }
2. The Rev. Mr. John Warham, } of Dorchester.

[Of both these Gentlemen, Capt. Clapp of the same Town, gives the best Account in the following Paragraph, which I insert almost intire, to show the pious Spirit of the Puritan Laity as well as Ministry in those times in England, as well as those of them who come over hither] I was born [says he] at Salcom, [about twelve Miles E. of Exeter] in Devonshire, April 6, 1609. My Father a Man fearing God and in good Esteem among God's faithful Servants : His Estate I think not above £. 80 per annum. We were 5 Brethren (I the youngest) and 2 Sisters. God was graciously pleased to breathe by his holy Spirit (I hope) in all our Hearts : Four of us Brethren liv'd at Home. My dear Mother being dead, I desired my dear Father I might live Abroad, which he consented to. So I first went to live with a worthy Gentleman, Mr. William Southcot, about 3 Miles from the City of Exeter. He was careful to keep a godly Family. There being a very mean Preacher in that Place, we went every Lord's Day into the City, where were many famous Preachers of the Word of God. I took such a Liking to the Rev. Mr. Warham, that I desired to live near Him : so with my Father's Consent, I removed into the City, and lived with Mr. Mossiour, as famous a Family for Religion as ever I knew ; He kept 7 or 8 Men, and divers Maid Servants ; And he had a Conference on a Question propounded once a Week in his Family. I never heard of New-England, till I heard of many godly persons that were going there, and that Mr. Warham was to go also. My Master asked me, Whether I would go ? I told him, Were I not engaged to him, I would willingly go : He answered, That should be no Hindrance ; I might go for him, or for myself, which I would. I then wrote to my Father who liv'd about 12 Miles off, to intreat his Leave to go to New-England ; who was so much displeased at first, that he wrote me no Answer : [Upon which] I went and made my Request to him : [And] now God sent the Rev. Mr. Maverick, who lived 40 Miles off, a Man I never

saw



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

saw before : He having heard of me [was so zealous to promote our going to New-England, that he] came to my Father's House, and my Father agreed I should be with him and come under his Care, which I did. [And then he adds—] It was God that did draw me out of my Father's Family ; that bro't me near Mr. Warham, and inclined my Heart to his Ministry : that made me willing to leave my dear Father, and dear Brethren and Sisters, my dear Friends and Country ; that sent Mr. Maverick, that Pious Minister to me who was unknown to him, to seek me out, that I might come hither. [And] Blessed be God that brought me here ! (c)

[In our Annals at the Beginning of March 1629,30 we gave an Account of the said Rev. Mr. Maverick and Warham joining with Mr. Ludlow and Rossiter and others, in forming a Congregational Church at Plymouth in England, of those pious People who were there, and then preparing to come over hither, who then chose the said Maverick and Warham their officers : and Capt Johnson tells us, [that] the Rev. and godly Mr. Maverick was their first Pastor, and the gracious Servant of Christ the Rev. Mr. Warham their Teacher. [In which Qualities they came over with their Church in a Ship of 400 Tuns ; setting sail from said Plimouth on March 20, and arriving at Nantasket on May 30, 1630 ; as observed before.]

[And from both these Accounts we learn that Mr. Maverick was the elder Person ; that they had both been ministers in the Church of England ; and had therefore been ordain'd by some Bishop or other ; as none other in those Days were allow'd to Preach in that Kingdom ; nor any separate Congregation allowed there till the Civil Wars began in 1642. Nor would Mr. Maverick and Warham have been then allow'd to form a Congregational Church at Plimouth in England, were it not of those who had taken their Passage for New-England, and were just ready to sail hither.]

3. The Rev. Mr. John Wilson [being the first Minister of this Metropolis, I may be larger on him : and Dr. C. Mather, says that] descending from eminent Ancestors, he was born at Windsor, in 1588. The 3d Son of Dr. William Wilson Prebend of St. Paul's, of Rochester and of Windsor, and Rector of Cliff ; his Mother a Niece of Dr. Edmund Grindell, the renowned Arch-Bishop of Canterbury. His Education under his Parents, which betimes tinged Him with an Aversion to Vice, and above all the very  
Shadow

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

Shadow of a Lye, fitted him [for] Eaton College [to which He went at 10 Years of Age] under Udal & Langley: Here he was most remarkably twice [sav'd] from Drowning: but at his Book made such Proficiency, that while he was the least Boy in School, he was made a Propositor: and when the Duke of Biron, Ambassador from the French K, Henry IV, to Q Elizabeth, visited the School, he made a Latin Oration; for which the D bestowed 3 Angels on him. After 4 Years at Eaton, he was admitted into King's College in Cambridg in 1602; [And] in that College obtained a Fellowship. He had hitherto been, according to his good Education, very soberly disposed; But being led to the ministry of such holy Men, as Mr. Bains, Dr. (Tho.) Taylor, Dr. Chaderton, he was by their Sermons enlightened and awakened to more solicitous Enquiries after the one Thing yet lacking in him. The serious Dispositions of his Mind were now such, that besides his Pursuance after the Works of Repentance in Himself, he took no little Pains to pursue it in others; especially Malefactors in Prison, which he visited with a devout and successful industry. [Yet] being forestalled with Prejudices against the Puritans, he declined their Acquaintance: tho' his good Conversation had made him to be accounted one Himself; till going to a Booksellers shop to augment his well furnish'd Library, he light on that famous Book of Mr. Richard Rogers, called, The Seven Treatises: which, when he read, he so affected, not only the Matter, but Author, that he took a Journey to Wethersfield, on purpose to hear a Sermon from that Boanerges. When he had heard the heavenly Passages which fell from the lips of that worthy Man, privately as well as publicly, and compared them with the Writings of Greenham, Dod and Dent, especially [Dent's] Pathway to Heaven; He saw that they who were nick-named Puritans, were like to be the desirabest Companions for one that intended his own everlasting Happiness: And pursuant to the Advice he had from Dr. Ames, he associated himself with a pious Company in the University, who kept their Meetings in Mr. Wilson's Chamber, for Prayer, Fasting, holy Conference, and the Exercises of true Devotion: But now perceiving many good Men to scruple the Rites imposed in the Church of England; He furnish'd himself with all the Books he could find wrote on Conformity both Pro and Con, and ponder'd with a most conscientious Deliberation the Arguments on both Sides: was hereby so convinced of the Evil of Conformity, that for his Omission of certain uninstituted Ceremonies

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

Ceremonies in the Worship of God, the Bishop of Lincoln then visiting the University, pronounc'd on Him the Sentence of Quindenum ; i. e. that besides other Mortifications He must in 15 Days be expell'd, if He continu'd in his Offence. His Father being hereof advis'd wrote to Him to conform : interceded with the Bp that He might have a Quarter of a Year allow'd him, in which Time, if he could not be reduc'd, he should leave his Fellowship ; [and] hereupon sent him to several Doctors of great Fame, to get his Objections resolv'd : But when much Discourse and Writing had pass'd between them, he was rather more confirm'd in his Principles about Church Reformation. Wherefore his Father dispos'd him to the Inns of Court ; where he fell into Acquaintance with some young Gentlemen, who associat-ed with him in constant Exercises of Devotion ; to which Meetings the repeated Sermons of Dr. Gouge were a continual Entertainment. [After] 3 Years at the Inns of Court, his Father discerning his Disposition to be a Minister, permitted his proceeding Master of Arts in Cambridge. Dr. Cary Vice Chancellor, understanding his former Circumstances, would not admit him without Subscription, [which] he refused : But the Earl of Northampton Chancellor of the University [writing] to the Vice Chancellor on behalf of our Wilson, he received his Degree, and continued a While in Emanuel College : But while passing under these Changes, took up a Resolution, which he thus expressed before the Lord ; That if the Lord would grant him Liberty of Conscience, with Purity of Worship, he would be content, yea thankful, tho' it were at the furthest End of the World. At length Preaching his first Sermon at Newport, he set his Hand to that Plough, from whence he never after looked back. Not long after, his Father lying on his Death-bed, he kneeled in his Turn before him for his Blessing ; and brought with him for a Share [there] in, the vertuous young Daughter of the Lady Mansfield (Widow of Sir John Mansfield, Master of the Minories and the Queen's Surveyor) whom he designed to marry ; whereupon the old Gentleman said, Ah John, I have taken much Care about thee, because thou wouldst not conform : I wou'd fain have brot thee to some higher Preferment : I see thy Conscience is very scrupulous concerning such Things as have been imposed in the Church : Nevertheless, I have rejoiced to see the Grace and Fear of God in thy Heart : and seeing thou hast kept a good Conscience hitherto, and walk'd according to thy



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

thy Light ; so do still, and go by the Rules of God's holy Word ; the Lord bless thee, and her whom thou hast chosen to be the Companion of thy Life. Among other Places he preached at Moreclake ; where his Nonconformity exposed him to the Rage of Persecution : But by the Friendship of Sir William Bird the Justice, a Kinsman of his Wife, and by a Mistake of the Informers, the Rage of that Storm was moderated. After this at Henley [in Oxfordshire] then for 3 Years together continued Preaching at 4 Places by Turns, which lay near [each other] on the Edge of Suffolk, [viz.] Bumsted, Stoke, Clare and Candish. Here some of Sudbury happening to hear him, they invited him to succeed the eminent old Mr. Jenkins : with which he cheerfully complied, and the more because of his Opportunity to be near old Mr. Richard Rogers, from whom afterwards when dying, he received a Blessing among his children. And yet he accepted not the Pastoral Charge of the Place, without a solemn Day of Prayer with Fasting, wherein the neighbouring Ministers [who were then call'd Puritan Ministers in the Church of England] assisted at his Election. Great Notice was now taken of the Success of his Labours in this famous Town. But if they that will live godlily must suffer Persecution, a peculiar Share must fall on them who are zealous and useful Instruments to make others live so : Mr. Wilson had a Share of this ; and one A—n [a Preacher] was the principal Author of it : Upon seeing Mr. Wilson more highly valued and honoured than himself, became a malignant and violent Persecutor : By his Means Mr. Wilson was put into Trouble in the spiritual Courts ; from whence his Deliverance was at length obtain'd by certain powerful Mediators. Afterwards an eminent Lady happening to make some Comparison between the Preaching of Mr. Wilson, and Dr. B of B ; the angry Dr. presently applied himself to the Bp of London, who for a While suspended Him. And when that Storm was over, he with several other worthy Ministers came to be wholly silenc'd in another that was raised upon Complaints made by one Mr. Bird to Dr. Harsnet [then] Bp of Norwich against them : But at [length] Mr. Wilson obtain'd [of] the truly noble E of Warwick to sign a Letter, which the Earl bid him draw up to the Bp, on his behalf ; by the Operation of which, his Liberty for the Exercise of his ministry was again procured. At last being persecuted in one Country, he must flee to another. The Plantation of a New-English Colony was begun ; and Mr. Wilson with

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

with some of his Neighbours embark'd in the Fleet which came over hither in 1630, [about the 42d Year of his Age] where he applied himself with all the Vigour imaginable to encourage the poor People under the Difficulties of a new Plantation. But he was most set on the main Design [thereof] which was to settle the Ordinances of the Gospel, and worship Christ according to his Institutions : and accordingly he, with the Gov, and others [who] came with him on the same Account, combined into a Church State with all convenient Expedition, (*cm*) [viz. In about a Month after their Arrival at Charlestown, as we observ'd before.]

4. The Rev. Mr. George Philips, [Dr. C. Mather says] he was born at Raymond in Norfolk : [whose] Parents encouraged by his great proficiency at the Grammar School, to send him to the University [I suppose of Cambridg, it being 40 Miles nearer, and between Norfolk and Oxford] where his good Invention, strong Memory, and solid Judgment, with the Blessing of God upon all, attained a Degree of Learning that may be called eminent. The diligent Reading of the Fathers, while he was yet among young Men, was one of the Things which gave a special Ornament to that Skill in Theology whereto he attained : But that which yet further fitted him to become a Divine, was his being made Partaker of the divine Nature, by the Sanctification of all his Abilities for the Service of God, in a true Regeneration. Devoting himself to the Work of the Ministry, his Employment befel him at Boxford in Essex ; whereof he found much Acceptance with good Men, as being a Man mighty in the Scriptures. [Mr. Hubbard stiles him an able and faithful Minister of the Gospel at Boxsted in Essex, near Groton in Suffolk : But Boxford being in Suffolk, and Boxsted in Essex, and both near Groton ; I suppose that Boxford in Dr. C. Mather, is a Mistake of the Printer.] But his Acquaintance with the Writings and Persons of some Old Nonconformists, had instilled into him such Principles about Church-Government, as were like to make him unacceptable to some who then drove the World before them. Some of these Principles he had intimated in his publick Preaching ; whereupon some of his dissatisfied Hearers repair'd to old Mr. [John] Rogers of Dedham, [near Boxsted] with some Intimations of their Dissatisfaction. But tho' Mr. Rogers had not much studied the Controversy, yet had so high a Respect for Mr. Philips, that he said, He believed Mr. Philips would preach nothing without some good Evidence for  
it

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

it from the Word of God; and therefore they should be willing to regard whatever Mr. Philips might, from that Word, make evident to them. And as for Mr. Philips, the more he was put upon the Study and Searching of the Truth in the Matter controverted, the more he was confirmed in his own Opinion of it. When the Spirit of Persecution did at length, with the extreamest Violence urge a Conformity to Ways and Parts of Divine Worship, conscientiously scrupled by such Persons as Mr. Philips; he with many more of his Neighbours entertained Tho'ts of transporting themselves and their Families into [these then] Desarts of America, to prosecute and propagate the glorious Designs of the Gospel, and spread the Light of it in these goings down of the Sun. And being resolv'd accordingly to accompany the excellent Mr. Winthrop [then of Groton] in that Undertaking; he with many other devout Christians, embarqued for New-England, where they arriv'd in 1630, [as before related] Here [soon] after his Landing, he lost his desirable Consort; who tho' an only Child, had chearfully left her Parents to serve the Lord Jesus with her Husband, in a terrible Wilderness: She died at Salem, entering into everlasting Peace; and was very solemnly interr'd near the Right Honourable, the Lady Arabella, the Sister of the Earl of Lincoln, who also took New-England in her Way to Heaven. (*cm.*)

[Under Article IV. p. 16. next to Dec. 5. OS.]

[This Year Dr. I Mather tells us] Bp Laud persecutes Mr. [Thomas] Shepard [in England] for Preaching a Lecture, notwithstanding he is now a Conformist, not having searched into the Principles of the Norconformists till after this: I have by me a Manuscript of Mr. Shepard's, written with his own Hand: in which are these Words;

Dec. 16. 1630. I was inhibited from Preaching in the Diocess of London by Dr. Laud Bp of that Diocess. As soon as I came in the Morning, about 8 of the Clock; falling into a Fit of Rage, he asked me, what Degree I had taken in the University? I answer'd him, I was a Master of Arts. He ask'd, of what College? I answer'd, of Emanuel. He ask'd how long I had liv'd in his Diocess? I answer'd three Years and upwards. He ask'd, who maintain'd me all this While? charging me to deal plainly with him;



---

	K. of France.		K. of Great-Britain.		K. of Spain.
1630	Lewis XIII.		Charles I,		Philip IV.

---

him; adding with all, that he had been more cheated and equivocated with by some of my malignant Faction than ever was Man by Jesuit. At the speaking of which Words he look'd as tho' Blood would have gush'd out of his Face, and did shake as if he had been haunted with an Ague Fit, to my Apprehension, by Reason of his extream Malice and secret Venom; I desired him to excuse me: He fell then to threaten me, and withal to bitter Railing, calling me all to naught, saying: you prating Coxcomb! Do you think all the Learning is in your Brain? He pronounc'd his Sentence thus; I charge you that you neither Preach, Read, Marry, Bury, or exercise any Ministerial Function in any Part of my Diocess; for if you do, and I hear of it, I'll be upon your back and follow you wherever you go, in any Part of the Kingdom, and so everlastingly disenable you. I besought him not to deal so, in Regard of a poor Town; and here he stopt me in what I was going on to say; a poor Town! you have made a Company of seditious, factious Bedlams; and what do you prate to me of a poor Town? I pray'd him to suffer me to catechise in the Sabbath Days in the Afternoon: He replied, spare your Breath, I'll have no such Fellows prate in my Diocess; get you gone, and now make your Complaints to whom you will? So away I went; and blessed be God that I may go to Him. [Thus did this Bp, a professed Disciple of the meek and lowly Jesus, treat one of the most pious, humble, diligent and faithful young Ministers in the Church of England in his Day.]

---

## APPENDIX TO 1631.

*Account of the two Ministers who arriv'd in 1631.*

MR. Roger Williams. [With Respect to whom Governour Winthrop writing] that the Lyon arriving on February 5, 1630, 31. bro't Mr. Williams, a godly Minister. On April 12 following, that the

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

the Church at Salem had called Mr. Roger Williams to the Office of a Teacher, &c. [the Names seem to mean the same man: But then the List of Persons desiring to be Freemen, placed under Oct 19, 1630, comprehends all those who enter'd their Desires between that time and May 18, 1631. By his printed Works, he appears to be a Gentleman of considerable Parts and Learning; but of a very separating Principle and Spirit, and for the utmost Liberty in religious Matters. Gov Bradford writes of him thus] Mr. Roger Williams (a Man godly and zealous, having many precious Parts, but very unsettled in Judgment) came over first to the Massachusetts: But upon some Discontent left the Place and came hither [i. e. to Plimouth, and I suppose in the Summer of 1631] where he was freely entertain'd, according to [our] poor Ability, and exercised his Gifts among [us]: And after some Time was admitted a Member of the Church; and his Teaching well approved; for the Benefit whereof, I still bless God, and am thankful to him even for his sharpest Admonitions and Reproofs, so far as they agreed with Truth. (*br*)

2. The Rev. Mr. John Eliot. Dr. C. Mather says, He was born in England [I suppose about November 1604.] His Parents gave him a pious Education, [and] his first Times were seasoned with the Fear of God, the Word and Prayer: was educated at one of the Universities: [I suppose at Cambridg] God had furnished him with a good Measure of Learning, which made him capable of dividing the Word aright. He was a most acute Gramarian; understood very well the [Greek and Hebrew] Languages which God first wrote his holy Bible in; had a good Insight into all the liberal Arts; but above all had a most eminent Skill in Theology. His first Appearance in the World was in the difficult but very necessary Employment of a School-Master, which he discharged with Fidelity: [I suppose under Mr. Hooker in a Sort of an Academy at Little Baddow near Chelmsford in Essex: see Account of Mr. Hooker.] He had not passed many [Changes] in the World before he knew the Meaning of a saving Turn to God in Christ by a true Repentance. He had the Privilege and Happiness of an early Conversion from the Ways which original Sin disposes all Men unto. One of the principal Instruments which the God of Heaven us'd, in tinging and filling the Mind of this chosen Vessel with good Principles was that venerable Thomas Hooker; whose Name in the Churches of the Lord Jesus is as Ointment poured forth.

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

forth. It was an Acquaintance with him that contributed more than a little to the accomplishing of our Elisha for that Work to which the most High had design'd him. His liberal Education having now the Addition of Religion to direct and improve it, gave such a Biass to his young Soul, as quickly discovered itself in very signal Instances. [And his being a Tutor of Youth] rather prepar'd him for the further Service which his Mind was now set upon. Wherefore having dedicated himself to God betimes, he could not reconcile himself to any lesser Way of serving his Creator and Redeemer than the Ministry of the Gospel. [And] He was one mighty in the Word, which enabled him to convince Gainsayers and show himself a Workman that needed not to be ashamed. But where, alas! should he have Opportunities for the exercising of it? The Laudian, Grotian and Arminian Faction [then] in the Church of England, in the Prosecution of their grand Plot for reducing England to a moderate Sort of Popery, had pitch'd on this as one of their Methods for it; [viz.] to creep as fast as they could all the learned, godly, painful Ministers of the Nation, and invent certain Shiboleths for detecting and destroying such Men as were cordial Friends to the Reformation. 'Twas now a Time when there were every Day multiplied and imposed those unwarrantable Ceremonies in the Worship of God; by which the Conscience of our considerate Eliot counted the second Commandment notoriously violated. 'Twas now also a Time when some Hundreds of those good People which had the nick-name of Puritans put upon them, transported themselves with their Families and Interests into the Desarts of America; that there they might peaceably erect Congregational Churches, and therein attend and maintain all the pure Institutions of Christ; having the Encouragement of Royal Charters, that they should never have any Interruption in the Enjoyment of those pleasant and precious Things. Here was a Prospect which [soon] determined the devout Soul of our young Eliot to a Remove into New-England, while it was yet a Land not sown. He [soon] listed himself among those valiant Soldiers of Christ, who cheerfully encountred, first the Perils of the Atlantick Ocean, and then the Fatigues of a New-English Wilderness: that they might have an undisturbed Communion with him in his Appointments here. He came [hither] in Nov. 1631 [at 27 Years of Age] among those blessed old Planters which laid the Foundations of a remarkable Country, devoted

to



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

to the Exercise of the Protestant Religion in its purest and highest Reformation. (*cm*)

## II. The most material Events in England.

William Beal, Servant to Mr. Henry Gellibrand, Professor of Mathematics at Gresham College, London, setting forth an Almanack for this Year, by his Master's Approbation, agreeing with the Kalender before Mr. Fox's, printed oftimes by publick Authority without the least Exception, both in Q Eliz. and K James and K Charles Reigns: in which Almanack the Names of Popish Saints were omitted, and the Names of Martyrs mention'd in the Book of Martyrs inserted, just as in Mr. Fox's Kalendar: Bp Laud taking great Exceptions against this Almanack, bro't Mr. Gellibrand and his Man into the High Commission for compiling and publishing it, prosecutes them with great Violence; stands up in a great Passion and publicly informs the Court, that the Q sent for him and complain'd to him against this Almanack, which gave great Offence to those of her Religion, and desir'd him to prosecute the Author of it, and suppress the Book, he therefore hop'd he should not pass unpunished in this Court: yet the Court acquiting him, the Bp stood up again in a Fury, and said to Mr. Gellibrand; Sir, Remember you have made a Faction in this Court, for which you ought to be punished; and know that you are not yet discharged hence; I will sit in your Skirts, for I hear you keep Conventicles at Gresham College, after your Lectures there: whereupon he gave Order for a second Prosecution against him in the High Commission; which so afflicted this good Man, that it put him into a Fever, whereof he died. Offended with this Almanack, Bp Laud perus'd a Book of Dr. Pocklington's and orders it to be printed; wherein he calls Mr. Fox's Martyrs, Traitors, Murderers, Rebels and Heretics. (*lt*)

Jan. 16. I [i. e. Bp. Laud] consecrate St. Katharine Creed Church in London: (*ld*) tho' only repair'd in his Predecessor Bp Mountain's Time. As Bp Laud approaches the W Door, his [Attendants] cry out with a loud Voice; open, open ye everlasting Doors that the King of Glory may come in; and presently (as by Miracle) the Doors fly open and the Bp enters; falls down on his Knees; in the Name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost pronounces the Place Holy: then takes up some of the Dust and throws it into the Air; and this he does in the great middle Isle several Times: as he approaches Eastward towards the Rails of the Lord's Table, he bows lowly towards it 5 or 6 Times:

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

Times : when he approaches the Communion Table, he bows with his Nose near the Ground 6 or 7 Times : then comes to one of the Corners of the Table, and there bows 3 Times ; then to the 2d, 3d and 4th Corners, bowing at each Corner 3 Times : but when he comes to the Side where the Bread and Wine is, he bows 7 Times : then after reading many Prayers by himself, and his two Chaplins on their Knees by him in their Surplices, Hoods and Tippets ; he comes near the Bread cut and laid in a Napkin ; gently lifts up one of the Corners of the Napkin, peeps into it till he sees the Bread, presently claps it down again, flies back a Step or two, and then bows very low 3 Times towards it and the Table : when he beholds the Bread, he comes near and opens the Napkin again, and bows as before : then lays his Hand on the Cup of Wine with a Cover on it : so soon as he pulls the Cup a little nearer to him, he lets the Cup go, flies back, and bows again 3 Times towards it : then comes near again ; and lifting up the Cover, peeps into it ; and seeing the Wine, lets fall the Cover again, flies nimbly back and bows as before, &c. [In short] prays and acts as in the Roman Pontifical published by Pope Clement the 8th. Tho' he consecrated it more as a Burying Place than as a House of Worship, and tho' this Pontifical with the Ceremonies of consecrating Churches had been abolish'd by Acts of Parliament ; Dr. Pilkington Bp of Durham, and Arch Bp Parker, with other Divines in Q Elizabeth's Reign had condemn'd the Consecration of Churches as paganish, superstitious, childish and ridiculous ; and the Practice had discontinu'd from the beginning of the Reformation, till now Bp Laud revives it. (*lt*) [and how extreemly pleasing to the Popish Q and all her Party !]

Jan. 23. I [i. e. Bp Laud] consecrated St. Giles Church in the Fields : (*ld*) which had been also in Part re-built in Bp Mountain's Days, and had divine Service in it for 3 or 4 Years : But on a sudden Bp Laud interdicts and shuts it up for 2 or 3 Weeks till he consecrates it now, with the same Bowings, &c. as the other, with the Church Yard also. (*lt*)

This Year, Thomas Dove, Bp of Peterborough, living in a poor Bishoprick, and leaving a plentiful Estate [dies] : the Nonconformists in his Diocess complain of his Severity ; [having] silenced 5 of them in one Morning : on the same Token that K James is said to say, It might have serv'd for 5 Years ; (*fl*) [and the learned Author of the Dispute against Kneeling at the Lord's Supper

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

per in 4to, printed in 1608, says; that] Bp Dove deprived 15 Ministers in one day.

June 7. I [i. e. Bp Laud] consecrate the Chappel at Hammersmith: (*ld*) with the like Popish Ceremonies, as Creed Church. (*lt*)

[June 29. The Continuer of Baker says—] 2 Years ago [i. e. in 1629] the Fort Kebeck [or Quebeck] on the River of Canada in North America had been taken and garrisoned by Capt. Kirk; it being a great Staple for Bevers and Otters; the K of France therefore detains 400,000 Crowns, Part of the English Queen's Portion, and a greater Breach likely to ensue: [But he seems to mistake in saying that] 1630 puts an End to the Differences, the Fort delivered and the Money paid: [For Monsi Dennis tells us, that] on June 29, 1631, K Charles impowers Sir Isaac Wake his Ambassador, to conclude a Treaty with the French K for ending all Controversies, perfecting mutual Reconciliation, restoring Commerce, and establishing a firmer Peace and Friendship between them and their Subjects. [But said Treaty is not finish'd till March 29. 1632.]

Before Bp Laud came to be Chancellor of the University of Oxford [in April 1630] there were no Copes, Altars, nor Communion Tables turned and rail'd about Alter-wise in Churches or Colleges, nor any Bowing to or towards the Altar, nor any Crucifixes but such as were either defaced, or cover'd over with Dust, and quite neglected: but since his being Chancellor, the Tables in all, or most Churches, Colleges are turned into Altars, or railed in Altar-wise, and usually bowed unto; the old Crucifixes repaired, adored, and new Crucifixes set up where there were none before. Sworn by Sir Nathaniel Brent his Visitor. (*lt*)

June & July, (*ld*) Begin great Discontents to grow in the University of Oxford. Many conceive that Innovations are multiplied in divine Service: offended thereat, in their Sermons brake out into what is interpreted bitter Invectives; yea, their very Texts give Offence: one Preaching on Num. 14. 4. Let us make us a Captain, and let us return into Egypt: another on 1 Kings 13. 2. And he cried against the Altar &c. In Prosecution whereof they had tart Reflection on some eminent Person in the Church: Dr. Smith, Warden of Wadham, convented the principal Persons, viz. Mr. Thorn of Baliol College (Mr. Hodges of Exeter College (*lt*) and Mr. Thomas (*lt*) Ford of Magdalen Hall, as Offenders against the King's Instructions: they suspecting Partiality in the Vice-Chancellor, appeal'd from him to the Proctors,  
2 Men



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

2 Men of eminent Integrity and Ability, Mr. Atherton Bruch and Mr. John Doughty; who received their Appeal, presuming the same justifiable by the Statutes of the University. Bp Laud did not like those retrograde Appeals; but sensible that his own Strength moved rather by ascending than descending, procures the Cause to be heard before the King at Woodstock (on Aug. 23.) By whose sentence, (1.) the Preachers complain'd of are expell'd the University, (2.) the Proctors are deprived of their Places for accepting of their Appeal, [But] the Expulsion of these Preachers expels not, but increases the Differences in Oxford: many complain that the Sword of Justice did not cut indifferently, but that tis more penal for some to touch than others to break the King's Declaration. (*f*) Yea, Mr. Ford returning into Devonshire; some Friends intended to elect him for their Lecturer or Vicar in Plimouth: of which Bp Laud being inform'd; presently, viz. Sept. 12, procures a Letter from [the K] to the Mayor and Corporation of Plimouth, not to chuse Mr. Ford their Lecturer or Vicar on any Terms under Pain of his Displeasure; and another Letter to the Bp of Exeter, not to admit him to be their Lecturer or Vicar, in Case they should elect him. (*lt*)

After Aug. 2, dies Mr. Arthur Hildersham; deriv'd by his Mother from the D of Clarence [2d Son of K Edward III] bred in Christ's College in Cambridg, Minister of Ashby de la Zouch [in Leicestershire] 43 Years: a learned Writer: Tho' a Nonconformist, he loved all honest Men, were they of a different Judgment; minded herein like Luther, who gave for his Motto—In whomsoever I see any Thing of Christ, him I love. (*f*) [Leigh says] He was a learned and judicious Divine, quotes Scripture pertinently, and his Works are excellent: and Mr. T Hall styles him, an Oracle and Honour of his Time: [Yet neither the Royal Blood in his Veins, nor his eminent Learning, Piety and Charity protected him from being persecuted by the then Bishops: For Fuller says, that] after he enter'd the Ministry, he met with many Molestations; being in

	Silenc'd by	Restored by	
1. 1590. June	The High Commissirs.	Ditto	1591, 2. Jan.
2. 1605. Apr. 24.	Bp. Chaderton.	Bp. Barlow,	1608, 9. Jan.
3. 1611. Nov.	Bp. Neile.	Dr. Ridley,	1625. June
4. 1630. Mar. 4.	Court at Leicester.	Ditto.	1631. Au. 2.
			After

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1631	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

After Sept. Dies the Rev. Mr. Robert Bolton, B. D. *Æt.* 60. Being born in 1572: In 1592 went to Lincoln College, in Oxford; there he became an excellent Logician and Philosopher; and wrote out all Homer; so that he could with as much Facility dispute in the Schools in Greek, as in Latin or English; remov'd to Brazen-Nose College; where in 1602, he was made a Fellow, and M. A. and being chosen Lecturer, perform'd with such Exactness, that he grew very famous: was well studied in Metaphysicks, Mathematicks and School Divinity; his Disputations in the University perform'd with such Acuteness of Wit, and profound Learning, that he was chosen by the Chancellor at K. James's first coming to the University, to be one of the Vice-Disputants before him. In the 35th Year of his Age, was ordained [i. e. about 1607] and 2 years after, prefer'd to Broughton in Northamptonshire; applied himself wholly to his Studies and the Ministry; aim'd at the Conversion of souls, and God crown'd his Labours, by making him an Instrument [of converting] many to Righteousness: oft refused Preferment, that he might not be divorced from that Country where his Ministry found such Entertainment and Effect, &c. (*S. Clark.*)

[Both the Persons and Works of these two famous Ministers were highly esteemed by the pious Settlers of New-England.]

Nov. 4. Born to K Charles I. the Princess Mary, at St. James's: (*hs*) who in 1641, May 2, is married to William II. Prince of Orange; and in 1650, Nov. 4, becomes the Mother of William III. afterwards K of England. (*Anderson*)

### III. The most material Events among foreign Nations.

[The War between the Spaniards and Dutch continues, without any Help from the Court of England.]

In Germany.—This being a most critical Year, wherein the Settlers of New-Eng, as well as all Europe, were greatly concerned; I hope the Reader will excuse the following Summary—While Gustavus is with a small Army delivering the Electorate of Brandenburg; the Popish Emperor's old General, Count Tilly, with 21,000 veterane Troops, besieges the most noble, protestant and flourishing City of Magdeburgh, the fairest Ornament in Germany: And by Treachery or Negligence of some, in not duly watching a Gate, early on May 10, his Forces enter; and by his cruel Order set the City in Flames; spare no Rank, Age or Sex: rip up Women with Child, murder sucking Infants before the Eyes of their Mothers, violate the Virgins in the open Streets,  
yea

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

yea the young Girls even to Death ; to avoid which, some of them drown themselves, and others run into the Fire before Tilly's Eyes ; in 24 Hours consume this great and magnificent City, with its 16 Churches and Chapels by Fire, leaving only the Cathedral and 139 poor Cottages standing ; fill all Places with dead Bodies ; so that of 40,000 Citizens in the Morning, scarce 400 escape at Night ; and the Carcasses of the Men, Women and Children thrown into the River to roll into the Sea ; the Popish General boasting, calls this horid Tragedy, The Marriage Feast of Magdeburgh, and in Triumph marches to Saxony, to lay waste that Protestant Electorate also.

Hereupon Gustavus, greatly afflicted, first hastily restores the Protestant Dutchy of Mecklenburgh to its D, unjustly depriv'd thereof by the Emperor ; delivers the Rest of the Protestant Electorate of Brandenburg, driving the Popish Troops away before him ; marches to the Elbe, taking many Towns and Castles by the Way ; builds a Bridge, passes with his little Army of about 8000 over it ; cuts off almost all the Foot of several Regiments Tilly sent to oppose him : forms a strong Camp on the Elb, and reduces divers Garrisons round about. Tilly marching towards him, with 26,000 Veterans ; but 7000 of his advanced Parties being cut off by Stratagem in divers Fights, while the King's main Body being much inferior keep his Camp ; Tilly marches back to finish the Ruin of Saxony. In this Distress the Queen with 8000 Men from Sweden ; and at the End of July, Marquess Hamilton sent by K Charles, with 6000 Foot from G. Britain, land in Pomerania : but the K and Hamilton disagreeing, the latter returns inglorious : and the K, as it seems, leaving the Britons to keep the Garrisons, and taking those few brave Scots and English who had fought under him in Poland, as with the Sweeds to make up 20,000, joins 14,000 Saxons under their Duke, hastens to save their Country : and approaching Leipsick their Capital, on Sept. 6. he with his Army keeps it a Day of Fasting and Prayer to God for Help and Victory. Next Morning Tilly with 44,000 brave Men advances into the Field, presenting his Army in a dreadful Front full 2 Miles in Length to inclose the King's. Tilly's Word was Saint Mary ; but the King's was God with us. The K riding from Regiment to Regiment crying aloud, Come on Comrades, will you fight a Day for the Name of Jesus Christ ! and the Battle joins. In the beginning of which, the K seeing his Men hardly charged, allights from his Horse, and with bended Knees prays to God again for Victory.

Tilly's



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1631	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

Tilly's Veterans quickly make the Saxon Wing to fly and kill 2000 of them; then fall with their main Force on the Sweeds and some brave Scots and English under the K; Tilly crying out, Let us beat the Sweeds too, and then all Germany's our own [i. e. to oppress, to ravish and massacre as we please] and turning even all the Saxon Cannon on the Sweeds; a most terrible Fight ensues (the Fate of the Protestant Religion both in Europe and America now depending) for 5 Hours; until Night comes on; when that formidable Popish Army which for 12 Years together had triumphed over and oppress'd the Protestants, is broken to Pieces; 15,000 of them slain, many Thousands of them wounded; Tilly wounded, flies 20 Miles that Night. Next Day the K pursuing, slays 2000 more; 6000 forsaking the Imperial Side, list under him; by the End of the Month recovers all Saxony: and as he began with Prayer, he Ends with Praise; appointing with the Duke a Day of publick Thanksgiving in the Army, and thro' that Electorate. Then goes on, reduces Franconia, Wateravia and the Palatinates: and in this one Year recovers the middle Parts of Germany from the Baltick Sea, to Ments and Spires on the Rhine: and wherever he comes, restores their Liberties and the Protestant Religion, to their unbounded Joy.

---

1632.

**JAN. 27.** Gov Winthrop and others go by Charles-River, [no doubt a-foot] 8 Miles above Watertown, ascend the highest Hills, and view [the frozen Countries and distant Ranges of Mountains, for 40 or 50 Miles round about.] (*w*)

**Feb. 3.** Court of Assistants at Boston: Present Gov, D. Gov. Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Nowell, Pynchon, S. Bradstreet. Order that L. 60 be levied out of the several Plantations, towards making a Pallisado about the Newtown, viz.

1. Waterton,

1632.	K. of France. Lewis XIII.		K. of Great-Britain. Charles I.		K. of Spain. Philip IV.
1.	Waterton,	L.8	7.	Salem,	L.4 10
2.	The Newtown,	3	8.	Boston,	8
3.	Charlston,	7	9.	Roxbury,	7
4.	Meadford,	3	10.	Dorchester,	7
5.	Sawgus &	} 6	11.	Wessaguscus,	5
6.	Marble-Harbour,		12.	Winesemet.	1 10

L.60 (*Mcr*)

Feb. 17. Gov Winthrop and Assistants, call before them at Boston, divers of Waterton; the Pastor and Elder by Letter, and the others by Warrant. The Occasion was, That a Warrant being sent to Waterton for levying their [abovesaid] L.8 Rate; the Pastor, Elder, &c. assembled the People, and deliver'd their Opinion, that it was not safe to pay [said Tax] for Fear of bringing themselves and Posterity into bondage. The Ground of their Error was, they took this Government to be no other but that of a Mayor and Aldermen, who have not Power to make Laws or raise Taxes without the People: But understanding this Government is rather in the Nature of a Parliament, & that no Assistant could be chosen but by the Freemen; who have likewise Power to remove the Assistants, and put in others; and therefore at every General Court (which is to be held once every Year) they have free Liberty to propound any Thing concerning the same, and to declare their Grievances, without being subject to Question, &c. They are fully satisfied, freely confess they were in an Error, acknowledg their Fault, and make a Recantation and Submission under their Hands; and their Submission is accepted, and their Offence pardoned. (*w*)

Mar. 6. [being Tuesday, and not 5, as Gov Winthrop] Court of Assistants at Boston: Present Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Nowell, Pynchon, S. Bradstreet. (1.) Order, that Courts (which before were every 3 Weeks, (*w*) shall be held every first Tuesday in every Month: (2.) 10 more take their Oath of Freemen, viz. Mr. John Eliot, Jacob Eliot, &c. (*Mcr*)

March

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

March 14. The Bark Warwick, arrives at Natasket, and the 19th at Winesemet : Having been at Pascataquack and Salem, to sell Corn which she brought from Virginia. (*w*)

April 3. Court of Assistants at Boston : Present Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Nowell, Pynchon, S. Bradstreet. (1.) Conant's-Island demised to Gov Winthrop [upon certain Terms] and the Name is changed, and is to be called the Governor's-Garden. (2.) 4 take their Oaths of Freemen, viz.

Mr. John Winthrop, Jun. John Sampeford [or Samford]  
Mr. William Aspinwall, William Hubbert, &c. (*Mcr*)

April 9. The Bark Warwick, and Mr. [S.] Maverick's Pinnace, go out, bound to Virginia, [no doubt for Corn.] (*w*)

'April 12. Gov Winthrop receives Letters from Plimouth, 'signifying that there had been a Broil between their Men 'at Sowams, and the Narraganset Indians, who set upon the 'English House there, to take Onsamequin the Sagamore 'of Pacanacot [since called Bristol] who fled thither with 'all his People, for Refuge ; and that Capt. Standish being 'gone thither to relieve the three English in the House, 'had sent Home in all Haste for more Men and other Pro- 'visions, upon Intelligence that Canonicus with a great 'Army were coming against them ; [intreating] that some 'Powder may be sent with all Speed possible ; for it seems 'they were unfurnished : Upon this Gov Winthrop pre- 'sently dispatches the Messenger, with so much Powder 'as he can carry [doubtless being a Foot, there being no 'Horses in New-England in those Days] viz. L.27 out of 'the Gov's own Store. (*w*)'

'April 11. The Messenger returns, and brings a Letter 'from Gov [Bradford] signifying that the Indians are re- 'tired from Sowams, to fight with the Pequims [or Pe- 'quots] which is probable, because John Sagamore, and 'Chickatabot are gone with all their Men ; John with 30, 'and Chickatabot with to Canonicus, who had sent 'for them. (*w*)'\*

\*[To this agrees the Testimony of divers ancient Indians, inserted in Westerly Records : From which, and other ancient



K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632 Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

ancient Testimonies, it seems (1) That there was War between the Pequots and Narragansets, about 1632: (2) That said War was about the Territory, between Pacatuck-River on the W, and Wecapaug-Brook on the E; about 10 Miles wide, and 15 or 20 long Northerly from the Sea: (3) That Canonicus and Miantenomy chief Sachins of Narraganset, had conquered it many Years before the English had any War with the Pequots: (4) That those 2 Sachims maintained the War of 1632, the former being Uncle to the latter: And that Ninegrad was another Uncle to Miantenomy, but had no Hand in the War: (5) That the War began in 1632, and ended in 1635, or about 2 Years before the War between the Pequots and the English: (6) That Sossoa or Sochso, originally a Pequot, but a Renegado to the Narragansets, was a great Captain in this War, and fought valerously for them; and in 1635, Canonicus and Miantenomy, pretend to give said Tract to him; but he never holds Possession: For (7) the Pequots are now too hard for the Narragansets; and either recover or obtain said Tract and hold it, to the War between the Pequots and the English, in 1637.]

A Ware erected by Watertown-men, on Charles River, 3 Miles above the Town, where they take great Store of Shad. (*w*)

May 1. A Dutch Ship brings from Virginia 2000 Bushels of Corn, which sells at 4s 6d [Sterling] a Bushel. (*w*) [no doubt a joyful Import, tho' it carried their Money away.]

' An Indian brings [to Gov Winthrop] a Letter from Capt Standish, at Sowams, to this Effect; that the Dutch-men (with them, for Trading at Anyganset or Narraganset) had lately informed him, that many Pequims [or Pequots] who are professed Enemies to the Anygansets, had been there divers Days, and advised us to be watchful, &c.

May 8. (*w*) [Tuesday, and not 9, as in *Mer*] General Court at Boston: Present Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Nowell, Pynchon, S. Bradstreet. (1) Generally agreed; that

the

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great-Britain.		K. of Spain.
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

the Gov, D. Gov, and Assistants, shall be chose by the whole Court of Gov, D. Gov, Assistants and Freemen; and that the Gov shall always be chosen out of the Assistants chosen for the Year ensuing: (2) John Winthrop, Esq; chosen Gov, Tho. Dudley, Esq; D. Gov. Mr. Ludlow, Nowell, Pynchon, Bradstreet, Capt. Endicot, John Humfrey, Esq; Mr. Coddington, (because these two are daily expected, *w*) and John Winthrop, Jun. Assistants: (3) Order there shall be two of every Plantation to confer with the Court about raising a publick Stock. (*Mcr*)

Every Town chose Two, (*w*) viz.

1. Mr. Oldham and Mr. Masters, for Watertown.
2. Robert Coles and John Johnson, for Roxbury.
3. Mr. William Colbron and William Cheesbrough, for Boston.
4. Richard Wright, and ———, for Sawgus.
5. Mr. Lockwood and Mr. Spencer, for Newton.
6. Mr. Gibbons and Mr. Palmer, for Charlston.
7. Mr. Conant and Peter Palfrey, for Salem.
8. William Felps and John Gallard, for Dorchester. (*Mcr*)

[Here is no Mention of Wessaguscus, Meadford, Winisemet, nor Marble-harbour.] All Things are carried very lovingly, and the People carry themselves with much Silence and Modesty. (*w*) [And this seems to pave the Way for a House of Representatives in the General Courts.]

Gov [Winthrop] among other Things, us'd this Speech to the People.—That he had received Gratuities from divers Towns, which he receiv'd with much Comfort and Content: He had also received many Kindnesses from particular Persons, which he could not refuse, lest he should be accounted uncourteous, &c. But he professed he received them with a trembling Heart, in Regard to God's Rule, and the consciousness of his own Infirmary; and therefore desired that hereafter they would not take it ill if he [shou'd] refuse Presents from particular Persons, except the Assistants and some special Friends. To which no Answer is made: but he is told after, that many good People were much grieved at it, for that he never had any Allowance toward the Charge of his Place. (*w*)

May

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

May 24. The Fortification on the Corn Hill [I suppose since call'd Fort-Hill] at Boston [now] begins. The 25th, Charlstown Men come and work on the Fortification : Roxbury the next, and Dorchester the next. (*w*)

May 26. The Whale arrives [at Boston] with [the Rev] Mr. Wilson, Mr. [Richard] Dummer, and about 30 Passengers, all in Health ; and of 70 Cowes lost but 2 : she came from Hampton April 8, Mr. Graves Master : (*w*) [and no doubt brings the joyful News of the K of Sweden's wonderful Success in Germany.]

June 5. Court of Assistants at Boston : Present Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Nowell, Pynchon, Ludlow, Winthrop, jun. S. Bradstreet : (1) The Court taking into Consideration the great Mercy of God to the [reformed] Churches in Germany, and [especially] the Palatinate, &c. appoint the 13th of this Month to be kept as a Day of publick Thanksgiving throughout the several Plantations : and (2) agree there shall be a Trucking House in every Plantation, whither the Indians may resort to Trade ; to avoid their coming to several Houses. (*Mc*r.)

June 5. Arrives [at Boston] the William and Francis, Mr. Thomas Master, with about 60 Passengers ; whereof Mr. [Thomas] Weld, and old Mr. [Stephen] Batchelor, being aged 71, with their Families, and many other honest Men : also the Charles of Barstable, with Mr. [Timothy] Hatherly the Merchant, about 20 Passengers, near 80 Cows and 6 Mares ; all safe and in Health : they set sail viz. the William and Francis from London, March 9 ; the Charles from Barstable April 10 ; and they met near Cape-Ann. (*w*) Mr. [Edward] Winslow [of Plimouth] comes in the William and Francis : and Mr. Hatherly comes in the Charles, (*w*) to dwell and plant in the Country. (*br*)

June 12. Arrives [at Boston] the James, Mr. Grant Master ; her Passage near 8 Weeks from London, with 12 Passengers ; and 61 Heifers, and lost 40.

June 13. A Day of Thanksgiving thro' all the Plantations [of the Massachusetts] by publick Authority, for the



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

the Success of the K of Sweden and Protestants in Germany against the Emperor; and for the safe Arrival of all the Ships; they having not lost 1 Person, nor 1 sick among them, (*w*)

‘The French came in a Pinnace to Penobscut, and rifle a Trucking House belonging to [New] Plimouth; carrying thence 300 Weight of Bever & other Goods. (*w*) [of which Gov Bradford gives the Account following:] —This Year their House at Penobscut is robbed by the French in this Manner; while the Master of the House and Part of the Company with him, is come with our Vessel to the Westward to fetch a Supply of Goods bro’t over for us; a small French Ship having a false Scot aboard [I suppose a Papist] goes into the Harbour, pretend they are newly come from Sea, know not where they are, that their Vessel is very leaky, and desire they may hale her ashoar and stop her Leaks, making many French Complements & Congees: and seeing but 3 or 4 simple Men who are Servants, and by the Scotsman understanding the Master and Rest of the Company are gone from Home, fall a commending their Guns and Muskets which lie on the Racks by the Wall-side, take them down to look on them, asking if they are charged? and when possessed of them, one presents a loaded Peece against the Servants, another a Pistol; then bid them not to stir, but deliver their Goods: and make them help in carrying them all aboard, to the Value of *L*.4 or 500 [Sterl.] prime Cost; 300 Weight of Bever; the Rest in trading Goods, as Coats, Rugs, Blankets, Biskets, &c: then set the Servants at Liberty, and go away with this taunting Message; Tell your Master, when he returns, that some of the Isle of Rhee Gentlemen have been here. (*br*) [But Gov Bradford has misplaced this in 1631.]’

June. Abraham Shurd [or Shurt] of Pemaquid, and Capt. Wright and others, coming to Pascataquack, being bound for this Bay [i. e. the Bay within Pullen-Point on the N, and Point Allerton on the S] in a Shallop, with *L*.200 worth

---

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1632	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

of Commodities ; one of the Men going to light a Pipe of Tobacco [near the Powder] being wished by another to forbear, answered, That if the Devil should carry him away quick, he would take one Pipe, set Fire on a Barrel of Powder, which tore the Boat in Pieces : That Man was blown away [and] never seen [till he was some Time] after found, with his Hands and Feet torn off : The Rest all sav'd, but the Goods lost. (*w*)

A Shallop of one Henry Way, of Dorchester, having been missing all the Winter, it was found that the Men in her being 5, were all killed secretly by the Eastern Indians : Another Shallop of his being sent to seek out the other, was cast away at Agamenticus, and 2 of the Men drowned. A Fishing Shallop at Isle of Shoals was overset. And one Noddle an honest Man of Salem, carrying Wood in a Canoe in the South River, was overturn'd and drowned. (*w*)

July. [I suppose Monday the 2d] At a Training at Wattertown, a Man of John Oldham's, having a Musket which had been long charged with Pistol Bullets, not knowing it, gave Fire and Shot 3 Men ; 2 into their Bodies, and 1 into his Head, but so far off, as the Shot enter'd the Skin and stayed there, and they all recovered. (*w*)

July 3. Court at Boston : Present Gov, D Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Pynchon, Winthrop, S. Bradstreet, Mr. Nowell : (1) Order, That the Capt. and other Officers take a special Care to search all Peeces bro't into the Field, for being charged with Shot or Bullets ; and that no Person whatever, shall at any Time charge any Peece of Service with Bullets or Shot, other than for Defence of their Houses, or at Command from the Capt, upon such Penalty as the Court shall think meet to inflict : (2.) A Man fined 40s. [Sterling] and bound to his good Behaviour to the next Court, for his Misdemeanour and Drunkenness aboard the Virginia Ship : (3) 7 take their Oaths of Freeman, viz.

Mr. Nathaniel Turner,	Mr. Samuel Sharp,
John Ruggles,	Mr. John Wilson,
Mr. William Dennison,	&c. ( <i>Mcr</i> )

The

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

The Congregation [i. e. the Church] at Boston, wrote to the Elders and Brethren of the Churches of Plimouth, Salem, &c. for their Advice in 3 Questions; (1) Whether one Person might be a civil Magistrate and a ruling Elder at the same Time? (2) If not, then which should he lay down? (3) Whether there might be divers Pastors in the same Church? The 1st was agreed by all negatively; the 2d and 3d doubtful. (*w*)

After many Days of [Prayer] by those of Boston and Roxbury for [the Rev] Mr. Weld, and the Advice of those of Plimouth being taken, &c. at length he resolves to set down with those of Roxbury. (*w*)\*

\* [By which I perceive, he is the first Minister and Pastor of the People of Roxbury: but when the Church is formed, I have not yet discover'd. Only in Roxbury Church Records, I find the first 17 Members are all Males, and distinguish'd from those which follow in this Order: (1) Mr. William Pyncheon, (2) Mr. Tho. Weld, (3) Wm. Dennison, (4) Tho. Lamb, (5) Sam. Wakeman, (6) Wm. Parke, &c. Which 17 seem to be the first constituting Members; and about this Time, viz. in July 1632, to form the Church, & invest the said Rev. Mr. Weld in the Pastoral Office over them. After which are added the Names of 17 Women, and 13 Men, as joining to said Church, before the Name of Mr. Elliot is inserted: who till Nov. continues his Relation to the Church in Boston (See Nov.) And Roxbury Church Records tells us, that) the People at Roxbury [had] joined to the Church at Dorchester, till God should give them an Opportunity to be a Church themselves: And Mr. George Alcock, who came in 1630, and liv'd in a godly Sort, was by Dorchester Church chosen a Deacon, especially to regard the Brethren of Roxbury; and after he joins to Roxbury Church, is ordained their Deacon. (*rcr*)

Aug. 3, [not 5, as Mr. S. Danforth, and Mr. Hubbard] The Sachim (who is join'd with Canonicus the great Sachim of Narraganset) called Mecumeh, after Miantonomeh, comes to Boston, with his Squaw, and about 12 Sanups. Aug. 5, [Lord's-day] Being present at the Sermon, 3 of his Sanups go in the mean Time, and brake into a Neighbour's House, &c. Complaint being made thereof to Gov. [Winthrop];



## Corrections.

- P**AGE 1. under Sept. 28.—Read—(1) that no Person permit  
 (2) that no Person give  
 (3) that £50 be levied  
 [after called Weymouth.]
4. Line 25. Read—Roger Williams a Minister ; who goes (1) to Salem,  
 (2) to Plimouth, (3) to Salem again, (4) to Providence.
6. Under Nov. 9.—Read - - (1) that every Englishman  
 (2) whoever will first give  
 Under Nov. 30.—Read - - (1) one of the Assistants  
 (2) order'd that a Man  
 (3) that £. 60 be collected
16. Under Article IV—insert  
 April 11. Sixteen Popish Priests are released out of the Clink [Prison in Southwark] by one Warrant under the King's own Sign Manual, at the Instance of our dearest Consort the Queen, as the K in his Warrant writes ; and July 26, by the like Warrant and Instance 6 Priests and Jesuits more releas'd out of the same Prison : But no Instance known of his releasing 1 Puritan out of Prison all his Reign. (Prynn)  
 Nov. (*ld*) Dr. Leighton  
 Dec. 3. James Nowell writes from London—Sir Thomas Wentworth was made Vicount with a great deal of high Ceremony, on a Sunday at White-Hall. [So little Regard had K Charles for the Lord's Day.]
17. Line 12. Read—on June 24 NS, in the 36th Year of his Age, with an Army of about 12,000 Foot and 3,000 Horse, some say but 11,000 in all, lands  
 Line 20. Read—June 24, Rex Sueciæ.  
 Line 23. Read—Words above. In 12 Days reduces the Isles of Rugen, Usedom and Wollin : in 8 Days more takes many Cities, defeats many Enemies : and in 8 Months, taking 80 Castles, small Forts, Towns and Cities, reduces the Provinces of Newmark and Pomerania. (See Alsted, Cluverius, and S. Clark)
31. Next to the Article of July 6—insert this Article—  
 ' [About this Time, as I judge from Gov. Bradford's History, the Plim-  
 ' outh Undertakers send Mr. Edward Winslow to England, to discharge  
 ' Mr. Allerton from being their Agent, for acting contrary to their In-  
 ' structions.'  
 Under July 14—For Natasket ;—read Boston ;  
 Read—5 Sheep (*w*) Mr. Timothy Hatherly first comes in her. (*br*)
32. Under July 30—Read—falls down (*w*) with Mr. Allerton and Hatherly (*br*)  
 Under Aug. 8.—For Jones—Read—James
56. Line 19,—Read Palatinate :
58. Under April 12,—Read—Ousamequin.



**ANNALS**  
**OF**  
**NEW-ENGLAND.**

---

BY THOMAS PRINCE, M. A.

---

VOL. II. NUMB. II.

---

CICERO, De Oratore.

Nescire quid antea quam natus sis acciderit, id semper est esse Puerum.

i. e.

Not to know what came to pass before you were Born, is always to remain a Child

---

BOSTON:

PRINTED BY B. EDES AND J. GILL, IN KINGSTREET, FOR S. KNEELAND IN  
QUEEN-STREET, AND FOR J. AND T. LEVERETT IN CORNHILL.

(Price Six Pence Lawful Money each Number.)



## EXPLANATIONS.

N. B. (1.) **T**HE Articles of Plymouth Colony are mark'd by single Comma's ; and of Connecticut and other Governments, by double Comma's.

(2.) The Monies in this 2d Section, are yet accounted Sterling.

(3.) As we are now about Foundations, we propose to be larger in these 10 Years, viz. from 1630, to 1640, than others.

(4.) Our Marks of Reference are These,

At the Top of the Page—||, Peace ; †, War.

*b*, Beginning ; *m*, Middle ; *e*, End, of a Month.

*bcr*, Boston Church Records, in Mss.

*bp*, Book of Patents, in Mss.

*btr*, Boston Town Records, in Mss.

*br*, Gov Bradford's History, in Mss.

*c*, Capt Clapp's Memoirs.

*cb*, Continuation of Sir R. Baker.

*Ccr*, Connecticut Colony Records, in Mss.

*cm*, Dr. Cotton Mather.

*ctr*, Charlestown Records, in Mss.

*d*, D. Gov Dudley's Letter to the Countess of Lincoln.

*fl*, Fuller's Church History of Britain.

*g*, Ferdinando Georges, Esq ; History of New-England.

*h*, Rev. Mr. William Hubbard's History of New-England, in Mss.

*hc*, Harvard College Records, in Mss.

*hcr*, Hingham Church Records, in Mss.

*hs*, Howes Annals of England.

*j*, Capt. Johnson's History of New-England.

*im*, Dr. Increase Mather.

*ld*, Bp Laud's Diary.

*lt*, Bp Laud's Tryal.

*mo*, Mr. Morton Secretary of Plymouth Colony's Memorial.

*Mcr*, Massachusetts Colony Records, in Mss.

*ml*, Manuscript Letter.

*mss*, Manuscript.

*Ncr*, New-Haven Colony Records in Mss.

*Pcr*, Plymouth Colony Records, in Mss.

*pn*, Pointer's Chronological Historian.

*rcr*, Roxbury Church Records, in Mss.

*Rr*, Rhode-Island Colony Records, in Mss.

*s*, Salmon's Chronological Historian.

*sd*, Rev. Mr. Samuel Danforth.

*w*, Gov Winthrop's Journal, in Mss.

The other Marks are Common—as,

E, East ; W, West ; N, North ; S, South ; N E, North East, &c.

D, Duke ; K, King ; L, Lord ; P, Prince ; Q, Queen ; Gov, Governor ; D. Gov, Deputy Governor ; Eng, England ; N. Eng, New-England : &c.

N. B. (1.) **I**N the 2d Section, and thence forward we set the chief Stage of our Annals at Boston.

(2.) The Articles of Plymouth Colony we shall distinguish by single Comma's ; and of Connecticut and New-Haven Colonies by double Comma's.

(3.) The Monies in this 2d Section are yet accounted Sterl.

(4.) As we are now about Foundations, we propose to be larger in these 2 Years 1630, and 1631, than others.

(6.) Our Marks of Reference are These,

At the Top of the Page—||, Peace ; †, War.

*b*, Beginning ; *m*, Middle ; *e*, End, of a Month.

*bcr*, Boston Church Records, in Mss.

*bp*, Book of Patents, in Mss.

*btr*, Boston Town Records, in Mss.

*br*, Gov Bradford's History, in Mss.

*c*, Capt. Clapp's Memoirs.

*ccr*, Connecticut Colony Records, in Mss.

*ctr*, Charlestown Records, in Mss.

*d*, D. Gov Dudley's Letter to the Countess of Lincoln.

*fl*, Fuller's Church History of Britain.

*g*, Ferdinando Gorges, Esq ; History of New-England.

*h*, Rev. Mr. William Hubbard's History of New-Eng, in Mss.

*hc*, Harvard College Records, in Mss.

*hcr*, Hingham Church Records, in Mss.

*hs*, Howes Annals of England.

*j*, Capt. Johnson's History of New-England.

*im*, Dr. Increase Mather.

*mo*, Mr. Morton Secretary of Plymouth Colony's Memorial.

*mcr*, Massachusetts Colony Records, in Mss.

*ml*, Manuscript Letter.

*mss*, Manuscript.

*ncr*, New-Haven Colony Records, in Mss.

*pcr*, Plymouth Colony Records, in Mss.

*pn*, Pointer's Chronological Historian.

*rcr*, Roxbury Church Records, in Mss.

*rr*, Rhode-Island Colony Records, in Mss.

*s*, Salmon's Chronological Historian.

*sd*, Rev. Mr. Samuel Danforth.

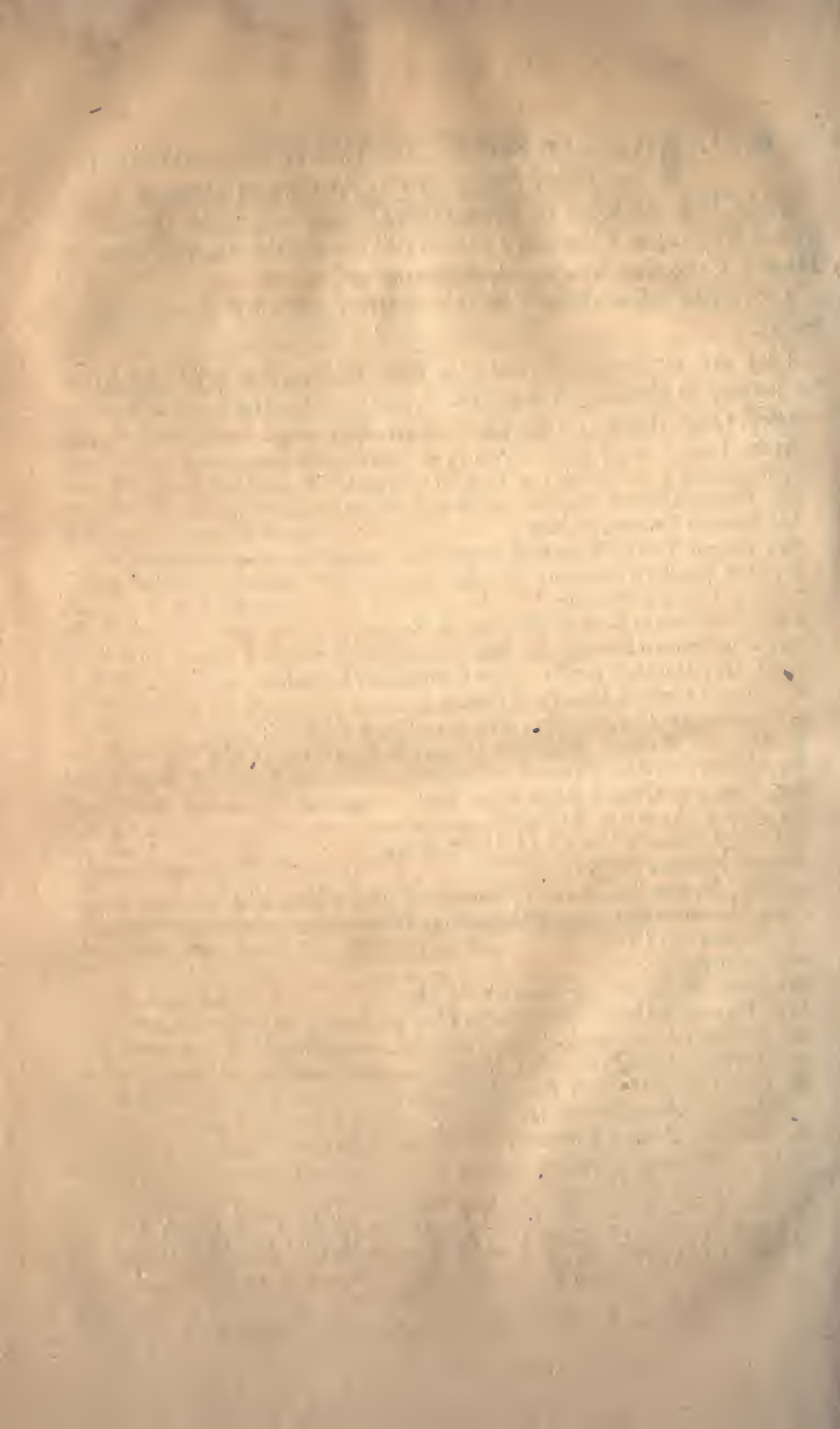
*w*, Gov Winthrop's Journal, in Mss.

The other Marks are Common—as,

E, East ; W, West ; N, North ; S, South ; N E, North East, &c.

D, Duke ; E, Earl ; L, Lord ; P, Prince ; Q, Queen ; Gov, Governor ;

D. Gov, Deputy Governor ; &c.





# ANNALS

OF

## NEW-ENGLAND.

BY THOMAS PRINCE, M. A.

VOL. II. NUMB. III.

DEUT. I. 6, 7, 8, 19, 20, 21. The LORD our God spake unto us, saying—Take your Journey and go to the Mount of the Amorites, and to all the Places nigh thereto, in the Plain, in the Hills, in the Vale, in the South, and by the Sea-side to the Land of the Canaanites, and unto Lebanon, unto the great River, the River Euphrates: Behold, I have set the Land before you: Go in and possess the Land.—And we went through all that great and terrible Wilderness, which you saw by the Way of the Mountain of the Amorites, as the LORD our God commanded us.—And—ye are come to the Mountain of the Amorites, which the LORD our God doth give us: Behold the LORD thy God hath set the Land before Thee: Go up and possess it, as the LORD God of thy Fathers hath said unto Thee: Fear not, neither be discouraged!

BOSTON:

PRINTED BY B. EDES AND J. GILL, IN KINGSTREET, FOR S. KNEELAND IN  
QUEEN-STREET, AND FOR J. AND T. LEVERETT IN CORNHILL.

(Price Six Pence Lawful Money each Number.)

10 VOL. VII.

## *Corrections.*

**N**o. 1. p. 13. l last but 7, &c.—r—who, as Munday in his Chronicle records, was L Mayor of London in 1597, who was Son

l last but 4,—r—Patentees

l last but 1, &c.—r—Undertakers; the 1st Founder of the Town, and 1st Member of the Congregational Church

No. 2. p. 59, l last but 2—r—May 8, (*w*) [Tuesday: rather 9, Wednesday,

No. 3. p. 83. l last but 10—r—pursue Him :

p. 84. l 8—r—Preparation made

p. 86. l 9—r—Provision.

15—r—have Meal, Water and Salt

16—for (*cc*)—r—(*c*)

22, 23—r—[after, called Ipswich]

## *Further Explanations of Letters.*

*Cc*, Connecticut Colony.

*ih*, James Howell's Letters.

*Mb*, Massachusetts Bay.

*Mc*, Massachusetts Colony.

*N. E.* New England.

*Pc*, Plymouth Colony.

*Rc*, Rhode-Island Colony.

*sc*, Joshua Scottow, Esq; in Mss.

## *Advertisement.*

Wanting yet Accounts of these ancient Towns, viz.

{	Newtown,	Woburn,	{	in the Massachusetts.
{	Groton,	Dunstable,	{	
{	Chelmsford,	Manchester,	{	
{	Billerica,		{	

{	Saybrook,	Fairfield,	{	in Connecticut,
{	New-Haven,	Stamford,	{	

Bristol ————— in Plymouth Patent :

The Rev. Ministers, or other Gentlemen of those Towns, are earnestly intreated, to enquire of their Records, Grave-Stones, and ancient People; and send the Remarkables of their History, from the Beginning, in a Chronological Order, to the Compiler of these Annals, with all convenient Expedition.

*N. B.* See the Articles at the End of this Cover.

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

throp]; after Evening Exercise, he tells the Sachim of it; and with some Difficulty causes him to make one of his Sanups to beat them, and then sends them out of Town: but brings the Sachim and the Rest of [his] Company to his House, and makes much of him (as he had done before) which he seems to be well pleased with; but this Evening he departeth. (*w*)

At a Court not long before, two of Chickatabut's Men were convented and convicted for assaulting some English at Dorchester in their Houses, &c. were put in the Bilboes; and Chickatabut requir'd to beat them, which he did. (*w*)

The Congregation of Boston and Charlestown begin the Meeting House at Boston: for which and Mr. Wilson's House, they had made a voluntary Contribution of about *l*.120. (*w*)

Aug. 7. Court at Boston: Present [same as June 5.] (1) On further Consideration of Justice to be done upon the Murther of Walter Bagnal, and on reading a Letter from those of Plimouth in Answer to a Letter sent to them about it; order that a Boat be sent sufficiently mann'd with Commission to deal with the Plantation to the Eastward, and to join with such of them as shall be willing thereto, for Examination of the Murder of said Bagnal, and for apprehending such as shall be found guilty thereof, and to bring the Prisoners into the Bay: refer'd to the Gov to take Order therein: (2) Mr. William Pynchon chosen Treasurer for the Year ensuing, and till a new be chosen: (3) four take their Oath of Freemen, viz.

Samuel Wakeman, &c. (*Mcr*)

Aug 14. This Summer is very wet and cold, (except now and then a hot Day or two) which causes great Store of Musketoos and Rattlesnakes. The Corn in dry sandy Ground is much better than other Years, but in the fatter Grounds much worse; and in Boston, &c, much shorn down close by the Ground with Worms. (*w*) The Summer proving short and wet; our Crops of Indian Corn  
(for



---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

(for we have no other) are very small, and great Want threatens us. (*ctr*)

Mr. Oldham has a small House at Watertown made all of Clapboard, burnt down. (*w*)

The Braintree Company (which had begun to set down at Mount-Wollaston) by Order of Court removes to New-town : These are Mr. Hooker's Company. (*w*)

Aug. 20. Gov. [Winthrop]'s Wife deliver'd of a Son, who is (on Aug. 26. *bcr*) baptiz'd by the name of William ; the Gov himself holds the child to Baptism, as others in the Congregation did use. (*w*)

Aug. 30. Notice being given of 10 Sagamores and many Indians assembling at Muddy River, Gov [Winthrop] sends Capt. Underhill with 20 Musketeers to discover &c: but at Roxbury they hear they are broke up. (*w*)

Sept. 4. Court at Boston : Present Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Capt. Endicot, Mr. Treasurer [Pynchon] Nowell, Winthrop, [jun] S. Bradstreet ; (1) Sagamore John, &c, promise the next Year, and for ever after, to fence their Corn against all Kind of Cattle : (2) Order a Man to be severely whipt for Cursing, Swearing, justifying the same and glorying in it ; [and (3) another] Man to be whipt and branded with a hot Iron on one of his Cheeks for selling (*Mcr*) a Peece, a Pistol with Powder and shot to James Sagamore. (*w*)

By the Mediation of the Rev. Mr. Maverick, Warham and Wilson ; Gov Winthrop and D. Gov Dudley [are now happily reconciled.] Notwithstanding the Heat of Contention which had been between them ; yet they usually met about their Affairs, and that without any Appearance of any Breach or Discontent : and ever after keep Peace and good Correspondence together in Love and Friendship. (*w*)

One Jenkins late [of] Dorchester, [since] remov'd to Cape Porpus, went with an Indian up into the Countrey with Store of Goods to truck : and being asleep in a

Wigwam

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

Wigwam of one of Passaconomy's Men, was kill'd in the Night by an Indian dwelling near the Mohok Country. (*w*)

In Autumn 1632, the Indians, who had all this Time held good Correspondency with the English, begin to quarrel with us [in the Massachusetts] about their Bounds of Land, [tho'] we purchas'd all we have of them : But the LORD [soon] puts an End to this Quarrel, by smiting the Indians with a sore Disease, even the Small-Pox ; of which great Numbers of them Die (*j*) [at the End of 1633 ; which see.]

There is much Suspicion that the Indians have some Plot against the English, both for that many Narragansets &c, gather together, who with [others] of these Parts pretend to make War with the Nipnets, and divers insolent Speeches are used by some of them, and they do not frequent our Houses as they were wont ; and one of their Powaws tells us that there is a Conspiracy to cut us off ; Upon this a Camp is pitched at Boston ; in the Night to exercise the Soldiers, apprehending Need might be : and Capt. Underhill, to try how they would behave themselves, causes an Alarm to be given upon their Quarters ; which discovers the Weakness of our People, who know not how to behave themselves : [not being us'd to Military Discipline :] all the rest of the Plantations take the Alarm and answer it : but it raises many Fears and Distractions among the common Sort : and we keep Watch both Day and Night. (*w*)

Sept. 14. The Rumours still increasing, the three next Sagamores are sent for, who come presently to the Gov (*w*) at [Boston]

Sept. 16. Being Lord's-Day Evening, Mr. Peirce in the Ship Lyon arrives [at] Boston : brings 123 Passengers, whereof 50 Children all in Health, and lost not one by the Way save the Carpenter who fell overboard as he was calking a Port : had been 12 Weeks aboard, and 8 from the Land's End. (*w*)

Sept.

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

Sept. 22. The Bastable Ship [which had arriv'd on June 5.] goes out at Pullen-Point to Marble Harbour. (*w*)

Sept. 27. A Day of Thanksgiving at Boston for the good News of the prosperous Success of the K of Sweden, &c, and for the safe Arrival of the last Ship, and all the Passengers. (*w*)

Oct. 3. [rather Tuesday, Oct. 2; see March 6. last] Court at Boston : Present [same as Sept. 4.] (1) Mr. Bachelor [of Lynn] is required to forbare exercising his Gifts, as a Pastor or Teacher publickly in our Patent, unless it be to those he bro't with him, for Contempt of Authority, and till some Scandals be removed : \* (2) It is tho't by general Consent, that Boston is the fittest Place for Publick Meetings of any in the Bay : (3) Order, there be a House of Correction, and a House for the Beadle built at Boston, with Speed : (4) that a Man for Theft on the Indians at Damaril's-Cove, for Drunkenness and Fornication, be fined *l*.5. [Sterling] to the Court ; *l*.10. to Henry Way and John Holman ; severely whipt, branded on the Hand with a hot Iron, and banish'd out of this Patent, with Penalty that if he be ever found within [it] he shall be put to Death : (5) that no Person shall take any Tobacco publickly, and that every one shall pay a Penny [Sterling] for every Time of taking Tobacco in any Place : (6) one takes his Oath of Freeman, viz. Mr. Samuel Maverick. [*Mcr*]

\* [The R Mr. Bachelor arriving with the R Mr. Welde, and about 60 Passengers on June 5, last ; and Capt. Johnson telling us, that the Church at Lynn was gather'd next after the Church at Roxbury, and that Mr. Bachelor was the 1st Feeder of the Flock at Lynn ; and this Court Record representing Mr. Bachelor as having exercis'd his Gifts as Pastor or Teacher before Oct. 2 ;—All make me think that the People he bro't with him set down at Lynn, and about Aug. form'd into a Church and entertain'd him as their Minister, to whom he seems to have been long before in a Ministerial Relation in England, being 71 Years old.]

[Oct. 10. From July 30. 1630, to this Day, 151 Members had join'd in full Communion with the Church  
which



K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1632 Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

which began at Charlestown, and mostly remov'd to Boston; some of the chief of whom were these—in Order—]

1 John Winthrop, Gov.	Ruling Elder of the S. Ch.]
2 Thomas Dudley, D. Gov. ; [and after Gov.]	‡66 Edward Converse
3 Isaac Johnson, [Assist.]	77 Edward Bendal
4 John Wilson, [Pastor]	‡79 Richard Sprague
‡5 Increase Nowell, [Assist. and Ruling Elder]	92 William Coddington, [Assist. and after 1st Gov. of Rc.]
6 Thomas Sharp, [Assist.]	101 Thomas Fayrweather
7 Simon Bradstreet, [Assist.: and after Gov.]	‡102 Ralph Sprague
8 William Gager, [Surgeon and first Deacon]	110 John Eliot, [Minister]
9. William Colburn, [after Ruling Elder]	113 Edward Gibbons, [after Ma- jor Gen.]
10 William Aspinwall, [after 1st Sec. of Rc.]	114 Jacob Eliot, [after Elder]
‡18 Robert Hale	115 John Sampford [or Sanford, after Sec. and Treas. of Rc.]
31 James Penn, [after Ruling El.]	121 John Winthrop, jun. [after As- sist.: und 1st Gov. of Cc.]
38 William Balston	129 John Ruggles
44 William Cheesbrough	132 Thomas Oliver, [after Ruling Elder]
48 Henry Bright, [suppose a Min- ister who went back]	135 John Willis
52 Thomas Hutchinson	145 Giles Firman, jun. [or Firmin, after Minister in England]
‡53 George Hutchinson	‡149 Thomas James, [Minister]
57 John Underhill, [Capt.]	151 William Pierce, Capt. of the Lyon, and Ancestor of the R
60 Edmund Belcher	Mr. James Pierce, of Camb.
62 Edward Rainsford, [after	and Exeter in Eng.] (bcr)

Oct. 11. [Thursday] 18 Men and 15 Women, of whom are Mr. Increase Nowell and Mr. Thomas James, with those marked thus ‡ in the List above, and others, all of the Church 1st [form'd] at Charlestown; [but since Aug. 1630] chiefly remov'd to Boston; in Regard of the Difficulties of Passage [over the Ferry] in the Winter, and having Opportunity of a Pastor [viz.] Mr. James, who came over at this Time; (*w*) desiring a Dismission from the said Church at Boston, in order to form a new Church at Charlestown; the whole Church this Day solemnly seek to God for

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

for Direction in this Matter : and the Lord's-Day following [i. e. Oct. 14.] the said 33 Petitioners are accordingly dismissed. (*bcr*) [And I conclude that Lord's-Day the 21 of this Month is the 1st Day of their Worshipping in Publick as a distinct and new Congregation at Charles-town, and that the Rev. Mr. Thomas James then preaches to them constantly. See Nov. 2.]

Between this and Sept. 8. 1633, there are admitted into the Church at Boston 13 more of whom are John Pember-ton, John Oliver, Giles Firman [or Firmin] Senior. (*bcr*)

Oct. 18. Capt. Camock and Mr. Vesey a Merchant come from Piscataqua in Mr. Neal's Pinace, and bring 16 Hog-heads of Corn to the [Wind-] Mill at Boston ; they go away in November—(*w*)

Oct. 25. [Thursday] Gov [Winthrop] with Mr. Wilson Pastor of Boston, and the 2 Captains, &c, go aboard the Lyon ; and thence Mr. Peirce carries them in his Shallop to Wessagusset : next Morning Mr. Peirce returns to his Ship ; and the Gov and his Company go a Foot to Plim-outh, and come thither within the Evening. The Gov of Plimouth, Mr. William Bradford (a very discreet and grave Man) with Mr. Brewster the [Ruling-] Elder, and some others come forth and meet us without the Town, and conduct us to the Gov's House, where we are together entertained ; and feasted every Day at several Houses. —On Lord's-Day is a Sacrament, which we partake in : and in the Afternoon Mr. Roger Williams (according to their Custom) proposes a Question, to which the Pastor Mr. Smith speaks briefly : then Mr. Williams prophesies [or explains] and after, the Gov of Plimouth [who had studied the Hebrew Language and Antiquities] speaks to the Question ; after him the Elder [a Man of Learning] then 2 or 3 more of the Congregation ; then the Elder [agreable to Acts xiii. 14, 15, &c.] desires Gov [Winthrop] and Mr. Wilson to speak to it, which they do : when this is ended, the Deacon Mr. Fuller puts the Congregation in Mind of their Duty of Contribution ; whereupon the Gov  
and

---

K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632 Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

and all the Rest go down to the Deacon's Seat, and put it in the Bag, and then return. (*w*)\*

\* [N. B. This religious Exercise in Publick, they had (under the Conduct of Mr. Robinson at Leyden) grounded on the primitive Practice of the Church of Corinth, as described and regulated by the Apostle Paul in 1 Cor. xii and xiv: But growing in Knowledge, and I suppose in the Apprehension that such a Practice was peculiarly accommodate to the age of Inspiration (1 Cor. xiv. 30) which they never pretended to; they, after, gradually lay it down.]

Oct. 27. Mr. Pierce sets sail for Virginia. (*w*)

Oct. 31. Being Wednesday, about 5 in the Morning Gov Winthrop and Company, come out of Plimoth: the Gov of Plimouth with the Pastor, &c. accompany us near half a Mile out of Town in the dark: Lt. Holmes with others come with us to the Great Swamp about 10 Miles: when we come to the Great River, [I suppose, after, call'd North-River, between Pembroke and Hannover] we are carried over by one Ludham, as we had been when we [went]: So we come this Evening to Wessagusset; where we are comfortably entertained as before, with Store of Turkies, Geese, Ducks, &c. and next Day come safe to Boston. (*w*)

About this Time, Mr. Dudley's House at Newtown and all his Family are preserv'd from being destroy'd by Gunpowder, by a marvelous Deliverance: the Hearth of the Hall Chimney burning all Night on a principal Beam, and Store of Gunpowder being near, and not discern'd till they rise in the Morning, and then it begins to flame out. (*w*)

Nov. 2. [Friday] Mr. Increase Nowell, Mr. Thomas James and other Church-Members at Charlestown, who had been dismissed from the Church at Boston, now] embody into a [new] distinct Congregational] Church, enter into Covenant; and [the said] Mr. James is elected and ordain'd [their] Pastor. (*ml*)

\* Their



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

\* [Their Church Covenant is in these Terms—] ‘In the Name of our Lord God, and in Obedience to his holy Will and divine Ordinance; we whose Names are here written, being by his most wise and good Providence, bro’t together, and desirous to unite ourselves into one Congregation or Church under our Lord Jesus Christ our Head, in such Sort as becometh all those whom He hath redeemed and sanctified unto Himself; Do here, solemnly and religiously, as in his most holy Presence, promise and bind ourselves, to walk in all our Ways according to the Rules of the Gospel, and in all sincere Conformity to his holy Ordinances, and in mutual Love and Respect to each other, so near as God shall give us Grace.’

INCREASE NOWELL [and 18 more] (*ml*)

Mr. John Eliot a Member of Boston Congregation, and one whom the Congregation intended presently to call to the Office of Teacher, was call’d to be a Teacher to the Church at Roxbury; and tho’ Boston laboured all they could, both with the Congregation of Roxbury, and with Mr. Eliot himself, alledging their Want of Him and the Covenant between Him and them; yet he could not be diverted from accepting the Call of Roxbury: so Nov. 5, He was dismiss’d to [them] (*w*) ||

|| [The Roxbury Church Records say]—By that Time the Church at Boston was intended to call Him to Office, his Friends were come over [tis likely among those 123 who arriv’d on Sept. 16] and settled at Roxbury, to whom he was foreingaged that if he were not call’d to Office before they came, He was to join with them: whereupon the Church at Roxbury call’d Him to be Teacher in the End of the Summer [1632] and soon after was ordain’d to that Office in the Church: his intended Wife also coming with the Rest of his Friends, they were soon after their coming married, viz. in Oct. 1632. (*rcr*) [But he is not ordain’d their Teacher till Nov. 5—perhaps on Friday, Nov. 9.]

Nov. 6. [Tuesday] 18 take their Oath of Freemen, viz.

- |                       |                          |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|
| 1 Mr. Thomas Weld,    | 5 Mr. Thomas Oliver,     |
| 2 Mr. Thomas James,   | 6 John Talcot,           |
| 3 Mr. John Coggeshal, | 7 William Wadsworth, &c. |
| 4 Mr. Richard Dummer, | ( <i>Mcr</i> )           |

Nov. 7. Court at Boston: Present [same as June 5]  
(1) Order’d that the Captains shall train their Companies but

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

but once a Month : (2) that Sir R Saltonstall shall give Saggamore John, a Hogshead of Corn, for the Hurt his Cattle did his Corn : (3) that the Neck of Land between Powder-Hill and Pullen-Point, shall belong to Boston, to be enjoy'd by the Inhabitants thereof for ever. (*Mcr*)

Nov. 21. Gov Winthrop receives a Letter from Capt. Neal ; that Dixy Bull and 15 more of the English who kept about the East are turned Pirates, had taken divers Boats, and rifled Pemaquid : hereupon the Gov calls a Council, and tis agreed to send his Bark with 20 Men to join with those of Piscataqua [to] take said Pirate : But Snow, Frost, and contrary Winds prevent them. (*w*) [The first Pirates on the Coast of N. E.]

Nov. 22. A Fast held by the Congregation of Boston : and Mr. Wilson formerly their Teacher is chosen Pastor, and [Mr. Thomas] Oliver a Ruling Elder, and are both ordain'd by Imposition of Hands : first by the Teacher and the 2 Deacons (in the Name of the Congregation) upon the Elder ; and then by the Elder and the Deacons upon the Pastor. (*w*)

Dec. By Letters from Capt. Neal, Mr. Hilton, &c. [of Piscataqua] it is certified, that they had sent out all the Forces they could make against the Pirates ; viz. 4 Pin-naces and Shallops, and 40 Men, who coming to Pemaquid, were there Wind-bound three Weeks. (*w*)\*

\* It is further advertised by some who came from Penobscut ; that the Pirates lost one of their chief Men by a Musket shot from Pemaquid, and that there remain'd but 15, whereof 4 or 5 were detain'd against their Wills ; that they had been at some English Plantations and taken nothing but what they paid for ; had given another Pinnace in Exchange for that of Mr. Maverick, and as much Bever and Otter as it was worth more ; had made a law against excessive Drinking ; that their Order was, at such Times as other Ships use to have Prayer, they would assemble on the Deck, and one sing a Song or speak a few senseless Sentences : they also send a Writing to all the Governours, signifying their Intent not to do Harm to any more of their Countrymen, but to go to the Southward, and advise them not to send against them, for they were resolved to sink themselves rather than be taken : signed, Fortune le Garr, and no Name to it. (*w*)

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

*Articles of uncertain and various Dates.*

‘[In the Spring of 1632] Mr. Allerton [being in Eng-land] hires on his own Account of Mr. Sherley, The ‘White-Angel again, comes late into the Country, sets up ‘a Company to run into the River of Kennebeck, to glean ‘away the ‘Trade from the House there [I suppose at Cusshenock above Cobbiseconte] about the Patent and Privilege whereof he had dash’d away so much Money : Yea, ‘being depriv’d of Ashley, joins with some Consorts, and ‘sets up a Trading-House beyond Penobscut, to cut off ‘the Trade from thence also : But the French perceiving ‘that would be greatly to their Damage likewise, come ‘in their beginning, before they are well settled, and dis-plant them, slay two of their Men, take all the Goods to ‘a great Value, send the Rest of their Men into France : ‘And this is the End of that Project. (br) ‡

‡ Gov Bradford has misplaced all this in 1631. But ‘tho’ Mr. Allerton ‘seems to have set up his new Trading House in the Summer of 1632 ; ‘yet it seems to be the Summer of 1633, when the French take it. (See ‘Nov. 12. 1633.)’

‘This Year 1632, the People of [Plimouth] begin to ‘grow in their outward Estates, by the flowing of many ‘People into the Country, especially into the Me : By ‘which Means Cattle and Corn rise to a great Price, ‘Goods grow plentiful, and many are enriched. And ‘now their Stocks encreasing, the Increase vendible ; there ‘is no longer holding them together. They must go to ‘their great Lots : they can no otherwise keep their Cattle : ‘and having Oxen grown, they must have more Land ‘for Plowing and Tillage. By this Means they scatter ‘round the Bay [of Plimouth] quickly, and the Town ‘wherein they liv’d till now compactly, is soon left very ‘thin, and in a short Time almost desolate. The Church ‘also comes to be divided : and those who had lived so ‘long together in Christian and comfortable Fellowship, ‘must now part. 1st, Those who live on their Lots on the ‘other Side the Bay, call’d Duxberry, can no longer bring ‘their



	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

‘their Families to the publick Worship at Plimouth, growing to a competent Number, and suing to be dismiss’d, are about this Time dismiss’d, tho’ very unwillingly, and become a Body of themselves. (br) [So that Duxberry seems to be the 2d Town and Church in *Pc*: and the next town settled after Newtown, i. e. Cambridge, in N. E.

‘To prevent any further scattering from Plymouth, and weakening of the same; it is thought best to give out some good Farms to special Persons that would promise to live at Plimouth, and likely to be helpful to the Church or Common-wealth: and so tye the Lands to Plimouth as Farms for the same; and there they might keep their Cattle and Tillage by Servants, and retain their Dwellings here: and so some Lands are granted at a Place called Green’s-Harbour, where no Allotments had been, a Place very well medowed, and fit to keep and rear Cattle good Store.’ (br) [This seems to be the Beginning of Marshfield.]

‘This Year the General Court of *Pc* make an Extraordinary Act; That whoever refuses the Office of Governor, shall pay *L*.20 Sterling, unless he were chose two Years going; and whoever refuses the Office of Counsellor or Magistrate, *L*.10 Sterling. (ml)

This Year is built the 1st House for publick Worship at Newtown, [after called Cambridge] with a Bell upon it. (ml)

And Capt. Johnson says---] ‘This Year, was the 1st Choice of Magistrates by Freemen; whose Number was now increased 53, or thereabouts.’ (j) [By which he means, the Choice of Magistrates in the *Mc* at the General Court on May 9, last; But by Number of Freemen he means those who were added this whole Year 1632, beginning the Year with March 25, which are 53; whereas beginning the Year with Jan. 1, as is the Way of our Annals, their Number added this Year is but 44, as we have accounted already, from the *Mc*r.]

This Year of sad Distresses ends with a terrible cold Winter; with Weekly Snows, and fierce Frosts between, congealing

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

gealing Charles-River, as well from the Town towards the Sea, as above ; so that Men may frequently pass from one Island to another on the ice. (*j*)

---

#### APPENDIX TO 1632.

##### I. ACCOUNT of the three Ministers who arriv'd this Year.

###### 1. The Rev. Mr. Stephen Bachilor.

[From Gov. Winslow and Capt. Johnson we learn—That] He was an ancient Minister in England ; had been a Man of Fame in his Day ; was 71 Years of Age when he came over ; bro't a Number of People with him ; and soon became the 1st Feeder of the Flock of Christ at Lynn. [And by several original Letters I have seen of his own Writing to the R. Mr. Cotton of Boston, I find he was a Gentleman of Learning and Ingenuity, and wrote a fine and curious Hand.]

###### 2. The Rev. Mr. Thomas Weld.

[From Capt. Johnson and Dr. E. Calamy, we learn]—That he was born and educated in England : had been minister of Terling in Essex ; but not submitting to the Ceremonies, the Place was too hot for him, and he was forc'd to quit it and come over to N E : that upon his Arrival, the Church of Roxbury being a diligent People, early prevented their Brethren of other Churches by calling him to be their 1st Pastor ; that he was valiant in Faith ; both in the Pulpit and by his Pen, maintains the Truth, and clears Christ's Churches here from scandalous Reproaches ; and wading through the Cares and Toils of this Wilderness for 7 Years, he with Advice returns to his native Country.

###### 3. The Rev. Mr. Thomas James.

[From Capt. Johnson we also learn, That] he was born and educated in England, and approved by his native Country ; had been a Minister in Lincolnshire, and especially commended by God's People there for his courteous Speech and Work of Christian Love ; has learned Skill to unfold the Mind of God in Scripture ; is valiant in Faith ; and arriving here, is soon welcom'd by the People of Christ in Charlestown, and call'd to the Office of Pastor of their 2d gathered Church ; where he continues some Years ; till some Seed of Prejudice sown by the Enemies of this Work, he for the Love of Peace and to avoid Contention removes to New-Haven. (*j*)

[Afterwards

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

[Afterwards he seems to return to England. For when I liv'd at Combs in Suffolk, from 1711 to 16, Mr. Thomas Denny, a pious and ancient Gentleman there inform'd me that] he knew the Rev. Mr. Thomas James minister of Needham, about 4 Miles off, who [he said] came from N E. [Dr. E Calamy says] he was a very holy good Man, of the Congregational Perswasion; resign'd the Parochial Church of Needham August 24. 1662, because he could not in Conscience approve of the uninstituted Ceremonies; and had a pretty numerous Society after his being silenced. [And Mr. Denny told me, that] tho' he was much belov'd and esteemed; yet when he died, the Clergyman who came in his Place would not allow him to be buried in any other Part of the Church Yard, but that unconsecrated Corner left for Rogues, Whores and Excommunicates; tho' the Clergyman ow'd his Benefice to the noble Uprightness of Mr. James's heart.]

## II. The most material Events in England.

The Annual Feast of Dedication of Churches prescrib'd at first by Pope Felix and Gregory, turn'd by the People into meer Bachanals, were by the Injunctions [even] of K Hen. VIII. as the Occasion of much Idleness, Excess, Riot, and pernicious to the Souls of Men, all restrain'd to the 1st [Lord's Day] in October; and after, totally abolished by Statute of 5 and 6 of Edward VI: being reviv'd again with their Bachanalian Disorders, under the Names of Wakes or Revels, for the most part on Sundays; Sir Thomas Richardson, Lord chief Justice of Eng, and Baron Denham, being at the Assizes in the County of Somerset; many indited for Murdering Bastard Children begotten at Wakes and Revels, with sundry other grand Disorders occasioned by those Meetings; the Justices of that County earnestly importune the Judges to make a severe Order for suppressing of these Wakes and Revels, as diverse of their Predecessors had done; without which they could never keep the Country in good Order, nor prevent the Multitudes of Bastards, Drunkenness, Quarrels, Bloodshed, Murder and other Disorders occasion'd by them. Whereupon those Judges make the ensuing Order in the Public Assizes—

' March 19 [1631,2] An Order made by the Judges of the  
' Assizes for suppressing all Ales and Revels: whereas divers Or-  
' ders have been made heretofore by the Judges of the Assize  
' for the suppressing of all Ales and Revels; the same Order is  
' now confirm'd at this Assize, and again order'd by the Court,  
' in Regard of the infinite Number of Inconveniences daily  
arising



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

‘ arising by Means of Revels ; that such Revels be henceforth utterly suppressed ; and that the Justices take Course, for the speedy apprehending and punishing idle and lewd Persons drawing together at such Places, &c. [But] Bp Laud being inform’d of this good Order, is very much nettled and vexed at it, complains of the Judges and it to his Majesty, and procures a Commission to Bp Pierce and some Divines of that County, to enquire of the Manner of publishing this Order in Churches, and what was done therein, and of the Lord chief Justice Richardson’s Carriage in this Business. [*It*] [Fuller wrongly places this in 1633.]

March 29. Sir Isaac Wake and Sieur Bouillon, sign the Treaty between K Charles I and the French K Lewis XIII : The Title of which is ;—‘ Articles settled between Sir Isaac Wake Knight and Ambassador of the K of Great-Britain, commissioned by said K ; and Messrs. Bouillon, Counsellor to the most Christian K in his Privy Council and Council of State, and Bouthillier his Majesty’s Councillor in his said Councils and Secretary of his Orders, Commissaries appointed by his said Majesty, for the Restitution of the Things taken since the Treaty made between the two Crowns on the 24th of April 1629.’ And in this new Treaty, K Charles resigns to the French K all the Places the English possessed in Canada and Laccady [the latter then including Nova Scotia] in particular, Fort Kebeck [i. e. Quebec] Port Royal and Cape Breton, with the Merchandize found in the Fort Kebeck by the English in 1629. (Dennis) which puts an End to the Difference ; the Fort delivered ; and the Money [i. e. the remaining Half of the Queens Portion] paid. (*cb*)

[But how faithful are K Charles’s Ministry to the British Interest, both in America and Europe ! when he had both Canada and Laccady in Possession, his Navy vastly superior to that of France, who had then scarce any, and no other to help her ; yet, without any Necessity to quit to the French, even Laccady a most important Branch of the British Empire, which even in 1613, the peaceable Reign of his Father, Sir Samuel Argal like a true Englishman had recovered : one of the finest Provinces in the known World, for Fishery, Masts and Harbours ; intercepting between our others of Newfoundland and N E, and lying in the Way of all our Trade from the British Colonies and West Indies to Great Britain :—to the continual and most dangerous Growth of the French Fishery, Navigation, Trade, Wealth, and Naval Power, and the infinite Injury of the British Interest ever after : and all this only  
for

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

for Half the Queens Portion, due six Years before. So that they properly sold this Territory to our National Enemies for what the French had agreed to pay in 1626.—A territory as large as Ireland, and of vastly greater Moment than all her Portion ten Times over. But the British Ministry are Bp Laud, who governs without a Rival in Church and State, with Lord Treasurer Weston next highest in the Royal Favour, who soon after dies a Papist; under an active popish Queen, the French K's Sister in K Charles's Bosom, of whom he is so exceeding fond, as hardly to deny her any Thing; and the more subtil Cardinal Richlieu prime Minister of France knew how to improve them all for his Master's Interest. And thus, while the French Ministry are adding to their K's Dominions, the British are giving up their's, and chiefly busied in adding new, popish Ceremonies to the Worship in the Church of Eng, to the great Disturbance of the Nation, and violently persecuting her pious Ministers who faithfully oppose them: In short, acting as if they could more easily part with an important Province than not introduce a popish Ceremony.]

May 6. Mr. Nathaniel Bernard Lecturer at Sepulcher's in London, preaching at St. Mary's Church in Cambridge, against 'bringing the Pelagian Errors into our Church, and the Superstitions of the Church of Rome into our Worship; as high Altars, Crucifixes, Bowings to them, i. e. in plain English worshipping them; whereby they symbolize with the Church of Rome very shamefully;' Dr. Cumber Vice Chancellor informs Bp Laud thereof: who [gets] him into the High Commission Court: [where] he is most severely sentenced, suspended his Ministry, excommunicated, fin'd a Thousand Pounds, condemn'd in Cost of Suit, committed to Prison, where he lies sundry Months, being most barbarously used, and almost starved for want of Necessaries: of which he complains to the Bp by sundry Petitions; but can find no relief unless he will make a strange Recantation sent him by the Bp: But refusing to make it, tho' in his Petitions he professed his sincere Penitence for any Oversights and unbecoming Expressions in his Sermon; this godly Minister is a long time detain'd in Prison, miserably abus'd by the Keepers, of which he oft complains without Redress, and in Conclusion utterly ruin'd for speaking out the Truth. (*It*)

May 26. I [i. e. Bp Laud] consecrate the Lord Treasurer's Chapel at Roehampton: and June 18, at Roehampton, I marry my Lord Treasurer Weston's eldest Son to the Lady Frances, Daughter  
ter

---

	K. of France.		K. of Great Britain.		K. of Spain.
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

ter to the D of Lenox : (*ld*) one of the Blood Royal of Scotland, and that with his Majesty's Consent (*ih*) [By Bp Lauds Diary Lord Treasurer Weston dies within 2 Years after : and Rushworth tells us he dies a Papist.]

June 15. [Bp Laud says] Mr. Francis Windebank, my old, most dear Friend, is sworn Secretary of State : which Place I obtain'd for him of my gracious Master K Charles. (*ld*) Windebank is a furious Papist : and is no sooner settled in his Place, but he falls to release and protect Priests, Jesuits, Recusants more than any of his Predecessors and all the Council besides ; becoming their special Patron, as appears by Father Joseph's Letter from Paris, Nov. 23. 1634, &c. (*lt*)

June 20. K Charles I. gives by Patent the Province of Maryland in N. America, to Cæcilius Baron Baltimore, and his Heirs and Assigns : [a zealous Papist] Bounding said Province Northerly to the 40th Degree of N Latitude from the Equinoctial, where [said Patent says] New England [i. e. the S Side Line thereof] is bounded : i. e. according to the grand Patent of New England, dated Nov. 3. 1620. So that then New England and Maryland joined on each other : New England then reaching from the 40th to the 48th Degrees of N Latitude, and from the Atlantick to the South Sea. And as the known Design of Maryland is for settling Papists under an hereditary Sort of Sovereign of their own Communion ; the K gives the Name of the Province in Honour of his dearest Consort, as he is wont to call her, and in the Patent gives much higher Powers and Prerogatives to this Popish Lord, than as far as I find, the Crown ever bestow'd on any other Person.]

Oct. 3. 1632. The R and eminently pious and learned Mr. John Cotton, B D, of Boston in Eng, being forc'd for his Nonconformity, to hide from Bp Laud's Pursivants, writes thus to his Consort—— 'Dear &c. If our heavenly Father be pleas'd to make our Yoke more heavy than we did so soon expect ; remember I pray thee what we have heard, that our heavenly Husband the Lord Jesus, when he 1st called us to Fellowship with himself, called us unto this Condition, to deny ourselves, and to take up our Cross daily, to follow him. And truly, tho' this Cup be brackish at the first ; yet a Cup of God's mingling is doubtless sweet in the Bottom, to such as have learned to make it their greatest Happiness to partake with Christ as in his Glory, so in the Way that leadeth to it. Where I am for  
'the



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

‘the present, I am very fitly and welcomely accommodated, I thank God :  
 ‘so as I see here I might rest desired enough till my Friends at Home shall  
 ‘direct further. They desire also to see thee here, but that I think it not  
 ‘safe yet, till we see how God will deal with our Neighbours at Home : for  
 ‘if you should now travel this Way, I fear you will be watched and dogged  
 ‘at the Heels. But I hope shortly God will make Way for thy safe  
 ‘Coming. The Lord watch over you all for Good, and reveal himself  
 ‘in the Guidance of all our Affairs. So with my Love to thee, as myself,  
 ‘I rest, desirous of thy Rest and Peace in him. J. C.

(From his Original Letter in Mss)

### III. The most material Events among Foreign Nations.

War continues between the Dutch and Spaniards.

In Germany—the K of Sweden having Wintered at Mentz; Tilly gathers a great Army, gets into Bavaria, breaks down the Bridges on the Danube, and strongly lines the S Side of the River to stop the K from passing. But in March, the K with 24 Thousand marches to the Danube, takes the strong City of Donawert on the N Side of the River at the Entrance of Bavaria: and on April 6, in a fierce Opposition passes over; when Tilly receiving a Musket shot in his Thigh, a few Days after dies. Upon which the K reduces Bavaria and Swabia: and by the beginning of June had either subdu’d or drawn to his Party all the Lower and Middle Part of Germany from the Baltick Sea to the Alps on the Entrance of Italy, near 500 Miles together. But the Emperor’s Forces all joining under Walstein, making an Army of 20 Thousand Horse and 40 Thousand Foot, besides 5 Thousand Crabats, and breaking into Saxony; the K collects his Forces, forms an Army of near 50 Thousand, marches to them, finds them most advantageously posted and strongly intrench’d at Lutzen. Yet, Nov. 6, in the Morning, after his Chaplain praying with him, and other Ministers at the Heads of their Regiments; He rides from one to another, making animating Speeches to them, To fight valiantly this Day on the Name of God and for their Religion: The Soldiers answering with joyful Acclamations, He then calls out—And now my Hearts let us on bravely against our Enemies, and the God of Heaven prosper our Endeavours! Then lifting up his Eyes to Heaven, cries aloud—Jesus, vouchsafe this Day to be my strong Helper, and give me Courage to fight for thy Glory and for the Honour of thy Name! then drawing his Sword, waves it over  
 his

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1632	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

his Head, advances the foremost of all his Army, most disadvantageously attacks their Trenches : and after the fiercest Conflict of 9 Hours, kills 4 Thousand, wounds as many more, and beats them away. But near the End of the Battle, an Officer of the Curasseirs, who knew the K, comes up, cries out—This is the right Bird, and shoots him through the Body, of which he soon falls off his horse and dies, in the 38th Year of his age, to the inexpressible Loss of the Protestant Interest—He had been engaged in successive Wars with the Poles, Danes, Muscovites, Poles again, &c. from the 18th Year of his Age, almost continually to the Day of his Death : in all which he came off Conqueror : and his Enemies gave this Testimony of him, that He was the bravest Enemy, and the best Captain that ever was in Christendom. A little before, he told his Chaplain ; that he tho't God would ere long take him away, because the People did so overvalue and deifie him. A Soldier wrote the following Distich on the field of Battle.

Upon this Place the great GUSTAVUS Dy'd,  
While Victory lay bleeding by his Side.

---

### 1633.

[The Reasons why no more come to the Massachusetts in 1631 and 32, seems to be these ; (1) the Undertaking being so hazardous, over so great an Ocean, of 3 Thousand Miles, to a hideous Wilderness possess'd with barbarous Indians ; many in England then oppress'd for their pure scriptural Religion and breathing after Liberty to enjoy the same, were willing to see how the 1st grand Transportation with the Power of Government fared, before they were free to venture themselves and their Families : (2) the grievous Sickness and Mortality, with the extream Straits of the People for want of Food and convenient Housing, who came in 1630, which they in England had Intelligence of, was very discouraging ; (3) divers discouraged went back to England in the Fall of 1630, and Spring of 1631, who never return'd ; and divers discouraging Letters were also sent by others disparaging this Country, as very cold, sickly, rocky, barren, unfit for Culture, and like to keep the People miserable : (4) above all the violent Endeavours of Morton, Gardiner, Ratcliff, and others, making a very powerful Interest to prejudice the Court of England against them,

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

them, overturn their Government and destroy their Liberties ; which after all rendered them very precarious.]

[Nevertheless, by the Health and Produce of the Earth in 1631, tho' they have yet no other Means to tare up the bushy Lands but their Hands and Hoes ; (*j*) with Vindications of the Country and Government ; and by the Oppressions growing in England, thro' the rising Power of the young Queen a very zealous and active Papist, the extream Fondness of the K for her, and the persecuting Spirit of Bp Laud under her ; there come over in 1631, about 90 ; and in 1632, near 250 more. But on January 19, 1632, 3, the Privy Council in Eng making an Order in Favour of the N E Patentees, and their continued Liberties ; far greater Numbers are encourag'd to come in 1633, and every Year for 7 Years after ; not only increasing the former Towns, Churches and Colonies ; but also swarming into others, in divers Parts of the Land, as we may see hereafter.

'Jan. 1. [Tuesday] Mr. Edward Winslow chosen Gov 'of Pc ; Mr. Bradford having been Gov about 10 [indeed 'near 12] Years, and now by Importunity gets off. (*w*) 'Mr. William Bradford, Capt. Miles Standish, Mr. John 'Howland, Mr. John Alden, Mr. John [Doan, 'The Printer 'of Mr. Secretary Morton by Mistake printing Dove] Mr. 'Stephen Hopkins, and Mr. William Gilson chosen 'Assistants. (*m*) 'The 1st Time of 7 Assistants chosen 'in Pc.' (*h*) which Number continues as long as their Government subsists.]

About the Beginning of this Month, the Pinnaces which went after the Pirate returns ; the Cold being so great, they could not pursue them : But in their Return hanged up at Richmond's Isle, Black Will an Indian, one of those who had there murther'd Walter Bagnal : 3 of the Pirates Company run from them and come Home. (*w*)

Jan. 9. Mr. [Thomas] Oliver, a right godly Man, and [Ruling] Elder of the Church of Boston, having 3 or 4 of his Sons all Young, cutting Wood on the Neck ; one of them being 15 Years old, has his Brains beat out with the Fall of a Tree he had fell'd : The good old Father hearing the News in as awful a Manner as might be, by another Boy his Brother, calls his Wife (being also a very



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

very godly Woman) and goes to Prayer, and bares it with much Patience and Honour. (*w*)

Jan. 17. Gov Winthrop having Intelligence from the East, that the French had bought the Scots Plantation [i.e. Port-Royal] near Cape-Sable, the Fort and Ammunition delivered to them, and that the Cardinal [Richlieu having the managing thereof, had sent some Commanders already, and Preparations made to send many more next Year [i. e. next Spring] and divers Priests and Jesuits among them; calls the Assistants to Boston [with] the Ministers, Captains and some other chief Men, to advise what is fit to be done for our Safety; in Regard the French are like to prove ill Neighbours, being Papists. At which Meeting tis agreed (1) That a Plantation and Fort be forthwith begun at Natasket; partly to be some Block in an Enemy's Way, tho' it could not barr his Entrance, and especially to prevent an Enemy from taking that Passage from us; (2) That the Fort begun at Boston be finished; (3) That a Plantation be begun at Agawam (being the best Place in the Land for Tillage and Cattle;) least an Enemy finding it, should possess and take it from us; the Gov's Son being one of the Assistants is to undertake this [new Plantation] and to take no more out of the Bay than 12 men, the Rest to be supplied at the Coming of the next Ships. (*w*)

Feb. 21. Gov. [Winthrop] and 4 Assistants, with 3 Ministers, and 18 others, go in 3 Boats to view Natasket; the Wind W, fair Weather: but the Wind rises at N W so sharp and extream Cold, that they are kept there two Nights, being forced to lodge on the ground in an open Cottage, on a little old Straw which they pulled from the Thatch: Their Victuals also grow short, so that they are forced to eat Muscles: Yet thro' the Lord's special Providence, they come all safe Home the 3d Day after. On view of the Place it is agreed by all, that to build a Fort there, would be of too great Charge and of little Use: Whereupon the Planting of that Place is defer'd. (*w*)

' Feb.

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

‘Feb. 22. The Ship William arrives at Plimouth, with ‘some Passengers and Goods for the Massachusetts : But ‘she comes to set up a Fishing at Scituate, and so to go ‘to Trade at Hudson’s River.’ (*w*)

By this Ship we have Intelligence from our Friends in England, that Sir F Gorge and Capt, Mason (upon the Instigation of Sir C. Gardiner, Morton and Radcliff) had preferred a Petition to the Privy Council against us, charging us with very false Accusations : But through the Lord’s good Providence, and the Care of our Friends in England, especially Mr. Emanuel Downing (who had married the Gov’s Sister) and the good Testimony of Capt. Wiggen (who dwelt at Piscataqua, and had been divers Times among us) their malicious Practises took not Effect. The principal Matter they had against us was, the Letters of some indiscreet Persons among us, who had wrote against the Church Government in England, &c. which had been intercepted. (*w*)

March 4. Court at Boston : Present [same as on Sept. 4 last] (1) The Court Reverses the last Act against Mr. Bachelor, which restrained him from further gathering a Church within this Patent. (2) A Man ordered to be set in the Bilboes, disfranchised and fined *L*.10 for speaking reproachful and seditious Words against the Government, &c. (3) For maintenance of Capt. Patrick and Captain Underhill, for half a Year ; cessed

1 Boston,	<i>L</i> .5	4 Waterton,	<i>L</i> .6
2 Charlestown,	4	5 Newtown,	6
3 Roxbury,	6	6 Medford,	3
<hr/>			
<i>L</i> .30			

(4) A Man convicted of taking away Corn and Fish from divers last Year, and This, as Clapboards, &c. [The 1st notorious Thief in the Massachusetts (*ctr*)] is censured [thus] all his Estate forfeited : out of which double Restitution shall be made to those whom he hath wronged ; shall be whip’d, and bound as a Servant to any that shall retain him

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

him for 3 Years, and after to be disposed of by the Court as they shall think meet. (5) 18 take their Oath of Freemen; as,

William Heath,

William Brackenbury, &c. (*Mc*r)

Last Summer, the Corn in the *Mc*, thro' Worms, Cold and wet Weather, greatly failing; [see Aug. 14, last] there coming very little last Year from England: and this Winter proving very sharp and long: People are generally exceedingly pinched for Provisions, (*ctr*) [and Capt. Clap says—] Many a Time, if I could have fill'd my Belly, though with mean Victuals, it would have been sweet unto me. Fish was a good Help to me and others, Bread was so very scarce, that the Crusts of my Father's Table [in England] would have been sweet to me: And when I could have Meat, Water and Salt boil'd together, it was so good, as who could wish better? (*cc*) But it pleased God to send an unexpected and early Supply to help us: For in the *b* of March arrives, from Virginia, Mr. Stretton, in a Vessel with Indian Corn; which he sells for 10s. [Sterling] per Bushel. (*ctr*)

March. The Gov's Son, John Winthrop, [Esq;] goes with 12 more, to begin a Plantation at Agawam, (afterwards called Ipswich). (*w*)

April 1. Court at Boston: Present—[same as Sept. 4 last, except Winthrop, Jun.] (1) Order that no Person go to plant or inhabit Aggawam, without Leave of the Court, except those already gone, viz.

Mr. John Winthrop, Jun.  
Mr. Clerk,  
Robert Coles,  
Thomas Howlet,  
John Biggs,

John Gage,  
Thomas Hardy,  
William Perkins,  
Mr. Thorndike,  
William Sergeant.

(2) 3 take their Oath of Freemen. (*Mc*r)

April 10. Arrives at Boston Mr. Hodges, one of Mr. Peirce's Mates, in a Shallop from Virginia: and brings News, that Mr. Peirce's Ship was cast away on a Shoal 4 Miles from Feak Isle, 10 Leagues to the N of the Mouth  
of



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

of Virginia-Bay, Nov. 2, about Five in the Morning, the Wind S W, thro' the Negligence of one of his Mates who had the Watch, and kept not his Lead [a sounding] as he was appointed: They had a Shallop and Boat aboard: all who went into the Shallop came safe ashore; but the Boat sunk by the Ship-Side; and [12] drowned in her, and 10 taken up alive into the Shallop: There were in the Ship 28 Seamen and 10 Passengers; of these were drowned 7 Seamen and 5 Passengers: and all the Goods lost, except 1 Hogshead of Bever: Next Day the Ship was broken in Pieces: They were 9 Days in much Distress before they found any English. Plymouth Men lost 900 Weight of Bever and 200 Otter Skins. Gov. [Winthrop] lost in Bever and Fish, near *L.* 100. Many others lost Bever, and Mr. Humfrey Fish. (*w*)\*

\* 'April 7. Come to our Hand [at Plymouth] Mr. Peirce's Letter from 'Virginia, dated Dec. 25. 1632. [as follows]

'Dear Friends &c! The Bruit of this fatal Stroke that the Lord hath 'bro't on me and you all, will come to your Ears before this comes to 'your Hand, it is like: and therefore I shall not need to enlarge. My 'whole Estate for the most Part is taken away: and yours in a great 'Measure by this and your former Losses [He means by the French and 'Mr. Allerton. (*br*)] It is Time to look about us before the Wrath of the 'Lord brake forth to utter Destruction. The good Lord give us all 'Grace to search our Hearts and try our Ways, and turn to the Lord, and 'humble ourselves under his mighty Hand, and seek Atonement, &c. 'Dear Friends, you may know that all your Bever [the 1st Loss we 'sustain in this Kind (*br*)] and the Books of your Accounts are swal- 'low'd up in the Sea. But what should I more say? Have we lost our 'outward Estates; yet a happy Loss if our Souls may gain: there is yet 'more in the Lord Jehovah than ever we had in the World. O that our 'foolish Hearts could yet be weaned from the Things here below, which are 'Vanity and Vexation of Spirit: and yet we fools catch after Shadows that 'fly away and are gone in a Moment &c. Thus with my continual Re- 'membrance of you in my poor Desires to the Throne of Grace, beseech- 'ing God to renew his Love and Favour to you all in and thro' the  
'Lord

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

‘ Lord Jesus Christ, both in Spiritual and Temporal good Things, as may  
 ‘ be most to the Glory and Praise of his Name and your everlasting Good.  
 ‘ So I rest your afflicted Brother in Christ.

WILLIAM PEIRCE.

The Winter’s Frost being extracted forth of the Earth; they fall to tearing up the Roots and Bushes with their Hoes. Even such Men as scarce ever set Hand to Labour before, Men of good Birth and Breeding, but coming thro’ the Strength of Christ, readily rush thro’ all Difficulties, cutting down the Woods, inclose Corn-Fields. The Corn they chiefly plant before they have Ploughs, is Indian Grain; whose Increase is very much beyond all other, to the great refreshing the poor Servants of Christ in their low Beginnings. And here the Lord’s Mercy appears much, in that Those who had been bro’t up tenderly, can now contentedly feed on bare and mean Diet, as Pumpkins, ’till Corn and Cattle Increase. (*j*)

May. The William and Jane, in 6 Weeks from London, arrives [at Boston] with 30 Passengers, and 10 Cows, or more. (*w*)

The Mary and Jane, (or Mary and John, (*br*) in 7 Weeks from London, arrives [at Boston] brings 196 Passengers (only 2 Children died) Mr. Coddington one of the Assistants with his Wife come in her. In her Return she is cast away on the Isle Sable: but [the] Men are saved. (*w*)

By these Ships we understand, that Sir C Gardiner, T Morton and Philip Ratcliff, who had been punished here for their Misdemeanours, had Petition’d the K and Council against us; being set on by Sir F Gorges and Capt. Mason, who had begun a Plantation at Piscataqua, and aim’d at the General Government of N. E. for their Agent here Capt. Neal. The Petition was of many Sheets of Paper, and contained many false Accusations: ‘accusing us to  
 ‘ intend Rebellion, to have cast off our Allegiance, and  
 ‘ to be wholly separate from the Church and Laws  
 ‘ of England; that our Ministers and People did  
 ‘ continually rail against the State, Church and  
 ‘ Bishops there, &c.’ Upon which such of our Com-  
 pany

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII:		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

pany as were then in England, viz. Sir Richard Saltonstall, Mr. Humfry and Mr. Cradock [who was 1st Gov in England and Ratcliff's Master] were called before a Committee of the Council, to whom they delivered an Answer in Writing. Upon reading whereof, it pleased the Lord our most gracious God and Protector, so to work with the Lords, and after with the King, when the whole Matter was reported to him, by Sir Thomas Jermin, one of the Council (but not of the Committee, who yet had been Present at the 3 Days Hearing, and spake much in Commendation of the Gov, both to the Lords, and after to HIS MAJESTY) that He [i. e. the K] said, 'He would 'have them severely punished, who did abuse his Gov, 'and the Plantation ;' that the Defendents were dismissed with a favourable Order\* for their Encouragement ; being assured from some of the Council, that HIS MAJESTY did not intend to impose the Ceremonies of the Church of England upon us, for that it was considered that it was the Freedom from such Things that made People come over to us : And it was [represented] to the Council, that this Country would in Time be very beneficial to England for Masts, Cordage, &c. if the Sound [i. e. the Passage to the Baltick] should be debarred. (*w*)

\* Mr. William Bradford of Plimouth writes thus—' I will give Hint of ' God's Providence in preventing the Hurt that might have come by Sir C ' Gardiner's Means and Malice complying with others. The Intelligence I ' had by a Letter from my much honoured and beloved Friend Mr. John ' Winthrop, Gov of the Massachusetts.

" Sir, Upon a Petition exhibited by Sir Christopher Gardiner, " Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Capt. Mason, &c, against you and us, the " Cause was heard before the Lord's of the Privy Council, and after " reported to the King ; the Success whereof makes it evident to all, " that the Lord hath Care of his People here ; the Passages are admira- " ble and too long to write : I heartily wish an Opportunity to impart " them unto you, being many Sheets of Paper ; but the Conclusion was, " against all Mens Expectation, an Order for our Encouragement, and  
" much



	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

“ much Blame and Disgrace upon the Adversaries, which calls for much  
 “ Thankfulness from us all, which we purpose (the Lord willing) to express  
 “ in a Day of Thanksgiving to our merciful God, (I doubt not but you will  
 “ consider if it be not fit for you to join in it;) who as he hath humbled us  
 “ by his late Correction, so he hath lifted us up by an abundant rejoicing in  
 “ our Deliverance out of so desperate a Danger; so as that which our  
 “ Enemies built their Hopes upon to ruin us, he hath mercifully disposed  
 “ to our great Advantage, as I shall further acquaint you when Occasion  
 “ shall serve.

“ The Copy of the Order follows.

“ At the Court at Whitehall, the 19th of January 1632.

“ Sigillum Crescent,

“ Lord Privy-Seal.

“ Earl of Dorset.

“ Lord Vicount Falkland.

“ Lord Bishop of London.

“ Lord Cottington.

“ Mr. Tr'r.

“ Mr. Vice-Chambr.

“ Mr. Sec Cook.

“ Mr. Sec Windebank.

Whereas his Majesty hath lately been informed of great Distraction and much Disorder in the Plantation in the Parts of America called New-England, which if they be true, and suffered to run on would tend to the great Dishonour of this Kingdom, and utter Ruin of that Plantation: for Prevention whereof, and for the orderly settling of Government, according to the Intention of those Patents which have been granted by his Majesty, and from his late Royal Father King James; it hath pleased his Majesty that the Lords and others of his most honourable Privy Council should take the same into Consideration: Their Lordships in the first Place thought fit to make a Committee of this Board, to take Examination of the Matters informed: which Committee having called divers of the principal Adventurers in that Plantation, and heard those that are Complainants against them; most of the Things informed being denied, and resting to be proved by Parties that must be called from that Place, which required a long Expence of Time, and at present their Lordships finding the Adventurers were upon Dispatch of Men, Victuals and Merchandize for that Place, all which would be at a stand if the Adventurers should have Discouragement, or take Suspition that the State here had no good Opinion of that Plantation; their Lordships not laying the Fault, or Fancies (if any be) of some particular Men upon the General Government, or principal

	K. of France.		K. of Great-Britain.		K. of Spain.
1633	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

principal Adventurers, which in due Time is further to be enquired into ; have thought fit in the mean Time to declare, that the Appearances were so fair, and Hopes so great, that the Country would prove both beneficial to this Kingdom, and profitable to the particular Adventurers, as that the Adventurers had Cause to go on cheerfully with their Undertakings, and rest assured, if Things were carried as was pretended when the Patents were granted, and accordingly as by the Patents it is appointed, His Majesty would not only maintain the Liberties and Priviledges heretofore granted, but supply any thing further that might tend to the good Government, Prosperity and Comfort of his People there of that Place, &c.

WILLIAM TRUMBALL.

[N. B. I have taken all this exactly as wrote in Gov Bradford's Mss : By which it seems, that by Mr. Tr'r. is meant Mr. Treasurer Weston, and not Trevers as printed in Mr. Morton.]

We [had] sent a Pinnace after the Pirate Bull : But [when] she had been forth 2 Weeks, she [now] comes Home, having not found Him. (*w*)\*

\* [Capt. Clap gives this Account of said Pirate—' There arose up ' against us one Bull, who went to the Eastward a Trading, turned Pirate, ' took a Vessel or two, plundered some Planters thereabouts, and intended ' to return into the Bay, and do Mischief to our Magistrates here in Dor- ' chester and other Places : But as they were weighing Anchor [at Pema- ' quid—(see last Dec.) one of Mr. Short (or Shurt (*w*) his Men shot from ' the Shore and struck the principal Actor dead, and the Rest were fill'd ' with Fear and Horror. They having taken one Anthony Dicks, Master ' of a Vessel, endeavoured to perswade him to pilot them to Virginia, but ' he would not. They told him, they were fill'd with such Fear and ' Horror, that they were afraid of the very Rattlings of the Ropes : This ' Mr. Dicks told me with his own Mouth. These Men fled Eastward ; ' and Bull got into England : But God destroy'd this wretched Man. ' Thus the Lord saved us from their wicked Device against us.' (c)

May 29. General Court at Boston : Present, Gov, D Gov, Mr. Treasurer [Pynchon] Mr. Nowell, Coddington, Winthrop, jun. S. Bradstreet : Chuse John Winthrop, Senior, Esq; by general Election of Hands, Gov; Thomas Dudley, Esq; D Gov, Roger Ludlow, Esq; John Endicot, Esq; Mr. William

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

William Pynchon, Mr. William Coddington, Mr. Increase Nowell, Mr. John Winthrop, Jun. Mr. Simon Bradstreet, Sir R. Saltonstall, and John Humfrey, Esq; Assistants, for the Year ensuing. (*Mcr*.)

‘This Spring, especially all the Month of May, there are such [Numbers] of a great Sort of Flies, like for Bigness to Bumble-Bees, which come out of Holes in the Ground [in Pc] replenish all the Wood, eat the green Things, and make such a constant yelling Noise, as all the Woods ring of them, and [deafens] the Hearers. The Indians tell us that Sickness will follow : and so it [proves] in June, July and August. They have not by the English been heard or seen before or since (*br*) [i. e. to the Beginning of 1647, when Gov. Bradford ends his History : but have in like Manner at distant Periods risen up since, and are known by the Name of Locusts.’]

June 2. Capt Stone arrives with a small Ship [at Boston] with Cows and Salt. (*w*)

‘Mr. John Doan, being formerly chose to the Office of a Deacon in the Church [of Plymouth] at the Request of the Church and Himself, is freed from the Office of Assistant in the Commonwealth. (*Pcr*)’

June 11. Court at Boston : Present, Gov, D. Gov, Mr. Ludlow, Mr. Treasurer [Pinchon] Mr. Nowell, Coddington, Winthrop, jun. S. Bradstreet. (1) Appoint the 19th of this Month to be kept as a Day of Thanksgiving through the several Plantations [of the Mc] (2) 8 take their Oath of Freeman. (*Mcr*)

June 15. Mr. Graves, in the Ship Elizabeth, from Yarmouth, in 6 Weeks, arrives at Boston, with 95 Passengers, 34 Dutch Sheep, and 2 Mares : lost not one Person, but above 40 Sheep. (*w*)

June 19. A Day of Thanksgiving kept in all the Congregations [of the Mc] for our Deliverance from the Plots of our Enemies, and for the safe Arrival of our Friends. &c. (*w*)



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great-Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

June 24. Mr. James Sherley of London, Merchant, writes thence to Gov Bradford and other Partners at Plimouth in N. E. thus—‘I pray God to bless you, that you may discharge this great and heavy Burthen which now lies on me for your Sakes, and I hope in the End, for the good of you and many Thousands more: For had not you and we join’d and continu’d together, N. E. might yet have been scarce known; I am perswaded not so replenished with such honest English People as now it is: The Lord increase and bless them.’ (*br*)

July 2. Court at Boston: Present [same as June 11, with Mr. Endicot] (1) Give *L.*100 to the Gov, for this present Year, towards his publick Charges and extraordinary Expenses: (2) A Man fined 30s. for Drunkenness on the Sabbath-Day, at Marblehead [till now in the Records call’d Marble-Habour] (3) Order that no Person sell either Wine or Strong Water, without Leave of the Gov or D Gov: And no Man shall sell or (being in a Course of Trading) give any Strong Water to any Indian: (4) That if any Corn-Fence shall be by the Inhabitants of the Town judg’d insufficient, and the Owner thereof forbare mending it more than 2 Days after Warning given; the Inhabitants shall mend said Fence, and the Corn of the Owner of said Fence shall be liable to pay the Charge of Mending: (5) That it shall be lawful for any Man to kill any Swine that comes into his Corn; the Party that owns the Swine is to have them being killed, and allow Recompence for the Damage they do. (*Mcr*)

‘We [at Plimouth] having had formerly Converse and Familiarity with the Dutch; they seeing us seated in a barren Quarter, told us of a River call’d by them the Fresh River, which they often commended to us for a fine Place both for Plantation and Trade, and wished us to make Use of it: But our Hands being full otherwise, we let it pass. But afterwards there coming a Company of Indians into these Parts, who were driven thence by the Pequents [or Pequots] who usurped upon them;

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

‘ them ; they often solicited us to go thither, and we  
‘ should have much Trade, especially if we would keep a  
‘ House there. And having good Store of Commodities,  
‘ we began to send that Way, to discover the same, and  
‘ trade with the Natives. We found it to be a fine Place,  
‘ and tried divers Times, not without Profit : but the  
‘ most Certainty would be by keeping a House there, to  
‘ receive the Trade when it comes down out of the Inland.  
‘ These Indians not seeing us very forward to build there,  
‘ solicited those of the Massachusetts in like Sort ; for  
‘ their End was to be restored to their Country again ; But  
‘ they in the Bay being but lately come, were not fit for  
‘ the same. [See April 4, 1631 : By which it seems as if  
‘ the Plimouth Partners had sent divers Times up Con-  
‘ necticut-River, and traded there, before April 1631,  
‘ tho’ they set not up a House till now.] (*br*)

‘ But some of the Chief in the Mb, made a Motion to  
‘ join with the Partners Here [at Plimouth] to trade jointly  
‘ with them at that River, which we were willing to em-  
‘ brace, and so have built and put in equal Stock together.  
‘ A Time of Meeting was appointed at the Massachusetts,  
‘ and some of the Chief here [at Plimouth] are appointed  
‘ to treat with them, and go accordingly. (*br*)

‘ July 12. Mr. Edward Winslow, Gov of Plimouth, and  
‘ Mr. Bradford come into the Bay, to confer about joining  
‘ in a Trade to Connecticut for Bever and Hemp : There  
‘ was a Motion to set up a Trading-House there, to prevent  
‘ the Dutch who are about to build one : But in Regard  
‘ the Place is not fit for Plantation, there being 3 or 4  
‘ Thousand Warlike Indians, and the River not to be gone  
‘ into but by small Pinnaces, having a Bar affording but  
‘ 6 Foot at high Water, and for that no Vessels can get  
‘ in for 7 Months in the Year by Reason of Ice, &c ; we  
‘ tho’t not fit to meddle with it. (*w*)

‘ The Massachusetts Gentlemen casting many Fears of  
‘ Danger and Loss, tell us, they have no mind to it. We  
‘ then Answer, we hope it will be no Offence to them if we  
‘ go

---

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	Philip IV.

---

‘ go without them : They said, there is no Reason [it]  
 ‘ should. And thus this Treaty breaks off, and we come  
 ‘ away (*br*) July 18. (*w*) And those [at Plimouth] take  
 ‘ convenient Time to make Beginning there [of Building]  
 ‘ and are the 1st English that both discovered that Place  
 ‘ and built in the same. (*br*)

‘ But the Dutch begin now to repent : And hearing of  
 ‘ our Purpose and Preparation, endeavour to prevent us,  
 ‘ get in a little before us, make a slight Fort, and plant  
 ‘ 2 Peeces of Ordnance, threatning to stop our Passage.  
 ‘ But we having a great new Bark, and a Frame of a  
 ‘ House [with] Boards, Nails, &c. ready, that we might  
 ‘ have a Defence against the Indians who are much of-  
 ‘ fended that we bring Home and restore the right Sachems  
 ‘ of the Place called Natawanute ; so as we are to encoun-  
 ‘ ter with a double Danger in this Attempt, both the  
 ‘ Dutch and Indians : When we come up the River, the  
 ‘ Dutch demand what we intend, and whither we would  
 ‘ go ? We answer, Up the River to Trade : Now our Or-  
 ‘ der was to go and seat above them. They bid us strike  
 ‘ and stay, or they would shoot us : and stood by their  
 ‘ Ordnance ready fitted. We answer, We have a Commis-  
 ‘ sion from the Gov of Plymouth to go up the River to such  
 ‘ a Place ; and if they shoot, we must obey our Order and  
 ‘ proceed ; we would not molest them, but wou’d go on : So  
 ‘ we pass along, and the Dutch threaten us hard, yet they  
 ‘ shoot not. Coming to our Place (about a Mile above  
 ‘ the Dutch) [since call’d Windsor, (*w*) and below the  
 ‘ South-Side Line of the Massachusetts Patent] we quickly  
 ‘ clap up our House, land our Provisions, leave the Com-  
 ‘ pany appointed, send the Bark Home, and afterwards  
 ‘ Palisade our House about and fortify better. The Dutch  
 ‘ send Word Home to the Monhatos, what was done :  
 ‘ And in Process of Time, they send a Band of about 70  
 ‘ Men in warlike Manner, with Colours display’d, to  
 ‘ assault us : But seeing us strengthened, and that it  
 ‘ would cost Blood, they come to a Parley, and return in  
 ‘ Peace : and this was our Entrance there : We did the



---

	K. of <i>France</i> .		K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .		K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1633	Lewis XIII.		Charles I.		Philip IV.

---

‘Dutch no Wrong: for we took not a Foot of any Land they bought; but went to the Place above them, and bought that Tract of Land which belong’d to the Indians we carried with us and our Friends, with whom the Dutch had nothing to do. (*br*)

July 24. A Ship from Weymouth, arrives [at Boston] with 80 Passengers (and 12 Kine) who set down at Dorchester, they were 12 Weeks coming; being forc’d into the Western Islands by a Leak, where they stay’d 3 Weeks, and were very courteously used by the Portugals; but the Extremity of the Heat there, and the continual Rains bro’t Sickness upon them, so as [several died.] (*w*)

‘June, July and Aug. It pleases God to visit us [at ‘Plimouth] with an infectious Fever, of which many fall ‘very sick and upwards of 20 die, Men and Women, (besides Children) and of them sundry [who were] our ancient Friends in Holland, as Thomas Blossom, with others; and in the End, Samuel Fuller, our Surgeon and Physician; who has been a great Help and Comfort to us, as in his Faculty, so otherwise, being a Deacon of the Church, godly, and forward to do Good, much miss’d after his Death; all which cause much Sadness and Mourning among us: [and move] us to humble ourselves and seek the Lord by Fasting and Prayer—who was intreated of us: (*mo*) For towards Winter, it pleas’d the Lord, the Sickness ceased. This Disease also swept away many of the Indians from all the Places near [us.] (*br*)

Aug. 5. (*w*) Two Men Servants to John Moody of Roxbury that were ungodly, especially one who in his Passion would wish himself in Hell, and use desperate Words, yet had a good Measure of Knowledge, against the Council of their [Master] would go in a Boat to the Oyster Bank, where they lie all Night. In the Morning early (Aug. 6. (*w*) when the Tide is out, they gathering Oysters, leave their Boat [unfastened] on the Verge of the Channel, and quickly the Tide carries it so far into the Channel, that they cannot recover it, and they are both drowned; although they might have waded out on either side; but it was an evident judgment of God upon them.

Boston, May 28, 1755.

SIR,

**T**HE New-England ANNALS wanting the Remarkables of Your Place, and the Composer being loth to omit them, that so the Work may be as compleat as possible——You are therefore earnestly desired to send your Communications as soon as may be, on the following Heads,

1. When your Town was granted and settled, what its original Indian Name, to what County first laid ; and if there has been any Alteration, what, and when it was.

2. What the Number of Original Shares and Settlers, and from whence they chiefly came, and what your present Number of Families.

3. When the Church was first Gathered, and what their first and present Number of Males.

4. Whether you are yet divided into Precincts, how many, when, and what their Names, both ancient Indian and present English.

5. Who have been your Teaching or Ruling Elders, and when, call'd, or-  
dain'd, removed and dyed, at what Age, and where.

6. Whether you have a Grammar School, and when first set up.

7. How many of your Town have taken their first Degree at College, whether at Cambridge or New-Haven, how many at each, and what their Names.

8. The Decease of other Gentlemen of Note among you, such as Counsellors, Assistants, Justices, Graduates, &c.

9. Whether any have Deceas'd among you of 100 Years of Age or upwards, whether English or Indians, when, and what their Names.

10. Those who have been remarkable for a great Increase of Posterity, their Names, Age, when they Died, and the Number of their Offspring then of each Generation.

11. What remarkable Works have been among you, as the building Meeting-Houses, Great Bridges, Forts, &c. and when.

12. The remarkable Providences that have befallen your Town or the People in it, from the Beginning to the Present Time ; as Earthquakes, Tempests, Inundations, extraordinary Floods, Droughts, Fires, Epidemical Sicknesses, awful Deaths, or any other strange Occurrences, as far as can be recollected.

You are desired to be as Precise as possible in the Dates, both as to Year, Month and Day, of all your Articles, as well as Certain in the Facts related ; that so the Publick may depend upon the Truth and Accuracy of these Collections.

In doing which you will oblige the Publick, as well as

The Composer,  
T. PRINCE.





## ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF DONATIONS.

The thanks of the Massachusetts Historical Society are presented for the following donations.

A. HOLMES, *Corresponding Secretary.*

A General History of the Land and People of America. Halle, 1752, 3. 4to. 2 vols; Herrera's Notices of America. Madrid, 1740. 4to.; Hans Egede's Complete History of the Danish Missions in Greenland. Hamburg, 1740, and the Description of Greenland translated from Danish to German. Copenhagen, 1742, 4to; Philip Fernin's Natural History of Surinam. Amsterd. 1765; Dissertation sur L'Amerique et les Américains, &c. par Dom. Pernety; Hennepin on America. Bremen, 1699. 18mo. vellum; Adelung's Mithridates, on Affinities of Language, with Remarks of Valet. 3d Part. 3 vols. 8vo. Berlin, 1812, 13, 16; Ebeling's American Geography, vol. 7th. 8vo. Hamb. 1816; Pernety ag. Pauw on America. 8vo. *Presented by the late Professor Ebeling, of Hamburg.*

Baretti, Italian Dictionary. 4to. 2 vols. late edition. Leghorn. *The Publisher.*

Ancient Greek MS. volume of Confessions made in a Greek Monastery of Mount Athos, written in the Greek character used in the time of Constantine X. Porphyrogenitus, obtained from a monk who belonged to that Monastery. *Rev. Thomas Hall, of Leghorn.*

C. Morton's Compendium Physicæ (MS. copy written by J. Gridley, Esq.) *Professor Cleaveland.*

Historical Account of the Judiciary of Connecticut, by T. Day, Esq. *The Author.*

Constitution of the Massachusetts Peace Society; Circular Letter from that Society to Associations, Presbyteries, &c. *The Mass. Peace Society.*

W. Tudor, jun.'s Discourse before the Humane Society, 1817; Seaman's Friend, No. XI.; Catalogue of Books in the Boston Library, No. 2; T. Worcester's New Chain of Argument against Trinitarianism; Rev.

T. M. Harris' Sermon on praying for the Jews; Dr. Ware's Sermon at the Ordination of his Son Henry Ware, 1817; Circular Letter of the Mass. Peace Society, and several other pamphlets. *Mr. John Eliot.*

The Alleghany Magazine; New York Spectator; and Weekly Messenger. *The Publishers.*

Rev. Martin Moore's Sermon at Natick, containing a History of said Town from 1651 to 1817. *The Author.*

Piscataqua Evangelical Magazine, vols. II. and III. Plans of Farms, in the early settlement of Massachusetts; Sermon of Rev. Eli Smith at the Ordination of Stephen Harley; do. of Rev. Walter Harris at the Ordination of Stephen Chapin; do. of Rev. Dr. Austin at Ordination of John Milton Whiton; do. of Rev. Dr. McFarland at the Ordination of Nathan Lord; First Report of New Hampshire Bible Society; D. Everett's Oration; and one volume of the Farmer's Cabinet.

*Mr. John Farmer.*

The Constitution of Phillips' Academy in Andover.

*The Trustees of the Academy.*

Historical Sketch of the English Translations of the Bible, by a Member of the Massachusetts Bible Society, 1815. *Dr. Holmes.*

Rev. Mr. Lowell's Discourse delivered the Sabbath after the Execution of Henry Phillips for the Murder of Gaspard Denegri; and his Discourse delivered before the Society for promoting Christian Knowledge, Piety and Charity. *The Author.*

Rev. Samuel Deane's Sermon delivered before the Scituate Society for the Suppression of Intemperance, 1817. *The Author.*

The School of Reform, by the Seaman's Friend.

*Mrs. Hannah Crocker.*

Whipple's Geographical View of the District of Maine.

*The Author.*

Collections of the New York Historical Society, vol. II. *The Society.*

Sermons before the Maine Missionary Society by Rev. Kiah Bailey, Jonathan Ward, Eliphalet Gillet, Jonathan Scott, and Francis Brown. *Rev. Wm. Jenks.*

Report of the Select Committee of the Society for propagating the Gospel among the Indians and others in North America, 1816; Dr. Foster's Sermon before the Society, with the Report of the Select Committee, 1817.

*The Society.*

Sermon of Rev. S. Palmer on the death of Col. William McIntosh, 1813; do. of do. before the military Company of Exempts, 1814.

*The Author.*

Address of the Trustees of the Massachusetts General Hospital.

*The Trustees.*

Rev. Dr. Sanders' Sermon before the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company, 1817. *Maj. B. Loring.*

Rev. Dr. Worcester's Discourse before the Massachusetts Society for the Suppression of Intemperance, 1817.

*Dr. McKean.*

Extracts from the minutes of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States, 1816.

*Ebenezer Hazard, Esq.*

Life of Samuel Johnson LL. D. by Robert Anderson, M. D. 3d edit.; "A Year in Canada," a Poem by Ann Cuthbert Knight; "Home," a Poem by do.; "The Giant's Causeway," a Poem by William H. Drummond, D. D.

*Robert Anderson, M. D.*

Address to President Adams from Citizens of Boston, 1798, with the signers' names.

*Joseph May, Esq.*

MS. copy of Blake's Annals of Dorchester.

*Mr. Elisha Clap.*

Pierce's Century Sermon at Brookline, 1817; his Sermon at the Dedication of the Brick Meeting House, Burlington (Vt.); and do. at the Ordination of S. Clark, Princeton.

*The Author.*

Catalogue of Williams' College.

*Dr. Porter of Plainfield.*

Rev. Dr. McKean's Sermon at the Installation of Dr. Richmond, Dorchester, 1817.

*The Author.*

Letter addressed to Cadwallader D. Colden, Esq. and several other pamphlets.

*W. S. Shaw, Esq.*

Minutes of the Doings in Congress and in several of the Provinces from 5 September, 1774 to 26 October, 1774. MS. Six Volumes.

*Deposited by Mrs. Scott.*



About 300 volumes of books and manuscripts, and numerous pamphlets, relating to the early History of New England, selected from the "New England Library," the Collection of the late Rev. Thomas Prince.

*Deposited by the Old South Church and Society  
in Boston.*

#### FOR THE CABINET.

A parcel of the Coin of Jac. I. and Cha. I. found in Concord, Mass.

*Dr. Benjamin Prescott.*

Part of a Coat of Armour, belonging to one of the early Settlers of New England.

*Rev. S. Palmer.*

Several Bullets, lost in Arnold's Expedition against Quebec in 1775, found in Kennebeck River in 1816.

*Professor Cleveland.*

END OF VOL. VII. SECOND SERIES.

COLLECTIONS  
OF THE  
MASSACHUSETTS  
HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

==  
VOL. IX.  
OF THE SECOND SERIES.  
==

BOSTON:  
FROM THE STEAM POWER PRESS OFFICE.

W. L. Lewis, Printer.

1832.

COLLECTION

OF THE

MASSACHUSETTS

HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

VOL. IX

ON THE SECOND EIGHT

BOSTON:

FROM THE STEAM POWER PRESS OFFICE

W. L. GARDNER, PRINTER

1855



## CONTENTS.

---

Article	Page
I. A brief Relation of the Discovery of New England . . . . .	1
II. Mourt's Relation . . . . .	26
III. E. Winslow's Relation . . . . .	74
IV. A New Description of Virginia . . . . .	105
V. Account of Middlebury, Vermont . . . . .	123
VI. Donations to Boston during the operation of the Port Bill	158
VII. Account of Providence, R. I. . . . .	166
VIII. Number of Houses in Boston, 1789 . . . . .	204
IX. The Massachusetts Language . . . . .	223
X. The Indian Grammar begun . . . . .	243
XI. Notes on Eliot's Grammar . . . . .	i.
XII. Sketches of Ministers and Churches in New Hampshire	367
XIII. Acknowledgment of Donations . . . . .	369

---

### *Chronological Table of Articles.*

I. 1607—1622	X. 1666
II. 1620—1621	XII. 1725—1821
III. 1621—1624	V. 1761—1820
VII. 1634—1645	VI. 1775
IV. 1648	VIII. 1789
IX. 1666	XI. 1820

# CONTENTS

1	1	1	1
2	2	2	2
3	3	3	3
4	4	4	4
5	5	5	5
6	6	6	6
7	7	7	7
8	8	8	8
9	9	9	9
10	10	10	10
11	11	11	11
12	12	12	12
13	13	13	13
14	14	14	14
15	15	15	15
16	16	16	16
17	17	17	17
18	18	18	18
19	19	19	19
20	20	20	20
21	21	21	21
22	22	22	22
23	23	23	23
24	24	24	24
25	25	25	25
26	26	26	26
27	27	27	27
28	28	28	28
29	29	29	29
30	30	30	30
31	31	31	31
32	32	32	32
33	33	33	33
34	34	34	34
35	35	35	35
36	36	36	36
37	37	37	37
38	38	38	38
39	39	39	39
40	40	40	40
41	41	41	41
42	42	42	42
43	43	43	43
44	44	44	44
45	45	45	45
46	46	46	46
47	47	47	47
48	48	48	48
49	49	49	49
50	50	50	50
51	51	51	51
52	52	52	52
53	53	53	53
54	54	54	54
55	55	55	55
56	56	56	56
57	57	57	57
58	58	58	58
59	59	59	59
60	60	60	60
61	61	61	61
62	62	62	62
63	63	63	63
64	64	64	64
65	65	65	65
66	66	66	66
67	67	67	67
68	68	68	68
69	69	69	69
70	70	70	70
71	71	71	71
72	72	72	72
73	73	73	73
74	74	74	74
75	75	75	75
76	76	76	76
77	77	77	77
78	78	78	78
79	79	79	79
80	80	80	80
81	81	81	81
82	82	82	82
83	83	83	83
84	84	84	84
85	85	85	85
86	86	86	86
87	87	87	87
88	88	88	88
89	89	89	89
90	90	90	90
91	91	91	91
92	92	92	92
93	93	93	93
94	94	94	94
95	95	95	95
96	96	96	96
97	97	97	97
98	98	98	98
99	99	99	99
100	100	100	100

## Chronological Table of Articles

I.	1507-1520	X.	1596
II.	1521-1531	XI.	1750-1821
III.	1532-1541	XII.	1751-1820
IV.	1542-1551	XIII.	1752-1820
V.	1552-1561	XIV.	1753-1820
VI.	1562-1571	XV.	1754-1820
VII.	1572-1581	XVI.	1755-1820
VIII.	1582-1591	XVII.	1756-1820
IX.	1592-1601	XVIII.	1757-1820
X.	1602-1611	XIX.	1758-1820
XI.	1612-1621	XX.	1759-1820
XII.	1622-1631	XXI.	1760-1820
XIII.	1632-1641	XXII.	1761-1820
XIV.	1642-1651	XXIII.	1762-1820
XV.	1652-1661	XXIV.	1763-1820
XVI.	1662-1671	XXV.	1764-1820
XVII.	1672-1681	XXVI.	1765-1820
XVIII.	1682-1691	XXVII.	1766-1820
XIX.	1692-1701	XXVIII.	1767-1820
XX.	1702-1711	XXIX.	1768-1820
XXI.	1712-1721	XXX.	1769-1820
XXII.	1722-1731	XXXI.	1770-1820
XXIII.	1732-1741	XXXII.	1771-1820
XXIV.	1742-1751	XXXIII.	1772-1820
XXV.	1752-1761	XXXIV.	1773-1820
XXVI.	1762-1771	XXXV.	1774-1820
XXVII.	1772-1781	XXXVI.	1775-1820
XXVIII.	1782-1791	XXXVII.	1776-1820
XXIX.	1792-1801	XXXVIII.	1777-1820
XXX.	1802-1811	XXXIX.	1778-1820
XXXI.	1812-1821	XL.	1779-1820
XXXII.	1822-1831	XLI.	1780-1820
XXXIII.	1832-1841	XLII.	1781-1820
XXXIV.	1842-1851	XLIII.	1782-1820
XXXV.	1852-1861	XLIV.	1783-1820
XXXVI.	1862-1871	XLV.	1784-1820
XXXVII.	1872-1881	XLVI.	1785-1820
XXXVIII.	1882-1891	XLVII.	1786-1820
XXXIX.	1892-1901	XLVIII.	1787-1820
XL.	1902-1911	XLIX.	1788-1820
XLI.	1912-1921	XLX.	1789-1820
XLII.	1922-1931	L.	1790-1820
XLIII.	1932-1941	LI.	1791-1820
XLIV.	1942-1951	LII.	1792-1820
XLV.	1952-1961	LIII.	1793-1820
XLVI.	1962-1971	LIV.	1794-1820
XLVII.	1972-1981	LV.	1795-1820
XLVIII.	1982-1991	LVI.	1796-1820
XLIX.	1992-2001	LVII.	1797-1820
XLX.	2002-2011	LVIII.	1798-1820
L.	2012-2021	LIX.	1799-1820
LI.	2022-2031	LX.	1800-1820
LII.	2032-2041	LXI.	1801-1820
LIII.	2042-2051	LXII.	1802-1820
LIV.	2052-2061	LXIII.	1803-1820
LV.	2062-2071	LXIV.	1804-1820
LVI.	2072-2081	LXV.	1805-1820
LVII.	2082-2091	LXVI.	1806-1820
LXVIII.	2092-2101	LXVII.	1807-1820
LXIX.	2102-2111	LXVIII.	1808-1820
LXX.	2112-2121	LXIX.	1809-1820
LXXI.	2122-2131	LXX.	1810-1820
LXXII.	2132-2141	LXXI.	1811-1820
LXXIII.	2142-2151	LXXII.	1812-1820
LXXIV.	2152-2161	LXXIII.	1813-1820
LXXV.	2162-2171	LXXIV.	1814-1820
LXXVI.	2172-2181	LXXV.	1815-1820
LXXVII.	2182-2191	LXXVI.	1816-1820
LXXVIII.	2192-2201	LXXVII.	1817-1820
LXXIX.	2202-2211	LXXVIII.	1818-1820
LXXX.	2212-2221	LXXIX.	1819-1820
LXXXI.	2222-2231	LXXX.	1820-1820
LXXXII.	2232-2241	LXXXI.	1821-1820
LXXXIII.	2242-2251	LXXXII.	1822-1820
LXXXIV.	2252-2261	LXXXIII.	1823-1820
LXXXV.	2262-2271	LXXXIV.	1824-1820
LXXXVI.	2272-2281	LXXXV.	1825-1820
LXXXVII.	2282-2291	LXXXVI.	1826-1820
LXXXVIII.	2292-2301	LXXXVII.	1827-1820
LXXXIX.	2302-2311	LXXXVIII.	1828-1820
LXXXX.	2312-2321	LXXXIX.	1829-1820
LXXXXI.	2322-2331	LXXXX.	1830-1820
LXXXXII.	2332-2341	LXXXXI.	1831-1820
LXXXXIII.	2342-2351	LXXXXII.	1832-1820
LXXXXIV.	2352-2361	LXXXXIII.	1833-1820
LXXXXV.	2362-2371	LXXXXIV.	1834-1820
LXXXXVI.	2372-2381	LXXXXV.	1835-1820
LXXXXVII.	2382-2391	LXXXXVI.	1836-1820
LXXXXVIII.	2392-2401	LXXXXVII.	1837-1820
LXXXXIX.	2402-2411	LXXXXVIII.	1838-1820
LXXXXX.	2412-2421	LXXXXIX.	1839-1820
LXXXXXI.	2422-2431	LXXXXX.	1840-1820
LXXXXXII.	2432-2441	LXXXXXI.	1841-1820
LXXXXXIII.	2442-2451	LXXXXXII.	1842-1820
LXXXXXIV.	2452-2461	LXXXXXIII.	1843-1820
LXXXXXV.	2462-2471	LXXXXXIV.	1844-1820
LXXXXXVI.	2472-2481	LXXXXXV.	1845-1820
LXXXXXVII.	2482-2491	LXXXXXVI.	1846-1820
LXXXXXVIII.	2492-2501	LXXXXXVII.	1847-1820
LXXXXXIX.	2502-2511	LXXXXXVIII.	1848-1820
LXXXXXX.	2512-2521	LXXXXXIX.	1849-1820
LXXXXXXI.	2522-2531	LXXXXXX.	1850-1820
LXXXXXXII.	2532-2541	LXXXXXXI.	1851-1820
LXXXXXXIII.	2542-2551	LXXXXXXII.	1852-1820
LXXXXXXIV.	2552-2561	LXXXXXXIII.	1853-1820
LXXXXXXV.	2562-2571	LXXXXXXIV.	1854-1820
LXXXXXXVI.	2572-2581	LXXXXXXV.	1855-1820
LXXXXXXVII.	2582-2591	LXXXXXXVI.	1856-1820
LXXXXXXVIII.	2592-2601	LXXXXXXVII.	1857-1820
LXXXXXXIX.	2602-2611	LXXXXXXVIII.	1858-1820
LXXXXXXX.	2612-2621	LXXXXXXIX.	1859-1820
LXXXXXXXI.	2622-2631	LXXXXXXX.	1860-1820
LXXXXXXXII.	2632-2641	LXXXXXXXI.	1861-1820
LXXXXXXXIII.	2642-2651	LXXXXXXXII.	1862-1820
LXXXXXXXIV.	2652-2661	LXXXXXXXIII.	1863-1820
LXXXXXXXV.	2662-2671	LXXXXXXXIV.	1864-1820
LXXXXXXXVI.	2672-2681	LXXXXXXXV.	1865-1820
LXXXXXXXVII.	2682-2691	LXXXXXXXVI.	1866-1820
LXXXXXXXVIII.	2692-2701	LXXXXXXXVII.	1867-1820
LXXXXXXXIX.	2702-2711	LXXXXXXXVIII.	1868-1820
LXXXXXXXX.	2712-2721	LXXXXXXXIX.	1869-1820
LXXXXXXXXI.	2722-2731	LXXXXXXXX.	1870-1820
LXXXXXXXII.	2732-2741	LXXXXXXXXI.	1871-1820
LXXXXXXXIII.	2742-2751	LXXXXXXXII.	1872-1820
LXXXXXXXIV.	2752-2761	LXXXXXXXIII.	1873-1820
LXXXXXXXV.	2762-2771	LXXXXXXXIV.	1874-1820
LXXXXXXXVI.	2772-2781	LXXXXXXXV.	1875-1820
LXXXXXXXVII.	2782-2791	LXXXXXXXVI.	1876-1820
LXXXXXXXVIII.	2792-2801	LXXXXXXXVII.	1877-1820
LXXXXXXXIX.	2802-2811	LXXXXXXXVIII.	1878-1820
LXXXXXXXX.	2812-2821	LXXXXXXXIX.	1879-1820
LXXXXXXXXI.	2822-2831	LXXXXXXXX.	1880-1820
LXXXXXXXII.	2832-2841	LXXXXXXXXI.	1881-1820
LXXXXXXXIII.	2842-2851	LXXXXXXXII.	1882-1820
LXXXXXXXIV.	2852-2861	LXXXXXXXIII.	1883-1820
LXXXXXXXV.	2862-2871	LXXXXXXXIV.	1884-1820
LXXXXXXXVI.	2872-2881	LXXXXXXXV.	1885-1820
LXXXXXXXVII.	2882-2891	LXXXXXXXVI.	1886-1820
LXXXXXXXVIII.	2892-2901	LXXXXXXXVII.	1887-1820
LXXXXXXXIX.	2902-2911	LXXXXXXXVIII.	1888-1820
LXXXXXXXX.	2912-2921	LXXXXXXXIX.	1889-1820
LXXXXXXXXI.	2922-2931	LXXXXXXXX.	1890-1820
LXXXXXXXII.	2932-2941	LXXXXXXXXI.	1891-1820
LXXXXXXXIII.	2942-2951	LXXXXXXXII.	1892-1820
LXXXXXXXIV.	2952-2961	LXXXXXXXIII.	1893-1820
LXXXXXXXV.	2962-2971	LXXXXXXXIV.	1894-1820
LXXXXXXXVI.	2972-2981	LXXXXXXXV.	1895-1820
LXXXXXXXVII.	2982-2991	LXXXXXXXVI.	1896-1820
LXXXXXXXVIII.	2992-3001	LXXXXXXXVII.	1897-1820
LXXXXXXXIX.	3002-3011	LXXXXXXXVIII.	1898-1820
LXXXXXXX.	3012-3021	LXXXXXXXIX.	1899-1820
LXXXXXXXI.	3022-3031	LXXXXXXX.	1900-1820
LXXXXXXXII.	3032-3041	LXXXXXXXI.	1901-1820
LXXXXXXXIII.	3042-3051	LXXXXXXXII.	1902-1820
LXXXXXXXIV.	3052-3061	LXXXXXXXIII.	1903-1820
LXXXXXXXV.	3062-3071	LXXXXXXXIV.	1904-1820
LXXXXXXXVI.	3072-30		

## COLLECTIONS, &c.



A BRIEF RELATION OF THE DISCOVERY AND PLANTATION  
OF NEW ENGLAND :

*And of sundry Accidents therein occurring, from the year of our Lord  
M.DC.VII. to this present M.DC.XXII.*

*Together with the State thereof as now it standeth; the general form  
of government intended; and the division of the whole Territory  
into Counties, Baronies, &c.*

LONDON, Printed by John Haviland, and are to be sold by William  
Bladen, M.DC.XXII.



THE EPISTLE DEDICATORY.

*To the Prince his Highness.*

SIR,

As you are the height of our hopes and blessedness, next after your royal father our lord and sovereign : so, next unto his majesty, are we bound to dedicate our best endeavours to your princely service. And for the subject of this relation, as your highness hath been pleased to do it the honour, by giving it the name of New England ; and by your highness most favourable encouragement, to continue the same in life and being : so ought we to render an account of our proceedings, from the root thereof unto the present growth it hath ; which summarily is here done. If it shall appear naked (as in truth it is) we beseech your highness to receive it so much the rather for the truth's sake, and with your bounty and grace to shelter it from the storms and tempests



of malice and envy, by which it hath been heretofore despoiled of that goodly ornament it might have had by this time.

It is now almost able to comfort itself, and there is no question but by the light of your countenance, it will speedily grow, both to serve his majesty with honour and profit, and multiply the same service to your highness in time to come, as a tribute due for the grace it receives, by the blessings of a long peace and prosperity that our nation enjoys under the reign of his sacred majesty, through which we have the easier passage to advance the cross of Christ in heathen parts, and to display his banner in the head of his army against infernal spirits, which have so long kept those poor distressed creatures (the inhabitants of those parts) in bondage, whose posterity will for ever bless the time, that the issue of your royal ancestors, sprung from so imperial branches, should be the means to unite the divided crowns in one, where by the generous spirits of both nations may have the fairer opportunity to procure their liberties. If your highness accept of what is past, we will hope of happiness to ensue ; and howsoever, pray that all increase of honour in this world, and all heavenly blessings in the world to come, may light upon your highness ; as best becomes those that are

Your highness humble servants,

The President and Council  
of New England.

*A brief relation of the discovery and plantation of  
New England.*

ALTHOUGH it be a course, far from the mind of us, that are undertakers for the advancement of the plantation of New England, to seek by any vain ostentation to extol our own endeavours : yet we cannot but strive to vindicate our reputation from the injurious aspersions that have been laid upon it, by the malicious practices of

some that would adventure nothing in the beginning, but would now reap the benefit of our pains and charges, and yet not seem beholding to us; and to that end they disvalue what is past, and by sinister informations derogate what they can from the present course intended: the rather because the good orders appointed to be put in execution there, are likely to restrain the licentious irregularity of other places. And this hath induced us to publish our proceedings, whereunto it hath pleased God to give a blessing: as to any of indifferent judgment may appear by that which followeth.

WHEN this design was first attempted, some of the present company were therein chiefly interested; who being careful to have the same accomplished, did send to the discovery of those northern parts a brave gentleman, Captain Henry Challons, with two of the natives of that territory, the one called Maneday, the other Assecomet. But his misfortunes did expose him to the power of certain strangers, enemies to his proceedings, so that by them, his company were seized, the ships and goods confiscated, and that voyage wholly overthrown.

This loss, and unfortunate beginning, did much abate the rising courage of the first adventurers; but immediately upon his departure, it pleased the noble lord chief justice, Sir John Popham knight, to send out another ship, wherein Captain Thomas Haman went commander, and Martine Prinne of Bristow master, with all necessary supplies, for the seconding of Captain Challons and his people; who arriving at the place appointed, and not finding that captain there, after they had made some discovery, and found the coasts, havens, and harbours answerable to our desires, they returned. Upon whose relation the lord chief justice, and we all waxed so confident of the business, that the year following every man of any worth, formerly interested in it, was willing to join in the charge for the sending over a competent number of people to lay the ground of a hopeful plantation.

Hereupon Captain Popham, Captain Rawley Gilbert, and others were sent away with two ships, and an hun-



dred landmen, ordnance, and other provisions necessary for their sustentation and defence; until other supply might be sent. In the mean while, before they could return, it pleased God to take from us this worthy member, the lord chief justice, whose sudden death did so astonish the hearts of the most part of the adventurers, as some grew cold, and some did wholly abandon the business. Yet Sir Francis Popham his son, certain of his private friends, and other of us, omitted not the next year (holding on our first resolution) to join in sending forth a new supply, which was accordingly performed.

But the ships arriving there, did not only bring uncomfortable news of the death of the lord chief justice, together with the death of Sir John Gilbert, the elder brother unto Captain Rawley Gilbert, who at that time was president of that council: but found that the old Captain Popham was also dead; who was the only man (indeed) that died there that winter, wherein they indured the greater extremities; for that in the depth thereof, their lodgings and stores were burnt, and they thereby wondrously distressed.

This calamity and evil news, together with the resolution that Captain Gilbert was forced to take for his own return, (in that he was to succeed his brother, in the inheritance of his lands in England) made the whole company to resolve upon nothing but their return with the ships; and for that present to leave the country again, having in the time of their abode there (notwithstanding the coldness of the season, and the small help they had) built a pretty bark of their own, which served them to good purpose, as easing them in their returning.

The arrival of these people here in England, was a wonderful discouragement to all the first undertakers, in so much as there was no more speech of settling any other plantation in those parts for a long time after; only Sir Francis Popham having the ships and provision, which remained of the company, and supplying what was necessary for his purpose, sent divers times to the coasts for trade and fishing; of whose loss or gains himself is best able to give account.



Our people abandoning the plantation in this sort as you have heard; the Frenchmen immediately took the opportunity to settle themselves within our limits; which being heard of by those of Virginia, that discreetly took to their consideration the inconveniences that might arise, by suffering them to harbour there, they despatched Sir Samuel Argall, with commission to displace them, which he performed with much discretion, judgment, valour, and dexterity. For having seized their forts, which they had built at Mount Mansell, Saint Croix, and Port Reall, he carried away their ordnance; he also surprised their ship, cattle, and other provisions, which he transported to the colony in Virginia to their great benefit. And hereby he hath made a way for the present hopeful plantation to be made in Nova Scotia, which we hear his majesty hath lately granted to Sir William Alexander knight, one of his majesty's most honorable council of the kingdom of Scotland, to be held of the said crown, and that not without some of our privities, as by approbation under writing may and doth appear. Whereby it is manifest that we are so far from making a monopoly of all those lands belonging to that coast (as hath been scandalously by some objected) that we wish that many would undertake the like.

In this interim there were of us who apprehended better hopes of good that might ensue by this attempt being thereunto persuaded, both by the relations of our people that had endured the many difficulties whereunto such actions are subjected chiefly in the winter season; and likewise by the informations given them by certain of the natives, that had been kept a long time in their hands; wherefore we resolved once more to try the verity thereof, and to see if possibly we might find something that might induce a fresh resolution to prosecute a work so pious and so honourable. And thereupon they despatched Captain Hobson, of the Isle of Wight, together with Captain Herley, Master John Matthew, Master Sturton, with two savages, the one called Epenow, the other Manawet, with commission and directions fit for them to observe and follow, the better to bring to

pass what was expected. But as in all human affairs, there is nothing more certain, than the uncertainty thereof; so fell it out in this; for a little before such time as they arrived upon the coast with the aforesaid savages, who were naturals of those parts, it happened there had been one Hunt (a worthless fellow of our nation) set out by certain merchants for love of gain; who (not content with the commodity he had by the fish and peaceable trade he found among the savages) after he had made his despatch, and was ready to set sail, (more savagelike than they) seized upon the poor innocent creatures, that in confidence of his honesty had put themselves into his hands. And stowing them under hatches, to the number of twenty-four, carried them into the Straits, where he sought to sell them for slaves, and sold as many as he could get money for. But when it was understood from whence they were brought, the friars of those parts took the rest from them, and kept them to be instructed in the christian faith; and so disappointed this unworthy fellow of the hopes of gain he conceived to make by this new and devilish project.

This being known by our two savages, formerly spoken of, they presently contracted such an hatred against our whole nation, as they immediately studied how to be revenged; and contrived with their friends the best means to bring it to pass; but Manawet dying in a short time after the ships arrival there, and the other observing the good order, and strong guard our people kept, studied only how to free himself out of our hands, and thereupon laid the plot very orderly, and indeed effected his purpose, although with so great hazard to himself and friends, that labored his rescue, that Captain Hobson and his whole company imagined he had been slain. And though in the recovery of his body they wounded the master of our ship, and divers other of our company, yet was not their design without the slaughter of some of their people, and the hurts of other, compassed, as appeared afterward.

Hereupon Captain Hobson and his company, conceiving the end of their attempt to be frustrate, resolved

without more ado to return, and so those hopes, that charge and voyage was lost also, for they brought home nothing but the news of their evil success, of the unfortunate cause thereof, and of a war now new began between the inhabitants of those parts, and us. A miserable comfort for so weak means as were now left, to pursue the conclusion of so tedious an enterprize.

While this was a working, we found the means to send out Captain John Smith from Plymouth, in a ship, together with Master Darmer and divers others with him, to lay the foundation of a new plantation, and to try the fishing of that coast, and to seek to settle a trade with the natives: but such was his misfortune, as being scarce free of our own coast, he had his masts shaken overboard by storms and tempests, his ship wonderfully distressed, and in that extremity forced to come back again; so as the season of the year being almost spent, we were of necessity enforced to furnish him with another ship, and taking out the provision of the first, despatched him away again, who coming to the height of the Western Islands, was chased by a French pirate, and by him made prisoner, although his ship in the night escaped away, and returned home with the loss of much of her provision, and the overthrow of that voyage, to the ruin of that poor gentleman Captain Smith, who was detained prisoner by them, and forced to suffer many extremities, before he got free of his troubles.

Notwithstanding these disasters it pleased God so to work for our encouragement again, as he sent into our hands Tasquantum, one of those savages that formerly had been betrayed by this unworthy Hunt before named, by whose means there was hope conceived to work a peace between us, and his friends, they being the principal inhabitants of that coast, where the fire was kindled. But this savage Tasquantum, being at that time in the New-found land with Captain Mason governour there for the undertakers of that plantation: Master Darmer (who was there also, and sometimes before employed as we have said by us, together with Captain John Smith) found the means to give us intelligence of him, and his



opinion of the good use that might be made of his employment, with the readiness of Captain Mason, to further any of our attempts that way, either with boats or other provision necessary, and resolving himself to go from thence, advised us to send some to meet with him, at our usual place of fishing, to aid him in his endeavour, that they joining together, might be able to do what he hoped would be very acceptable unto all well wishers of that business.

Upon this news, we despatched the next season Captain Rocraft, with a company for that purpose, in hope to have met with Captain Darmer ; but the care and discretion of Captain Mason was such, finding Captain Darmer's resolution to go beyond his means, that he persuaded him first to go for England, that providing himself there, as was requisite, he might proceed in time expedient, which counsel he observed (as fit it was) although our expectation of his joining with Captain Rocraft was thereby disappointed. Yet so it happened, that Captain Rocraft at his arrival in those parts, met with a French bark that lay in a creek a fishing, and trading, which he seized on, and sent home the master and company in the same ship which he went out in.

With this bark and his own company, he meant to keep the coast that winter quarter, being very well fitted both with salt, and other necessaries for his turn ; but as this was an act of extremity (the poor man being of our own religion) so succeeded it accordingly. For in a short time after, certain of this captain's company conspired together to cut his throat, and to make themselves masters of the whole spoil, and so to seek a new fortune where they could best make it. This conspiracy being discovered to the captain, he let it go on, till the time that it should have been put in execution, when he caught them in their own train, and so apprehended them in the very instant that they were purposed to begin their massacre.

But after he had prevented the mischief, and seized upon the malefactors, he took to his consideration what was best to be done with them. And being loath by

himself to despatch them as they deserved, he resolved to put them ashore, thinking by their hazard that it was possible they might discover something, that might advance the publick; and so giving them some arms for their defence, and some victual for their sustentation until they knew better how to provide for themselves, he left them at a place called Sawaguatock, where they remained not long, but got from thence to Menehighon, an island lying some three leagues in the sea, and fifteen leagues from that place, where they remained all that winter, with bad lodging, and worse fare, yet came all safe home save one sickly man, which died there, the rest returned with the ship we sent for Rocrast's supply and provision, to make a fishing voyage.

After these fellows were landed, the captain finding himself but weakly man'd, and his ship to draw too much water to coast those places, that by his instructions he was assigned to discover, he resolved to go for Virginia where he had lived a long time before, and had (as he conceived) many friends, that would help him with some things that he had occasion to use. Arriving there, he was not deceived of his expectation; for Sir Samuel Argall being their governour, and one that respected him much for his own sake, was the readier to help him, in regard of the good he wished to the business wherein he was employed.

But all this could not prevail, for after that Sir Samuel Argall came from thence (his departure being more sudden than was expected) it fell out that the new governour entered the harbour: and finding Rocrast ready to be gone, sent to him to command him to come aboard to speak with him, which he readily obeyed, as soon as he could fit his boat and men for that purpose. And so leaving his bark with her great anchor ahead, and taking with him the half of his company, he was forced to stay aboard the new governour's ship that night. In the mean while a storm arising, our bark wanting hands to do their labour, drove ashore, and there sunk. But yet the governour and captain so laboured the next day, when they knew thereof, as that they freed her again, but



that occasion forced our captain to stay so long in the country to fit himself anew, as in the interim a quarrel fell out between him and another of that place; so as Rocraft was slain, and the bark sunk the second time, and finally disabled from yielding us any benefit to this present.

But we not knowing this disaster, and Captain Darmer arriving with his savage out of New-found-land, we despatched him away the next season, in a ship we sent again for the fishing business, and assigned him a company to join with Rocraft and his people.

Captain Darmer arriving there, and not finding Rocraft, was a little perplexed, and in doubt what to do: yet hearing by those mutineers which he found there, that he was gone for Virginia, he was hopeful of his return; and lived in that expectation, till such time as he heard (by a ship that came from thence to fish for the colony) the confusion of his fortune, and the end of his misery in this world. Then he determined to take the pinnace that the year before was assigned to Rocraft for him to make the trade with, and with her to proceed on his design, and so embarked himself, and his provision and company in her. And leaving the fishermen to their labour, he coasted the shore from thence, searching every harbour, and compassing every cape-land, till he arrived in Virginia; where he was in hope to meet with some of the provision, or company of Rocraft, to help to supply him of what he wanted; as also to lay a deck upon his pinnace, that before had not any, and now was taught by experience the necessity of having that defect supplied.

But those hopes failed him (all being before that time ruined and dispersed) so far as he saw it in vain to hope for help by that means, and therefore attempted to make the best of what he had of his own. And going to set his men a work, they all in a few days after their arrival, fell sick of a disease which happened at that time in the country, so as now he was not only forced to be without hope of their helping of him, but must labour himself all he could to attend and sustain them; but so God favour-



ed him, that they recovered, and in time convenient he despatched his business there, and put himself to sea again, resolving to accomplish in his journey back to New England, what in his last discovery he had omitted.

In his passage he met with certain Hollanders, who had a trade in Hudson's River some years before that time, with whom he had conference about the state of that coast, and their proceedings with those people, whose answer gave him good content. He betook himself to the following of his business, discovering many goodly rivers, and exceeding pleasant, and fruitful coasts, and islands, for the space of eighty leagues from east to west, for so that coast doth range along from Hudson's River to Cape James.

Now after we had found by Captain Rocraft's relation made the year before, the hopes he conceived of the benefits that coast would afford, towards the upholding of the charge for settling our plantation by reason of the commodities arising by fishing and furs, if a course might be taken for the managing of that business, as was fit for such a design; as well as for the advancement of the publick good of our whole nation, and satisfaction of every well disposed person, that had a will to be interested therein.

It was held to be most convenient to strengthen ourselves by a new grant to be obtained from his royal majesty: the rather, finding that those of Virginia had by two several patents settled their bounds, and excluded all from intermeddling with them that were not free of their company; and had wholly altered the form of their government, from the first ground laid for the managing the affairs of both colonies, leaving us as desperate, and our business as abandoned.

These considerations (as is said) together with the necessity of settling our affairs, bounds and limits, distinct from theirs, made us resolve to petition his majesty for the renewing of our grant.

By which time the rumour of our hopes was so publickly spread abroad, and the commodities of the fish, and trade so looked into, as it was desired, that all that

coast might be made free, as well to those of Virginia as to us to make their commodity ; how just or unjust that motion was, we will not argue, seeing the business is ended.

By this means, our proceedings were interrupted, and we questioned about it ; first, by the council of Virginia, whom we thought to have been fully satisfied therein, before we could have way given us for a new patent, both parties having been heard by certain of the lords of the council ; and the business by them so ordered, as we were directed to proceed and to have our grant agreeable to the liberty of the Virginia company, the frame of our government excepted ; but this order not being liked of, it was again heard and concluded. Lastly, the patent being past the seal, it was stopt upon new suggestions to the king, and by his majesty referred to the council to be settled, by whom the former orders were confirmed, the difference cleared, and we ordered to have our patent delivered us.

These disputes held us almost two years, so as all men were afraid to join with us, and we thereby left hopeless of any thing more, than that which our own fortunes would yield to advance our proceedings, in which time so many accidents happened unto us at home, and abroad, that we were fain to give order by the ships we sent a fishing, for the retiring of Master Darmer, and his people, until all things were cleared, and we better provided of means to go through with our design : but this worthy gentleman, confident of the good likely to ensue, and resolutely resolving to pursue the ends he aimed at, could not be persuaded to look back, as yet ; and so refusing to accept our offer, began again to prosecute his discovery, wherein he was betrayed by certain new savages, who suddenly set upon him, giving him fourteen or fifteen wounds ; but by his valour, and dexterity of spirit he freed himself out of their hands, yet was constrained to retire into Virginia again the second time, for the cure of his wounds, where he fell sick of the infirmities of that place, and thereof died : so ended this worthy gentleman his days, after he had remained in the discovery

of that coast two years, giving us good content in all he undertook ; and after he had made the peace between us and the savages, that so much abhorred our nation, for the wrongs done them by others, as you have heard : but the fruit of his labour in that behalf we as yet receive to our great commodity, who have a peaceable plantation at this present among them, where our people both prosper, and live in good liking, and assuredness of their neighbours, that had been formerly so much exasperated against us, as will more at large appear hereafter.

But having passed all these storms abroad, and undergone so many home-bred oppositions, and freed our patent which we were by order of state assigned to renew, for the amendment of some defects therein contained, we were assured of this ground more boldly to proceed on than before, and therefore we took first to consideration how to raise the means to advance the plantation ; in the examination thereof, two ways did offer themselves. The one was the voluntary contribution of the patentees ; the other, by an easy ransoming of the freedoms of those that had a will to partake only of the present profits, arising by the trade, and fishing upon the coast.

The first was to proceed from those noblemen, and others that were patentees, and they agreed by order among themselves to disburse a hundred pounds a piece, for the advancement of such necessary business, as they had in hand.

The second was to be accomplished by settling such liberties and orders in the western cities, and towns, as might induce every reasonable man, in, and about them, affecting the public good, or a regular proceeding in the business of trade, to embrace an uniformity, and to join in a community, or joint stock together : how reasonable or unreasonable those orders were, is hereafter to be seen, and judged by every well affected person, or any truly loving the public good of our nation, whereunto is annexed the difference of trading by a joint stock under government and order ; and the promiscuous trading without order, and in a disjointed manner, as of late



they have done to the infinite prejudice of others already, as also to the loss of many of themselves, that contemptuously and greedily have leapt into that course, as it were in despite of all authority, whose reward, in time, will follow.

Before these orders were to be tendered to those cities and towns, it was desired that there might be letters sent from their lordships, admonishing them of his majesty's royal grant, that prohibiteth any not free of that business, to intermeddle within our limits, upon pain of confiscation of ship and goods. These letters expressing withal the good affection of those that were interested in the business, to entertain any that should be willing to conform themselves to such orders, as had in that behalf been established.

But those letters how full of justice soever they appeared, were as distasteful, as was the rumour of order unto them: for by it every particular man thought himself straight debarred of liberty to run his own current, in which he thought his freedom did only consist; and by debarring him thereof, his private ends were overthrown, which was to endeavour to prevent his neighbour of the mark he aimed at, or the harbour he resolved to go unto, or the present trade he expected to have by his private industry, but as for the publick he cared not, let that fare as it would. While these things were in dispute, and likely to have taken a good foundation, the news of the Parliament flew to all parts, and then the most factious of every place, presently combined themselves to follow the business in Parliament, where they presumed to prove the same to be a monopoly, and much tending to the prejudice of the common good. But that there should be a conformity in trade, or a course taken to prevent the evils that were likely to ensue, or to appropriate possessions, or lands, after a generous manner, in remote parts of the world, to certain publick persons, of the commonwealth, for the taking care, and spending their time and means how to advance the enlargement of their country, the honour of their king, and glory of their God; these were thought crimes worthy the taking notice of, and the

principal actors in this kind, must be first traduced in private, then publickly called upon in Parliament, to answer such other scandals as could by malice be invented.

But as this business was in itself just, and righteous, so was it as earnestly desired, they might have had the opportunity to have answered it before so impartial judges, and so reverend persons ; if so it might have been without offence to the authority of his royal majesty, that had extended itself by virtue of his prerogative so far off, and without the laws of this realm, and to be put in execution without the public expense, or charge of the commonwealth, or prejudice to any other former employments of our nation, and indeed without offence to any that coveted not to put their sickle into the harvest of other men, or whose envious and covetous humours stirred them not up to shame themselves in the conclusion.

These troubles thus unfortunately falling out, have notwithstanding hindered us from the hopes we had this year to give some life extraordinarily to those affairs, and therefore we are forced of necessity to refer the main of our resolution, till a more convenient opportunity, and till we have gotten our ships and provision fit to serve our turns both to give the law along those coasts, and to perform such other service, as is thereby intended for the public good of our adventurers, and defence of our merchants, that shall frequent those places, according to such orders, as shall be found behoveful in that behalf.

---

*The clime and condition of the country, and the present estate of our affairs there.*

You have heard already the many disasters, calamities, misfortunes, oppositions, and hindrances we have had, and received. Howbeit many are omitted, in that we desire not to trouble the reader with more than enough ; or to affright the minds of weak spirits, that will believe



there is no better success to be looked for from such attempts: although it be true that the best designs do oftentimes carry with them the most impediments, whether it be that God will have it so, to try our constancy, or otherwise to make us know, that it is he only that worketh after his own will, according to the time he hath assigned, and that there is nothing done but by him, as also that, that is only best which he will have to be done, and that time most proper which he hath assigned for the same.

But by these you may imagine (seeing we have none other helps than our own fortunes to build upon) there can no great matters be performed in these storms and tempests. Notwithstanding, you may know we have not been more hindered one way, than blessed another: for, as our patience, constancy, travels and charge hath been great, so hath it (indeed) manifoldly been requited: for, by God's favour, and these gentlemen's industry, we have made a most ample discovery of the most commodious country for the benefit of our nation, that ever hath been found.

For better satisfaction of the reader in this behalf, we have thought it fit, by the way, to acquaint him first with the nature of the place where we have settled ourselves, whereby he may see reason for what we have done, remembering him likewise, that in settling of plantations, there is principally to be considered; the air, for the health of the inhabitants; the soil, for fertility fit for corn, and feeding of cattle wherewith to sustain them; the sea, for commodity of trade and commerce, the better to enrich their publick and private state, as it shall grow to perfection; and to raise employments, to furnish the course of those affairs.

Now for the quality of the air, there is none of judgment but knows it proceedeth either from the general disposition of the sphere, or from the particular constitution of the place.

Touching the disposition of the sphere, it is not only seated in the temperate zone, but as it were in the centre, or middle part thereof, for that the middle part of that



country stands in the forty-fourth and forty-fifth degrees of the northern latitude, that is, twenty degrees from the fiery tropick, and as much from the freezing arctick circle : under the same climate and course of the sun that Constantinople, and Rome, the ladies of the world ; Italy, and France, the gardens of Europe, have their situation, within the limits of the fifth and sixth climate, after the latter computation ; having their longest day fifteen hours and some odd minutes.

Touching the constitution of the place (which is about fifty degrees by sea from our continent westerly) the maritime parts thereof are somewhat colder, than the nature of the clime otherwise affordeth ; so that the beams of the sun are weakened, partly by the unstable reflection of the same upon the sea, and partly by being laden with abundance of moisture it exhales out of the vast ocean, whereby the nature thereof is not so violently there expressed, as in the like parallel further into the main is accustomed. Nor is that sea coast so subject to droughts or want of rain in seasonable times, as other parts are of like latitudes, and by that reason the sea coasts are at all times more cold than is the island. And the eastern coast which receiveth the rising of the sun, is likewise colder than are the western parts, towards the declining of the same, as our morning airs (for example) even in the heat of summer are cold and quick, when the day and evening are very sweltering. And this makes those parts more suitable to the nature of our people, who neither find content in the colder climates, nor health in the hotter ; but (as herbs and plants) affect their native temperature, and prosper kindly no where else.

And, indeed, the hot countries yield sharper wits, but weaker bodies, and fewer children ; the colder, more slow of conceit, but stronger of body, and more abounding in procreation. So that, though the invention of arts hath risen from the southern nations, yet they have still been subject to the inundations, and invasions of the more northerly people, by reason of their multitudes, together with the strength of their body, and hardness of their constitutions.

But this country, what by the general and particular situation, is so temperate, as it seemeth to hold the golden mean, and indeed is most agreeable to the nature of our own, which is made manifest by experience, the most infallible proof of all assertions; in so much as our people that are settled there, enjoy their life and health much more happily, than in other places; which can be imputed to no other cause, than the temperature of the climate.

Now, as the clime is found to be so temperate, so delicate, and healthful, both by reason and experience; such is the soil also, some parts thereof yielding wonderful increase, both of the corn, the natives have most use of; as also of our own, of all sorts: with infinite variety of nourishing roots, and other herbs, and fruits, common among them, but rare with us.

Besides, the coast doth abound with most convenient havens, and harbours, full of singular islands, fit for plantation; replenished with plants and wood of all sorts; as oak, cedars, spruce, fir, pine, walnut, chesnut, elm, sassafras, plum trees, and calamus aromaticus, &c.

The people are tractable (if they be not abused) to commerce and trade with all, and as yet have good respect of us. The seas are stored with all kinds of excellent fish, and in many places upon the coast, fit to make salt in. The country aboundeth with diversity of wild fowl, as turkeys, partridges, swans, cranes, wild geese of two sorts, wild ducks of three sorts, many doves, especially when strawberries are ripe.

There are several sorts of deer in those parts, and some that bring forth two, three, and four young at once, which is a manifest proof of the fertility of the soil, or temper of the clime, or both together.

There is also a certain beast, that the natives call a moose, he is as big bodied as an ox, headed like a fallow deer, with a broad palm, which he mues every year, as doth the deer, and neck like a red deer, with a short mane, running down along the reins of his back, his hair long like an elk, but esteemed to be better than that for saddlers' use, he hath likewise a great bunch hanging down

under his throat, and is of the colour of our blacker sort of fallow deer, his legs are long, and his feet as big as the feet of our oxen, his tail is longer than the single of a deer, and reacheth almost down to his huxens, his skin maketh very good buff, and his flesh is excellent good food, which the natives use to jerkin and keep all the year to serve their turn, and so proves very serviceable for their use. There have been many of them seen in a great island upon the coast, called by our people Mount Mansell, whither the savages go at certain seasons to hunt them; the manner whereof is, by making of several fires; and setting the country with people, to force them into the sea, to which they are naturally addicted, and then there are others that attend them in their boats with bows and weapons of several kinds, wherewith they slay and take at their pleasure. And there is hope that this kind of beasts may be made serviceable for ordinary labour with art and industry.

The known commodities of that country, are fish of several sorts, rich furs, as beavers, otters, martins, black fox, sables, &c. There are likewise plenty of vines, of three kinds, and those pleasant to the taste, yet some better than other. There is hemp, flax, silkgrass, several veins of ironstone, commodities to make pitch, rosin, tar; deal boards of all sorts, spars, masts, for ships of all burdens; in a word, there comes no commodity out of France, Germany, or the Sound, but may be had there, with reasonable labour and industry.

Further we have settled at this present, several plantations along the coast, and have granted patents to many more that are in preparation to be gone with all conveniency. Those of our people that are there, have both health and plenty, so as they acknowledge there is no want of any thing, but of industrious people, to reap the commodities that are there to be had, and they are indeed so much affected to the place, as they are loath to be drawn from thence, although they were directed to return to give satisfaction to those that sent them, but chose rather to perform that office by letters, together with their excuse, for breach of their duty in that behalf. And thus



you see there is no labour well employed, but hath his reward at one time or other.

These encouragements have emboldened us to proceed, to the engaging of ourselves, for the building of some ships of good burden, and extraordinary mould, to lie upon the coast for the defence of merchants and fishermen, that are employed there, as also to waft the fleets, as they go to and from their markets: and we purpose from henceforth to build our shipping there, where we find all commodities fit for that service, together with the most opportune places, that can be desired.

Lastly, finding that we have so far forth prevailed, as to wind ourselves into familiarity with the natives, (which are in no great number) along the coast for two hundred leagues together, we have now despatched some of our people of purpose, to dive into the bowels of the continent, there to search and find out what port, or place, is most convenient to settle our main plantation in, where we mean to make the residence of our state and government as also to be assured, what other commodities may be raised for the publick, and private benefit of those that are dealers in that business, and willing to be interested in any the lands there: whither is gone this year already, for trade and fishing only, thirty sail of the better sort of ships, belonging to the western parts, besides those who are gone for transportation of the planters, or supply of such as are already planted, whose return (as is supposed) will amount (at the least) to thirty thousand pound, the greater part whereof comes home in bullion.

And therefore as touching the third happiness of these parts, which is the sea, there needeth no other or greater commendation than this benefit of fishing assured unto us by common experience; although it affords many other hopes both in regard of the facility of the navigation, the boldness of the coast, the conveniency of roads, havens and harbours, for performance of all manner of employment; yet is there also found shows of pearl, ambergris, great numbers of whales, and other merchantable means to raise profit to the industrious inhabitants or diligent traders.

Here you may see to what profit our industry and charge hath been employed ; what benefit our country is like to receive by it, and whether it be reason we should be so traduced, as we have been, we seeking nothing more than the glory of God, the enlarging of his highness' dominions, and general good of all his majesty's loyal subjects, and striving for the better accomplishments thereof to keep order, and settle government in those affairs, to preserve from ruin and confusion so fair a foundation, whereon is likely to be built the goodliest frame that hath ever been undertaken to be raised by our nation.

---

*The Platform of the government, and divisions of the territories in general.*

As there is no commonwealth that can stand without government, so the best governments have ever had their beginnings from one supreme head, who hath disposed of the administration of justice, and execution of publick affairs, either according to laws established, or by the advice, or counsel of the most eminent, discreetest, and best able in that kind. The verity of this is so clear, as it needs no example : for that indeed all nations from the beginning, unto this present, follow still the same rule in effect, howsoever they vary in the form, or some small circumstances.

And upon this general ground, the kings of these our realms did first lay the foundations of their monarchies ; reserving unto themselves the sovereign power of all (as fit it was) and dividing their kingdoms into countries, baronies, hundreds, and the like ; instituted their lieutenants, or officers, meet to govern those subdivisions, that the subject might with the more ease receive justice, and the sovereigns at more leisure the better able to dispose of matters of greater consequence.

This foundation being so certain, there is no reason for us to vary from it, and therefore we have resolved to build our edifices upon it, and to frame the same after

the platform already laid, and from whence we take our denomination. So as we purpose to commit the managing of our whole affairs there in general, unto a governor, to be assisted by the advice and counsel of so many of the patentees as shall be there resident, together with the officers of state, that is to say; the treasurer for the managing of the treasure and revenues belonging to that state. The marshal, for matters of arms, and affairs of wars, be it defensive or offensive. The admiral for maritime business civil or criminal, and the forces belonging to the sea. The master of the ordnance for munition, artillery and other provisions for publick store of armies by sea or land; as also such other persons of judgment and experience, as by the president and council established here, for the better governing of those affairs shall be thought fit.

By this head, and these members, united together, the great affairs of the whole state is to be managed, according to their several authorities, given them from their superiours, the president and council established as aforesaid.

And for that all men by nature are best pleased to be their own carvers, and do most willingly submit to those ordinances, or orders whereof themselves are authors: it is therefore resolved, that the general laws whereby that state is to be governed, shall be first framed and agreed upon by the general assembly of the states of those parts, both spiritual and temporal.

For the better distinction whereof, and the more orderly proceeding, agreeable, (as is said) to the present state of this our realm, two parts of the whole territory is to be divided between the patentees, into several counties, to be by themselves or their friends planted, at their pleasure or best commodity. The other third part is to be reserved for public uses, to be belonging to the state, as their revenue for defraying of public charge.

But as well this third part, as the two formerly spoken of, is to be divided into counties, baronies, hundreds, and the like, from all which the deputies for every county, and barony, are to be sent in the name and behalf of the



subjects, under them to consult and agree upon the laws so to be framed, as also to reform any notable abuses committed in former proceedings.

Yet these are not to be assembled, but by order from the president and council here, who are to give life to the laws so to be made, as those to whom of right it best belongs, according to his majesty's royal grant in that behalf, as also that under God, and his sacred highness, they are the principal authors of that foundation. And thus much for the general form of our government.

In like manner are the counties to be governed by the chief head or deputy thereof with other officers under him. As his steward, comptroller, treasurer of his revenues; and so the baronies by their stewards, and other inferiour ministers, who are to have assigned them the power of high and low justice within themselves for determining of controversies, with reservation of appeal in some cases to the supreme courts.

And further, these lords of counties may of themselves subdivide their said county into manors and lordships, as to them shall seem best, giving to the lords thereof power of keeping of courts, and leets, as is here used in England, for the determining of petty matters, arising between the lords, and the tenants, or any other.

And there is no less care to be taken for the trade and public commerce of merchants, whose government ought to be within themselves, in respect of the several occasions arising between them, the tradesmen, and other the mechanicks, with whom they have most to do: and who are generally the chief inhabitants of great cities, and towns, in all parts; it is likewise provided, that all the cities in that territory, and other inferiour towns where tradesmen are in any numbers, shall be incorporate and made bodies politick, to govern their affairs and people as it shall be found most behoveful for the public good of the same; according unto the greatness or capacity of them, who shall be made likewise capable to send certain their deputies, or burgesses to this public assembly, as members thereof, and who shall have voices equal with any the rest.

By this you see our main drift is but to take care for the well ordering of the business, seeking by all means to avoid (what we may) the intermeddling with any men's monies, or disposing of any men's fortunes, save only our own; leaving to every particular undertaker the employment of their adventures, and the raising of their profits, out of their proper limits, and possessions, as shall seem best to themselves, or their officers, or ministers, whom they employ, and whom they may be bold to question, or displace, as to themselves shall seem most fitting.

And hereby all men may know, that as it is not in our wills to delude and deceive any, so we are careful not to give the least cause of suspicion of any evil in that kind; so much the rather for that we daily see by experience, the abuses committed in like cases by inferiour ministers, to be a notable cause to dehort the good dispositions of many otherwise well affected to plantations, for that they observe those that are so employed to grow rich, and their adventures to come to nothing.

And we further desire that all men should be persuaded, we covet not to engross any thing at all unto ourselves, but that we should be exceeding glad to find more of our nation, so free in disposition, as to partake with us, as well in the profit, as in the future travel, and charge thereof; without looking back to our expense, or labour already past, to the end that all our hands being united together, the work may be so much the sooner advanced, well knowing and freely confessing, that it is sufficient to give content to a multitude, and that of all sorts. For such as are truly pious, shall find here the opportunity to put in practice the works of piety, both in building of churches, and raising of colleges for the breeding of youth, or maintenance of divines and other learned men. If they be such as affect glory, and to continue their memory to future ages, they may have here the means to raise houses, parishes, yea towns, or provinces, to their names and posterity. Do they aim at wealth? here is the way for their industry to satiate their appetites in that, if they be not unsatiable. Do they long after pleasure? here is as much to be had as may

content any, not merely voluptuous, or only prodigal. Do they aspire to be commanders? here is the place where they may have command of their own friends, or tenants, if they be of any worth, or means extraordinary wherewith to transport any numbers. If otherwise of experience and virtue, it is likely they may attain places of government for the publick state. So as you see there wants no occasions, or opportunity to invite, or give satisfaction to such as have patience to attend the time.

And indeed we shall be glad, that this, or any thing else may induce a free and noble resolution, in any well affected person, to endeavour the advancement of these ends, together with us, in that they shall find them agreeable to honour and honesty; and if there be any that can add ought unto our endeavours, by their advice or otherwise, there is none that shall more readily embrace the same than we; whose intents are only framed for the prosperity of the business, as is already said, and as we hope will all those be, that shall assent to join with us, both in the labour, profit, and honour, without respect to the weakness of the motive, by which it hath been heretofore moved, or any thing save the work itself. For by it you shall find the honour of our God, our king, and nation, will be advanced, without effusion of christian blood, or question of wrong to the present inhabitants. For that they themselves both desire it, and we intend not to take ought, but what they that are there, are willing we should be seized of, both for the defence of them against their enemies, and their preservation in peace among themselves, and propagation of the christian faith, which with wonderful alacrity many of them seem to give ear unto, and for whose speedy conversion we intend to be as careful as of our own happiness; and as diligent to build them houses, and to provide them tutors for their breeding, and bringing up of their children, of both sexes, as to advance any other business whatsoever, for that we acknowledge ourselves specially bound thereunto. And this being done, to refer the success, to the author of heaven and earth, to whom be all honour and glory.

F I N I S.



## MOURT'S RELATION.

BOSTON, April 21, 1819.

Dear Sir,

I HEREWITH present you with the portion of *Mourt's Relation*, which Mr. Du Ponceau has obligingly procured to be copied for the Historical Society, from a copy of that rare work, which I had suggested to his examination, and which is in the City Library of Philadelphia. You will unite with me in acknowledgments for this very acceptable service, which Mr. Du Ponceau has performed with his characteristic assiduity and accuracy. I have mentioned to him, that a publication of it was intended, and that I should put the MSS. into your hands for that purpose, as a just expression of grateful deference for your previous labours on that portion of the Relation, which was republished in our Collections.—What is now supplied is very interesting. I have annexed to the MSS. a few remarks, which occurred to me in the perusal, and shall cheerfully give you every aid in my power in elucidation of this venerable document.

Yours with great regard,

J. DAVIS.

*Rev. Dr. Freeman.*


---

RELATION OR JOURNAL OF THE BEGINNING AND PROCEEDINGS OF THE ENGLISH PLANTATION SETTLED AT PLIMOTH IN NEW ENGLAND, BY CERTAIN ENGLISH ADVENTURERS, BOTH MERCHANTS AND OTHERS.

*With their difficult passage, their safe arrival, their joyful building of, and comfortable planting themselves in the now well defended Town of New Plimoth.*

*As also a Relation of Four several discoveries since made by some of the English Planters there resident.*

- I. *In a journey to Puckanokick\* the habitation of the Indians' greatest King, Massasoyt: as also their message, the answer and entertainment they had of him.*
  - II. *In a voyage made by ten of them to the Kingdom of Nawset, to seek a boy that had lost himself in the woods: with such accidents as befell them in that voyage.*
  - III. *In their journey to the Kingdom of Namaschet, in defence of their greatest King Massasoyt, against the Narrohiggonsets, and to revenge the supposed death of their Interpreter Tisquantum.*
  - IIII. *Their voyage to the Massachusetts and their entertainment there.*
- With an answer to all such objections as are any way made against the lawfulness of English plantations in those parts.*

LONDON, Printed for John Bellamie, and are to be sold at his shop at the two Greyhounds in Cornhill, near the Royal Exchange. 1622.

—◆—

*To his much respected friend, Mr. I. P. †*

Good friend: as we cannot but account it an extraordinary blessing of God in directing our course for these parts, after we came out of our native country, for that we had the happiness to be possessed of the comforts we receive by the benefit of one of the most pleasant, most healthful, and most fruitful parts of the world: so must we acknowledge the same blessing to be multiplied upon our whole company, for that we obtained the honour to receive allowance and approbation of our free possession, and enjoying thereof under the authority of those thrice honoured persons, the President and Council for the affairs of New England, by whose bounty and grace, in that behalf, all of us are tied to dedicate our best service unto them, as those under his majesty, that we owe it unto: whose noble endeavours in these their actions the God of heaven and earth multiply to his glory and their own eternal comforts.

\* It is so printed, PUCKANOKICK, but it is an error of the press: it should be Packanokick, and so it is printed in the Relation. Transcriber.

† I. P., probably the initials of John Pierce, in whose name their first patent was taken.

As for this poor Relation, I pray you to accept it, as being writ by the several actors themselves, after their plain and rude manner: therefore doubt nothing of the truth thereof: if it be defective in any thing, it is their ignorance, that are better acquainted with planting than writing. If it satisfy those that are well affected to the business, it is all I care for. Sure I am the place we are in, and the hopes that are apparent, cannot but suffice any that will not desire more than enough, neither is there want of ought among us but company to enjoy the blessings so plentifully bestowed upon the inhabitants that are here. While I was a writing this, I had almost forgot, that I had but the recommendation of the relation itself, to your further consideration, and therefore I will end without saying more, save that I shall always rest

Yours in the way of friendship,

R. G.\*

*From Plimoth in New England.*

*To the Reader.*

COURTEOUS reader, be entreated to make a favourable construction of my forwardness, in publishing discourses, the desire of carrying the gospel of Christ into those foreign parts, amongst those people that as yet have had no knowledge, nor taste of God, as also to procure unto themselves and others a quiet and comfortable habitation: were amongst other things the inducements (unto these undertakers of the then hopeful, and now experimentally known good enterprise for plantation, in New England) to set afoot and prosecute the same and

\* Perhaps Richard Gardiner, whose name is on the list preserved by Prince. We do not find his name afterwards in the assignment of lands, nor in the division of the cattle. Mr. S. Davis, has made examination, at my request, and finds no mention of him in the records. May he not be considered as more particularly J. Pierce's agent, or representative, and not intimately concerned in the main objects of the pilgrims? If so he probably left the place, on their breach with Pierce, upon the discovery of his selfish views.



though it fared with them, as it is common to the most actions of this nature, that the first attempts prove difficult, as the sequel more at large expresseth, yet it hath pleased God; even beyond our expectation in so short a time, to give hope of letting some of them see (though some he hath taken out of this vale of tears) some grounds of hope, of the accomplishment of both those ends by them, at first propounded.

And as myself then much desired, and shortly hope to effect, if the Lord will, the putting to of my shoulder in this hopeful business, and in the mean time, these relations coming to my hand from my both known and faithful friends, on whose writings I do much rely, I thought it not amiss to make them more general, hoping of a cheerful proceeding, both of adventurers and planters, entreating that the example of the honourable Virginia and Bermudas companies, encountering with so many disasters, and that for divers years together, with an unwearied resolution, the good effects whereof are now eminent, may prevail as a spur of preparation also touching this no less hopeful country though yet an infant, the extent and commodities whereof are as yet not fully known, after time will unfold more: such as desire to take knowledge of things, may inform themselves by this ensuing treatise, and if they please also by such as have been there a first and second time, my hearty prayer to God is that the event of this and all other honourable and honest undertakings, may be for the furtherance of the kingdom of Christ, the enlarging of the bounds of our sovereign lord king James, and the good and profit of those, who either by purse, or person, or both, are agents in the same, so I take leave and rest

Thy friend,

G. MOURT.\*

\* I find no trace of G. Mourt in the history of the plantation. He was probably one of the merchant adventurers (as they were called) in England.

*Certain useful advertisements sent in a letter written by a discreet friend unto the planters in New England, at their first setting sail from Southhampton, who earnestly desireth the prosperity of that their new Plantation.*

LOVING and christian friends, I do heartily and in the Lord salute you all, as being they with whom I am present in my best affection, and most earnest longings after you, though I be constrained for a while to be bodily absent from you; I say constrained, God knowing how willingly and much rather than otherwise I would have borne my part with you in this first brunt, were I not by strong necessity held back for the present. Make account of me in the mean while, as of a man divided in myself with great pain, and as (natural bond set aside) having my better part with you. And though I doubt not but in your godly wisdoms you both foresee and resolve upon that which concerneth your present state and condition both severally and jointly, yet have I thought but my duty to add some further spur of provocation unto them who run already, if not because you need it, yet because I owe it in love and duty.

And first, as we are daily to renew our repentance with our God, special for our sins known, and general for our unknown trespasses; so doth the Lord call us in a singular manner upon occasions of such difficulty and danger as lieth upon you, to a both more narrow search and careful reformation of our ways in his sight, lest he calling to remembrance our sins forgotten by us or unrepented of, take advantage against us, and in judgment leave us for the same to be swallowed up in one danger or other; whereas on the contrary, sin being taken away by earnest repentance and the pardon thereof from the Lord, sealed up unto a man's conscience by his Spirit, great shall be his security and peace in all dangers, sweet his comforts in all distresses, with happy deliverance from all evil, whether in life or in death.

Now next after this heavenly peace with God and our

own consciences, we are carefully to provide for peace with all men what in us lieth, especially with our associates, and for that end watchfulness must be had, that we neither at all in ourselves do give, no nor easily take offence being given by others. Wo be unto the world for offences, for though it be necessary (considering the malice of satan and man's corruption) that offences come, yet wo unto the man or woman either by whom the offence cometh, saith Christ, Math. 18. 7. And if offences in the unseasonable use of things in themselves indifferent, be more to be feared than death itself, as the Apostle teacheth, 1 Cor. 9. 15, how much more in things simply evil, in which neither honour of God nor love of man is thought worthy to be regarded.

Neither yet is it sufficient that we keep ourselves by the grace of God from giving offence, except withal we be armed against the taking of them when they are given by others. For how unperfect and lame is the work of grace in that person, who wants charity to cover a multitude of offences, as the scriptures speak. Neither are you to be exhorted to this grace only upon the common grounds of Christianity, which are, that persons ready to take offence, either want charity to cover offences, or wisdom duly to weigh human frailty; or lastly are gross though close hypocrites, as Christ our Lord teacheth, Math. 7. 1, 2, 3, as indeed in mine own experience, few or none have been found which sooner give offence, than such as easily take it; neither have they ever proved sound and profitable members in societies, which have nourished in themselves that touchy humour. But besides these, there are divers special motives provoking you above others to great care and conscience this way: As first, you are many of you strangers, as to the persons, so to the infirmities one of another, and so stand in need of more watchfulness this way, lest when such things fall out in men and women as you suspected not, you be inordinately affected with them; which doth require at your hands much wisdom and charity for the covering and preventing of incident offences that way. And lastly your intended course of civil community



will minister continual occasion of offence, and will be as fuel for that fire, except you diligently quench it with brotherly forbearance. And if taking of offence causelessly or easily at men's doings be so carefully to be avoided, how much more heed is to be taken that we take not offence at God himself, which yet we certainly do so oft as we do murmur at his providence in our crosses, or bear impatiently such afflictions as wherewith he pleaseth to visit us. Store we up therefore patience against the evil day, without which we take offence at the Lord himself in his holy and just works.

¶ A fourth thing there is carefully to be provided for, to wit, that with your common employments you join common affections truly bent upon the general good, avoiding as a deadly plague of your both common and special comfort all retiredness of mind for proper advantage, and all singularly affected any manner of way; let every man repress himself and the whole body in each person, as so many rebels against the common good; all private respects of men's selves, not sorting with the general conveniency. And as men are careful not to have a new house shaken with any violence before it be well settled and the parts firmly knit: so be you, I beseech you brethren, much more careful, that the house of God which you are and are to be, be not shaken with unnecessary novelties or other oppositions at the first settling thereof.

¶ Lastly, whereas you are to become a body politick, using amongst yourselves civil government, and are not furnished with any persons of special eminence above the rest, to be chosen by you into office of government: let your wisdom and godliness appear, not only in choosing such persons as do entirely love, and will diligently promote the common good, but also in yielding unto them all due honour and obedience in their lawful administrations; not beholding in them the ordinariness of their persons, but God's ordinance for your good; nor being like unto the foolish multitude, who more honour the gay coat, than either the virtuous mind of the man, or glorious ordinance of the Lord. But you know better

things, and that the image of the Lord's power and authority, which the magistrate beareth, is honourable, in how mean persons soever. And this duty you both may be more willingly, and ought the more conscionably to perform, because you are at least for the present to have only them for your ordinary governours, which yourselves shall make choice of for that work.

Sundry other things of importance I could put you in mind of, and of those before mentioned in more words, but I will not so far wrong your godly minds, as to think you heedless of these things, there being also divers among you so well able to admonish both themselves and others of what concerneth them. These few things therefore and the same in few words I do earnestly commend unto your care and conscience, joining therewith my daily incessant prayers unto the Lord, that he who hath made the heavens and the earth, the sea and all rivers of waters, and whose providence is over all his works; especially over all his dear children for good, would so guide and guard you in your ways, as inwardly by his Spirit so outwardly by the hand of his power, as that both you and we also, for and with you, may have after matter of praising his name all the days of your and our lives. Fare you well in him in whom you trust, and in whom I rest

An unfained well willer of your happy success in this hopeful voyage,  
I. R.\*

\*JOHN ROBINSON. This letter was written July, 1620. It is published in the New England's Memorial, and in Neal's History of New England, and is inserted, with some variations, in the records of Plymouth First Church.

*A Relation or Journal of the proceedings of the Plantation settled at Plimoth, in New England. Abridged in 8 Mass. Hist. Coll. p. 203.*

[DIFFERENCES BETWEEN THE ORIGINAL PUBLICATION AND THE ABRIDGMENT.]

Note. The paragraphs are not numbered in the original; the numbers in the Hist. Coll. will be used here only for references.]

From No. 1. to No. 6. inclusive, is correctly transcribed (except the spelling which is modernized.)

Nos. 7. to 12. inclusive, form in the original but one paragraph; No. 9. is divided from No. 10. only by a semicolon (;).

No. 12. wants at the end what here follows :

*to make them large satisfaction.* "This was our first discovery, whilst our shallop was in repairing: our people did make things as fitting as they could, and time would, in seeking out wood, and helving of tools, and sawing of timber, to build a new shallop; but the discommodiousness of the harbour did much hinder us; for we could neither go to, nor come from the shore, but at high water, which was much to our hinderance and hurt; for oftentimes they waded to the middle of the thigh, and oft to the knees, to go and come from land; some did it necessarily, and some for their own pleasure; but it brought to the most, if not to all, coughs and colds, the weather proving suddenly cold and stormy, which afterwards turned to the scurvy, whereof many died."

Nos. 13. 14. and 15. make but one paragraph.

At the end of No. 14. what follows is to be added :\*

*for we had eaten little all that day;* "our resolution was next morning to go up to the head of this river, for we supposed it would prove fresh water; but in the morning our resolution held not, because many liked not the hilliness of the soil and badness of the harbour; so we turned the other creek, that we might go over and

\* Note, p. 214. Collections, 1. 9. for "three geese" write "three fat geese."



look for the rest of the corn that we left behind when we were here before. When we came to the creek, we saw the canoe lie on the dry ground, and a flock of geese in the river, at which one made a shot, and killed a couple of them, and we launched the canoe and fetched them, and when we had done, she carried us over by seven or eight at once. This done, *we marched to the place where we had the corn formerly*, [Continue No. 15. to the end, and begin a new paragraph with what follows :]

“The next morning we followed certain beaten paths and tracks of the Indians into the woods, supposing they would have led us into some town or houses ; after we had gone a while, we light upon a very broad beaten path, well nigh two foot broad ; then we lighted all our matches, and prepared ourselves, concluding we were near their dwellings : but in the end, we found it to be a path made to drive deer in, when the Indians hunt, as we supposed ; *when we had marched five or six miles in the woods*, [Continue No. 16. and at the end add as follows :]

*nor any thing else but graves.* “There was variety of opinions amongst us about the embalmed person ; some thought it was an Indian lord and king : others said, the Indians have all black hair, and never was seen with brown or yellow hair ; some thought it was a christian of some special note, which had died amongst them, and they thus buried him to honour him ; others thought they had killed him, and did it in triumph over him.” *Whilst we were thus ranging and searching*, [Continue No. 17. to the end, and add what follows :]

*and left the houses standing still as they were ;* “so it growing towards night, and the tide almost spent, we hasted with our things down to the shallop, and got aboard that night ; intending to have brought some beads and other things, to have left the houses, in sign of peace, and that we meant to truck with them, but it was not done, by means of our hasty coming away from Cape Cod ; but so soon as we can meet conveniently with them, we will give them full satisfaction. Thus much of our second discovery.

Having thus discovered this place, it was controversial amongst us, what to do, touching our abode and settling there; some thought it best, for many reasons to abide there;

As first, that there was a convenient harbour for boats, though not for ships.

Secondly, good corn ground ready to our hands, as we saw by experience in the goodly corn it yielded, which would again agree with the ground, and be natural seed for the same.

Thirdly, Cape Cod was like to be a place of good fishing; for we saw daily great whales of the best kind for oil and bone, come close aboard our ship, and in fair weather swim and play about us; there was once one, when the sun shone warm, came and lay above water, as if she had been dead, for a good while together, within half a musket shot of the ship, at which two were prepared to shoot, to see whether she would stir or no; he that gave fire first, his musket flew in pieces: both stock and barrel; yet thanks be to God neither he, nor any man else, was hurt with it, though many were there about; but when the whale saw her time, she gave a snuff and away.

Fourthly, the place was likely to be healthful, secure and defensible.

But the last and special reason was, that now the heart of winter, and unseasonable weather, was come upon us, so that we could not go upon coasting and discovery, without danger of losing men and boat; upon which would follow the overthrow of all, especially considering what variable winds and sudden storms do there arise. Also cold and wet lodging had so tainted our people (for scarce any of us were free from vehement coughs) as if they should continue long in that state, it would endanger the lives of many, and breed disease and infection amongst us. Again we had yet some beer, butter, flesh and other such victuals left, which would quickly be all gone: and then we should have nothing to comfort us in the great labour and toil we were like to undergo at the first; it was also conceived, whilst we had competent victuals, that the

ship would stay with us, but when that grew low, they would be gone, and let us shift as we could.

Others again, urged greatly the going to Angoum or Angoum, a place twenty leagues off to the northwards, which they had heard to be an excellent harbour for ships; better ground and better fishing. Secondly, for any thing we knew, there might be, hard by us, a far better seat, and it should be a great hinderance to seat where we should remove again. Thirdly, the water was but in ponds, and it was thought there would be none in summer, or very little. Fourthly, the water there must be fetched up a steep hill: but to omit many reasons and replies used hereabouts; it was in the end concluded to make some discovery within the bay, but in no case so far as Angoum: besides, Robert Coppin our pilot, made relation of a great navigable river and good harbour in the other head land of this bay, almost right over against Cape Cod, being a right line, not much above eight leagues distant in which he had been once: and because that one of the wild men, with whom they had some trucking, stole a harping iron from them, they called it Thievish Harbour. And beyond that place they were enjoined not to go; whereupon a company was chosen to go out upon a third discovery: while some were employed in this discovery, it pleased God that Mistress White was brought a bed of a son, which was called Peregrine.

The first day, we, through God's mercy, escaped a great danger by the foolishness of a boy, one of Francis Billington's sons, who in his father's absence, had got gunpowder, and had shot off a piece or two, and made squibs; and there being a fowling piece charged in his father's cabin, shot her off in the cabin, there being a little barrel of powder half full, scattered in and about the cabin, the fire being within four feet of the bed between decks, and many flints and iron things about the cabin, and many people about the fire, and yet, by God's mercy, no harm done.

Wednesday the 6th of December, it was resolved our discoverers should set forth, for the day before was too foul weather, and so they did, though it was well over the day, ere all things could be ready. So ten of our men



were appointed, who were of themselves willing to undertake it, to wit, Captain Standish, Master Carver, William Bradford, Edward Winsloe, John Tilley, Edward Tilley, John Houland, and three of London, Richard Warren, Steéven Hopkins, and Edward Dotte, and two of our seamen, John Alderton and Thomas English of the ship's company, there went two of the master's mates, Master Clarke, and Master Coppin, the master gunner and three sailors. The narration of which discovery follows penned by one of the company.

Paragraph No. 18. is included in the foregoing. Nos. 19. 20. 21. and part of No. 22, form but one paragraph; Nos. 19. and 20. are only divided by a colon (:), and No. 20. is divided from No. 21. by a semicolon (;). In No. 21. line 4. what follows is to be inserted, between the words "coming into it." and "this place." *without either river or creek coming into it*; "yet we deemed it to be as good an harbour as Cape Cod, for they that sounded it, found a ship might ride in five fathom water; we on the land found it to be a level soil, but none of the fruitfulest; we saw two beekes of fresh water, which were the first running streams that we saw in the country, but one might stride over them: we found also a great fish called a grampus dead on the sands, they in the shallop found two of them also in the bottom of the bay, dead in like sort; they were cast up at high water, and could not get off, for the frost and ice; they were some five or six paces long, and about two inches thick of fat, and fleshed like a swine; they would have yielded a great deal of oil, if there had been time and means to have taken it; so we finding nothing for our turn, both we and our shallop returned. We then directed our course along the sea sands, to the place where we first saw the Indians; when we were there, we saw it was also a grampus which they were cutting up, they cut it into long rands or pieces, about an ell long, and two handfull broad; we found here and there a piece scattered by the way, as it seemed, for haste:" *This place the most were minded, &c.*

The paragraph continues to the 17th line of No. 22. and ends with the words: "*was ready to assault them;*"

Then come several new paragraphs, which include part of No. 22. and Nos. 23. and 24. and are as follows :

There was a lusty man and no whit less valiant, who was thought to be their captain, stood behind a tree within half a musket shot of us, and there let his arrows fly at us ; he was seen to shoot three arrows, which were all avoided, for he at whom the first arrow was aimed, saw it, and stooped down and it flew over him, the rest were avoided also ; he stood three shots of a musket, at length one took as he said full aim at him, after which he gave an extraordinary cry and away they went all ; we followed them about a quarter of a mile, but we left six to keep our shallop, for we were careful of our business ; then we shouted all together two several times, and shot off a couple of muskets and so returned ; this we did that they might see we were not afraid of them nor discouraged. Thus it pleased God to vanquish our enemies and give us deliverance, by their noise we could not guess that they were less than thirty or forty, though some thought that they were many more yet in the dark of the morning, we could not so well discern them among the trees, as they could see us by our fire side, we took up eighteen of their arrows which we have sent to England by Master Jones, some whereof are headed with brass, others with harts-horn, and others with eagles' claws, many more no doubt were shot, for these we found, were almost covered with leaves : yet by the special providence of God, none of them either hit or hurt us, though many came close by us, and on every side of us, and some coats which hung up in our barricado, were shot through and through. So after we had given God thanks for our deliverance, we took our shallop and went on our journey, and called this place, the First Encounter, from hence we intended to have sailed to the afore-said Thievish Harbour, if we found no convenient harbour by the way, having the wind good we sailed all that day along the coast about fifteen leagues, but saw neither river nor creek to put into, after we had sailed an hour or two, it began to snow and rain, and to be bad weather ; about the midst of the afternoon the wind increased and the seas began to be very rough, and the hinges of the rudder broke,

so that we could steer no longer with it, but two men with much ado were fain to serve with a couple of oars, the seas were grown so great, that we were much troubled and in great danger, and night grew on : anon Master Coppin bade us be of good cheer he saw the harbour, as we drew near, the gale being stiff, and we bearing great sail to get in split our mast in three pieces, and were like to have cast away our shallop, yet by God's mercy recovering ourselves, we had the flood with us, and struck into the harbour.

Now he that thought that had been the place was deceived, it being a place where not any of us had been before, and coming into the harbour, he that was our pilot did bear up north-ward, which if we had continued we had been cast away, yet still the Lord kept us, and we bore up for an island before us, and recovering of that island, being compassed about with many rocks, and dark night growing upon us, it pleased the Divine Providence that we fell upon a place of sandy ground, where our shallop did ride safe and secure all night, and coming upon a strange island kept our watch all night in the rain upon that island : in the morning we marched about it, and found no inhabitants at all, and here we made our rendezvous all that day being Saturday, 10th of December, on the sabbath day we rested, and Monday we sounded the harbour, and found it a very good harbour for our shipping, we marched also into the land, and found divers corn fields, and little running brooks a place very good for situation, so we returned to our ship again with good news to the rest of our people, which did much comfort their hearts.

On the fifteenth day, we weighed anchor, to go to the place we had discovered, and coming within two leagues of the land, we could not fetch the harbour, but were fain to put room again towards Cape Cod, our course lying west ; and the wind was at north-west, but it pleased God that the next day being Saturday the sixteenth day, the wind came fair, and we put to sea again, and came safely into a safe harbour ; and within half an hour the wind changed, so as we had been letted but a little we had gone back to Cape Cod. This harbour is a bay grea-



ter than Cape Cod, compassed with a goodly land, and in the bay two fine islands uninhabited, wherein are nothing but wood, oaks, pines, walnut, beech, sassafras, vines, and other trees which we know not; this bay is a most hopeful place, innumerable store of fowl, and excellent good, and cannot but be of fish in their seasons: skate, cod, turbot, and herring, we have tasted of; crabs and lobsters, in their time infinite. It is in fashion like a sickle or fish-hook.

Monday, the 18th day, we went a land, manned with the master of the ship and three or four of the sailors, we marched along the coast in the woods, some seven or eight miles, but saw not an Indian, [Here copy from the Collections, beginning at the top of p. 221.; then copy to the end of the paragraph *we went aboard again*, and then begin a new paragraph as follows:]

The next morning being Tuesday the 19th of December, we went again to discover further; some went on land, and some in the shallop, the land we found as the former day we did, and we found a creek, and went up three English miles, a very pleasant river at full sea; a bark of thirty tons may go up; but at low water scarce our shallop could pass; this place we had a great liking to plant in, but that it was so far from our fishing our principal profit, and so encompassed with woods, that we should be in much danger of the savages, and our number being so little, and so much ground to clear, so as we thought good to quit and clear that place, till we were of more strength; some of us having a good mind for safety to plant in the greater isle, we crossed the bay which there is five or six miles over, and found the isle about a mile and a half or two miles about, all wooded, and no fresh water but two or three pits, that we doubted of fresh water in summer, and so full of wood, as we could hardly clear so much as to serve us for corn, besides we judged it cold for our corn, and some part very rocky, yet divers thought it as a place defensible and of great security.

That night we returned again a shipboard, with resolution the next morning to settle on some of those places, so in the morning, after we had called on God for

direction, we came to this resolution, to go presently ashore again, and to take a better view of the two places, which we thought most fitting for us, for we could not now take time for further search or consideration, our victuals being much spent, especially, our beer, and it being now the 19th of December. After our landing ———

Now copy from these words which end the first line of No. 25. (Coll. p. 221.) to the end of the paragraph, p. 222. and continue as follows :

*and we may see from thence Cape Cod :* “our greatest labour will be fetching of our wood, which is half a quarter of an English mile, but there is enough so far off; what people inhabit here we yet know not, for as yet we have seen none, so there we made our rendezvous, and a place for some of our people about twenty, resolving in the morning to come all ashore, and to build houses, but the next morning being Thursday the 21st of December, it was stormy and wet, that we could not go ashore, and those that remained there all night could do nothing, but were wet, not having daylight enough to make them a sufficient court of guard, to keep them dry. All that night it blew and rained extremely, it was so tempestuous, that the shallop could not go on land so soon as was meet, for they had no victuals on land. About 11 o'clock the shallop went off with much ado with provision, but could not return it blew so strong, and was such foul weather, that we were forced to let fall our anchor, and ride with three anchors a head.

Friday the 22d, the storm still continued, that we could not get a land, nor they come to us aboard: this morning good wife Alderton was delivered of a son, but dead born.

Saturday the 23d. So many of us as could, went on shore, felled and carried timber, to provide themselves stuff for building.

Sunday the 24th. Our people on shore heard a cry of some savages (as they thought) which caused an alarm, and to stand on their guard, expecting an assault, but all was quiet.

Monday the 25th day, we went on shore some to fell timber, some to saw, some to rive, and some to carry, so no man rested at all that day, but towards night some as they

were at work, they heard a noise of some Indians, which caused us all to go to our muskets, but we heard no further, so we came aboard again, and left some twenty to keep the court of guard; that night we had a sore storm of wind and rain.

Paragraph No. 26. is included in the foregoing.

Next follows No. 27. to the words *none at all* in the 5th line.

Next comes a new paragraph, as follows:

Tuesday, the 26th, it was foul weather, that we could not go ashore.

Wednesday, the 27th, we went to work again.

Thursday, the 28th of December, so many as could went to work on the hill, where we proposed to build our platform for our ordnance, and which doth command all the plain, and the bay, and from whence we may see far into the sea, and might be easier empaled, having two rows of houses and a fair street. So in the afternoon we went to measure out the grounds, and first, *we took notice how many families they were*, [Continue to copy from this place in paragraph 27. to the end of it.]

Then follows No. 28. to the end of it.

Then two new paragraphs, as follows:

Monday the 1st of January, we went betimes to work, we were much hindered in lying so far off from the land, and fain to go as the tide served, that we lost much, for our ship drew so much water, that she lay a mile and almost a half off, though a ship of seventy or eighty tons at high water may come to shore.

Wednesday the 3d of January, some of our people being abroad, to get and gather thatch, they saw great fires of the Indians, and were at their corn fields, yet saw none of the savages, nor had seen any of them since we came to this bay.

Now copy No. 29. entire, after which come the following paragraphs:

Friday the 5th of January, one of the sailors found alive upon the shore an herring, which the master had for his supper, which put us in hope of fish, but as yet we had got but one cod; we wanted small hooks.



Saturday 6th of January, Master Marten was very sick and to our judgment, no hope of life, so Master Carver was sent for to come abroad to speak with him about his accounts, who came the next morning.

Monday the 8th day of January was a very fair day, and we went betimes to work, Master Jones sent the shallop as he had formerly done, to see where fish could be got, they had a great storm at sea, and were in some danger, at night they returned with three great seals, and an excellent good cod, which did assure us that we should have plenty of fish shortly.

This day, Francis Billington, having the week before seen from the top of a tree on a high hill, a great sea as he thought, went with one of the master mates to see it, they went three miles, and then came to a great water divided into two great lakes, the bigger of them five or six miles in circuit, and in it an isle of a cable length square, the other three miles in compass; in their estimation they are fine fresh water, full of fish and fowl; a brook issues from it, it will be an excellent help for us in time. They found seven or eight Indian houses, but not lately inhabited, when they saw the houses they were in some fear, for they were but two persons and one piece.

Now copy No. 30. to the end; after which a new paragraph begins as follows:

Thursday, the 11th, William Bradford being at work, (for it was a fair day) was vehemently taken with a grief and pain, and so shot to his huckle bone: it was doubted that he would have instantly died, he got cold in the former discoveries, especially the last, and felt some pain in his ancles by times, but he grew a little better towards night, and in time through God's mercy in the use of means recovered.

Friday the 12th we went to work, but about noon it began to rain, that it forced us to give over work.

This day two of our people put us in great sorrow and care, there was four sent to gather and cut thatch in the morning, and two of them, John Goodman and Peter Brown, having cut thatch all the forenoon, went to a further place, and willed the other two, to bind up that which

was cut and to follow them ; so they did, being about a mile and a half from the plantation : but when the two came after, they could not find them, nor hear any thing of them at all, though they hollaed and shouted as loud as they could, so they returned to the company and told them of it : whereupon Master Leaver and three or four more went to seek them, but could hear nothing of them, so they returning, sent more, but that night they could hear nothing at all of them : the next day they armed ten or twelve men out, verily thinking the Indians had surprised them, they went seeking seven or eight miles, but could neither see nor hear any thing at all, so they returned with much discomfort to us all. These two that were missed *at dinner time took their meat in their hands, and* [Now copy from these words in paragraph 31.\* line 2. to the end of the paragraph, then continue, without beginning a new one, from the last line thereof as follows:]

*was a long while after ere he was able to go ;* “ those on the shore were much comforted at their return, but they on shipboard were grieved as deeming them lost ; but the next day being the 14th January, in the morning about six of the clock the wind being very great, they on shipboard spied their great new rendezvous on fire, which was to them a new discomfort, fearing because of the supposed loss of the men, that the savages had fired them, neither could they presently go to them for want of water but after three quarters of an hour they went, as they had proposed the day before to keep the sabbath on shore, because now there was the greater number of people. At their landing they heard good tidings of the return of the two men, and that *the house was fired occasionally by a spark that flew* [Here continue from these words in lines 1. and 2. paragraph 32. to the end of the paragraph.]

Paragraph 33. makes two paragraphs in the original. The first ends with the words *were all wet*.

Copy paragraph 34. entire, then write what follows :

Saturday 20th we made up our shed for our common goods.

\* Misprinted 34.



Sunday the 21st. We kept our meeting on land.

Monday the 22d was a fair day, we wrought on our houses, and in the afternoon carried up our hogsheds of meal to our common store house.

The rest of the week we followed our business likewise.

Monday the 29th in the morning cold frost and sleet, but after reasonable fair; both the long boat and the shallop brought our common goods on shore.

Tuesday and Wednesday 30th and 31st of January, cold frosty weather and sleet, that we could not work in the morning, the master and others saw two savages, that had been on the island near our ship, what they came for we could not tell, they were going so far back again before they were descried, that we could not speak with them.

Sunday the 4th of February, was very wet and rainy, with the greatest gusts of wind that ever we had since we came forth, that though we rid in a very good harbour, yet we were in danger, because the ship was light, the goods taken out, and she unballasted; and it caused much daubing to our houses to fall down.

Friday the 9th. Still the cold weather continued, that we could do little work. That afternoon our little house for our sick people was set on fire by a spark that kindled in the roof, but no great harm was done. That evening the master going ashore, killed five geese, which he friendly distributed among the sick people; he found also a good deer killed, the savages had cut off the horns, and a wolf was eating of him, how he came there we could not conceive.

Friday the 16th day, was a fair day, but the northerly wind continued, which continued the frost, this day afternoon one of our people being a fowling, and having taken a stand by a creek side in the reeds, about a mile and an half from our plantation, there came by him twelve Indians, marching towards our plantation, and in the woods he heard the noise of many more, he lay close till they were passed, and then with what speed he could he went home and gave the alarm, so the people abroad in the woods returned and armed themselves, but saw none of



them, only towards evening they made a great fire, about the place where they were first discovered : Captain Miles Standish, and Francis Cooke, being at work in the woods, coming home, left their tools behind them, but before they returned, their tools were taken away by the savages. This coming of the savages gave us occasion to keep more strict watch, and to make our pieces and furniture ready, which by the moisture and rain were out of temper.

Saturday the 17th day, in the morning we called a meeting for the establishing of military orders among ourselves, and we chose Miles Standish our captain, and gave him authority of command in affairs ; and as we were in consultation hereabouts two savages presented themselves upon the top of an hill, over against our plantation, about a quarter of a mile and less, and made signs unto us to come unto them, we likewise made signs unto them to come to us, whereupon we armed ourselves, and stood ready, and sent two over the brook towards them, to wit, Captain Standish and Steven Hopkins, who went towards them, only one of them had a musket, which they laid down on the ground in their sight, in sign of peace, and to parley with them, but the savages would not tarry their coming : a noise of a great many more was heard behind the hill, but no more came in sight. This caused us to plant our great ordnances in places most convenient.

Wednesday the 21st of February, the master on shore with many of his sailors and brought with him one of the great pieces called a minion, and helped us to draw it up the hill, with another piece that lay on shore, and mounted them, and a saller and two bases ; he brought with him a very fot goose to eat with us, and we had a fat crane, and a mallard, and a dried neats-tongue, and so we were kindly and friendly together.

Saturday the 3d of March, the wind was south, the morning misty, but towards noon warm and fair weather ; the birds sang in the woods most pleasantly, at one of the clock it thundered, which was the first we heard in that country, it was strong and great claps, but short, but after an hour it rained very sadly till midnight.

Wednesday, the 7th of March, the wind was full east, cold, but fair, that day Master Carver with five other went to the great ponds, which seem to be excellent fishing places; all the way they went they found it exceedingly beaten and haunted with deer, but they saw none; amongst other fowl, they saw one a milk white fowl, with a very black head; this day some garden seeds were sown.

Friday the 16th a fair warm day towards;\* this morning we determined to conclude of the military orders, which we had began to consider of before, but were interrupted by the savages, as we mentioned formerly; and whilst we were busied hereabout, we were interrupted again, for *there presented himself a savage, which caused an alarm*, [Here copy from these words in paragraph 37. (35. and 36. being included in the foregoing) to the end of paragraph 40., observing that 37. and 38. make but one paragraph, divided by a semicolon, (;) thus: "and watched him; the next day he went away back to the" &c.]

After paragraph 40. begin a new paragraph, and copy as follows:

The sabbath day when we sent them from us, we gave every of them some trifles, especially, the principal of them, we carried them along with our arms to the place where they left their bows and arrows, whereat they were amazed, and two of them began to slink away, but that the other called them, when they took their arrows, we bade them farewell, and they were glad, and so with many thanks given us they departed and promise they would come again.

Monday and Tuesday proved fair days, we digged our grounds, and sowed our garden seeds.

Wednesday a fine warm day, we sent away Samoset.

That day we had again a meeting, to conclude of laws and orders for ourselves, and to confirm those military orders that were formerly propounded, and twice broken off by the savages coming, but so we were again the third time, for after we had been an hour together, on the top

\* *A fair warm day towards*; it is so in the original; perhaps the punctuation is wrong.

of the hill over against us two or three savages presented themselves, that made semblance of daring us, as we thought, so Captain Standish with another, with their muskets went over to them, with two of the master's mates that follows them without arms, having two muskets with them, they whetted and rubbed their arrows and strings, and made shew of defiance, but when our men drew near them they ran away. Thus we were again interrupted by them; this day with much ado we got our carpenter that had been long sick of the scurvy, to fit our shallop, to fetch all from aboard.

Now copy paragraphs 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47., observing that 41. and 42. make but one paragraph; so do 43. 44. and 45.

Here ends the main Journal; it is followed by the Journey to Packanokik, thus entitled:

*A Journey to Packanokik, the habitation of the great King Massasoyt. As also our message, the answer, and entertainment we had of him.*

Now copy paragraph 48. (Coll. p. 232.) to the end of it, and at the end add what follows:

*might be acceptable amongst them.* The message was as followeth; that forasmuch as his subjects came often and without fear, upon all occasions amongst us, so we were now come unto him, and in witness of the love and good will the English bare unto him, the governour hath sent him a coat, desiring that the peace and amity that was between them and us might be continued, not that we feared them, but because we intended not to injure any, desiring to live peaceably: and as with all men, so especially with them our nearest neighbours. But whereas his people came very often, and very many together unto us, bringing for the most part their wives and children with them, they were welcome; yet we being but strangers as yet at Patuxet, alias New Plimmoth, and not knowing how our corn might prosper, we could no longer give them such entertainment as we had



done, and as we desired still to do; yet if he would be pleased to come himself, or any special friend of his desired to see us, coming from him they should be welcome; and to the end we might know them from others our governour had sent him a copper chain, desiring if any messenger should come from him to us, we might know him by bringing it with him, and hearken and give credit to his message accordingly. Also requesting him that such as have skins, should bring them to us, and that he would hinder the multitude from oppressing us with them. And whereas at our first arrival at Paomet (called by us Cape Cod) we found there corn buried in the ground, and finding no inhabitants but some graves of dead new buried, took the corn, resolving if ever we could hear of any that had right thereunto, to make satisfaction to the full for it, yet since we understand the owners thereof were fled for fear of us, our desire was either to pay them with the like quantity of corn, English meal, or any other commodities we had to pleasure them withal; requesting him that some one of his men might signify so much unto them, and we would content him for his pains. And last of all, our governour requested one favour of him, which was, that he would exchange some of their corn for seed with us, that we might try all which best agreed with the soil where we live.

With these presents and message *we set forward the tenth* [Now continue paragraph 49. from these words at the beginning thereof, and also paragraph 50. which makes but one with 49. At the end of 50. add what follows:]

*Upon this river dwelleth Massasoyt*: it cometh into the sea at Narrohiganset Bay, where the Frenchmen so much use. A ship may go many miles up it, as the savages report, and a shallop to the head of it: but so far as we saw, we are sure a shallop may.

But to return to our journey: *The next morning we brake* [Here copy paragraph 51. from these words at the beginning to the end of it.]

Next copy paragraph 52. to the end of it.

Next copy paragraph 53. and at the end of it add what follows:

*exceeding great chesnut trees.* The country in respect of the lying of it, is both champaign and hilly, like many places in England. In some places it is very rocky both above ground and in it: and though the country be wild and overgrown with woods, yet the trees stand not thick, but a man may well ride a horse amongst them.

Passing on at length, one of the company an Indian espied a man, and told the rest of it, we asked them if they feared any, they told us that if they were Narrohigganset men they would not trust them, whereat, we called for our pieces and bid them not to fear; for though they were twenty, we two alone would not care for them: but they hailing him he proved a friend, and had only two women with him: their baskets were empty, but they fetched water in their bottles, so that we drank with them and departed. After we met another man with other two women which had been at rendezvous by the salt water, and their baskets were full of roasted crab fishes, and other dried shell fish, of which they gave us, and we eat and drank with them: and gave each of the women a string of beads, and departed.

Now copy paragraphs 54. 55. 56. and 57. under the following observations:

Paragraph 54. line 10. after the word "interpreter," a new paragraph, and line 17. after the word "attired," also a new paragraph.

Paragraph 55. line 1. of page 236. after the words "unto us," a new paragraph.

Paragraphs 56. and 57. make but one paragraph. At the end of 57. add what here follows; beginning a new paragraph:

At this town of Massasoyts, where we before eat, we were again refreshed with a little fish; and bought about a handful of meal of their parched corn, which was very precious at that time of the year, and a small string of dried shell fish, as big as oysters. The latter we gave to the six savages that accompanied us, keeping the meal for ourselves, when we drank we eat each a spoonful of it with a pipe of tobacco, instead of other victuals; and of this also we could not but give them so long as it last-



ed. Five miles they led us to a house out of the way in hope of victuals : but we found no body there, and so we were but worse able to return home. That night we reached to the wear where we lay before, but the Namascheucks were returned : so that we had no hope of any thing there. One of the savages had shot a shad in the water, and a small squirrel as big as a rat, called a neuxis, the one half of either he gave us, and after went to the wear to fish. From hence he wrote to Plimouth, and sent Tokamahamon before to Namasket, willing him from thence to send another, that we might meet us with food at Namasket. Two men now only remained with us, and it pleased God to give them good store of fish, so that we were well refreshed. After supper we went to rest, and they to fishing again : more they gat and fell to eating afresh, and retained sufficient ready roast for all our breakfasts. About two o'clock in the morning arose a great storm of wind, rain, lightning and thunder, in such violent manner, that we could not keep in our fire ; and had the savages not roasted fish when we were asleep, we had set forward fasting : for the rain still continued with great violence, even the whole day through, till we came within two miles of home.

Being wet and weary, at length we came to Namaschet, there we refreshed ourselves, giving gifts to all such as had shewed us any kindness. Amongst others one of the six that came with us from Packanokik, having before this on the way unkindly forsaken us, marvelled we gave him nothing, and told us what he had done for us ; we also told him of some discourtesies he offered us, whereby he deserved nothing, yet we gave him a small trifle : whereupon he offered us tobacco : but the house being full of people, we told them he stole some by the way, and if it were of that we would not take it : for we would not receive that which was stolen upon any terms ; if we did our God would be angry with us, and destroy us. This abashed him, and gave the rest great content : but at our departure he would needs carry him on his back through a river, whom he had formerly in some sort abused. Fain they would have had us to lodge there all night : and



wondered we would set forth again in such weather : but God be praised, we came safe home that night, though wet, weary and surbated.

---

*A Voyage made by ten of our men to the Kingdom of Nauset, to seek a boy that had lost himself in the woods ; with such accidents that befell us in that voyage.*

UNDER this title copy paragraphs 58. and 59.

Then comes paragraph 60. to be copied entire, with the following addition in the 7th line :

*sachim of Nauset wherefore we came.* The savages here came very thick amongst us, and were earnest with us to bring in our boat. But we neither well could, nor yet desired to do it, because we had less cause to trust them, being they only had formerly made an assault upon us in the same place, in time of our winter discovery for habitation. And indeed it was no marvel they did so, for howsoever through snow or otherwise we saw no houses, yet we were in the midst of them.

When our boat was aground they came very thick, but we stood therein upon our guard, not suffering any to enter except two : the one being of Maramoick, and one of those, whose corn we had formerly found, we promised him restitution, and desired him either to come to Patuxet for satisfaction, or else we would bring them so much corn again, he promised to come, we used him very kindly for the present. Some few skins we gat there but not many. *After sun-set, &c.* to the end of paragraph 60.

Now copy paragraph 61. ending with the words *upon one of us*, in the last line but one ; then the following paragraphs :

Again we set out but to small purpose : for we gat but little homeward. Our water also was very brackish, and not to be drank.

The next morning, Iyanough espied us again and ran after us ; we being resolved to go to Cummaquid again to

water, took him into the shallop, whose entertainment was not inferiour unto the former.

The soil at Nauset and here is alike, even and sandy, not so good for corn as where we are ; ships may safely ride in either harbour : in the summer, they abound with fish. Being now watered, we put forth again, and by God's providence, came safely home that night.

---

*A Journey to the Kingdom of Namaschet in defence of the great King Massasoyt against the Narrohiggansets, and to revenge the supposed death of our Interpreter Tisquantum.*

At our return from Nauset, we found it true, that Massasoyt was put from his country by the Narrohiggansets. Word also was brought unto us, that one Coubatant a petty sachim or governour under Massasoyt (whom they ever feared to be too conversant with the Narrohiggansets) was at Namaschet, who sought to draw the hearts of Massasoyt's subjects from him, speaking also disdainfully of us, storming at the peace between Nauset, Cummaquid and us, and at Tisquantum the worker of it ; also at Tokamahamon, and one Hobbamock (two Indians or Lemes, one of which he would treacherously have murdered a little before, being a special and trusty man of Massasoyt's) Tokamahamon went to him, but the other two would not : yet put their lives in their hands, privately went to see if they could hear of their king, and lodging at Namaschet were discovered to Coubatant, who set a guard to beset the house and took Tisquantum (for he had said, if he were dead, the English had lost their tongue) Hobbamock seeing that Tisquantum was taken, and Coubatant held a knife at his breast, being a strong and stout man, brake from them and came to New Plim-mouth, full of fear and sorrow for Tisquantum, whom he thought to be slain.

Upon this news the company assembled together, and resolved on the morrow to send ten men armed to Namaschet and Hobbamock, for their guide, to revenge the

supposed death of Tisquantum on Coubatant our bitter enemy, and to retain Nepeof, another sachim or governor, who was of this confederacy, till we heard, what was become of our friend Massasoyt.

On the morrow we set out ten men armed, who took their journey as aforesaid, but the day proved very wet. When we supposed we were within three or four miles of Namaschet, we went out of the way and staid there till night, because we would not be discovered. There we consulted what to do, and thinking best to beset the house at midnight, each was appointed his task by the captain, all men encouraging one another to the utmost of their power.

By night our guide lost his way, which much discouraged our men, being we were wet, and weary of our arms: but one of our men having been before at Namaschet brought us into the way again.

Before we came to the town we sat down and eat such as our knapsack afforded, that being done, we threw them aside, and all such things as might hinder us, and so went on and beset the house, according to our last resolution. Those that entered, demanded if Coubatant were not there; but fear had bereft the savages of speech. We charge them not to stir, for if Coubatant were not there, we would not meddle with them, if he were, we came principally for him, to be avenged on him for the supposed death of Tisquantum, and other matters: but howsoever we would not at all hurt their women or children. Notwithstanding some of them pressed out at a private door and escaped, but with some wounds: at length perceiving our principal ends, they told us Coubatant was returned with all his train, and that Tisquantum was yet living, and in the town offering some tobacco, other such as they had to eat. In this hurley hurley we discharged two pieces at random, which much terrified all the inhabitants, except Tisquantum and Tokamahamon, who though they knew not our end in coming, yet assured them of our honesty, that we would not hurt them. Those boys that were in the house seeing our care of women, often cried Neensquaes, that is to say, I am a wo-



man : the women also hanging upon Hobbamock, calling him Towam, that is, Friend. But to be short, we kept them we had, and made them make a fire that we might see to search the house, in the mean time, Hobbamock gat on the top of the house, and called Tisquantum and Tokamahamon, which came unto us accompanied with others, some armed and others naked. Those that had bows and arrows we took them away, promising them again when it was day. The house was took for our better safeguard : but released those we had taken, manifesting whom we came for and wherefore.

On the next morning we marched into the midst of the town, and went to the house of Tisquantum to breakfast. Thither came all whose hearts were upright towards us, but all Coubatant's faction were fled away. There in the midst of them we manifested again our intendment, assuring them, that although Coubatant had now escaped us, yet there was no place should secure him and his from us if he continued his threatening us, and provoking others against us, who had kindly entertained him, and never intended evil towards him till he now so justly deserved it. Moreover, if Massasoyt did not return in safety from Narrohigganset, or if hereafter he should make any insurrection against him, or offer violence to Tisquantum, Hobbainock, or any of Massasoyt's subjects, we would revenge it upon him, to the overthrow of him and his. As for those were wounded, we were sorry for it, though themselves procured it in not staying in the house at our command : yet if they would return home with us, our surgeon should heal them.

At this offer, one man and a woman that were wounded went home with us, Tisquantum and many other known friends accompanying us, and offering all help that might be by carriage of any thing we had to ease us. So that by God's good providence we safely returned home the morrow night after we set forth.

(\*\*\*)

A.†

† Perhaps *Isaac Allerton* (or *Alderton*) is intended by this signature. From his known energy and activity, he may be presumed to be one of the men accompanying *Standish* on this expedition. In one of the early interviews with

*A Relation of our Voyage to the Massachusetts, and what happened there.*

It seemed good to the company in general, that though the Massachusetts had often threatened us (as we were informed) yet we should go amongst them, partly to see the country, partly to make peace with them, and partly to procure their truck.

For these ends the governours chose ten men, fit for the purpose, and sent Tisquantum, and two other savages to bring us to speech with the people, and interpret for us.

We set out about midnight, the tide then serving for us ; we supposing it to be nearer than it is, thought to be there the next morning betimes : but it proved well near twenty leagues from New Plimmouth.

We came into the bottom of the bay, but being late we anchored and lay in the shallop, not having seen any of the people. The next morning we put in for the shore. There we found many lobsters that had been gathered together by the savages, which we made ready under a cliff. The captain set two sentinels behind the cliff to the landward to secure the shallop, and taking a guide with him, and four of our company, went to seek the inhabitants, where they met a woman coming for her lobsters, they told her of them, and contented her for them. She told them where the people were ; Tisquantum went to them, the rest returned, having direction which way to bring the shallop to them.

The sachim, or governour of this place, is called Obbatinewat, and though he live in the bottom of the Massachusetts Bay, yet he is under Massasoyt. He used us very kindly, he told us, he durst not then remain in any settled place, for fear of the Tarentines. Also the squaw sachim or Massachusetts queen was an enemy to him.

the Indians, "Captain Standish and Isaac Alderton went venturously" to meet them. [Relation, §. 45.] It appears that this narration was written by one of the party. "On the morrow we set out," &c.

We told him of divers sachims that had acknowledged themselves to be King James his men, and if he also would submit himself, we would be his safeguard from his enemies ; which he did, and went along with us to bring us to the squaw sachim. Again we crossed the bay which is very large, and hath at least fifty islands in it : but the certain number is not known to the inhabitants. Night it was before we came to that side of the bay where this people were, on shore the savages but found no body. That night also we rid at anchor aboard the shallop.

On the morrow we went ashore, all but two men, and marched in arms up in the country. Having gone three miles, we came to a place where corn had been newly gathered, a house pulled down, and the people gone. A mile from hence, Nanepashemet their king in his life time had lived. His house was not like others, but a scaffold was largely built, with poles and planks some six foot from ground, and the house upon that, being situated on the top of a hill.

Not far from hence in a bottom, we came to a fort built by their deceased king, the manner thus ; there were poles some thirty or forty foot long, stuck in the ground as thick as they could be set one by another, and with these they enclosed a ring some forty or fifty foot over. A trench breast high was digged on each side ; one way there was to go into it with a bridge ; in the midst of this palisado stood the frame of an house, wherein being dead he lay buried.

About a mile from hence, we came to such another, but seated on the top of an hill : here Nanepashemet was killed, none dwelling in it since the time of his death. At this place we staid, and sent two savages to look the inhabitants, and to inform them of our ends in coming, that they might not be fearful of us : within a mile of this place they found the women of the place together, with their corn on heaps, whither we supposed them to be fled for fear of us, and the more, because in divers places they had newly pulled down their houses, and for haste in one place had left some of their corn covered with a mat, and no body with it.



With much fear they entertained us at first, but seeing our gentle carriage towards them, they took heart and entertained us in the best manner they could, boiling cod and such other things as they had for us, at length with much sending for came one of their men, shaking and trembling for fear. But when he saw we intended them no hurt, but came to truck, he promised us with his skins also. Of him we inquired for their queen, but it seemed she was far from thence, at least we could not see her.

Here Tisquantum would have had us rifled the savage women, and taken their skins, and all such things as might be serviceable for us; for (said he) they are a bad people, and have oft threatened you: but our answer was; were they never so bad, we would not wrong them, or give them any just occasion against us: for their words we little weighed them, but if they once attempted any thing against us, then we would deal far worse than he desired.

Having well spent the day, we returned to the shallop, almost all the women accompanying us, to truck, who sold their coats from their backs, and tied boughs about them, but with great shamefacedness (for indeed they are more modest than some of our English women are) we promised them to come again to them, and they us, to keep their skins.

Within this bay, the savages say, there are two rivers; the one whereof we saw, having a fair entrance, but we had no time to discover it. Better harbours for shipping cannot be than here are. At the entrance of the bay are many rocks: and in all likelihood very good fishing ground. Many, yea, most of the islands have been inhabited, some being cleared from end to end, but the people are all dead or removed.

Our victual growing scarce, the wind coming fair, and having a light moon, we set out at evening, and through the goodness of God, came safely home before noon the day following.

*A Letter sent from New England to a friend in these parts, setting forth a brief and true Declaration of the worth of that Plantation; as also certain useful Directions for such as intend a voyage into those parts.*

LOVING, and old friend, although I received no letter from you by this ship, yet forasmuch as I know you expect the performance of my promise, which was, to write unto you truly and faithfully on all things. I have therefore at this time sent unto you accordingly. Referring you for further satisfaction to our more large relations. You shall understand, that in this little time, that a few of us have been here, we have built seven dwelling houses, and four for the use of the plantation, and have made preparation for divers others. We set the last spring some twenty acres of Indian corn, and sowed some six acres of barley and peas, and according to the manner of Indians, we manured our ground with herrings or rather shads, which we have in great abundance, and take with great ease at our doors. Our corn did prove well, and God be praised, we had a good increase of Indian corn, and our barley indifferent good, but our peas not worth the gathering, for we feared they were too late sown, they came up very well and blossomed, but the sun parched them in the blossom; our harvest being gotten in, our governour sent four men on fowling, that so we might after a more special manner rejoice together, after we had gathered the fruit of our labours; they four in one day killed as much fowl, as with a little help beside, served the company almost a week, at which time amongst other recreations, we exercised our arms, many of the Indians coming amongst us, and amongst the rest their greatest king Massasoyt, with some ninety men, whom for three days we entertained and feasted, and they went out and killed five deer, which they brought to the plantation and bestowed on our governour, and upon the captain and others. And although it be not always so plentiful, as it was at this time with us, yet by the goodness of God, we are so far from want, that we often wish you partakers of our plenty. We have found the Indians very faithful in their covenant of peace with us; very loving and ready to pleasure us; we often

go to them, and they come to us : some of us have been fifty miles by land in the country with them : the occasions and relations whereof, you shall understand by our general and more full declaration of such things as are worth the noting, yea, it hath pleased God so to possess the Indians with a fear of us, and love unto us, that not only the greatest king amongst them called Massasoyt, but also all the princes and peoples round about us, have either made suit unto us, or been glad of any occasion to make peace with us, so that seven of them at once have sent their messengers to us to that end, yea, an isle at sea, which we never saw hath also together with the former yielded willingly to be under the protection, and subjects to our sovereign lord King James, so that there is now great peace amongst the Indians themselves, which was not formerly neither would have been but for us ; and we for our parts walk as peaceably and safely in the wood, as in the highways in England, we entertain them familiarly in our houses, and they as friendly bestowing their venison on us. They are people without any religion, or knowledge of any God, yet very trusty, quick of apprehension, ripe witted, just, the men and women go naked, only a skin about their middles ; for the temper of the air, here it agreeth well with that in England, and if there be any difference at all, this is somewhat hotter in summer, some think it to be colder in winter, but I cannot out of experience so say ; the air is very clear and not foggy, as hath been reported, I never in my life remember a more seasonable year, than we have here enjoyed : and if we have once but kine, horses, and sheep, I make no question, but men might live as contented here, as in any part of the world. For fish and fowl, we have a great abundance, fresh cod in the summer is but coarse meat with us, our bay is full of lobsters all the summer, and affordeth variety of other fish ; in September we can take hogshead of eels in a night, with small labour, and can dig them out of their beds all the winter, we have muscles and \*othus at our doors : oysters we have none near, but we can have them brought by

\*The meaning of the word *othus* we leave to conjecture. The accuracy of the copy furnished by Mr. Du Ponceau cannot be doubted. Perhaps clams were intended.



the Indians when we will ; all the spring time the earth sendeth forth naturally very good salad herbs : here are grapes, white and red, and very sweet and strong also. Strawberries, gooseberries, raspberries, &c. plums of three sorts, \*with black and red, being almost as good as a damson : abundance of roses, white, red, and damask : single, but very sweet indeed ; the country wanteth only industrious men to employ, for it would grieve your hearts (if as I) you had seen so many miles together by goodly rivers uninhabited, and withal to consider those parts of the world wherein you live, to be even greatly burthened with abundance of people. These things I thought good to let you understand, being the truth of things as near as I could experimentally take knowledge of, and that you might on our behalf give God thanks who hath dealt so favourably with us.

Our supply of men from you came the ninth of November 1621 putting in at Cape Cod, some eight or ten leagues from us, the Indians that dwell thereabout were they who were owners of the corn which we found in caves, for which we have given them full content, and are in great league with them, they sent us word there was a ship near unto them, but thought it to be a Frenchman, and indeed for ourselves, we expected not a friend so soon. But when we perceived that she made for our bay, the governour commanded a great piece to be shot off, to call home such as were abroad at work ; whereupon every man, yea, boy that could handle a gun were ready, with full resolution, that if she were an enemy, we would stand in our just defence, not fearing them, but God provided better for us than we supposed ; these came all in health unto us, not any being sick by the way (otherwise than by sea-sickness) and so continue at this time, by the blessing of God the good wife Ford was delivered of a son the first night she landed, and both of them are very well. When it pleaseth God we are settled and fitted for the fishing business, and other trading, I doubt not but by the blessing of God, the gain will give content to all ; in the mean time, that we have gotten we have sent by this ship, and though it be not much,

\* Probably misprinted for *white*. Ed.

yet it will witness for us, that we have not been idle, considering the smallness of our number all this summer. We hope the merchants will accept of it, and be encouraged to furnish us with thing needful for further employment, which will also encourage us to put forth ourselves to the uttermost. Now because I expect your coming unto us with other of our friends, whose company we much desire, I thought good to advertise you of a few things needful; be careful to have a very good bread room to put your biscuits in, let your cask for beer and water be iron-bound for the first tire if not more; let not your meat be dry salted, none can better do it than the sailors; let your meal be so hard trod in your cask that you shall need an adze or hatchet to work it out with: trust not too much on us for corn at this time, for by reason of this last company that came depending wholly upon us, we shall have little enough to harvest; be careful to come by some of your meal to spare by the way, it will much refresh you, build your cabins open as you can and bring good store of clothes, and \*being with you; bring every man a musket or fowling piece, let your piece be long in the barrel, and far not the weight of it, for most of our shooting is from stands; bring juice of lemons, and take it fasting, it is of good use; for hot waters, aniseed water is the best, but use it sparingly: if you bring any thing for comfort in the country, butter or salad oil, or both is very good; our Indian corn even the coarsest, maketh as pleasant meat as rice, therefore spare that unless to spend by the way; bring paper, and linseed oil for your windows, with cotton yarn for your lamps, let your shot be most for big fowls, and bring store of powder and shot; I forbear further to write for the present, hoping to see you by the next return, so I take my leave, commending you to the Lord for a safe conduct unto us, resting in him

Your loving friend

E. W.†

*Plimouth in New England this*

*11th of December, 1621.*

\* Perhaps bedding is meant. Ed.

† Edward Winslow.

*Reasons and Considerations touching the lawfulness of removing out of England into the parts of America.*

The Pre-  
amble.

FORASMUCH as many exceptions are daily made against the going into, and inhabiting of foreign desert places, to the hinderance of plantations abroad, and the increase of distractions at home : it is not amiss that some which have been ear witnesses of the exceptions made, and are either agents or abettors of such removals and plantations, do seek to give content to the world, in all things that possibly they can.

And although the most of the opposites are such as either dream of raising their fortunes here, to that than which there is nothing more unlike, or such as affecting their home-born country so vehemently, as that they had rather with all their friends beg, yea starve in it, than undergo a little, difficulty in seeking abroad : yet are there some who out of doubt in tenderness of conscience, and fear to offend God by running before they be called, are straitened and do straiten others, from going to foreign plantations.

For whose cause especially, I have been drawn out of my good affection to them, to publish some reasons that might give them content and satisfaction, and also stay and stop the wilful and witty caviller : and herein I trust I shall not be blamed of any godly wise, though through my slender judgment I should miss the mark, and not strike the nail on the head, considering it is the first attempt that hath been made (that I know of) to defend those enterprises. Reason would therefore, that if any man of deeper reach and better judgment see further or otherwise, that he rather instruct me than deride me.



And being studious for brevity, we must first consider, that whereas God of old did call and summon our fathers by predictions, dreams, visions, and certain illuminations to go from their countries, places and habitations to reside and dwell here or there, and to wander up and down from city to city, and land to land, according to his will and pleasure. Now there is no such calling to be expected for any matter whatsoever, neither must any so much as imagine that there will now be any such thing. God did once train up his people, but now he doth not, but speaks in another manner, and so we must apply ourselves to God's present dealing, and to his wonted dealing: and as the miracle of giving manna ceased, when the fruits of the land became plenty, so God having such a plentiful storehouse of directions in his holy word, there must not now any extraordinary revelations be expected.

Cautions.  
Gen. 12. 1.  
29. & 35. 1.

Mat. 2. 19.  
Cal. 105. 13.

Heb. 1. 1, 2.

Josh. 5. 12.

But now the ordinary examples and precepts of the scriptures reasonably and rightly understood and applied, must be the voice and word, that must call us, and direct us in every action.

Neither is there any land or possession now, like unto the possession which the Jews had in Canaan, being legally holy and appropriated unto a holy people the seed of Abraham, in which they dwelt securely, and had their days prolonged, it being by an immediate voice said, that he (the Lord) gave it them as a land of rest after their weary travels, and a type of eternal rest in heaven, but now there is no land of that sanctimony, no land so appropriated; none typical; much less any that can be said to be given of God to any nation as was Canaan, which they and their seed must dwell in till God sendeth upon them sword or captivity: but now we are all in all places strangers and pilgrims, travellers and sojourners, most properly, having no

Gen. 17. 8.

2. Cor.  
5. 1, 2. 3.

So were the Jews but yet their temporal blessings and inheritances were more large than ours.

dwelling but in this earthen tabernacle; our dwelling is but a wandering, and our abiding but as a fleeting, and in a word our home is no where, but in the heavens; in that house not made with hands, whose maker and builder is God, and to which all ascend that love the coming of our Lord Jesus.

Object.

Though then, there may be reasons to persuade a man to live in this or that land, yet there cannot be the same reasons which the Jews had, but now as natural, civil and religious bands tie men, so they must be bound, and as good reasons for things terrene and heavenly appear, so they must be led. And so here falleth in our question, how a man that is here born and bred, and hath lived some years, may remove himself into another country.

Ans. 1.

What person may hence remove.

I answer, a man must not respect only to live, and do good to himself, but he should see where he can live to do most good to others; for as one saith, *He whose living is but for himself, it is time he were dead.* Some men there are who of necessity must here live, as being tied to duties either to church, commonwealth, household, kindred, &c. but others, and that many, who do no good in none of those nor can do none, as being not able, or not in favour, or as wanting opportunity, and live as outcasts: nobodies, eye sores, eating but for themselves, teaching but themselves, and doing good to none, either in soul or body, and so pass over days, years and months, yea so live and so die. Now such should lift up their eyes and see whether there be not some other place and country to which they may go to do good and have use towards others of that knowledge, wisdom, humanity, reason, strength, skill, faculty, &c. which God hath given for the service of others and his own glory.

2. Why they should remove.

But not to pass the bounds of modesty so far as to name any, though I confess I know many, who sit here still with their talent in a napkin, having notable endowments both of body and mind, and might do great good if they were in some places, which here do none, nor can do none, and yet through fleshly fear, niceness, straitness of heart, &c. sit still and look on, and will not hazard a drachm of health, nor a day of pleasure, nor an hour of rest to further the knowledge and salvation of the sons of Adam in that new world, where a drop of the knowledge of Christ is most precious, which is here not set by. Now what shall we say to such a profession of Christ, to which is joined no more denial of a man's self? But some will say, what right have I to go live in the heathens' country?

Luk. 19. 20.

Reas. 1.

Object.

Answ.

Letting pass the ancient discoveries, contracts and agreements which our Englishmen have long since made in those parts, together with the acknowledgment of the histories and chronicles of other nations who profess the land of America from the Cape de Florida unto the Bay of Canado (which is south and north three hundred leagues and upwards; and east and west, further than yet hath been discovered) is proper to the king of England, yet letting that pass, lest I be thought to meddle further than it concerns me, or further than I have discerning: I will mention such things as are within my reach, knowledge, sight and practice, since I have travailed in these affairs.

And first seeing we daily pray for the conversion of the heathens, we must consider whether there be not some ordinary means, and course for us to take to convert them, or whether prayer for them be only referred to God's extraordinary work from heaven. Now it seemeth unto me that we ought also to endeavour and use the means to convert them or they come

Reas 2.



to us; to us they cannot come, our land is full, to them we may go, their land is empty.

Reas. 3.

This then is a sufficient reason to prove our going thither to live, lawful: their land is spacious and void and there are few and do but run over the grass, as do also the foxes, and wild beasts: they are not industrious, neither have art, science, skill or faculty to use either the land or the commodities of it, but all spoils, rots, and is marred for want of manuring, gathering, ordering, &c. As the ancient patriarchs therefore removed from straiter places into more roomy, where the land lay idle and waste, and none used it, though there dwelt inhabitants by them, as Gen. 13. 6. 11. 12. and 34. 21. and 41. 20. So is it lawful now to take a land which none useth, and make use of it.

Reas. 4.

It is to be considered as respecting New England and the territories about the plantation.

And as it is common land or unused and undressed country; so we have it by common consent, composition and agreement, which agreement is double: First the imperial governour Massasoit, whose circuits in likelihood are larger than England and Scotland, hath acknowledged the king majesty of England to be his master and commander, and that once in my hearing, yea and in writing, under his hand to Captain Standish, both he and many other kings which are under him, as Pamet, Nauset, Cummaquid, Narrowbiggonset, Namaschet, &c. with divers others that dwell about the bays of Patuxet; and Massachusetts: neither hath this been accomplished by threats and blows, or shaking of sword, and sound of trumpet, for as our faculty that way is small, and our strength less: so our warring with them is after another manner, namely by friendly usage, love, peace, honest and just carriages, good counsel, &c. that so we and they may not only live in peace in that land, and they yield subjection to an earthly prince, but that as voluntaries they may be persuaded at length

to embrace the prince of peace Christ Jesus, and rest in peace with him for ever.

Secondly, this composition is also more particular and applicatory, as touching ourselves there inhabiting: the emperour by a joint consent, hath promised and appointed us to live at peace, where we will in all his dominions, taking what place we will, and as much land as we will, and bringing as many people as we will, and that for these two causes. First because we are the servants of James king of England, whose the land (as he confesseth) is, 2. because he hath found us just, honest, kind and peaceable, and so loves our company: yea, and that in these things there is no dissimulation on his part, nor fear of breach (except our security engender in them some unthought of treachery, or our incivilities provoke them to anger) is most plain in other relations, which shew that the things they did were more out of love than out of fear.

It being then first a vast and empty chaos: secondly acknowledged the right of our sovereign king: thirdly, by a peaceable composition in part possessed of divers of his loving subjects, I see not who can doubt or call in question the lawfulness of inhabiting or dwelling there, but that it may be as lawful for such as are not tied upon some special occasion here, to live there as well as here, yea, and as the enterprise is weighty and difficult, so the honour is more worthy, to plant a rude wilderness, to enlarge the honour and fame of our dread sovereign, but chiefly to display the efficacy of power of the gospel both in zealous preaching, professing, and wise walking under it, before the faces of these poor blind infidels.

As for such as object the tediousness of the voyage thither, the danger of pirates' robbery, of the savages' treachery, &c: these are but lions

in the way, and it were well for such men if they were in heaven, for who can shew them a place in this world where iniquity shall not compass them at the heels, and where they shall have a day without grief, or a lease of life for a moment; and who can tell but God, what dangers may lie at our doors, even in our native country, or what plots may be abroad, or when God will cause our sun to go down at noon days, and in the midst of our peace and security, lay upon us some lasting scourge for our so long neglect and contempt of his most glorious gospel.

Ob. But we have here great peace, plenty of the gospel, and many sweet delights and variety of comforts.

Answ. True indeed, and far be it from us to deny and diminish the least of these mercies, but have we rendered unto God thankful obedience for his long peace, whilst other peoples have been at wars? Have we not rather murmured, repined, and fallen at ears amongst ourselves, whilst our peace hath lasted with foreign power? Was there ever more suits in law, more envy, contempt and reproach than nowadays? Abraham and Lot departed asunder when there fell a breach betwixt them, which was occasioned by the straitness of the land: and surely I am persuaded, that howsoever the frailties of men are principal in all contentions, yet the straitness of the place is such, as each man is fain to pluck his means as it were out of his neighbour's throat, there is such pressing and oppressing in town and country, about farms, trade, traffick, &c. so as a man can hardly any where set up a trade but he shall pull down two of his neighbours.

The towns abound with young tradesmen, and the hospitals are full of the ancient, the country is replenished with new farmers, and



the alms-houses are filled with old labourers, many there are who get their living with bearing burdens, but more are fain to burden the land with their whole bodies : multitudes get their means of life by prating, and so do numbers more by begging. Neither come these straits upon men always through intemperance, ill husbandry, indiscretion, &c. as some think, but even the most wise, sober, and discreet men, go often to the wall, when they have done their best, wherein as God's providence swayeth all, so it is easy to see, that the straitness of the place having in it so many strait hearts, cannot but produce such effects more and more, so as every indifferent minded man should be ready to say with father Abraham, *Take thou the right hand, and I will take the left* : let us not thus oppress, straiten, and afflict one another, but seeing there is a spacious land, the way to which is through the sea, we will end this difference in a day.

That I speak nothing about the bitter contention that hath been about religion, by writing, disputing and inveighing earnestly one against another, the heat of which zeal if it were turned against the rude barbarism of the heathens, it might do more good in a day, than it hath done here in many years. Neither of the little love to the gospel, and profit which is made by the preachers in most places, which might easily drive the zealous to the heathens who no doubt if they had but a drop of that knowledge which here flieth about the streets, would be filled with exceeding great joy and gladness, as that they would even pluck the kingdom of heaven by violence, and take it as it were by force.

The greatest let that is yet behind is the sweet fellowship of friends, and the satiety of bodily delights. The last let.

But can there be two nearer friends almost than Abraham and Lot, or than Paul and Barnabas, and yet upon as little occasions as we have here, they departed asunder, two of them being patriarchs of the church of old; the other the apostles of the church which is new; and their covenants were such as it seemeth might bind as much as any covenant between men at this day, and yet to avoid greater inconveniences they departed asunder.

James 3. 6.

Neither must men take so much thought for the flesh, as not to be pleased except they can pamper their bodies with variety of dainties. Nature is content with little, and health is much endangered, by mixtures upon the stomach: the delights of the palate do often inflame the vital parts: as the tongue setteth a fire the whole body. Secondly, varieties here are not common to all, but many good men are glad to snap at a crust. The rent taker lives on sweet morsels, but the rent payer eats a dry crust often with watery eyes; and it is nothing to say what some one of a hundred hath, but what the bulk, body and commonality hath, which I warrant you is short enough.

And they also which now live so sweetly, hardly will their children attain to that privilege, but some circumventor or other will outstrip them, and make them sit in the dust, to which men are brought in one age, but cannot get out of it again in seven generations.

To conclude, without all partiality, the present consumption which groweth upon us here, whilst the land groaneth under so many close-fisted and unmerciful men, being compared with the easiness, plainness and plentifulness in living in those remote places, may quickly persuade any man to a liking of this course, and to practise a removal, which being done by honest,

godly and industrious men, they shall there be right heartily welcome, but for other dissolute and profane life, their rooms are better than their companies; for if here where the gospel hath been so long and plentifully taught, they are yet frequent in such vices as the heathen would shame to speak of, what will they be when there is less restraint in word and deed? My only suit to all men is, that whether they live there or here, they would learn to use this world as they used it not, keeping faith and a good conscience, both with God and men, that when the day of account shall come, they may come forth as good and fruitful servants, and freely be received, and enter into the joy of their master.

R. C.\*

FINIS.

\* Probably *Robert Cushman*, who returned to England in the ship *Fortune*, in which the preceding *Relation* was transmitted. It is to this *Relation*, and the accompanying documents, that Mr. Winslow probably refers, in a Postscript to his *Good Newes from New England*. "If any man desire a more ample relation of the state of this countrie, before such time as this present relation taketh place, I referre them to the two former printed bookes: the one published by the President and Councell for New England, and the other gathered by the *Inhabitants of this present plantation at Plimouth in New England*. Both which bookes are to be sold by *John Bellamy*, at his shop at the three golden lions, in Corn-hill neere the Royall Exchange."—We have therefore in the *Relation* the contribution of several of the company. Could they have anticipated the interest which their narrative was to excite in after times, they would have left us probably some more certain indications of the writers. The first part, from a correspondence in expression in several instances with the portions of *Bradford's* history given by Mr. Prince, may be supposed to have been written by him, or extracted principally from his manuscripts. The Journey to *Packanokik*, we may ascribe to *Winslow*, who went on that expedition. The Journey to *Namaschet* we have supposed to have been written by *Allerton*. These conjectures however are to be tested by further examination, and we are left to conjecture who wrote the voyages to *Nauset* and to *Massachuset*.

It is observable, that there is no mention of the death of *Governour Carver*. There is a chasm in the narrative from March 23, until the commencement of the Journey to *Packanokik*, July 2d; and in this interval the death of *Carver* and of his wife occurred. As there was evidently a recurrence to *Bradford's* MSS. for the first part of the *Relation*, if indeed he were not the sole compiler of that portion, it seems difficult to account for this omission, especially as we find distinct and emphatic mention of this affliction, in his MS. history, as copied in *Prince's Annals*. Are we to suppose, that this discouraging circumstance was suppressed by those who directed the publication in England, to prevent unfavourable impressions against the country and climate?



[THE foregoing paper, for which the Historical Society acknowledges its obligation to the Hon. Mr. Du Ponceau of Philadelphia, supplies the deficiencies in the abridgment of Mourt's Relation, published by us, from the fifth volume of Purchas's Pilgrims, in the VIII volume of our first series, pp. 203—239. At that time, 1802, the original was not known to be in our country, and Harvard College library contained the only copy of Purchas's abridgment. The same venerable compilation supplied us with the most important part of Winslow's Relation, abbreviated in the same way with Mourt, and published by us in immediate succession in the same volume of our Collections pp. 239—276. The copious treasures of the Ebeling library, recently added to our University at Cambridge, contain the original tract, which we have resolved to give in the same manner. Ed.]

## GOOD NEWES FROM NEW ENGLAND :

OR

*A True Relation of things very remarkable at the Plantation of Plimoth in New England.*

*Shewing the wondrous providence and goodness of God, in their preservation and continuance, being delivered from many apparent deaths and dangers.*

*Together with a Relation of such religious and civil laws and customs, as are in practice amongst the Indians adjoining to them at this day. As also what commodities are there to be raised for the maintenance of that and other Plantations in the said country.*

*Written by E. W. who hath borne a part in the fore-named troubles, and there lived since their first arrival.*

*Whereunto is added by him a brief Relation of a credible intelligence of the present estate of Virginia.*

LONDON: Printed by I. D. for William Bladen and John Bellamie, and are to be sold at their shops, at the Bible in Paul's Church-yard, and at the three Golden Lions in Corn-hill, near the Royal Exchange. 1624.

---

### THE EPISTLE DEDICATORY.

*To all well-willers and furtherers of Plantations in New England; especially to such as ever have or desire to assist, the people of Plimoth in their just proceedings, grace, and peace, be multiplied.*

RIGHT honourable and worshipful gentlemen, or whatsoever: Since it hath pleased God to stir you up to be

instruments of his glory, in so honourable an enterprise as the enlarging of his majesty's dominions, by planting his loyal subjects in so healthful and hopeful a country as New England is; where the church of God being seated in sincerity, there is no less hope of convincing the heathen of their evil ways, and converting them to the true knowledge and worship of the living God, and so consequently the salvation of their souls by the merits of Jesus Christ, than elsewhere though it be much talked on, and lightly or lamely prosecuted. I therefore think it but my duty to offer the view of our proceedings to your worthy considerations, having to that end composed them together thus briefly as you see; wherein to your great encouragement, you may behold the good providence of God working with you in our preservation from so many dangerous plots and treacheries, as have been intended against us; as also in giving his blessing so powerfully upon the weak means we had, enabling us with health and ability beyond expectation, in our greatest scarcities, and possessing the hearts of the savages with astonishment and fear of us, whereas if God had let them loose, they might easily have swallowed us up, scarce being an handful in comparison of those forces they might have gathered together against us, which now by God's blessing will be more hard and difficult, in regard our number of men is increased, our town better fortified, and our store better victualed. Blessed therefore be his name, that hath done so great things for us, and hath wrought so great a change amongst us.

Accept I pray you my weak endeavours, pardon my unskilfulness, and bear with my plainness in the things I have handled. Be not discouraged by our former necessities, but rather encouraged with us, hoping that as God hath wrought with us in our beginning of this worthy work, undertaken in his name and fear: so he will by us accomplish the same to his glory and our comfort, if we neglect not the means. I confess, it hath not been much less chargeable to some of you, than hard and difficult to us, that have endured the brunt of the battle, and yet small profits returned: only by God's mercy we are

safely seated, housed, and fortified, by which means a great step is made unto gain, and a more direct course taken for the same, than if at first we had rashly and covetously fallen upon it.

Indeed, three things are the overthrow and bane (as I may term it) of plantations.

1. The vain expectation of present profit, which too commonly taketh a principal seat in the heart and affection: though God's glory, &c. is preferred before it in the mouth with protestation.

2. Ambition in their governours and commanders, seeking only to make themselves great, and slaves of all that are under them, to maintain a transitory base honour in themselves, which God oft punisheth with contempt.

3. The carelessness of those that send over supplies of men unto them, not caring how they be qualified: so that oft times they are rather the image of men endued with bestial, yea, diabolical affections, than the image of God, endued with reason, understanding and holiness. I praise God I speak not these things experimentally, by way of complaint of our own condition, but having great cause on the contrary part to be thankful to God for his mercies towards us: but rather, if there be any too desirous of gain, to entreat them to moderate their affections, and consider that no man expecteth fruit before the tree be grown; advising all men, that as they tender their own welfare, so to make choice of such to manage and govern their affairs, as are approved not to be seekers of themselves, but the common good of all for whom they are employed; and beseeching such as have the care of transporting men for the supply and furnishing of plantations, to be truly careful in sending such as may further and not hinder so good an action. There is no godly honest man, but will be helpful in his kind, and adorn his profession with an upright life and conversation, which doctrine of manners ought first to be preached by giving good example to the poor savage heathens amongst whom they live. On the contrary part, what great offence hath been given by many profane men, who being but seeming christians, have made Christ and christianity



stink in the nostrils of the poor infidels, and so laid a stumbling block before them: *but woe be to them by whom such offences come.*

These things I offer to your christian considerations, beseeching you to make a good construction of my simple meaning, and take in good part this ensuing relation, dedicating myself and it evermore unto your service; beseeching God to crown our christian and faithful endeavours with his blessings temporal and eternal.

Yours in this service, ever to be commanded:

E. W.

---

*To the Reader.*

Good reader, when I first penned this discourse, I intended it chiefly for the satisfaction of my private friends, but since that time have been persuaded to publish the same: and the rather, because of a disorderly colony that are dispersed, and most of them returned, to the great prejudice and damage of him that sent them forth; who as they were a stain to Old England that bred them, in respect of their lives and manners amongst the Indians: so it is to be feared, will be no less to New England in their vile and clamorous reports, because she would not foster them in their desired idle courses. I would not be understood to think there were no well-deserving persons amongst them: for of mine own knowledge it was a grief to some that they were so yoked; whose deserts as they were then suitable to their honest protestations, so I desire still may be, in respect of their just and true relations.

Peradventure thou wilt rather marvel that I deal so plainly, than any way doubt of the truth of this my relation, yea it may be tax me therewith, as seeming rather to discourage men, than any way to further so noble an action? If any honest mind be discouraged, I am sorry, sure I am, I have given no just cause; and am so far from being discouraged myself, as I purpose to return forthwith. And for other light and vain persons, if they

stumble hereat I have my desire, accounting it better for them and us that they keep where they are, as being unfit and unable to perform so great a task.

Some faults have escaped because I could not attend on the press, which I pray thee correct as thou findest, and I shall account it as a favour unto me.

Thine

E. W.

---

*A brief Relation of a credible intelligence of the present estate of Virginia.*

AT the earnest entreaty of some of my much respected friends, I have added to the former discourse, a relation of such things as were credibly reported at Plimoth in New England in September last past, concerning the present estate of Virginia. And because men may doubt how we should have intelligence of their affairs, being we are so far distant, I will therefore satisfy the doubtful therein. Captain Francis West being in New England about the latter end of May past, sailed from thence to Virginia, and returned in August: in September the same ship and company being discharged by him at Damarins Cove, came to New Plimoth, where upon our earnest inquiry after the state of Virginia since that bloody slaughter committed by the Indians upon our friends and countrymen, the whole ships company agreed in this; viz. that upon all occasions they chased the Indians to and fro, insomuch, as they sued daily unto the English for peace, who for the present would not admit of any; that Sir George Early, &c. was at that present employed upon service against them; that amongst many others, Opachancano the chief emperour was supposed to be slain, his son also was killed at the same time. And though by reason of these fore-named broils in the fore part of the year, the English had undergone great want of food, yet through God's mercy there was never more shew of plenty, having as much and as good corn on the ground as ever they had; neither was the hopes of their tobacco crop inferiour to that

of their corn : so that the planters were never more full of encouragement, which I pray God long to continue, and so to direct both them and us, as his glory may be the principal aim and end of all our actions, and that for his mercies' sake, Amen.

FINIS.



*Good Newes from New England.*

[DIFFERENCES BETWEEN THE ORIGINAL PUBLICATION AND THE ABRIDGMENT.]

Note. The paragraphs are not numbered in the original ; the numbers in the Hist. Coll. will be used here only for references.]

AT the end of No. 1. what follows is wanting : “ But our governours not knowing what to make of this strange carriage, and comparing it with that we had formerly heard, committed him to the custody of Captain Standish, hoping now to know some certainty of that we so often heard, either by his own relation to us, or to Tisquantum at his return, desiring myself, having special familiarity with the other fore-named Indian, to see if I could learn any thing from him, whose answer was sparingly to this effect ; that he could not certainly tell, but thought they were enemies to us. That night Captain Standish gave me and another charge of him, and gave us order to use him kindly, and that he should not want any thing he desired, and to take all occasions to talk and inquire of the reasons of those reports we heard, and withal to signify that upon his true relation he should be sure of his own freedom. At first fear so possessed him, that he could scarce say any thing : but in the end became more familiar, and told us that the messenger which his master sent in summer to treat of peace, at his return persuaded him rather to war ; and to the end he might provoke him thereunto, (as appeared to him by our reports) detained many of the things were sent him by our governour, scorning the meanness of them both in respect of what himself



had formerly sent, and also of the greatness of his own person; so that he much blamed the former messenger, saying, that upon the knowledge of this his false carriage, it would cost him his life; but assured us that upon his relation of our speech then with him to his master, he would be friends with us. Of this we informed the governour and his assistant, and Captain Standish, who after consultation considered him howsoever but in the state of a messenger, and it being as well against the law of arms amongst them as us in Europe, to lay violent hands on any such, set him at liberty, the governour giving him order to certify his master that he had heard of his large and many threatenings, at which he was much offended, daring him in those respects to the utmost, if he would not be reconciled to live peaceably as other his neighbours; manifesting withal (as ever) his desire of peace; but his fearless resolution, if he could not so live amongst them. After which he caused meat to be offered him, but he refused to eat, making all speed to return, and giving many thanks for his liberty. But requesting the other Indian again to return, the weather being violent, he used many words to persuade him to stay longer, but could not. Whereupon he left him, and said he was with his friends, and would not take a journey in such extremity."

No. 2 begins "After this *when Tisquantum returned,*"

In No. 3 no change is discovered, except in line 6 of p. 241 "whom he thought *most fit,*" and in line 22 of same page "backs *towards* the fire." At the 16 line it is broken into another paragraph.

No. 4 wants at the end what follows: "To confirm this his jealousy he told us of many secret passages that passed between him and others, having their meetings ordinarily abroad in the woods: but if at home howsoever he was excluded from their secrecy, saying it was the manner of the Indians when they meant plainly to deal openly: but in this his practice there was no shew of honesty.

"Hereupon the governour, together with his assistant and Captain Standish, called together such, as by them were thought most meet for advice in so weighty a busi-

ness, who after consideration hereof came to this resolution : that as hitherto upon all occasions between them and us, we had ever manifested undaunted courage and resolution, so it would not now stand with our safety to mew up ourselves in our new-enclosed town, partly because our store was almost empty, and therefore must seek out for our daily food, without which we could not long subsist ; but especially for that thereby they would see us dismayed, and be encouraged to prosecute their malicious purposes, with more eagerness than ever they intended : whereas on the contrary, by the blessing of God, our fearless carriage might be a means to discourage and weaken their proceedings. And therefore thought best to proceed in our trading voyage, making this use of that we heard, to go the better provided, and use the more carefulness both at home and abroad, leaving the event to the disposing of the Almighty, whose providence as it had hitherto been over us for good, so we had now no cause (save our sins) to despair of his mercy in our preservation and continuance, where we desired rather to be instruments of good to the heathens about us, than to give them the least measure of just offence."

No. 5 begins instead of "*Notwithstanding*," in this manner : "All things being now in readiness"; and in line 3 it reads "but *we had* no sooner turned the point," and in line 22 after the word "*end*" inserts "that," and in line 32 reads "*chiefest* champions," and closes with this additional relation : "To this the governour answered, he should be sorry that any just and necessary occasions of war should arise between him and any the savages, but especially Massassowat, not that he feared him more than the rest, but because his love more exceeded towards him than any. Whereunto Hobbamock replied ; There was no cause wherefore he should distrust him, and therefore should do well to continue his affections."

No. 6 begins, "But to the end things might be made more manifest," *the governour caused*, &c.

In No. 7 insert after line 15, "Now though he could not make good these his large promises, especially because of the continued peace between Massassowat and



us, he therefore raised this false alarum, hoping whilst things were hot in the heat of blood, to provoke us to march into his country against him, whereby he hoped to kindle such a flame as would not easily be quenched, and hoping if that block were once removed, there were no other between him and honour; which he loved as his life, and preferred before his peace. For these and the like abuses, the governour sharply reprov'd him, yet was he so necessary and profitable an instrument, as at that time we could not miss him."

Nos. 9, 10, 11 and 12 form but one paragraph in the original. In the last line but three of No. 9 it reads "*had* deserved to die." In last line but one of No. 10, after "*sent his own knife*," reads "and them therewith."

In No. 14, last line but one, original has "reporting of."

The words "not being" in line 5 of page 246 are transposed. The same change occurs in line 17 of No. 49.

In the tenth line of No. 16 "*said*" is printed for "saith."

No. 18 has in the tenth line "*most* fit," and at the end should be a semicolon (;), and conclude with these words, "not sparing to requite the love we shewed them, with secret backbitings, revilings, &c. the chief of them being forestalled and made against us, before they came, as after appeared: Nevertheless for their master's sake, who formerly had deserved well from us, we continued to do them whatsoever good or furtherance we could, attributing these things to the want of conscience and discretion, expecting each day, when God in his providence would disburden us of them, sorrowing that their overseers were not of more ability and fitness for their places, and much fearing what would be the issue of such raw and unconscionable beginnings."

At the beginning of No. 23, after the words, "*Both colonies being thus agreed*," should be inserted "and their companies fitted and joined together, we resolved to set forward, but were oft crossed in our purposes; as first Master Richard Greene, brother in law to Master Weston, who from him had a charge in the oversight and government of his colony, died suddenly at our plantation, to whom we gave burial befitting his place, in the best man-



ner we could. Afterward, having further order to proceed by letter from their other governour at the Massachusetts, twice Captain Standish set forth with them, but were driven in again by cross and violent winds: himself the second time being sick of a violent fever. By reason whereof (our own wants being like to be now greater than formerly; partly, because we were enforced to neglect our corn, and spend much time in fortification, but especially because such havock was made of that little we had, through the unjust and dishonest carriage of those people before mentioned, at our first entertainment of them)..... and in line 3 "again" before "*set forth.*" The paragraph includes also Nos. 24 and 25, omitting the word "*that*" on page 250, line 4.

In the original, Nos. 26, 27 and 28 form but one paragraph, and in line 4 of page 251 reads "places" instead of "*parts,*" and line 9 "being small." The last sentence but one of No. 27, after "*not be further broken,*" has a comma (,) and proceeds, "promising ere long to fetch both it and the corn; assuring them, if neither were diminished, he would take it as a sign of their honest and true friendship, which they so much made shew of, but if they were, they should certainly smart for their unjust and dishonest dealing, and further make good whatsoever they had so taken. So he did likewise at Mattachiest, and took leave of them, being resolved to leave the ship, and take his journey home by land with our own company, sending word to the ship, that they should take their first opportunity to go for Plimouth where he determined, by the permission of God to meet them." The conclusion of No. 28 is, "save *the* shallop."

Nos. 29 and 30 are but one paragraph.

Nos. 31, 32 and 33 are but one paragraph.

Nos. 34 and 35 are one paragraph, and line 13 of No. 35 reads "return *them* again."

Nos. 36, 37, 38, 39, and 40 make one paragraph, and line 4 of No. 36 reads "hoping *also* to get more," and line 8 of No. 37 "*had* formerly concluded."

Nos. 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46 and 47 make one paragraph, and line 4 of page 258 reads "the governour *again*

laid this service upon myself," and the last line but one of No. 44 "the Dutchmen departed," and line 6 of No. 46 has "this *his* extremity," and line 9, after "*conserves*," adds "&c." The last sentence on page 260 ends thus, "which gave him and us good encouragement," and line 14 of page 261 reads "send *me* such things." In No. 47, after "*somewhat troubled me*" in line 6, is omitted, "being unaccustomed and unacquainted in such businesses, especially having nothing to make it comfortable, my consort being as ignorant as myself;" and proceeds, "but being *we* must do." The conclusion of No 47, after "poisonous savours," is: "After dinner he desired me to get him a goose or duck, and make him some pottage therewith, with as much speed as I could: so I took a man with me, and made a shot at a couple of ducks, some six score paces off, and killed one, at which he wondered: so we returned forthwith, and dressed it, making more broth therewith, which he much desired; never did I see a man so low brought, recover in that measure in so short a time. The fowl being extraordinary fat, I told Hobbamock I must take off the top thereof, saying it would make him very sick again if he did eat it; this he acquainted Massassowat therewith, who would not be persuaded to it, though I pressed it very much, shewing the strength thereof, and the weakness of his stomach, which could not possibly bear it. Notwithstanding he made a gross meal of it, and ate as much as would well have satisfied a man in health. About an hour after he began to be very sick, and straining very much, cast up the broth again, and in overstraining himself, began to bleed at the nose, and so continued the space of four hours; then they all wished he had been ruled, concluding now he would die, which we much feared also. They asked me what I thought of him; I answered, his case was desperate, yet it might be it would save his life: for if it ceased in time, he would forthwith sleep and take rest, which was the principal thing he wanted. Not long after his blood stayed, and he slept at least six or eight hours; when he awaked I washed his face, and bathed and suppled his beard and nose with a linen cloth: but on a sudden he

chopped his nose in the water, and drew up some therein, and sent it forth again with such violence, as he began to bleed afresh, then they thought there was no hope, but we perceived it was but the tenderness of his nostril, and therefore told them I thought it would stay presently, as indeed it did."

In No. 48, after "*hundred miles*," is omitted what follows: "To all that came one of his chief men related the manner of his sickness, how near he was spent, how amongst others his friends the English came to see him, and how suddenly they recovered him to this strength they saw, he being now able to sit upright of himself.

"The day before our coming, another sachim being there, told him, that now he might see how hollow-hearted the English were, saying if we had been such friends in deed, as we were in shew, we would have visited him in this his sickness, using many arguments to withdraw his affections, and to persuade him to give way to some things against us, which were motioned to him not long before: but"..... The author concluded his paragraph with "Divers other things were worthy the noting, but I fear I have been too tedious."

The only alteration observed in No. 49, besides that before noted, is in line 11, "our own *after*-safety."

Line 17 of No. 50 has "mine own" instead of "*my* own," and in last line but one omits "*it*."

In No. 51 line 5 has "of *his* laws, &c," and on page 264 line 10 "eaten sufficient."

Line 4 of No. 52 reads "which *having* done."

In No. 53 an important passage is thus abbreviated by Purchas: "*They sent; and our governour writ divers reasons of dislike.*" The original is: "This course was well liked, and an Indian was sent with all speed with a letter to our governour, the contents whereof were to this effect; that being in great want, and their people daily falling down, he intended to go to Munhiggen, where was a plantation of Sir Ferdi: Gorges, to buy bread from the ships that came thither a fishing; with the first opportunity of wind; but knew not how the colony would be preserved till his return: he had used all means both



to buy and borrow of Indians whom he knew to be stored, and he thought maliciously withheld it, and therefore was resolved to take it by violence, and only waited the return of the messenger, which he desired should be hastened, craving his advice therein, promising also to make restitution afterward. The governour upon the receipt hereof, asked the messenger what store of corn they had, as if he had intended to buy of them ; who answered very little more than that they reserved for seed, having already spared all they could. Forthwith the governour and his assistant sent for many of us to advise with them herein, who after serious consideration, no way approving of this intended course, the governour answered his letter, and caused many of us to set our hands thereto, the contents whereof were to this purpose ; we altogether disliked their intendment, as being against the law of God and nature, shewing how it would cross the worthy ends and proceedings of the king's majesty, and his honourable council for this place, both in respect of the peaceable enlarging of his majesty's dominions, and also of the propagation of the knowledge and law of God, and the glad tidings of salvation, which we and they were bound to seek, and were not to use such means as would breed a distaste in the savages against our persons and professions, assuring them their master would incur much blame hereby, neither could they answer the same ; for our own parts our case was almost the same with theirs, having but a small quantity of corn left, and were enforced to live on ground-nuts, clams, muscles, and such other things as naturally the country afforded, and which did and would maintain strength, and were easy to be gotten, all which things they had in great abundance, yea, oysters also which we wanted, and therefore necessity could not be said to constrain them thereunto. Moreover, that they should consider, if they proceeded therein, all they could so get would maintain them but a small time, and then they must perforce seek their food abroad, which having made the Indians their enemies, would be very difficult for them, and therefore much better to begin a little the sooner, and so continue their peace, upon which course

they might with good conscience desire and expect the blessing of God, whereas on the contrary they could not.

“Also that they should consider their own weakness, being most swelled, and diseased in their bodies, and therefore the more unlikely to make their party good against them, and that they should not expect help from us in that or any the like unlawful actions. Lastly, that howsoever some of them might escape, yet the principal agents should expect no better than the gallows, whensoever any special officer should be sent over by his majesty, or his Council for New England, which we expected, and who would undoubtedly call them to account for the same. These were the contents of our answer, which was directed to their whole colony. Another particular letter our governour sent to John Sanders, shewing how dangerous it would be for him above all others, being he was their leader and commander; and therefore in friendly manner advised him to desist.” What follows is a distinct paragraph.

The Nos. 54 and 55 make but one paragraph. The word “*publick*” in line 3 of No. 54 is in the original “double,” and after “*court*” in line 6 is a comma, (,) whereupon Winslow proceeds: “offering it to the consideration of the company, it being high time to come to resolution, how sudden soever it seemed to them, fearing it would be put in execution before we could give any intelligence thereof. This business was no less troublesome than grievous, and the more, because it is so ordinary in these times for men to measure things by the events thereof: but especially for that we knew no means to deliver our countrymen and preserve ourselves, than by returning their malicious and cruel purposes upon their own heads, and causing them to fall into the same pit they had digged for others, though it much grieved us to shed the blood of those whose good we ever intended and aimed at, as a principal in all our proceedings. But in the end we came to this publick conclusion, that because it was a matter of such weight as every man was not of sufficiency to judge, nor fitness to know because of many other Indians which daily as occasion serveth con-



verse with us; therefore the governour, his assistant, and the captain, should take such to themselves as they thought most meet, and conclude thereof; which done *we came to this conclusion*,".... Before the concluding sentence, this is omitted: "What would be the event of these things (he said) he much feared; and therefore not daring to stay any longer among them, though he knew not the way yet adventured to come to us, partly to make known their weak and dangerous estate, as he conceived, and partly to desire he might there remain till things were better settled at the other plantation."

The word "*not*," in line 5 of No. 56, which was noted as "probably an error of the press" in Purchas, was by Winslow written "*both*." Where the sentence in line 19 ends, should be a comma (,) and this passage followed: "as amongst us divers seeing the work prove tedious, would have dissuaded from proceeding, flattering themselves with peace and security, and accounting it rather a work of superfluity and vain glory, than simple necessity. But God (whose providence hath waked and as I may say, watched for us whilst we slept) having determined to preserve us from these intended treacheries, undoubtedly ordained this as a special means to advantage us and discourage our adversaries, and therefore so stirred up the hearts of the governours and other forward instruments, as the work was just made serviceable against this needful and dangerous time, though we ignorant of the same. But that I may proceed, *the Indian last mentioned*,"....

Line 22 on page 268 reads "with *that* they now heard."

Nos. 58 and 59 form but one paragraph. On page 269 line 5 reads "he *shall* not take us," and line 8 "sharpen the *points* of their knives," and the last line "stood by all this time *as a spectator*."

Line 12 of No. 60 has "being" before "*more ancient*."

Nos. 61 and 62 form but one paragraph, and line 12 of page 271, after "*both discharged*," has "at once."

Line 3 of page 272 has "to" before "*delay*," and line 4 has "till" before "*they*," and line 6 reads "the captain prevented *them*."



Line 9 of No. 64 reads "prosecuted *it*," and line 18 "bribed so to do," and line 25 "deliver *this* message," and last line but two "*this* messenger."

Line 2 of No. 65 reads "returned with answer."

After No 66 follows this paragraph :

"I fear I have been too tedious both in this and other things, yet when I considered how necessary a thing it is that the truth and grounds of this action, especially should be made known, and the several dispositions of that dissolved colony, whose reports undoubtedly will be as various, I could not but enlarge myself where I thought to be most brief ; neither durst I be too brief, lest I should eclipse and rob God of that honour, glory, and praise, which belongeth to him for preserving us from falling when we were at the pit's brim, and yet feared nor knew not that we were in danger."

In the margin of No. 67 is marked "Anno 1623." The "error of the press," conjectured on page 274, is found in the original. This passage, at the end of this paragraph and beginning of the next, is omitted : "Only if occasion served upon any special service they might employ such as they thought most fit to execute the same, during this appointed time, and at the end thereof all men to be employed by them in such service as they thought most necessary for the general good. And because there is great difference in the ground, that therefore a set quantity should be set down for a person, and each man to have his fall by lot, as being most just and equal, and against which no man could except."

"At a general meeting of the company, many courses were propounded, but this approved and followed, as being the most likely for the present and future good of the company ; and therefore before this month began to prepare our ground against seed time."

The close of No. 69 is wanting, as follows : "So that at once God seemed to deprive us of all future hopes. The most courageous were now discouraged, because God which hitherto had been our only Shield and Supporter, now seemed in his anger to arm himself against us ; and who can withstand the fierceness of his wrath."

Line 9 of No. 70 should read "look *down* upon us," and line 23 "*or* revived."

Line 14 of No. 71 should read "by private prayer," and in line 16, after "*apart*," should be "and appointed," and the words "*his other*," in last line but one, are transposed.

In line 4 of No. 72 "also" is omitted before "*notwithstanding*."

The conclusion of this very interesting tract, as abridged by Purchas, was by Dr. Belknap inserted as an Appendix to the 2d vol. of his American Biography; but we have thought the original worthy of insertion in our Collections.

"Thus have I made a true and full narration of the state of our plantation, and such things as were most remarkable therein since December, 1621. If I have omitted any thing, it is either through weakness of memory, or because I judged it not material: I confess my style rude, and unskilfulness in the task I undertook, being urged thereunto by opportunity, which I knew to be wanting in others, and but for which I would not have undertaken the same; yet as it is rude so it is plain, and therefore the easier to be understood; wherein others may see that which we are bound to acknowledge, viz. that if ever any people in these later ages were upheld by the providence of God after a more special manner than others, then we: and therefore are the more bound to celebrate the memory of his goodness, with everlasting thankfulness. For in these fore-named straits, such was our state, as in the morning we had often our food to seek for the day, and yet performed the duties of our callings, I mean other daily labors, to provide for after time: and though at some times in some seasons at noon I have seen men stagger by reason of faintness for want of food, yet ere night by the good providence and blessing of God, we have enjoyed such plenty as though the windows of heaven had been opened unto us. How few, weak, and raw, were we at our first beginning, and there settling, and in the midst of barbarous enemies? Yet God wrought our peace for us.

How often have we been at the pit's brim, and in danger to be swallowed up, yea, not knowing, till afterward that we were in peril? And yet God preserved us: yea, and from how many that we yet know not of, he that knoweth all things can best tell: so that when I seriously consider of things, I cannot but think that God hath a purpose to give that land as an inheritance to our nation, and great pity it were that it should long lie in so desolate a state, considering it agreeth so well with the constitution of our bodies, being both fertile, and so temperate for heat and cold, as in that respect one can scarce distinguish New England from Old.

"A few things I thought meet to add hereunto, which I have observed amongst the Indians, both touching their religion, and sundry other customs amongst them. And first, whereas myself and others, in former letters (which came to the press against my will and knowledge) wrote, that the Indians about us are a people without any religion, or knowledge of any God, therein I erred, though we could then gather no better: for as they conceive of many divine powers, so of one whom they call Kiehtan, to be the principal and maker of all the rest, and to be made by none: he (they say) created the heavens, earth, sea, and all creatures contained therein. Also that he made one man and one woman, of whom they and we and all mankind came: but how they became so far dispersed that know they not. At first they say, there was no sachim, or king, but Kiehtan, who dwelleth above in the heavens, whither all good men go when they die, to see their friends and have their fill of all things: this his habitation lieth far westward in the heavens, they say: thither the bad men go also, and knock at his door, but he bids them Quatchet, that is to say, Walk abroad, for there is no place for such; so that they wander in restless want and penury: never man saw this Kiehtan; only old men tell them of him, and bid them tell their children, yea, to charge them to teach their posterities the same, and lay the like charge upon them. This

The meaning of the word, *Kiehtan*, I think hath reference to Antiquity, for *Chise* is an old man, and *Kiechchise*, a man that exceedeth in age.



power they acknowledge to be good, and when they would obtain any great matter, meet together, and cry unto him, and so likewise for plenty, victory, &c. sing, dance, feast, give thanks, and hang up garlands and other things in memory of the same.

“ Another power they worship, whom they call Hobbamock, and to the northward of us Hobbamoqui; this as far as we can conceive is the devil, him they call upon to cure their wounds and diseases. When they are curable, he persuades them he sends the same for some conceived anger against them, but upon their calling upon him can and doth help them: but when they are mortal, and not curable in nature, then he persuades them Kiehtan is angry and sends them, whom none can cure: insomuch, as in that respect only they somewhat doubt whether he be simply good, and therefore in sickness never call upon him.

“ This Hobbamock appears in sundry forms unto them, as in the shape of a man, a deer, a fawn, an eagle, &c. but most ordinarily a snake: he appears not to all but the chiefest and most judicious amongst them, though all of them strive to attain to that hellish height of honour.

“ He appeareth most ordinary and is most conversant with three sorts of people, one I confess I neither know by name nor office directly: of these they have few but esteem highly of them, and think that no weapon can kill them: another they call by the name of powah, and the third pniese.

“ The office and duty of the powah is to be exercised principally in calling upon the devil, and curing diseases of the sick or wounded. The common people join with him in the exercise of invocation, but do but only assent or as we term it, say amen to that he saith, yet sometime break out into a short musical note with him. The powah is eager and free in speech, fierce in countenance, and joineth many antick and laborious gestures with the same over the party diseased. If the party be wounded he will also seem to suck the wound, but if they be curable (as they say) he toucheth it not, but a skook, that is the snake, or wobsacuck, that is the eagle, sitteth on his

shoulder and licks the same. This none see but the powah, who tells them he doth it himself. If the party be otherwise diseased, it is accounted sufficient if in any shape he but come into the house, taking it for an undoubted sign of recovery.

“ And as in former ages Apollo had his temple at Delphos, and Diana at Ephesus ; so have I heard them call upon some as if they had their residence in some certain places, or because they appeared in those forms in the same. In the powah's speech he promiseth to sacrifice many skins of beasts, kettles, hatchets, beads, knives, and other the best things they have to the fiend, if he will come to help the party diseased : but whether they perform it I know not. The other practices I have seen, being necessarily called at some times to be with their sick, and have used the best arguments I could make them understand against the same : they have told me I should see the devil at those times come to the party, but I assured myself and them of the contrary, which so proved : yea, themselves have confessed they never saw him when any of us were present. In desperate and extraordinary hard travail in childbirth, when the party cannot be delivered by the ordinary means, they send for this powah, though ordinarily their travail is not so extreme as in our parts of the world, they being of a more hardy nature ; for on the third day after childbirth I have seen the mother with the infant upon a small occasion in cold weather in a boat upon the sea.

“ Many sacrifices the Indians use, and in some cases kill children. It seemeth they are various in their religious worship in a little distance, and grow more and more cold in their worship to Kiehtan ; saying in their memory he was much more called upon. The Nanohiggansets exceed in their blind devotion, and have a great spacious house wherein only some few (that are as we may term them priests) come : thither at certain known times resort all their people, and offer almost all the riches they have to their gods, as kettles, skins, hatchets, beads, knives, &c. all which are cast by the priests into a great fire that they make in the midst of the house, and there consumed to

ashes. To this offering every man bringeth freely, and the more he is known to bring, hath the better esteem of all men. This the other Indians about us approve of as good, and wish their sachems would appoint the like: and because the plague hath not reigned at Nanohigganset as at other places about them, they attribute to this custom there used.

“The pnieses are men of great courage and wisdom, and to these also the devil appeareth more familiarly than to others, and as we conceive maketh covenant with them to preserve them from death, by wounds, with arrows, knives, hatchets, &c. or at least both themselves and especially the people think themselves to be freed from the same. And though against their battles all of them by painting disfigure themselves, yet they are known by their courage and boldness, by reason whereof one of them will chase almost an hundred men, for they account it death for whomsoever stand in their way. These are highly esteemed of all sorts of people, and are of the sachims' council, without whom they will not war or undertake any weighty business. In war their sachims for their more safety go in the midst of them. They are commonly men of the greatest stature and strength, and such as will endure most hardness, and yet are more discreet, courteous, and humane in their carriages than any amongst them, scorning theft, lying, and the like base dealings, and stand as much upon their reputation as any men.

“And to the end they may have store of these, they train up the most forward and likeliest boys from their childhood in great hardness, and make them abstain from dainty meat, observing divers orders prescribed, to the end that when they are of age the devil may appear to them, causing to drink the juice of sentry and other bitter herbs till they cast, which they must disgorge into the platter, and drink again, and again, till at length through extraordinary oppressing of nature it will seem to be all blood, and this the boys will do with eagerness at the first, and so continue till by reason of faintness they can scarce stand on their legs, and then must go forth into



the cold: also they beat their shins with sticks, and cause them to run through bushes, stumps, and brambles, to make them hardy and acceptable to the devil, that in time he may appear unto them.

“ Their sachims cannot be all called kings, but only some few of them, to whom the rest resort for protection, and pay homage unto them, neither may they war without their knowledge and approbation, yet to be commanded by the greater as occasion serveth. Of this sort is Massassowat our friend, and Conanacus of Nanohiggenset our supposed enemy.

“ Every sachim taketh care for the widow and fatherless, also for such as are aged, and any way maimed, if their friends be dead or not able to provide for them.

“ A sachim will not take any to wife but such an one as is equal to him in birth, otherwise they say their seed would in time become ignoble, and though they have many other wives, yet are they no other than concubines or servants, and yield a kind of obedience to the principal, who ordereth the family and them in it. The like their men observe also, and will adhere to the first during their lives; but put away the other at their pleasure.

“ This government is successive and not by choice. If the father die before the son or daughter be of age, then the child is committed to the protection and tuition of some one amongst them, who ruleth in his stead till he be of age, but when that is I know not.

“ Every sachim knoweth how far the bounds and limits of his own country extendeth, and that is his own proper inheritance, out of that if any of his men desire land to set their corn, he giveth them as much as they can use, and sets them their bounds. In this circuit whosoever hunteth, if they kill any venison, bring him his fee, which is the fore parts of the same, if it be killed on the land, but if in the water, then the skin thereof: the great sachims or kings, know their own bounds or limits of land, as well as the rest.

“ All travellers or strangers for the most part lodge at the sachims, when they come they tell them how long they will stay, and to what place they go, during which

time they receive entertainment according to their persons, but want not.

“Once a year the pnieses use to provoke the people to bestow much corn on the sachim. To that end they appoint a certain time and place near the sachim’s dwelling, where the people bring many baskets of corn, and make a great stack thereof. There the pnieses stand ready to give thanks to the people on the sachim’s behalf, and after acquainteth the sachim therewith, who fetcheth the same, and is no less thankful, bestowing many gifts on them.

“When any are visited with sickness, their friends resort unto them for their comfort, and continue with them oft-times till their death or recovery. If they die they stay a certain time to mourn for them. Night and morning they perform this duty many days after the burial in a most doleful manner, insomuch as though it be ordinary and the note musical, which they take one from another, and all together, yet it will draw tears from their eyes, and almost from ours also. But if they recover then because their sickness was chargeable, they send corn and other gifts unto them at a certain appointed time, whereat they feast and dance, which they call commoco.

“When they bury the dead they sew up the corpse in a mat and so put it in the earth. If the party be a sachim they cover him with many curious mats, and bury all his riches with him, and enclose the grave with a pale. If it be a child the father will also put his own most special jewels and ornaments in the earth with it, also will cut his hair and disfigure himself very much in token of sorrow. If it be the man or woman of the house, they will pull down the mats and leave the frame standing, and bury them in or near the same, and either remove their dwelling or give over house keeping.

“The men employ themselves wholly in hunting, and other exercises of the bow, except at some times they take some pains in fishing.

“The women live a most slavish life, they carry all their burdens, set and dress their corn, gather it in, seek out for much of their food, beat and make ready the corn to eat, and have all household care lying upon them.

"The younger sort reverence the elder, and do all mean offices whilst they are together, although they be strangers. Boys and girls may not wear their hair like men and women, but are distinguished thereby.

"A man is not accounted a man till he do some notable act, or shew forth such courage and resolution as becometh his place. The men take much tobacco, but for boys so to do they account it odious.

"All their names are significant and variable ; for when they come to the state of men and women, they alter them according to their deeds or dispositions.

"When a maid is taken in marriage she first cutteth her hair, and after weareth a covering on her head till her hair be grown out. Their women are diversly disposed, some as modest as they will scarce talk one with another in the company of men, being very chaste also : yet other some light, lascivious and wanton.

"If a woman have a bad husband, or cannot affect him, and there be war or opposition between that and any other people, she will run away from him to the contrary party and there live, where they never come unwelcome ; for where are most women, there is greatest plenty.

"When a woman hath her monthly terms she separateth herself from all other company, and liveth certain days in a house alone : after which she washeth herself and all that she hath touched or used, and is again received to her husband's bed or family.

"For adultery the husband will beat his wife and put her away, if he please. Some common strumpets there are as well as in other places, but they are such as either never married, or widows, or put away for adultery : for no man will keep such an one to wife.

"In matters of unjust and dishonest dealing the sachim examineth and punisheth the same. In case of thefts, for the first offence he is disgracefully rebuked, for the second beaten by the sachim with a cudgel on the naked back, for the third he is beaten with many strokes, and hath his nose slit upward, that thereby all men may both know and shun him. If any man kill another, he must likewise die for the same. The sachim not only passeth the



sentence upon malefactors, but executeth the same with his own hands, if the party be then present ; if not, sendeth his own knife in case of death, in the hands of others to perform the same. But if the offender be to receive other punishment, he will not receive the same but from the sachim himself, before whom being naked he kneeleth, and will not offer to run away though he beat him never so much, it being a greater disparagement for a man to cry during the time of his correction, than is his offence and punishment.

“ As for their apparel they wear breeches and stockings in one like some Irish, which is made of deer skins, and have shoes of the same leather. They wear also a deer skin loose about them like a cloak, which they will turn to the weather side. In this habit they travel, but when they are at home or come to their journey's end, presently they pull off their breeches, stockings, and shoes, wring out the water if they be wet, and dry them, and rub or chafe the same. Though these be off, yet have they another small garment that covereth their secrets. The men wear also when they go abroad in cold weather an otter or fox skin on their right arm, but only their bracer on the left. Women and all of that sex wear strings about their legs, which the men never do.

“ The people are very ingenious and observative, they keep account of time by the moon, and winters or summers ; they know divers of the stars by name, in particular, they know the north star and call it maske, which is to say the bear. Also they have many names for the winds. They will guess very well at the wind and weather before hand, by observations in the heavens. They report also, that some of them can cause the wind to blow in what part they list, can raise storms and tempests which they usually do when they intend the death or destruction of other people, that by reason of the unseasonable weather they may take advantage of their enemies in their houses. At such times they perform their greatest exploits, and in such seasons when they are at enmity with any, they keep more careful watch than at other times.

“ As for the language, it is very copious, large, and difficult, as yet we cannot attain to any great measure thereof ; but can understand them, and explain ourselves to their understanding, by the help of those that daily converse with us. And though there be difference in an hundred miles distance of place, both in language and manners, yet not so much but that they very well understand each other. And thus much of their lives and manners.

“ Instead of records and chronicles, they take this course, where any remarkable act is done, in memory of it, either in the place, or by some pathway near adjoining, they make a round hole in the ground about a foot deep, and as much over, which when others passing by behold, they inquire the cause and occasion of the same, which being once known, they are careful to acquaint all men, as occasion serveth therewith. And lest such holes should be filled, or grown up by any accident, as men pass by they will oft renew the same : by which means many things of great antiquity are fresh in memory. So that as a man travelleth, if he can understand his guide, his journey will be the less tedious, by reason of the many historical discourses will be related unto him.

“ In all this it may be said, I have neither praised nor dispraised the country : and since I lived so long therein, my judgment thereof will give no less satisfaction to them that know me, than the relation of our proceedings. To which I answer, that as in one so of the other, I will speak as sparingly as I can, yet will make known what I conceive thereof.

“ And first for that continent, on which we are called New England, although it hath ever been conceived by the English to be a part of that main land adjoining to Virginia, yet by relation of the Indians it should appear to be otherwise : for they affirm confidently, that it is an island, and that either the Dutch or French pass through from sea to sea, between us and Virginia, and drive a great trade in the same. The name of that inlet of the sea they call Mohegon, which I take to be the same, which we call Hudson's River, up which Master Hudson went many leagues, and for want of means (as I hear) left it

undiscovered. For confirmation of this, their opinion is thus much; though Virginia be not above an hundred and fifty leagues from us, yet they never heard of Powhatan, or knew that any English were planted in his country, save only by us and Tisquantum, who went in an English ship thither: and therefore it is the more probable, because the water is not passable for them, who are very adventurous in their boats.

"Then for the temperature of the air, in almost three years' experience, I can scarce distinguish New England from Old England, in respect of heat, and cold, frost, snow, rain, winds, &c. Some object, because our plantation lieth in the latitude of 42 it must needs be much hotter. I confess, I cannot give the reason of the contrary; only experience teacheth us, that if it do exceed England, it is so little as must require better judgments to discern it. And for the winter, I rather think (if there be difference) it is both sharper and longer in New England than Old: and yet the want of those comforts in the one which I have enjoyed in the other, may deceive my judgment also. But in my best observation, comparing our own condition with the relations of other parts of America, I cannot conceive of any to agree better with the constitution of the English, not being oppressed with extremity of heat, nor nipped with biting cold, by which means, blessed be God, we enjoy our health, notwithstanding, those difficulties we have undergone, in such a measure as would have been admired, if we had lived in England with the like means.

"The day is two hours longer than here when it is at the shortest, and as much shorter there, when it is at the longest.

"The soil is variable, in some places mould, in some clay, others, a mixed sand, &c. The chiefest grain is the Indian maize, or Guinea wheat; the seed time beginneth in midst of April, and continueth good till the midst of May. Our harvest beginneth with September. This corn increaseth in great measure, but is inferiour in quantity to the same in Virginia, the reason I conceive, is because Virginia is far hotter than it is with us, it requiring



great heat to ripen ; but whereas it is objected against New England, that corn will not there grow, except the ground be manured with fish ? I answer, that where men set with fish (as<sup>\*</sup> with us) it is more easy so to do than to clear ground and set without some five or six years, and so begin anew, as in Virginia and elsewhere. Not but that in some places, where they cannot be taken with ease in such abundance, the Indians set four years together without, and have as good corn or better than we have that set with them, though indeed I think if we had cattle to till the ground, it would be more profitable and better agreeable to the soil, to sow wheat, rye, barley, peas, and oats, than to set maize, which our Indians call *ewachim* : for we have had experience that they like and thrive well ; and the other will not be procured without good labour and diligence, especially at seed time, when it must be also watched by night to keep the wolves from the fish, till it be rotten, which will be in fourteen days : yet men agreeing together, and taking their turns it is not much.

“ Much might be spoken of the benefit that may come to such as shall here plant by trade with the Indians for furs, if men take a right course for obtaining the same, for I dare presume upon that small experience I have had, to affirm, that the English, Dutch, and French, return yearly many thousand pounds profits by trade only from that island, on which we are seated.

“ Tobacco may be there planted, but not with that profit as in some other places, neither were it profitable there to follow it, though the increase were equal, because fish is a better and richer commodity, and more necessary, which may be and are there had in as great abundance as in any other part of the world ; witness the west country merchants of England, which return incredible gains yearly from thence. And if they can so do which here buy their salt at a great charge, and transport more company to make their voyage, than will sail their ships, what may the planters expect when once they are seated, and make the most of their salt there, and employ themselves at least eight months in fishing, whereas the other,

fish but four, and have their ship lie dead in the harbour all the time, whereas such shipping as belong to plantations, may take freight of passengers or cattle thither, and have their lading provided against they come. I confess, we have come so far short of the means to raise such returns, as with great difficulty we have preserved our lives; insomuch, as when I look back upon our condition, and weak means to preserve the same, I rather admire at God's mercy and providence in our preservation, than that no greater things have been effected by us. But though our beginning have been thus raw, small, and difficult, as thou hast seen, yet the same God that hath hitherto led us through the former, I hope will raise means to accomplish the latter. Not that we altogether, or principally propound profit to be the main end of that we have undertaken, but the glory of God, and the honour of our country, in the enlarging of his majesty's dominions, yet wanting outward means, to set things in that forwardness we desire, and to further the latter by the former, I thought meet to offer both to consideration, hoping that where religion and profit jump together (which is rare) in so honourable an action, it will encourage every honest man, either in person or purse, to set forward the same, or at leastwise to commend the welfare thereof in his daily prayers to the blessing of the blessed God.

“I will not again speak of the abundance of fowl, store of venison, and variety of fish, in their seasons, which might encourage many to go in their persons, only I advise all such beforehand to consider, that as they hear of countries that abound with the good creatures of God, so means must be used for the taking of every one in his kind, and therefore not only to content themselves that there is sufficient, but to foresee how they shall be able to obtain the same, otherwise, as he that walketh London streets, though he be in the midst of plenty, yet if he want means, is not the better but hath rather his sorrow increased by the sight of that he wanteth, and cannot enjoy it: so also there, if thou want art and other necessities thereunto belonging, thou mayest see that thou want-

est, and thy heart desireth, and yet be never the better for the same. Therefore if thou see thine own insufficiency of thyself, then join to some others, where thou mayest in some measure enjoy the same, otherwise assure thyself, thou art better where thou art. Some there be that thinking altogether of their present wants they enjoy here, and not dreaming of any there, through indiscretion plunge themselves into a deeper sea of misery. As for example, it may be here, rent and firing are so chargeable, as without great difficulty a man cannot accomplish the same ; never considering, that as he shall have no rent to pay, so he must build his house before he have it, and peradventure may with more ease pay for his fuel here, than cut and fetch it home, if he have not cattle to draw it there ; though there is no scarcity but rather too great plenty.

“ I write not these things to dissuade any that shall seriously upon due examination set themselves to further the glory of God, and the honour of our country, in so worthy an enterprise, but rather to discourage such as with too great lightness undertake such courses, who peradventure strain themselves and their friends for their passage thither, and are no sooner there, than seeing their foolish imagination made void, are at their wits' end, and would give ten times so much for their return, if they could procure it, and out of such discontented passions and humours, spare not to lay that imputation upon the country, and others, which themselves deserve.

“ As for example, I have heard some complain of others for their large reports of New England, and yet because they must drink water and want many delicacies they here enjoyed, could presently return with their mouths full of clamours. And can any be so simple as to conceive that the fountains should stream forth wine, or beer, or the woods and rivers be like butchers' shops, or fishmongers' stalls, where they might have things taken to their hands. If thou canst not live without such things, and hast no means to procure the one, and wilt not take pains for the other, nor hast ability to employ others for thee, rest where thou art : for as a proud heart, a dainty



tooth, a beggar's purse, and an idle hand, be here intolerable, so that person that hath these qualities there, is much more abominable. If therefore God hath given thee a heart to undertake such courses, upon such grounds as bear thee out in all difficulties. viz. his glory as a principal, and all other outward good things but as accessories, which peradventure thou shalt enjoy, and it may be not : then thou wilt with true comfort and thankfulness receive the least of his mercies ; whereas on the contrary, men deprive themselves of much happiness, being senseless of greater blessings, and through prejudice smother up the love and bounty of God, whose name be ever glorified in us, and by us, now and evermore. Amen.

FINIS.



*A Postscript.*

“ If any man desire a more ample relation of the state of this country, before such time as this present relation taketh place, I refer them to the two former printed books : the one published by the President and Council for New England, and the other gathered by the inhabitants of this present plantation at Plimouth in New England : both which books are to be sold by John Bellamy, at his shop at the three golden lions in Corn-hill near the Royal Exchange.”

## A PERFECT DESCRIPTION OF VIRGINIA :

*Being a full and true Relation of the present state of the Plantation, their health, peace, and plenty: the number of people, with their abundance of cattle, fowl, fish, &c. with several sorts of rich and good commodities, which may there be had, either naturally, or by art and labour. Which we are fain to procure from Spain, France, Denmark, Swedeland, Germany, Poland, yea, from the East Indies. There having been nothing related of the true estate of this Plantation these twenty-five years.*

*Being sent from Virginia, at the request of a gentleman of worthy note, who desired to know the true state of Virginia as it now stands.*

*Also, a Narration of the country, within a few days' journey of Virginia, west and by south, where people come to trade: being related to the governour, Sir William Berckley, who is to go himself to discover it with thirty horse, and fifty foot, and other things needful for his enterprise.*

*With the manner how the Emperour Nichotawance came to Sir William Berckley, attended with five petty kings, to do homage, and bring tribute to King Charles. With his solemn protestation, that the sun and moon should lose their lights, before he (or his people in that country) should prove disloyal, but ever to keep faith and allegiance to King Charles.*

LONDON: Printed for Richard Wodenoth, at the Star under Peter's Church in Cornhill. 1649.



THESE things that follow in this ensuing relation are certified by divers letters from Virginia, by men of worth and credit there, written to a friend in England, that for his own, and other's satisfaction, was desirous to know these particulars, and the present estate of that country. And let no man doubt of the truth of it, there be many in England, land and seamen that can bear witness of it. And if this plantation be not worth encouragement, let every true Englishman judge.

1. THAT there are in Virginia about fifteen thousand English, and of negroes brought thither, three hundred good servants.

2. That of kine, oxen, bulls, calves, twenty thousand, large and good, and they make plenty of butter and very good cheese.

3. That there are of an excellent race, about two hundred horse and mares.

4. That of asses for burthen and use, there is fifty, but daily increase.

5. That for sheep they have about three thousand, good wool.

6. That for goats their number is five thousand, thrive well.

7. That for swine both tame and wild (in the woods) innumerable; the flesh pure and good, and bacon none better.

8. That for poultry, hens, turkies, ducks, geese, without number.

9. That they yearly plough and sow many hundred acres of wheat, as good, and fair, as any in the world, and great increase.

10. That they have plenty of barley, make excellent malt.

11. That they have six publick brew-houses, and most brew their own beer, strong and good.

12. That their hops are fair and large, thrive well.

13. That they sell their beef at two pence half-penny a pound, pork at three pence a pound, plentifully.

14. That their cattle are about the prices in England, and most of the ships that come yearly hither, are there victualed.

15. That they have thirty several sorts of fish, river, and sea, very excellent good in their kinds, plentiful and large.

16. That they have five and twenty sundry sorts of birds and fowls, land and water abundance, and for food not amiss.

17. That they have twenty kind of beasts, whereof deer abundance, most sorts to be eaten; creeping creatures many also.

18. That they have fifteen kinds of fruits, pleasant and good, and with Italy they will compare for delicate fruits.



19 That they have five and twenty sorts of trees, large, good and fit for shipping, housing, and other uses.

20. That they have roots of several kinds, potatoes, asparagus, carrots, turnips, parsnips, onions, and artichokes.

22. For herbs they have of all kinds for garden, and physick flowers.

23. That their maize or Virginia corn, it yields them five hundred for one, increase, (it's set as we do garden peas) it makes good bread and furmity, will keep seven years, and malts well for beer, and ripe in five months, set in April or May.

24. That they have store of Indian peas, better than ours, beans, lupines, and the like.

25. They have store of bees in their woods, make plenty of honey and wax, and also tame bees in hives about their houses.

26. Indigo begins to be planted, and thrives wonderfully well, grows up to a little tree, and rich indigo made of the leaves of it, all men begins to get some of the seeds, and know it will be oftentimes the gain to them as tobacco (and gain now carries the bell;) their hopes are great to gain the trade of it from the Mogul's country, and to supply all christendom, and this will be many thousands of pounds in the year.

27. Their tobacco is much vented and esteemed in all places, yet the quantity's so great that's made, that the price there is but three pence a pound. A man can plant two thousand weight a year of it, and also sufficient corn and roots, and other provisions for himself.

28. They begin to plant much hemp and flax which they find grows well and good, only hands are wanting to this and other works.

29. Iron ore and rich mine are in abundance in the land, fit streams and waters to erect iron mills, woods never to be destroyed to burn coal, and all this lie on great rivers' banks, easy for transportation of wood and ore, and there is stone fit to build the furnaces with; trial hath been made of this iron ore, and not better and richer in the world; his work erected would be as much worth as

a silver mine, all things considered ; not only to make all instruments of iron for the plantation's uses, but for building, shipping, there being wanting in that country no other materials to that work ; then the casting of ordnance, and making them, will abound to serve all the world ; so of muskets, armour, all kind of tools, and manufacture of iron works will be produced in abundance, so that it would become speedily the magazine of iron instruments in every kind, and at cheap rates ; so that no nation could afford them half so cheap, and all men know, that iron will command better mines.

20. Skilful iron-men for the works sent out of England, with the assistance of as many more able labourers there in Virginia, housing and victual ready provided for them ; fitting places for erecting, the mills found out already, and oxen for draught at hand, the work in six months' time, would be effected, and four hundred pound charge to transport the twenty men to Virginia, with all tools and necessaries for the work would do it ; and these men for their encouragement to have half the gain made of the iron to be yearly divided betwixt the undertakers and workmen, the profit and gain would be to the enriching of all.

30. They have four wind mills, and five water mills to grind their corn ; besides many horse mills of several kinds, and hand mills for several uses ; a sawing mill for boards is much wanted ; one mill driven by water, will do as much as twenty sawyers, &c.

31. There comes yearly to trade with them above thirty sail of ships, and in these not so little as seven or eight hundred mariners employed, (some say above a thousand, this is a considerable thing) and they return laden home in March ; (this is a good seminary for mariners.)

32. The commodity these ships bring, is linen cloth of all sorts, and so of woollen cloth, stockings, shoes, and the like things.

33. Most of the masters of ships and chief mariners have also there plantations, and houses, and servants, &c. in Virginia : and so are every way great gainers by freight, by merchandise, and by plantation and pipe staves, clap board,

choice walnut tree wood, cedar tree timber and the like, is transported by them if tobacco is not their full lading.

34. They have in their colony pinnaces, barks, great and small boats many hundreds, for most of their plantations stand upon the rivers' sides or up little creeks, and but a small way into the land, so that for transportation and fishing they use many boats.

35. They make pitch and tar, (and there is materials in the woods for abundance :) also for pot and soap ashes, woods most proper and store : hands want.

36. That for mulberry trees, the natural and proper food for silk worms, they have abundance in the woods, and some so large that one tree contains as many leaves as will feed silk worms that will make as much silk as may be worth five pounds sterling money, this some Frenchmen affirm. And now they desire silk worms' seed which is sent them, and their hopes are good of the thriving of it ; a commodity that may soon enrich them all with little labour, care or pains ; all materials so plentiful and at hand, the food in abundance, the climate warm, and the work done in five weeks' time, and within doors, by women and children as well as men, and at that time of the year in May, that it hinders not any other work or planting, sowing, or the like employments ; such an advantage, that had the Dutch the like in any of their plantations, they would improve it to the certain gain in the trade of silk from Persia and China, which we fetch with great charge and expense and hazard, and enrich heathen and Mahumetans greatly ; but to these things lack publick and state encouragements to begin the work : but more of this in another place, it deserves a full handling.

37. Vines in abundance and variety, do grow naturally over all the land, but by the birds and beasts, most devoured before they come to perfection and ripeness ; but this testifies and declares, that the ground and the climate is most proper, and the commodity of wine is not a contemptible merchandise ; but some men of worth and estate must give in these things example to the inferiour inhabitants and ordinary sort of men, to shew them the gain and commodity by it, which they will not believe



but by experience before their faces : and in tobacco they can make 20 £. sterling a man, at 3*d*. a pound per annum ; and this they find and know, and the present gain is that, that puts out all endeavours from the attempting of others more staple, and solid, and rich commodities, out of the heads and hands of the common people : so as I say, the wealthier sort of men must begin and give the example, and make the gain of other commodities as apparent to them, by the effecting them to perfection, or it will not (as it hath not hitherto) go forward.

38. That they have health very well, and fewer die in a year there, according to the proportion, than in any place of England ; since that men are provided with all necessities, have plenty of victual, bread, and good beer, and housing, all which the Englishmen loves full dearly.

39. That the passengers also come safe and well : the seamen of late years having found a way, that now in five, six, and seven weeks they sail to Virginia free from all rocks, sands, and pirates ; and that they return home again in twenty days sometimes, and thirty at most : the winds commonly serving more constantly, being westerly homeward, the easterly outward bound.

40. That the mouth of the two capes of land, Cape Henry on the south, and Cape Charles on the north ; the entrance in is in 37 degrees : that the first river up the west is James River, where most of the plantations are settled and towns : the second is Charles River on the north of it ; and the third called by the Indian name Tapahanuke, the fourth river Patawoenicke, the fifth river Patuxant, the sixth Bolus, the seventh Saquisahanuke : at the head of the great Bay of Chespiacke, into which bay these seven rivers from the west side of it do all enter and run into, and so the mouth of the bay issueth out due east into the main sea between the two aforesaid capes ; the bay lies north and south, and hath a channel in draught of one hundred and forty miles, and in depth between five, six, and fifteen fathoms in some places. The wideness of the bay is from the west side which is the great land, to the east side of the land which joins upon the sea called the Acamake shore ; the wideness and breadth of this bay I say, is about nine,

ten, and fourteen miles broad in some places of it; and these seven rivers have their mouths into the bay, not above twenty miles, each river is distant from the other; but this in Smith's map is more at large described.

41. That some English about a thousand are seated upon the Acamake shore by Cape Charles, (where Captain Yeardley is chief commander) now called the county of Northampton.

42. That they have lime in abundance made for their houses, store of bricks made, and house and chimnies built of brick, and some wood high and fair, covered with shingle for tile, yet they have none that make them, wanting workmen; in that trade the brick makers have not the art to do it, it shrinketh.

43. That since the massacre, the savages have been driven far away, many destroyed of them, their towns and houses ruined, their clear grounds possessed by the English to sow wheat in: and their great king Opechaukenow (that bloody monster upon a hundred years old) was taken by Sir William Berkely the governour.

44. All kinds of tradesmen may live well there, and do gain much by their labours and arts, as turners, potters, coopers; to make all kind of earthen and wooden vessels, sawyers, carpenters, tile makers, boat-wrights, tailors, shoemakers, tanners, fishermen, and the like.

45. Young youths from sixteen years and upward, for apprentices and servants for some years, then to have land given them, and cattle to set up. Thousands of these kinds of young boys and maidens wanting.

46. That the government is after the laws of England, (that is well for men before they go, to know under what laws they shall live: a governour and council of state, and yearly general assemblies, men chosen and sent out of each county, (there being twelve in Virginia;) these men vote, and by the major part all things are concluded; and they are elected to those places by the most voices in the county for whom they are chosen, and by whom sent.

47. They have twenty churches in Virginia, and ministers to each, and the doctrine and orders after the church



of England: the ministers' livings are esteemed worth at least 100 £. per annum; they are paid by each planter so much tobacco per poll, and so many bushels of corn: they live all in peace and love.

48. That for matter of their better knowledge of the land they dwell in, the planters resolve to make a further discovery into the country, west and by south up above the fall, and over the hills, and are confident upon what they have learned from the Indians, to find a way to a west or south sea by land or rivers, and to discover a way to China and East Indies, or unto some other sea that shall carry them thither; for Sir Francis Drake was on the back side of Virginia in his voyage about the world in 37 degrees just opposite to Virginia, and called Nova Albion, and by the natives kindly used: and now all the question is only how broad the land may be to that place from the head of James River above the falls, but all men conclude if it be not narrow, yet that there is and will be found the like rivers issuing into a south sea or a west sea on the other side of those hills, as there is on this side when they run from the west down into a east sea after a course of one hundred and fifty miles; but of this certainty M. Hen. Briggs that most judicious and learned mathematician wrote a small tractate, and presented it to that most noble Earl of Southampton then governour of the Virginia Company in England, anno 1623, to which I refer for a full information.

And by such a discovery the planters in Virginia shall gain the rich trade of the East India, and so cause it to be driven through the continent of Virginia, part by land and part by water, and in a most gainful way and safe, and far less expenseful and dangerous, than now it is.

And they doubt not to find some rich and beneficial country, and commodities not yet known to the world that lies west and by south now from their present plantation.

49. That the Swedes have come and crept into a river called Delawar, that is, within the limits of Virginia in 38 degrees and 30 minutes, it lies, and are there planted, one hundred of them drive a great and secret trade of furs, which they trade for with the natives: it is but two days'



journey by land from our plantations, and a day's sail by sea from Cape Charles.

50. And again, the Hollanders have stolen into a river called Hudson's River in the limits also of Virginia (and about 39 degrees) they have built a strong fort there, and call it Prince Maurice and New Netherlands, they drive a trade of furs there with the natives for above ten thousand pounds a year.

These two plantations are between Virginia and New England on our side of Cape Cod which parts us and New England.

Thus are the English nosed in all places, and out-traded by the Dutch, they would not suffer the English to use them so : but they have vigilant statesmen, and advance all they can for a common good, and will not spare any encouragements to their people to discover.

But it is well known, that our English plantations have had little countenances, nay, that our statesmen (when time was) had store of Gundemore's gold to destroy and discountenance the plantation of Virginia, and he effected it in a great part, by dissolving the company, wherein most of the nobility, gentry, corporate cities, and most merchants of England, were interested and engaged ; after the expense of some hundred of thousands of pounds : for Gundemore did affirm to his friends, that he had commission from his master to ruin that plantation. For, said he, should they thrive and go on increasing, as they have done under the government of that popular L. of Southampton, my master's West Indies, and his Mexico would shortly be visited by sea and by land, from those planters in Virginia. And Marquis Hambleton told the Earl of Southampton, that Gundemore said to King James, that the Virginia courts, was but a seminary to a seditious parliament. But this is but a touch by the way, and for a future item to our country not to despise plantations.

51. The land in Virginia is most fruitful, and produceth, with very great increase, whatsoever is committed into the bowels of it, planted, sowed. A fat rich soil

every where watered with many fine springs, small rivulets, and wholesome waters.

52. The country is with pleasant rising small ascents and descents, valleys, hills, meadows, and some level upland: it's woody all over, but where labour hath cleared the ground from trees, and this truly is the great labour in Virginia, to fell trees, and to get up the roots, and so make clear ground for the plough.

53. Stones, and rocks, and quarries of several kinds, and very fit for the iron furnaces, (as trial hath been made to endure fire) are in divers places found in Virginia.

54. There is divers skins of beasts for merchandise and uses, as beavers, otters, squirrels, wild-cats, and christal is there found.

55. Divers kind of drugs, gums, dyes, paints, that the Indians use.

56. There is a kind of flax the Indians use to make threads of and strings, we call it silk-grass, it's fine to make both linen and stuff of it; abundance in many places of it groweth.

57. To the southward of James River, some fifty miles by land, and eighty by sea, lies the River Chawanok: whither Master Porey went by land, and reported, the king there told him, that within ten days' journey westward towards sunsetting, there were a people that did gather out of a river sand, the which they washed in sieves, and had a thing out of it, that they then put into the fire, which melted, and became like to our copper, and offered to send some of his people to guide him to that place. But Master Porey being not provided with men as he would have had of English, he returned to Sir George Yearly, and acquainted him with the relation. But before they could prepare for the journey, and discovery, the first massacre happened, and so to this day it hath been unattempted. The company also in England was dissolved, their patent most unjustly, against all law and conscience, taken from them. Procured by the Spanish gold and faction, and the colony never looked after, whether sink or swim; and hath now these twenty-four years

since, laboured for life, and only to subsist with much ado ; the cattle then left, increased to what you hear, and in all these many years no more people in it, and they having little encouragement, and great uncertainties, whether ever to be continued a colony, whereby men have had no heart to plant for posterity, but every man for the present, planted tobacco to get a livelihood by it.

And had not this present governour been sent as he was, and continued, who hath done all a gentleman could do to maintain it alive ; it had upon this second massacre been utterly deserted and ruined ; as things stand in our own land. If any demand the cause of this late massacre, all having been forgiven and forgotten, what the Indians did the first time ; those that are planters there, write the occasion of the Indians doing so wicked an act was. ¶ That some of them confessed, that their great king was by some English informed, that all was under the sword in England, in their native country, and such divisions in our land ; that now was his time, or never, to root out all the English : for those that they could not surprise and kill under the feigned mask of friendship and feasting, and the rest would be by wants ; and having no supplies from their own country which could not help them, be suddenly consumed and famished. The Indians alaruming them night and day, and killing all their cattle, as with ease they might do, and by destroying in the nights, all their corn fields, which the English could not defend. All this had (as they write) taken full effect, if God had not abated the courages of the savages in that moment of time, they so treacherously slew the English ; who were presently (the act done) so affrighted in their own minds, that they had not the heart to follow the counsels their king had commanded : but to the admiration of the English, prosecuted not their opportunity, nor were constant to their own principles. But fled away and retired themselves many miles distant off the colony ; which little space of time gave the English opportunity to gather themselves together, call an assembly, secure their cattle, and to think upon some way to defend themselves, if



need were, and then to offend their enemies ; which by the great mercy of God was done and effected ; and the particulars of all is worthy in some other place to be remembered and manifested to the world, that the great God may have his due glory, honour, and praise for ever and ever, Amen, amen, amen. And now at this present the colony is in good estate (and never a third time to be so surprised by a seeming friend.) And they conclude, their conditions are now, such as they may and will greatly improve the advancement and welfare of the colony, even by this late sad accident ; and the pit their enemies digged for them, they are like to fall into themselves, and their mischief will and hath assuredly fallen far more upon their own pates ; since their great king was taken prisoner.

And in these, they say in three letters, that if God please, in mercy, now to look upon poor England, that it fall not into a second war, nor relapses, but a happy peace settled in their native country. Then they in Virginia shall be as happy a people as any under heaven, for there is nothing wanting there to produce them, plenty, health, and wealth.

58. Concerning New England, that they have trade with them to and fro, and are but four days' sail off from Virginia, that they have had many cattle from Virginia, and corn, and many other things ; that New England, is in a good condition for livelihood. But for matter of any great hopes but fishing, there is not much in that land ; for it's as Scotland is to England, so much difference, and lies upon the same land northward, as Scotland doth to England ; there is much cold, frost and snow, and their land so barren, except a herring be put into the hole that you set the corn or maize in, it will not come up ; and it was great pity, all those people being now about twenty thousand, did not seat themselves at first to the south of Virginia, in a warm and rich country, where their industry would have produced sugar, indigo, ginger, cotton, and the like commodities.

And it's now reported in Virginia that thousands of them are removing (with many from Summer Islands also) unto the Bahana Islands, near the Cape of Florida; and that's the right way for them to go and thrive.

---

*Letters came now this March, 1648, relate further.*

THAT Opachankenow the old emperor being dead since he was taken prisoner by our governour, there is chosen a new one, called Nickotawance, who acknowledges to hold his government under King Charles, and is become tributary to him, and this March, 1648, Nickotawance came to Jamestown, to our noble governour Sir William Bearkley with five more petty kings attending him, and brought twenty beavers' skins to be sent to King Charles as he said for tribute; and after a long oration, he concluded with this protestation; that the sun and moon should first lose their glorious lights and shining, before he, or his people, should evermore hereafter wrong the English in any kind, but they would ever hold love and friendship together; and to give the English better assurance of their faith, he had decreed, that if any Indian be seen to come within the limits of the English colony, (except they come with some message from him, with such and such tokens) that it shall be lawful to kill them presently; and the English shall be free to pass at all times when and where they please throughout his dominions.

And the Indians have of late acquainted our governour, that within five days' journey to the westward and by south, there is a great high mountain, and at foot thereof, great rivers that run into a great sea; and that there are men that come hither in ships, (but not the same as ours be) they wear apparel and have \*reed caps on their heads, and ride on beasts like our horses, but have much longer ears and other circumstances they declare for the certainty of these things.

That Sir William was hereupon preparing fifty horse and fifty foot, to go and discover this thing himself in person, and take all needful provision in that case requisite along with him : he was ready to go when these last ships set sail for England in April last ; and we hope to give a good account of it by the next ships, God giving a blessing to the enterprise, which will mightily advance and enrich this country ; for it must needs prove a passage to the South Sea (as we call it) and also some part of China and the East Indies.

The governour Sir William, caused half a bushel of rice (which he had procured) to be sown and it prospered gallantly, and he had fifteen bushels of it, excellent good rice, so that all these fifteen bushels will be sown again this year ; and we doubt not in a short time to have rice so plentiful as to afford it at 2*d.* a pound if not cheaper, for we perceive the ground and climate is very proper for it as our negroes affirm, which in their country is most of their food, and very healthful for our bodies.

We have many thousand of acres of clear land, I mean where the wood is all off it (for you must know all Virginia is full of trees) and we have now going near upon a hundred and fifty ploughs, with many brave yoke of oxen, and we sow excellent wheat, barley, rye, beans, peas, oats ; and our increase is wonderful, and better grain not in the world.

One Captain Brocas, a gentleman of the council, a great traveller, caused a vineyard to be planted, and hath most excellent wine made, and the country, he saith, as proper for vines as any in christendom, vines indeed naturally growing over all the country in abundance : only skilful men wanting here.

That at last Christmas we had trading here ten ships from London, two from Bristol, twelve Hollanders, and seven from New England.

Mr. Richard Bennet had this year out of his orchard as many apples as he made twenty butts of excellent cider.

And Mr. Richard Kinsman hath had for this three or four years, forty or fifty butts of perry made out of his orchard, pure and good.



So that you may perceive how proper our country is for these fruits, and men begin now to plant great orchards, and find the way of grafting upon crab stocks, best for lasting, here being naturally in this land store of wild crab trees.

Mr. Hough at Nausamund, hath a curious orchard also, with all kind and variety of several fruits ; the governour in his new orchard hath fifteen hundred fruit trees, besides his apricots, peaches, mellicotons, quinces, wardenes, and such like fruits.

I mention these particular men, that all may know the truth of things.

Worthy Captain Matthews an old planter of above thirty years' standing, one of the council, and a most deserving commonwealth's man, I may not omit to let you know this gentleman's industry.

He hath a fine house, and all things answerable to it : he sows yearly store of hemp and flax, and causes it to be spun ; he keeps weavers, and hath a tan house, causes leather to be dressed, hath eight shoemakers employed in their trade, hath forty negro servants, brings them up to trades in his house ; he yearly sows abundance of wheat, barley, &c. the wheat he selleth at four shillings the bushel, kills store of beeves, and sells them to victual the ships when they come thither : hath abundance of kine, a brave dairy, swine great store, and poultry ; he married the daughter of Sir Thomas Hinton, and in a word, keeps a good house, lives bravely, and a true lover of Virginia ; he is worthy of much honour.

Our spring begins the tenth of February, the trees bud, the grass springs, and our autumn and fall of leaf is in November, our winter short, and most years very gentle, snow lies but little, yet ice some years.

I may not forget to tell you we have a free school, with two hundred acres of land, a fine house upon it, forty milch kine, and other accommodations to it : the benefactor deserves perpetual memory ; his name Mr. Benjamin Symes, worthy to be chronicled ; other petty schools also we have.

We have most rare coloured parraketoës, and one bird we call the mock-bird ; for he will imitate all other birds' notes, and cries both day and night birds, yea, the owls and nightingales.

For bees there is in the country which thrive and prosper very well there : one Mr. George Pelton, alias, Strayton, a ancient planter of twenty-five years' standing that had store of them, he made thirty pounds a year profit of them ; but by misfortune his house was burnt down, and many of his hives perished, he makes excellent good metheglin, a pleasant and strong drink, and it serves him and his family for good liquor ; If men would endeavour to increase this kind of creature, there would be here in a short time abundance of wax and honey, for there is all the country over delicate food for bees, and there is also bees naturally in the land, though we account not of them.

59. Now these are the several sorts and kinds of beasts, birds, fish, in Virginia.

*Beasts great and small as followeth ; above twenty several kinds.*

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. Lions.  | 6. Foxes.   |
| 2. Bears.  | 7. Wild-cats.   |
| 3. Leopard.  | 8. Rackoons, as good meat as lamb.  |
| 4. Elks.   | 9. Passonnes. This beast hath a bag under her belly into which she takes her young ones, if at any time affrighted, and carries them away.  |
| But all these four sorts are up in the higher parts of the country, on the hills and mountains, few to be seen in the lower parts where the English are ; the elks are as great as oxen, their horns six foot wide, and have two calves at a time ; the skins make good buff, and the flesh as good as beef. | 10. Two sorts of squirrels. One called a flying one, for that she spreads like a bat a certain loose skin she hath and so flies a good way. |
| 5. Deer.   |   |

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 13. A musk-rat, so called<br>for his great sweetness<br>and shape.<br>14. Hares.<br>15. Beavers.<br>16. Otters.<br>17. Dogs, but bark not, af-<br>ter the shape of a wolf,<br>and foxes smell not;<br>wolves but little, neither<br>not fierce. | 18. Wolves.<br>19. Martins, pole-cats, wea-<br>sels, minks: but these<br>vermin hurt not hens,<br>chickens or eggs, at any<br>time.<br>20. A little beast like a co-<br>ny, the foxes kill many<br>of them. |
|---|---|

*Birds are these, viz. above twenty-five several kinds.*

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. Eagles.<br>2. Hawks of six several<br>kinds.<br>3. Partridges many.<br>4. Wild turkies, some<br>weighing sixty pound<br>weight.<br>5. Red-birds, that sing<br>rarely.<br>6. Nightingales.<br>7. Blue-birds, smaller than<br>a wren.<br>8. Black-birds.<br>9. Thrushes.<br>10. Heath-cocks.<br>11. Swans.<br>12. Cranes. | 13. Herons.<br>14. Geese.<br>15. Brants.<br>16. Ducks.<br>17. Widgeons.<br>18. Dotterels.<br>19. Oxeyes.<br>20. Parrots.<br>21. Pigeons.<br>22. Owls.<br>Many more that have no<br>English names; for one<br>called the mock-bird,<br>that counterfeits all oth-<br>er several birds' cries<br>and tunes. |
|--|---|

*Fish are these in their kind, above thirty sorts.*

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. Cod.<br>2. Bass.<br>3. Drums six foot long.<br>4. Sheepsheads, this fish,<br>makes broth so like<br>mutton broth, that the | difference is hardly<br>known.<br>5. Conger.<br>6. Eels.<br>7. Trouts.<br>8. Mulletts. |
|---|--|



- |                                     |                      |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------|
| 9. Plaice.                          | 21. Lampries.        |
| 10. Grampus.                        | 22. Craw-fish.       |
| 11. Porpus.                         | 23. Shads.           |
| 12. Scales.                         | 24. Perch.           |
| 13. Sturgeons, of ten foot<br>long. | 25. Crabs.           |
| 14. Stingraes.                      | 26. Shrimps.         |
| 15. Brets.                          | 27. Crecy-fish.      |
| 16. White salmon.                   | 28. Oysters.         |
| 17. Soles.                          | 29. Cockles.         |
| 18. Herring.                        | 30. Muscles.         |
| 19. Cony-fish.                      | 31. St. George-fish. |
| 20. Rock-fish.                      | 32. Toad-fish.       |

*Trees above twenty kinds, and many no English names.*

- |                                      |                                 |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. Oaks red & white wood.            | 8. Chesnut trees.               |
| 2. Ash.                              | 9. Plum trees of many<br>kinds. |
| 3. Walnut, two kinds.                | 10. The puchamine tree.         |
| 4. Elms.                             | 11. The laurel.                 |
| 5. Cedar.                            | 12. Cherries.                   |
| 6. Cypress three fathoms<br>about.   | 13. Crahes.                     |
| 7. Mulberry trees great<br>and good. | 14. Vines.                      |
|                                      | 15. Sassafras.                  |

*Fruits they have, strawberries, gooseberries, raspberries, maracokos, puchamines, muskmellons, pumpions; and for fruits brought thither and planted. Apples, pears, quinces, apricots, peaches; and many more kinds excellent good, &c.*

FINIS.

STATISTICAL ACCOUNT OF THE TOWN OF MIDDLEBURY, IN THE STATE OF VERMONT. PART FIRST. BY FREDERICK HALL, PROFESSOR OF MATHEMATICS AND NATURAL PHILOSOPHY IN MIDDLEBURY COLLEGE, FELLOW OF THE AMERICAN AND CONNECTICUT ACADEMIES OF ARTS AND SCIENCES, OF THE AMERICAN GEOLOGICAL SOCIETY, CORRESPONDING MEMBER OF THE LINNÆAN SOCIETY OF NEW ENGLAND, AND HONORARY MEMBER OF THE LITERARY AND PHILOSOPHICAL SOCIETY OF NEW YORK.

MIDDLEBURY, a post town, and the capital of Addison county, is situated on both sides of Otter Creek, north by west from Rutland thirty-two miles, south-east from Vergennes eleven, and five hundred and eleven north-east from the city of Washington. The centre of the town is about fourteen miles east from Lake Champlain.

The latitude of the court house is  $43^{\circ}, 49', 51''$ , north. Its longitude, west from Greenwich, is  $73^{\circ}, 10', 15''$ .

### *Boundaries.*

On the north, the township is bounded by New Haven and Bristol; on the west, by Cornwall and Weybridge; on the south, by Salisbury, and on the east, by Ripton.

The boundary lines from north to south are a little more than six miles in length; those running from east to west, about seven. The town contains not far from forty-two square miles, or twenty-six thousand eight hundred and eighty acres. It extends over the summit of the western ridge of the Green Mountain.

### *Charter.*

Its charter was granted by Benning Wentworth, governor of New Hampshire, November 2, 1761; that state then claiming the whole territory, lying between Connecticut River and Lake Champlain.

### *Rivers.*

Middlebury River, or, at least, a principal branch of it, has its origin in the town of Hancock, passes through

Goshen, and a corner of Ripton, and directing its course to the westward, mingles its waters, in the south part of Middlebury, with those of Otter Creek. The turnpike road from Vergennes to Windsor is, for a considerable distance, built on, or near, one of the banks of this stream, which presents to the traveller's eye a number of highly romantick prospects. It meets the river, and crosses it, at the foot of the mountain, a little east of the glass factory.

From that point, in ascending, you keep in the vicinity of the stream, for more than a mile, hearing, constantly, the murmuring sound of the water, pouring down the cliffs, situated far beneath you. It is, in several places, not less than one hundred and fifty feet lower than the road; and yet a line, falling perpendicularly, on the middle of the stream, would not be more than half that distance from the centre of the highway. This deep canal, lined on both sides by lofty forest trees, and exhibiting, all along, immense blocks of grey limestone, was, in all probability, produced by the operation of water. The length of the period requisite for its generation, we have not the means of determining; though there is reason to believe, that many centuries have elapsed, since the work commenced.

There was, doubtless, a time, when the waters, flowing down from the higher parts of the mountain, met obstructions, which, during numerous years, were insurmountable. Small lakes or ponds were thus formed. The earthy and vegetable matter, brought by the water from the high lands, was here deposited. In consequence of successive deposits, the bottom of these ponds gradually rose, and, after the waters had attained to a certain height, they attacked the natural mound, where it was least impregnable, and opening for themselves a channel, flowed off, and left the land naked, on which they had quietly reposed for ages. A number of small level tracts are to be seen on the mountain, which are manifestly alluvial, and which were formed, it is likely, in the manner above described.

This rivulet, winding its way along the mountain, furnishes trout, (*salmo solar*) in abundance. The fish are



small, often weighing less than an ounce a piece, but are remarkably tender, and of an excellent flavour. They are caught in the summer, dressed, and brought to this village for sale. The price varies from nine to twelve cents a pound.

A large proportion of the land, contiguous to Middlebury River, or in its vicinity, after it leaves the mountain, is also alluvial. Logs, three feet in diameter, have been discovered five or six feet below the surface, while the earth above them was covered with forest trees, which must have been some centuries in arriving at their enormous magnitude;—a sufficient proof of the high antiquity at which the first deposit was made. I am informed by Joshua Hyde, Esq. a proprietor of the land, and one of the earliest inhabitants of the town, that in digging wells near this river, after penetrating the vegetable mould, which is not deep, and after passing through a stratum of fine sand, five or six feet in thickness, you come to a bed of coarser sand, in which water, at no great depth, is invariably found.

The land adjoining this stream is level, easily tilled, and yields fine crops of grass and grain. It is, however, less productive, at present, than it was immediately after its natural growth was removed.

But the principal river, of which Middlebury can boast, is *Otter Creek*;—a name, probably, derived from the circumstance of its having, formerly, been much frequented by the otter. It is a river of considerable size; being one hundred and seventy-five feet in width opposite my house. For twenty miles, towards its source, it is uncommonly deep, for so narrow a stream, and its current remarkably moderate. In the spring, when the snow on the mountain is dissolving, it is navigable with boats, of several tons burden, from Pittsford to Middlebury—a distance of twenty-four miles. Logs sufficient to keep two saw mills in operation, during most of the year; together with a large quantity of wood for fuel, and cedar posts for fence, are brought down in rafts. Most of the wood, destined to supply our fires, is landed more than a mile above the village, and conveyed to it, in summer, or

autumn, on carts and wagons. This is sold, at this time, at \$1,50 a cord.

But few fish are found in this stream. Though *trout* exist, in multitudes, in the shallow, rapid, pellucid waters of Middlebury River, they seldom venture down into the deep, and often turbid waters of Otter Creek. *Perch* (*perca fluviatilis*) have been occasionally caught, and a few trout. Eels (*muræna anguilla*) are tolerably numerous. They seem partial to deep water which rests, as this does in many places, on a muddy bottom: they are taken with hooks. Near the water, a fire is kindled in the evening, by which they are drawn from their slimy lurking places, and enabled to see the bait. An experienced angler informs me, that he has, the past summer, frequently caught some, which weighed from five to seven pounds each.

Two years since, a number of gentlemen, in this and the neighbouring towns, formed the project of transferring several kinds of fish from Lake Champlain to Otter Creek, hoping that they would multiply there, and thus produce a publick benefit. The experiment was made. A number of pike, (*esax lucius*) or pickerel, bass, (*perca ocellata*) perch, and *sheepshead*, were, at different places, thrown into the creek. A confident expectation is entertained, that they will propagate and flourish in this stream, but a sufficient time has not elapsed fully to settle the question.

The waters of Otter Creek must, at some ancient epoch, have overspread a much larger surface than they occupy at the present day. For many miles above this place, most of the land, within a few rods of the stream, on one side, or on the other, and sometimes on both, is, beyond contradiction, alluvial. At certain points, the alluvion extends back fifty or sixty rods from the present channel. In causing a ditch to be dug, the past season, about forty rods long, in this *made land*, I had a good opportunity to examine the different kinds of earth, thrown up, in different places. In some, it was a fine siliceous sand, nearly pure, and could not be, in the least, affected by diluted nitric, or sulphuric acid. In others, it was a mixture of sand, clay and limestone. By dropping on it a little ni-

tric acid, a brisk effervescence was produced. In one place, the earth was of a reddish colour and gave a strong odour of sulphur, which probably arose from the decomposition of sulphuret of iron, brought, perhaps, by the water, from Brandon, or Pittsford, where this ore abounds.

Between Middlebury and Vergennes, the navigation is prevented by several water falls. There is one, in this village, where the whole mass of water descends, perpendicularly, at a single leap, twenty feet. This cataract, in consequence of the numerous admirable situations which it affords for mills of all descriptions, may, with propriety, be regarded as one of the leading sources of the wealth and prosperity of the town. A bridge, forming a communication between the eastern and western parts of the borough, has been thrown across the creek, a few feet above the falls.

A number of manufacturing establishments, whose machinery is impelled by water, have been erected in the vicinity of the bridge. I shall commence with a description of the

### *Manufactories*

situated on the *eastern* side of the river.

The first is a grist mill, owned by Nathan Wood & Co. It is of stone, and the form of its base is that of an L. Its length, on the side next the water, is forty-five feet; on the east side seventy-six; on the street forty-five, and it contains five sets of stones, with screens and other apparatus, moving with sufficient power to manufacture into flour eighty thousand bushels of grain annually. The situation of this mill is singular; and the plan, in part new, was formed by an ingenious architect, Mr. Lavius Filmore, to whom I am indebted for the following particulars relating to it. It stands on a solid rock, projecting into the creek about thirty feet up-stream from the falls.

After levelling the rock sufficiently for the foundation of the building, a vault was cut in it forty-three feet long, twenty-five deep, and eighteen wide, which brought it nearly even with the surface of the water at the foot of the cataract. Then an inlet was formed, twenty-five feet



in length, through the solid rock, from the bed of the stream to the vault, through which water, in sufficient quantity to carry all the stones, and other machinery, flows into a floom, forty-three feet long, six wide, and eighteen deep, fortified by solid rock on all sides, except one, where the water, in the ordinary manner, is thrown on six *tub-wheels*, built on an improved construction, and placed in the bottom of the vault. The water, after acting on the wheels, collects itself into a single channel, and passing through a subterraneous outlet, cut, for the purpose, in the rock, under the bed of the stream, discharges itself into the creek, below the falls.

From such a situation many important advantages are derived. The mill can never be endangered by too great a pressure of water; not even when the river is the highest. The inlet and outlet of the floom, being formed in solid rock, is subject to no decay. The wheels are so situated as to be entirely secured, at all seasons, from frost.

The next establishment (north of the preceding) is a large cotton manufactory, erected by Maj. David Page, who has politely furnished me with a description of it. It is constructed of grey and white limestone, or marble, and its walls are thick and very substantial. It is one hundred and fifty feet in length, thirty-seven wide, six stories high at one end, and three at the other. The present proprietor, Mr. Joseph Hough, informs me, that the building contains at this time (December, 1820,) eight hundred and forty spindles for cotton, fifteen *power looms*, (or looms, which are moved by water) with all the warping and dressing apparatus needful, together with two woollen carding machines. The spindles produce a sufficient quantity of yarn daily, for five hundred yards of sheeting. The whole expense of converting the yarn (taking it from the spindle) into cloth, is about four cents a yard. The looms are tended by females. The goods manufactured are exhibited for sale in an apartment of the same building.

On the opposite side of the river is another cotton manufactory, owned by Mr. John Warren, who communicated the following facts. The building is of stone, fifty-eight feet in length, thirty-two in width, and forty in

height, containing six hundred spindles, with all other necessary apparatus. They yield yarn enough daily, for two hundred yards of sheeting. Adjoining this is another stone building, in which are eight *power looms*, weaving, on an average, one thousand yards of cloth a week. Under the same roof is a double fulling mill, or two stocks on one wheel, which, for twenty years past, has fullled twelve thousand yards of cloth annually: also a double carding machine, which cards from six to twelve thousand pounds of wool in a year.

Proceeding down the creek, from the bridge, on the western side, after passing two saw mills, two grist mills, a clothier's works, and some other establishments of minor importance, you come to the *marble manufactory*. The marble, in this village, which is now wrought, on a large scale, and extensively diffused over the country, was discovered by Dr. Ebenezer W. Judd, the present principal proprietor, as early as the year 1802. A small experiment in working it was made, he tells me, in 1805. A building on a very limited plan was erected, and machinery for sawing the marble (the idea of which had its origin in the inventive mind of the proprietor) was then first put in operation.

In 1806, a new and commodious building, two stories high, and destined to comprise sixty saws, to be moved by water, was erected. In 1808, this enlarged establishment went into operation, and has continued to the present day.

The saws are made of soft iron, without teeth, and are similar, in form, to those which are used in sawing marble by hand, in the large cities of Europe. The softer they are, the longer they last. This, to some, may appear paradoxical. But the explanation given by the conductor is, to me, tolerably satisfactory. In the operation a hard siliceous sand is always employed—moistened by the dropping of water from above—through which the saw, in its vertical motion, is constantly passing. Now, the softer the saw is, the more strongly the moistened sand adheres to it; and this sand assists in wearing away the stone: whereas, if the saw were steel, or hardened iron,



little or no sand would adhere to it; the saw would come directly in contact with the marble, and wear away itself, nearly as fast as it wore the stone. A *lead*en saw, he remarked, is found to divide a block of marble quicker than one made of iron. The saws are put in motion by a crank, which is turned by a water wheel.

The marble has, till lately, been obtained chiefly from a quarry situated within a few feet of the mill. During three or four of the last years, much has been procured, at the time of low water, from the bottom of the creek, immediately above the falls. It is raised from its bed partly by means of wedges, but principally by blasting. The mode of blasting is somewhat singular. A hole is drilled, with a large bar, six or eight feet deep, and charged with three or four pounds of powder. The explosive force is often truly astonishing. I am told, that one hundred and sixty tons of stone have, sometimes, been raised at a single blast.

The marble, after being sawn into slabs, is manufactured into tomb stones, tomb tables, curriers' tables, jambs, mantle pieces, hearths, window and door caps and sills, side boards, tables, sinks, and various other kinds of furniture. These articles are transported to Montreal, Quebec, Boston, New York, and even to Georgia. The machinery has sawn, annually, from five to ten thousand feet, since the year 1808. This method of sawing by water creates a vast saving of manual labour. All the saws are tended by a single person, whose time is not half occupied in this employment.

In the year 1814, the sales of marble

amounted to . . . . .	\$8,031,00
1815, . . . . .	7,018,77
1817, . . . . .	6,496,29
1819, . . . . .	7,498,59

The annual expense attending the estab-

lishment is about . . . . .	3,500,00
-----------------------------	----------

Besides the extensive manufactories above described, there are many individuals engaged in the various mechanic arts. I have collected information, which is believ-



ed to be correct, respecting the number of their shops and establishments, within the limits of the village at the present period, (December, 1820); and they are as follows :

3 Hatters' shops	1 Painter's
6 Shoemakers'	2 Coopers'
2 Tailors'	2 Tinmen's
4 Milliners'	2 Potteries
3 Saddlers'	2 Manufactories of pot- ash
2 Goldsmiths'	3 Tanneries
1 Clothier's works	2 Bakehouses
7 Blacksmiths'	2 Cabinetmakers'
1 Gunsmiths'	9 Housejoiners'
1 Glazier's	4 Masons.
4 Wheelwright's	

Those, beyond the limits of the *borough*, but comprehended within the boundaries of the town, are the following.

2 Potteries	1 Tailor's
1 Clothier's works	3 Saw mills
1 Wheelwright's shop	2 Masons
2 Blacksmiths'	5 Housejoiners'
2 Shoemakers'	1 Cabinetmaker's.

About three quarters of a mile, down the creek, from the bridge, and a few rods beyond the north line of the town, but owned, in part, by gentlemen belonging to the village, are an oil mill, a paper mill, a saw mill and a clothier's works.

### *Face of the Country.*

Except in the north-easterly part, which extends to the Green Mountain, Middlebury cannot be regarded as a mountainous, or hilly township; nor is it, like some districts of New England, a wide-spread, monotonous, uninviting plain. The surface is gently undulating; but nowhere swells into lofty and rugged elevations, nor sinks into deep and gloomy glens. Separate from the Green Mountain, Chipman's Hill is the highest land in the

town. Its elevation (by the barometer) above the level of the water in Otter Creek, below the falls, is four hundred and thirty-nine feet.

### *Minerals.*

The uppermost stratum of this hill consists of vegetable mould, and a very coarse sand, partly siliceous, and partly calcareous. This sand is, doubtless, the result of the disintegration of rocks, with which the surface was anciently composed. It contains a multitude of fragments, whose rough edges are removed by the attrition of water, or by decomposition, so that they resemble the rounded pebbles, which occur at the bottom of rivulets. Some of them are milky quartz, and nearly transparent. Not far from the summit of this hill, as well as in several other places in the vicinity, I have met with an aggregate of mica and feldspar.

### *Schorl.*

This mineral is rare in Middlebury. It is sometimes found connected with grey limestone. I have in my possession a large specimen of black schorl, imperfectly crystalized, imbedded in sky-coloured marble. It was dug from the cellar of the new collegiate building.

### *Garnet.*

On the eastern side of the creek, back of the academy, may be seen garnets, sparingly diffused on the surface of the calcareous rocks. Their size is very minute, often not exceeding that of a pin's head. The form of the crystals is dodecaedral. Their colour is reddish brown.

### *Hornblende*

is not uncommon. It seldom occurs alone; but generally mixed, in a greater or less proportion, with feldspar, and may then be called sienite. It all appears to be *out of place*.

### *Common Jasper,*

of a dark brown colour, in solitary masses, is found in various parts of the town. A few years since, a mass

weighing more than a ton, was taken out of the alluvial land in my garden. Its shape was globular, and evidently made so by the friction of water.

*Alumine, or Clay.*

The clay, which is employed here in the manufacture of bricks, is far from being pure. Almost universally, it contains a considerable proportion of carbonate of lime, in sand, or in small masses, commonly not larger than pigeons' eggs. The bricks, when burnt, are handsome, and wear the appearance of being very substantial and durable. But this appearance is deceptive : for when allowed to become penetrated with moisture, these *morceaux* of limestone, which they imbosom, whose carbonic acid has been expelled by the heat of the kiln, and they, consequently, converted to lime, *slack*, and, by their enlargement, cause the bricks to crack and crumble to pieces.

A number of gentlemen, in this village, who have erected brick buildings, have not been careful to expose their bricks a sufficient length of time to the action of the elements before they were used. Hence several buildings, even in the infancy of their years, exhibit, by their exfoliations, indications of premature old age.

Bricks, which are of a suspicious character, should never be laid in a wall, especially where moisture can have free access to them, till they have been exposed to the weather during a long storm of rain ; or plunged in a vessel of water, and suffered to continue there, till they shall have become completely saturated with the liquid. Those, which remain a few days unimpaired, after the application of either of these tests, may, with perfect safety, be employed in the walls of any part of the building.

No *ores* of much importance have been found in Middlebury. There is, on the Green Mountain, near the line which divides this town from Salisbury, a bed of

*Sulphuret of Iron,*

connected with carbonate of lime. It was discovered in laying out the town, by the influence which it exerted on



the surveyor's needle. He\* has informed me that, for about one hundred and fifty rods, he could not make the needle of his compass *traverse*, and was therefore obliged to run the line by erecting stakes. The ore belongs to that variety denominated *magnetic pyrites*. The quantity has not been ascertained. I have examined the locality; but the land, being still overspread by trees, logs and shrubs, afforded me no opportunity, except at one place, to see the mineral; yet, as it influenced the magnet at points considerably distant from each other, the quantity of ore must be extensive. Its colour is a bronze yellow, with stripes of brown. Before the blowpipe, it exhales a strong odour of sulphur. The same effect may be produced by dropping a little of its powder on a live coal, or on a heated fire shovel. It is very frangible. It contains common sulphuret of iron. I have a number of beautiful cubes and dodecaedrons obtained here.

Iron is never made from this kind of ore. It may, however, be employed for a valuable purpose. By exposure to the air, or to moisture, it readily decomposes. It may, therefore, easily be converted into sulphate of iron, or *copperas*. May we not look forward to the period when some enterprising person will here erect an establishment for the manufacture of this useful article?

#### *Magnetic Oxide of Iron.*

This species of iron ore has been met with in several places, but not in any considerable quantity. It has been seen in no other form but that of regular octaetric crystals. It occurs here imbedded in limestone, in argillite, and in a fine grained chlorite. The crystals are small, but very perfect: have a metallic lustre, and act powerfully on the magnet.

#### *Limestone,*

which may, with a comparatively moderate heat, be changed into lime, exists in almost every quarter of the town. The greatest deficiency is near the north-eastern

\* The Honourable Gamaliel Painter.

extremity, which lies on the mountain. The rocks there are chiefly quartzeous: usually of a light brown colour, and excessively hard. I have seen one—a beautiful milk-white quartz, transparent at the edges—which would weigh twenty-five or thirty tons. The quantity of lime made in the town, is amply sufficient to satisfy the demand of its inhabitants for this article.

### *Marble,*

of the finest texture, and susceptible of a high polish, is found here in inexhaustible abundance. The soil indeed of the whole township appears to rest on a vast basis of marble. In more than a hundred places does the marble make its appearance above the surface. It is arranged in strata, somewhat irregular, and of different thicknesses, but all inclining more or less to the plain of the horizon. It is of various colours, from a pure white to a deep grey, verging to a black.

Most of the marble in this region I have, till within a moderate period, supposed was unquestionably primitive, because I could discover no vegetable or animal remains or impressions in it. But recently I have been told, by one of Dr. Judd's workmen, that he had assisted in removing a block of marble from the bed of the creek, in which shells were visible. If this be a fact, (the person may possibly have been deceived; and I have not learned, that the shells attracted the attention of any other individual) it plainly demonstrates, that the rock could not have been formed, when, according to Moses, "the heavens and the earth were finished," but at some posterior epoch, after the animal kingdom had been called into being, and a portion of it had perished. Had I witnessed the animal exuvix, imbedded in our marble, I should, without hesitation, have ranked it in the class of *transition*, or metalliferous limestone. But I must be allowed still to cherish the opinion, that it belongs to the primitive formation. I may hereafter find cause to change it, but cannot at present.

The marble reposes on argillite, with which it sometimes alternates; as in a pasture a few rods north of the

new college, and on the west bank of the creek, a little below the marble manufactory.\* The argillite is in laminæ, but is not easily divisible into plates sufficiently thin to be used as roof-slate. The structure of the marble is granular, but the concretions are commonly very minute. Its texture is compact. It will not sustain uninjured, the action of an intense heat. It is, therefore, not suitable for the jambs and backs of chimnies. The marble employed for these purposes, is brought down the creek on rafts, from Pittsford, and wrought, and sold, at the Middlebury marble manufactory.

The Pittsford marble is of different colours, but principally grey and white. It is all somewhat flexible. Dr. Judd furnished me with a slab of it, four and a half feet long, half an inch thick, and six inches wide. I placed its extremities on two chairs, and put a straight board on it, from one end to the other, and the slab bent, by its own weight, one and two tenths of an inch. I then moistened it with cold water, and it became more flexible, so that its distance, in the middle, from the incumbent board was one and six tenths of an inch. By endeavouring to depress it still lower, by placing my hand on it, the slab broke and was destroyed.

A white marble has been *quarried* and wrought, on a small scale, in the north part of Middlebury. It has received the name of the *Kirby marble*. When polished, it strongly resembles the statuary marble of Italy. I have, in my mineralogical cabinet, specimens, obtained both from this, and from Dr. Judd's quarry, which, in point of translucency, delicacy of texture, and general beauty, are not surpassed by any Carrara, or Parian marble, which has ever fallen under my observation.

*Serpentine* has been found, in small masses, at a little distance from the new college building. Its colour is a light green, and at the edges it is very translucent.

\* If the limestone be primitive, the argillite must be so too, and I have seen nothing to convince me, that this is not the case.



*Water.*

The minerals impart to the water in this village a property, which causes it to be denominated *hard water*, or renders it incapable of readily dissolving soap. It is impregnated with various earthy substances, but, chiefly, with carbonate and muriate of lime. It may be separated from its foreign ingredients, or, at least, be rendered far less contaminated, by means of common pot-ash, or pearl-ash. If you wish to clarify a hogshead of this water, or make it *soft*, and fit for washing, it may be effected, as experiment has repeatedly taught me, by infusing into it three or four quarts of good ashes, and stirring it with a stick, or, what is better, by procuring a lie from the ashes, and then pouring in a quantity of it, sufficient to render the water an easy solvent of soap.

*Mineral Spring.*

About a mile and a half east from the meeting house, on land belonging to the Hon. Daniel Chipman, there is a mineral spring, whose water is slightly chalybeate. It has been used, with beneficial effect, by persons, afflicted with cutaneous complaints. Taken internally it increases the appetite and, of course, gives a better relish for food. It never freezes.

*Fertility of the Soil.*

A large proportion of the township consists of land, which is arable; and very fertile, yielding to the industrious agriculturist plentiful crops of grain and grass. This part of the country may, perhaps, be considered rather more favourable to the production of the former, than the latter, of these articles. And yet, it affords fine pasturage, and rich meadows; and large droves of fat cattle are collected here, every autumn, for the Boston or Montreal market.

Several farmers have assured me, that certain tracts of their land have, in auspicious seasons, given them forty bushels of wheat to the acre. This, to some, may appear incredible, but I have no reason to call in question the correctness of the assertion. The character of my

informants is such as to preclude the possibility, at least, of intentional error. The wheat, which is not needed for the sustenance of the inhabitants, is transported, principally, to Troy, in the state of New York. The price of this article, here, in ordinary times, fluctuates between \$1,50 and 2,00 a bushel. At this time (December, 1820,) the best of wheat may be bought for \$1,00; and I have heard of instances, in which it has been procured for half this sum. An acre, it is said, will commonly yield a greater number of bushels of wheat than it will of rye.

Oats, barley, buck-wheat, peas, beans and potatoes are cultivated with success. The soil does not appear to be so well adapted to maize, or Indian corn, as that, which lies on Connecticut River. An individual, in this vicinity, however, has raised eighty bushels of corn on an acre.

#### *Fruit Trees.*

The peach tree is rarely to be seen in this part of the country. The stone germinates; the plant springs up and grows luxuriantly during one or two, and, sometimes, three or four years, and then perishes. The tree is supposed to be too tender to endure the severity of our winters. The few peaches, which are brought into the village for sale, from the neighbouring towns, are vastly inferior in point of size, beauty and deliciousness, to those produced in the southern and middle states.

Attempts have been made to *naturalize* the quince tree, but they have all proved ineffectual. The soil, or climate is manifestly unfriendly to it. I have never seen one growing in the town.

This region is particularly favourable to the growth of the apple tree. When the town was first settled by white people, its inhabitants devoted scarcely any attention to the rearing of orchards. Some, without making a trial, imbibed the notion, that the land was ill adapted to the production of this species of fruit. Others were deterred from planting orchards, by the narrow consideration, that they should not live to enjoy the good of their labour; forgetful of the old, but no less important maxim, "that

a man ought to live, as if he were to live here forever, and yet, as if he were to die to-morrow."

Owing to the operation of some cause, I know not what, a complete revolution in opinion has been brought about. There is now scarcely a farm in the town, which does not contain an orchard. Considerable improvements have been effected, within a few years, in our apple orchards, by ingrafting and inoculation. The best kinds of fruit are now raised, and in the highest perfection. The apples are larger, fairer, and better flavoured, than those, which grow in the older states. The pearmain, the seek-no-farther, the Rhode Island greening rank among our best apples. The usual price, in autumn, is between twenty-five and thirty-four cents a bushel, and that of cider from \$1,50 to 2,00 a barrel. The last fall, owing to the uncommon scarcity of money, apples were, in a few instances, bought for seventeen cents a bushel, and cider for \$1,00 a barrel.

We have an extensive variety of plumbs and cherries. The egg plumb, produced here, is of a large size, and delicious; but the tree is very short lived. Nearly all, which ornamented our fruit yards a few years since, are now dead.

The damson and three or four other sorts of plumb flourish here. Within a moderate period, however, a disease has fastened on many of the plumb trees, which has proved fatal to them. The first indication of it, which I have noticed, is the decay of some of the lower limbs. Others die, gradually, till the whole tree is finally destroyed.

In the spring of 1818, I observed two of my best trees beginning to fail, and resolved to search for the cause. I dug away the earth, about a foot deep, around one of them, and found, that the body of the tree, just below the surface of the ground, was, on one side, considerably swollen, and had become fungous. The wood, more than half round the stock, was dry, hard and spongy. With a sharp instrument, I separated the dead part of the wood from that, which was sound and healthy, and filled up the cavity, around the roots, with chip manure, over which was spread a coating, three or four inches thick, of rich



earth. The tree is now alive ; was loaded with fruit the last season ; and does not appear at all defective.

On the other tree, I made no experiment. The branches, one after another, withered away, till the whole perished, and in the succeeding autumn, owing to the progress, which the disease had made at the root, the tree was broken down by the force of the wind. The evil is, I imagine, attributable to the operation of a small worm, which insinuates itself between the bark and wood, and feeds, perhaps, on both. No worms were discovered, but there were holes in the bark and wood, which had the appearance of having been formed by them. By means of their work, the sap is prevented from circulating freely through the pores of that part of the tree ; the wood, consequently, becomes dry and defective, and the decayed part, gradually communicating its noxious qualities to the whole tree, effects its destruction.

The pear is but little cultivated. Why is it, that the inhabitants make no more exertions to rear this admirable fruit ? Our climate, surely, is not unfavourable to its growth. Those who have made the trial, have succeeded beyond their highest expectations. One of our townsmen,\* whose farm lies about two miles from the village, has two large trees, which grew from pear twigs, set twenty years ago, in stocks of the thorn apple. They bear plentifully, and the fruit sells for about \$2,00 a bushel.

Some of the most delicious pears, which I have ever tasted, were produced in Scotland, in latitude as high as  $55^{\circ} 50'$ . I mention this circumstance to show, that the pear neither demands a long summer, nor the influence of a vertical sun.

The tree should be reared, not from the seed, for it is of very slow growth, but from inoculation, or from ingrafting. On an apple stock, the pear scion will not, it is believed, become a fruitful, and durable tree. These two kinds of trees have but little affinity for each other. The pear slip will flourish tolerably well in the apple tree,

\* Capt. Samson.

for two or three years, but is then, for want of a stronger adhesion, liable to be broken off by the wind, or by its own weight.

The thorn apple adopts, without reluctance, the pear scion, and nourishes it as its own child. The stock, when somewhat less than an inch in diameter, should be sawn off just below the surface of the ground, so that the new tree may not be altogether dependent on the thorn for its support, but may itself take root in the soil. The scions, whether pear or apple, should be taken from young and thrifty trees. If they are cut from aged, decaying ones, they will not, Sir Humphrey Davy assures us, long survive the trees from which they were derived.

As his observations, on this subject, are peculiarly interesting, and may not have been perused by all my readers, I shall take the liberty to transcribe two or three paragraphs from his Agricultural Chemistry. He is speaking of the causes of decay in trees :

“The decay of the heart-wood,” says he, “seems to constitute the great limit to the age and size of trees. And in young branches from old trees, it is much more liable to decompose, than in similar branches from seedlings. *This is likewise the case with grafts.* The graft is only nourished by the sap of the tree to which it is transferred ; its properties are not changed by it ; the leaves, blossoms, and fruit are of the same kind, as if it had vegetated upon its parent stock. The only advantage to be gained in this way, is the affording to the graft from an old tree a more plentiful and healthy food, than it could have procured in its natural state ; it is rendered, for a time, more vigorous, and produces fairer blossoms and richer fruits. But it partakes, not merely of the obvious properties, but likewise of *the infirmities and dispositions to old age and decay of the tree whence it sprung.*”

“This seems to be distinctly shown by the observations and experiments of Mr. Knight. He has, in a number of instances, transferred the young scions and healthy shoots from old esteemed fruit-bearing trees to young seedlings. They flourished for two or three years ; but they soon became diseased and sickly, like their parent trees.”



This curious fact—that grafts taken from old trees will be short lived—has been amply demonstrated by experiments made in our own country. I shall mention but one instance. The Hon. Gamaliel Painter (whom I have before mentioned) obtained, at three different times, a number of scions from a venerable and favourite pear tree, above one hundred years old, in Salisbury in Connecticut. He set them all, with great care, in stocks of the thorn apple tree ; but was unable to make any of them live more than two or three years. The one, which survived the longest, he at length noticed, was beginning to perish at the top. This part he cut off, with his penknife, and found the graft hollow ; and the farther he cut down, the more its heart-wood was decayed. The next season it died.

I have heard it asserted, that the pear scion would vegetate, and become fruitful, if set in a small stock of the elm tree. Whether there be any truth in this assertion, I know not. The experiment might easily be made.

### *The Grape,*

which has been cultivated in all ages of the world, the grape, so frequently mentioned in the scriptures, as well as in profane authors, and the largeness of whose cluster, cut at “ the brook of Eshcol,” afforded the offspring of Jacob no unconvincing testimony of the richness of “ the land of promise ;”—does not, generally, flourish in Middlebury. The vine grows luxuriantly, but is, almost always, unfruitful. Its barrenness may be attributable to our ignorance of the proper mode of managing it. The pruning knife, I apprehend, is employed much too sparingly ; the foliage is suffered to become too thick ; it forms a covering to the fruit nearly impervious to the rays of the sun. But the young and tender grapes should at all times have a free and fair exposure to the influence of the sun. This is indispensable in order to their being early brought to a state of maturity.

Severe cutting, we are informed, by experienced gardeners, does not impair, but benefit the vine. If manag-



ed here, as it is in some parts of Europe, the vine, perhaps, might succeed.

It is there propagated, usually, by *cuttings*. The piece intended to be planted is taken, most of it, from the last year's growth, cutting the stock, however, a little below where it sprouted, the last season, from the old vine ; so as to retain on the cutting a small quantity of the two years old wood. It should be about a foot long, and all its branches lopped off. Sometime in the early part of May, it should be placed in the ground, in an erect posture, or but little inclined, the larger end downward, so deep as to have the upper eye level with the surface, over which eye a small quantity of light earth should be spread, to prevent it from becoming too dry to sprout. The cuttings should be planted, one in each hill, the hills being about five feet apart, so that they may conveniently be hoed, in the same manner, that we hoe corn, or beans. Only one sprout should be allowed to grow, the rest being rubbed off with the hand, or cut away with a knife. This, when it rises sufficiently high, should be tied to a strong stake or pole, similar to a bean pole, driven into the earth, and rising above it five or six feet. The knife ought never to permit the vine to overtop the pole.

The soil should be light and rich. That the root may acquire strength, the vine should be very thoroughly pruned for two or three years. The pruning should be performed, both in the autumn and spring, as well as, occasionally, during the summer. The best time for effecting it, in the fall, is immediately after the leaves have fallen.

The grapes are always borne by shoots of the present year's growth, springing from the wood, which was produced the preceding year. Care should, therefore, be taken in pruning to preserve the most vigorous and handsome shoots of the present year ; for these will be most likely to yield strong and healthy branches, to sustain and nourish the grapes the ensuing season. Cuttings commonly bear fruit the third year after planting.

There can be little doubt, I imagine, that the large purple grape, which grows spontaneously in many parts of New England, and possesses an excellent flavour, and.

perhaps, the Madeira grape also, might, with proper culture, be made to flourish here, and become fruitful. Possibly the vine might require covering in the winter; but this could be done, with very little labour, by bending it down to the ground, throwing a small quantity of straw over it, and on this placing a few shovelfull of earth. I am now endeavouring to raise grapes in the above described manner. The cuttings were planted two years ago. The last spring they were covered with blossoms, but bore no fruit. The next season, I shall probably have a crop of grapes.

### *Strawberries, Gooseberries, &c.*

The white and red strawberry, the gooseberry, the red and black raspberry, the red and white currant are found, in great perfection, in some of our gardens.\*

### *Currants.*

Currants are here manufactured into wine. Many families make, at least, one small cask, annually, for their own consumption, and prefer it to wine made from grapes.

### *Gardening.*

There is but little attention here given to the delightful art of horticulture. The inhabitants devote their time, principally, to objects, which are more lucrative, and, perhaps, in their estimation, more honourable. But they ought not to forget, that one of the greatest sovereigns of Rome, voluntarily, abandoned the imperial purple to become a practical gardener. To cultivate a small tract

\* *Strawberry vines* should be set in *beds*. This mode is vastly preferable to that of cultivating them in hills. The labour is less, the vine more productive, and the fruit far cleaner. They should be set, one in a place, ten or twelve inches asunder, sometime in the last of the month of April, or near the commencement of May, and kept free from weeds. The bed should be thoroughly dug, and made rich by manure. The shoots, or *runners*, which will be very numerous, ought, during the first summer, to be frequently cut off, with a hoe, or with a pair of scissors. The second season, the vines may be allowed to cover the whole of the ground, and, afterward, will need no further weeding. They will continue to bear four or five years. In order to be certain of having this luxury, every summer, it will be proper to have a new bed set, once in two or three years. The field strawberry, by being cultivated in a garden, is greatly improved, both in size and flavour.

of land was, in his view, and in that of his eulogist, a high honour.

“Methinks I see great Dioclesian walk  
In the Salonian garden’s noble shade,  
Which by his own imperial hands was made :  
I see him smile, methinks, as he does talk  
With the ambassador, who came in vain  
T’ intice him to a *throne* again.”

No employment is a better preservative, or restorative, of health. Nothing can be more salubrious than the odour emanating from the newly dug ground, and from the blossoms of garden shrubbery. To a professional man : to one, whose occupation compels him to a sedentary life, and who is perpetually inhaling the noxious air of a confined study, what a treat is it, to go into the open air and labour an hour in his garden ! It produces innumerable happy effects ; it expels melancholy : it cheers the jaded spirits ; it arouses and invigorates the deadened energies of the soul.

“Often amused with feats of gardening,  
Delightful exercise, I work and sing !  
And moving cheerful feel not half my toil,  
Like swains that whistle, while they plough the soil.  
Should any disbelieve, I here invite  
Such infidels to come, and trust their sight.”

There are, in Middlebury, no splendid gardens, adorned with elegant parterres, and spreading wall trees, and winding alleys, and gravelled walks, and artificial lakes ; but there are many valuable kitchen gardens, in which may be found all the common esculent vegetables.

*Carrots* are grown, by some individuals, in large quantities for the purpose of being given to cattle, and especially to milch cows. They afford a very nutritious species of food, and cause them to yield milk more plenteously and richer. It is believed that cows, in this way, may be supported through the winter at considerably less expense (giving them, occasionally, a little hay) than they can, when supplied wholly with *barn fodder*.

The watermelon does not attain a high degree of perfection in our gardens. The fruit is puny in its size, and



not rich in its flavour. This is owing, I imagine, to the soil, which, in most parts of the town, is clayey. Excellent watermelons are produced at Burlington, and at Windsor, where the soil is lighter and more sandy.

### *Catalogue of Plants.*

The following catalogue of plants, which are indigenous in the township of Middlebury, was prepared for me by Dr. Edwin James, a young gentleman, formerly of this place, who has, during a considerable period, assiduously applied himself to the study of botany, and who will, ere-long, attain to distinguished eminence in this interesting branch of natural history.

<i>Botanical Names.</i>	<i>Vulgar Names.</i>
<i>Acalypha virginica</i> , ( <i>Willdenow.</i> )	Three-seed mercury.
<i>Acer rubrum</i> ,	Red maple ; soft maple.
<i>saccharinum</i> ,	Sugar maple.
<i>striatum</i> , ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Striped maple.
<i>spicatum</i> , ( <i>Lamark.</i> )	Mountain maple.
<i>Achillea millefolium</i> , ( <i>Smith.</i> )	Yarrow.
<i>Acorus calamus</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Sweet flag.
<i>Actaea rubra</i> , ( <i>Bigelow.</i> )	Baneberry.
<i>alba</i> ,	Necklace-weed.
<i>Adiantum pedatum</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Maiden-hair.
<i>Agrimonia eupatoria</i> ,	Agrimony.
<i>Agrostemma githago</i> ,	Cockle.
<i>Agrostis vulgaris</i> , ( <i>Smith.</i> )	Red-top.
<i>alba</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	White-top.
<i>tenuiflora</i> ,	—
<i>Aira flexuosa</i> ,	Hair grass.
<i>Alisma plantago</i> , ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Water plantain, mad-dog-weed.
<i>Allium tricoccum</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Wild leek.
<i>Alnus serrulata</i> ,	Alder.
<i>Alsine media</i> ,	Succulent chick-weed.
<i>Amaranthus oleraceus</i> ,	Pot amaranth.
<i>Ambrosia elatior</i> , [ <i>chaux.</i> )	Hog-weed.
<i>Ampelopsis quinquefolia</i> , ( <i>Mi-</i>	False grape.
<i>Anemone virginiana</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Wind-flower.
<i>aconitifolia</i> , ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	—
<i>nemorosa</i> ,	Low anemone.
<i>Angelica triquinata</i> ,	Angelica.
<i>Anthemis cotula</i> , ( <i>L.</i> )	May-weed.
<i>Anthoxanthum odoratum</i> ,	Sweet vernal grass.
<i>Apocynum androsaemifolium</i> ,	Dog-bane.
( <i>Willd.</i> )	

*Botanical Names.**Vulgar Names.*

Apocynum connabinum,	Indian hemp.
Aquilegia canadensis,	Wild columbine.
Aralia hispida,	Woody-stemmed sarsaparilla.
racemosa,	Spikenard.
nudicaulis,	Sarsaparilla.
Arenaria stricta,	————
Arctium lappa,	Burdock.
Aronia botryapium, ( <i>Persoon.</i> )	Shad-bush.
melanocarpa,	Black chokeberry.
Artemisia vulgaris, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Mug-wort.
Arum triphyllum,	Indian turnip.
Asarum canadense,	Wild ginger.
Asclepias syriaca, ( <i>L.</i> )	Common milk-weed.
debilis, ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Slender milk-weed.
incarnata,	Swamp milk-weed.
quadrifolia,	————
Aspidium acrostichoides, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	————
marginale,	————
Asplenium rhizophyllum,	Walking leaf.
angustifolium,	Spleen-wort.
ebeneum,	Ebony spleen-wort.
Aster foliosus,	Star-flower.
novae angliae,	————
cordifolius,	————
corymbosus,	————
puniceus,	————
Azalea viscosa, ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	White honey-suckle.
nudiflora,	Early honey-suckle.
Betula populifolia, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Poplar birch.
excelsa,	Tall birch.
papyracea,	Canoe birch.
lenta,	Spicy birch.
Bidens cernua,	Water-beggar-ticks.
frondosa,	Burr-mary-gold.
connata,	————
Botrychium fumaroides ?	————
virginicum,	————
gracile,	————
Bromus secalinus,	Chess.
ciliatus,	————
Calla palustris,	Water arum.
Callitriche verna,	Water star-wort.
intermedia,	————
Caltha palustris,	American cowslip.
Campanula rotundifolia,	Hair-bell.
erinoides,	Prickly bell-flower.

<i>Botanical Names.</i>	<i>Vulgar Names.</i>
<i>Campanula perfoliata</i> ,	Clasping bell-flower.
<i>Cannabis sativa</i> ,	Hemp.
<i>Cardamine pennsylvanica</i> ,	Water cress.
<i>Carex retroflexa</i> ,	Sedge grass.
<i>stipata</i> ,	_____
<i>festucacea</i> ,	_____
<i>caespitosa</i> ,	_____
<i>crinita</i> ,	_____
<i>vestita</i> ,	_____
<i>tentaculata</i> ,	_____
<i>lupulina</i> ,	_____
<i>folliculata</i> ,	_____
<i>plantaginea</i> ,	_____
<i>Carpinus americana</i> , [chaux.]	Blue beech.
<i>Caulophyllum thalictroides</i> , (Mi-	Blue cohosh.
<i>Ceanothus americanus</i> , (Willd.)	New Jersey tea.
<i>Celastrus scandens</i> ,	Staff-tree.
<i>Cerastium vulgatum</i> , (Smith.)	Mouse-ear chick-weed.
<i>Chaerophyllum claytoni</i> , (Pers.)	Poison cicily.
<i>Chelidonium majus</i> ,	Celandine.
<i>Chelone glabra</i> , (Willdenow.)	Snake-head.
<i>Chenopodium album</i> , (Smith.)	Pig-weed.
<i>botrys</i> ,	Oak-of-Jerusalem.
<i>Chimaphila maculata</i> ,	Spotted wintergreen.
<i>corymbosa</i> ,	Bitter wintergreen.
<i>Chrysanthemum leucanthemum</i> ,	Ox-eyed daisy.
<i>Chrysosplenium oppositifolium</i> ,	Water carpet.
(Willd.)	
<i>Cicuta maculata</i> ,	Musquash-root.
<i>bulbifera</i> ,	_____
<i>Circaea lutetiana</i> , (Vahl.)	Enchanter's night-shade.
<i>alpina</i> ,	Dwarf night-shade.
<i>Claytonia virginica</i> , (Pursh.)	Spring beauty.
<i>Clematis virginica</i> , (Willd.)	Virgin's bower.
<i>Cnicus lanceolatus</i> ,	Common thistle.
<i>altissimus</i> ,	Tall thistle.
<i>arvensis</i> , (Pursh.)	Canada thistle.
<i>Collinsonia canadensis</i> , (Willd.)	Horse balm.
<i>Comptonia asplenifolia</i> ,	Sweet fern.
<i>Convallaria canaliculata</i> ,	Clasping solomon-seal.
<i>multiflora</i> ,	Giant solomon-seal.
<i>racemosa</i> , (Pursh.)	Spiked solomon-seal.
<i>bifolia</i> , (Michaux.)	Dwarf solomon-seal.
<i>Coptis trifolia</i> , (Pursh.)	Goldthread.
<i>Cornus canadensis</i> ,	Low cornel.
<i>sanguinea</i> ,	Red osier.
<i>alba</i> ,	White dog-wood.
<i>sericea</i> ,	Blue-berried dog-wood.



<i>Botanical Names.</i>	<i>Vulgar Names.</i>
<i>Cornus paniculata</i> ,	Panicled dog-wood.
<i>Corydalis cucullaria</i> , ( <i>Pers.</i> )	Yellow breeches.
<i>glauca</i> ,	Colic-weed.
<i>fungosa</i> ,	Climbing colic-weed.
<i>Corylus americana</i> , ) <i>Willd.</i> )	Swamp hazlenut.
<i>rostrata</i> ,	Beaked hazlenut.
<i>Crataegus coccinea</i> ,	Thorn-bush.
<i>pyrifolia</i> ,	Pear-leaf thorn.
<i>flava</i> ,	Yellow-berried thorn.
<i>crus-galli</i> ,	Thorn tree.
<i>Cuscuta americana</i> ,	Dodder.
<i>Cymbidium hyemale</i> ,*	Adam and eve.
<i>corallorhizum</i> ,	Coral-root.
<i>odontorhizum</i> ,	Toothed coral.
<i>pulchellum</i> ,	Grass-pink.
<i>Cynoglossum officinale</i> ,	Hound-tongue.
<i>Cyperus poaeformis</i> , ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Bog grass.
<i>uncinatus</i> ,	_____
<i>flavescens</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Yellow grass.
<i>Cypripedium pubescens</i> ,	Yellow ladies' slipper.
<i>humile</i> ,	Low ladies' slipper.
<i>Dalibarda fragarioides</i> , ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Spice-root, dry strawberry.
<i>violaeoides</i> ,	False violet.
<i>Datura stramonium</i> , ( <i>L.</i> )	Thorn-apple, (introduced.)
<i>Dentaria diphylla</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Tooth-root ; trickle.
<i>Diervilla humilis</i> , ( <i>Pers.</i> )	Bush honey-suckle.
<i>Digitaria sanguinalis</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Finger grass.
<i>Dirca palustris</i> ,	American mezereon.
<i>Dracaena borealis</i> ,	Dragoness plant.
<i>Dulichium spathaceum</i> , ( <i>Pers.</i> )	Galingale.
<i>Elodea campanulata</i> , ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Swamp John's-wort.
<i>Elymus striatus</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Wild rye.
<i>hystriz</i> ,	Hedge-hog grass.
<i>Epigaea repens</i> ,	Trailing arbutus.
<i>Epilobium spicatum</i> ,	Great willow herb.
<i>lineare</i> ,	_____
<i>palustre</i> ,	_____
<i>tetragonum</i> ,	_____
<i>Equisetum arvense</i> ,	Horse-tail.
<i>hyemale</i> ,	Scouring rush.
<i>sylvaticum</i> ,	_____

\* *Corallorhiza hyemale* of Nuttall, who has at length corrected the error, which had crept into all former descriptions of this interesting plant. See his *Genera of North American Plants*.

<i>Botanical Names.</i>	<i>Vulgar Names.</i>
Erigeron canadense, strigosum, heterophyllum, philadelphicum, bellidifolium,	Pride-weed. _____ _____ _____ _____
Eriophorum angustifolium,	Cotton grass.
Erysimum officinale, barbarea,	Hedge mustard. Water radish.
Erythronium lanceolatum, ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Adder's tongue.
Eupatorium purpureum, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Joe pye.
verticillatum,	Canker-root.
perfoliatum,	Boneset; thorough-wort.
ageratoides,	_____
Fagus ferruginea,	
Festuca elatior,	Beech.
Fluvialis fragilis?	Fescue grass.
Fragaria virginiana,	River nymph.
Fraxinus acuminata,	Wild strawberry.
pubescens,	White ash.
sambucifolia,	Black ash.
	Water ash.
Galeopsis tetrahit,	
Galium trifidum,	Flowering nettle.
tinctorium,	Bed straw.
asprellum,	Dyer's cleavers.
triflorum,	Rough bed straw.
Gaultheria procumbens, serphyllifolia, ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Spicy wintergreen
Gentiana saponaria, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Creeping wintergreen.
Geranium maculatum,	Soap-wort gentian.
robertianum,	Crowfoot geranium.
Geum virginianum,	Herb robert.
strictum,	Avens.
rivale,	Upright avens.
Glechoma hederacea,	Purple avens.
Glycine comosa,	Ground ivy.
apios,	Slender wild bean.
Gnaphalium margaritaceum,	Groundnut.
polycepalum,	Everlasting.
plantagineum,	Sweet-scented everlasting.
uliginosum,	Early everlasting.
Gratiola officinalis,	Mud everlasting.
	Hedge hyssop.
Hamamelis virginica,	
Hedeoma pulegioides,	Witch hazle.
Hedysarum glutinosum,	Penny-royal.
viridiflorum,	Bush trefoil.
	_____

*Botanical Names.**Vulgar Names.*

Hedysarum acuminatum,	Bush trefoil.
Helianthus trachelifolius,	Rough sunflower.
divaricatus,	Small sunflower.
decapetalus,	—
tuberosus,	Artichoke, (introduced.)
Hepatica triloba, ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Liver-leaf.
Heracleum lanatum,	Cow parsley.
Hieracium venosum,	Vein-leaf; hawk-weed.
gronovii,	Small hawk-weed.
paniculatum,	Panicked hawk-weed.
fasciculatum, ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Great-toothed hawk-weed.
scabrum, ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Rough hawk-weed.
marianum, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	(a variety of <i>H. gronovii</i> ?)
Houstonia coerulea,	Venus' pride.
Humulus lupulus,	Hop.
Hydrocotyle americana,	Water navel-wort.
Hyoseris amplexicaulis, ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	—
Hypericum canadense, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Square-stemm'd St. John's-wort.
perforatum,	Common St. John's-wort.
corymbosum,	Tall St. John's-wort.
parviflorum,	Small St. John's-wort.
Hyssopus nepetoides, ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Giant hyssop.
Illex canadensis, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Mountain-holly.
Impatiens nolitangere,	Touch-me-not.
biflora,	Jewel-weed.
Inula helenium,	Elecampane.
Iris virginica,	Blue flag; wild iris.
Juglans cinerea,	Butternut.
squamosa,	Shagbark walnut.
porcina,	Pignut.
Juncus effusus, ( <i>Smith.</i> )	Rush grass.
setaceus, ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	—
nodosus,	—
tenuis,	—
campestris,	—
Juniperus virginiana, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Red cedar.
prostrata,	American savin.
communis,	Juniper.
Kalmia angustifolia,	Sheep poison.
Lactuca elongata,	Wild lettuce.
Lapathum acetosellum, ( <i>Pers.</i> )	Field sorrel.
Lechea major, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Pin-weed.
minor,	—
Leersia oryzoides, ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Cut grass.



*Botanical Names.**Vulgar Names.*

Lemna polyrhiza,	Water flax-seed.
Leontodon taraxacum,	Dandelion.
Leonurus cardiaca,	Mother-wort.
Leptanthus graminea, ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Water star-grass.
Lilium canadense, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Meadow lily.
Lindernia dilatata, ( <i>Muhlenberg.</i> )	Lindern.
Linnaea borealis, ( <i>Gronovius.</i> )	Twin-flower.
Lobelia cardinalis, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Cardinal flower.
inflata,	Indian tobacco.
pallida,	—
Lonicera parviflora, ( <i>Caprifolium.</i> )	—
<i>parviflorum</i> , Pursh.)	—
hirsuta,	Rough wood-vine.
Lycopodium clavatum,	Club-moss.
complanatum,	Ground pine.
dendroideum,	Tree-moss.
lucidulum,	Moon-fruit pine.
Lycopus europaeus, ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Water horehound.
virginicus,	—
Lysimachia racemosa,	Bulb bearing loose strife.
ciliata,	Common loose strife.
quadrifolia, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Whorled loose strife.
Malaxis liliifolia,	Tway blade.
ophioglossoides,	Snake-mouth.
Malva rotundifolia,	Low mallows.
Medeola virginica,	Indian cucumber.
Melilotus officinalis,	Melilot.
Menispermum canadense,	Moon-seed.
Mentha borealis,	Meadow-mint.
viridis,	Spear-mint.
Mimulus ringens,	Monkey flower.
Mitchella repens, ( <i>L.</i> )	Partridgeberry.
Mitella diphylla,	Currant leaf.
prostrata,	—
Monarda oblongata, ( <i>Aiton.</i> )	High balm ; (naturalized.)
Monotropa lanuginosa, ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Bird's nest.
uniflora, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Beech drops.
Muhlenbergia erecta, ( <i>Pers.</i> )	Wood grass.
Myosotis lappula,	—
Myrrhis dulcis,	Sweet cicely.
Neottia cernua, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Ladies' tresses.
pubescens,	Blood-vein ladies' tresses.
Nepeta cataria,	Catnep.
Nuphar advena,	Yellow pond lily.
kalmiana, ( <i>Aiton.</i> )	Little yellow pond lily.
Nymphaea odorata, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	White pond lily.

*Botanical Names.**Vulgar Names.*

<i>Oenothera biennis</i> ,	Scabish.
<i>chrysantha</i> ,	Dwarf scabish.
<i>Onoclea sensibilis</i> ,	Sensitive fern.
<i>struthiopteris</i> ,	Buck's-horn brake.
<i>Orchis ciliaris</i> ,	Yellow orchis.
<i>lacera</i> ,	Ragged-lip'd orchis.
<i>spectabilis</i> ,	Showy orchis.
<i>orbiculata</i> , ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Round-leaved orchis.
<i>dilatata</i> ,	Giant orchis.
<i>fimbriata</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Purple orchis.
<i>Orobanche virginiana</i> ,	Cancer root.
<i>Osmunda cinnamomea</i> ,	Flowering fern.
<i>interrupta</i> ,	_____
<i>regalis</i> ,	_____
<i>Ostrya virginica</i> ,	Iron wood, hop horn beam.
<i>Oxalis acetosella</i> ,	Wood sorrel.
<i>dillenii</i> ,	Ladies' sorrel.
<i>stricta</i> ,	_____
<i>Oxycoccus macrocarpus</i> ,	Cranberry.
<i>Panax quinquefolia</i> ,	Ginseng.
<i>trifolia</i> ,	Dwarf groundnut.
<i>Panicum crus-galli</i> ,	Barn grass.
<i>glaucum</i> ,	Foxtail panic.
<i>capillare</i> ,	_____
<i>latifolium</i> ,	_____
<i>nitidum</i> ,	_____
<i>Parnassia caroliniana</i> ,	Grass of parnassus.
<i>Pastinaca sativa</i> ,	Wild parsnip, (introduced.)
<i>Pedicularis canadensis</i> ,	Louse-wort.
<i>Penthorum sedoides</i> ,	Virginian orpine.
<i>Pentstemon pubescens</i> ,	Beard tongue.
<i>Phleum pratense</i> ,	Timothy grass.
<i>Phalaris arundinacea</i> ,	Ribbon grass.
<i>Phryma leptostachya</i> ,	Lop-seed.
<i>Phytolacca decandra</i> ,	Poke-weed.
<i>Pinus balsamea</i> ,	Fir tree.
<i>canadensis</i> , ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Hemlock.
<i>nigra</i> ,	Double spruce.
<i>alba</i> ,	Single spruce.
<i>strobis</i> ,	White pine.
<i>pendula</i> ,	Tamarack.
<i>microcarpa</i> ,	Red larch.
<i>resinosa</i> ,	Yellow pine.
<i>rigida</i> ,	Pitch pine.
<i>Plantago major</i> ,	Plantain.
<i>Plantanus occidentalis</i> ,	Button-ball tree.
<i>Poa pratensis</i> , ( <i>Smith.</i> )	Meadow grass.

<i>Botanical Names.</i>	<i>Vulgar Names.</i>
<i>Poa compressa,</i>	Blue grass.
<i>quinquefida,</i>	Giant meadow grass.
<i>reptans, (Michaux.)</i>	Carpet grass.
<i>Polygala paucifolia, (Willd.)</i>	Flowering wintergreen.
<i>Polygonum punctatum, (Elliot.)</i>	Water pepper.
<i>aviculare, (Willd.)</i>	Knot grass.
<i>persicaria,</i>	Ladies' thumb.
<i>pennsylvanicum,</i>	Knee knot-weed.
<i>sagittatum;</i>	Prickly knot-weed.
<i>arifolium,</i>	Halbert knot-weed.
<i>convolvulus,</i>	Bind knot-weed.
<i>scandens,*</i>	Climbing buck-wheat.
<i>lapathifolium, (Muhl.)</i>	Sorrel knot-weed.
<i>Polypodium vulgare, (Willd.)</i>	Polypod.
<i>hexagonopterum,</i>	_____
<i>Populus tremuloides, (Michaux.)</i>	White poplar.
<i>grandidentata,</i>	Tree poplar.
<i>angulata,</i>	Water poplar.
<i>balsamifera,</i>	Balsam poplar.
<i>Portulacca oleracea, (L.)</i>	Purslane.
<i>Potamogeton natans, (Michaux.)</i>	Broad-leaved pond-weed.
<i>fluitans, (Willd.)</i>	Long-leaved pond-weed.
<i>perfoliatum, (Mx.)</i>	Clasping pond-weed.
<i>gramineum,</i>	Grass-leaved pond-weed.
<i>lucens,</i>	Shining pond-weed.
<i>pectinatum,</i>	Brittle-leaved pond-weed.
<i>compressum,</i>	Flat-stemmed pond-weed.
<i>Potentilla, norvegica,</i>	Cinque-foil.
<i>anserina,</i>	Goose cinque-foil.
<i>canadensis,</i>	Common five-finger.
<i>Pothos foetida, (Michaux.)</i>	Skunk-cabbage.
<i>Prenanthes alba, (Willd.)</i>	White-lettuce.
<i>altissima,</i>	_____
<i>cordata,</i>	_____
<i>Prinos verticillatus,</i>	Winterberry.
<i>Proserpinaca palustris,</i>	Mermaid-weed.
<i>Prunella pennsylvanica,</i>	Heal-all.
<i>Prunus virginiana,</i>	Wild cherry.
<i>serotina,</i>	Choke cherry.
<i>americana, (Muhl.)</i>	_____
<i>Pteris aquilina, (Willd.)</i>	Common brake.
<i>Pyrola rotundifolia,</i>	Shin leaf.
<i>secunda,</i>	One-sided shin leaf.

\* *P. scandens.* Large tracts of land on the Green Mountain, in this part of the state, which were burnt over in the year 1816, are now covered with an immense quantity of this plant, and the great willow herb, *Epilobium spicatum.*



<i>Botanical Names.</i>	<i>Vulgar Names.</i>
<i>Quercus tinctoria</i> ,	Black oak.
discolor,	False red oak.
coccinea,	Scarlet oak.
rubra,	Red oak.
olivae-formis,	Mossy-cup oak.
alba,	White oak.
montana,	Mountain oak.
bicolor,	Swamp white oak.
<i>Ranunculus acris</i> ,	Common crowfoot.
fluviatilis,	River crowfoot.
abortivus,	Small-flowered crowfoot.
hirsutus, ( <i>Curtis.</i> )	Rough crowfoot.
bulbosus, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Bulbous crowfoot.
sceleratus,	Celery crowfoot.
<i>Rhus typhinum</i> ,	Sumach.
glabrum,	Sleek sumach.
copallinum,	Mountain sumach.
toxicodendron,	Poison ash.
<i>Ribes floridum</i> ,	Wild black currant.
triflorum,	Gooseberry.
gracile,	Smooth gooseberry.
<i>Rosa corymbosa</i> ,	Swamp rose.
parviflora,	Wild rose.
rubiginosa,	Sweet briar.
<i>Rubus villosus</i> ,	High blackberry.
strigosus,	Red raspberry.
occidentalis,	Black raspberry.
trivialis, ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Dewberry.
saxatilis,	Rock blackberry.
odoratus, ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Flowering raspberry.
<i>Rumex crispus</i> ,	Dock.
obtusifolius,	—
verticillatus,	—
<i>Sagittaria saggitifolia</i> ,	Arrow-head.
latifolia,	—
heterophylla,	—
<i>Salix conifera</i> ,	Cone-gall willow.
nigra,	Brittle-joint willow.
lucida,	Shining willow.
vitellina,	Yellow willow.
<i>Sambucus canadensis</i> ,	Black elder.
pubescens,	Red elder.
<i>Samolus valerandi</i> ,	Brook-weed.
<i>Sanguinaria canadensis</i> ,	Blood-root.
<i>Sanicula marilandica</i> ,	Sanicle.
<i>Satyrion bracteatum</i> ,	Satyrion.

<i>Botanical Names.</i>	<i>Vulgar Names.</i>
<i>Scirpus tenuis</i> ,	Club-rush.
<i>acutus</i> ,	Common bull-rush.
<i>Saxifraga nivalis</i> ,	Early saxifrage.
<i>Scrophularia marilandica</i> ,	Fig-wort.
<i>Scutellaria galericulata</i> ,	Scull-cap.
<i>lateriflora</i> ,	Mad dog scull-cap.
<i>Senecio hieracifolius</i> ,	Fire-weed.
<i>aureus</i> ,	Rag-wort.
<i>Serpicula occidentalis</i> ,	Little snake-weed.
<i>Sinapis nigra</i> ,	Mustard.
<i>Sison Candense</i> ,	Hone-wort.
<i>Sisymbrium amphibium</i> ,	Water radish.
<i>Sium latifolium</i> ,	Water parsnip.
<i>Smilax rotundifolia</i> ,	Green briar.
<i>peduncularis</i> ,	Jacob's ladder.
<i>herbacea</i> ,	—
<i>Smyrnum aureum</i> ,	Alexanders.
<i>cordatum</i> , ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	—
<i>Solanum dulcamara</i> , ( <i>L.</i> )	Bitter-sweet.
<i>nigrum</i> ,	Deadly night-shade.
<i>Solidago ciliaris</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Fringed golden-rod.
<i>altissima</i> ,	Variable golden-rod.
<i>arguta</i> ,	Sharp-notch golden-rod.
<i>bicolor</i> ,	White golden-rod.
<i>lanceolata</i> ,	Grass-leaf golden-rod.
<i>latifolia</i> ,	Broad-leaf golden-rod.
<i>virga-aurea</i> ,	Mountain golden-rod.
<i>Sonchus leucophaeus</i> ,	Sow thistle.
<i>oleraceus</i> ,	—
<i>Sorbus Americana</i> ,	Mountain ash.
<i>Sparganium ramosum</i> ,	Bur-reed.
<i>simplex</i> ,	Flag bur-reed.
<i>natans</i> ?	Slender bur-reed.
<i>Spiraea salicifolia</i> ,	White steeple bush.
<i>Staphylea trifolia</i> ,	Bladder-nut.
<i>Streptopus roseus</i> , ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Rose bell flower.
<i>Symphitum officinale</i> , ( <i>naturalized.</i> )	Comfrey.
<i>Tanacetum vulgare</i> , ( <i>naturalized.</i> )	Tansey.
<i>Taxus canadensis</i> ,	Dwarf yew.
<i>Thalictrum dioicum</i> ,	Meadow rue.
<i>cornuti</i> ,	—
<i>polygamum</i> ,	—
<i>Thesium umbellatum</i> ,	False toad flax.
<i>Thlaspi bursa-pastoris</i> ,	Shepherd's purse.
<i>campestris</i> ,	Yellow seed.
<i>Thuja occidentalis</i> ,	American arbor-vitae.

<i>Botanical Names.</i>	<i>Vulgar Names.</i>
<i>Tiarella cordifolia</i> ,	Miter-wort.
<i>Tilia glabra</i> ,	Bass-wood.
<i>pubescens</i> ,	Crop-ear bass-wood.
<i>Trichodium laxiflorum</i> , ( <i>Michaux</i> )	Light hair.
<i>Trichophorum cyperinum</i> ,	Clump grass.
<i>Trientalis americana</i> , ( <i>Pursh</i> .)	Chick wintergreen.
<i>Trifolium pratense</i> , ( <i>Willd</i> .)	Red clover.
<i>repens</i> ,	White clover.
<i>arvense</i> ,	Rabbit-foot clover.
<i>Trillium erectum</i> , ( <i>Pursh</i> .)	Wake-robin.
<i>cernuum</i> ,	Nodding wake-robin.
<i>pictum</i> ,	Smiling wake-robin.
<i>Triticum repens</i> , ( <i>Willd</i> .)	Couch grass.
<i>Turritis hirsuta</i> ,	Tower mustard.
<i>Tussilago farfara</i> ,	Colt's-foot.
<i>Typha latifolia</i> ,	Cat-tail flag.
<i>Ulmus americana</i> ,	White elm.
<i>fulva</i> ,	Red elm.
<i>Urtica dioica</i> ,	Common nettle.
<i>procera</i> ,	Great nettle.
<i>divaricata</i> ,	-----
<i>pumila</i> ,	Clear-weed.
<i>canadensis</i> ,	Canada nettle.
<i>Utricularia vulgaris</i> ,	Bladder-wort.
<i>Uvularia perfoliata</i> ,	Clasping bell-wort.
<i>sessilifolia</i> ,	Sessile-leaved bell-wort.
<i>Vaccinium frondosum</i> ,	Blue whortleberry.
<i>resinosum</i> ,	Black whortleberry.
<i>corymbosum</i> ,	Giant whortleberry.
<i>Vallisneria spiralis</i> ,*	Tape grass.
<i>Veratrum viride</i> ,	White hellebore.
<i>Verbascum thapsus</i> ,	Mullein.
<i>Verbena hastata</i> ,	Purple vervain.
<i>urticifolia</i> ,	White vervain.
<i>Vernonia noveboracensis</i> ,	Flat-top.
<i>Veronica beccabunga</i> ,	Brook lime.
<i>serpyllifolia</i> ,	Paul's betony.
<i>scutellata</i> ,	Scull-cap, speedwell.
<i>peregrina</i> ,	Purslane speedwell.
<i>Viburnum oxycoccus</i> , ( <i>Pursh</i> .)	High Cranberry.
<i>lentago</i> , ( <i>Willd</i> .)	Sheepberry.
<i>lantanoides</i> , ( <i>Michaux</i> .)	Hobble bush.

\* *Vallisneria spiralis*. This singular plant grows plentifully in the Otter Creek, at Middlebury, and here, as well as in the Hudson, at Albany, it has the peduncle of the pistillate flower spiral, both in deep and shallow water.



# 158 DONATIONS TO BOSTON DURING THE SIEGE.

<i>Botanical Names.</i>	<i>Vulgar Names.</i>
<i>Viburnum acerifolium</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Maple guelder rose.
<i>dentatum</i> ,	Arrow wood.
<i>pyrifolium</i> , ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Pear-leaf sheepperry.
<i>pubescens</i> ,	—
<i>Vicia sativa</i> ,	Tare.
<i>Viola asarifolia</i> , ( <i>Muhl.</i> )	Kidney-leaf violet.
<i>blanda</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Smooth violet.
<i>obliqua</i> ,	Twisted violet.
<i>cucullata</i> ,	Blue violet.
<i>clandestina</i> , ( <i>Pursh.</i> )	Ground violet.
<i>canadensis</i> ,	Woods violet.
<i>striata</i> ,	Striped violet.
<i>rostrata</i> ,	Beaked violet.
<i>pubescens</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Yellow violet.
<i>Vitis labrusca</i> , ( <i>Michaux.</i> )	Fox grape.
<i>cordifolia</i> ,	Frost grape.
<i>Xanthium strumarium</i> , ( <i>Willd.</i> )	Clott-bur.
<i>Xylosteum ciliatum</i> ,	Twinberry.
<i>Zanthoxylum fraxineum</i> ,	Prickly ash.

## DONATIONS RECEIVED FOR THE TOWN OF BOSTON DURING THE SIEGE.

1775.

<i>Jan. 30.</i>	<b>BARNSTABLE</b> , cash,	12	10	8
	<b>Salem</b> , north parish,	45		
	<b>Ditto</b> ,	114	9	
	<b>Mansfield</b> ,	28	0	7½
	<b>Attleborough</b> ,	33	11	7
	<b>Unknown</b> ,	3		
	<b>North Providence</b> ,	18	2	4
	<b>William Johnson Rysoon</b> ,	16	6	
<i>Feb. 6.</i>	<b>Danvers</b> ,	13	13	6
	<b>Wellfleet</b> ,	7	10	8
	<b>Yarmouth</b> , east parish,	7	4	8
	<b>Newburyport</b> ,	202	10	2
	<b>Kittery</b> ,	41	3	2
	<b>Carried over</b> ,	£ 527	12	10

1775.	Brought over,	527	12	10½
Feb. 6.	Middleton, . . . . .	22	9	1
	Rehoboth, . . . . .	6	0	2
	Ditto, . . . . .	2	6	2
	Berwick, south parish, . . . . .	11	6	8
	Ditto, north parish, . . . . .	2	2	
	From a lady unknown, . . . . .	7	1	
	Portsmouth, N. H. . . . .	200		
	Eastham, corn, 50 bushels, . . . . .	10		
	Falmouth, wood, 51½ . . . . .	30	18	
	Cape Elizabeth, do. 44½, . . . . .	26	14	
13.	Biddeford, Joseph Morrill, . . . . .	12		
	Southborough, . . . . .	5	0	9
	Scarborough, . . . . .	11	4	3
	Sturbridge, three gentlemen, . . . . .	1	0	4
	Sandisfield, . . . . .	6	9	8
	Beverly, cash, £ 31 9 10, and } sundries amounting to }	41	10	4
	Ditto, July 22, cash, . . . . .	14	2	1
	Brookfield, rye, 9 bushels.			
	Greenwich, grain, 11½ do,			
	Wells, cash, . . . . .	9	1	1
	and wood, 26¾ cords.			

*New Hampshire.*

Exeter, . . . . . 100

*Connecticut.*

Lyme—Joseph, Joseph, Jun. } 5 6  
 Christopher Higgins, }  
 Glassenbury—Ebenezer Plummer, 6 13 4  
 Groton, sheep, 128, cattle, 7; received October 14.

*Virginia.*

Wheat, 2898 bushels,  
 Corn, 498 do.  
 Flour, barrels 22,  
 Calavances, 5 bushels.

---

Carried over, £ 1047 9 9½

1775. Brought over, 1047 9 9½  
*New Jersey.*

Feb. 13. Hunterdon County, . . . 80

*Massachusetts.*

20.	Brookfield, corn, . .	19 bushels,			
	Northborough, grain	80 do.			
	cheese, 36 lbs.				
	pork, 61 do.				
	cash, . . . . .		10	19	4
	Milton, wood, 55 loads,	24 cords.			
	Littleton, cash, . . . . .		4	3	0½
	grain, 26 bushels, 1 check'd				
	handkerchief, home made, pink				
	flowers, ½ lb.				
	Cambridge, cash, . . . . .		31	4	6½
	grain, bushels 37, and meal—				
	7 pair men's shoes, potatoes,				
	2 bushels, turnips, 1 bushel,				
	wood, 17 loads.				
	Brookline, cash, . . . . .		25	7	6½
	corn, 9 bushels, 18½ do. pota-				
	toes, cabbages 48, wood 1 cord.				
	*Concord, cash, . . . . .		11	4	6½
	118 bushels meal,				
	*Lunenburg, wheat, 4 bushels,				
	rye, 82 do.				
	Indian, 2 do.				
	*Lincoln, cash, . . . . .		1	15	5
	meal, 29 bushels,				
	wood, 19 loads.				
	*Dracut, cash, . . . . .		3	17	1
	meal, 45½ bushels.				
	*Acton, cash, . . . . .		3	17	
	grain, 41½ bushels,				
	pork and beef, 32 lbs.				
	Shrewsbury, grain, 53 bushels.				

Carried over, £ 1219 18 3½

\* Those towns marked \* delivered their donations to Charlestown.



1775. Brought over, 1219 18 3½

*Connecticut.*

Feb. 20. Joseph Dennison, Jun.

cheese, 80 lbs.

13½ bushels corn,	} <i>Part of the donation from Cambridge and Charles- town.</i>
4 do. rye,	
17 loads of wood,	
9 bush. potatoes,	
1 do. turnips,	

*Massachusetts.*

27. Gentleman unknown, . . . . 1 14 8

Gentleman in the country, . . . 2

Chilmark, Martha's Vineyard, 6 10

Brookline, 2 fat sheep, 2 cwt. rice,

Bolton, 33 bushels grain,

Sandwich, . . . . . 19

Malden, Rev. Mr. Willis's parish, 3 1

1 pair women's shoes, 1 ton

hay, and 2 loads of wood.

Lancaster, second parish, . . . 12

and 78 bushels grain.

Truro, . . . . . 11 16

Sturbridge, cash, . . . . . 4 13

2 barrels and 1 bag meal, 5 bar-

rels and 1 tierce rye and wheat,

1 barrel pork, and 1 barrel

malt.

*Connecticut.*

Preston, . . . . . 18 13

*Pennsylvania.*

Dover, Kent county, on the De-

laware, . . . . . 80

*Canada.*

Montreal, . . . . . 100 4

Carried over, £ 1468 1 11½

162 DONATIONS TO BOSTON DURING THE SIEGE.

1775. Brought over, 1468 1 11½

*Massachusetts.*

March 6.	Roxbury, second parish, cash,	15	12	
	grain, 3 bushels,			
	wood, 13½ cords,			
	cheese, 40 lbs.			
	Brookline, 1 load of wood.			
	Dedham, 46 cords ditto.			
	Plympton, cash, . . . . .	4	16	
	Medway, east parish, cash, . . .	7	2	
	and cheese, 53½ lbs.			
	Sturbridge, Nathaniel and Josiah			
	Walker, . . . . .	15		
	Danvers, north parish, cash,	26	15	4
	10 pair shoes,			
	check, 8½ yards,			
	thread, 2 ounces,			
	1 pair moose-skin breeches.			
	Nantucket, Rev. Mr. Shaw's			
	parish, . . . . .	26	16	9

*Rhode Island.*

Providence, from the Committee				
of Inspection, . . . . .	16	16	1	

*Virginia.*

Via St. Eustatia, cargo of corn				
blown off the coast, . . . .	128	11		

*South Carolina.*

Roger Smith, Esq. dollars, 328½,				
amount from the inhabitants,	98	13	3	

*Massachusetts.*

13. *Marblehead, from the Committee,				120
Bradford, 35 pair shoes, and cash,	18	14	10	
Malden, Rev. Mr. Thacher's				
parish, . . . . .	9	13		

Carried over, £ 1942 7 2½

1775. Brought over, 1942 7 2½  
*March* 13. Duxborough, wood, 21 cords.  
 Roxbury, unknown lbs. beef.  
 Boston, do. do.

*Virginia.*

Wheat, 735 bushels,  
 Corn, 25 do.  
 Flour, 3 barrels,  
 Bread, 3 do.

*Massachusetts.*

Dedham, wood, 48 cords.  
 20. Gloucester, Cape Ann, cash, 117 0 4  
 Eastham, north parish, . . . 7 16  
 Marshpee, Mr. Hawley's parish, 18  
 Yarmouth, west parish, . . . 5 6 8  
 Plymouth, Mr. Nathaniel Good-  
 win, corn, 20 bushels.

*Virginia.*

Westmoreland county,  
 corn, 1002 bushels,  
 wheat, 90 do.

*Philadelphia.*

Flour, 300 barrels,  
 Bar iron, 3 tons,  
 Nail rods, 3 do.

*Rhode Island.*

Newport, cash, . . . . . 78 3 9

*Massachusetts,*

27. George-town, first parish, . . . 6  
 Capt. William Rogers of ditto, 2 8  
 Old Hadley, . . . . . 2 13 4  
 Scituate, third parish, . . . . 5 6 8  
 Hatfield, . . . . . 12 15 3

---

Carried over, £ 2180 15 2½



164 DONATIONS TO BOSTON DURING THE SIEGE.

1775.	Brought over,	2180	15	2½
March 27.	Plymouth, Committee Inspection,	31	5	6
	Brookfield, second precinct,	12		
	corn, 14 bushels,			
	rye, 30 do.			
	Berkley,	8	1	7
	Bridgewater,	6	15	9½
	flax, 344 lbs.			
	wool, 3 do.			
	tobacco, 9 do.			
	shovels, iron, 2,			
	1 spinning wheel.			
	Falmouth, second parish,			
	wood, 30½ cords.			
	Gorham-town, wood, 8 cords.			
	Gentleman unknown,	19	8	
	Duxbury,	4	8	
	Salem, Committee Inspection,	109	9	5½
	Falmouth, in the county of Barn-			
	stable,	5	15	8
	<i>New Hampshire.</i>			
	South Hampton,	10		
	<i>Rhode Island.</i>			
	Newport, cash,	70	10	
	Committee Inspection,	7	13	8
	<i>South Carolina,</i>			
	Via New York,	139	18	0¼
	<i>Dominica.</i>			
	Cocoa, 2 cwt. 2 qrs.			
	<i>Massachusetts.</i>			
April 3	Newbury, first parish,	46	4	2
	Marlborough, cash,	32	18	2
	1 pair shoes,			
	3 qrs. beef,			
	Carried over,	£ 2655	6	11½

1775.	Brought over,	2655	6	11 $\frac{1}{4}$
April 3.	rye, 24 bushels,			
	meal, 5 $\frac{1}{2}$ do.			
	malt, 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ do.			
	cheese, 80 lbs.			
	Tisbury, cash, . . . . .	12		
	Scituate, first parish, do. . . . .	6	15	11 $\frac{1}{2}$
	Dartmouth, do. . . . .	50	17	3
	Roxbury, third parish, . . . . .	20	4	7
	pork, 51 lbs.			
	wood, 5 cords,			
	potatoes, 18 bushels,			
	cabbages, 6 dozen,			
	turnips, 1 bushel.			
	Norton, cash, . . . . .	7	2	10
<i>New Jersey.</i>				
	Elizabeth-town, cash, . . . . .	75		
<i>Rhode Island.</i>				
	Providence, cash, . . . . .	51		
<i>South Carolina.</i>				
10.	Rice, . . . . .	45	1	8
<i>Pennsylvania.</i>				
	Dover, . . . . .	80		
<i>Connecticut.</i>				
	Stratford,			
	rye, 30 bushels,			
	wheat, 6 do.			
<i>Massachusetts.</i>				
	Christian-town on Martha's Vine-			
	yard; Indian natives, . . . . .	2	1	
17.	Unknown hands, . . . . .	90	9	
	Monson,			
	2 cwt. 9 lbs. wheat flour,			
	Carried over,	£ 3095	19	2 $\frac{3}{4}$

1775.	Brought over,	3095	19	2 $\frac{1}{4}$
April 17.	tobacco, 17 lbs.			
	8 cwt. 1 qr. 14 lbs. rye flour,			
	5 bushels rye meal,			
	2 pair hose,			
	butter, 12 lbs.			
	Hanover, from a lady unknown,	2	8	
	<i>South Carolina.</i>			
	Rice, sold at New York,	33	6	8
		<hr/>		
		£ 3131	13	10 $\frac{1}{4}$

[Our printer having followed the MS. communicated by a friend, we ought to observe, that the foregoing benefactions were made during the operation of the Port Bill, and not the siege, hostilities having begun only two days after the last were received.]

---

#### ACCOUNT OF PROVIDENCE, R. I.

[THE Historical Account of the Planting and Growth of Providence, which the Society now publish, is taken from Nos. 117, 118, 120, 121, 122, 126, 128 of the Providence Gazette, from 12 January to 30 March, 1765. Soon after, the publication of that newspaper was interrupted by the disastrous occurrences of the times, or we might probably have been gratified with a continuance of the narrative to later times. The tract has been usually ascribed to the venerable STEPHEN HOPKINS, who for eight years had been governour of the colony, and served in that office one year after, but is better known as one of the signers of the declaration of independence. It has become very scarce.]

#### *Extract from Publisher's Address.*

It being imagined that an historical account of the planting and growth of Providence, would be worthy the publick attention, and redound to the honour of this paper, a gentleman of the first distinction, a true friend to his country, enabled the publisher to begin the work in the first number of this paper, but some necessary memorials being then wanting, for the accurate performance



of it, and some important business intervening, it was obliged to be laid aside, for some future time.—The war we were then engaged in being terminated, and the author having furnished himself with proper materials for prosecuting the undertaking, it is now resumed, and will occasionally make its appearance in this paper till the whole is completed.—The first part being published so long since, and many kind readers had not the advantage of it, it is thought proper to reprint it, for their benefit, with the continuation.—And as all nations, in all ages, have ever been desirous of registering their genealogies, from their original foundations in the records of time, it is not doubted but this attempt will meet with the publick applause, and in some measure demonstrate the sincerity of the publisher's professions, as well as afford a specimen of his future intentions in the service of the publick ;—for by this history, we may be acquainted with the resolution, the sufferings, the hardships, the fatigues and cares, the wants, and even the blood expended by our forefathers, in laying the foundation of our now peaceable, happy settlements, and therewith the inestimable enjoyments of civil and religious liberty.

---

*An Historical Account of the Planting and Growth of  
Providence.*

THE unhappy disputes that raged in England, both in church and state, in the reigns of King James the First, and King Charles the First, although they were the immediate cause of infinite mischiefs in that kingdom, in the times they happened, yet were they also the remote cause of very great advantages to the English nation afterwards : Among which advantages, the peopling of New England, occasioned by those disputes, may be esteemed one of the most considerable.

The first planting of New England was begun by Mr. John Carver, and about one hundred other English subjects ; who, being persecuted in England for not con-

forming in every punctilio to the established church, for the sake of worshipping God according to their consciences, left their native country, with all its conveniences and delights, and arrived at Cape Cod in the month of November, in the year 1620; where they landed in the depth of winter, having no houses or shelter to cover them from the injuries of the weather, endured incredible hardships, and passed through unparalleled sufferings; and, supported only by a noble fortitude of mind, and the consciousness of well-doing, they gloriously effected the settlement of New Plymouth, the first of the New England colonies.

Near ten years afterwards, in the year 1630, Mr. John Winthrop, with many other gentlemen, and about fifteen hundred people, left their native country for the same cause; and came over first to Salem, and from thence to Charlestown, from whence they dispersed themselves to Dorchester, Watertown, and Boston; and effectually began the settlement of the Massachusetts Bay, the second of the New England colonies.

With this second colony came over Mr. Roger Williams; of whose life, before his coming to America, we know little more, than that he had a liberal education; and was sometime pupil of Sir Edward Coke, the famous English lawyer. Soon after his coming to Salem, he was made assistant in the ministry to Mr. Samuel Skelton, the first minister of that town. Before he had been long in this station, some difference in opinion arose between Mr. Skelton and him, and to prevent its increase, Mr. Williams removed to Plymouth, and became minister of the church there; but some disputes happening here also between him and some of his church, he did not continue long with them, but returned to Salem, and finding Mr. Skelton now in a declining state of health, he again assisted him in the ministry. After Mr. Skelton's death, which soon happened, Mr. Williams was made sole minister of the church of Salem, and continued so for some time, much esteemed as a preacher, and greatly beloved by most of his church. Yet some of his tenets were looked upon as dangerous, and heterodox, by

the lesser, but ruling part of them.—Such were his asserting, “that the king of England had no right to take the lands in America from the Indians and give them to his own subjects:” And also, “that an universal liberty of conscience ought to be allowed to all, in religious matters. For these opinions, Mr. Williams was at length called to an account, and openly justifying them, he was for this offence deprived of his ministry, and banished from Salem, and the Massachusetts colony. In consequence of this sentence, Mr. Williams was sent into the wilderness to shift for himself. But so great was the love of some of his church for him, that they would not forsake him even in this extreme distress; and twelve of them voluntarily went into exile, and the solitary wilderness with him.—Without any guide but heaven they wandered southward, and came to a place called Seaconk; and thinking they were now far enough removed from their offended brethren, designed to sit down there; But it seems, the fame of their heretical opinions had reached to Plymouth, and thereupon an officer was sent from thence to order them to depart out of that colony also.

Being now quite forlorn, this officer kindly informed them, that the arm of the bay, then near them, was the western boundary of the Plymouth colony. They therefore once more removed, and found means to transport themselves over this arm of the bay, now called Seaconk River, and came to a place by the Indians called Moshasuck. As they now found themselves in the country of the Narraganset Indians, Mr. Williams applied to the sachem or king of that people, whose name was Conanicus, truly stated his unhappy case to him, and begged his protection, which this noble prince kindly granted to him and his associates, and also generously made them a present of all that neck of land lying between the mouths of Pawtucket and Moshasuck Rivers, that they might sit down in peace upon it, and enjoy it forever. Upon this neck of land, given them by the beneficent sachem, they settled themselves in the best manner their very poor, and truly deplorable circumstances would admit of; be-



ing quite destitute of every necessary, as well as convenience of life, and entirely cut off from all communication with every part of mankind, except the savages. Even those with whom they had so lately left their native country, for the same cause of religion, were now become their greatest persecutors, and most cruel enemies. This settlement was the feeble beginning of the third New England colony, first planted sometime in the year 1634, by the renowned and worthy Mr. Roger Williams, and his twelve poor suffering companions, namely, John Throckmorton, William Arnold, William Harris, Stukely Westcott, John Greene, Thomas Olney, Richard Waterman, Thomas James, Robert Cole, William Carpenter, Francis Weston, and Ezekiel Holliman.

This small company Mr. Williams formed into a church; and on that occasion piously observed to his brethren, that the providence of God had found out a place for them among savages, where they might peaceably worship God according to their consciences; a privilege which had been denied them in all the Christian countries they had ever been in.—In thankfulness for this greatest of blessings, he named the place where they were settled, PROVIDENCE. As they were all fully sensible of the horrid mischiefs, and atrocious sin of persecution, they established an universal liberty of conscience, as well for all others who should come and settle with them, as for themselves: And this natural right of all mankind, has been inviolably maintained throughout the colony to this day. Liberty of conscience being settled in this, and denied in the two neighbouring colonies, soon brought more of those to join with them, whose faith did not exactly agree with the fixed standards there; and in a short time afterwards, there were added to the church at Providence, Robert Williams, John Smith, Hugh Bewit, William Wickenden, John Field, Thomas Hopkins, and William Hawkins.

Having given this short account of these planters, in their several migrations, until they are at last settled at Providence, let us stand still for a moment, and view them in this their very indigent condition; equally

admire their sufferings, and their patience, and wonder how they could possibly live, quite destitute of every necessary, and every conveniency of life : having no magazine of provisions, or stores of any kind ; no domestick animal to assist them in their labour, or afford them sustenance ; no utensils or husbandry tools, to facilitate their tilling the earth ; nothing to help themselves with, but their hands ; nothing to depend on, but God's goodness, their own endeavours, and the charity of savages.

Nor house, nor hut, or fruitful field,  
Nor lowing herd, nor bleating flock ;  
Or garden, that might comfort yield,  
No cheerful, early-crowing cock.

No orchard, yielding pleasant fruit,  
Or labouring ox, or useful plough ;  
Nor neighing steed, or browsing goat,  
Or grunting swine, or foodful cow.

No friend to help, no neighbour nigh,  
Nor healing medicine to restore ;  
No mother's hand, to close the eye,  
Alone, forlorn, and most extremely poor.

Nothing but extreme diligence, and matchless perseverance, could possibly have carried them through this undertaking ; could have procured them the scanty morsels which supported a life of want and of innocence. Too much have we their descendants departed from the diligence, fortitude, frugality, and innocence of these our fathers. While we enjoy the blessings they procured for us, live at ease, and fare sumptuously, we little think, we too little remember, that they from whom we have received all our conveniences, were destitute of every thing themselves : When we live luxuriously, we seldom call to mind the sufferings of these patriarchs, who wanted even the bread of affliction. The poor unhappy Indians have had an ungrateful return for their kindness to the first settlers : they who received and cherished our ancestors in their distress, were rather despised than relieved, when we had got their country from them, when we had changed conditions with them, and they in their turn were in distress ;—but they were heathens, they were sa-

vages :—A poor excuse for ingratitude, or want of charity in Christians.

The indigent condition of these planters, the necessity they were under to labour continually, for the support of themselves and families, was most probably the reason they left scarce any memorials behind them in writing of what happened, or was transacted during the first nine years after their coming to Providence. Mr. Williams was certainly very capable of writing, and seems to have delighted in it, when circumstances afterwards afforded him an opportunity ; several of his companions also wrote many things afterwards : Therefore, this total neglect of writing for so long a time, must be attributed to their necessitous condition ; and perhaps to the want of even paper to write on : This appears the more probable, as the first of their writings, that are to be found, appear on small scraps of paper, wrote as thick and crowded as full as possible. Whatever might be the occasion of it, this want of authentick materials for so long a time, will make it impossible to mention many interesting matters, that must necessarily happen during this period : However, tradition has furnished us with some things, and the writings made afterwards, near the time, have taken notice of others, that may be fully depended on.

Soon after the first planting of Providence, and within the same year, 1634, Mr. Williams purchased of Conan-icus, the Indian king, a large tract of land, lying between Pawtucket River, and Pawtuxet River, and to extend up the stream of each river, twenty miles from the sea. This purchase includes all the lands which now make the towns of Providence, Smithfield, Scituate, Gloucester, Cranston, and Johnston. What consideration was given the sachem for this land, we are not informed ; whatever it was, it seems to have been paid by Mr. Williams alone. This I conjecture from a remonstrance of his to the town of Providence, in his own hand writing, in the year 1654, in which he expostulates with the people for their disorders, and great animosities ; and upbraids them with their great ingratitude to heaven, and to himself, in the following words : “ I am like a man in a fog ;



I know not well how to steer; I fear to run upon rocks at home, after having had many trials abroad; I fear to run quite backwards, and to undo all that I have been this long time undoing myself to do: To wit, To keep up the name of a people, a free people; not enslaved, in body or soul, to the bondages and iron yokes of oppression, both of the English and barbarians about us; nor to the divisions and disorders within ourselves. Since I set the first step of any English foot in these wild parts, and have maintained a chargeable and hazardous correspondence with the barbarians, and spent almost five years time with the state of England, to keep off the rage of the English against us, what have I reaped of being the root, of being the stepping-stone to so many families and towns about us, but grief and sorrow and bitterness? I have been charged with folly, for that freedom and liberty I have always stood for; I say liberty and equality, both in land and government. I have been blamed for parting with Moshasuck, and afterwards Pawtucket, *which were mine own as truly as any man's coat upon his back*, without reserving to myself one foot of land, or one inch of voice, more than to my servants, or strangers. It hath been told me that I have laboured for a licentious and contentious people,—that I have foolishly parted with many advantages.”—What makes me suppose Mr. Williams paid the whole consideration of this first and great purchase, is, his saying as above, that these lands were his own as truly as any man's coat on his back: However this might be, 'tis certain he immediately made his twelve companions equal proprietors with himself, both in the lands given by the sachem, and those he had purchased of him. And those who came afterwards and settled in Providence, were generally, for a small consideration, admitted to be equal sharers in the greater part of these lands, until the whole number of proprietors came at length to an hundred.

It is most probable these first settlers did not bring their wives and families with them at their first coming, and that they were not removed to Providence, until sometime in the year 1637; for we have heard by tradi-

tion, and I believe truly, that the first male child born there, was Mr. Williams's eldest son, and whom he, for that reason, named Providence; and this child appears by the records to have been born in the month of September, 1638: But a female child had been born there some time before, although in the same year.

Near the time that Providence was first began, one Mr. William Blackstone came and settled by the side of Pawtucket River, near the southern part of that which is now the town of Cumberland. He was a man of learning, and had received Episcopal ordination in England, and seems to have been of the puritan persuasion, and to have left his native country for his nonconformity; at what time is quite unknown: But when the Massachusetts colony first came to America, they found him settled on that peninsula where the town of Boston now stands; he had been there so long as to have raised apple trees and planted an orchard. Upon his invitation, the principal part of that colony removed from Charlestown thither, and began the town on the land he generously gave them for that purpose. However, it was not long before a new kind of nonconformity obliged him to leave the remainder of his estate on that renowned peninsula, to these numerous new comers, and to remove a second time into the wilderness. On this occasion he made use of these remarkable expressions, "I left England to get from under the power of the lord bishops, but in America I am fallen under the power of the lord brethren." At this his new plantation he lived uninterrupted for many years, and there again raised an orchard, the first that ever bore apples in the colony of Rhode Island: He had the first of that sort called yellow sweetings, that were ever in the world, perhaps, the richest and most delicious apple of the whole kind: Many of the trees, which he planted about one hundred and thirty years ago, are still pretty thrifty fruit-bearing trees. Mr. Blackstone used frequently to come to Providence, to preach the gospel; and to encourage his younger hearers, gave them the first apples they ever saw. It is said, that when he was old, and unable to travel on foot, and not having any horse, he used to ride on

a bull, which he had tamed and tutored to that use. His family is now extinct.

The fame of the good lands on the borders of Connecticut River, invited some people from the Massachusetts thither, who, in the year 1635, viewed those lands, examined and found out the most suitable places for, and made some preparations toward a settlement; and the next year, 1636, a large number of people removed from the Massachusetts; some of the principal of which were Mr. Hains, who, as I suppose, was the year before governor of that province, Mr. Hopkins, first governor of Connecticut, Mr. Hooker, first minister of Hartford, Mr. Ludlow, and others, and made an effectual settlement of the towns of Hartford, Weathersfield and Windsor, all on the banks of the said river. This was the beginning of Connecticut, the fourth of the New England colonies; which seems not to have been began for the same cause, that the other three which preceded it were; that is, to avoid persecution, and enjoy liberty of conscience; but the people were induced to make this remove to better their circumstances; and indeed the choice they made of a place to remove to, hath fully vindicated their judgment to succeeding generations; being seated by the sides of much the largest and finest river in New England, which is capable of affording, perhaps, the most extensive water carriage of any river that empties into the sea between Carolina and the Bay of St. Lawrence; and which, like the famed Nile, annually, about the beginning of April, overflows and fertilizes all the intervals and low lands near it. Yet not in the exceeding fruitfulness of these low lands only, does this colony exceed, but even their hill lands, both for pasturage and for tilling, have been found, by experience, to produce much better than the other lands in New England.

The following year, 1637, a settlement was begun at New Haven, by a number of people directly from England, under the leading of Mr. Eaton and Mr. Davenport; doubtless for the same reason the first three were planted, because they were not permitted, in their native country, to worship God in the manner they thought most accep-



able to him. This settlement had, for some time, the name of the colony of New Haven, and was the fifth planted in New England ; but, in process of time, came to be united to, and swallowed up in the name of that of Connecticut, as New Plymouth also was in the Massachusetts.

Some time in the same year, 1637, the first war broke out in New England, between the English and the Indians ; this was with a powerful nation, or tribe called Pequots, who dwelt in the south-eastern part of the colony of Connecticut, and chiefly on the lands which now make the towns of Stonington and Groton. The occasion of this war was doubtless a jealousy in the Indians of the increasing numbers and growing power of the English, who they saw had already dispersed themselves into all the principal parts of New England, and whose strength grew daily greater, by the addition of new comers, that joined them in their various plantations : That the manner in which they improved the land, and fed their domestick animals, some of which were now in the country, must in a short time cut them off from the sea coasts, and quite deprive them of their various fisheries, and at the same time destroy their game in the woods, and in the end quite ruin their hunting. These being the principal sources of their scanty livelihood, no body can wonder they were alarmed at the dreadful mischiefs which threatened them ; and at length determined to extirpate by war, the late arrived people, who occasioned the danger, before their numbers and power were too much increased. Indeed, this was by much the most probable attempt ever made by the Indians, to cut off the English settlers, yet, as it were, in their very infancy, and now also greatly dispersed ; Connecticut not of two years standing ; Providence, though a year older, had but a handful of people ; the Massachusetts had been planted only seven years ; and Plymouth, that began seventeen years before, had not yet increased to any considerable number. Had these Indians succeeded in their attempts to unite all the neighbouring nations and tribes in this war, as a common cause, in which the loss or preservation of their country, and all

they had was concerned, it must have been very difficult, if not impossible for the English, under their present circumstances, to have defended themselves against so great a number of enemies : For it is said, at this time the Narragansets alone had four thousand fighting men ; by which some guess may be made of the strength of the other Indian nations who dwelt in New England. Here we shall have occasion to view Mr. Williams in, perhaps, the most useful and important part of his life : We have already seen him the founder of one colony, but must now consider him as a principal instrument in preserving them all. He, by great application, had made himself master of the Indian language, and by a courteous behaviour to the natives, and a conduct honest and quite disinterested, had made himself highly respected by the Narraganset sachems and all their people, and had at this time much more influence over them, than any other man ever had at any time. And as Joseph was sold by his envious brethren, with intent to get him out of their way, yet Divine Providence overruled this cruel action quite otherwise than they intended, and made it the means of their future preservation ; so the harsh treatment and cruel exile of Mr. Williams, seem designed by his brethren for the same evil end, but was, by the goodness of the same overruling hand, turned to the most beneficent purposes. For no sooner was it known that the Pequots meditated a war with the English, than they, from every colony, applied to Mr. Williams, to use his influence with the Narragansets, and to prevent, if possible, their joining with the Pequots, in making war with them. This service he cheerfully undertook, and succeeded in it beyond their warmest expectations ; for he prevailed with the Narraganset Indians, not only to remain in peace with the English, but to declare openly for them, and act offensively against the Pequots. This conduct of the most powerful nation in this part of the country, threw such a damp on the other neighbouring nations, that none of them joined with the Pequots, but left them to prosecute this war by themselves, and in which they were overcome by the English and their Indian allies ; and the war was

soon ended in the almost total extirpation of the whole Pequot race.

In the beginning of the following year, 1638, Rhode Island, by the Indians called Aquetneck, was settled by a number of people that came from Boston, and some of the other towns near it. This settlement had its beginning from the same cause that most of the others in New England had; to wit, religious disputes. The departure of Mr. Williams, and those who left the Massachusetts with him, or had since followed them, did not put an end to these controversies, but they kept increasing, and spreading further and further: One pretended error produced many more of the same kind, and so fruitful was this metaphysical mischief, that a synod being convened at Cambridge, in the year 1637, it very soon picked up, debated and condemned eighty errors, and like other synods before them, denied all mercy to those they supposed held these errors, both in this world and the world to come.

God Almighty, in the early age of the world, confounded the language of mankind, while they remained in the plains of Shinar, and by that means caused them to disperse and people the whole earth; so in the times I am writing of, he seems to have permitted discord, censoriousness, and the most unforgiving temper of mind to prevail universally among the people, and to have made it a means of planting most parts of New England. When we look back upon these people, who were men of strong natural powers, and many of them had much learning; had lately left their native country, and all its delights, forsook all for Christ's sake and the gospel, and removed into a wilderness; were poor, were laborious, were pious, sincere Christians; were devout and zealous to a fault; supported the most unblameable moral character of any people in any age or country; when after all this, and much more that might be truly said in their favour, to see them worrying one another without remorse, for mere trifles; to view them pursuing each other to banishment, and even to death, as though they had dissolved every social engagement, and cut asunder every tender tie, and were



abandoned to furious madness, and unrelenting cruelty, —what shall we say?—what can we think?—We can only deplore the miserable imperfections of human nature, and stand amazed at the stupendous miscarriages of the best of men !

The matters in dispute, and which were the ground of all these mighty contentions, and keen animosities, consisted chiefly in fine-spun subtilties, and useless metaphysical niceities ; from the knowledge, belief, or disbelief of which, mankind could be made neither wiser or better. Indeed, in what manner our religious ideas ought to be ranged, that is, which ought properly to precede, and which follow, was the principal point in dispute : And this grand unintelligible question, raised such contentions, and bred such uneasiness in the churches in the Massachusetts colony, that many of considerable note, for piety, for estate and family, and for usefulness, came to a determination to remove once more into the wilderness, quite out of, and beyond the limits claimed by any of the colonies yet settled. The principal of these was William Coddington, Esq. the father of Rhode Island ; he was a gentleman of family, and of a competent fortune, was chosen an assistant of the Massachusetts colony, while they were in England, and came over to America with the governour, the charter, and the colony, in 1630, settled at Boston, and was one of its first and most considerable merchants. Mr. John Clark was another ; a man of sound understanding, sufficient knowledge, and much usefulness ; who was afterwards this colony's agent in England, and procured its present charter ; he gathered, and was minister of the first Baptist church at Rhode Island.—Those who joined with them in this resolution to remove, were William Hutchinson, John Coggeshall, William Aspinwall, Samuel Wilbore, John Porter, John Sandford, Edward Hutchinson, Thomas Savage, William Dyre, William Freeborn, Philip Shearman, John Walker, Richard Carder, William Baulston, Edward Hutchinson, jun. and Henry Bull.

These having resolved to remove, sent Mr. John Clark, and another with him, to Providence, to advise with Mr.

Williams on the business, and to be informed where they might find a convenient place to make their new settlement. Mr. Williams recommended two places to their consideration, one by the Indians called So-wames, being the lands in and about the present town of Warren; the other, the Island called Aquetneck, now Rhode Island: But as they were determined to go out of every other jurisdiction, that they might, if possible, avoid future controversies, and were in doubt whether these lands were not within the claim of Plymouth colony; for clearing up that doubt, Mr. Williams accompanied Mr. Clark to Plymouth, where they were informed, that So-wames, was within, and esteemed as the very garden of that colony; but that they had no claim to Aquetneck, and advised them to settle there, where they should be esteemed and treated as friends and neighbours. Upon that island they therefore now determined to sit down, if they could procure it of the Indians; and in order to do that, they prevailed on Mr. Williams to apply to the Narraganset sachem in their behalf, and, if possible, make a purchase of the said island for them. The king, or sachem of the Narraganset Indians, at this time, and perhaps a year or two before, was the young Myantonomo; Conanicus his uncle, having had the government of the kingdom, and guardianship of the young prince, during his minority, had, when he came to an age fit to govern, delivered the regal authority, into the hands of this his nephew. To him, therefore, did Mr. Williams now make application, for the purchase of Rhode Island for his friends; and at length prevailed with him to make a grant of that whole island to Mr. Coddington, Mr. Clark, and their associates. —The sachem's deed, or grant, was signed the 24th day of March, 1637—8, old style.

The Indians seem not to have been induced to part with this island, so much in consideration of any price that was paid them for it, as out of the great love and regard they bore to Mr. Williams, as appears from the account he has left of this transaction, in his own hand writing.—“It was not price or money that could have purchased Rhode Island, but 'twas obtained by love, that

love and favour which that honoured gentleman Sir Henry Vane, and myself, had with the great sachem Myantonomo, about the league which I procured, between the Massachusetts's English and the Narragansets, in the Pequot war."—"For the Indians were very shy and jealous of selling the lands to any, and chose rather to make a grant (or gift) of them to such as they affected."

Having thus fairly acquired a just title to the finest island that is on the whole sea coasts of the northern British colonies, as well for its form and situation, as its fertile soil, and beautiful bays, capacious, safe harbours, temperate climate, and healthful air, they immediately began a settlement at the north-eastern part of the island, opposite to Mount Hope, and near a cove with a narrow entrance, which they esteemed to be a good harbour, and from which, it is probable, they named the place Portsmouth.—Here they incorporated themselves into a kind of body politick, and chose Mr. Coddington to be their judge and chief magistrate. This was the beginning of the second town in the colony of Rhode Island; and in the same year, considerable numbers from several towns in the Massachusetts, came and joined with them; and so much were they increased, within the course of this whole year, that in the fore part of the next, they separated; and a part of them removed toward the south-western end of the island, where the bay forms as it were a crescent into the land, and a small island stretching its length, between the two head lands, leaves at each end a convenient entrance into a safe and beautiful harbour. On the shores of this harbour they now began a new settlement; and as they had named that at the other end of the island Portsmouth, from the narrow entrance of the harbour; so having found here another fine harbour, or port, they, for that reason, named this place New-Port. This town, thus began in the year 1639, was the third, in order of time, planted in the colony; but the exceeding fertility of its lands, its fine situation, the conveniency of its harbour, and affluent circumstances of its first inhabitants, all contributed to make it increase faster than any of the others, and to become, in a few years, the most conside-



able town in, and the metropolis of the colony.—Justice requires that I should here, once for the whole, acknowledge, that I have borrowed a great part of this account of the first settlement of Rhode Island, and some few other articles, made use of in the course of these papers, from the century sermon of the late ingenious and worthy Mr. John Callender.

Four years after the first coming to Providence, a settlement was began at a place about five miles southward from it, called by the Indians Pawtuxet, where a fine fresh river, known by the same name, falls into the Narraganset Bay, and within the purchase Mr. Williams had made of the Indians. This settlement was made by William Arnold, William Carpenter, Zechariah Rhodes, and William Harris, who all removed from Providence thither, and seem to be induced to make this remove for the sake of the fine natural meadows that were on both sides of the aforesaid river.—And here still remains a numerous posterity from each of these four first planters.

The next plantation, began within this colony, was at a place by the Indians called Shaw-o-met, now known by the name of Warwick. Here a purchase was made of a tract of land, bounding northerly on Providence purchase, and to extend about four miles and an half south, and twenty miles west. This purchase was made in the beginning of the year 1643, of Myantonomo, by Randal Holdon, John Wickes, Samuel Gorton, John Greene, Francis Weston, Richard Waterman, John Warner, Richard Carder, Sampson Shotton, Robert Potter, and William Woodale. The settlement at this place, was began, as I have good reason to believe, a year or two earlier than this purchase of Myantonomo; these lands being first purchased of Pomham, a petty sachem, who with his tribe, were the possessors of it, and this purchase afterward assented to, and confirmed by Myantonomo, the principal sachem. Be this as it will, this was the beginning of the fourth town in the colony, planted by people half from Providence, one from Rhode Island, and the rest, perhaps, new comers.

The first form of government established by Mr. Williams, and the people at Providence, seems to have been no more than a voluntary association, and compact, that each individual should submit to, and be governed by the resolutions and determinations of the whole body: All publick matters were transacted in their town meetings, and all private disputes and controversies were also heard, adjudged and finished there. They annually chose two officers, which were called town deputies, these had authority to keep the peace, to settle small disputes, to call town meetings, preside in them, and see their resolutions executed. And all new comers, before they were admitted as inhabitants, were obliged to make a solemn promise, in the nature of an oath, in an open town meeting, that "they would submit themselves, in active and passive obedience, to all such orders and agreements, as shall be made for the publick good of the body, in an orderly way, by the major consent of the inhabitants." And by the form of engagement given by officers, in the year 1647, after the colony had obtained a charter, and established a body of laws, there is a plain allusion to this primitive government: The form runs thus; "You A. B. being called, and chosen by the free vote and consent of the inhabitants of this plantation, now orderly met, unto the office of . . . . do, in this present assembly, engage yourself faithfully, and truly to execute, all that is required from your office, in the body of laws agreed upon by the whole colony, so far forth as the nature and constitution of this plantation will admit. Also you are faithfully and truly to execute, all that is required from your office in our town book, concerning our town affairs, and to do neither more, nor less, in these respects, than this town have, or shall authorize you to do, according to the best of your understanding."

The government, established by Mr. Coddington, and the people at Rhode Island, appears to be nearly like that at Providence; for though they chose one chief magistrate, which they called by the name of governour, and four others, called assistants; yet these seem like the deputies at Providence, to be vested only with some exe-

cutive powers, while the principal authorities, both legislative and judicial, rested in the body of the people, when met together in town meeting. And indeed, the authority of these town meetings, at this time, and long afterwards, was very great, and might be compared to the power of the common people of Athens or Rome ; for about the year 1653, an inhabitant of Newport, of very considerable note, was charged with a capital crime, and was brought before the town meeting, there tried, and condemned to death, and the sentence immediately executed in their presence.

It being the resolution of those who came to Rhode Island, not to settle within the jurisdiction of any of the colonies that were already settled ; and they now considered themselves, and were considered by others, as a separate, and independent government, and continued so for several years. What chiefly moved them to the aforesaid resolution, of living in a separate manner, was their desire and intention to enjoy and to maintain an absolute liberty of conscience, and entire freedom in all religious matters. But after having lived some years in the neighbourhood of the Providence planters, and gained a certain knowledge of their principles and practices, they found that they had already established, and constantly and steadily maintained all the liberty and freedom they had been so desirous of, and had removed a second time to find. This union of sentiments, and of intentions, of the most noble and generous kind, soon produced a coalition of the people of Providence, and of those at Rhode Island, and an agreement, that they would unite and become one colony, and apply together to the crown for a charter of incorporation. In consequence of this agreement, they jointly appointed Mr. Williams their agent, to go to England, and there solicit and conduct their affairs for them. Some time in the year 1642, Mr. Williams sailed for England ; and when he arrived there, found his native country involved in all the miseries of a furious civil war ; carried on by the king on one side, and his Parliament on the other : But as the Parliament were masters of the English fleet, that, they supposed, gave them also the power



of all the plantations abroad ; therefore they had appointed Robert Earl of Warwick, president, and had joined a number of commissioners with him, and had given them power to take care of and transact all the plantation affairs. To these commissioners, therefore, did Mr. Williams now apply for a charter ; and as Sir Henry Vane, with whom he was well acquainted, and seems to have had a close friendship, was one of them, through his assistance, as Mr. Williams afterwards declared, he obtained his suit, and received a charter of incorporation ; which though its length must make tedious, yet as it is but little known, and is the first, and perhaps only one of its kind, I will give it to my readers at full length, viz.

“ WHEREAS by an ordinance of the Lords and Commons, now assembled in Parliament, bearing date the second day of November, Anno Domini 1643, Robert Earl of Warwick is constituted, and ordained governour in chief, and lord high admiral of all those islands and other plantations inhabited or planted by, or belonging to any his majesty the King of England’s subjects, (or which hereafter may be inhabited and planted by, or belong to them) within the bounds, and upon the coasts of America. And whereas the said lords have thought fit, and thereby ordained, that Philip Earl of Pembroke, Edward Earl of Manchester, William Viscount Say and Seal, Philip Lord Wharton, John Lord Rolle, members of the House of Peers. Sir Gilbert Gerrard, Baronet, Sir Arthur Haslerig, Baronet, Sir Henry Vane, jun. Knight, Sir Benjamin Rudyard, Knight, John Pim, Oliver Cromwell, Dennis Bond, Miles Corbet, Cornelius Holland, Samuel Vassal, John Rolle, and William Spurstow, Esqrs. members of the House of Commons, should be commissioners to join in aid and assistance with the said earl. And whereas, for the better government and defence, it is thereby ordained, that the aforesaid governour and commissioners, or the greater number of them, shall have power, and authority, from time to time, to nominate, appoint, and

constitute all such subordinate governours, counsellors, commanders, officers, and agents, as they shall judge to be best affected, and most fit and serviceable for the said islands and plantations; and to provide for, order and dispose all things, which they shall, from time to time, find most advantageous for the said plantations; and for the better security of the owners and inhabitants thereof, to assign, ratify, and confirm, so much of their afore-mentioned authority and power, and in such manner, and to such persons as they shall judge to be fit for the better governing and preserving of the said plantations and islands, from open violences and private disturbances and distractions. And whereas there is a tract of land in the continent of America aforesaid, called by the name of the Narraganset Bay; bordering northward and north-east on the patent of the Massachusetts, east and south-east on Plymouth patent, south on the ocean, and on the west and north-west by the Indians called Nahigganneucks, alias Narragansets; the whole tract extending about twenty-five English miles, unto the Pequot River and country.

“And whereas divers well affected and industrious English inhabitants, of the towns of Providence, Portsmouth, and Newport, in the tract aforesaid, have adventured to make a nearer neighbourhood and society with the great body of the Narragansets, which may in time, by the blessing of God upon their endeavours, lay a sure foundation of happiness to all America. And have also purchased, and are purchasing of and amongst the said natives, some other places, which may be convenient both for plantations, and also for building of ships, supply of pipe staves, and other merchandise. And whereas the said English have represented their desire to the said earl, and commissioners, to have their hopeful beginnings approved and confirmed, by granting unto them a free charter of civil incorporation, and government; that they may order and govern their plantation in such a manner, as to maintain justice and peace, both among themselves, and towards all men with whom they shall have to do.

In due consideration of the said premises, the said Robert Earl of Warwick, governour in chief, and lord high admiral of the said plantations, and the greater number of the said commissioners, whose names and seals are here underwritten and subjoined, out of a desire to encourage the good beginnings of the said planters, do, by the authority of the aforesaid ordinance of the lords and commons, give, grant, and confirm, to the aforesaid inhabitants of the towns of Providence, Portsmouth, and Newport, a free and absolute charter of incorporation, to be known by the name of *The Incorporation of Providence Plantations, in the Narraganset Bay, in New England.*—Together with full power and authority, to rule themselves, and such others as shall hereafter inhabit within any part of the said tract of land, by such a form of civil government, as by voluntary consent of all, or the greater part of them, they shall find most suitable to their estate and condition; and, for that end, to make and ordain such civil laws and constitutions, and to inflict such punishments upon transgressors, and for execution thereof, so to place, and displace officers of justice, as they, or the greatest part of them, shall by free consent agree unto. *Provided nevertheless*, that the said laws, constitutions, and punishments, for the civil government of the said plantations, be conformable to the laws of England, so far as the nature and constitution of the place will admit. And always reserving to the said earl, and commissioners, and their successors, power and authority for to dispose of the general government of that, as it stands in relation to the rest of the plantations in America, as they shall conceive from time to time, most conducing to the general good of the said plantations; the honour of his majesty, and the service of the state. And the said earl and commissioners do further authorize, that the aforesaid inhabitants, for the better transacting of their publick affairs, to make and use a publick seal, as the known seal of Providence Plantations, in the Narraganset Bay, in New England. In testimony whereof, the said Robert Earl of Warwick, and commissioners, have hereunto set their hands and seals, the fourteenth day of March, in the nineteenth



year of the reign of our sovereign lord King Charles, and in the year of our Lord God, 1643.

ROBERT WARWICK,  
PHILIP PEMBROKE,  
SAY AND SEAL,  
P. WHARTON,  
ARTHUR HASLERIG,  
COR. HOLLAND,  
H. VANE,  
SAM. VASSAL,  
JOHN ROLLE,  
MILES CORBET,  
W. SPURSTOW."

Mr. Williams having obtained this charter, how long it was before he returned is uncertain ; and as there is no particular form of government established by it, nor no officers, or offices, named or appointed, but the whole frame of government left to be modelled and established by the people here, it doubtless took much time before they could agree upon and settle a method that was pleasing to the major part of the people in all the four towns. For although Warwick be not named in the charter, yet, before the government was formed under it, that was become a town, and was named Warwick, in honor of the above-named Robert Earl of Warwick, and had all along, under that charter, an equal privilege, in all respects, with either of the three towns that were named in it. The form of government, at length agreed upon, was this. The freemen of the whole colony chose annually one chief officer, which they called president, and eight assistants, two in each town ; and each of the four towns chose six representatives, at that time called commissioners: These had power, when regularly met together, to make such laws as they thought necessary ; but these laws, thus made, were to be sent to each town meeting, and there publickly read, and after due time was had for deliberation, the question was put, whether what had been then read should be received as a law or not. —If this question passed in

the negative, in the major part of the towns, the law in question was made void ; if in the affirmative it was established. From this practice, came the common story, that some towns had heretofore repealed acts of the General Assembly. By this it appears that the people did not trust the whole legislative authority, even to their own representatives, but kept at least a negative voice in their own hands. The president and assistants had the executive power, were judges of the courts of law, and kept the peace : The president sat as speaker in the assemblies of the representatives, and called them together on emergencies, was chairman in the courts of judicature, and all processes issued in his name. There was also chosen, yearly, a general recorder, and a general serjeant ; the office of the first, was to make regular entries of all the doings of the assembly of representatives, and send copies to each town, and to execute the office of clerk to the courts of judicature. The duty of the latter was the same as that of sheriff at this day. The assistants in each town, besides keeping the peace, and determining small controversies, had the power of presiding in all town meetings, and of calling them on all emergent occasions. Each town also chose every year a town clerk, who entered all that was done in their town meetings, recorded all deeds, and land evidences, and all other publick matters transacted in the town. They also chose six persons called a town council, who had the powers of a court of probate ; of granting licences to innkeepers and retailers ; and of the poor. A serjeant they also chose, whose office was that of a town sheriff.

The form of government being settled, they now prepared such laws as were necessary to enforce the due administration of it ; but the popular approbation their laws must receive, before they were valid, made this a work of time ; however, they were so industrious in it, that in the month of May, 1647, they completed a regular body of laws, taken chiefly from the laws of England, adding a very few of their own forming, which the circumstances and exigencies of their present condition required. These laws, for securing of right, for determining contro-

versies, for preserving order, suppressing vice, and punishing offenders, were, at least, equal to the laws of any of the neighbouring colonies; and infinitely exceeded those of all other Christian countries at that time, in this particular,—that they left the conscience free, and did not punish men for worshipping God in the way, they were persuaded, he required.—Here, although it be a departure from the order of time, I will draw into one view what yet remains to be said upon that liberty of conscience first allowed here. All Christians, from the beginning of the reformation to these times, when they were disturbed, and oppressed by the governing powers they lived under, on account of their religious principles or practices, had claimed this natural right, *a liberty of conscience in the worship of God*.—And many of them had, with much learning, and great strength of reason, shewn, that it was a right they were naturally and justly entitled to; and of which the civil magistrate could not deprive them, without departing from his proper duty and office. But all of them, when they came to be possessed of power, had denied that indulgence to those who differed from them in religious sentiments, that they had pleaded so powerfully for when they suffered themselves: and this had constantly and universally been the case throughout Christendom, for many hundred years.—And Roger Williams justly claims the honour of having been the first legislator, in the world, in its latter ages, that fully and effectually provided for and established a free, full, and absolute liberty of conscience. This beneficent principle he made the foundation, and, as it were, the chief corner stone of his infant colony; this was made the test of admission, to all new comers; this was the chief cause that united the inhabitants of Rhode Island and those of Providence, and made them one people, and one colony. It was often objected to Mr. Williams, that such great liberty in religious matters, tended to licentiousness, and every kind of disorder: To such objections I will give the answer he himself made, in his own words, for thereby his real sentiments may be best discovered.



*“To the Town of Providence.*

“Loving Friends and Neighbours,

“IT pleaseth God yet to continue this great liberty of our town meetings, for which, we ought to be humbly thankful, and to improve these liberties to the praise of the Giver, and to the peace and welfare of the town and colony, without our own private ends. I thought it my duty, to present you with this my impartial testimony, and answer to a paper sent you the other day from my brother, —*That it is blood-guiltiness, and against the rule of the gospel, to execute judgment upon transgressors, against the private or public weal.* That ever I should speak or write a tittle that tends to such an infinite liberty of conscience, is a mistake ; and which I have ever disclaimed and abhorred. To prevent such mistakes, I at present shall only propose this case.—There goes many a ship to sea, with many a hundred souls in one ship, whose weal and wo is common ; and is a true picture of a commonwealth, or an human combination, or society. It hath fallen out sometimes, that both Papists and Protestants, Jews and Turks, may be embarked into one ship. Upon which supposal, I do affirm, that all the liberty of conscience that ever I pleaded for, turns upon these two hinges, that none of the Papists, Protestants, Jews, or Turks, be forced to come to the ship’s prayers or worship ; nor, secondly, compelled from their own particular prayers or worship, if they practise any. I further add, that I never denied that, notwithstanding this liberty, the commander of this ship ought to command the ship’s course ; yea, and also to command that justice, peace, and sobriety, be kept and practised, both among the seamen and all the passengers. If any seamen refuse to perform their service, or passengers to pay their freight ;—if any refuse to help in person or purse, towards the common charges, or defence ;—if any refuse to obey the common laws and orders of the ship, concerning their common peace and preservation ;—if any shall mutiny and rise up against their commanders, and officers ;—if any shall preach or

write, that there ought to be no commanders, nor officers, because all are equal in Christ, therefore no masters, nor officers, no laws, nor orders, no corrections nor punishments—I say, I never denied, but in such cases, whatever is pretended, the commander or commanders may judge, resist, compel, and punish such transgressors, according to their deserts and merits. This, if seriously and honestly minded, may, if it so please the Father of lights, let in some light, to such as willingly shut not their eyes. I remain, studious of our common peace and liberty,—

ROGER WILLIAMS.”

This religious liberty was not only asserted in words, but uniformly adhered to and practised ; for in the year 1656, soon after the Quakers made their first appearance in New England, and at which most of these colonies were greatly alarmed and offended : Those at that time called the four united colonies, which were the Massachusetts, Plymouth, Connecticut, and New Haven, wrote to this colony, to join with them in taking effectual methods to suppress them, and prevent their pernicious doctrines being spread and propagated in the country.—To this request the Assembly of this colony gave the following worthy answer: “ We shall strictly adhere to the foundation principle on which this colony was first settled ; to wit, that every man who submits peaceably to the civil authority, may peaceably worship God according to the dictates of his own conscience, without molestation.” And not to the people of the neighbouring governments only, was this principle owned ; but it was asserted in their applications to the ruling powers in the mother country ; for in the year 1659, in an address of this colony to Richard Cromwell, then lord protector of England, Scotland, and Ireland, there is this paragraph,—“ May it please your highness to know, that this poor colony of Providence Plantations, mostly consists of a birth and breeding of the providence of the Most High.—We being an out-cast people, formerly from our mother nation, in the bish-

ops' days ; and since from the rest of the New English over-zealous colonies : Our frame being much like the present frame and constitution of our dearest mother England ; bearing with the several judgments, and consciences, each of other, in all the towns of our colony.—The which our neighbour colonies do not ; which is the only cause of their great offence against us.”

But as every human felicity has some attendant misfortune, so the people's enjoyment of very great liberty, hath ever been found to produce some disorders, factions, and parties amongst them ; and for this evil there is no remedy : But the mischiefs that would flow from it must be averted by the personal virtue and steady perseverance of the wise and good among them ; and no longer than a sufficient number of such can be found, to guide and to withstand the headlong passions of the giddy multitude, can liberty be supported. The mischiefs of parties, and of factions, the natural consequence of great liberty, made an early appearance in this colony : But there were then found also, patriots enough in it to prevent their malevolent effects. (May the writer of these papers be permitted here to call upon the patriots of the present age, to arise, and imitate their great ancestors, and exert themselves in saving their unhappy country from parties, from factions, and from ruin.)—And as the best and most useful men, have ever, in all free states, been the subject of popular clamour and censure, so we find that Mr. Williams did not escape the rude attacks of the licentious tongue of freedom : However, in imitation of a noble Greek, he thanks God, that he had been the author of that very liberty, by which they dare to abuse him ; and expostulates with the people in these words,—“I am told that I am a traitor—and as good as banished by yourselves ;—that both sides wished I might have never landed here again, that so, the fire of contention might have had no stop in burning.—I, at last, was forced to say, they might well silence all complaints, if I once began to complain, who was importunately drawn from my employment, and sent so vast a distance from my family, to do your work of a costly and high nature, for so long a



time; and there left to starve, or steal, or beg, or borrow. But blessed be God, who gave me favour to borrow one while, and to work another, and thereby to pay your debts, and to come over, with your credit and honour, as your agent: Yet I may say, you seem to have provided a sponge to wipe off all your scores and debts. But gentlemen, blessed be God who faileth not, and blessed be his name for his wonderful providence, by which alone this town and colony, and the grand cause of truth and freedom of conscience, hath been upheld to this day; and blessed be his name, who hath again quenched so much of the fire of contention among brethren."

It must be confessed, the historians and ministers of the neighbouring colonies, in all their writings for a long time, represented the inhabitants of this colony as a company of people who lived without any order, and quite regardless of all religion; and this, principally, because they allowed an unlimited liberty of conscience, which was then interpreted to be profane licentiousness, as though religion could not subsist without the support of human laws, and Christians must cease to be so, if they suffered any of different sentiments to live in the same country with them. Nor is it to be wondered at, if many among them that first came hither, being tinctured with the same bitter spirit, should create much disturbance; nor that others, when got clear of the fear of censure and punishment, should relax too much, and behave as though they were become indifferent about religion itself. With people of both these characters, the fathers of this colony had to contend: On one hand, to guard and to maintain that sacred liberty and freedom they had established; and on the other, to prevent and suppress that licentiousness too naturally flowing from it. For quieting and healing the breaches and animosities occasioned by these contrary extremes, and arising from other causes also, Sir Henry Vane sent a letter to the colony, dated the 8th of February, 1653, in which he complains of their disorders, exhorts them to peace and unanimity, and severely rebukes them for the ill use they make of their great liberty: To this letter the town of Provi-

dence returned an answer in Mr. Williams's writing, as followeth : " The first beginning of this Providence colony was occasioned by the banishment of some from the Massachusetts—We were in complete order until we were greatly disturbed and distracted by the ambition and covetousness of some, who wanting that public self-denying spirit, which you commend to us in your letter, occasioned our general disturbance and distraction.—Possibly some of ourselves are grown wanton and too active ; for we have long drank of the sweet cup of as great liberties as any people that we can hear of under the whole heaven—We have not only been free from the iron yokes of wolfish bishops, but have sitten quiet, and dry from the streams of blood, spilt by the civil war in our native country. We have not felt the new chains of the Presbyterian tyrants, nor been consumed by the over-zealous fire of those called godly Christian magistrates. We have almost forgot what tythes are ; yea, and taxes too ; either to church or commonwealth. We have also enjoyed other sweet privileges, and such, you know, are very powerful to render the best of men wanton and forgetful.—We hope you shall have no more occasion to complain of the men of Providence town, or Providence colony ; but that when we are gone and rotten, our posterity, and children after us, shall read in our town records, your pious and favourable letters and loving-kindness to us, and this our answer, and real endeavours after peace and righteousness."

And in this age it seemed to be doubted whether a civil government could be kept up and supported without some particular mode of religion was established by its laws, and guarded by penalties and tests : And for determining this doubt, by an actual trial, appears to have been the principal motive with King Charles the Second, for granting free liberty of conscience to the people of this colony, by his charter of 1663,—in which he makes use of these words : " That they might hold forth a lively experiment, that a most flourishing civil state may stand, and best be maintained, and that amongst our English subjects, with a full liberty in religious concern-

ments. And that true piety, rightly grounded on gospel principles, will give the best and greatest security to sovereignty, and will lay in the hearts of men the strongest obligations to true loyalty." This great experiment hath been made, and hath fully answered the expectations of the beneficent royal mind that proposed it; and it hath fully appeared, that a flourishing civil state, and the most unstained loyalty, may stand without the help of any religious party tests to support them; and that the Christian religion is as little indebted to human laws for its support, as it is to human inventions, for the purity of its morals, and the sublimity of its doctrines. And Christian societies in this colony have not, as Mr. Neal expresses it, "crumbled to pieces," but have kept together, and behaved as well as those who have lived under the severest penal laws; and those of all the various denominations amongst Protestants, have lived here in peace and love, and have ever shewn more kindness and charity one for another, than hath commonly been found amongst brethren of the same communion in the neighbouring governments. And as equal liberty and protection hath been all along allowed to every society, this hath prevented any emulation amongst them for superiority and power; but hath excited one of a much more laudable nature, that is, which should adorn their profession most, by practising every Christian virtue and duty. But long experience hath at last convinced all men, that religious liberty is not incompatible with civil government, and the peace and welfare of mankind; and therefore that perfect liberty of conscience, first began by Roger Williams, and first practised in his little town of Providence, hath spread itself, and is at this day established, in some degree, in every part of the British dominions.

To return to the order of time from which I have digressed.—The first church formed at Providence, by Mr. Williams and others, seems to have been on the model of the Congregational churches in the other New England colonies. But it did not continue long in this form; for most of its members very soon embraced the principles and practices of the Baptists; and some time earlier than



1639, gathered and formed a church at Providence, of that society, the principal members of which were William Wickenden, the first elder, Chadd Brown, Thomas Olney, Gregory Dexter, John Throckmorton, Ezekiel Holliman, Stukely Wescot, &c. That this church was begun as early as I have placed it, is evident, from a letter of the famous Hugh Peters, minister of Salem, to the church at Dorchester, dated the first of the fifth month, 1639, in which he writes,

“Reverend and dearly beloved in the Lord—

“WE thought it our bounden duty to acquaint you with the names of such persons as have had the great censure passed upon them, in this our church, with the reasons thereof. Roger Williams, and his wife, John Throckmorton, and his wife, Thomas Olney, and his wife, Stukely Wescot, and his wife, Mary Holliman, widow Reeves:—These wholly refused to hear the church, denying it, and all the churches in the bay, to be true churches, and, except two, *are all re-baptized*.—

Yours in the Lord Jeses,

HUGH PETERS.”\*

There seems to have been but one society or meeting of the Baptists, formed in the English nation, before this at Providence, and that was in London, under the pastoral care of Mr. John Spilsbury, on the 12th of September, 1633. The second in England was, in 1639, gathered by Mr. Greene, and others. This first church of Baptists, at Providence, hath from its beginning kept itself in repute, and maintained its discipline, so as to avoid scandal, or schism, to this day; hath always been, and still is a numerous congregation, and in which I have with pleasure observed, very lately, sundry descendants from each of the above-named founders, except Holliman.

The records concerning lands first begin to appear about the year 1643, in the Providence books.—Whether their first books of records were lost in the Indian war,

\* The original letter being now before us, we remark its signature is Hu. Peter, not *Peters*. Ed.

or none were made, before this time, I have been able to gain no information. From this time forward, returns of surveys, and deeds of land are constantly found entered on the records. The deeds of that age differ so widely from the formal tautology of our present deeds, that one of them, as a specimen of the simplicity of our ancestors, may not be disagreeable to the reader. -

“THE 27th of the 11th month, 1644, William Field sold unto William Wickenden, all the share of land called six acres, lying upon the hill, called Foxe's Hill; bounding on the east and south-east with the land of Francis Wickes, and on the north and north-east with the highway, on the west and north-west with Mile-end Cove, on the south with the sea.”

All the deeds of land in Providence, down to the year 1660, will be found nearly in the same form; but these deeds were made, or, at least, solemnly acknowledged by the grantor, in an open town meeting; and if the town approved of the sale, they, by a vote, ordered the deed to be immediately recorded; and this made the conveyance valid; but if the town disapproved of the bargain, the whole was void.—Whether any later invented method of conveying lands hath been better adapted to prevent overreaching and fraud, is left to every honest man to determine. Indeed, in these days, they took so much care one of another, that a man was not permitted to sell his own lands without leave of the town; for in 1652, I find, one Richard Pray petitioned the town that he might be permitted to sell some land of his own; and his request was granted.

The first settlement in the Narraganset country was began in the year 1643, by Mr. Richard Smith, who set up a trading house in what is now called North Kingstown, at the place where the mansion house of the Uppdike family now stands: And Mr. Williams, and one Mr. Wilcox, soon after, set up another in the same part of the country; and some few plantations thereabouts were purchased of the Indians, and settled about the same time, or not long after.

The same year affords an instance of a very arbitrary exertion of power, by the Massachusetts colony, against the inhabitants of the town of Warwick, in this colony. Mr. Samuel Gorton, born in London, of a good family, was a man of good learning, though not bred at any university, came from England to Boston, in the year 1636 ; but his religious opinions not agreeing with the standard established there, he removed first to Plymouth, then to Rhode Island, afterwards to Providence, and at last, he, and his partners, before named, sat down at Warwick, and purchased the lands there. The Massachusetts government did not think fit to let them rest in quiet.—To give their proceedings some colour, they induced Pomham, the petty sachem, who dwelt on the lands about Warwick, to come to Boston, and to put himself and his lands under their protection, although they knew very well he had before sold all his right to those lands, to the Warwick purchasers, and that the lands lay more than twenty miles without their jurisdiction.—Pomham's submission was made the 22d of the 4th month, 1643. Upon this Myantonomo, the great sachem of the Narragansets, who was principal in selling the Warwick lands, was sent for to Boston, to shew what right he had to his kingdom, before the General Court of the Massachusetts:—He appeared, acknowledged his sale to the Warwick people, and averred his right to make it. The General Court were pleased to say, he had not made out his right to the Indian country, to their satisfaction. Having taken these previous steps, on the 12th of September, a summons was sent to the Warwick men, to appear before the General Court at Boston, to answer the complaint of Pomham and other Indians. To this the Warwick men answered, that they were not within the jurisdiction of the Massachusetts colony, and therefore refused to obey the summons.—This answer was called a high contempt.—Thereupon, on the 19th of the same month, forty armed men were sent under Captain George Cook, who, after a short siege, took Mr. Gorton, and eleven other principal inhabitants of the town of Warwick, and all their cattle, being eighty head, and such house-



hold goods as they could transport (destroying all the remainder) and carried them away to Boston, leaving their stripped and miserable families to the mercy of the more humane savages. Mr. Gorton and his fellows were confined in prison until the General Court sat at Boston, before whom they were brought for trial. But as they were now in safe custody, nothing is heard further of the complaint of Pomham, and the Indians:—Quite other matters are now laid to their charge, and after various altercations, the accusation against them was formed in these words,—“Upon much examination, and serious consideration of your writings, with your answers about them, we do charge you to be a blasphemous enemy of the true religion of our Lord Jesus Christ, and his holy ordinances; and also of civil authority amongst the people of God, and particularly in this jurisdiction.” Upon this ridiculous and general charge, in which there is not a single fact alleged, to which any answer could possibly be given, these twelve persons were tried for their lives.—Gorton’s writings were produced as evidence against them.—These he explained in such a manner, that Governour Winthrop, in open court, declared he could agree with them: But all were not to be satisfied so easily; and when the hearing of the cause was concluded, whether they should suffer death, or not, was the question put, and passed in the negative by a majority of two voices only. Although Mr. Gorton and his companions escaped with their lives, they did not escape a severe and very cruel sentence; they were doomed, each to a different town in the neighbourhood of Boston, (Gorton’s lot was Charlestown) there to remain during the pleasure of the court; each was to wear a great iron chain bolted fast to his leg, and in this condition to get his living by his labour, or starve; for the people were strictly forbid to give them any kind of relief: They were not to speak to any person, on any account whatever, except an officer in either church or state, on pain of death; and were not to say any thing to them about religion, or to complain of hard usage from the government, on pain of the same penalty. In this condition they were kept one whole cold

winter, and then the court banished them out of their jurisdiction, not to return into it again, on pain of death.—That is, they were permitted to go home to Warwick, from whence they had been brought by violence, but none of their cattle, or other goods, were ever restored to them.

Soon after the Warwick men were at liberty, they procured the Narraganset sachems to make a solemn submission of themselves, their people, and country, to King Charles the First, begging his protection.—The instrument of submission bears date the 19th August, 1644.—For it seems these sachems, as well as the Warwick people, thought it necessary to apply to the British crown, for protection against the arbitrary proceedings of the Massachusetts government: But it was unhappy for Myntonomo, that the king of England was, at this time, unable to afford him any protection, and that their unhappy fates too much resembled one another. The submission of the Indians, together with a complaint against the Massachusetts government, was carried to England by Mr. Gorton, Mr. John Greene, afterwards deputy governor of this colony, and one of its most considerable men, and Mr. Randal Holden. They obtained an order from the Earl of Warwick, and the other commissioners for plantation affairs, directed to the Massachusetts colony, expostulating with them for want of charity, and for severity, and requiring them to give the Warwick people no further molestation, on account of their religion, or of their lands, and to permit them to pass peaceably through their government. This order was obeyed with great reluctance by the Massachusetts authority, who also hereupon sent an agent to England, to make answer to the complaints of Gorton and his friends; and this agent chiefly insisted, not that what they had acted was right, but that the doings of the Massachusetts colony were not subject to any re-examination in England.

About this time a war broke out between the Narraganset Indians, and a nation or tribe of Indians called Mohegins, who lived near the sea coast, on the lands between Connecticut River and Quinnibaug River. In an engage-

ment between them, it happened that Myantonomo, the young king of the Narragansets, was taken prisoner by Uncas, king of the Mohegins. The savage soul of Uncas doubted whether he ought to take away the life of a great king, who had fallen into his hands by misfortune; and to resolve this doubt, he applied to the Christian commissioners of the four united colonies, who met at Hartford, in September, 1644: They were less scrupulous, and ordered Uncas to carry Myantonomo out of their jurisdiction, and slay him; but kindly added, that he should not be tortured; they sent some persons to see execution done, who had the satisfaction to see the captive king murdered in cold blood. This was the end of Myantonomo, the most potent Indian prince the people of New England had ever any concern with; and this was the reward he received for assisting them seven years before, in their war with the Pequots. Surely a Rhode Island man may be permitted to mourn his unhappy fate, and drop a tear on the ashes of Myantonomo, who, with his uncle Conanicus, were the best friends and greatest benefactors the colony ever had: They kindly received, fed, and protected the first settlers of it, when they were in distress, and were strangers and exiles, and all mankind else were their enemies; and by this kindness to them, drew upon themselves the resentment of the neighbouring colonies, and hastened the untimely end of the young king.

The Narragansets were greatly and justly enraged at the death of their sachem, more especially as they affirmed they had paid Uncas a ransom for him before he was slain, and therefore now resolved to take vengeance of the Mohegins. This the united colonies were determined to prevent; and first sent messengers, to exhort them to make peace with the Mohegins, and offered to become mediators between them:—The Narragansets rejected this offer, and resolutely answered, they would continue the war till they had Uncas's head. Upon this the united colonies raised an army of three hundred men, part of which having marched, and being ready to enter their country, the Narragansets not thinking themselves able



to support a war against both the English and Mohegins together, were forced to submit to the hard terms imposed on them by the commissioners; and which were,—That they should make peace with Uncas, and restore all they had taken from him;—that they should not hereafter make war with any people, without leave first obtained;—that they should pay to the united colonies two thousand fathom of wampum-peag, for the expenses they had been at; and give hostages for the performance of these articles. These terms were submitted to by the Narraganset Indians on the 30th of August, 1645. How far the united colonies were justifiable in the whole of this their conduct, toward a free and independant prince and people, who lived quite without the jurisdiction of any of their governments, and who had never been enemies, but always friends and allies to them, must be left to civilians to determine. Be that as it will, it is certain, these things greatly alienated the minds of the Indians from the English, and filled them with prejudices that could never afterwards be removed. And this will, in some measure, account for their obstinate refusal to receive or hear any of the ministers and missionaries that came from these colonies, as we are told by historians they constantly did; for these Indians seem to have thought no good could possibly be intended for them, by the people from whom, as they imagined, they had received so great injuries. That this was the cause, and not any aversion to the Christian religion, as has been commonly represented, is evident from their willingness to hear Mr. Williams, who, for many years, went to Narraganset, once a month, to preach Christianity to them.

[The publisher added, at the close, *to be continued*, but the author was probably interrupted by the distractions of the times, and we are left to regret, that the History has never been written, or at least never printed. Ed.]

NUMBER OF DWELLING HOUSES, STORES AND PUBLIC BUILDINGS, IN BOSTON, TAKEN FROM ACTUAL ENUMERATION, JULY, 1789.

Note, the buildings are enumerated in the several squares, which are designated by expressing the streets which form them.

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
THE Neck.	10	4	Mint. . . . . 1
Fortification. Orange Street. Castle Street. Harbour.	14	9	
Fortification. Orange Street. Castle Street. Cambridge Bay.	19	7	
Castle Street. Orange Street. Pleasant Street. Cambridge Bay.	14	2	Writing School } . . . 1 House. }
Castle Street. Orange Street. Bennet Street. Harbour.	20	9	
Bennet Street. Orange Street. Harvard Street. Harbour.	7	3	
Pleasant Street. Orange Street. * { Clough Street. { Holyoke Street. Eliot Street.	23	3	
Carried over,	107	37	. . . . . 2

\* Nassau Street.

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	107	37	. . . . . 2
Orange Street. Clough Street. Holyoke Street. Hollis Street.	12		South End } Meeting } House. } . 1
Hollis Street. Orange Street. Eliot Street. Holyoke Street. A court.	17		
Eliot Street. Orange Street. *Frog Lane. Holyoke Street.	18	2	Duck Manu- } factory. }
Eliot Street. Holyoke Street. Frog Lane. Pleasant Street.	16		
Harvard Street. Orange Street. Beach Street. Harbour.	8	4	
Beach Street. Orange Street. Essex Street. Rainsford Lane.	13	1	
Rainsford Lane. Essex Street. South Street. Harbour.	27		Glass } House. }
South Street. Harbour to Wheel- er's Point. Sea Street. Summer Street.	38		
Carried over,	256	44	. . . . . 3



Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	256	44	. . . . . 3
From Wheeler's Point to Bull's Wharf, thro' Sea Street. Harbour.	4	2	
South Street. Summer Street. Blind Lane. Short Street. Essex Street.	19		
Short Street. Essex Street. Newbury Street. A court. Pond Street.	44		
Newbury Street. Gibbon's Court. Another court. Frog Lane. Common Street. Sheaf's Lane.	33		
Sheaf's Lane. Newbury Street. West Street. Common Street.	23		Writing School } . . . 1 House. }
Common Street. Frog Lane. Cambridge Bay. Beacon Street. *Sentry Street.			A Burying Ground. The Common.
Common Street. West Street. Newbury Street. A court. Winter Street.	29		
Carried over,	408	46	. . . . . 4

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	408	46	. . . . . 4
Newbury Street. A court.	33		New South Meeting House. } 1
Pond Street.			
*Blind Lane.			
Summer Street.			
Winter Street.	25	1	Bank.
Common Street.			
Bromfield's Lane.			
Marlboro' Street.			
Marlboro' Street.	16	2	Trinity } . . 1
Summer Street.			
†Bishop's Alley.			
‡Vincent's Lane.			
Vincent's Lane.	20	2	
Marlboro' Street.			
Milk Street.			
Bishop's Alley.			
Bishop's Alley.	35		
Milk Street.			
A court.			
Federal Street.			
Cow Lane.			
Summer Street.			
Summer Street.	7		
Cow Lane.			
Crooked Alley.			
Purchase Street.			
Purchase Street.	7	1	
Summer Street.			
Flounder Lane to Tilestone's Wharf.			
From Tilestone's Wharf to Bull's, thro' Flounder L. Harbour.	2	3	
Carried over,	553	55	. . . . . 6

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	553	55	. . . . . 6
From Tilestone's Wharf to Foster's, thro' Purchase St. and Belcher's L. Harbour.	19	20	
Purchase Street. Crooked Alley. Cow Lane. Gray's Lane.	14	2	
Cow Lane. Atkinson Street. Round Lane. Federal Street.	15		
Round Lane. Atkinson Street. Berry Street. Sister Street.	8		
Round Lane. Sister Street. Berry Street. Federal Street.	7		
Berry Street. Federal Street. Milk Street. Atkinson Street.	14		Federal Meeting House. } . 1
Atkinson Street. Milk Street. *Hutchinson Street. Cow Lane.	11	4	
Cow Lane. Gray's Lane. Purchase Street. Tilley's Lane.	2	1	
Carried over,	643	82	. . . . . 7



Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	643	82	. . . . . 7
Cow Lane. Tilley's Lane. Purchase Street. Gridley's Lane.	4		
Cow Lane. Gridley's Lane. Purchase Street. Gibbs' Lane.	16		
Cow Lane. Hutchinson Street. Milk Street. Oliver Street, over Fort Hill.	7		
Cow Lane. Gibbs' Lane. Purchase Street. Sconce Street.	2		
Belcher's Lane. Sconce Street, over Fort Hill, to Oliver Street. Milk Street. Battery March.	33	1	
From Foster's wharf, through Battery March, to Crane's Wharf. Harbour.	6		
Milk Street, round to Water Street. Board Alley.	3		
Board Alley. Milk Street. Kilby Street. Water Street.	2		
Carried over,	716	83	. . . . . 7

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	716	83	. . . . . 7
Milk Street.			
Kilby Street.	9	1	
Water Street.			
Tanner's Lane.			
Milk Street.			
Tanner's Lane.	8		
Water Street.			
Dalton Street.			
Milk Street.			
Dalton Street.	13		
Water Street.			
*Joliff's Lane.			
Milk Street.			
Joliff's Lane.	8	2	Old South } . 1
Spring Lane.			Meeting House. }
Marlboro' Street.			
Spring Lane.			
Water Street.	3		
Cornhill.			
Marlboro' Street.			
A court.			
Bromfield's Lane.	25	1	Province } . 2
Governor's Alley.			House. }
School Street.			Romish Chapel. }
Bromfield's Lane.			
Governor's Alley.			
School Street.	15		South Latin } . 1
Cook's Court.			School House. }
Long Acre.			
Long Acre.			
Common Street.			Burying Ground.
Sentry Street.	7		Granary. }
Beacon Street.			Work-house. }
School Street.			Bridewell. }
			Alms-house. }
Carried over,	804	87	. . . . . 15

\* South part of Devonshire Street.

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	804	87	. . . . . 15
School Street.			Burying Ground.
Tremont Street.			Court House.
A court.	49		Jail. } 4
Court Street.			Old Brick. }
Cornhill.			Chapel.
Williams's Court.			
Cornhill.			
Water Street.	22	3	
Devonshire Street.			
State Street.			
State Street.			State House. } . . . 1
Cornhill.			
State Street.			Quaker Meeting House. } . . 2
Half Court Square.	23	1	School House. }
Devonshire Street.			
Water Street.			
*Leverett's Lane.			
Leverett's Lane.			School House. } . . . 1
Water Street.	2		
Kilby Street.			
Lendall's Lane.			
State Street.			
Leverett's Lane.	19	4	
Lendall's Lane.			
Kilby Street.			
Kilby Street.			
Doane's Street.	6		
Marshall's A. round to Doane's Street.			
Marshall's A. round to Kilby Street.	4	3	
Doane's St. round to Crane's Wharf.	1	7	
Harbour.			
Carried over,	930	105	. . . . . 23

\* Congress Street.



Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	930	105	23
State Street.			
Kilby Street.	2	7	
Doane's Street.			
Alley into State St.			
State Street.			
Alley into State St.	1	7	
Doane's Street.			
Alley into State St.			
State Street.			
Alley into State St.		7	
Doane's Street.			
Head of Long Wharf.			
Long Wharf and Minot's T.	1	74	
State Street.			
Merchant's Row, in- cluding all the wharves, to Town Dock.	2	63	
Harbour.			
State Street.			
Merchant's Row.			
A court.	17	12	
Corn Market.			
Corn Court.			
Pierce's Alley.			
State Street.			
Pierce's Alley.	13		
Corn Market.			
*Shrimpton's Lane.			
State Street.			
Shrimpton's Lane.	11	1	
Dock Square.			
Wilson's Lane.			
Carried over,	977	276	23

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	977	276	. . . . . 23
State Street.	20	3	
Wilson's Lane.			
Cornhill.			
Cornhill.	25	1	
Loring's Alley.			
Brattle Street.			
Dorset Alley.			
Court Street.	9		
Dorset Alley.			
Court Street.			
Hiller's Lane.	6		Writing School } 1
Court Street.			
Tremont Street.	24		Concert Hall.
Court Street.			
Hiller's Lane.			
Brattle Street.			
*Wing's Lane.			
Hanover Street.	28		
Hanover Street.			
Sudbury Street.			
†Cold Lane.	12	3	Brattle Street } 1
Wing's Lane.			
Dock Square, round			
Brattle Street, to	3		
Wing's Lane.			
Brattle Street.			
Loring's Alley.			
Cornhill.	5		Fanueil Hall. 1
Dock Square.			
Market Square.	35	1	
Wing's Lane.			
A court.			
Union Street.			
Scot's Court.			
Hanover Street.	1139	289	. . . . . 26
Carried over,			

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	1139	289	26
Hanover Street.	20		
Friend's Street.			
Deacon Street.			
Cold Lane.			
Friend's Street.	1	1	
Deacon Street.			
Cold Lane.			
Mill Pond.			
Friend's Street.	17		
Hanover Street.			
Union Street.			
Mill Pond.			
Union Street.	4		
Link Alley.			
Mill Creek.			
Mill Pond.			
Link Alley.	10		
Hanover Street.			
Mill Creek.			
Hanover Street.	8		
Union Street.			
Marshall's Lane.			
Marshall's Lane.	14		
Creek Lane.			
Mill Creek.			
Creek Lane.	12		
Union Street.			
Marsh Lane.			
Marsh Lane.	16	2	
Union Street.			
Ann Street.			
Scottow's Alley and Creek Lane.			
Carried over,	1241	292	26



Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	1241	292	. . . . . 26
Creek Lane and Scottow's Alley. Ann Street. Mill Creek.	9	3	
Ann Street, round by Conduit and Market Square. Royall's Alley.	3	3	
Royall's Alley. Market Square. Swingbridge Lane, including Wallis's Store. Ann Street.	4	6	
Ann Street. Swingbridge Lane. Town Dock, round through Dark Arch.	7	3	
Ann Street. Through Dark Arch, round to Mill Creek.	6	5	
Beacon Street. Hancock Street. Cambridge Street. Cambridge Bay.	16	2	Powder Magazine. } . 1
Hancock Street. Beacon Street, over Beacon Hill. Temple Street. Cambridge Street.	24	1	
Carried over,	1310	315	. . . . . 27

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	1310	315	27
Beacon Street.			
Tremont Street.			
Southack's Court.			
Stoddard's Lane.	35		
Cambridge Street.			
Middlecot Street, over Beacon Hill.			
Temple Street.			
Cambridge Street.	14		
Middlecot Street.			
Beacon Hill.			
Southack's Court.			
Sudbury Street.	8		
Cambridge Street.			
Stoddard's Lane.			
*Cambridge Street.			
Sudbury Street.	5		
Alden's Lane.			
Alden's Lane.			
Bowdoin Square.	18		
Chardon's Lane.			
Hawkins' Street.			
Hawkins' Street.			
Sudbury Street.	17		
†Charlotte Street.			
Chardon's Lane.			
Sudbury Street.			
Charlotte St. round by Mill Pond, to bottom of Cold L.	8		
Chardon's Lane to Ivers's.			
Mill Pond.	9		
Pitts' Lane.			
Green Street.			
Carried over,	1424	315	27

\* Cambridge Street, in 1789, extended to Concert Hall. † Still house Square.

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	1424	315	. . . . . 27
Green Street.	12		
Cambridge Street.			
Staniford Street.			
Staniford Street.	12		West Boston Meeting House. } 2
Cambridge Street.			
Lynde Street.			
Green Street.			
Lynde Street.	16		
Cambridge Street.			
Chamber's Street.			
Green Street.			
Chamber's Street.	3		
Cambridge Street.			
Cambridge Bay.			
Allen's Street.			
Allen's St. round by Cambridge Bay to Barton's Point.	18		
Leverett Street.			
Green St. round to Allen's Street.			
Leverett St. round to Waldo's Wharf.			
Charles River.	9	1	
Leverett St. from Waldo's Wharf.	10	1	
Green Street.			
Pitts' Lane.			
Mill Pond.			
Mill Creek.	21	7	
Harbour.			
Cross Street.			
Ann Street.			
Carried over,	1525	324	. . . . . 29



Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	1525	324	. . . . . 29
Mill Creek. Ann Street. Centre Street. Middle Street.	12	1	
Mill Creek. Back Street. Cross Street. Mill Pond.	15		
Back Street. Middle Street. Cross Street.	14		
Middle Street. Centre Street. Fish Street. A court. Cross Street.	24		
Middle Street. Cross Street. Fish Street. Gallop's Alley.	35	1	
Middle Street. Cross Street. Back Street. Beer Lane.	34		Writing School House. } . . . 1
Middle Street. Gallop's Alley. Fish Street. Wood Lane.	23		
Cross Street. Fish Street. Doble's Wharf. Harbour.	33	13	
Carried over,	1715	339	. . . . . 30

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	1715	339	. . . . . 30
Fish Street. Moon Street. North Square. Sun Court.	20		
Middle Street. Wood Lane. Moon Street. Bell Alley.	27		New Brick Meeting House. } 1
Middle Street. Beer Lane. Back Street. Prince Street.	33		
Cross Street. Back Street. Prince Street. Mill Pond and Charles River to the bridge.	49	4	First and Second Baptist Meeting Houses. } . 2
Prince Street. Snow Street. Ferryway.	18	1	
Prince Street. Snow Street. Sheaffe Street. Margaret Lane.	6	1	
Prince Street. Margaret Lane. Sheaffe Street. Salem Street.	10		
Prince Street. Salem Street. Bennet Street. School Alley.	16		
Prince Street. School Alley. Bennet Street. Middle Street.	15		Universalist Meeting House. } 1
Carried over,	1909	345	. . . . . 34

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	1909	345	. . . . . 34
Middle Street.			
Bell Alley.	2		
Garden Court.			
Fleet Street.			
Garden Court.			
North Square.	7		
Moon Street.			
Fleet Street.			
Moon Street.			
Sun Court.	28		
Fish Street.			
Fleet Street.			
Doble's Wharf.			
Fish Street, round to Doble's Wharf by the Harbour.	7	2	
Fish Street, round by head of Hancock's Wharf, to Scarlet's Wharf.	8	2	
Hancock's Wharf.		4	
Fleet Street.			
Ship Street.	34		
Clarke's Street.			
North Street.			
North Street.			North Latin and Writing School Houses. } 2
Bennet Street.	10		
*Eliot Street.			
Love Lane.			
Bennet Street.			
Eliot Street.	4		
Love Lane.			
Salem Street.			
Carried over,	2009	353	. . . . . 36



Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	2009	353	. . . . . 36
Salem Street. Sheaffe Street. Snow Street. Hull Street.	17		
Salem Street. Hull Street. Snow Street. Charter Street.	14		
Salem Street. Love Lane. Eliot Street. Charter Street.	13		Christ's } . . 1 Church. }
Eliot Street. Love Lane. North Street. Robinson's Alley.	15		
Eliot Street. Robinson's Alley. North Street. Charter Street.	11		
North Street. Clarke's Street. Ship Street. White Bread Alley.	3		New } . . . 1 North } Meeting } House. }
North Street. White Bread Alley. Ship Street. Salutation Alley.	34		
North Street. Salutation Alley. Ship Street. Battery Alley.	16		
Ship St. from Scar- let's Wharf to North Battery. Harbour.	27	11	
Carried over,	2159	364	. . . . . 38

Squares.	Houses.	Stores.	Publick Buildings, &c.
Brought over,	2159	364	. . . . . 38
North Street. Battery Alley. Lynn Street.	21		
North Street. Charter Street. Henchman's Lane. Lynn Street.	18		
Charter Street. Henchman's Lane. Lynn Street. Sliding Alley.	8		
Charter Street. Sliding Alley. Lynn Street. Lime Alley.	17		
Charter Street. Lime Alley. Ferryway.	14		
Lynn St. and Ferry- way, from North Battery to the Bridge. Harbour.	8	2	
Houses, . . . . .	2235	366	. . . . . 38
Stores, . . . . .	366		
Publick Buildings,	38		

2639 exclusive of Distill houses,  
Sugar houses, Rope walks,  
Mechanicks' shops, Stables,  
Sheds, &c.

## INTRODUCTORY OBSERVATIONS.

THE languages of the American Indians, however little value may be attached to them, as the source of what is frequently (though without much discrimination) called useful knowledge, have for some time deeply engaged the attention of the learned in Europe, as exhibiting numerous phenomena, if the term may be applied, the knowledge of which will be found indispensable to a just theory of speech. It is true, indeed, that we have long had our systems of *universal grammar*, or in other words our theories of language, as deduced from the small number of European and Oriental tongues, which have been the subject of investigation with scholars; just as in the physical sciences we have had, for example, our theories of chemistry, founded upon the comparatively small number of phenomena, which had been observed in past ages. But the discovery of numerous facts of the most surprising character in that science, even within our own memory, has compelled the chemists of the present age to re-examine the old, and resort to new theories; and from the great advances made in *Comparative Philology* in the present age, particularly by means of an extensive acquaintance with the *unwritten* dialects of barbarous nations, there is reason to believe that some important modifications are yet to be made in our theories of language.

Among the unwritten languages, those of the continent of America present us with many new and striking facts. If we may adopt the opinions of a learned Society in another part of our country, there appears to be "a wonderful organization, which distinguishes the languages of the Aborigines of this country from all other idioms of the known world;" and they shew us "how little the world has yet advanced in that science which is proudly called Universal Grammar."\* We find in

\* Transactions of the Historical and Literary Committee of the American Philosophical Society at Philadelphia, vol. i. p. xii.



them (according to a learned member of the same Society) “ a *new* manner of compounding words from various roots, so as to strike the mind at once with a whole mass of ideas ; a new manner of expressing the cases of substantives by inflecting the verbs which govern them ; a new number (the *particular plural*) applied to the declension of nouns and conjugations of verbs ; a new concordance in tense of the conjunction with the verb ; we see not only pronouns, as in the Hebrew and some other languages, but adjectives, conjunctions, adverbs, combined with the principal part of speech, and producing an immense variety of verbal forms ;” it is also one of the most remarkable characteristicks of the American languages, that they are “ entirely deficient of our auxiliary verbs *to have* and *to be* :” “ There are no words that I know of (says the same distinguished philologist) in any American idioms to express abstractedly the ideas signified by those two verbs.”\*

Some of the facts here stated, however extraordinary they may be thought by speculative persons, who have formed their theories upon the study of the European languages alone, will be found to have been noticed in the following Grammar of the venerable *Eliot*, composed at the distance of a century and a half from our own age, and long before any favourite theory or philological enthusiasm can be supposed to have warped the judgment of the writer and led him to distort his facts, in order to make them suit an ingenious hypothesis. The editor cannot refrain from selecting two or three instances, in which this indefatigable man, from an examination of a very limited number of kindred dialects in this part of the continent, has given similar views to those, which are more fully presented by the learned writer just cited ; who has extended his investigations to numerous dialects from the northern to the southern extremity of America.

Of the general power of *compounding* words, for example, *Eliot* (without however describing the particular

\* *Ibid.* Report of Mr. Du Ponceau on the Indian Languages, p. xxxviii. xl.

mode) says—"This language doth greatly delight in *compounding of words*, for abbreviation, to speak much in few words, though they be sometimes long ; which is chiefly caused by the many syllables which the Grammar Rule requires, and *suppletive* syllables, which are of no signification, and curious care of Euphonie."\* On the subject of the *declensions* he observes—"The variation of Nouns is not by *male* and *female*, as in other learned languages, and in European nations they do . . . . There be two forms or declensions of Nouns, *animate*, *inanimate*. 1. The *animate* form or declension is, when the thing signified is a living creature ; and such Nouns do always make their plural in *og*, as *wosketomp*, *man*, *wosketompaog* ; *a* is but for euphonic. 2. The *inanimate* form or declension of Nouns is, when the thing signified is not a living creature ; and these make the plural in *ash* ; as *hussun*, *a stone*, *hussunash*."† Again—in respect to that extraordinary characteristick of the Indian languages, the want of the *substantive verb*, Eliot says—"We have no compleat *distinct word* for the *Verb Substantive*, as the learned languages and our English Tongue have, but it is under a regular composition, whereby *many words* are made *Verb Substantive*." Of this mode of forming verbs he then gives the following among other examples : "The first sort of *Verb Substantives* is made by adding any of these terminations to the word ; *yeuoo*, *ao*, *oo*, with due euphonic ; and this is so, be the word a noun, as

\* Indian Gram. p. 6.

† *Ibid.* p. 8, 9, 10. The Rev. Mr. Heckewelder, in his interesting Correspondence with Mr. Du Ponceau, gives the same account of the *Delaware* language of the present day : "In the Indian languages (says he) those discriminating words or inflections which we call *genders*, are not, as with us, in general intended to distinguish between *male* and *female* beings, but between *animate* and *inanimate* things or substances." He adds that "*trees* and *plants* (annual plants and grasses excepted) are included within the generic class of *animated* beings." On this latter point, however, Eliot says, that *all* Vegetables are of the *inanimate* form ; and he then gives these two examples ; *mehtug*, a tree, *mehtugquash* ; *moskeht*, grass, *moskehtuash*." Whether this difference of opinion arises from a difference between the two dialects in this particular, or from some other cause, the editor has not yet been able to ascertain.

wosketompoω, *he is a man*; or *adnoun*, as wompiyeuω, *it is white*; or be the word an *adverb*, or the like.”\*

It is unnecessary to enumerate further particulars in respect to the languages of our own part of the country. It should not, however, be overlooked, that the same observations which Eliot and others have made respecting the *northern* dialects, appear to be generally applicable to those of the *south* and other parts of the continent. The editor is the more strongly impelled to extend his remarks on this point, because the plausible opinions, or rather amusing dreams, of certain philosophers (as they are sometimes styled) have still an influence among us, and continue to give currency to speculative errors instead of established facts.

Of these erroneous opinions, founded upon very limited inquiries into the languages of the globe, an ample specimen is given by *Clavigero*, in his valuable *History of Mexico*; where they are also most thoroughly refuted by an appeal to *facts*. To this intelligent author, indeed, subsequent writers, both in our own country and in Europe, have been much indebted, not only for the correction of errors which had been successfully propagated respecting these languages, but also for a refutation of the unfounded opinions of eminent naturalists and philosophers respecting the degeneracy of the animal and other productions of this continent. It will not be useless or out of place, so far as respects the *languages* of America, to advert briefly to those opinions; because they still have, as above observed, an influence in perpetuating error.

In respect to the *general character* of these languages, (to adopt the remarks of Mr. Du Ponceau) “it has been

\* Indian Gram. p. 15. This want of the verb *to be* is also noticed in *Edwards's* valuable *Observations on the Language of the Muhhekanese* [Mohegan] *Indians*, published at New Haven in the year 1788. “They have (says Edwards) no verb substantive in all the language. Therefore they cannot say, *he is a man*, *he is a coward*, &c. They express the same by one word, which is a verb neuter, viz. *nemannauwo*, *he is a man*. *Nemannauw* is the noun substantive *man*: that turned into a verb neuter of the third person singular becomes *nemannauwo* as in Latin it is said *Græcor, Græcatur*, &c. Thus they turn any substantive whatever into a verb neuter.” The learned author adds in a note—“The circumstance that they have no verb substantive, accounts for their not using that verb, when they speak English. They say, *I man*, *I sick*,” &c. p. 14.



said and will be said again, that savages, having but few ideas, can want but few words, and therefore that their languages must necessarily be poor." To which the same learned writer thus answers by a direct appeal to the simple fact: "Whether savages have or have not many ideas, it is not my province to determine; all I can say is, that if it is true that their ideas are few, it is not less certain that they have many words to express them." He then concludes his remarks in these strong terms: "For my own part, I confess that I am lost in astonishment at the *copiousness* and admirable structure of their languages; for which I can only account by looking up to the GREAT FIRST CAUSE."\*

To the same effect are the observations of the venerable Mr. Heckewelder, whose fidelity, and intelligence, and skill (in the Delaware dialect in particular) are beyond all question. In one of his letters he tells Mr. Du Ponceau, that he must not "imagine that their languages are poor"—that he will be still more pleased as he becomes more familiar "with the *beautiful* idiom of the Lenni Lennape"—"I should never have done, (he adds) were I to endeavour to explain to you in all their details the various modes which the Indians have of expressing their ideas, shades of ideas and combinations of ideas," &c.†

Will any one require a confirmation of the testimony of persons circumstanced as these two writers are; the one distinguished for those habits of accurate investigation which belong to his profession, and the other for that perfect and minute knowledge of his subject, which is the natural result of forty years' study? If such confirmation should be required, it will be found at large, in the work of Clavigero above cited, where the author refutes in detail many erroneous opinions respecting America, which had so long prevailed. He thus quotes a celebrated writer on this subject: "The languages of America are so limited and so scarce of words, that it is impossible to express any *metaphysical* idea in them. In no one of those languages

\* Report of Mr. Du Ponceau, p. xxvii—xxix.

† Correspondence, p. 368, 377, 393.

can they count above the number *three*. It is impossible to translate a book either into the languages of the Algonquines or Paraguese, or even into those of Mexico or Peru, on account of their not having sufficient plenty of proper terms to express general ideas." To which Clavigero replies : " We have (says he) learned the Mexican, and have heard it spoken by the Mexicans for many years, but never knew that it was deficient in numerical terms, and words signifying universal ideas," &c. "*We know* that the Mexicans had numeral words to express as many thousands or millions as they pleased ;" and the author then subjoins a long list of them, extending to very high numbers. He then shows that the writers whom he is here opposing, are equally wrong in asserting that these languages cannot express *metaphysical* ideas ; and he affirms " that it is not easy to find a language more fit to treat on metaphysical subjects than the Mexican, as it would be difficult to find another which abounds so much in abstract terms," equivalents to many of which, he declares, cannot be found " in the Hebrew, in the Greek, in the Latin, in the French, in the Italian, in the English, in the Spanish or Portuguese ;" and he gives his readers a list of abstract terms with the corresponding Mexican words, " which (he observes are understood by the rudest Indians." He adds, that it is by means of this abundance of words of this kind, that the deepest mysteries of religion have been explained in that language, and that various books of the Scriptures, and the works of Thomas à Kempis and others, have been translated into it ; which, as he justly remarks, could not have been done if the language had been deficient in terms of this nature. The same observations, he says, are applicable to all the languages spoken in the dominions of Mexico, as Grammars and Dictionaries and treatises on religion have been published in them, as well as in the Mexican.\*

Such, then, is the character of the languages spoken by the inhabitants of the *middle* region of this continent ; and since the publication of Clavigero's work, we have

\* Clavigero's Mexico, *Dissertat.* vi. *Sect.* 6 ; in vol. 2, edit. 1787.

been enabled to obtain authentick information of various other languages ; particularly of one of the most southern, that of *Chili*, (or the Araucanian, as it is often called,) an account of which is given in the Abbé *Molina's* excellent History of Chili. It will, assuredly, surprise most readers to find how exactly the account given of this language by Molina (who furnishes us with facts instead of hypotheses) corresponds with what Clavigero says of the Mexican ; and how completely at variance they both are with those of the speculative writers above alluded to. " So *copious* is the *Chilian* language (says the author) that, in the opinion of those well acquainted with it, a complete dictionary thereof would require more than one large volume ; for, besides the radical words, which are very numerous, so great is the use of *compounds*, that it may almost be said in this consists the very genius of the language." Again—" *Abstract* nouns are very frequent ;" and, in another place he states, as a remarkable property of this language, that it makes " frequent use of abstract nouns in a peculiar manner. Thus, instead of saying *pu Huinca*, the Spaniards, they commonly say, *Huincagen*, the Spaniolity ; *tamén cuiàgen*, your trio, that is, you other three ; *épu tamen cajugen layai*, two of you other six will die—*literally*, two of your sixths." The author also mentions in this language (as Eliot, Edwards and others do in the case of the northern dialects) the " practice of converting all the parts of speech into verbs, in such a manner that the whole knowledge of the Chilian language may be said to consist in the management of the verbs."\* He adds, that "*proper names* are also susceptible of this elegance. Thus from *Pedro*, is formed the verb *Petron*, to be Pedro ; *Petrobui*, was Pedro . . . . Owing to this property, the translation of European works into the Chilian is very easy, in which, instead of losing any of their spirit and elegance, they acquire a degree of precision even superior to the originals. This, among other instances that

\* To the same effect, Eliot says of the *Massachusetts* language—"The manner of formation of the nouns and verbs have such a latitude of use, that there needeth little other *Syntaxis* in the language."—Indian Gram. p. 23.



might be mentioned, is strongly evinced in the *Christian Thoughts* of the celebrated Bouhours, which was translated in the year 1713. There can be no better test of a language than its *translations*, as its comparative richness or poverty is rendered more apparent in this mode than in any other.”\*

But it may possibly still be urged, that whatever is the fact with respect to the languages of Mexico, Chili, and the more civilized parts of the continent, yet the dialects of the more barbarous nations must be extremely poor and deficient in the particulars above considered. As to some of these very dialects, however, we have the unequivocal testimony of Mr. Heckewelder and Mr. Du Ponceau already cited; and their opinion is supported by that of writers who have preceded them. It may, perhaps, appear somewhat like want of respect to persons so well known as those gentlemen are, to adduce the testimony of others in support of their statements; but such has been the influence of the opposite opinion on this subject, that the editor trusts he shall be pardoned for briefly recurring to two or three preceding writers; whose observations in this instance are the more important, as they are founded upon the dialects of the *northern* nations alone. *Colden* informs us, that “the Six Nations compound their words without end, whereby their language becomes sufficiently copious.” *Edwards* observes—“It has been said, that savages have no parts of speech beside the substantive and the verb. This is not true concerning the *Mohegan*, nor concerning any other tribe of Indians of whose languages I have any knowledge. The *Mohegans* have all the eight parts of speech to be found in other languages.” Again—“It has been said also, that savages never abstract, and have no abstract terms; which with regard to the *Mohegans* is another mistake.....I doubt not, but that there is in this language the full proportion of abstract to concrete terms, which is commonly to be found in other languages.”† The late Mr. Zeisberger affirmed the Iroquois language (in which

\* *Molina's Hist. of Chili*, vol. ii. p. 5. 297, 303, 301, *American translation*.

† *Observations, &c.* p. 16.

he was thoroughly skilled) to be very copious. Roger Williams, who was distinguished for his skill in the Indian languages, in speaking of the dialect of the Nara-gansets, declares in emphatick terms, that "their language is exceeding copious, and they have five or six words sometimes for one thing."\* If any further proof were necessary in this case, we have it conclusively in the single fact, that *Eliot* found a sufficient stock of words in the *Massachusetts* dialect, for a complete translation of the *Old and New Testaments*.

Such, then, are some of the striking facts, which the investigation of these remarkable dialects has already brought into view; and facts of this novel character could not fail to stimulate the curiosity of all, who take an interest in the study of man, particularly of his distinguishing characteristick, the faculty of speech. For, if there is any utility in studying language philosophically, (which all admit,) then it is manifestly indispensable for those, who claim the rank of philosophical grammarians, to make themselves in some degree acquainted with the languages of the barbarous, as well as of the civilized nations of the globe. Accordingly, the illustrious scholars of Europe, particularly of Germany, have for some time past, with their well known ardour and perseverance, been pursuing their researches into the curious dialects of this continent; and they have already examined, with no inconsiderable degree of minuteness, such a number of them as will astonish every reader, whose attention has not been particularly directed to this subject.

In that wonderful monument of philological research, the *MITHRIDATES*, begun by the illustrious Professor *Adelung*, and continued and augmented by the celebrated Professor *Vater*, by the Honourable *Frederick Adelung*, (the distinguished relative of the late professor,) and by the learned Baron *William von Humboldt*, we find "a delineation of the grammatical character of *thirty-four* American languages, and the Lord's Prayer in *fifty-nine* different idioms or dialects of the savages of this coun-

\* *Directions* prefixed to his *Key into the Languages of America*. *Williams* also, in speaking of their numerals, says, "'tis admirable how quick they are in casting up great numbers with the helpe of graines of corne," &c. *Key*, chap. iv.

try.”\* But what will be the reader’s astonishment to learn, that since the publication of the *Mithridates*, the present learned *Adelung* has been enabled to make a more extensive survey of the languages of the globe than was before practicable, and has enumerated in *America twelve hundred and fourteen* different dialects!† Justly may we (to adopt the sentiment of Mr. Du Ponceau) express our astonishment at the great knowledge which the Literati of Europe appear to possess of America, and of the customs, manners and languages of its original inhabitants; and cheerfully ought we to express our “thanks to the Germans and Russians, our masters,” to whom “the general science of languages is peculiarly indebted for the great progress that it has lately made.”

The vast field of investigation, which is thus opening to our view, would be sufficient to dishearten the most adventurous and resolute philologist, if the *American* dialects were subject to the intricate anomalies of the European tongues,‡ and if they were, moreover, as ma-

\* *Report*, in *Histor. Transact.* vol. i. p. xxxii.

† *Uebersicht aller bekannten Sprachen und ihrer Dialekte*; or, *View of all the known Languages and their Dialects*, 8vo. St. Petersburg, 1820. A copy of this important work has been presented by the learned author to the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. The *Historical Transactions*, and particularly the labours of Mr. *Du Ponceau*, are noticed by the author in terms of just commendation. In connection with the example of the learned *Adelung*, I cannot forbear mentioning, as an incitement to American scholars, in these researches, that of Baron *William von Humboldt*; who (as an obliging correspondent in Germany justly observes) “unites to his high rank as a politician and nobleman the distinctions of genius and erudition.” This eminent philologist, (says Mr. *Du Ponceau*) “surrounded with the honours and dignities of his country, made a journey into the mountains of Biscay and resided there some months for the sole purpose of studying the Basque Language.” *Report*, p. xxxi. He has also been engaged for some years in the study of the Languages of AMERICA.

‡ The almost inconceivable degree of regularity in the American languages is not the least curious of their peculiarities. *Molina* says of that of *Chili*—“What is truly surprising in this language is, that it contains no irregular verb or noun. Every thing in it may be said to be regulated with a geometrical precision, and displays much art with great simplicity, and a connection so well ordered and unvarying in its grammatical rules, which always make the subsequent depend upon the antecedent, that the theory of the language is easy and may be learned in a few days.” Vol. ii. p. 5, *Amer. edit.* Mr. *Heckewelder* observes of the *Delaware*, that the verbs are conjugated through all their negative, causative and various other forms, with fewer irregularities than any other language that I know of.” *Correspondence*, Letter x. Mr. *Du Ponceau* says too, of the same language, that “it would rather appear to have been formed by philosophers in their closets, than by savages in the wilderness.” *Report*, p. xxvi.



ny have erroneously supposed, for the most part radically different languages. This last unfounded opinion, which has been too much countenanced by speculative writers, has doubtless been one reason why our scholars have not directed their attention to this part of American history; for, in the works of most writers upon this country, we meet with such numbers of Indian names, often ill-defined and as often misapplied, that we become perplexed and distracted with the multifarious group: Just as an uninstructed spectator (to adopt a remark applied on another occasion) who gazes on the endless variety of flowers that adorn the earth, or the innumerable stars that glitter in the heavens, is lost in the irregularity and disorder which seem to pervade those parts of the natural world, and despondingly imagines the knowledge of them to be placed beyond the reach of human attainment. But as we are enabled by the labours of a Newton and a Linnæus to class and systematize the innumerable subjects of those departments of knowledge, and find order and regularity amidst the apparent confusion, so, by the assistance of the Adelungs and Vaters and Humboldts of the old world, and of their zealous fellow-labourers in our own country, we can class and arrange the various languages spoken by man; and thus dissipate the confusion and perplexity which reign through the chaos, and discover, in this, the like wonderful connexion and harmony, which are conspicuous in all other parts of the creation.

We now accordingly find, that the numerous dialects of *North America*, on the East side of the Mississippi, may probably be reduced to three, or at most four classes or families:

1. The *Karalit*, or language of *Greenland and the Eskimaux*.\*
2. The *Delaware*; and

\* Mr. Du Ponceau informs me in a late letter, that he is now able to establish the correctness of Professor Vater's important remark—that this *American* language is also spoken in *Asia*, by the tribe of Tartars called the *Sedentary Tschuktschi*, who inhabit the most eastern peninsula of the other continent. See *Mithridates*, vol. iii. part 3, p. 464.

3. The *Iroquois*; to which should be added, as Mr. Heckewelder is inclined to think,
4. The *Floridian* class, comprehending the body of languages, spoken on the whole southern frontier of the United States.

By the study of only three or four original languages, therefore, a scholar will be able to command a knowledge of the numerous dialects which are spread over all that part of America in which our countrymen will feel the greatest interest. In the same manner as, by the knowledge of three or four principal languages of the old continent, we are able to master all the dialects which are to be found from the northern to the southern extremities of Europe.

The *Massachusetts Historical Society*, with the view of co-operating at this time with their brethren of other states in affording such aid as may be in their power to persons engaged in these interesting researches, will devote a portion of their *Collections* to this part of American history; in the course of which it is their intention to communicate to the publick all rare and valuable memorials of the Indian languages, whether printed or in manuscript, which may come into their possession. It is several years since they republished the principal part of Roger Williams' small but valuable Vocabulary of the Naraganset dialect.\* They now resume this department of their work by the republication of the present *Grammar* of the *Massachusetts* Language. This Grammar had become so rare, that the Society had not one perfect *printed* copy of it in their extensive collection of early American publications; and they have been indebted to the American Philosophical Society for a manuscript copy, which they have liberally presented, on the motion of their obliging and indefatigable correspondent, Mr. DU PONCEAU. The present republication, however, is made from a *printed* copy belonging to one of their members. The Society is also indebted

\* See vols. iii. and v.

to Mr. Du Ponceau for the *Remarks* subjoined to the present edition, which are distinguished by his name : The few other additions to it have been made by the editor ; to whose care his colleagues on the *Publishing Committee* have confided this part of the present volume.

It was thought proper to resume the *Indian* publications of the Society with a *Grammar* of some one of the dialects, in order that our scholars might at once be provided with a guide to direct them in their first inquiries ; and the Committee have been led by their respect for the memory of the author (and perhaps too by an excusable partiality for a New England production) to select that of *Eliot* ; which appears to have been the first ever published in *North America*.\* The work itself possesses great merit in many respects ; and, with Mr. Du Ponceau's remarks, it will afford essential aid in the prosecution of these studies.

But it is now proper to submit a few remarks more immediately relative to the particular language which is the subject of the present Grammar ; in doing which it will be necessary to take a general view of the other New England dialects.

The principal nations of Indians in *New England*, at the first settlement of the country by our ancestors, were five :

1. The *Pequots* ; who inhabited the most *southerly* part, which comprehended what is now the State of Connecticut. They were once " a very warlike and potent people."†
2. The *Naragansets* ; who possessed the country about Naraganset Bay, including Rhode Island and other islands in that bay, and also a part of the State of

\* In *Spanish* America, grammars and dictionaries of the native languages had been published a century before Eliot's. Among the valuable books on this subject in the library of Baron W. von Humboldt, of which the editor has a list, there is a *Vocabulary of the Spanish and Mexican Languages*, printed at Mexico, as early as 1571.

† Gookin's *Historical Collections of the Indians in New England* ; written in 1674, and first published from the MS. in the *Massachusetts Histor. Collect.* vol. i. p. 147—8.



- Connecticut. This tribe is spoken of by our early historians as "a great people."\*
3. The *Pawcunnawkuts*; inhabiting the territory of the old Colony of Plymouth. These were also known by the name of *Wampanoags*, and were once in possession of Rhode Island.†
  4. The *Massachusetts* Indians; occupying principally the territory which was afterwards inhabited by the English, on Massachusetts Bay. They are described as "a numerous and great people."
  5. The *Pawtuckets*; who dwelt north and east of the Massachusetts Indians.‡

Besides these five general divisions, or tribes, of the New England Indians, however, our historians often speak of smaller divisions by specifick names, within the same territory; which smaller divisions seem to have been so distinguished, sometimes in consequence of their local situation, and sometimes on account of a slight difference of dialect.

In respect to the *languages* of these Indians, there seems to have been one principal dialect, which extended through a great part of New England, and was the basis of all the others. *Gookin* (in 1674) says—"The Indians of the parts of *New England*, especially upon the *sea-coasts*, used the *same sort* of speech and language, only with some difference in the expressions, as they differ in several countries [qu. counties?] in England, yet so as they can *well understand one another*. Their speech is a distinct speech from any of those used in Europe, Asia or Africa, that I ever heard of. And some of the *inland* Indians, particularly the Mawhawks or Maquas, use such a language, that our Indians *upon the coast* do not understand. So the Indians to the southward, upon the sea coast about Vir-

\* *Ibid.* See also *Roger Williams' Key*; where the author says—"In the *Nariganset* country (which is the *chief people* in the land) a man shall come to many townes, some bigger, some lesser, it may be a dozen in 20 miles' travel." p. 3.

† *Mass. Histor. Collect.* vol. iii. p. 159, and vol. x. p. 20, note.

‡ *Gookin, ubi supra.*

ginia use a speech much different from those in New England.”\* *Roger Williams* also, who is spoken of as particularly “skilful in the Indian tongue,”† agrees, substantially, with *Gookin*; though from his remarks we should infer, that there were more differences of dialect than *Gookin*’s account would lead us to suppose. *Williams* says—“with this [the *Naraganset* language] I have entered into the secrets of those countries wherever *English* dwell, about two hundred miles, between the French and Dutch Plantations;” and he adds, that “there is a *mixture* of this language *North and South* from the place of my abode about *six hundred* miles; yet within the two hundred miles aforesaid, their dialects doe exceedingly differ, *yet not so, but* (within that compasse) *a man may by this helpe converse with thousands of natives* all over the countrey.” In another place *Williams* makes a remark which (as above observed) might lead us, at first view, to conclude, that there were many radical differences in the various dialects alluded to by him. His words are—“The varietie of their Dialects and proper speech within thirtie or fortie miles each of other is very great.” But the example, which he subjoins in proof of this, shows that his expression is to be taken in a qualified sense, and must be considered as founded upon minute distinctions, which would not be thought to constitute “a very great varietie” of language by any person, except one whose ear had been long habituated to the niceties of some particular dialect; every trifling deviation from which would be as striking, as the slightest violation of the idiom of his native tongue. He observes, that this *very great variety* of dialect will appear in this word *Anùm*, a dog, which he sets down in four of the languages, thus :

“ <i>Anùm</i> ,	the <i>Cowweset</i>	} dialect.”
<i>Ayìm</i> ,	the <i>Nariganset</i>	
<i>Arùm</i> ,	the <i>Qunnipiuck</i>	
<i>Alùm</i> ,	the <i>Neepmuck</i>	

\* Mass. Histor. Collect. vol. i. p. 149.

† *Gookin*; in Mass. Histor. Collect. vol. i. p. 210.

Now, it will be at once perceived, that in three of these four examples there is no other difference of dialect, than the slight one occasioned by the very common interchange of the liquids *l*, *n*, *r*; a difference, which, in a general view of the subject, would not be called "a very great one."\*

The observation of the old writers, that there was one principal or fundamental language throughout New England (and even beyond it) is in accordance with the remarks of later writers upon this subject; who have taken a more extended view of these dialects than was practicable at the early period when Williams and Eliot wrote. It will suffice to refer to two writers of our own age, (one of them still living,) eminently distinguished for their skill in the Indian languages—the Rev. Dr. Edwards, whose *Observations* have been already cited, and the Rev. Mr. Heckewelder, whose *Account of the Indians and their languages* is well known to every reader. These two writers, who agree in every thing material to the present question, differ only in this circumstance, that each of them considers the particular dialect with which he happened to be most familiar, as the principal, or standard language, and then compares

\* Williams' *Key*, chap. xvii. p. 106, London edit. of 1643; republished (in part) in *Massa. Historical Collect.* vols. iii. and v. Williams adds a remark, which is deserving of notice as a refutation of an *opinion* which at that day (as is often the case in our own) had been hastily formed upon a partial knowledge of the Indian languages: "So that (says he) although some pronounce not *L* nor *R*, yet it is the most proper dialect of other places; *contrary to many reports.*" *Ibid.*

This difference of dialect (which was probably the most important of any, because it is the most frequently alluded to by the old writers) is also noticed by *Eliot* in much the same manner as by Williams; "The consonants *l*, *n*, *r* (says he) have such a natural coincidence, that it is an eminent variation of their dialects. We *Massachusetts* pronounce the *n*. The *Nipmuk* Indians pronounce *l*. And the *Northern* Indians pronounce *r*. As instance:

We say	<i>Anim</i>	(um produced)	} a dog."
Nipmuk,	<i>Alim</i>		
Northern,	<i>Arum</i>		

To which he adds a remark that should not be overlooked—"So in *most* words." *Indian Gram.* p. 2. The *Nipmuk* Indians, or (*Neepmuck*, as Williams writes it) who are here mentioned, had their principal settlement about fifty miles south-west of Boston, on the territory now called Oxford, in the county of Worcester; but their territory extended into the borders of Connecticut. See *Mass. Histor. Collect.* vol. ix. p. 80, note.



all the rest with that; just as an *Englishman* would make his own language the standard with which he would compare the *northern* dialects of Europe, or as a native of Italy would take the Italian language as the standard for those of the south of Europe. Thus Dr. *Edwards*, for example, in speaking of the *Mohegan* tongue, observes—"This language is spoken by *all the Indians throughout New England*. Every tribe, as that of Stockbridge, that of Farmington, that of New London, &c. has a different dialect; but the language is *radically the same*. Mr. Eliot's translation of the Bible is in a particular dialect of *this* language. *This* language appears to be much more extensive than any other language in North America. The languages of the Delawares in Pennsylvania, of the Penobscots bordering on Nova Scotia, of the Indians of St. Francis in Canada, of the Shawanese on the Ohio, and of the Chippewaus at the westward of Lake Huron, *are all radically the same* with the *Mohegan* . . . . That the languages of the several tribes in New England, of the Delawares, and of Mr. Eliot's Bible, are radically the same with the *Mohegan*, *I assert from my own knowledge*."\*

To the same effect are the observations of Mr. *Heckewelder* respecting the *Delaware* language, more properly called the *Lenni Lenape*. "The *Lenni Lenape* or *Delawares* (says he) are the head of a great family of Indian nations who are known among themselves by the generick name of *Wapanachki*, or *Men of the East*. The *same language* is spread among them all in various dialects, of which I conceive the purest is that of the chief nation, the *Lenape*, at whose residence the great national councils meet, and whom the others, by way of respect, call *Grandfather*."† In another place he says, that "this is the most widely extended language of any of those that are spoken on this side of the Mississippi. It prevails in the extensive regions of Canada, from the coast of Labrador to the mouth of

\* *Edwards' Observations*, p. 5.

† Correspondence with Mr. Du Ponceau, *Letter* xiv. (*Transactions*, p. 391.)

Albany River, which falls into the southernmost part of Hudson's Bay, and from thence to the Lake of the Woods, which forms the north-western boundary of the United States. It appears to be the language of all the Indians of that extensive country, except those of the *Iroquois* stock, which are by far the least numerous . . . Out of the limits of Canada few Iroquois are found, except the remnants of those who were once settled in the vicinity of the great lakes in the northern parts of the now State of New York. There are yet some Wyandots in the vicinity of Detroit. All the rest of the Indians who now inhabit this country to the Mississippi, *are of the Lenape stock and speak dialects of that language.* It is certain, that at the time of the arrival of the Europeans, they were in possession of all the *coast* from the northernmost point of Nova Scotia to the Roanoke. Hence they were called *Wapanachki* or the *Abenaki, Men of the East.*" He adds—"In the *interior* of the country we find *every where* the Lenape and their kindred tribes."\*

From these different accounts, then, it appears, that the Lenape may properly enough be considered as the principal, or standard language of the *New England Indians*, as well as of various tribes that inhabited the adjacent territories. It appears too, from the concurring testimony of our early historians, that among the Indians of *New England* there was "a great and numerous people," well known and commonly distinguished by the name of the *Massachusetts* Indians, who resided principally on the sea coast of the present State of Massachusetts, the extent of whose territory, however, was probably not very well defined. The editor, therefore, without regarding any of the subdivisions of this nation, (subdivisions, which have given rise to a variety of appellations both for the different portions of the people and for their slightly differing dialects,) has thought it proper to follow the example of *Eliot* in applying to the prevailing dialect of that people the general name of the *Massachusetts Language*. In the same manner, as we include under the general

\* Heckewelder's Historical Account of the Indians, chap. ix. (in Transactions of the Histor. and Literar. Committee, &c. p. 106, 107.)

name of *English*, all the provincial dialects spoken in the several counties of England ; though, as far as we can judge, those *county* dialects differ much more from standard English, than the local dialects of Massachusetts did from the standard Indian of the country. This same language is often mentioned by our early writers under different names ; sometimes under the very indefinite appellation of the *Indian language* ; sometimes, however, it is called by its proper name, the *Massachusetts* ; it has also been called the *Nonantum* language ; but more frequently the *Natick* tongue, apparently from the accidental circumstance, that Eliot established his first *Indian church* in the town called *Natick*, which was near Boston and was once the town of greatest note among the Indians in this quarter.

With these remarks the editor submits the present edition of this Grammar to the publick, as part of a series of scarce tracts respecting the *Indian Languages*, which it is the intention of the Historical Society to publish, from time to time, as circumstances shall permit. The present publication will probably be followed by a valuable *English and Indian Vocabulary*, (of the *Massachusetts* language also) composed by Josiah Cotton, Esquire, who was the son of John Cotton and was once an occasional preacher among the Indians ; he died at *Plymouth*, in this State, during the year 1756. The MS. bears the date of the years 1707 and 1708. They also hope to obtain a Vocabulary of the language spoken at the present day by the small tribe of Indians called the *Penobscots*, who reside near the river of that name, in the State of Maine. A vocabulary of this dialect (the *Abnaki*) will be of use in making a comparison of the present language with the same dialect as we find it in Father *Râle's* MS. Dictionary, which was formed a century ago. This last work, of which a short bibliographical account was given, by the editor, in the fourth volume of the American Academy's Memoirs, page 358, and which is the greatest treasure of *Indian*, that is to be found in this part of our country, ought also to be published without delay, lest some accident should deprive us of it forever. But its large size



alone, even if the MS. were the property of the Historical Society, would forbid its publication in these volumes. It is to be hoped, however, that measures will be taken without loss of time, either under the direction of the University, (to whose library it belongs) or of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences to effect its publication.

The editor has thought it might be acceptable to most readers, and not without use, to add to this preface, an account of the *Indian publications* made by *Eliot*; and the following List, which has been collected from the preceding volumes of the Historical Collections, is accordingly subjoined. A valuable account of the *Life* of the venerable author, drawn up by his much respected descendant, the late Dr. John Eliot, Corresponding Secretary of the Society, will be found in the eighth volume of these Collections, and also in the *New England Biographical Dictionary* of the same writer.

JOHN PICKERING.

Salem, Massachusetts,  
July 31, 1821.

*List of Eliot's Indian Publications.*

1. The *Bible*; of which the *New Testament* was finished Sept. 5, 1661, (See Mass. Hist. Coll. vol. i. p. 176.) and the *Old Testament* in 1663. The second edition of the *New Test.* was published in 1680, and of the *Old Test.* in 1685. Eliot, in a letter of July 7, 1688, to the celebrated Sir Robert Boyle, who was Governour of the Corporation for propagating the gospel among the Indians of New England, and occasionally supplied money for that purpose, speaks of having paid ten pounds to Mr. *John Cotton*, "who (says he) helped me much in the *second* edition of the *Bible*." See *Mass. Hist. Coll.* vol. iii. p. 187.—The translation of the *New Testament* was dedicated to King Charles the II<sup>d</sup>; a copy of the "Epistle Dedicatory" may be seen in the *Mass. Hist. Coll.* vol. i. p. 174.
2. *Indian Catechisms*; several of them.—See *vol. i.* 172, and *viii.* 33.
3. ——— *Grammar*; which is printed in some editions of the *Bible*.—See *vol. viii.* 12 and 33.
4. ——— *Psalter*.—*Ibid.*
5. *Singing Psalms*.—See *vol. i.* 172.
6. *The Practice of Piety*, published in 1686.—See a letter from Eliot to Boyle, in *vol. iii.* p. 187.
7. *Baxter's Call to the Unconverted*.—See *vol. i.* 172.

THE  
INDIAN GRAMMAR BEGUN:

OR,

AN ESSAY TO BRING THE INDIAN LANGUAGE

INTO

R U L E S,

FOR THE HELP OF SUCH AS DESIRE TO LEARN THE SAME, FOR  
THE FURTHERANCE OF THE GOSPEL AMONG THEM.

---

BY JOHN ELIOT.

---

Isa. 33. 19. *Thou shalt not see a fierce people, a people of a deeper speech than thou canst perceive, of a stammering tongue, that thou canst not understand.*

Isa. 66. 18. *It shall come that I will gather all Nations and Tongues, and they shall come and see my Glory.*

Dan. 7. 14. *And there was given him Dominion, and Glory and a Kingdome, that all People, Nations and Languages should serve him, &c.*

Psal. 19. 3. *There is no speech nor language where their voice is not heard.*

Mal. 3. 11. *From the rising of the Sun, even to the going down of the same, my Name shall be great among the Gentiles, &c.*

---

CAMBRIDGE:

PRINTED BY MARMADUKE JOHNSON.

1666.

## INDIAN GUANIAN BELL

AN ESSAY TO BRING THE INDIAN LANGUAGE

TO THE

FOR THE YEAR OF 1840, AND TO BRING THE INDIAN LANGUAGE  
TO THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES.

BY JOHN KELLY.

THE INDIAN LANGUAGE, AS A BRANCH OF THE SCIENCE OF MAN, IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES.

THE INDIAN LANGUAGE, AS A BRANCH OF THE SCIENCE OF MAN, IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES.

THE INDIAN LANGUAGE, AS A BRANCH OF THE SCIENCE OF MAN, IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES.

THE INDIAN LANGUAGE, AS A BRANCH OF THE SCIENCE OF MAN, IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES.

THE INDIAN LANGUAGE, AS A BRANCH OF THE SCIENCE OF MAN, IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES. IT IS A SUBJECT OF GREAT INTEREST TO THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES.

CAMBRIDGE:

PUBLISHED BY W. B. ALLEN, 1840.



TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE,  
ROBERT BOYLE, ESQ;

GOVERNOUR:

WITH THE REST OF THE RIGHT HONOURABLE AND CHRISTIAN

## CORPORATION

FOR THE PROPAGATION OF THE GOSPEL UNTO

THE INDIANS IN NEW-ENGLAND.

NOBLE SIR,

*YOU were pleased, among other Testimonies of your Christian and prudent care for the effectual Progress of this great Work of the Lord Jesus among the inhabitants of these Ends of the Earth, and goings down of the Sun, to Command me (for such an aspect have your so wise and seasonable Motions, to my heart) to Compile a Grammar of this Language, for the help of others who have an heart to study and learn the same, for the sake of Christ, and of the poor Souls of these Ruines of Mankind, among whom the Lord is now about a Resurrection-work, to call them into his holy Kingdome. I have made an Essay unto this difficult Service, and laid together some Bones and Ribs preparatory at least for such a work. It is not worthy the Name of a Grammar, but such as it is, I humbly present*

*it to your Honours, and request your Animadversions upon the Work; and Prayers unto the Lord for blessing upon all Essayes and Endeavours for the promoting of his Glory, and the Salvation of the Souls of these poor People. Thus humbly commending your Honours unto the blessing of Heaven and to the guidance of the Word of God, which is able to save your Souls, I remain*

Your Honours Servant in the Service

of our Lord Jesus,

**JOHN ELIOT.**

# THE INDIAN GRAMMAR BEGUN.

---

*GRAMMAR* is the *Art* or *Rule* of *Speaking*.

There be two parts of *Grammar* :

1. The *Art* of *making words*.
2. The *Art* of *ordering words* for speech.

The art of *making words*, is       $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \text{ By various } \textit{articulate sounds}. \\ 2. \text{ By regular } \textit{composing} \text{ of them.} \end{array} \right.$

*Articulate sounds* are composed into  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Syllables}. \\ \textit{Words}. \end{array} \right.$

The various *articulate sounds* must be distinguished

By  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Names}. \\ \textit{Characters}. \end{array} \right.$

These *Names* and *Characters* do make the *Alpha-bet*.

Because the *English Language* is the first, and most attainable Language which the *Indians* learn, he is a learned man among them, who can *Speak*, *Reade* and *Write* the *English Tongue*.

I therefore use the same *Characters* which are of most common use in our English Books ; viz. the *Roman* and *Italick* Letters.

Also our *Alpha-bet* is the same with the *English*, saving in these few things following.

1. The *difficulty of the Rule* about the Letter [*c*], by reason of the *change of its sound* in the five sounds, *ca ce ci co cu* ; being sufficiently helped by the Letters [*k* and *s*.] : We therefore lay by the Letter [*c*], [p. 2.]



saving in [ch]; of which there is frequent use in the Language. Yet I do not put it out of the *Alpha-bet*, for the use of it in other Languages, but the character [ch] next to it, and call it [chee].

2. I put [i] Consonant into our *Alpha-bet*, and give it this Character [j], and call it *ji* or [gi], as this Syllable soundeth in the English word [giant]; and I place it next after [i vocal]. And I have done thus, because it is a *regular sound* in the *third person singular* in the *Imperative Mode* of Verbs, which cannot well be distinguished without it: though I have sometimes used [gh] instead of it, but it is harder and more inconvenient. The proper sound of it is, as the English word [age] soundeth. See it used *Genes.* 1. 3, 6, 9, 11.

3. We give (v) Consonant a *distinct name*, by putting together (u f) or (uph), and we never use it, save when it soundeth as it doth in the word (*save, have*), and place it next after (u vocal.) Both these Letters (u Vocal, and v Consonant) are together in their proper sounds in the Latine word (*uva* a Vine.)

4. We call *w* (*wee*), because our name giveth no hint of the *power* of its sound.

These Consonants (*l. n. r.*) have such a *natural coincidence*, that it is an eminent variation of their dialects.

We *Massachusetts* pronounce the *n*. The *Nipmuk Indians* pronounce *l*. And the *Northern Indians* pronounce *r*. As instance :

We say	<i>Anúm</i>	(um produced)	} A Dog.
Nipmuk,	<i>Alúm</i>		
Northern,	<i>Arúm</i>		
			} So in most words.

Our *Vocals* are five: *a e i o u*. *Diphthongs*, or *double sounds*, are many, and of much use.

ai au ei ee eu eau oi oo ∞.

Especially we have more frequent use of [o and ∞] than other Languages have: and our [∞] doth always sound as it doth in these English words (*moody, book.*)

We use onely *two Accents*, and but *sometime*. [p. 3.]

The *Acute* (') to show which Syllable is first *produced* in pronouncing of the word; which if it be not attended, no Nation can understand their own Language: as appeareth by the *witty Conceit* of the *Tytere tu's*.

ó produced with the accent, is a *regular distinction* betwixt the *first* and *second persons plural* of the *Suppositive Mode*; as

{ Naumog, *If we see*: (as in *Log.*)  
{ Naumóg, *If ye see*: (as in *Vogue.*)

The other *Accent* is (^), which I call *Nasal*; and it is used onely upon (ô) when it is sounded in the Nose, as oft it is; or upon (â) for the like cause.

This is a *general Rule*, When two (oo) come together, ordinarily the *first* is *produced*; and so when two (œ) are together.

All the *Articulate sounds* and *Syllables* that ever I heard (with observation) in their Language, are sufficiently comprehended and ordered by our *Alpha-bet*, and the *Rules* here set down.

Character.	Name.	Character.	Name.
a		n	en
b	bee	o	
c	see	p	pee
ch	chee	q	keúh
d	dee	r	ar
e		f s	es
f	ef	t	tee
g	gee as in geese	u	
h		v	vf
i		w	wee
j	ji as in giant	x	ex
k	ka	y	wy
l	el	z	zad
m	em		

Here be 27 *Characters*: The reason of *increasing the number* is above.

And I have been thus far bold with the *Alpha-bet*, because it is the first time of *writing this Language*; and it is better to settle our *Foundation* right at first, than to have it to *mend afterwards*.

[p. 4.] *Musical sounds* they also have, and *perfect Harmony*, but they differ from us in *sound*.

There be four several sorts of *Sounds* or *Tones* uttered by Mankind.

1. *Articulation* in Speech.
2. *Laughter*.
3. *Lætation* and *Joy*: of which kinde of *sounds* our *Musick* and *Song* is made.
4. *Ululation*, *Howling*, *Yelling*, or *Mourning*: and of that kinde of *sound* is their *Music* and *Song* made.

In which kinde of *sound* they also *hallow* and *call*, when they are most vociferous.

And that it is thus, it may be perceived by this, that their *Language* is so full of ( $\infty$ ) and ô *Nasal*.

They have *Harmony* and *Tunes* which they sing, but the matter is not in *Meeter*.

They are much pleased to have their *Language* and *Words* in *Meeter* and *Rithme*, as it now is in *The Singing Psalms* in some poor measure, enough to *begin* and *break the ice* withall: These they sing in our *Musicall Tone*.

*So much for the Sounds and Characters,*

---

*Now follows the Consideration of Syllables, and the Art of Spelling.*

THE *formation of Syllables* in their *Language*, doth in nothing differ from the *formation of Syllables* in *English*, and other *Languages*.

When I taught our *Indians* first to lay out a *Word* into *Syllables*, and then according to the *sound* of every *Syllable* to make it up with the *right Letters*, viz. if it were a *simple sound*, then *one Vocall* made the *Syllable*:



if it were such a *sound* as required some of the *Consonants* to make it up, then the *adding* of the *right Consonants* either *before* the Vocall, or *after* it, or *both*. They quickly apprehended and understood this *Epitomie* of the *Art of Spelling*, and could soon learn to *Reade*.

The *Men, Women, and up-grown Youth* do [p. 5.] thus rationally learn to *Reade*: but the *Children* learn by *rote* and *custome*, as other *Children* do.

Such as desire to learn this Language, must be attentive to *pronounce right*, especially to produce *that Syllable* that is *first to be produced*; then they must *Spell* by Art, and accustome their *tongues* to pronounce their *Syllables* and *Words*; then learn to *reade* such *Books* as are Printed in their Language. *Legendo, Scribendo, Loquendo*, are the *three means* to learn a Language.

*So much for the Rule of Making Words.*

*Now follows the Ordering of them for Speech.*

THE several sorts of words are called *Parts of Speech*, which are in number *Seven*.

1. The *Pronoun*.
2. The *Noun*.
3. The *Adnoun* or *Adjective*.
4. The *Verb*.
5. The *Adverb*.
6. The *Conjunction*.
7. The *Interjection*.

Touching these several kindes of Words, we are to consider,

1. The *formation* of them *asunder* by themselves.
2. The *construction* of them, or the laying them together, to make *Sense*, or a *Sentence*.

And thus far *Grammar* goeth in concatenation with *Logick*: for there is a *Reason* of *Grammar*. The *laying of Sentences* together to make up a *Speech*, is performed by *Logick*: The *adorning* of that *Speech*

with *Eloquence*, is performed by *Rhetoric*. Such a *use* and *accord* there is in these *general Arts*.

In the *formation* of words *asunder* by themselves,

Consider { 1. The *general Qualifications* or *Affections*  
of words.  
2. The *Kindes* of Words.

[p. 6.]

The *Qualifications* are { 1. In respect of their *Rise* whence  
they spring.  
2. In respect of their *Consorts*,  
how they are yoked.

In respect of their Rise some are { 1. *Original words*: *sua originis*.  
2. *Ort words* sprung out of other:  
Chiefly { *Nominals*: or *Verbs*  
made out of *Nouns*.  
*Verbals*: or *Nouns* made  
out of *Verbs*.

In respect of *Consorts*, some are { *Simple words*: one alone.  
*Compound words*: when two  
or more are made into one.

This Language doth greatly delight in *Compounding* of words, for Abbreviation, to *speak much* in *few words*, though they be sometimes *long*; which is chiefly caused by the *many Syllables* which the *Grammar Rule* requires, and *suppletive Syllables* which are of no signification, and curious care of *Euphonie*.

*So much for the common Affection of words.*

---

*Now follow the severall Kindes of words.*

THERE be two { 1. *Chief leading* { *Nouns*.  
words; { *Verbs*.  
kindes: { 2. Such as *attend upon*, and belong  
unto the *chief leading words*.

Attendants on { 1. Such as are proper { *Adnouns.*  
the Chief, { to each; as { *Adverbs.*  
are { 2. Such as are of com- { *Pronouns.*  
{ mon use to both; as { *Conjunctions.*

*Independent Passions* or *Interjections* come [p. 7.] under no *Series* or *Order*, but are of use in *Speech*, to express the *passionate minde* of man.

Touching the *principal parts of Speech*, this may be said in general, That *Nouns* are the *names of Things*, and *Verbs* are the *names of Actions*; and therefore their *proper Attendants* are answerable. *Adnouns* are the *qualities of Things*, and *Adverbs* are the *qualities of Actions*.

And hence is that wise Saying, *That a Christian must be adorned with as many Adverbs as Adjectives*: He must as well *do good*, as *be good*. When a man's virtuous *Actions* are well adorned with *Adverbs*, every one will conclude that the man is well adorned with virtuous *Adjectives*.

## 1. Of the Pronoun.

BECAUSE of the common and general use of the *Pronoun* to be affixed unto both *Nouns*, *Verbs*, and other *parts of Speech*, and that in the *formation* of them; therefore that is the *first Part of Speech* to be handled.

I shall give no other description of them but this, They are such words as do express all the *persons*, both *singular* and *plural*: as

Sing.	{	Neen	<i>I.</i>		{	Neenawun or kenawun,	<i>We.</i>
	{	Ken	<i>Thou</i>		{	Kenaau	<i>Ye.</i>
	{	Noh or nagum	<i>He.</i>		{	Nahoh or Nagoh,	<i>They.</i>

There be also other *Pronouns* of frequent use :

As the *Interrogative* of *persons* : *sing.* Howan. *pl.* Howanig, *Who.*

The *Interrogative* of *things* ; { *sing.* Utiyeu, or tanyeu.  
{ *pl.* Uttiyeush, *Which.*



*Demonstratives* { of persons : { sing. Yeuh, *This or that man.* Noh.  
 { pl. Yeug, *These men.* Nag or  
 { neg, *They.*  
 { of things : { Yeu *This.* Ne *This.*  
 { Yeush *These.* Nish *These.*

[p. 8.]

*Distributives* ; as { Nawhutchee, *some.* { Tohsuog? { *How many?*  
 { Monaog, *many.* { Tohsunash {

But because these are not of use in *affixing* to other *Parts of Speech*, they may as well be reckoned among *Adnouns*, as some do ; though there is another *Schesis* upon them, and they attend upon *Verbs* as well as *Nouns*.

The *first* and *second persons* are of most use in affixing both of *Nouns* and *Verbs*, and other *Parts of Speech*.

The *third person singular* is affixed with such Syllables as *these*, Wut. wun. um. ω. &c. having respect to *Euphonie* : And sometime the *third person*, especially of *Verbs*, hath no *affix*.

These *Pronouns*, (Neen and Ken) when they are affixed, they are *contracted into* Ne and Ke, and varied in the *Vocal* or *Vowel* according to *Euphonie*, with the word it is affixed unto ; as Nω, Kω, &c.

If the word unto which it is affixed begin with a *Vocal*, then a *Consonant* of a fitting sound is interposed, to couple the *word* and his *affix* with an *Euphonie* ; as Nut. kut. num. kum, &c.

I give not *Examples* of these Rules, because they will be so obvious anon, when you see *Nouns* and *Verbs affixed*.

## 2. Of a Noun.

A *NOUN* is a *Part of Speech* which signifieth a *thing* ; or it is the *name of a thing*.

The *variation* of *Nouns* is not by *Male* and *Female*, as in other Learned Languages, and in *European Nations* they do.

Nor are they *varied* by *Cases*, *Cadencies*, and *Endings*: herein they are more like to the *Hebrew*.

Yet there seemeth to be one *Cadency* or *Case* of the *first Declination* of the form *Animate*, which endeth in *oh*, *uh*, or *ah*; viz. when an *animate Noun* followeth a *Verb transitive* whose *object* that he acteth upon is *without himself*. For Example: *Gen.* 1. 16. the last word is *anogqsog*, stars. It is an *Erratum*: it should be *anogqsoh*; because it followeth the Verb *ayim*, He made. Though it be an *Erratum* in the Press, it is the fitter in some respects for an Example. [p. 9.]

In *Nouns*, { 1. *Genera*, or *kindes* of Nouns.  
consider { 2. The *qualities* or *affections* thereof.

The *kindes* of Nouns are *two*; according to which there be *two Declensions* of Nouns, for the variation of the number.

*Numbers* are two: *Singular* and *Plural*.

The first *kinde* of Nouns is, when the *thing signified* is a *living Creature*.

The second *kinde* is, when the *thing signified* is not a *living Creature*.

Therefore I order them thus:

There be two *forms* or *declensions* { *Animate*.  
of Nouns: { *Inanimate*.

The *Animate form* or *declension* is, when the *thing signified* is a living Creature; and such Nouns do alwayes make their Plural in (*og*); as,

Wosketomp, *Man*. Wosketompaog. (*a*) is but for *Euphonie*.

Mittamwossis, *A Woman*. Mittamwossissog.

Nunkomp, *A young Man*. Nunkompaog.

Nunksqau, *A Girl*. Nunksqauog.

Englishman. Englishmanog.

Englishwoman. Englishwomanog.

So Manit, *God*. Manitioog.

Mattannit, *The Devil*. Mattannittoog.

So Ox, Oxesog. Horse, Horsesog.

*The Stars they put in this form.*

Anogqs, *A Star.* Anogqsog.  
 Muhhog; *The Body.* Muhhogkoog.  
 Psukses, *A little Bird.* Psuksesog.  
 Ahtuk, *A Deer.* Ahtuhquog.  
 Mukquoshim, *A Wolf.* Mukquoshimwog.  
 Mosq, *A Bear.* Mosquog.  
 Tummunk, *The Beaver.* Tummunkquaog.  
 Puppinashim, *A Beast.* Puppinashimwog.  
 Askcook, *A Snake or Worm.* Askcookquog.  
 Namohs, *A Fish.* Namohsog. &c.

*Some few exceptions I know.*

[p. 10.] 2. *The Inanimate form or declension of Nouns*, is when the *thing signified* is not a living Creature : and these make the Plural in *ash* ; as

Hussun, *A Stone.* Hussunash.  
 Qussuk, *A Rock.* Qussukquanash.

*Of this form are all Vegetables:*

Mehtug, *A Tree.* Mehtugquash.  
 Moskeht, *Grass.* Mosketuash.

*And of this form are all the parts of the Body :* as

Muskesuk, *The Eye or Face.* Muskesukquash.  
 Mehtauog, *An Ear.* Mehtauogwash.  
 Meepit, *A Tooth.* Meepitash.  
 Meenan, *The Tongue.* Meenanash.  
 Mussissittoon, *A Lip.* Mussissittoonash.  
 Muttoon, *A Mouth.* Muttoonash.  
 Menutheg, *A Hand.* Menuthegash.  
 Muhpit, *An Arm.* Muhpittenash.  
 Muhkont, *A Leg.* Muhkontash.  
 Musseet, *The Foot.* Musseetash.

*Of this form are all Virtues, and all Vices :* as

Waantamoonk, *Wisdom.* Waantamooongash, or onganash.

All *Verbals* are of this form, which end in *onk*, and make their Plural in *ongash*, or in *onganash*.



All *Virtues* and *Vices* (so far as at present I discern) are *Verbals*, from their *activity* and *readiness* to turn into *Verbs*.

All *Tools* and *Instruments* of *Labour*, *Hunting*, *Fishing*, *Fowling*, are of this form. All *Apparel*, *Housing*: All *Fruits*, *Rivers*, *Waters*, &c.

*So much for the kindes of Nounes.*

The *common Affections* or *Qualifications* are two :

- { 1. The *affixing* of the *Noun* with the *Pronoun*.
- { 2. The *ranging* them into several *Ranks*.

1. The way of *affixing* of Nouns, is the putting or using of the Noun in all the *three persons*, both Singular and Plural. [p. 11.]

This *manner of speech* being a new thing to us that know the *European* or *Western Languages*, it must be demonstrated to us by *Examples*.

Metah, *the Heart*.

Sing.	{	Nuttah, <i>my heart</i> .	} Pl.	{	Nuttahhun, <i>our heart</i> .	
		Kuttah, <i>thy heart</i> .				Kuttahhou, <i>your heart</i> .
		Wuttah, <i>his heart</i> .				Wuttahhou, <i>their heart</i> .

Menutcheg, *A Hand*.

Sing.	{	Nunnutcheg, <i>my hand</i> .	} Pl.	{	Nunnutheganun, <i>our hand</i> .	
		Kenutcheg, <i>thy hand</i> .				Kenutheganoo, <i>your hand</i> .
		Wunnutcheg, <i>his hand</i> .				Wunnutheganoo, <i>their hand</i> .

Sing.	{	Nunnutheganash, <i>my hands</i> .	{	Nunnutheganunnonut, <i>our hands</i> .
		Kenuthegash, or kenutheganash, <i>thy hands</i> .		Kenutheganowout, <i>your hands</i> .
		Wunnuthegash, or wunnutheganash, <i>his hands</i> .		Wunnutheganowout, <i>their hands</i> .

Pl.	{	Nunnutheganunnonut, <i>our hands</i> .	{	Nunnutheganunnonut, <i>our hands</i> .
		Kenutheganowout, <i>your hands</i> .		Kenutheganowout, <i>your hands</i> .
		Wunnutheganowout, <i>their hands</i> .		Wunnutheganowout, <i>their hands</i> .

Wétu, *A House*.

Sing.	{	Neek, <i>my house</i> .	} Pl.	{	Neekun, <i>our house</i> .	
		Keek, <i>thy house</i> .				Keekou, <i>your house</i> .
		Week, <i>his house</i> .				Weekou, <i>their house</i> .

ut, in.)

Sing. { Neekit, in my house. }  
 { Keekit, in thy house. } Pl. { Neekunonut, in our house.  
 { Weekit, in his house. } { Keekuwoot, in your house.  
 { Weekuwout, or wekuwomut, [in his house.

Hence we corrupt this word Wigwam.

*So much may at present suffice for the affixing of Nouns.*

[p. 12.] *Now for the ranging them into ranks.*

There be *three Ranks* of Nouns; { The *Primitive*.  
 { The *Diminutive*.  
 { The *Possessive*.

The same *Noun* may be used in all these *Ranks*.

The *primitive Rank* expresses *the thing as it is*; as Nunkomp, *a Youth*. Nunksqua, *a Girl*. Ox. Sheep. Horse. Pig. So Hassun, *a stone*. Mehtug, *a tree*. Moskeht, *grass or herb*.

2. The *diminutive Rank* of Nouns doth *lessen the thing*, and expresses it to be *a little one*; and it is formed by *adding*, with a due Euphonic (*es*) or (*emes*) unto the *primitive Noun*. For example, I shall use the same Nouns named in the *first Rank*, here in the *second Rank*: as Nunkomp<sup>es</sup> or <sup>emes</sup>. Nunksqua<sup>es</sup>, or <sup>emes</sup>. Ox<sup>emes</sup>. Sheep<sup>emes</sup>. Horse<sup>emes</sup>. Pig<sup>emes</sup>. Hassun<sup>emes</sup>. Mehtug<sup>ques</sup>, or Mehtugqu<sup>emes</sup>. Moskehtu<sup>emes</sup>.

And so far as I perceive, these two endings (*es* and (*emes*) are degrees of *diminution*: (*emes*) is the least.

3. The *possessive Rank* of Nouns, is when the *person* doth challenge an interest in the *thing*. Hence, as the other *Ranks* may be *affixed*, this must be *affixed with the Pronoun*.

And it is made by *adding the Syllable* (eum or oom, or um) according to Euphonic, unto the affixed Noun. For Example: Num-Manittoom, *my God*. Nuttineneum, *my man*. Nunnunkompoom. Nunnunksqua<sup>eum</sup>. Nutoxineum. Nusheepseum. Nuthorsesum. Nuppigsum.

Nuthassunneum. Nummehtugkoom. Nummoskehteum.  
Nummoskehteumash.

Both the *primitive Noun*, and the *diminutive Noun*, may be used in the form *possessive*; as *Nutsheepseme-seum*, and the like.

*Nouns* may be turned into *Verbs* two ways :

1. By turning the Noun into the Verb-substantive form : as *Wosketompoo*, *He became a man*. Of this see more in the *Verb Substantive*.

2. All *Nouns* that end in *onk*, as they come [p. 13.] from *Verbs* by adding (*onk*), so they will turn back again into *Verbs*, by taking away (*onk*) and forming the word according to the Rule of *Verbs* ; as

*Waantamoonk* is *Wisdom* : take away *onk*, and then it may be formed *Noowaantam*, *I am wise*. *Koowaantam*, *Thou wise*, &c.  
*Waantam*, *He wise*, &c.

### 3. Of *Adnouns*.

AN *Adnoun* is a part of *Speech* that attendeth upon a *Noun*, and signifieth the *Qualification* thereof.

The *Adnoun* is capable of both the *Animate* and *Inanimate* forms : and it agreeth with his leading *Noun*, in *form*, *number*, and *person*.

For example: *Rev. 4. 4 there is Neesneechagkodtash nabo yau appuongash, Twenty-four Thrones. And Neesneechagkodtog yauog Eldersog, Twenty-four Elders*. Here be two *Nouns* of the two several forms, *Animate* and *Inanimate*; and the same *Adnoun* is made to agree with them both.

The *Inanimate* form of *Adnouns* end some in *i*, and some in *e*.



The *Animate* form in *es*, or *esu* : and those are turned into *Verbs* by taking the *affix*. As

Wompi, *White*. Wompiyeuash.  
 Mooi, *Black*. Møeseuash.  
 Menuhki, *Strong*. Menuhkiyeuash.  
 Nøochumwi, *Weak*. Nøochumwiyeuash.

*The same words in the Animate form :*

Wompesu. Wompesuog.  
 Møesu. Møesuog.  
 Menuhkesu. Menuhkesuog.  
 Nøochumwesu. Nøochumwesuog.

*Put the affix to these, and they are Verbs.*

[p. 14.] NUMERALS belong unto *Adnouns*, and in them there is something remarkable.

From the number 5 and upward, they *adde a worde suppletive*, which signifieth nothing, but receiveth the Grammatical variation of the *Declension*, according to the *things* numbered, *Animate* or *Inanimate*. The *Additional* is (*tohsú*) or (*tahshé*), which is varied (*tohsúog*, *tohsúash*, or *tohshinash*.)

For Example :

- |   |                                    |
|---|------------------------------------|
| 1 <i>Negut.</i>                           | 6 <i>Negutta tahshe.</i>           |
| 2 <i>Neese.</i>                           | 7 <i>Nesausuk tahshe.</i>          |
| 3 <i>Nish.</i>                            | 8 <i>Shwosuk tahshe.</i>           |
| 4 <i>Yau.</i>                             | 9 <i>Paskoogun tahshe.</i>         |
| 5 <i>Napanna tahshe</i> { <i>tohsuog.</i> | 10 <i>Piuk. Piukqussuog, Piuk-</i> |
| { <i>tohsuash.</i>                        | <i>qussuash.</i>                   |

Then from 10 to 20 they *adde* afore the Numeral (*nab* or *nabo*) and then it is not needful to *adde the following additional*, though sometimes they do it.

## As for Example :

11 <i>Nabo nequt.</i>	16 <i>Nabo nequtta.</i>
12 <i>Nabo neese.</i>	17 <i>Nabo nesausuk.</i>
13 <i>Nabo nish.</i>	18 <i>Nabo shwosuk.</i>
14 <i>Nabo yau.</i>	19 <i>Nabo paskoogun.</i>
15 <i>Nabo napanna.</i>	20 <i>Neesneechag</i> { <i>kodtog.</i> <i>kodtash.</i>

Then *upwards* they *adde* to *Neesneechag*, the *single Numbers* to 30, &c.

30 <i>Nishwinchag.</i>	<i>kodtog, kodtash.</i>	
40 <i>Nauunchag,</i>	<i>kodtog, kodtash.</i>	
50 <i>Napannatahshinchag</i>	<i>kodtog, kodtash.</i>	
60 <i>Nequtta tahshinchag</i>	<i>kodtog, kodtash.</i>	
70 <i>Nesausuk tahshinchag</i>	<i>kodtog, kodtash.</i>	
80 <i>Shwosuk tahshinchag</i>	<i>kodtog, kodtash.</i>	[p. 15.]
90 <i>Paskoogun tahshinchag</i>	<i>kodtog, kodtash,</i>	
100 <i>Nequt pasuk</i>	<i>kooog. kooash.</i>	
1000 <i>Nequt muttannonganog</i>	{ <i>kodtog.</i> <i>kodtash.</i> }	or { <i>kussuog.</i> <i>kussuash.</i>

The *Adnoun* is frequently *compounded* with the *Noun*, and then usually they are *contracted*: as

Womposketomp, *A white man.*

Mosketomp, *A black man.*

Menuhkoshketomp, *A strong man.*

Menuhkekont, *A strong leg.* Qunuhtug, *of gunni, long.*

Mehtug, *Wood or Tree.* And this word is used for *a Pike.*

When the *Noun* becometh a *Verb*, then the *Adnoun* becometh an *Adverb*.

There is no form of *comparison* that I can yet finde, but *degrees* are expressed by a word signifying *more*: as Anue menuhkesu, *More strong*: And Nano *More and more.* Moecheke, *Much.* Peesik or Peasik, *Small.*

#### 4. *Of the Verb.*

A VERB is when *the thing signified is an Action.*

There be two sorts of Verbs. The Verb  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Substantive.} \\ \textit{Active.} \end{array} \right.$

The *Verb Substantive*, is when any thing hath *the signification of the Verb Substantive added to it*: as (*am, art, is, are, was, were*) &c. *Actuall being* is above the nature of a *Noun*, and beneath the nature of a *Verb Active*.

We have no compleat distinct word for the *Verb Substantive*, as other *Learned Languages*, and our *English Tongue* have, but it is under a *regular composition* whereby *many words* are made *Verb Substantive*.

[p. 16.] All may be referred to *three sorts*, so far as yet I see.

1. The *first sort of Verb Substantives* is made by *adding any of these Terminations to the word*, *yeuω, aω, oω*; with due *Euphonie*: And this is so, be the word a *Noun*; as *Wosketompω, He is a man*: Or *Adnoun*; as *Wompiyeuω, It is white*: Or be the word an *Adverb*, or the like; as *James 5. 12. Mattayeuωutch, Let it be nay*: *Nuxyeuωutch, Let it be yea*. The words in the *Text* are spelled with respect to *pronunciation*, more than to *Grammaticall composition*: here I spell them with respect to *Grammaticall composition*. See more Examples of this, *Exod. 4. 3, 4, 6, 7*.

2. The *second sort of Verb Substantives* is when the *animate Adnoun* is made *the third person of the Verb*, and so *formed as a Verb*: as *Wompesu, White*: *Menuhkesu, Strong*; may be *formed as a Verb*: *Nōwompes, Kōwompes, Wompesu*. And so the like words.

And of *this sort* are all *Adnouns of Vertue or Vice*: as *Waantam, Wise*: *Assōtu, Foolish*, &c.

Whatever is *affirmed to be*, or *denied to be*, or if it be *asked if it be*, or expressed to be *made to be*; All such words may be *Verb Substantives*. I say, *may be*, because



there be *other wayes* in the Language to express such a sense by. But it *may be thus*.

3. The *third sort* are *Verb Substantive passive*, when the *Verb Substantive* (*am, is, was, &c.*) is so annexed to a *Verb Active*, that the *person affixed* is the *object of the act* : as Nōwadchanit, *I am kept*.

*So much for the Verb Substantive.*

---

*Now followeth the Verb Active.*

A *Verb Active* is when the word signifieth a *compleat action*, or a *casuall power exerted*.

*Verbs inceptive* or *inchoatives*, I find not; such a *notion* is expressed by *another word added to the Verb*, which signifieth *to begin*, or *to be about to do it*.

Also when the *Action* is *doubled*, or *frequented*, &c. this *notion* hath not a *distinct form*, but is expressed by *doubling the first Syllable* of the *word* : as Mohmoelog, *they oft met*; Sasabbath-dayeu, *every Sabbath*. [p. 17.]

There be *two sorts* or *forms* of *Verbs Active* :

- { 1. The *Simple form*.
- { 2. The *Suffix form*.

The *Simple form* of the *Verb Active*, is when the *act* is *conversant* about a *Noun inanimate* onely : as

Nōwadchanumunneek, *I keep my house*.

And this *Verb* may take the *form* of an *Adnoun* : as

Nōwadchanumunash nōwéatchimineash, *I keep my corn*.

Or every *person* of this *Verb*, at least in the *Indicative Mode*, will admit the *plural Number* of the *Noun inanimate*.

The *Suffix form* of the *Verb Active*, is when the *act* is *conversant* about *animate Nouns* onely; or about both *animate* and *inanimate* also : as

Kōwadchansh, *I keep thee*.

Kōwadchanumoush, *I keep it for thee*.

There be *five Concordances* of the *Suffix form Active*, wherein the Verb doth receive a *various formation*. I think there be some more, but I have beat out no more.

The reason why I call them *Concordances*, is, Because the *chief weight* and *strength* of the *Syntaxis* of this Language, lyeth in this eminent manner of *formation* of *Nouns* and *Verbs*, with the *Pronoun persons*.

1. The *first Concordance* is, when the *object* of the *act* is an *animate Noun*. I call it, *The Suffix animate object* : as

Koowadchansh, *I keep thee.*

2. The *Suffix animate mutual* : when *animates* are each others *object* : as

Noowadchanittimun, *We keep each other.*

This *form* ever wanteth the *singular Number*.

3. The *Suffix animate end*, and *inanimate object* : as

Koowadchanumoush, *I keep it for thee ; or, for thy use.*

[p: 18.] 4. The *Suffix animate form social* : as

Kooweechewadchanumwomsh, *I keep it with thee.*

5. The *Suffix form advocate* or *in stead form*, when one acteth in the *room* or *stead* of another : as

Koowadchanumwanshun, *I keep it for thee ; I act in thy stead.*

This *form* is of great use in *Theologie*, to express what Christ *hath done for us* : as

Nunnuppoowonuk, *He died for me.*

Kenuppoowonuk, *He died for thee.*

Kenuppoowonukqun, *He died for us.*

Kenuppoowonukwo, *He died for you.* &c.

All these forenamed *forms of Verbs*, both *Verb Substantives* and *Verbs Active*, both *Simple* and *Suffix*, may be *varied* under three *distinct forms of variation*; viz.

- { *Affirmative* ; when the *act* is *affirmed*.
- { *Negative* : when the *act* is *denied*.
- { *Interrogative* : when the *act* is *question'd*.

Again, many of these *forms* may also be varied in a *form causative*, in all cases where the *efficient* is capable to be *compelled*, or *caused to act*.

All these will be more conspicuous in the *Paradigms*, or *Examples*.

To make *complete work*, I should set down many examples.

But I shall (at present) set down onely two examples: One of the *Simple form Active*, which may generally serve for all the *Verb Substantives*.

The *second Example* of the *Suffix animate form*, which may generally serve for all the *Concordances* of *Verbs suffixed*. Even as the *Meridian* of *Boston* may generally serve for all *New-England*: And the *Meridian* of *London* may generally serve for all *England*.

And these will be enough to busy the heads of *Learners* for a while.

Note this, That *all Verbs* cannot be formed [p. 19.] through *all these forms*, but such *Verbs* as in reason of *Speech* are *useable all these ways*, which sundry *Verbs* are not; as, *I sleep, eat, piss, &c.*

Before I come to the *Paradigms*, there be other general considerations about *Verbs*.

In *Verbs* consider { 1. Divers *Modes* of the *action*.  
2. Divers *Times* of the *action*.

First, The *Modes* of *actions* in this language are *five*.

1. The *Indicative*, *Demonstrative*, or *Interrogative Mode*, which doth fully *assert the action* or *deny it*, or *enquire* if it be asserted:

As { Noowadchanumun, *I do keep it*.  
Noowadchanumoun, *I do not keep it*.  
Noowadchanumunas, *Do I keep it?*

2. The *Imperative*, or *Hortative*, or *Praying* and *Blessing Mode*, is when the *action* is *Commanded*, or *Exhorted*



to be done, or *Prayed* for. When a Superiour speaks in this *Mode*, he *commands*. When an Inferiour speaks in this *Mode*, he *prays* and *intreats*. When a minister speaks in this *Mode*, he *exhorts*, and *blesseth*.

Wadchansh, *Keep thou.*

Wadchaneh, *Keep me.*

3. The *Optative*, *Wishing*, or *Desiring Mode*, when one desireth the *action to be done* : as

Noowaadchanumun toh, *I wish or desire to keep it.*

4. The *Subjunctive*, or rather the *Supposing*, or *Suppositive Mode*, when the *action* is onely *supposed to be* ; as in these three expressions :

{ *If it be.*  
 { *When it is.*  
 { *It being.*

And this third *sense* and *meaning* of this *Mode* of the Verb, doth turn this *Mode* into a *Participle*, like an *Ad-noun*, very frequently.

[p. 20.] 5. The *Indefinite Mode*, which doth onely assert the action without *limitation* of *person* or *time* ; and it is made of the *Indicative Mode* by adding the termination (*át*) and taking away the *suffix* : as

Wadchanumunat, *To keep.*

There is another *Mode of the Verb* in reason of speech, and in some other Languages, viz. The *Potential*, which doth render the action in a *possibility to be*. But this Language hath not such a *Mode*, but that *notion* is expressed by a word signifying (*may*) to the *Indicative Mode*. The usual word with us is (*woh*) *may* or *can*.

All these *Modes of the Verb* are *timed* by *Tenses*, saving the *Indefinite Mode*, and that is *unlimited*.

The *times* are two ; *Present*, and *Past*. The *time to come* is expressed by a word signifying *futurity*, added to the *Indicative Mode*, as (*mos*, *pish*, *shall*, or *will*).

In the *Roman Language* there do belong unto this *Indefinite Mode*, *gerundive*, *lofty*, and *vapouring* Expressions; also *supine*, *sluggish*, *dull*, and *sunk-hearted* Expressions. And though the spirit of this People, viz. the *vapouring pride* of some, and the *dull-hearted supinity* of others, might dispose them to such words and expressions, yet I cannot find them out.

As *Nouns* are often turned into *Verbs*, so *Verbs* are often turned into *Nouns*; and a frequent way of it is, by adding (*onk*) to the *Verb*: as

Nōowompes, *I am white.*

Kōowompes, *Thou art white.*

Nōowompesuonk, *My whiteness.*

Kōowompesuonk, *Thy whiteness.*

Every *person of the Verb* that is capable of such a *change* in the reason of *Speech*, may so be turned into a *Noun* singular or plural.

Before I set down the Examples of *Formation of Verbs*, I will finish a few *Observations* about the remaining *Parts of Speech*.

[p. 21.]

## 5. Of *Adverbs*.

AN *Adverb* is a word that *attendeth* upon the *Verb*, and signifieth *the quality of the action*, by *Extension*, *Diminution*, *Rectitude*, *Curvation*, *Duration*, *Cessation*, &c. according to the various qualities of all sorts of actions.

*Adverbs* do usually end in (*è* or *u*), as *wame* or *wamu*, All: *Menuhke* or *Menuhku*, Strongly.

The several sorts of *Adverbs* (according as Learned Grammarians have gathered them together) are

1. *Of time*. Yeueu, *Now*. Wunnonkou, *Yesterday*. Saup, *To morrow*. Ahquompak, *When*. Paswu, *Lately*.

Nôadtuk, *A long time.* Teanuk, *Presently.* Kut-  
tumma, *Very lately.*

2. *Of place.* Uttiyeu, *Where.* Naut, *There.* Anomut, *Within.* Woskeche, *Without.* Onkoue, *Beyond.* Negonnu, *First.* Wuttât, *Behinde.*

3. *Of order.* Negonnu, *First.* Nahohtôeu, *Second.* Nishwu, *Third, &c.*

4. *Of Asking.* Sun, Sunnummatta; *Is it?* or *Is it not?* Tohwutch, *Why.*

5. *Of Calling.* Hoh. Chuh.

6. *Affirming.* Nux, *Yea.* Wunnamuhkut, *Truely.*

7. *Denying.* Matta, Matchaog, *No.* Also Mo sometimes signifieth *No.* They have no *Adverbs of Swearing*, nor any *Oath*, that I can yet finde: onely we teach them to Swear before a Magistrate *By the great and dreadful name of the Lord.* The word we make for *swearing*, signifieth to *speak vehemently.*

8. *Of exhorting or Encouraging.* Ehhoh, Hah.

9. *Of Forbidding.* Ahque, *Beware, Do not.*

10. *Of Wishing.* Woi, Napehnont, *Oh that it were.* Toh.

11. *Of Gathering together.* Moeu, *Together.* Yeu nogque, *This way-ward.* Ne nogque, *That way-ward.* Kesukquieu, *Heaven-ward.* Ohkeiyeu, *Earth-ward.*

12. *Of Choosing.* Anue, *More rather.* Teaogku, *Rather, unfinished.* Nahen, *Almost.* Asquam, *not yet.*

[p. 22.] 13. *Of Continuation.* Ash, *Still.*

14. *Of Shewing.* Kusseh, *Behold.*

15. *Of Doubting.* Pagwodche, *It may be.* Toh, *It may be.*

16. *Of Likeness.* Netatup, *Like so.* Nemehkuh, *So.* Neane, *As.*

17. *Of unexpected Hap.* Tiadche, *Unexpectedly.*

18. *Of Quality.* Wunnegen. Matchet. Waantamwe, &c.

*Of this kinde are all Virtues and Vices, &c.*

*Adverbs* are oft turned into *Adnouns*, especially when his *Verb* is turned into a *Noun*.



## 6. Of the Conjunction.

A *Conjunction* is a Part of Speech to joyn *Words* and *Sentences*: As

*Causatives.* Wutch, wutche, newutche. *For, from, because.* Yeu waj, *For this cause.*

*Disjunctives.* Asuh, *Or.*

*Discretives.* Qut, *But.*

*Suppositives.* Tohneit, *If.*

*Exceptives.* Ishkont, *Least.* Chaubohkish, *Except, or besides.* Kuttumma, *Unless.*

*Diversatives.* Tohkônogque, *Although.*

*Of Possibility.* Woh, *May or Can.*

*Of Place.* In, en, ut, át. *In, At or To.*

## 7. Of Interjections.

AN *Interjection* is a *word* or *sound* that uttereth the *passion of the minde*, without dependance on other words.

*Of Sorrow.* Woi, œwee.

*Of Marvelling.* Hó, hœ.

*Of Disdaining.* Quah.

*Of Encouraging.* Hah, Ehoh.

There be also *suppletive Syllables* of no signi- [p. 23.]  
fication, but for *ornament* of the word: as *tit, tin, tinne*; and these in way of an *Elegancy*, receive the *affix* which belongeth to the *Noun* or *Verb* following; as *nuttit, kuttit, wuttit, nuttin, kuttin, wuttin, nuttinne, kuttinne, wuttinne.*

Other Languages have their *significant suppletives* for *Elegancy*: and some of our English Writers begin so to use [*Why*], but I conceive it to be a mistake. Our *suppletive* is rather [*Weh*], and [*Why*] is a *significant word*. It oft puts the Reader to this inconvenience, to stay and look whether it be significant or not;

and some are *stumbled* at it. It is seldome an *Elegancy*, to make a significant word a meer suppletive.

*So much for the formation of words asunder.*

*For the Construction of words together, I will give three short Rules.*

1. WHEN *two Nouns come together*, one of them is turned into a kinde of an *Adverb*, or *Adnoun*, and that is an *Elegancy* in the Language: of which see frequent Examples. See 1 *Pet.* 2. 2. Pahke sogkodontungane wuttinnowaonk, *The pure milkie word*, for *milk of the word*. The like may be observed a thousand times.

2. When *two Verbs come together*, the latter is the *Infinitive Mode*: as in the same 1 *Pet.* 2. 5. Kōweekik-onitteamwō sephausinat. *Ye are built, &c. to sacrifice, &c.* And a thousand times more this Rule occurs.

3. When a *Noun* or a *Verb* is attended upon with an *Adnoun*, or *Adverb*, the *affix* which belongeth to the *Noun* or *Verb* is *prefixed* to the *Adnoun* or *Adverb*; as in the same Chapter, 1 *Pet.* 2. 9. Ummonchanatamwe wequaiyeumut, *His Marvellous light*: The affix of *Light* is prefixed to *marvellous*. Kōwaantamwe ketōhkam. *Thou speakest wisely*: The affix of *speaking* is prefixed to *wisely*. This is a frequent *Elegancy* in the Language.

But the manner of the *formation* of the *Nouns* and *Verbs* have such a *latitude of use*, that there needeth little other *Syntaxis* in the Language.

[p. 24.] I shall now set down *Examples of Verbs*: and first of the *Simple form*. And here

First, I shall set down a *Verb Active*, whose object is *Inanimate*:

as Nōwadchanumun, *I keep it.* (Be it tool or garment.)

And secondly, I shall set down a *Verb Substantive*:

as Nōwaantam, *I am wise.*

Both these I shall set down *Parallel* in two Columes.

*The form Affirmative.**Indicative Mode.*

Present tense.

*I keep it.*

Sing.	{	Nōwadchanumun
		Kōwadchanumun ōwadchanumun.
Plur.	{	Nōwadchanumumun
		Kōwadchanumumwō Wadchanumwog.

Present tense.

*I am wise.*

Sing.	{	Nōwaantam
		Kōwaantam Waantam noh.
Plur.	{	Nōwaantamumun
		Kōwaantamumwō Waantamwog.

*Præter tense.*

Sing.	{	Nōwadchanumunap
		Kōwadchanumunap ōwadchanumunap.
Pl.	{	Nōwadchanumumunnōnup
		Kōwadchanumumwop Wadchanumuppanneg : or ōwadchanummuāop.

*Præter tense.*

Sing.	{	Nōwaantamup
		Kōwaantamup Waantamup.
pl.	{	Nōwaantamumunnōnup
		Kōwaantamumwop Waantamuppanneg.

The *Imperative Mode*, when it *Commands* or *Exhorts* it wanteth the *first person singular* : but when we *Pray* in this *Mode*, as alwayes we do, then it hath the *first person* ; as, *Let me be wise* ; but there is no formation of the word to express it ; yet it may be expressed by adding this word unto the *Indicative Mode* [p. 25.] [pâ], as, Pânōwaantam, *Let me be wise*. Our usual formation of the *Imperative Mode* is without the *first person singular*, casting away the *affix*.

*Imperative Mode.*

Present tense.

Sing.	{	Wadchanish
		Wadchanitch.
plur.	{	Wadchanumuttuh
		Wadchanumook Wadchanumahettich.

Present tense.

Sing.	{	Waantash
		Waantaj.
plur.	{	Waantamuttuh
		Waantamook Waantamohettich.

The *Imperative Mode* cannot admit of any other *time* than the *Present*.



### The Optative Mode.

#### Present tense.

*Sing.* { Nōwáadchánūmun-toh  
Kōwáadchanūmun-toh  
ōwáadchanūmun-toh.

*plur.* { Nōwáadchanūmunnan-toh  
Kōwáadchanūmunnan-toh  
ōwáadchanūmuneau-toh.

#### Present tense.

*Sing.* { Nōwáaantamūn-toh  
Kōwáaantamūn-toh  
ōwáaantamūn-toh.

*pl.* { Nōwáaantamūnan-toh  
Kōwáaantamūneau-toh  
ōwáaantamūneau-toh.

#### Præter tense.

*Sing.* { Nōwáadchanūmunaz-toh  
Kōwáadchanūmunaz-toh  
ōwáadchanūmunaz-toh.

#### Plu.

{ Nōwáadchanūmunannonuz-toh  
Kōwáadchanūmunāōuz-toh  
ōwáadchanūmunāōuz-toh.

#### Præter tense.

*S.* { Nōwáaantamūnaz-toh  
Kōwáaantamūnaz-toh  
ōwáaantamūnaz-toh.

#### Plu.

{ Nōwáaantamūnāōiz-toh  
Kōwáaantamūnāōiz-toh  
ōwáaantamūnāōiz-toh.

*It seems their desires are slow, but strong ;  
Because they be utter'd double-breath't, and long.*

[p. 26.]

*The Suppositive Mode : which usually flats the first  
Vocal and laves by the affix.*

#### Present tense.

*Sing.* { Wadchanūmon  
Wadchanūman  
Wadchanuk.

*plur.* { Wadchanūmog  
Wadchanūmóg  
Wadchanūmahettit.

#### Present tense.

*Sing.* { Waantamūn  
Waantaman  
Waantog.

*plur.* { Waantamog  
Waantamóg  
Waantamohettit.

#### Præter tense.

*Sing.* { Wadchanūmos  
Wadchanūmōsa  
Wadchanukis.

*plur.* { Wadchanūmogkus  
Wadchanūmógkus  
Wadchanūmahettis.

#### Præter tense.

*Sing.* { Waantamūnos  
Waantamas  
Waantogkis.

*plur.* { Waantamogkis  
Waantamógkis  
Waantamohettis.

The *Indefinite Mode*.

Wadchanumunát

Waantamunát.

*Indicative Mode.* The form *Negative*, which is varied from the *Affirmative* by interposing [∞].

*Present tense.**Present tense.*

*Sing.* { Nōwadchanumcoun  
Kōwadchanumcoun  
cōwadchanumcoun.  
*plur.* { Nōwadchanumcounnonup  
Kōwadchanumcōwop  
Wadchanumcōog.

*Sing.* { Nōwaantamcōh  
Kōwaantamcōh  
Waantamcōh.  
*plur.* { Nōwaantamcōmun  
Kōwaantamcōmwo  
Waantamcōog.

*Præter tense.**Præter tense.*

*Sing.* { Nōwadchanumcōunap  
Kōwadchanumcōunap  
cōwadchanumcōunap.

*Sing.* { Nōwaantamcōp  
Kōwaantamcōp  
cōwaantamop.

*Plu.**Plu.*

{ Nōwadchanumcōunnonup  
Kōwadchanumcōwop  
Wadchanumcōpanneg.

{ Nōwaantamcōmunnonup  
Kōwaantamcōmwo  
Waantamcōpanneg.

[p. 27.]

The *Imperative Mode* of the *Negative simple form*.

*Present tense.**Present tense.*

*Sing.* { Wadchanuhkon  
Wadchanuhkitch.  
*plur.* { Wadchanumcōuttuh  
wadchanumcōhteók  
wadchanumohettekitch.

*Sing.* { Waantukon  
Waantukitch.  
*plur.* { Waantamcōuttuh  
waantamcōhteók  
waantamohettekitch.

The *Optative Mode* is of seldome use, and very difficult, therefore I pass it by.

*The Suppositive Mode of the Simple form.*

<i>Present tense.</i>		<i>Present tense.</i>	
<i>Sing.</i>	{ Wadchanumcoun Wadchanumcan Wadchanocg.	<i>Sing.</i>	{ Waantamcoun Waantamcan Waantamocg.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Wadchanumcog Wadchanumcog Wadchanumcāhettit, or cāhetteg.]	<i>Plur.</i>	{ Waantamcog Waantamcog Waantamcāhettit, or cāhetteg.]
<i>Præter tense.</i>		<i>Præter tense.</i>	
<i>Sing.</i>	{ Wadchanumcos Wadchanumcosa Wadchanumcogkis.	<i>Sing.</i>	{ Waantamcos Waantamcos Waantamcogkis.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Wadchanumcogkus Wadchanumcogkus Wadchanumcāhettis.	<i>Plur.</i>	{ Waantamcogkus Waantamcogkus Waantamcāhettis.

*The Indefinite Mode of the Simple form Negative.*

Wadchanumcounát

Waantamcounát.

The *Simple form Interrogative*, is formed onely in the *Indicative Mode* : All *Questions* are always asked in this *Mode of the Verb*, and in no other ; and it is *formed* by adding [ús] to the *Affirmative*.

*Indicative Mode.*

<i>Present tense.</i>		<i>Present tense.</i>	
<i>Sing.</i>	{ Nōwadchanumunás Kōwadchanumunás cōwadchanumunāous	<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nōwadchanumunnanonus Kōwadchanumunnaous cōwadchanumunnaous Nag.



The *Suffix form animate Affirmative.*

Here I carry in a *Parallel* our *English Verb* (Pay) that so any may distinguish betwixt what is *Grammar*, and what belongs to the word. And remember ever to pronounce (pay), because else you will be ready to read it (pau). Also remember, that (Paum) is the radical word, and all the rest is *Grammar*. In this remarkable way of speech, the *Efficient of the Act*, and the *Object*, and sometimes the *End* also, are in a regular composition comprehended in the *Verb*: and there is no more difficulty in it, when use hath brought our *Notion* to it, than there is in other *Languages*, if so much.

## Indicative Mode. Present tense.

1 sing.	I keep thee, Kōowadchansh. I keep him, Nōowadchan. I keep you, Kōowadchanunumwō. I keep them, Nōowadchanōog.	1 plur.	I pay thee, Kuppāumush. I pay him, Nuppayum. I pay you, Kuppāumunumwō. I pay them, Nuppāumōog.
2 sing.	Thou keepest me, Kōowadchaneh. Thou keepest him, Kōowadchan. Thou keepest us, Kōowadchanimun. Thou keepest them, Kōowadchanoog.	2 plur.	Thou payest me, Kuppāumeh. Thou payest him, Kuppāum. Thou payest us, Kuppāumimun. Thou payest them, Kuppāumoog.
3 sing.	He keepeth me, Nōowadchanuk. He keepeth thee, Kōowadchanuk. He keepeth him, ōowadchanuh. He keepeth us, Kōowadchanukqun. He keepeth you, Kōowadchanukō. He keepeth them, ōowadchanuh.	3 plur.	He payeth me, Nuppāumuk. He payeth thee, Kuppāumuk. He payeth him, Uppāumuh. He payeth us, Kuppāumukqun. He payeth you, Kuppāumukō. He payeth them, Uppāumuh nah.

[p. 29.]

## Indicative Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *We keep thee,*  
 Kōwadchanunumun.  
*We keep him,*  
 nōwadchanoun.  
*We keep you,*  
 kōwadchanunumun (wame)  
*We keep them,*  
 nōwadchanōunonog.

2 plur. { *Ye keep me,*  
 Kōwadchanimwō.  
*Ye keep him,*  
 kōwadchanau.  
*Ye keep us,*  
 kōwadchanimun.  
*Ye keep them,*  
 kōwadchanoog.

3 plur. { *They keep me,*  
 Nōwadchanukquog.  
*They keep thee,*  
 kōwadchanukquog.  
*They keep him,*  
 ōwadchanouh.  
*They keep us,*  
 nōwadchanukqunnonog.  
*They keep you,*  
 kōwadchanukōoog.  
*They keep them,*  
 ōwadchanouh nah.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *We pay thee,*  
 Kuppauunumun.  
*We pay him,*  
 nuppaumoun.  
*We pay you,*  
 kuppauunumun.  
*We pay them,*  
 nuppaumounōnog.

2 plur. { *Ye pay me,*  
 Kuppauimwō.  
*Ye pay him,*  
 kuppauau.  
*Ye pay us,*  
 kuppauimun.  
*Ye pay them,*  
 kuppaumoog.

3 plur. { *They pay me,*  
 Nuppaumukquog.  
*They pay thee,*  
 kuppauukquog.  
*They pay him,*  
 uppaumouh.  
*They pay us,*  
 nuppaumukqunnonog.  
*They pay you,*  
 kuppauukōoog.  
*They pay them,*  
 uppaumouh nah.

## Indicative Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 *sing.* { *I did keep thee,*  
Kōwadchanunup.  
*I did keep him,*  
nōwadchanóp.  
*I did keep you,*  
kōwadchanunnumwop.  
*I did keep them,*  
nōwadchanópanneg.

2 *sing.* { *Thou didst keep me,*  
Kōwadchanip.  
*Thou didst keep him,*  
kōwadchanóp.  
*Thou didst keep us,*  
kōwadchanimunonup.  
*Thou didst keep them,*  
kōwadchanopanneg.

3 *sing.* { *He did keep me,*  
Nōwadchanukup.  
*He did keep thee,*  
kōwadchanukup.  
*He did keep him,*  
ōwadchanópoh.  
*He did keep us,*  
nōwadchanukqunnonup.  
*He did keep you,*  
kōwadchanukōwop.  
*He did keep them,*  
ōwadchanōópoh.

*Præter tense.*

1 *sing.* { *I did pay thee,*  
Kuppaumunup.  
*I did pay him,*  
nuppaumóp.  
*I did pay you,*  
kuppaumunumwop.  
*I did pay them,*  
nuppaumópanneg.

2 *sing.* { *Thou didst pay me,*  
Kuppaumip.  
*Thou didst pay him,*  
kuppaumóp.  
*Thou didst pay us,*  
kuppaumimunonup.  
*Thou didst pay them,*  
kuppaumopanneg.

3 *sing.* { *He did pay me,*  
Nuppaumukup.  
*He did pay thee,*  
kuppaumukup.  
*He did pay him,*  
uppaumópoh.  
*He did pay us,*  
nuppaumukqunnonup.  
*He did pay you,*  
kuppaumukōwop.  
*He did pay them,*  
uppaumópoh nah.



[p. 31.]

## Indicative Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. { *We did keep thee,*  
Kōwadchaninumunonup.  
*We did keep him,*  
nōwadchanōunonup.  
*We did keep you,*  
kōwadchaninumunonup.  
*We did keep them,*  
nōwadchanounonuppanneg.

2 plur. { *Ye did keep me,*  
Kōwadchanimwop.  
*Ye did keep him,*  
kōwadchanuop.  
*Ye did keep us,*  
kōwadchanimunonup.  
*Ye did keep them,*  
kōwadchanoopanneg.

3 plur. { *They did keep me,*  
Nōwadchanukuppanneg.  
*They did keep thee,*  
kōwadchanukuppanneg.  
*They did keep him,*  
ōwadchānanopoh.  
*They did keep us, [neg.]*  
kōwadchanukqunonuppan-  
*They did keep you,*  
kōwadchanukōoopanneg.  
*They did keep them,*  
ōwadchanōoopoh nah.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. { *We did pay thee,*  
kuppaumunumunonup.  
*We did pay him,*  
nuppaumounonup.  
*We did pay you,*  
kuppaumunumunonup.  
*We did pay them,*  
nuppaumounonuppanneg.

2 plur. { *Ye did pay me,*  
Kuppaumimwop.  
*Ye did pay him,*  
kuppaumauop.  
*Ye did pay us,*  
kuppaumimunonup.  
*Ye did pay them,*  
kuppaurnauopanneg.

3 plur. { *They did pay me,*  
Nuppaumukuppanneg.  
*They did pay thee,*  
kuppaumukuppanneg.  
*They did pay him,*  
uppaumauopoh.  
*They did pay us,*  
nuppaumukqunnouppanneg.  
*They did pay you,*  
kuppaumukōoopanneg.  
*They did pay them,*  
uppaumōoopoh nah.

*The Imperative Mode of the Suffix form animate Affirmative.*

*Note, That this Mode of the Verb doth cast off the Affix, or prefixed Pronoun, using onley the suffixed Grammaticall variations.*

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { *Let me keep thee,*  
Wachanunutti.  
*Let me keep him,*  
wadchanonti.  
*Let me keep you,*  
wadchanunonkqutch.  
*Let me keep them,*  
wadchanonti nagoh.

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { *Let me pay thee,*  
Paumunutti.  
*Let me pay him,*  
paumonti.  
*Let me pay you,*  
paumunonkqutch.  
*Let me pay them,*  
paumonti.

2 sing. { *Do thou keep me,*  
Wadchaneh.  
*Do thou keep him,*  
wadchan.  
*Do thou keep us,*  
wadchaninnean.  
*Do thou keep them,*  
wadchan nag.

2 sing. { *Do thou pay me,*  
Paumeh.  
*Do thou pay him,*  
paum.  
*Do thou pay us,*  
pauminnean.  
*Do thou pay them,*  
paum.

3 sing. { *Let him keep me,*  
Wadchanitch.  
*Let him keep thee,*  
wadchanukqush.  
*Let him keep him,*  
wadchanonch.  
*Let him keep us,*  
wadchanukqutteuh.  
*Let him keep you,*  
wadchanukook.  
*Let him keep them,*  
wanchanonch.

3 sing. { *Let him pay me,*  
Paumitch.  
*Let him pay thee,*  
paumukqush.  
*Let him pay him,*  
paumonch.  
*Let him pay us,*  
paumukqutteuh.  
*Let him pay you,*  
paumukook.  
*Let him pay them,*  
paumonch.

[p. 33.]

## Imperative Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *Let us keep thee,*  
Wadchanunuttuh.  
*Let us keep him,*  
wadchanontuh.  
*Let us keep you,*  
wadchanunuttuh.  
*Let us keep them,*  
wadchanontuh.

2 plur. { *Do ye keep me,*  
Wadchanegk.  
*Do ye keep him,*  
Wadchanók.  
*Do ye keep us,*  
wadchaninnean.  
*Let us keep them,*  
wadchanók.

3 plur. { *Let them keep me,*  
Wadchanukqutteí, or wad-  
chanhettich.  
*Let them keep thee,*  
wadchanukqush.  
*Let them keep him,*  
wadchanáhettich.  
*Let them keep us,*  
wadchanukqutteuh.  
*Let them keep you,*  
wadchanukook.  
*Let them keep them,*  
wadchanáhettich.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *Let us pay thee,*  
Paumunuttuh.  
*Let us pay him,*  
paumontuh.  
*Let us pay you,*  
paumunuttuh.  
*Let us pay them,*  
paumontuh.

2 plur. { *Do ye pay me,*  
Paumegk.  
*Do ye pay him,*  
paumók.  
*Do ye pay us,*  
pauminnean.  
*Do ye pay them,*  
paumók.

3 plur. { *Let them pay me,*  
Paumukqutteí, or Paumé-  
hettich.  
*Let them pay thee,*  
paumukqush.  
*Let them pay him,*  
paumáhettich.  
*Let them pay us,*  
paumukqutteuh.  
*Let them pay you,*  
paumukook.  
*Let them pay them,*  
paumáhettich.



## The Optative Mode of the Suffix form animate Affirmative.

*This Adverb (toh) or (napehnont) properly signifieth (utinam) I wish it were. And see how naturally they annex it unto every variation of this Mode of the Verb. Note also, That this Mode keepeth the Affix, or prefixed Pronoun.*

## Present tense.

1 sing. { *I wish I keep thee,*  
Kooaadchanunan-toh, or  
napehnont.  
*I wish I keep him,*  
Noowaadchanun-toh.  
*I wish I keep you,*  
Kooaadchanununeau-toh.  
*I wish I keep them,*  
Noowaadchanoneau-toh.

## Present tense.

1 sing. { *I wish I pay thee,*  
Kuppapaumunun-toh.  
*I wish I pay him,*  
nuppapaumon-toh.  
*I wish I pay you,*  
kuppapaumuneau-toh.  
*I wish I pay them,*  
nuppapaumoneau-toh.

2 sing. { *I wish thou keep me,*  
Kooaadchanin-toh.  
*I wish thou keep him,*  
kooaadchanon-toh.  
*I wish thou keep us,*  
kooaadchaninneau-toh.  
*I wish thou keep them,*  
kooaadchanoneauh-toh.

2 sing. { *I wish thou pay me,*  
kuppapaumin-toh.  
*I wish thou pay him,*  
kuppapaumon-toh.  
*I wish thou pay us,*  
kuppapaumuneau-toh.  
*I wish thou pay them,*  
kuppapaumoneau-toh.

3 sing. { *I wish he keep me,*  
Noowaadchanukqun-toh.  
*I wish he keep thee,*  
kooaadchanukqun-toh.  
*I wish he keep him,*  
oowaadchanon-toh.  
*I wish he keep us,*  
kooaadchanukqunan-toh.  
*I wish he keep you,*  
kooaadchanukquneau-toh.  
*I wish he keep them,*  
oowaadchanon-toh.

3 sing. { *I wish he pay me,*  
Nuppapaumukqun-toh.  
*I wish he pay thee,*  
kuppapaumukqun-toh.  
*I wish he pay him,*  
uppapaumon-toh.  
*I wish he pay us,*  
kuppapaumukqunan-toh.  
*I wish he pay you,*  
kuppapaumukquneau-toh.  
*I wish he pay them,*  
uppapaumon-toh.

[p. 35.]

## Optative Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *I wish we keep thee,*  
Kooaadchanunan-toh.  
*I wish we keep him,*  
noowaadchanonan-toh.  
*I wish we keep you,*  
kooaadchanunnan-toh.  
*I wish we keep them,*  
noowaadchanonau-toh.

2 plur. { *I wish ye keep me,*  
Kooaadchanuneau-toh.  
*I wish ye keep him,*  
kooaadchanóneau-toh.  
*I wish ye keep us,*  
kooaadchanunean-toh.  
*I wish ye keep them,*  
kooaadchanóneau-toh.

3 plur. { *I wish they keep me,*  
Noowaadchanukuneau-toh.  
*I wish they keep thee,*  
kooaadchanukuneau-toh.  
*I wish they keep him,*  
owaadchanóneau-toh.  
*I wish they keep us,*  
noowaadchanukqunan-toh.  
*I wish they keep you,*  
kooaadchanukuneau-toh.  
*I wish they keep them,*  
owaadchanóneau-toh.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *I wish we pay thee,*  
Kuppapaumunan-toh.  
*I wish we pay him,*  
nuppapaumónan-toh.  
*I wish we pay you,*  
kuppapauinunan-toh.  
*I wish we pay them,*  
nuppapaumonnan-toh.

2 plur. { *I wish ye pay me,*  
Kuppapaumuneau-toh.  
*I wish ye pay him,*  
kuppapaumóneau-toh.  
*I wish ye pay us,*  
kuppapaumunean-toh.  
*I wish ye pay them,*  
kuppapaumóneau-toh.

3 plur. { *I wish they pay me,*  
Nuppapaumukuneau-toh.  
*I wish they pay thee,*  
kuppapaumukuneau-toh.  
*I wish they pay him,*  
uppapaumóneau-toh.  
*I wish they pay us,*  
nuppapaumukqunan-toh.  
*I wish they pay you,*  
kuppapaumukuneau-toh.  
*I wish they pay them,*  
uppapaumóneau-toh.

## Optative Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 *sing.* { *I wish I did keep thee,*  
 Kōwaadchanununaz-toh.  
*I wish I did keep him,*  
 nōwaadchanónaz-toh.  
*I wish I did keep you,*  
 kōwaadchanununnaouz-toh.  
*I wish I did keep them,*  
 nōwaadchanónaóoz-toh.

2 *sing.* { *I wish thou didst keep me,*  
 Kōwaadchaninneaz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst keep him,*  
 kōwaadchanónaz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst keep us,*  
 kōwaadchanuneanonuz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst keep them,*  
 kōwaadchanónaouz-toh.

3 *sing.* { *I wish he did keep me,*  
 Nōwaadchanukqunaz-toh.  
*I wish he did keep thee,*  
 kōwaadchanukqunaz-toh.  
*I wish he did keep him,*  
 cōwaadchanónaz-toh.  
*I wish he did keep us,*  
 nōwaadchanukqunanonuz-  
 toh.  
*I wish he did keep you,*  
 kōwaadchanukqunnaouz-  
 toh.  
*I wish he did keep them,*  
 cōwaadchanonaouz-toh.

*Præter tense.*

1 *sing.* { *I wish I did pay thee,*  
 Kuppapaumununaz-toh.  
*I wish I did pay him,*  
 nuppapaumónaz-toh.  
*I wish I did pay you,*  
 kuppapaumununnaouz-toh.  
*I wish I did pay them,*  
 nuppapaumonaouz-toh.

2 *sing.* { *I wish thou didst pay me,*  
 Kuppapaumineaz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst pay him,*  
 kuppapaumonaz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst pay us,*  
 kuppapaumuneanonuz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst pay them,*  
 kuppapaumónaouz-toh.

3 *sing.* { *I wish he did pay me,*  
 Nuppapaumukqunaz-toh.  
*I wish he did pay thee,*  
 kuppapaumukqunaz-toh.  
*I wish he did pay him,*  
 uppapaumónaz-toh.  
*I wish he did pay us,*  
 nuppapaumukqunanonuz-  
 toh.  
*I wish he did pay you,*  
 kuppapaumukqunaouz-toh.  
*I wish he did pay them,*  
 uppapaumonaouz-toh.



[p. 37.]

## Optative Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. { *I wish we did keep thee,*  
Kooaadchanonanonuz-toh.  
*I wish we did keep him,*  
noowaadchanonanonuz-toh.  
*I wish we did keep you,*  
kooaadchanunanonaz-toh.  
*I wish we did keep them,*  
noowaadchanonanonuz-toh.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. { *I wish we did pay thee,*  
Kuppapaumunanonuz-toh.  
*I wish we did pay him,*  
nuppapaumonanonuz-toh.  
*I wish we did pay you,*  
kuppapaumunanonuz-toh.  
*I wish we did pay them,*  
nuppapaumonanonuz-toh.

2 plur. { *I wish ye did keep me,*  
Kooaadchanineaouz-toh.  
*I wish ye did keep him,*  
kooaadchanonaouz-toh.  
*I wish ye did keep us,*  
kooaadchaninneanonuz-toh.  
*I wish ye did keep them,*  
kooaadchanónaouz-toh.

2 plur. { *I wish ye did pay me,*  
Kuppapaumineaouz-toh.  
*I wish ye did pay him,*  
kuppapaumonaouz-toh.  
*I wish ye did pay us,*  
kuppapaumineanonuz-toh.  
*I wish ye did pay them,*  
kuppapaumonaouz-toh.

3 plur. { *I wish they did keep me,*  
Noowaadchanukqunnabuz-  
toh.  
*I wish they did keep thee,*  
kooaadchanukqunaouz-toh.  
*I wish they did keep him,*  
oowaadchanónaouz-toh.  
*I wish they did keep us,*  
noowaadchanukqunnanouz-  
toh.  
*I wish they did keep you,*  
kooaadchanukqunaouz-toh.  
*I wish they did keep them,*  
oowaadchanónaouz-toh.

3 plur. { *I wish they did pay me,*  
Nuppapaumukqunaouz-toh.  
*I wish they did pay thee,*  
kuppapaumukqunaouz-toh.  
*I wish they did pay him,*  
uppapaumonónaouz-toh.  
*I wish they did pay us,*  
nuppapaumukqunanonuz-  
toh.  
*I wish they did pay you,*  
kuppapaumukqunaouz-toh.  
*I wish they did pay them,*  
uppapaumonónaouz-toh.

*The Suppositive Mode of the Suffix form animate  
Affirmative.*

*Note, That this Mode also doth cast off the Affix, or prefixed Pronoun.*

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { *If I keep thee,*  
Wadchanunon.  
*If I keep him,*  
wadchanog.  
*If I keep you,*  
wadchanunog.  
*If I keep them,*  
wadchaog.

2 sing. { *If thou keep me,*  
Wadchanean.  
*If thou keep him,*  
wadchanadt.  
*If thou keep us,*  
wadchaneog.  
*If thou keep them,*  
wadchanadt.

3 sing. { *If he keep me,*  
Wadchanit.  
*If he keep thee,*  
wadchanukquean.  
*If he keep him,*  
wadchanont.  
*If he keep us,*  
wadchanukqueog.  
*If he keep you,*  
wadchanukqueog.  
*If he keep them,*  
wadchanáhettit, or ont.

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { *If I pay thee,*  
Paumunon.  
*If I pay him,*  
paumog.  
*If I pay you,*  
paumunog.  
*If I pay them,*  
paumog.

2 sing. { *If thou pay me,*  
Paumean.  
*If thou pay him,*  
paumadt.  
*If thou pay us,*  
paumeog.  
*If thou pay them,*  
paumadt.

3 sing. { *If he pay me,*  
Paumit.  
*If he pay thee,*  
paumukquean.  
*If he pay him,*  
paumont.  
*If he pay us,*  
paumukqueog.  
*If he pay you,*  
paumukqueog.  
*If he pay them,*  
paumáhettit.

[p. 39.]

## Suppositive Mode.

Note; Where the singular and plural are alike, they are distinguished by Noh or Neen in the singular, and Nag or Nenawun, in the plural.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. {  
 If we keep thee,  
 Wadchanunog.  
 If we keep him,  
 wadchanogkut.  
 If we keep you,  
 wadchanunog.  
 If we keep them,  
 wadchanogkut.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. {  
 If we pay thee,  
 Paumunog.  
 If we pay him,  
 paumogkut.  
 If we pay you,  
 paumunog.  
 If we pay them,  
 paumogkut.

2 plur. {  
 If ye keep me,  
 Wadchaneóg.  
 If ye keep him,  
 wadchanóg.  
 If ye keep us,  
 wadchaneog.  
 If ye keep them,  
 wadchanóg.

2 plur. {  
 If ye pay me,  
 Paumeóg.  
 If ye pay him,  
 paumóg.  
 If ye pay us,  
 paumeóg.  
 If ye pay them,  
 paumóg.

3 plur. {  
 If they keep me,  
 Wadchanhettit.  
 If they keep thee,  
 wadchanukquean.  
 If they keep him,  
 wadchanukáhettit.  
 If they keep us,  
 wadchanukqueog.  
 If they keep you,  
 wadchanukqueog.  
 If they keep them,  
 wadchanáhettit.

3 plur. {  
 If they pay me,  
 Paumhettit.  
 If they pay thee,  
 paumukquean.  
 If they pay him,  
 paumáhettit.  
 If they pay us,  
 paumukqueog.  
 If they pay you,  
 paumuqueog.  
 If they pay them,  
 paumáhettit.



## Suppositive Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 sing. {  
*If I did keep thee,*  
 Wadchanunos.  
*If I did keep him,*  
 waadchanogkus.  
*If I did keep you,*  
 wadchanunogkus.  
*If I did keep them,*  
 wadchanogkus.

2 sing. {  
*If thou didst keep me,*  
 Wadchaneas.  
*If thou didst keep him,*  
 wadchanas.  
*If thou didst keep us,*  
 wadchaneogkus.  
*If thou didst keep them,*  
 wadchanas.

3 sing. {  
*If he did keep me,*  
 Wadchanis.  
*If he did keep thee,*  
 wadchanukqueas.  
*If he did keep him,*  
 wadchanós.  
*If he did keep us,*  
 wadchanukqueogkus.  
*If he did keep you,*  
 wadchanukqueógkus.  
*If he did keep them,*  
 wadchanos.

*Præter tense.*

1 sing. {  
*If I did pay thee,*  
 Paumunos.  
*If I did pay him,*  
 paumogkus.  
*If I did pay you,*  
 paumunogkus.  
*If I did pay them,*  
 paumogkus.

2 sing. {  
*If thou didst pay me,*  
 Paumeas.  
*If thou didst pay him,*  
 paumas.  
*If thou didst pay us,*  
 paumeogkus.  
*If thou didst pay them,*  
 paumas.

3 sing. {  
*If he did pay me,*  
 Paumis.  
*If he did pay thee,*  
 paumukqueas.  
*If he did pay him,*  
 paumos.  
*If he did pay us,*  
 paumukqueogkus.  
*If he did pay you,*  
 paumukqueógkus.  
*If he did pay them,*  
 paumos.

[p. 41.]

## Suppositive Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. {  
*If we did keep thee,*  
 wadchanunogkus.  
*If we did keep him,*  
 wadchanogkutus.  
*If we did keep you,*  
 wadchanunogkus.  
*If we did keep them,*  
 wadchanogkutus.

2 plur. {  
*If ye did keep me,*  
 Wadchaneógkus.  
*If ye did keep him,*  
 wadchanógkus.  
*If ye did keep us,*  
 wadchaneogkus.  
*If ye did keep them,*  
 wadchanógkus.

3 plur. {  
*If they did keep me,*  
 wadchanhettis.  
*If they did keep thee,*  
 wadchanukqueas.  
*If they did keep him,*  
 wadchanahettis.  
*If they did keep us,*  
 wadchanukqueogkus.  
*If they did keep you,*  
 wadchanukqueógkus.  
*If they did keep them,*  
 wadchanahettis.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. {  
*If we did pay thee,*  
 Paumunogkus.  
*If we did pay him,*  
 paumunogkutus.  
*If we did pay you,*  
 paumunogkus.  
*If we did pay them,*  
 paumogkutus.

2 plur. {  
*If ye did pay me,*  
 Paumeogkus.  
*If ye did pay him,*  
 paumogkus.  
*If ye did pay us,*  
 paumeogkus.  
*If ye did pay them,*  
 paumógkus.

3 plur. {  
*If they did pay me,*  
 Paumehettis.  
*If they did pay thee,*  
 paumukqueas.  
*If they did pay him,*  
 paumahettis.  
*If they did pay us,*  
 paumukqueogkus.  
*If they did pay you,*  
 paumukqueógkus.  
*If they did pay them,*  
 paumahettis.

## The Indefinite Mode.

*Present tense.*

*To keep,*  
Wadchanónat.

*Present tense.*

*To pay,*  
Paummuonat.

The *third Person* of the *Suffix form Animate* is capable to be expressed in the *Indefinite Mode*.

Note also, *That this mode followeth the Indicative and keepeth the Affix.*

*As for Example.*

3 sing. { *To keep me,*  
Nōwadchanukqunat.  
*To keep thee,*  
kōwadchanukqunat.  
*To keep him,*  
ōwadchanonat.  
*To keep us,*  
nōwadchanukqunnanonut.  
*To keep you,*  
kōwadchanukqunnaout.  
*To keep them,*  
ōwadchanonaout.

3 sing. { *To pay me,*  
Nuppaumunkqunat.  
*To pay thee,*  
kuppaumukqunat.  
*To pay him,*  
uppaumonat.  
*To pay us,*  
nuppaumukqunnanonut.  
*To pay you,*  
kuppaumukqunnaout.  
*To pay them,*  
uppaumonaoont.

*So much for the Suffix form Animate Affirmative.*

[A blank page follows, in the original, between this page and 44. Eb.]



[p. 44.]

The *Suffix form Animate* Negative.

## Indicative Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { *I keep not thee,*  
Kōwadchanunōh.  
*I keep not him,*  
nōwadchanōh.  
*I keep not you,*  
kōwadchanoog.  
*I keep not them,*  
Mat nōwadchanoog.

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { *I pay not thee,*  
Kuppaumunōh.  
*I pay not him,*  
nuppaumōh.  
*I pay not you,*  
kuppaumunoomwō.  
*I pay not them,*  
Mat nuppaumoog.

2 sing. { *Thou keep not me,*  
Kōwadchaneuh.  
*Thou keep not him,*  
kōwadchanōh.  
*Thou keep not us,*  
kōwadchaneumun.  
*Thou keep not them,*  
Mat kōwadchanoog.

2 sing. { *Thou pay not me,*  
Kuppaumeuh.  
*Thou pay not him,*  
kuppaumōh.  
*Thou pay not us,*  
kuppaumeumun.  
*Thou pay not them,*  
Mat kuppaumeumoog.

3 sing. { *He keep not me,*  
Nōwadchanukōh.  
*He keep not thee,*  
kōwadchanukōh.  
*He keep not him,*  
Mat cōwadchanuh.  
*He keep not us,*  
nōwadchanukōun.  
*He keep not you,*  
Mat kōwadchanukō.  
*He keep not them,*  
Mat cōwadchanuh.

3 sing. { *He pay not me,*  
Nuppaumukōh.  
*He pay not thee,*  
Kuppaumukōh.  
*He pay not him,*  
Mat uppaumoh.  
*He pay not us,*  
nuppaumukōun.  
*He pay not you,*  
Mat kuppaumukōh.  
*He pay not them,*  
Mat uppaumuh.

## Indicative Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *We keep not thee,*  
Kōwadchanunōmun.  
*We keep not him,*  
mat nōwadchanōun.  
*We keep not you,*  
kōwadchanunōmun.  
*We keep not them,*  
mat nōwadchanounonog.

2 plur. { *Ye keep not me,*  
Kōwadchaneumwō.  
*Ye keep not him,*  
mat kōwadchanau.  
*Ye keep not us,*  
kōwadchaneumun.  
*Ye keep not them,*  
mat kōwadchanoog.

3 plur. { *They keep not me,*  
Nōwadchanukōog.  
*They keep not thee,*  
kōwadchanukōog.  
*They keep not him,*  
mat cōwadchanouh.  
*They keep not us,*  
nōwadchanukōounonog.  
*They keep not you,*  
kōwadchanukōōog.  
*They keep not them,*  
mat cōwadchanouh.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *We pay not thee,*  
Kuppaumnunōmun.  
*We pay not him,*  
mat nuppaumoun.  
*We pay not you,*  
kuppaumnunōmun.  
*We pay not them,*  
mat nuppaumounonog.

2 plur. { *Ye pay not me,*  
Kuppaumeumwō.  
*Ye pay not him,*  
mat kuppaumau.  
*Ye pay not us,*  
kuppaumeumun.  
*Ye pay not them,*  
mat kuppaumoog.

3 plur. { *They pay not me,*  
Nuppaumukōog.  
*They pay not thee,*  
kuppaumukōog.  
*They pay not him,*  
mat uppaumouh.  
*They pay not us,*  
nuppaumukōounonog.  
*They pay not you,*  
kuppaumukōōog.  
*They pay not them,*  
mat uppaumouh.

## Indicative Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 sing. {  
*I did not keep thee,*  
 Koowadchanuncoop.  
*I did not keep him,*  
 mat noowadchanóhp.  
*I did not keep you,*  
 koowadchanuncoomwop.  
*I did not keep them,*  
 mat noowadchanopanneg.

2 sing. {  
*Thou didst not keep me,*  
 Koowadchaneup.  
*Thou didst not keep him,*  
 mat koowadchanóp.  
*Thou didst not keep us,*  
 koowadchaneumunonup.  
*Thou didst not keep them,*  
 mat koowadchanopanneg.

3 sing. {  
*He did not keep me,*  
 Noowadchanukoop.  
*He did not keep thee,*  
 koowadchanukoop.  
*He did not keep him,*  
 mat coowadchanópoh.  
*He did not keep us,*  
 noowadchanukoononup.  
*He did not keep you,*  
 koowadchanukoop.  
*He did not keep them,*  
 mat coowadchanópoh.

*Præter tense.*

1 sing. {  
*I did not pay thee,*  
 Kuppaumuncoop.  
*I did not pay him,*  
 mat nuppaumóp.  
*I did not pay you,*  
 kuppaumuncoomwop.  
*I did not pay them,*  
 mat nuppaumopanneg.

2 sing. {  
*Thou didst not pay me,*  
 Kuppaumeup.  
*Thou didst not pay him,*  
 mat kuppaumóp.  
*Thou didst not pay us,*  
 kuppaumeumunonup.  
*Thou didst not pay them,*  
 mat kuppaumopanneg.

3 sing. {  
*He did not pay me,*  
 Nuppaumukoop.  
*He did not pay thee,*  
 kuppaumukoop.  
*He did not pay him,*  
 mat paumópoh.  
*He did not pay us,*  
 nuppaumukoononup.  
*He did not pay you,*  
 kuppaumukoop.  
*He did not pay them,*  
 mat uppaumópoh.



## Indicative Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. { *We did not keep thee,*  
Kōwadchanincomunonup.  
*We did not keep him,*  
mat nōwadchanounonup.  
*We did not keep you,*  
kōwadchanincomunonup.  
*We did not keep them,*  
mat nōwadchanounonup-  
panneg.

2 plur. { *Ye did not keep me,*  
Kōwadchaneumwop.  
*Ye did not keep him,*  
mat kōwadchancoop.  
*Ye did not keep us,*  
kōwadchaneumunonup.  
*Ye did not keep them,*  
mat kōwadchanoopanneg.

3 plur. { *They did not keep me,*  
Nōwadchanukcoopanneg.  
*They did not keep thee,*  
kōwadchanukcoopanneg.  
*They did not keep him,*  
mat cōwadchancoopoh.  
*They did not keep us,*  
nōwadchanukcounonup-  
panneg.  
*They did not keep you,*  
kōwadchanukcoopanneg.  
*They did not keep them,*  
mat cōwadchancoopoh.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. { *We did not pay thee,*  
Kuppaumuncomunonup.  
*We did not pay him,*  
mat nuppaumounonup.  
*We did not pay you,*  
kuppaumuncomunonup.  
*We did not pay them,*  
mat nuppaumounonup-  
pāneg.

2 plur. { *Ye did not pay me,*  
Kuppaumeumwop.  
*Ye did not pay him,*  
mat kuppaumcoop.  
*Ye did not pay us,*  
kuppaumeumunonup.  
*Ye did not pay them,*  
mat kuppaumcoopanneg.

3 plur. { *They did not pay me,*  
Nuppaumukcoopanneg.  
*They did not pay thee,*  
kuppaumukcoopanneg.  
*They did not pay him,*  
mat uppaumcoopoh.  
*They did not pay us,*  
nuppaumukcounonuppan-  
neg.  
*They did not pay you,*  
kuppaumukcoopanneg.  
*They did not pay them,*  
mat uppaumcoopoh.

[p. 48.]

The *Suffix form animate* Negative.

## Imperative Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 *sing.* { *Let me not keep thee,*  
Wadchanuncoutti.  
*Let me not keep him,*  
wadchanoonti.  
*Let me not keep you,*  
wadchanunonkqutti.  
*Let me not keep them,*  
wadchanoonti.

2 *sing.* { *Do thou not keep me,*  
Wadchanohkon.  
*Do thou not keep him,*  
wadchanuhkon.  
*Do thou not keep us,*  
wadchanéittuh.  
*Do thou not keep them,*  
wadchanuhkon.

3 *sing.* { *Let not him keep me,*  
Wadchanehkitch.  
*Let not him keep thee,*  
wadchanukoohkon.  
*Let not him keep him,*  
wadchanuhkitch.  
*Let not him keep us,*  
wadchanukoottuh.  
*Let not him keep you,*  
wadchanukohteók.  
*Let not him keep them,*  
wadchanuhkitch.

*Present tense.*

1 *sing.* { *Let me not pay thee,*  
Paumunutti.  
*Let me not pay him,*  
paumoonti.  
*Let me not pay you,*  
paumuncoutti.  
*Let me not pay them,*  
paumoonti.

2 *sing.* { *Do thou not pay me,*  
Paumehkon.  
*Do thou not pay him,*  
paumuhkon.  
*Do thou not pay us,*  
pauméittuh.  
*Do thou not pay them,*  
paumóhkon.

3 *sing.* { *Let not him pay me,*  
Paumehkitch.  
*Let not him pay thee,*  
paumukoohkon.  
*Let not him pay him,*  
paumuhkitch.  
*Let not him pay us,*  
paumukoottuh.  
*Let not him pay you,*  
paumukohteók.  
*Let not him pay them,*  
paumuhkitch.

## Imperative Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *Let not us keep thee,*  
Wadchanuncoottuh.  
*Let not us keep him,*  
wadchanóontuh.  
*Let not us keep you,*  
wadchanuncoottuh.  
*Let not us keep them,*  
wadchanoontuh.

2 plur. { *Do not ye keep me,*  
Wadchanehteók.  
*Do not ye keep him,*  
wadchanuhteók.  
*Do not ye keep us,*  
wadchanéinnean.  
*Do not ye keep them,*  
wadchanuhteók.

3 plur. { *Let not them keep me,*  
Wadchanehettekitch.  
*Let not them keep thee,*  
wadchanukóohkon.  
*Let not them keep him,*  
wadchanahettekitch.  
*Let not them keep us,*  
wadchanukóottuh.  
*Let not them keep you,*  
wadchanukóhteok.  
*Let not them keep them,*  
wadchanahettekitch.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *Let not us pay thee,*  
Paumuncoottuh.  
*Let not us pay him,*  
paumoontuh.  
*Let not us pay you,*  
paumuncoottuh.  
*Let not us pay them,*  
paumoontuh.

2 plur. { *Do not ye pay me,*  
Paumehteok.  
*Do not ye pay him,*  
paumuhteok.  
*Do not ye pay us,*  
pauméinnean.  
*Do not ye pay them,*  
paumuhteok.

3 plur. { *Let not them pay me,*  
Paumehettekitch.  
*Let not them pay thee,*  
paumukóohkon.  
*Let not them pay him,*  
paumahettekitch.  
*Let not them pay us,*  
paumukóottuh.  
*Let not them pay you,*  
paumukóhteok.  
*Let not them pay them,*  
paumahettekitch.



[p. 50.]

The *Suffix form Animate* Negative.

## Optative Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { *I wish I keep not thee,*  
Kōwaadchanūcoun-toh.  
*I wish I keep not him,*  
nōwaadchanoun-toh.  
*I wish I keep not you,*  
kōwaadchanūcōuneau-toh.  
*I wish I keep not them,*  
nōwaadchanōuneau-toh.

2 sing. { *I wish thou do not keep me.*  
Kōwaadchanēin-toh.  
*I wish thou do not keep him,*  
kōwaadchanoon-toh.  
*I wish thou do not keep us,*  
kōwaadchanēin-toh.  
*I wish thou do not keep them,*  
kōwaadchanōuneau-toh.

3 sing. { *I wish he do not keep me,*  
Nōwaadchanūkōoun-toh.  
*I wish he do not keep thee,*  
kōwaadchanūkōoun-toh.  
*I wish he do not keep him,*  
ōwaadchanoon-toh.  
*I wish he do not keep us,*  
nōwaadchanūkōounan-toh.  
*I wish he do not keep you,*  
kōwaadchanūkōuneau-toh.  
*I wish he do not keep them,*  
ōwaadchanoon-toh.

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { *I wish I do not pay thee,*  
Kuppapaumūcoun-toh.  
*I wish I do not pay him,*  
nuppapaumoon-toh.  
*I wish I do not pay you,*  
kuppapaumūcōuneau-toh.  
*I wish I do not pay them,*  
nuppapaumōuneau-toh.

2 sing. { *I wish thou do not pay me,*  
Kuppapaumēin-toh.  
*I wish thou do not pay him,*  
kuppapaūnoon-toh.  
*I wish thou do not pay us,*  
kuppapaumēinan-toh.  
*I wish thou do not pay them,*  
kuppapaumōuneau-toh.

3 sing. { *I wish he do not pay me,*  
Nuppapaumūkōoun-toh.  
*I wish he do not pay thee,*  
kuppapaumūkōoun-toh.  
*I wish he do not pay him,*  
uppapaumoun-toh.  
*I wish he do not pay us,*  
nuppapaumūkōounan-toh.  
*I wish he do not pay you,*  
kuppapaumūkōuneau-toh.  
*I wish he do not pay them,*  
uppapaumōuneau-toh.

## Optative Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *I wish we do not keep thee,*  
*Koowaadchanounan-toh.*  
*I wish we do not keep him,*  
*noowaadchanounan-toh.*  
*I wish we do not keep you,*  
*koowaadchanounan-toh.*  
*I wish we do not keep them,*  
*noowaadchanounan-toh.*

2 plur. { *I wish ye do not keep me,*  
*Koowaadchaneinneau-toh.*  
*I wish ye do not keep him,*  
*koowaadchanouneau-toh.*  
*I wish ye do not keep us,*  
*koowaadchanéinnean-toh.*  
*I wish ye do not keep them,*  
*koowaadchanouneau-toh.*

3 plur. { *I wish they do not keep me,*  
*Noowaadchanukouneau-toh.*  
*I wish they do not keep thee,*  
*koowaadchanukouneau-toh.*  
*I wish they do not keep him,*  
*oowaadchanouneau-toh.*  
*I wish they do not keep us,*  
*noowaadchanukounan-toh.*  
*I wish they do not keep you,*  
*koowaadchanukouneau-toh.*  
*I wish they do not keep them,*  
*oowaadchanouneau-toh.*

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *I wish we do not pay thee,*  
*Kuppapaumunoon-toh.*  
*I wish we do not pay him,*  
*nuppapaumoon-toh.*  
*I wish we do not pay you,*  
*kuppapaumounounan-toh.*  
*I wish we do not pay them,*  
*nuppapaumounan-toh.*

2 plur. { *I wish ye do not pay me,*  
*Kuppapauméineau-toh.*  
*I wish ye do not pay him,*  
*kuppapaumooneau-toh.*  
*I wish ye do not pay us,*  
*kuppapauméinan-toh.*  
*I wish ye do not pay them,*  
*kuppapaumooneau-toh.*

3 plur. { *I wish they do not pay me,*  
*Nuppapaumukouneau-toh.*  
*I wish they do not pay thee,*  
*kuppapaumukouneau-toh.*  
*I wish they do not pay him,*  
*uppapaumouneau-toh.*  
*I wish they do not pay us,*  
*nuppapaumukounan-toh.*  
*I wish they do not pay you,*  
*kuppapaumukouneau-toh.*  
*I wish they do not pay them,*  
*uppapaumouneau-toh.*

[p. 52.]

## Optative Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 *sing.* { *I wish I did not keep thee,*  
Kōwaadchanuncounaz-toh.  
*I wish I did not keep him,*  
nōwaadchanōunaz-toh.  
*I wish I did not keep you,*  
kōwaadchanunōūnaouz-toh.  
*I wish I did not keep them,*  
nōwaadchanōunaouz-toh.

2 *sing.* { *I wish thou didst not keep me,*  
Kōwaadchanéinaz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst not keep him,*  
kōwaadchanōunaz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst not keep us,*  
kōwaadchaneinanonaz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst not keep*  
*them,*  
kōwaadchanounnaouz-toh.

3 *sing.* { *I wish he did not keep me,*  
Nōwaadchanukōounuz-toh.  
*I wish he did not keep thee,*  
kōwaadchanukōounaz-toh.  
*I wish he did not keep him,*  
ōwaadchanounaz-toh.  
*I wish he did not keep us,*  
nōwaadchanukōounanonuz-  
toh.  
*I wish he did not keep you,*  
kōwaadchanukōōaounouz-toh.  
*I wish he did not keep them,*  
ōwaadchanōunaouz-toh.

*Præter tense.*

1 *sing.* { *I wish I did not pay thee,*  
Kuppapaumuncounaz-toh.  
*I wish I did not pay him,*  
nuppapaumounaz-toh.  
*I wish I did not pay you,*  
kuppapaumuncōunaouz-toh.  
*I wish I did not pay them,*  
nuppapaumounaouz-toh.

2 *sing.* { *I wish thou didst not pay me,*  
Kuppapauméinaz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst not pay him,*  
kuppapaumounaz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst not pay us,*  
kuppapauméinanonuz-toh.  
*I wish thou didst not pay them,*  
kuppapaumounaouz-toh.

3 *sing.* { *I wish he did not pay me,*  
Nuppapaumukōounaz-toh.  
*I wish he did not pay thee,*  
kuppapaumukōounaz-toh.  
*I wish he did not pay him,*  
uppapaumbounaz-toh.  
*I wish he did not pay us,*  
nuppapaumukōōanonuz-toh.  
*I wish he did not pay you,*  
kuppapaumukōōunaouz-toh.  
*I wish he did not pay them,*  
uppapaumounaz-toh.



## Optative Mode.

*Præter tense.**Præter tense.*

1 plur. { *I wish we did not keep thee,*  
Kōowaadchanūcōunanonuz-  
toh.  
*I wish we did not keep him,*  
nōowaadchanōunanou-z-toh.  
*I wish we did not keep you,*  
kōowaadchanōunaou-z-toh.  
*I wish we did not keep them,*  
nōowaadchanōunaou-z-toh.

1 plur. { *I wish we did not pay thee,*  
Kuppapaumūcōunanonuz-  
toh.  
*I wish we did not pay him,*  
nuppapaumounanonuz-toh.  
*I wish we did not pay you,*  
kuppapaumūcōunaōaz-toh.  
*I wish we did not pay them,*  
nuppapaumounaōaz-toh.

2 plur. { *I wish ye did not keep me,*  
Kōowaadchanéinaōuz-toh.  
*I wish ye did not keep him,*  
kōowaadchanōnuaou-z-toh.  
*I wish ye did not keep us,*  
kōowaadchanéinanonaz-toh.  
*I wish ye did not keep them,*  
kōowaadchanounaou-z-toh.

2 plur. { *I wish ye did not pay me,*  
Kuppapauméinaōaz-toh.  
*I wish ye did not pay him,*  
kuppapaumoonaoaz-toh.  
*I wish ye did not pay us,*  
kuppapauméinnanonaz-toh.  
*I wish ye did not pay them,*  
kuppapaumoonaoaz-toh.

3 plur. { *I wish they did not keep me,*  
Nōowaadchanukōunaz-toh.  
*I wish they did not keep thee,*  
kōowaadchanukōunaz-toh.  
*I wish they did not keep him,*  
cōowaadchanounaoaz-toh.  
*I wish they did not keep us,*  
nōowaadchanukōunanonaz-  
toh.  
*I wish they did not keep you,*  
kōowaadchanukōunaou-z-  
toh.  
*I wish they did not keep them,*  
cōowaadchanounaoaz-toh.

3 plur. { *I wish they did not pay me,*  
Nuppapaumukōunaōoz-toh.  
*I wish they did not pay thee,*  
kuppapaumukōunaōoz-toh.  
*I wish they did not pay him,*  
uppapaumoonaz-toh.  
*I wish they did not pay us,*  
nuppapaumukōnnuanonaz-  
toh.  
*I wish they did not pay you,*  
kuppapaumukōunaōaz-toh.  
*I wish they did not pay them,*  
uppapaumounaoaz-toh.

[p. 54.]

The *Suffix form Animate Negative.*

## Suppositive Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { If I keep not thee,  
Wadchanuncoön.  
If I keep not him,  
wadchanoog.  
If I keep not you,  
wadchanuncoög.  
If I keep not them,  
wadchanoog.

2 sing. { If thou keep not me,  
wadchaneean.  
If thou keep not him,  
wadchanoadt.  
If thou keep not us,  
wadchaneeög.  
If thou keep not them,  
wadchanoadt.

3 sing. { If he keep not me,  
Wadchaneegk.  
If he keep not thee,  
wadchanukcoän.  
If he keep not him,  
wadchanunk.  
If he keep not us,  
wadchanukcoög.  
If he keep not you,  
wadchanukcoög.  
If he keep not them,  
wadchanunk.

*Present tense.*

1 sing. { If I pay not thee,  
Paumuncoön.  
If I pay not him,  
Paumoog.  
If I pay not you,  
Paumuncoög.  
If I pay not them,  
Paumoog.

2 sing. { If thou pay not me,  
Paumeean.  
If thou pay not him,  
Paumoadt.  
If thou pay not us,  
Paumeeög.  
If thou pay not them,  
Paumoadt.

3 sing. { If he pay not me,  
Paumeegk.  
If he pay not thee,  
paumukcoän.  
If he pay not him,  
paumunk.  
If he pay not us,  
paumukcoög.  
If he pay not you,  
paumukcoög.  
If he pay not them,  
paumunk.

## Suppositive Mode.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *If we keep not thee,*  
Wadchanunooog.  
*If we keep not him,*  
wadchanoogkut.  
*If we keep not you,*  
wadchanunooog.  
*If we keep not them,*  
wadchanoogkut.

2 plur. { *If ye keep not me,*  
Wadchaneeoog.  
*If ye keep not him,*  
wadchanoog.  
*If ye keep not us,*  
wadchaneeoog.  
*If ye keep not them,*  
wadchanoog.

3 plur. { *If they keep not me,*  
Wadchanehetteg.  
*If they keep not thee,*  
wadchanukooan.  
*If they keep not him,*  
wadchanahetteg.  
*If they keep not us,*  
wadchanukooog.  
*If they keep not you,*  
wadchanukooog.  
*If they keep not them,*  
wadchanahetteg.

*Present tense.*

1 plur. { *If we pay not thee,*  
Paumunooog.  
*If we pay not him,*  
paumoogkut.  
*If we pay not you,*  
paumunooog.  
*If we pay not them,*  
paumoogkut.

2 plur. { *If ye pay not me,*  
Paumeeoog.  
*If ye pay not him,*  
paumooog.  
*If ye pay not us,*  
paumeeoog.  
*If ye pay not them,*  
paumooog.

3 plur. { *If they pay not me,*  
Paumehetteg.  
*If they pay not thee,*  
paumukooan.  
*If they pay not him,*  
paumahetteg.  
*If they pay not us,*  
paumukooog.  
*If they pay not you,*  
paumukooog.  
*If they pay not them,*  
paumahetteg.



[p. 56.]

## Suppositive Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 sing. { *If I did not keep thee,*  
Wadchanuncoos.  
*If I did not keep him,*  
wadchanoogkus.  
*If I did not keep you,*  
wadchanuncoógkus.  
*If I did not keep them,*  
wadchanoogkus.

2 sing. { *If thou didst not keep me,*  
Wadchanees.  
*If thou didst not keep him,*  
wadchanoas.  
*If thou didst not keep us,*  
wadchaneegkus.  
*If thou didst not keep them,*  
wadchanoógkus.

3 sing. { *If he did not keep me,*  
Wadchaneekus.  
*If he did not keep thee,*  
wadchanukcoas.  
*If he did not keep him,*  
wadchanunkus.  
*If he did not keep us,*  
wadchanukcoógkus.  
*If he did not keep you,*  
wadchanukogkus.  
*If he did not keep them,*  
wadchanunkus.

*Præter tense.*

1 sing. { *If I did not pay thee,*  
Paumuncoos.  
*If I did not pay him,*  
paumoogkus.  
*If I did not pay you,*  
paumuncoógkus.  
*If I did not pay them,*  
paumoogkus.

2 sing. { *If thou didst not pay me,*  
Paumees.  
*If thou didst not pay him,*  
paumoas.  
*If thou didst not pay us,*  
paumeeogkus.  
*If thou didst not pay them,*  
paumoógkus.

3 sing. { *If he did not pay me,*  
Paumeekus.  
*If he did not pay thee,*  
paumukcoas.  
*If he did not pay him,*  
paumunkus.  
*If he did not pay us,*  
paumukcoogkus.  
*If he did not pay you,*  
paumukcoógkus.  
*If he did not pay them,*  
paumunkus.

## Suppositive Mode.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. { *If we did not keep thee,*  
Wadchanunooogkus.  
*If we did not keep him,*  
wadchanoogkutus.  
*If we did not keep you,*  
wadchanunooogkus.  
*If we did not keep them,*  
wadchanoogkutus.

2 plur. { *If ye did not keep me,\**  
Wadchaneeoogkus.  
*If ye did not keep him,*  
wadchanoogkus,  
*If ye did not keep us,*  
wadchaneeoogkus.  
*If ye did not keep them,*  
wadchanoogkus.

3 plur. { *If they did not keep me,*  
Wadchanehettegkis.  
*If they did not keep thee,*  
wadchanukooas.  
*If they did not keep him,*  
wadchanunkus.  
*If they did not keep us,*  
wadchanukooogkus.  
*If they did not keep you,*  
wadchanukooogkus.  
*If they did not keep them,*  
wadchanahettegkis.

*Præter tense.*

1 plur. { *If we did not pay thee,*  
Paumunooogkus.  
*If we did not pay him,*  
paumoogkutus.  
*If we did not pay you,*  
paumunooogkus.  
*If we did not pay them,*  
paumoogkutus.

2 plur. { *If ye did not pay me,*  
Paumeeogkus.  
*If ye did not pay him,*  
paumoogkus.  
*If ye did not pay us,*  
paumeeogkus.  
*If ye did not pay them,*  
paumoogkus.

3 plur. { *If they did not pay me,*  
Paumehettegkis.  
*If they did not pay thee,*  
paumukooas.  
*If they did not pay him,*  
paumunkus.  
*If they did not pay us,*  
paumukooogkus.  
*If they did not pay you,*  
paumukooogkus.  
*If they did not pay them,*  
paumahettegkis.

[p. 58.]

## The Indefinite Mode.

*Present tense.*

*Not to keep,*  
Wadchanounat.

*Present tense.*

*Not to pay,*  
Paummuounat.

The *third Person* of the *Suffix form Animate Negative* is found expressible in this *Mode Indefinite*: As

3 sing. { *Not to keep me,*  
Nōwadchanukōounat.  
*Not to keep thee,*  
kōwadchanukōounat.  
*Not to keep him,*  
ōwadchanounat.  
*Not to keep us,*  
nōwadchanukōounnanonut.  
*Not to keep you,*  
kōwadchanukōounnaout.  
*Not to keep them,*  
ōwadchanounat.

3 sing. { *Not to pay me,*  
Nuppaumukōounat.  
*Not to pay thee,*  
kuppaumukōounat.  
*Not to pay him,*  
uppaumounat.  
*Not to pay us,*  
nuppaumukōounnanonut.  
*Not to pay you,*  
kuppaumukōounnaout.  
*Not to pay them,*  
uppaumounnaout.

*So much for the Suffix form Animate Negative.*



The *Suffix form Animate Causative* is not universally applicable to this *Verb*; neither have I yet fully beat it out: onely in some chief wayes of the use of it in Speech I shall here set down, leaving the rest for afterwards, if God will, and that I live to adde unto this beginning.

*Affirmative.**Negative.*

- 1 { *I cause thee to keep me,*  
Kōwadchanumwaheshnuh-  
hog.  
*I cause thee to keep him,*  
kōwadchanumwahunun.  
*I cause thee to keep them,*  
kōwadchanumwahunununk.

- 1 { *I cause thee not to keep me,*  
Kōwadchanūwahūohnuh-  
hog.  
*I cause thee not to keep him,*  
kōwadchanumwahunōun.  
*I cause thee not to keep them,*  
kōwadchanumwahunō-  
unūk.

- 2 { *Thou makest me keep him,*  
Kōwadchanumwahren.  
*Thou makest me keep them,*  
kōwadchanumwāheneunk.

- 2 { *Thou makest me not keep him,*  
Kōwadchanumwahéin.  
*Thou makest me not keep them,*  
kōwadchanumwaheinunk.

- 3 { *He maketh me keep him,*  
Nōwadchanumwahikqun-  
uh.  
*He maketh me keep them,*  
nah nōwadchanūwahik-  
qūuh.

- 3 { *He maketh me not keep him,*  
Nōwadchanumwahikōoun-  
uh.  
*He maketh me not keep them,*  
Ibid.

*Imperative Mode.*

- { *Make me keep him,*  
Wadchanumwaheh n noh.  
*Make me keep them,*  
Nah wadchanumwaheh.

- { *Make me not keep him,*  
wadchanumwahehkon.  
*Make me not keep them,*  
Ibid.

*Suppositive Mode.*

- { *If thou make me keep him,*  
{ Wadchanumwahean yeuoh.

- { *If thou make me not keep him,*  
{ Wadchanumwaheean.

[p. 60.]

*I WAS purposed to put in no more Paradigms of Verbs ; but considering that all Languages (so farre as I know) and this also, do often make use of the Verb Substantive Passive, and in the reason of Speech it is of frequent use : Considering also that it doth differ in its formation from other Verbs, and that Verbals are often derived out of this form, as Wadchanittuonk, Salvation, &c. &c. I have therefore here put down an Example thereof.*

### The Verb Substantive Passive.

Noowadchanit, *I am kept.*

### Indicative Mode.

#### *Present tense.*

*sing.* { *I am kept,*  
Noowadchanit.  
*Thou art kept,*  
koowadchanit.  
*He is kept,*  
wadchanau.

#### *Present tense.*

*plur.* { *We are kept,*  
Noowadchanitteamun.  
*Ye are kept,*  
koowadchanitteamwoo.  
*They are kept,*  
wadchanoog.

#### *Præter tense.*

*sing.* { *I was kept,*  
Noowadchanitteap.  
*Thou wast kept,*  
koowadchanitteap.  
*He was kept,*  
wadchanop.

#### *Præter tense.*

*plur.* { *We were kept,*  
Noowadchanitteamunónup.  
*Ye were kept,*  
koowadchanitteamwóp.  
*They were kept,*  
wadchanopanneg..

## Imperative Mode.

*sing.* { *Let me be kept,*  
Wadchanitteadi.  
*Be thou kept,*  
wadchanitteash.  
*Let him be kept,*  
wadchanaj.

*plur.* { *Let us be kept,*  
Wadchanitteatuh.  
*Be ye kept,*  
wadchanitteak.  
*Let them be kept,*  
wadchanaj.

## Optative Mode.

*Present tense.*

*sing.* { *I wish I be kept,*  
Nōowaadchanittean-toh.  
*I wish thou be kept,*  
kōowaadchanittean-toh.  
*I wish he be kept,*  
waadchanon-toh.

*Present tense.*

*plur.* { *I wish we be kept,*  
Nōowaadchanitteanan-toh.  
*I wish ye be kept,*  
kōowaadchanitteaneau-toh.  
*I wish they be kept,*  
waadchanoneau-toh.

*Præter tense.*

*sing.* { *I wish I was kept,*  
Nōowaadchanitteanaz-toh.  
*I wish thou wast kept,*  
kōowaadchanitteanaz-toh.  
*I wish he was kept,*  
waadchanonaz-toh.

*Præter tense.*

*plur.* { *I wish we were kept,*  
Nōowaadchanitteananonuz-toh.  
*I wish ye were kept,*  
kōowaadchanitteanaouz-toh.  
*I wish they were kept,*  
waadchanonaouz-toh.



## Suppositive Mode.

*Present tense.*

sing.	When I am kept,
	Wadchanitteaoñ.
	When thou art kept,

wadchanitteaan.

When he is kept,

wadchanit noh.

*Present tense.*

plur.	When we are kept,
	Wadchanitteaoñ.
	When ye are kept,

wadchanitteaoñ.

When they are kept,

wadchanit nag.

The *Præter tense* is formed by *adding* (us or ás) unto the *Present tense*.

## Indefinite Mode.

Wadchanittéinát,

*To be kept.*

The form *Negative* of the Verb *Substantive Passive*.

## Indicative Mode.

*Present tense.*

sing.	I am not kept,
	Noowadchanitteoñ.
	Thou art not kept,

koowadchanitteoñ.

He is not kept,

Mat wadchanau.

*Present tense.*

plur.	We are not kept,
	Noowadchanitteoñmun.
	Ye are not kept,

koowadchanitteoñmoo.

They are not kept,

Mat wadchanoog.

*Præter tense.*

sing.	I was not kept,
	Noowadchanitteoñp.
	Thou wast not kept,

koowadchanitteoñp.

He was not kept,

Mat wadchanôup.

*Præter tense.*

plur.	We were not kept, [up.
	Noowadchanitteoñmunnon-
	Ye were not kept,

koowadchanitteoñmwoop.

They were not kept,

Mat wadchanoop.

*Imperative Mode of the form Negative Passive.*

*sing.* { *Be thou not kept,*  
Wadchanittuhkon.  
*Let not him be kept,*  
wadchittekitch.

*plur.* { *Be not ye kept,*  
Wadchanittuhkook.  
*Let not them be kept,*  
wadchanittekhetich.

*Suppositive Mode Passive Negative.**Present tense.*

*sing.* { *When I am not kept,*  
Wadchaneumuk.  
*When thou art not kept,*  
wadchaninoomuk.  
*When he is not kept,*  
wadchanómuk.

*Present tense.*

{ The *Plural* is formed by  
adding (Mat) unto the  
form *Affirmative*.

The *Præter tense* is formed by adding [us or ás] to the *Present tense*.

*The Indefinite Mode Passive Negative.*

Wadchanóunát,

*Not to be kept.*

[p. 64.]

A TABLE of the Grammar of the *Suffix Verbs Affirmatical Addition* after the word, are set down: As in the *Indicative* and *Optative Modes*; The *Imperative* by the Suffix. Also note that (*I him*) and *Thou* the *Affix*; and (*Do thou him*) in the *Imperative* and what is prefixed or suffixed to the Radix is

## Indicative Mode.

## Imperative Mode.

*Present tense.**Præter tense.*

1 { 1 oush  
2 *radic*  
3 unumwō  
4 oog

1 { 1 unup  
2 óp  
3 unumwop  
4 opanneg

1 { 1 unutti  
2 onti  
3 unonkqutch  
4 onti

2 { 1 eh or ah  
2 *radic.*  
3 imun  
4 oog

2 { 1 ip  
2 op  
3 imunónup  
4 opanneg

2 { 1 eh  
2 *radic.*  
3 innean  
4 *radic.*

3 { 1 uk  
2 uk  
3 oh or uh  
4 ukqun  
5 ukkou  
6 oh or uh

3 { 1 ukup  
2 úkup  
3 opoh  
4 ukqunónup  
5 ukōwop  
6 opoh

3 { 1 itch  
2 ukqush  
3 onch  
4 ukqutteuh  
5 ukōok  
6 onch

1 { 1 unumun  
2 óun  
3 unumun  
4 óunónog

1 { 1 unumunónup  
2 óunónup  
3 unumunónup  
4 óunónuppanneg

1 { 1 unuttuh  
2 ontuh  
3 unuttuh  
4 ontuh

2 { 1 imwō  
2 au  
3 imun  
4 auoog

2 { 1 imwop  
2 auop  
3 imunónup  
4 auopanneg

2 { 1 egk or ig  
2 ók  
3 innean  
4 ók

3 { 1 ukquog  
2 ukquog  
3 ouh  
4 ukqunonog  
5 ukōoog  
6 ouh

3 { 1 ukuppanneg  
2 ukuppanneg  
3 auopuh [neg  
4 ukqunónuppanneg  
5 ukōópanneg  
6 auopoh

3 { 1 ukquttei or é-  
2 ukqush[hettich  
3 ahettich  
4 ukqutteuh  
5 ukōok  
6 ahettich



[p. 65.]

*firmative* wherein onely the *Suffixes*, viz. The Gram-  
for the *Affix* or *Prefix*, you may observe it is used onely  
and *Suppositive Modes*, lay it by, and are varied onely  
*him*) in the *Indicative Mode*, is the *Radicall word* with  
*Mode* is the *Radicall word* without any *Affix* or *Suffix* :  
Grammar.

## Optative Mode.

## Suppositive Mode.

<i>Present tense.</i>		<i>Præter tense.</i>		<i>Present tense.</i>		<i>Præter tense.</i>	
1	1 unon	1	1 unuaz	1	1 unon	1	1 unos
	2 on		2 ónaz		2 og		2 ogkus
	3 uneau		3 ununnaóuz		3 unog		3 unogkus
	4 óneau		4 ónaóuz		4 og		4 ogkus
2	1 in	2	1 ineaz	2	1 ean	2	1 eas
	2 on		2 onaz		2 adt <i>or</i> at		2 as
	3 unean		3 uneanónuz		3 eog		3 egkus
	4 óneau		4 ónaóuz		4 adt <i>or</i> at		4 as
3	1 ukqun	3	1 ukqunaz	3	1 it	3	1 is
	2 ukqun		2 ukqunaz		2 ukquean		2 ukqueas
	3 on		3 onaz [nuz		3 ont		3 os
	4 ukqunán		4 ukqunano-		4 ukqueog		4 ukqueogkus
	5 ukquneau		5 ukqunaóuz		5 ukqueóg		5 ukqueógkus
	6 on		6 onaouz		6 ont		6 os
1	1 unan	1	1 unanónuz	1	1 unog	1	1 unogkus
	2 ónán		2 ónanónuz		2 ogkut		2 ogkutus
	3 unan		3 unanónuz		3 unog		3 unogkus
	4 ónán		4 ónanonuz		4 ogkut		4 ogkutus
2	1 uneau	2	1 ineáouz	2	1 eóg	2	1 eógkus
	2 oneau		2 ónaóuz		2 óg		2 ógkus
	3 unean		3 ineanonuz		3 eóg		3 eógkus
	4 óneua		4 ónaouz		4 óg		4 ogkus
3	1 ukquneau	3	1 ukqunaouz	3	1 hettit	3	1 ehettis
	2 ukquneau		2 ukqunaouz		2 ukquean		2 ukqueas
	3 óneau		3 ónaouz [uz		3 áhettit		3 ahettis
	4 ukqunán		4 ukqunanon-		4 ukqueog		4 ukqueogkus
	5 ukquneau		5 ukqunaóuz		5 ukqueóg		5 ukqueóg
	6 óneau		6 ónaóuz		6 ahettit		6 ahettis

*Onely remember that (toh) is to  
be annexed to every person  
and variation in this Mode.*

[p 66.]

*I HAVE now finished what I shall do at present : and in a word or two to satisfie the prudent Enquirer how I found out these new wayes of Grammar, which no other Learned Language (so far as I know) useth ; I thus inform him : God first put into my heart a compassion over their poor Souls, and a desire to teach them to know Christ, and to bring them into his Kingdome. Then presently I found out (by God's wise providence) a pregnant witted young man, who had been a Servant in an English house, who pretty well understood his own Language, and hath a clear pronounciation: Him I made my Interpreter. By his help I translated the Commandments, the Lord's Prayer, and many Texts of Scripture : Also I compiled both Exhortations and Prayers by his help. I diligently marked the difference of their Grammar from ours : When I found the way of them, I would pursue a word, a noun, a verb, through all variations I could think of. And thus I came at it. We must not sit still and look for miracles ; Up, and be doing, and the Lord will be with thee. Prayer and pains, through faith in Christ Jesus will do any thing. Nil tam difficile quod non—I do believe and hope that the Gospel shall be spread to all the ends of the Earth, and dark corners of the world by such a way, and that such Instruments as the Churches shall send forth for that end and purpose. Lord hasten those good days, and pour out that good Spirit upon thy people. Amen.*

FINIS.

NOTES AND OBSERVATIONS ON ELIOT'S INDIAN GRAMMAR. ADDRESSED TO JOHN PICKERING, ESQ. BY PETER S. DU PONCEAU,\*

THE great and good man, whose work has given rise to the following observations, did not foresee, when he wrote his Indian Grammar, that it would be sought after and studied by the learned of all nations, as a powerful help towards the improvement of a science not then in existence ; I mean the *Comparative Science of Languages*, which of late has made such progress in our own country, as well as in *Europe* where our aboriginal idioms have become a subject of eager investigation. The *Augustine* of New England had no object in view, but that which he expresses in his title page,—“ the help of such as desired to learn the Indian language for the furtherance of the Gospel among the natives.” But that worldly fame, which he did not seek, awaited him at the end of two centuries ; and his works, though devoted to religion alone, have become important sources of human learning.

Religion and Science, well understood, are handmaids to each other. In no instance is this truth more evident than in the branch of knowledge of which we are treating. For it is to the unwearied and truly apostolick labours of Christian missionaries, and of societies instituted for the propagation of the Gospel among distant nations, that we are indebted for the immense materials which we already possess on the subject of the various languages of the earth. The Roman Congregation *De propagandâ fide*† gave the first impulse, which the zeal of the other Christian denominations has, in later times, not only followed but improved upon. The numerous translations of the sacred volume, which have been made under the patronage of the British, Russian, and American Bible Societies, into languages, many of which were till then unknown, except by their names, have afforded ample means of comparison between those various idioms ; the value of which is

\* These Remarks having been written at the suggestion of my learned friend, Mr. Pickering, I have thought it right to inscribe them to him as a just tribute of friendship and respect.  
P. S. D.

† Many Grammars, Dictionaries, and Vocabularies of Asiatick, African and American languages, have been published under the direction of that Society, the only complete collection of which, perhaps, is in the Vatican or in their own library. As the science advances, they will no doubt be reprinted, as the present work is, for the benefit of the learned.



not yet so fully understood, as there can be no doubt it will be at a future day.

The object of this science is the study of man through that noble faculty, which distinguishes him from the rest of the animal creation; the faculty of "holding communication from soul to soul;" an earnest, as I might say, and a foretaste of the enjoyments of celestial life. It is a branch, and an important one, of the "history of the human mind;" a subject, to the study of which the Lockes, the Mallebranches, the Reids, the Stewarts, the Wolfs, the Leibnitzs and other distinguished men, whose names it is needless to mention here, have devoted their lives. The ignorant it is true, have said that "metaphysicks is vanity;" but the ignorant may jest as much as they will, they can never succeed in eradicating from the breast of immortal man

"This pleasing hope, this fond desire,  
This longing after something unpossessed,"

which so powerfully impels him to search into every thing that may throw light on his physical and moral existence.

"'Tis the Divinity that stirs within us"—

It makes us feel that our soul is immortal; and it is the agitation produced by this feeling, that makes us very naturally seek and love to dwell on the proofs of our glorious immortality. Hence the delight, which we take in the study of ourselves and of every thing that relates to us, and the efforts, which we make to carry our knowledge as far as the Almighty has permitted it to extend. He, who created the desire, well knows how to set bounds to our foolish inquiries; but, limited as it is, the whole circle, by which our knowledge is bounded, is still open to our researches; and we are yet very far from having reached its utmost verge.

God has revealed himself to mankind in two ways; by his sacred writings, and by the works of nature, constantly open before us; and it is the privilege as well as the duty of man to study both to the advancement of his glory. Therefore while the divine labours to discover the truths, which are concealed or rather veiled under the mysterious language of the former, the philosopher, irresistibly impelled by a similar desire, will interrogate the latter; and, with due submission, will view and compare all that can be grasped by his understanding and by his senses. Who knows but that, as this world advances towards its inevitable end,

it may have been decreed that the knowledge of man should go on increasing, until the blaze of eternal light should burst at once upon the whole race? But I find I have been involuntarily drawn into the regions of fancy; it is time to turn to the less fascinating topics which are the subject of these notes.

Yet before I proceed to the Language of the Massachusetts Indians, I may be permitted to shew what fruits have been derived from the pursuit of our science, since it has begun to be considered as an interesting object of study. What great advantage may be derived from it in the end,—whether it will enable us to solve the problem of the origin of the population of this continent, facilitate the formation of an universal oral or written language, or lead to some other discovery not yet thought of, though not less important than those that have been mentioned, is yet in the womb of futurity; nevertheless, it is certain, that the researches of modern philologists have brought to light many curious and interesting facts, of which our ancestors were entirely ignorant, and by means of which the science has acquired certain fixed points, from whence we may proceed with greater ease to further and more particular investigations.

By the labours of the illustrious Adelung, a census, as it were, has been taken of all the languages and dialects (that are known to us) existing on the surface of the earth. They have been all registered and enumerated, and it is now ascertained, as nearly as possible, that their aggregate numbers amount to 3064; of which Africa has 276, Europe 587, Asia 987, and America (the largest number of all) 1214, being more than Asia and Africa together, and nearly as many as the whole of the old continent, Africa excepted. It is true that in the interior, and, perhaps, even on the coast of the latter country, there are nations yet undiscovered, and whose languages, of course, are not known to us; and in the enumeration of *American* idioms it is easy to perceive, that the same tribes are sometimes registered more than once under different names; but when we consider, that there are also unknown Indian nations on our continent, we shall, by setting off these against those that are variously exhibited, have a tolerable approximation of their numbers and different idioms; and, upon the whole, this inquiry leads us to the almost certain conclusion, that all the languages and dialects of our globe, known and unknown, do not exceed the number of *four thousand*, but, on the contrary, the probability seems to be that they do not reach it.

It is ascertained, at least nothing has yet appeared to the contrary, that the languages of our American Indians are rich in words

and grammatical forms; that they are adequate to the expression even of abstract ideas, and that they have a mode (different from our own) by which they can easily combine their radical sounds with each other so as to frame new words, whenever they stand in need of them. What is still more extraordinary, the model of those languages has been found to be the same from north to south, varieties being only observed in some of the details, which do not affect the similarity of the general system; while on the Eastern continent languages are found, which in their grammatical organization have no relation whatever with each other. And yet our American idioms, except where they can be traced to a common stock, differ so much from each other in point of *etymology*, that no affinity whatever has been yet discovered between them. The philosopher, who considers this wonderful richness of forms in the languages of our Indians, will be apt to think, that it is the first stage of human speech; that all languages have been thus complex in their origin, and have acquired simplicity in the progress of civilization; but if he will only bestow a single look upon the oral language of the *Chinese*, he will find his system strongly shaken; for it cannot be civilization, that made this most imperfect idiom what it is; and not a single vestige remains in it to shew that it was ever a complex or even a polysyllabick language. On the contrary, it is to be presumed, that if the Chinese were to adopt an alphabetical mode of writing in lieu of their hieroglyphicks, their oral speech would be found insufficient at least for written communications, and the nation would be compelled to adopt new words and new grammatical forms. For their written characters represent no sounds to the ear, but only ideas to the mind; the beauty of their poetry, as well as their prose, consists in the elegance of the associations of ideas presented to the mind through the *visual* sense; and their communications through the *ear* serve only for the more common and coarser purposes of life. What affinity is there then between such a language and those of the Indians of America; and how can they be said to be derived from each other? This is an interesting problem, the solution of which yet remains to be discovered.

It has been, moreover, ascertained that one nation at least on the eastern continent of Asia, the *Sedentary Tschuktschi*, speak an *American* language; a dialect of that, which begins in Greenland, crosses the American continent (on both coasts of which it is found among the people called *Eskimaux*,) is spoken at Norton Sound, and the mouth of the Anadir, and from thence northward, along the coast to the peninsula called *Tschutschkoi Noss*, or the pro-



montory of the *Tschutschki*. On the other hand, no nation has yet been discovered on this continent, that speaks an Asiatick language. The grammatical forms of the languages of the Koriaks, Lamouts, Kanitchadales, and other nations of the eastern coast of Asia, are not yet known to us ; and while we are taking pains to investigate the languages of our own country, it is much to be wished, that the learned men of the Russian empire would collect and communicate information respecting those of their Kamtchadale, Samoyed and Siberian tribes ; so that a full comparison might be established between them and those of our Indians.

It has been also ascertained, (and the discovery was first partially made by the great navigator Cook,) that from the peninsula of Malacca in Asia to the Cocos Island, a hundred leagues from the coast of *Tierra Firme*, and through the various clusters of islands in the South Sea, and also in the Island of Madagascar, dialects of the same language (the Malay) are spoken ; which, with other indications, has led an ingenious American writer, Dr. McCulloh of Baltimore, to suppose that the South Sea was once a continent, and that America was peopled through that channel.\* This question deserves further investigation ; and the Malay, as well as its cognate languages, ought to be studied with that view. No traces of this language have been yet discovered on the coast of the American continent ; but they may appear on further research.

I should exceed the bounds which I have prescribed to myself, if I were to take notice of all the interesting facts, which the comparative science of languages has brought to light. Nor is this the proper place to do it. My task is that of an annotator of the venerable Eliot's Grammar of the (Massachusetts) Indian language ; and my object is to communicate, in aid of this valuable work, some of the most material facts and observations which several careful perusals of its contents, with collateral studies, have disclosed and suggested to me. Among those studies, I have not neglected that of his translation of the sacred writings, from which I have derived a greater insight into the nature, forms and construction of this curious language, than could be obtained from the Grammar alone ; for this is by no means so full as it might have been, if the illustrious author, impelled by his zeal for the propagation of the Christian faith, had not written it for immediate use, as introductory to the further instruction, which he was so well quali-

\* *Researches on America, being an attempt to settle some points relative to the Aborigines of America, &c.* By James H. McCulloh, junr. M. D. Baltimore, Robinson, 1817. Octavo.

fied to give to those who stood in need of it. I have had no other view in writing these notes than to facilitate the labours of my fellow students, and shall be happy, if my efforts shall prove successful, though but in an inconsiderable degree.

There can be no doubt, that this language is a dialect of that widely extended idiom which was spoken, with more or less variation, by the Souriquois and Micmacs in Nova Scotia, the Etchemins, who inhabited what is now the State of Maine, the Massachusetts, Narragansets, and other various tribes of the Almouchiquois\* in New England, the Knisteneaux, and Algonkins or Chipeways in Canada, the Mohicans in New York, the Lenni Lenape, or Delawares, Nanticokes and other nations of the same stock in Pennsylvania and Maryland, and lastly, by the Powhatans in Virginia; beyond which, to the *southward*, their race has not been discovered, but extended itself *westward*, under various names, such as Kickapoos, Potawatamies, Miamis or Twightwees, &c. to the great river Mississippi; on the other side of which the Sioux or Naudowessie, and the language of the Pawnees, (or *Panis*,) branching into various dialects, appear to predominate. On this side, this rich idiom of the Wapanachki, or Men of the East, and the Iroquois with its kindred languages, the Huron or Wyandot, and others, enjoyed exclusive sway; while to the southward, towards Louisiana and Florida, a number of idioms are found, which do not at all appear to be derived from each other, such as the Creek or Muskohgee, Chickasaw and Choctaw, Uchee, (yet unknown, but said to have a character peculiar to itself,) Atacapas, Chetimachas and others, among which no analogy is to be found by the comparison of their different vocabularies. The same phenomenon has been observed in the kingdom of Mexico; where several languages entirely different are crowded together on a small spot, while elsewhere as in Peru, Chili and Paraguay, some one or two master idioms extend their dominion in various dialects, like our Wapanachki and Iroquois, to a very great distance.† These remarkable facts will not escape the attention of the philosopher; but being foreign to my present subject, I have thought it sufficient merely to point them out to the observation of those who feel an interest in these disquisitions.

I shall not waste time in proving, by the analogy of words, the

\* The French called the New England Indians by the general name of *Almouchiquois* or *Armouchiquois*, which name is to be seen in several of the ancient maps.

† The Aztek or Mexican proper, Othomi, Tarascan, Huastecan, &c.

strong affinity which exists between the Massachusetts and the Lenape, Algonkin and Mohican languages; of all which the former more or less partakes, not without a mixture of the Souriquois, Etchemin and other Nova Scotia dialects; it is sufficient to quote what my venerable friend, Mr. Heckewelder, wrote to me on the 8th of April, 1819.\* "I once had," he says, "Eliot's Bible here for examination, and well understanding the Mohican language, I soon worked myself into the *Natick*, so that I could not only understand the one half of it at least, but became quite familiar with the language. There are certain letters in the words which are changed, as I have already somewhere mentioned to you." This change of letters is noticed by Eliot himself in his Grammar, page 2, where he instances the word *dog*, called *anum* by the Massachusetts proper, *alum* by the Nipmuk, and *arum* by the northern Indians. The Delawares say *allum*, the Algonkins *alim*, the Etchemins or Abenakis, (Indians of Penobscot and St. John's) *allomoos*, and the Miamis *lamah*.† The changes of the consonants *l*, *m*, *n*, and *r* for each other are very frequent in the various dialects of American languages. Thus the Delawares of New Sweden called themselves *Renni Renape*, instead of *Lenni Lenape*, making use of the *r* where the others have the *l*. These variations are very necessary to be attended to in the comparative study of our aboriginal idioms; other instances of them will appear in the course of these notes.

Notwithstanding the strong affinity, which exists between the Massachusetts and these various languages of the Algonkin or Lenape class, is too clear and too easy of proof to be seriously controverted, yet it is certain that a superficial observer might with great plausibility deny it altogether. He would only have to compare the translation of the Lord's prayer into the Massachusetts, as given by Eliot in his Bible, Matthew vi. 9, and Luke xi. 2, with that of Heckewelder into the Delaware from Matthew, in the Historical Transactions, vol. i. page 439, where he would not find two words in these two languages bearing the least affinity to each other. But this does not arise so much from the difference of the idioms, as from their richness, which afforded to the translators multitudes of words and modes of expressing the same ideas, from which to make a choice; and they happened not to hit upon the same forms of expression. Thus Eliot translates the words "*Our*

\* The numerous letters and other communications, which I have received from Mr. Heckewelder on the subject of the Indian languages, will be considered at a future day as a most valuable and interesting collection. They are carefully preserved.

† See Barton's New Views, Comparative Vocab. Verbo *Dog*.



*Father which art in heaven,*" by Nooshun Kesukqut, which literally means, "Our Father who art in the starry place, among the great luminaries of the sky," from the Delaware *Gischuch*, the sun, which the Narragansets called *Keesuckquand*, and adored it by that name;\* whence Kesuck, or Keesuck, (or rather Keesukh with a guttural *χ* at the end,) by which these nations designated what we call the *sky* or the *heavens*, and also the *sun* and *the space of a day*. This NooshunKesukqut might easily have been rendered in the Delaware by *Nooch Gischuchink*, "*Our father heaven or sun in,*" (the preposition *in* being expressed in the Massachusetts by the termination *ut* or *qut*, and in the Delaware by *ink*, as is usual in the Indian languages;) but Zeisberger and Heckewelder preferred substituting for the word *Nooch*, which is that by which children address their natural father, the more elegant word *Wetochemelenk*; and in turning to Mr. Heckewelder's Correspondence in the *Histor. Transactions*, p. 421, it will be found, that they had still a choice of other terms for the same word *father*; such is the wonderful richness of these *barbarous* languages. It may be remarked here, that even Eliot's own translations of the Lord's prayer, as given in Matthew and Luke, differ from each other more than the variations of the text require; as for instance, in the sentence "Give us this day (or day by day) our daily bread; in Matthew this is translated by *Nummeetsuonqash asekesukokish† assamaiinean yeuyeu kesukod*, which literally means "Our victuals of every day give us *this this* (for energy's sake) day on, or *sun on*." And in Luke xi. 2, he translates it thus: *Assamaiinean kokokesukodae nutasesesukokke‡ petukqunneg*, by which the text is literally rendered, in the same order of words; "Give us day by day our daily bread." These observations I have thought it necessary to make, with the expectation that they may be useful to the student, in his comparative views of the Indian languages.

I ought to observe here also, that the language of Eliot's Grammar may, possibly, not be exactly the same with that of his trans-

\* See Roger Williams' Key, Chap. xii. in 3 Mass. Hist. Col. p. 217.

† *Daily* or every day, every *sun*; from *kesuk*, sun, as above mentioned.

‡ I am inclined to believe, that there is here an error of the press, and that this word should have been printed *nuttasesesukokke*, from *kesuk*, day or sun, and the *t* should have been duplicated for the sake of the affixed pronoun *n*, so as to read *nut-ta* or *n'ta*, and not *nu-ta*, &c.

[Mr. Du Ponceau's conjecture is well founded. He uses the edition of 1680, which, although it is the revised one, is evidently incorrect in this instance. The edition of 1661 has the word as Mr. Du Ponceau here supposes it should be—*nuttasesesukokke*.]

lation of the Bible. There are some differences in the words, as well as in the forms of speech, which it is indispensable that the student should be aware of. For instance; in his Grammar, page 13, he gives the word *nequt*, (from the Delaware *n'gutti*,) to express the numeral *one*, whereas in his Bible he more commonly makes use of *pasuk*, from the Algonkin *pegik* and Chippeway *pashik*. Thus he says *pasuk cherub*, "one cherub." 2 Chron. iii. 11. *Pasuk ox, lamb, ram*. Numb. xxviii. 27, 28, 29. "*Pasukqunnuco weyauso*," *one flesh*. Gen. ii. 24. And so in other places. As I proceed in my observations upon his Grammar, I shall also shew some differences in the forms. Yet the two languages (if in fact he did employ more than one dialect) appear to be substantially the same.

This translation of the Bible by our venerable Eliot is a rich and valuable mine of Indian philology. A complete grammar and dictionary might, with labour and perseverance, be extracted from it; for there is hardly a mode or figure of speech, which is not to be found somewhere in the sacred writings. It has been of great use to me in the investigation of the character and structure of the American languages, and I hope to derive still further benefit from it. Every copy of it, that is yet extant, ought to be preserved with the greatest care, as it is hardly to be hoped that it will ever be entirely reprinted.

It is not, however, every attempt at translation into the Indian languages, that ought to be trusted to by the student. Indeed, it is but too true, that even simple vocabularies, when not made by persons, who have resided long among the Indians or who are extremely careful and judicious, are in general miserably deficient. Such is that of the language of the Delawares of New Sweden, published by Campanius Holm at Stockholm in 1696, with Luther's Catechism in Swedish and Indian; both of which (the vocabulary and the translation) are exceedingly faulty, and betray the grossest ignorance of the language. Mr. Heckewelder is of opinion, that the writer knew but little of it himself, and that he compiled his work with the aid of Indian traders, by whom he was constantly led into error. Some of his mistakes are truly ludicrous. He translates the words "Gracious God" by *Sweet Manitto*; but the word *vinckan*, (it should be *wingan*,) by which he attempts to express *sweet*, is one, which in the Delaware language, is only applied to eatables; so that the sense, which he conveys to an *Indian*, is that of *O sweet tasted Manitto!* Yet no language is richer in suitable appellations for the Deity. In the same manner, when he means to express the verb "to love" in a divine sense, he uses the word *tahottamen*, applicable only to the liking, which men have for perishable things, when he had *eholan*, from the substantive *ahol-*



*lowagan*, (*love*,) which it is most probable he was unacquainted with. These observations were communicated to me by Mr. Heckewelder, with many others of the same kind; which, while they prove the ignorance of the writer of that book, afford additional evidence of the astonishing richness of our Indian languages, and of the multitude of words, by means of which they can discriminate between the most delicate shades of the same thought. The verb *to love* is still differently, but not improperly, expressed by our Eliot: "*Womoncok kummatwomcoóg*," *love one another*. *Matt. v. 44*. This word is derived from *wunnegen*, *good*; Delaware *wuliechen*, it is good or well done. *Kah kusseh mo ahche wunnegen*, "And behold it was very good." *Gen. i. 31*. From the same root is the word *wunanum*, *bless*; *Wunanum Jehovah*, "Bless the Lord." *Ps. ciii. 1*. There appears to be no end to this rich variety.

I cannot help observing here, that the same richness, not only in terms applicable to *physical* subjects, but in *moral* and *metaphysical* terms, is to be found in the southern as well as in the northern languages. Thus in the Huastecan idiom (New Spain) we have

*Cánezomtaba*, love, in a general sense.

*Canezal*, to love (in this sense.)

*Lehnaxtaláh*, love with desire (*amor deseando*.)

*Lehnal*, to love, in this sense (*apetecer*.)

*Cacnaxtabal*, love with courtship (*amor cortesano*.)

*Cacnal*, to love, in this sense (*cortejar*.)

*Cacnax*, a lover, in this sense (*cortejo*.)

ZENTENO'S GRAMMAR, p. 51.

But it is time that I should have done with these general observations. I shall proceed now to remark more directly on the contents of the Grammar, which is the immediate subject of these notes.

## I. Alphabet.

(Gram. p. 1.)\*

It is much to be regretted, that the learned have not yet agreed upon some mode of communicating to the ear, through the eye, an uniform impression of the effects of the various sounds produced by the human organs of speech. The only

\* The reader will observe, that this and the other references to the Grammar are made to the *original* paging of that work, which is preserved in the margin of the present edition.



way to obtain this desirable end, is for some person endowed with correct judgment and a nice, discriminating ear, to propose an alphabet, or table of signs, which, after a time, cannot fail (with perhaps some slight variations) to be generally adopted. My learned friend, Mr. Pickering, of Salem, in an excellent Essay, lately published in the fourth volume of the *Memoirs of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences*, has broken the ice and proposed an alphabet for our own Indian languages, which has the merit of great simplicity. It is understood, that its principles are to be followed in the publication of several vocabularies, that are to be inserted in the Journal of the late Expedition to the Westward under the command of Major Long, which is shortly to be put to the press by Mr. *Nuttall*; and there is no doubt that his example will be followed by others, particularly by missionaries, to whom the Essay has been transmitted by the missionary societies. If, as there is great reason to expect, Mr. Pickering's orthography gets into general use among us, America will have had the honour of taking the lead in procuring an important auxiliary to philological science.

It is universally admitted, that the alphabets of the principal European nations, which have been hitherto used to represent the sounds of our Indian languages, are inadequate to the purpose. The *English* is anomalous, and its powers not sufficiently determined. Its system of *vowels* is particularly defective. The *French* partakes of the same defects, though in a less degree; and in other respects is too often apt to mislead, because its consonants are generally unarticulated at the end of words. The *German* is more perfect than either; but German ears do not sufficiently discriminate between the hard and soft consonants, such as *b* and *p*, *g* hard and *k*, and *d* and *t*, by which considerable confusion is introduced. It will be recollected, that in Zeisberger's Vocabulary of the Delaware, the letter *g* is frequently used as *homophonous* with *k*, because, it is said, the printer had not a sufficient number of types to furnish the latter character as often as it was wanted. Notwithstanding this defect, however, it must be acknowledged that a better idea of the sounds of the Indian languages is given by means of the German alphabet than of any other.

Our author has, of course, made use of the *English* letters to express the sounds of the *Massachusetts* language; in consequence of which, it is sometimes difficult to recognize even the same words differently spelt by Zeisberger in the *Delaware*. Thus the latter writes *n'dee*, (*my heart*,) which is to be pronounced as if spelt *n'day*, according to the powers of the

*English* alphabet. Eliot, on the contrary, writes it *nuttah*. This makes it appear a different word, in which we scarcely perceive an analogy with the former. By the first syllable, *nut*, he means to express the sounds, which the *German* represents by *n'd* (perhaps *n't*, for the reason above suggested,) the short *u* standing for the interval, or sheva, between the two consonants; which Zeisberger more elegantly represents by an apostrophe. The last syllable, *tah*, is the *German* *dee* or *tee*, (*English* *day* or *tay*,) the *a* being pronounced acute, as in *grace*, *face*. If our author had selected the diphthong *ay* to express this sound, and reserved the *a* to represent its broad pronunciation in *far*, *car*, the student would have been much better able to perceive the analogy between the *Massachusetts* and its cognate idioms. But that was not his object; and it was enough for him that the mode of spelling, which he adopted, was sufficient for his purpose. Had he taken the other course, *n'dee* and *n'tay* would have been immediately recognized to be the same word; while *n'dee* and *nuttah* hardly shew any resemblance. It ought to be observed, that, although our venerable grammarian, in his alphabet, ascribes the acute pronunciation to the letter *a*, (except when it takes its short sound before a consonant,) and generally expresses the broad sound of that letter by *au*, yet there are many words, in which it has the open sound, especially when followed by *h*: But this can only be discovered by comparison with other languages, derived from the same stock.

The *whistled W*, of which he takes no notice, but which it is evident exists in the *Massachusetts*, as well as in the other *Wapanacki* idioms, he represents sometimes by *w* and sometimes also by short *u*, as in *uppaumauopoh*, "they did pay him," for *w'pau-mauopoh*. This is placed beyond a doubt by the circumstance of the personal pronouns affixed to the verbs; *n'* for the first person, *k'* for the second, and *w'* for the third; being the same in the *Delaware* and *Massachusetts* languages. Before a vowel, he employs the *w*, as in *wantamoooh*, "he is not wise;" and sometimes prefixes the *oo*, as in "cowadchanumcoun," *he does not keep it*. This *oo*, placed before the *w*, was probably meant to express the peculiarity of the *whistled* sound, by which he seems to have been not a little embarrassed. I believe he once meant to have represented this sound by *vf*, to which he ascribes a peculiar pronunciation, different from that of *v* in *save*, *have*. (See his alphabet, and his observations on the *v* consonant in his Grammar, page 2.) But he does not seem to have kept to his purpose; for I do not find the *vf* employed elsewhere, either in his Grammar or in his translation of the Bible and New Testament, but always either the *w*, the *ow* or the short *u* when followed by a consonant.

It is remarkable, that our author appropriates no character, or combination of characters, to express the guttural sound of the Greek  $\chi$ , which is very frequent in these languages. This is a defect very common to Englishmen, who attempt to express Indian sounds by the letters of their alphabet. This sound, being entirely wanting in our language, is very often neglected and not at all noticed. In some vocabularies it is expressed by *gh*; but as these letters are almost always mute in proper English words, it is difficult to know when they are to be pronounced, or are merely used to lengthen the sound of the preceding vowel or diphthong.

The letter *q* is often employed by our author, without any other apparent power than that of *k*, as in "toohkequn," *heavy*, 1 *Samuel*, iv. 18; but he also uses it more properly as in English before *ua* and *uo*, as in *wuskesukquash*, "his eyes," and in *squontamut*, "the gate." *Ibid.* 15. 18.

Upon the whole, this alphabet, though not so perfect as it might be in the eyes of the scholar, appears, nevertheless, to have fully answered the pious purpose of the excellent author; for he tells us in his Grammar, page 4, that the Indians, by means of it, "soon apprehended and understood this Epitome of the Art of Spelling, and (by its means) COULD SOON LEARN TO READ."

## II. Noun Substantive.

(Gram. p. 8.)

OUR author gives but little information on this subject; perhaps there is but little to be given. The genders, as in the Delaware, are not masculine and feminine, but animate and inanimate. Trees, plants, and grasses are in the class of *inanimates*; which is different from the Delaware, for in that they are classed as *animates*, except annual plants and grasses. 1 *Hist. Trans.* p. 367, 368.

Substantives are not varied by "Cases, Cadencies and Endings," except animates, when governed by a verb transitive, when they end in *oh*, *uh*, or *ah*. The genders are also distinguished by a difference of termination, but merely for the designation of the *plural number*. This termination is *og* in the animate, and *ash* in the inanimate form. In the Delaware, the animate has *ak*, and the inanimate *all* or *wall*. In the Narraganset, the plural endings are *ock*, *og*, *auock*, for the animate, and *ash*, *anash* for the inanimate. *Mithrid*, vol. iii. part iii. page 381.

We are not a little surprised, however, after the positive state-



ment of our author, that substantives are not distinguished by cases, (except as above mentioned,) to find different terminations of the same word, in various parts of his translation of the Bible, of which he makes no mention and gives no explanation in his Grammar: *Wuttaunoh Zion*, "Daughter of Zion." *Lament. ii. 8.* *Woi Jerusalemme wuttaunin*, "O daughter of Jerusalem." *Woi penomp Zione wuttaunin*, "O virgin daughter of Zion." *Ibid. 13.* *Wutá-assuneutunk wuttanoh Zion*, "The wall of the daughter of Zion." *Lamentat. ii. 8.* *Woi kenaau Jérusalemme wuttauneunk*, "O ye daughters of Jerusalem." *Solom. Song, ii. 7.* *Kah ompetak wuttaneu*, "And she bare a daughter." *Gen. xxx. 21.*

The first of these terminations is correct; *nuttanoh*, *kuttanoh*, *wuttanoh*, "my, thy, his daughter," are the proper nominatives of this word; and its being used in the genitive in the passage cited (*the wall of the daughter of Zion*) does not militate against the rule laid down; but the termination *in* in the vocative singular, and *unk* in the vocative plural, cannot be accounted for, any more than *eu* in the accusative governed by an active verb. The proper plural ending of this word is the animate form *og*, which our author frequently employs. *Qushkeh wonk nuttaunog*, "Turn again, my daughters." *Ruth i. 12.* I am at a loss how to explain these variations, otherwise than by the conjecture offered before, that our author might have had recourse to different Indian dialects in translating the sacred writings. The Delaware has a vocative case, which generally ends in *an*: *Wo Kitanittowian!* O God; *Wo Nihillalan*, O Lord, &c. *Zeisberger's MS. Grammar.*

### III. The Article.

It is remarkable, that this language appears to possess a definite article, although no mention is made of it in this Grammar. This article is *mo*, contracted from *monko*, and properly signifies *it*. *Kah MONKO nnih*, "And *IT* (was) so." *Gen. i. 7, 9, 11. 24, 30.* *Onk MO nnih*, "And *IT* (was) so." *Ibid. 15.* *Kah kusseh mo uhche wunnegen*, "And behold *IT* (was) very good." *Ibid. 31.*

This pronoun when used as an article, is still further contracted into *m*, which, when followed by a consonant, Eliot connects with it by the English short *u*, according to his method, and sometimes by short *e*. Thus he writes *metah*, "the heart," which should be pronounced *m'tah*. It is evident, that the *m* stands here for an article, because the personal affixes *my*, *thy*, *his*, are *n*, *k*, and *w*; *nuttah* or *n'tah*, "my heart," *kuttah* or *k'tah*, "thy heart," *wuttah* or

*w'tah*, "his or her heart," and not *n'mettah*, *k'mettah*, *w'mettah*. In the translation of the Bible, this article frequently appears. *Kes-teah pakke* METAH, "Create in me a clean heart." *Psalm* li. 10. *Pohqui kah tannogki* METAH, "A broken and contrite heart." *Ibid.* 17. Several words are also found in his Grammar, in which this article is prefixed, though not noticed as such. *Mukquoshim*, (*m'-quoshim*), a wolf, *muhhog*, (*m'hog*), the body, &c. When the personal form is employed, the *m* is left out, and the pronominal affix substituted: *Yeu nuhhog*, "This is my body." *Matt.* xxvi. 36.

This article exists in several of the Indian languages, as in the Othomi, where it is expressed by *na*; *Na hay*, the earth, *na metzé*, the ice, *na ghi*, the blood, &c.—(See *Molina*.) It appears also in the Algonkin and its cognate idioms: *Mittick*, *meeteek*, (Algonk. and Chippew.) a tree; Delaware, *hittuck*, and I think also *m'hittuck*; Mahican, *metooque*; Shawanese, *meticqueh*; all which appear to be the same word.—*Barton's New Views*, verbo *wood*. So also the Mahican, *mooquaumeh*, ice, (Barton;); Shawanese, *m'quama*, (Johnston;); Potawatameh, *mucquam*, (Barton;); Delaware, *m'hockquam-mi*, (Heckewelder,) and *moseet*, which in the language of the Indians of Penobscot and St. John's, means *the foot*, (Barton,) and is clearly the Delaware *n'seet*, *k'seet*, *w'seet*, (my, thy, his foot,) which Mr. Heckewelder writes *n'sit*, &c., but observes that the *i* is long.\*

\*Since writing the above notes, I have received an answer to a letter, which I addressed to Mr. Heckewelder on the subject of the *definite article*, a part of speech, which had not been noticed by grammarians in the Indian languages; and I have now the satisfaction to find, that the opinions above expressed were well founded. The letter also corroborates some of my etymological statements; and, as it is short, I have thought it best to insert it entire:

"Bethlehem, 23d August, 1821.

"MY DEAR FRIEND,

"I HAVE this moment received your favour of the 21st, and having time left sufficient to answer thereto, before the closing of the mail, I comply with your request. The article "*mo*" for *a* or *the*, which you discovered to be prefixed to substantives in the language of the Naticks, is *the same* in the language of the *Lenape*. We frequently leave the letter *m* out, in writing as the word is well understood without it, and because a reader, not acquainted with the language, might pronounce it too *harsh*, as *em*, or *emdee*, for *the heart*. So it is with other words also, as for instance, in those you quote. The *Lenape* say, *m'hittuck*, *the tree*, or *a tree*. The *Mipsi* say, *michtuk*, *a tree*; also, *m'tachan*, *wood*; the *Minsi* say, *Machtachan*; yet, both *hittuk* and *tachan* answer the same purpose.

"With regard to the latter part of your letter, I can only repeat what I have in former letters already noticed, viz. that in the Mahicani and other eastern

IV. *Adjectives.*

(Gram. p. 13.)

ADJECTIVES are seldom used singly in the Indian languages, because they are easily compounded with the verb and other parts of speech; with the *verb* as in the Latin *sapio*, *frigeo*, &c. and with the *substantive* in a variety of ways, which will be best explained by examples. I lately sent to Mr. Heckewelder the Empress Catharine's Vocabulary, in the German language, requesting him to fill it up with the same words in the Delaware. He very kindly complied with my request, but left some blanks in the Indian part, for which he referred me to notes, (also written in German,) which accompanied it. Among the words thus left blank, were the adjectives OLD and YOUNG, which he said he could not express by terms *sufficiently general*. The notes on these two words have appeared to me so interesting, and so well calculated to shew the peculiar construction of the Indian languages, that I have thought the reader would not be displeased to have a translation of them. I shall, therefore, fill up the present article with the valuable information which they contain.

## “Notes on the word OLD.”

“On this I have to observe, that there are many words which it is difficult, and some even impossible to render by terms, which convey precisely the same general idea; the Indians being so very nice in their discriminations, and having words adapted to every shade which they wish to distinguish. They are particularly attentive to distinguishing between what is animate and what is inanimate. Sometimes, also, there are words which have a double meaning. I will give some examples.

Idioms, (the Natick, &c.) the changing of certain letters in words, and the dropping here and there a letter at the end of a word, from that of the mother tongue, (the Lenape,) causes a difference in the writing and speaking, but not in understanding the same, by any person who can speak, or understand the Lenape. Examples: The Lenape say, *n'dëllan*; the Mahicani *n'tënnan*, changing the letter *l* into the letter *n*. The mail being about to close, I conclude in haste. I shall write to you further very soon.

JOHN HECKEWELDER.”



“The word *old* is employed by us in the most general sense. We say in our languages, *an old man, an old horse, an old dog, an old house, an old basket, &c.* The Indians, on the contrary, vary their expressions, when speaking of a thing that has life, and of one that has not; for the latter, instead of the word *old*, they use terms which convey the idea, that the thing *has lasted long*, that it *has been used, worn out, &c.* Of all which take the following examples :

1. *Kikey*, old, advanced in years (applied to things *animate*.)
2. *Chowiey*, or *chowiye*, old by use, wearing, &c.

“*Note.* The first syllable in the word *kikey*, compounded with other syllables, conveys the idea of *parents*, (Lat. *majores*; Germ. *eltern*;) and in brutes is expressive of the stock or race, from which they proceed :

“*Compounds.*

*Kikey*, or *kikeyin* (*i* long,) to be old, advanced in years.

*Kikeyitschik*, old, elderly people.

*Kikeyilenno*, on old man, advanced in years.

*Kikeyóchqueu*, an old, elderly woman.

*Kikéchum*, the old one of the *brute* kind.

*Kikéhelleu*, the old ones of the *feathered* tribe.

“There are also *suffixes*, denoting the age of animated beings, which are worthy of remark ; as

*Mihillúsis*, an old man, (Germ. *ein alter Greis* ; Fr. *un vieillard, un barbon*.)

*Chauchschisis*, an old woman, (Germ. *altes mütterchen* ; Fr. *vieille bonne femme*.)

*Mihillüşchum*, an old male *quadruped*.

*Chauchscháchum*, an old female *quadruped*.

“The general words for things *inanimate* are,

*Chowiey*, or *chowiye*, (Minsi, *m'chowiyey*,) old.

*Chowigáwan*, an old house, (from *wikwam*, or *wigwam*.)

*Chohagihácan*, an old field, (from *hacki*, earth or land.)

*Choutaney*, an old town, (from *utaney*, or *uteney*, a town.)

*Chowáxen*, old shoes, (from *maxen*, mockasons, or shoes.)

*Chowásquall*, old grass, (from *maskik*, grass.)

*Chowiey*, *schákhóequi*, old coat, old garment.

"There are other words, which denote a thing being old from use or wearing; as

*Metchihillēu*, old; worn out, (as an edged tool.)

*Pigihillēu*, torn by long use or wearing.

*Lōgihillēu*, fallen to pieces, &c.

"Notes on the word YOUNG.

"It is here again difficult to find an adequate general term, as the Indians are always fond of discriminating, and using words peculiarly applicable to the thing spoken of. As we say, 'a new born child or infant,' instead of 'a young child,' so in Delaware, the word *wuski*, which signifies *new*, is employed to convey the idea of youth; and they compound it in the following manner:

*Wuski*, new, young, (Minsi *wuskiey*.)

*Wusken*, *wēsgrink*, the new.

*Wuskilenno*, a young man.

*Wuskóchquēu*, or *wuskiechquēu*, a young woman.

*Wuskelenápewak*, young people.

*Wuskchum*, a young quadruped.

*Wuskigáwan*, a new house.

*Wuskhagihúcan*, a new field.

*Wuskutāney*, a new town.

*Wuskhaxen*, new shoes.

*Wuskiquall*, new grass.

*Wuskachpoan*, new bread, (*achpoan*, bread.)

*Wuskítamen*, to renew something, &c.

"Although the syllable *wusk*, prefixed to words, serves both to denote *young* and *new*, yet the Indians have, besides, a variety of other words for distinguishing the young among *animals*. For instance; their general term for 'the young,' the immediate offspring, is *nitschān*, (*w'nitschānall*, his or her young or offspring, who have been brought alive and suckled,) and this applies to man, and beasts of the genus *Mammalia*; but when they speak of the *feathered* kind, or when the young is produced from the egg by hatching, they say, *aninschihillēu*; plural *aninschihilleisak*; barely implying that the animals are *young feathered creatures*. See *Zeisberger's Delaware Spelling Book*, p. 100."

## V. Pronouns.

(Gram. p. 7.)

THE personal pronouns in the Massachusetts, as in the Delaware language, are divided into separable and inseparable; and their etymology may be clearly traced to the same source. They are in the two languages as follows:

MASSACHUSETTS.		DELAWARE.
I,	<i>Neen.</i>	<i>Ni.</i>
Thou,	<i>Ken.</i>	<i>Ki.</i>
He or she,	<i>Noh, or nagum.</i>	<i>Nacama, or neka.</i>
We,	<i>Neenawun, or kenawun.</i>	<i>Niluna, or kiluna.</i>
Ye,	<i>Kenaau.</i>	<i>Kiluwa.</i>
They,	<i>Nahoh, or nagoh.</i>	<i>Necamawa.</i>

The *inseparable* pronouns, personal and possessive, are the same in both languages; *n* representing the first person, *k* the second, and *w*, *o*, or *oo*, (as euphony may require,) the third, both in the singular and plural numbers.

The *particular plural* of the *Delawares*, or the *American* plural, as Mr. *Pickering* very properly calls it, has excited much attention among philologists. Our author makes no mention of this distinction; yet there is great reason to believe, that it exists in the *Massachusetts* idiom. In the Delaware, the particular plural, though not mentioned in Mr. *Zeisberger's* Grammar, is expressed by *niluna*, which means *we, some of us*, with relation to a particular number of persons. It is to be observed, that it begins with the letter *n*, indicative of the *first* person; which, being repeated in the last syllable *na*, seems as if it meant to say, *we, we*; that is, *we*, particularly speaking, but not all; whereas the *general* plural, *kiluna*, (*we, all of us*,) begins with the pronominal affix of the *second* person, as if to say, *we and you*, or *we, you and all*. The same difference is found in the *Massachusetts*, where *we* is expressed in two modes, *neenawun* and *kenawun*; the one in the same manner beginning with the affix of the *first* person, afterwards repeated, and the other with that of the *second* person; from whence, and the great affinity of the two languages, I strongly conjecture, that *NEENAWUN* means the particular, and *KENAWUN* the general plural. This might, I dare say, be ascertained by searching for examples in our author's translation of the Bible; but these notes having been called for sooner than I expected, I



have not time at present for the investigation. If the rules of analogy are not deceptive, it will be found, I believe, that I am right in my conjecture.

Our author does not speak of a *dual* number ; nor is it probable there is any, other than the *particular plural*.

The question whether all the Indian languages have the *particular plural*, or some of them the *dual* in lieu of it, is an interesting one. I at first inclined to the former opinion ; but recent inquiries make the latter seem the most probable. In one of them, at least, (the *Cherokee*,) it appears that there is a *dual* number. Mr. *Pickering*, in consequence of the general remarks on this subject, in the *Transactions of the Historical and Literary Committee*, was led to conjecture, that what had been called the *dual* in the *Cherokee*, was in fact only the *particular* or *limited plural*, which is common to other Indian dialects. But he has since informed me, that upon conversing on this point with an intelligent young man of that nation, (who is perfectly familiar with our own language, (he has ascertained that this opinion was unfounded, and that the *Cherokee* language has a proper *dual number*, like the languages of antiquity. There are varieties in the polysynthetick forms of the Indian languages, which do not, however, affect their general character. Absolute uniformity is not to be found in any of the works of nature ; and there is no reason why languages should be excepted from this universal rule.

The interrogative pronoun, as our author denominates it, *howan*, plural *howanig*, (*who*,) is also found in the *Lenni Lenape*. *Zeisberger* and *Heckewelder* spell it *auwen*, which, according to the German pronunciation, gives the same sound, except the *h* at the beginning. This pronoun, in the *Delaware*, is formed into a verb in the following curious manner, which I extract from *Zeisberger's MS. Grammar* ;

From AUWEN, who

Singular. *Ewenikia*, who I am.

*Ewenikian*, who thou art.

*Ewenikit*, who he is.

Plural. *Ewenikiyenk*, who we are.

*Ewenikiyek*, who you are.

*Ewenikichtit*, who they are.

It is worthy of remark, that this nation, whose language (as I shall hereafter have occasion to observe) wants the substantive verb, *I am*, has come so near it, as in these examples, without

being able to find it. It is said that they cannot translate into it the sublime sentence in Exodus iii. 14, *I AM THAT I AM*. This pronominal verb would, it seems, admirably express the last member of it, at least in the sense of the Vulgate translation *Ego sum QUI SUM*. These are anomalies, which further study and inquiry may, perhaps, enable us to reconcile.

The demonstrative pronoun *yeu* is in Delaware *yun*; and, upon the whole, there is a great resemblance, in this part of speech, between the two languages. But neither *Eliot* nor *Zeisberger* have expatiated sufficiently upon it. Indeed, these languages are so rich in forms, that a complete grammar of any of them would be too voluminous for common use.

## VI. Verbs.

(Gram. p. 15.)

THE Verb is the triumph of human language. Its fundamental idea is that of existence; *I am, sum*. This abstract sentiment receives shape and body from its combination with the various modifications of being, by action, passion and situation, or manner of existing; *I am loving, loved, sleeping, awake, sorry, sick*; which the Latin tongue more synthetically expresses by *amo, amor, dormio, vigilo, contristor, ægroto*. Next come the accessory circumstances of person, number, time, and the relations of its periods to each other; *I am, thou art, we are, I was, I shall be, I had been, I shall have been*. Here the Latin again combines these various ideas in one word with the former ones; *sum, es, sumus, eram, ero, fueram, fuero*. Sometimes it goes further and combines the negative idea in the same locution, as in *nolo*; this, however, happens but rarely; and here seem to end the verbal powers of this idiom. Not so with those of the *Indian* nations. While the Latin combines but few adjectives under its verbal forms, the Indians subject this whole class of words to the same process, and every possible mode of existence becomes the subject of a verb. The *gender* or *genus*, (not, as with us, a mere division of the human species by their sex, but of the whole creation by the obvious distinction of animate and inanimate,) enters also into the composition of this part of speech; and the object of the active or transitive verb is combined with it by means of those forms, which the Spanish-Mexican grammarians have called *transitions*, by which

one single word designates the person who acts, and that which is acted upon. The *substantive* is incorporated with the verb in a similar manner: thus in the Delaware, *n'matschi*, "I am going to the house, I am going home;" *nihillapewi*, "I am my own master, I am free;" *tpisquihilleu*, "the time approaches," (*properat hora*.) The *adverb* likewise: *nachpiki*, "I am so naturally;" *nipahwi*, "to travel by night;" (*noctanter*;) *pach-senummen*, "to divide (something) equally," &c. In short, every part of speech in these languages is capable of being associated with the verb and compounded with it, by means of its various inflexions and forms. What shall we say of the reflected, compulsive, meditative, communicative, reverential, frequentative and other circumstantial verbs, which are found in the idioms of New Spain, and other American Indian languages? The mind is lost in the contemplation of the multitude of ideas thus expressed at once by means of a single word, varied through moods, tenses, persons, affirmation, negation, transitions, &c. by regular forms and cadences, in which the strictest analogy is preserved! Philosophers may, if they please, find here proofs of what they have thought proper to call *barbarism*; for my part, I am free to say, that I cannot so easily despise what I feel myself irresistibly compelled to admire.

It is to be regretted, that our venerable author has given but few Paradigms of the conjugations of the verbs in the Massachusetts language. There are, in fact, in this Grammar, but three—the active verbs *to keep* and *to pay*, and the neuter verb *to be wise*; the two first of which are conjugated through their negative and transitive forms, and the latter only in the affirmative and negative. He makes us acquainted with the interrogative mood, and prescribes the form of conjugating verbs through it; but, beyond that, the information which he gives, on the subject of this part of speech, is very scanty; while Zeisberger, on the contrary, in his MS. Grammar, has given us a profusion of the *Delaware* verbs, regularly conjugated, which will be found to afford much assistance to the student, and give him a great insight into the manner of compounding and conjugating verbs in these languages.

Whether there are any, or how many, different forms of conjugation in this language, does not appear. In the *Delaware* there are eight, distinguished by the terminations of their infinitive, or of the first person of the present tense of the indicative mood. Zeisberger enumerates them as follows:



The 1st ending in <i>in</i> ; . . . . .	n'dappin, <i>to be there.</i>
The 2d in <i>a</i> ; . . . . .	n'da, <i>I am going.</i>
The 3d in <i>elandam</i> indicates a dispo- sition of the mind ; . . . . .	} niwelendam, <i>I am sad.</i>
The 4th in <i>men</i> ; . . . . .	
The 5th in <i>an</i> ; . . . . .	gattamen, <i>I request.</i>
The 6th in <i>e</i> or <i>we</i> ; . . . . .	ahoalan, <i>to love.</i>
The 7th in <i>in</i> , but used only in the transitive forms ; . . . . .	} n'dellowe, <i>I say.</i>
The 8th in <i>on</i> ; . . . . .	
	miltin, <i>to give.</i>
	n'peton, <i>I bring.</i>

The moods and tenses of these two languages appear to be the same, though differently classed by their grammarians. Eliot divides the subjunctive mood into two, the optative and suppositive, each having but one tense, which Zeisberger calls the present and conditional tenses of the conjunctive. Our author takes no notice of the *participles*, which the other includes under the infinitive mood. They are numerous, and susceptible of various transitions and forms. Thus the verb *gauwin*, "to sleep," besides having three tenses in the infinitive, to wit, the present *gauwin*, the past or preterite, *gauwineep*, "to have slept," and the future, *gauwintschi*, which cannot be rendered into English, but in Latin *dormiturus esse*, has the following participles: present, *gewit*, "sleeping;" (plural, *gewitschik*) preterite, *gewitup*, "having slept;" plural, *gewitpannik*. The future is given in other verbs. Examples of the conjugation of the participle of the causative verb, through the transitive forms, are given in the *Historical Transactions*, vol. i. p. 416, which I think unnecessary to repeat here. I have no doubt that these forms substantially exist in the Massachusetts idioms; but our author's Grammar is by far too much abridged to admit of their being exhibited.

The formation of the *future* tense of the indicative mood is different in the Massachusetts and Delaware languages. In the former, it is expressed by the auxiliaries *mos* and *pish*; as, *kah pish kuttâyim*, "and thou shalt make;" *kah pish neemunumwog gold*, "and they shall take gold;" *kah pish kupponamunash*, "and thou shalt put." *Exod.* xxviii. 2, 5, 12. In the Delaware, the future is designated by the termination *tsch*; as in *n'pomsi*, "I go;" future, *n'pomsitsch*, "I shall or will go." In the negative form, this termination is sometimes attached to the conjunction *not*; as *mattatsch n'dawi*, "I shall not go," for *matta n'dawitsch*. This is one of the elegancies of the language; very different, however, from any thing that we have seen or heard of in the idioms of the old world.

We must not expect, in these languages, to find any thing like the Greek aorists, or those nice distinctions of time and its different periods in relation to each other, which are found in the learned tongues. The varieties of the Indian verbs are applied to other objects. I do not mean to speak, however, of the *Mexican* languages, in which the verbs are conjugated through all the forms, moods and tenses of the Latin. There you find the imperfect, preterite, pluperfect and even the gerunds in *di, do, dum*, and the supine.\* I have observed elsewhere, that those who write Indian grammars strive too much to assimilate the forms of those languages to their own or to the Latin, whereas they have a grammar peculiar to themselves, which ought to be studied and explained. The curious and not very natural coincidence, which the Spanish grammarians have almost generally found between the Latin forms and those of the languages of their Indians, inclines me to suspect the accuracy of those writers. It is, nevertheless, evident, that the *southern* idioms have more tenses in their verbs, or forms of conjugation in relation to time, than those of the more *northern* tribes; in which latter I have only, as yet, been able to discover the present, past and future.

I observed, in my Report to the Historical Committee on the subject of the Indian languages, (*Hist. Trans.* p. xl.) that it appeared to me, that they were generally destitute of the auxiliary verbs *to be* and *to have*; which I shewed to be the case not only in our own northern, but in the Mexican and Othomi idioms. I added, on the authority of Father Zenteno, that the Mexicans could not translate into their language the sublime sentence, "I AM THAT I AM." *Exod.* iii. 14. In this sentiment I am confirmed, at least as far as concerns the *Wapanachki* languages, by our venerable author, who expressly says, in page 15 of his Grammar, "We" (the Massachusetts) "have no *complete distinct word* for the *Verb Substantive*, as other, learned *Languages*, and our *English Tongue* have; but it is under a *regular composition*, whereby many words are made *Verb Substantive*."

This curious fact early attracted the notice of the Honourable Judge Davis, of Boston, who, in a letter to me of the 26th of

\* In Basalenque's Tarascan Grammar, pages 33 and 34, under the verb *pani*, "to carry," (*llevar*), are the following paradigms:

Gerund in *di*, Páquaro ésti—*tiempo de llevar*.

— in *do*, Páparin—*llevando*.

— in *dum*, Páni-niráhaca—*voy à llevar*.

Supine in *um*, Hichen himbó éscá pani—*à me me conviene llevar*.

— in *u*, Páquanhâxeti—*cosa digna de ser llevada*.

March, 1819, suggested some doubts upon the subject; and this circumstance led to a correspondence with the Rev. Mr. Heckewelder and the Rev. Mr. Dencke, which I think sufficiently interesting to warrant the insertion of some extracts from their communications in this place.

I shall extract, in the first place, from Judge Davis's letter, who wrote as follows:

"At present I will only suggest a difficulty, which occurs in relation to a remark in page xl. of your *Report* concerning the substantive verb *to be*, in the American languages. I have a manuscript Vocabulary of the language of the Southern or Old Colony Indians of Massachusetts, (compiled by *Josiah Cotton, Esq.* missionary to those Indians early in the last century,) in which the verbs *to be* and *to have* are expressed in a variety of modifications. I have only room for the infinitive moods of these verbs, and the indicative mood, present tense, with numbers and persons:

' AINNEAT, to be.

' *Nennont*, I am.

*Kennont*, thou art.

*Nohne*, he is.

*Nenawunyeu*, we are.\*

*Kenauna*, you are.

*Nâgna*, they are.

' AHTOUNNAT, to have.

' *Nummahche*, I have.

*Kummahche*, thou hast.

*Noh mahche*, he has.

*Nenauun nummahche*, we have.

*Kenau kummahche*, you have.

*Nag mahche*, they have.'

"In Eliot's Bible, the sublime passage (Exod. iii. 14.) *I am that I am*, is thus translated: *Nen nuttinniin nen nuttinniin*. Galatians iv. 12, *I am as ye are*, is thus rendered: *Nen neyane kenaau*. How is the first of these expressions to be grammatically resolved, if there be no *substantive verb* in the language? The last quotation is elliptical in the Greek  $\kappa\alpha\iota\ \omega\varsigma\ \psi\upsilon\epsilon\iota\varsigma$ ; and so it is in the Indian, which, literally, would be, *I as you*. *Nen* I take to be a pronoun, and so is *kenaau*.....I find, in A. Fabre's Grammar of the Chili Language, the following sentence: '*Los nombres abstractos, como bondad, blancura, &c. se hacen posponiendo el verbo sum, es, est, à los adjetivos ò sub-*

\* The original MS. of Cotton has here *Kenauun yeu*; which, agreeably to Mr. Du Ponceau's opinion, (in his remarks on the Pronouns,) was the general plural; *nenauun yeu* being the *particular* or *limited plural*.—EDITOR.



*stantivos*.'—Molina, I believe, has a similar remark; but the doctrine is not so distinctly announced as by *Fabres*, to whom *Molina* appears to have been principally indebted for his observations on the language of *Chili*.—*Jean de Laet* also gives us the substantive verb in the *Brazilian* language; *aico, je suis, ereico, tu es, oico, il est oroico, nous sommes, peico, vous estes, auraè oico, ils sont*. In the third person plural, only, the pronoun is prefixed; whereas, in the example from Cotton's MS. (whose Vocabulary, I find, has generally a close correspondence with the *Natick*,) we notice the pronouns throughout. On this subject of the *substantive verb*, and especially of its application in the admirable language of *Chili*, I had some floating ideas, which I had digested into a sort of theory. Schemes of thought are not always readily abandoned; but I find mine not a little disturbed by the remark in that part of your discussion. I may hereafter communicate to you the views to which I refer." Judge Davis adds, in a Postscript to his letter, the following remark: "Eliot often expresses *I am* by the word *nen* alone; but is it not because the phrase is often elliptical in the Greek? In John viii. 58, 'Before Abraham was *I AM*' is thus rendered: *Negonne onk Abrahamwi nutāpip*. The expression there is not elliptical in the original; the word *nutāpip* I consider as corresponding to *ἐγώ εἰμι*, though I am not able to trace its origin."

This doubt, suggested from so respectable a quarter, and supported, besides, with so much learning and ingenuity, made me distrust my own opinion, and led me to inquire further into the matter. Still I could not help believing, as I am yet inclined to think, that the want of the substantive verb was a general rule in the Indian languages. I knew too well the inclination of grammarians to assimilate those idioms to their own, to be shaken by paradigms, in which the verb *sto*, for instance, might be translated by *sum* or *I am*, for want of sufficient attention to the shade of difference between them; but the words *Nen nuttiniin nen nuttiniin*, by which our author had rendered *I am that I am* in his translation of the Bible, though they might not have the precise meaning of the original text, must yet mean something; and I was curious to know by what analogous mode of expression the venerable apostle had got out of this immense difficulty, when he himself had told his readers, that there was "*no compleat distinct word for the Verb Substantive*" in the language.\* I therefore determined to consult my oracle, Mr. Heckewelder, from whom I speedily re-

\*Grammar, p. 15.

ceived an answer, of which I shall here communicate some extracts :

“ 8th April, 1819.

“ I cannot believe, that any of the tribes connected with the *Lenni Lenape* can translate into their language the words *I am that I am*, so as to come up to the same meaning. The late David Zeisberger and myself sought many years in vain for this substantive verb. We had the best chapel interpreters, I may say orators, some of whom were not at a loss to interpret critically almost all scripture passages and expressions ; yet with regard to the one in question, they never came up to the meaning, but made use of the best substitute they could ; for instance : *I abtschi gutteli n'dellsin*, ‘ I always act the same ;’ *elsia natsch abtschi n'dellsin*, ‘ so as I do, I shall always do,’ or ‘ I shall always act the same ;’ or again, *elinaxia abtschitsch n'dellinaxin*, ‘ as I appear, (*am* to appearance,) I shall always be.’ I cannot find a single instance in the language, in which the verb *I am* is used by itself, that is to say, uncombined with the idea of the act about to be done.”

“ You have, no doubt, observed, in my *Historical Account*, page 232, that the Indian striking his breast, says with conscious pride, *I AM A MAN*. This he expresseth by the words *Lenno n'hackey* ; literally, *my body is a man* (or, ‘ I am a *man body*,’ in the sense that we say, *She is a clever body, a young, a handsome body*.) I might then translate ‘ I am that I am,’ by *n'hackey iabtschi n'hackey*, ‘ my body (is) always my body.’—This word *n'hackey*, with the Indians, is a most expressive word. In the Indian song, of which I have given a translation, (*Hist. Trans.* p. 204,) the sentence at the beginning, *O poor me !* is expressed in Indian by *Wo gettemaki n'hackey !* ‘ O poor my body !’ &c.

“ All I can say, at present, of Eliot's translation of ‘ I am that I am’ by *Nen nutinniin nen nuttiniin* is, that it can never be a literal translation of the text. The passage in Galatians iv. 12, ‘ I am as ye are, which Eliot translates by *Nen neyane kenaau*, I presume means, ‘ *I look like you, we are alike, or we look like one another*. I suppose a Delaware translator would say, *Elinaxiyek, nepe n'delinaxin* ; that is, ‘ as ye are, so I am also ;’ but this is always said in the sense of personal appearance, shape, face, countenance, size, &c. He might have said, also, *n'gutti ktellinaxihhena*, ‘ we look alike,’ ‘ we look one,’ or, *n'gutteli k'delsihhena*, ‘ we do, act, alike ;’ or, lastly, *ni n'dellsin elsiyek*, ‘ I do as ye do,’ &c.”

In the same letter Mr. Heckewelder enclosed to me a copy of one he had received from the Rev. Mr. *Dencke*, of Lititz, to whom he had written on the same subject. I trust I shall be excused for translating here some extracts from this letter also, which is written in German :

"I have never known," says Mr. *Dencke*, "the verb *to be* to exist, either in the Delaware or Chippeway language, and I can find nothing in those idioms that expresses it literally. The nearest to it is (in the Delaware) *ni n'dellsin elsia*, 'as I do.' The pronoun *ni* is duplicated to strengthen the expression of the idea of the first person of the verb ; *elsia* is contracted from *elgiqui*, 'as,' and *lissia*, 'as I do,' (*da ich thue*.) Out of this pronoun *ni*, or *nen*, perhaps, a new verb might be framed, which, I am inclined to think, Mr. Eliot has done in the Natick. This was easy to be done ; but such a word is *not genuine Indian*. I have been, in vain, trying to understand the meaning of *Nen nuttinniin nen nuttinniin*, which appears to be the same sentence twice repeated, but have not been able to succeed——."

"*Ni n'delinaxin elinaxia*, 'as I appear so I am,' (*Ich bin dem so gleich, so wie ich bin*.) But this is not answering Mr. Du Ponteau's question. I should probably express 'I am as ye are,' by *Ni n'dellsin elsiyeek* ; and I do not think that there is any thing that comes nearer to it.

"I think we must remain where we are ; agreeing, however, upon this point, that in the Indian languages that we are acquainted with, '*I am that I am*' cannot be literally expressed, but a substitute must be employed," &c.

In a Postscript, which follows the copy of Mr. *Dencke*'s letter, Mr. Heckewelder concludes, that if *Nen nuttinniin nen nuttinniin* means any thing, it must be either "I am a man, I am a man," or, "I do so, I do so."

After much consideration and study of the subject, I incline much to the opinion, that Mr. Heckewelder is right in his last conjecture ; and, as it appears to be full time to put an end to these Notes, and the remaining parts of speech suggest no interesting observations, I shall conclude with stating the grounds upon which this conjecture is founded.

It appears to me, in the first place, that the Massachusetts verb *nuttinniin* is the same with the Delaware verb *n'dellsin*, 'I do or act,' which the Germans not unfrequently spell *n'tellsin*, confounding the *t* with the *d*, because their ears do not sufficiently distinguish between the two sounds. Now the first syllable of *nuttinniin*, 'nut,' in which the short *u* is employed to express the interval or *sheva* between the two consonants, is the same with the Delaware *n'd* or *n't* ; the middle syllable *tin* is the Dela-



ware *tel* or *del*, changing *e* into *i* and *l* into *n*; *in* is the termination of the verbal form in the Massachusetts, which in this word is the same as in the Delaware; and *nen* is the duplication of the personal pronoun, for the sake of greater energy, as Mr. Dencke has very properly observed.

This etymological deduction would not prove much, without shewing that the verb *nuttinniin* means "to do or act" in the Massachusetts, as *n'dellsin* does in the Delaware. This, I think, can be done by recurring to examples in our author's translation of the Bible. For instance: *To kittinheh*, "What is it that thou has done unto me?" *Gen.* xii. 8. *To* means "what;" *kittinheh* is probably the interrogative form of the verb *nuttinniin*, or *n'tinniin*, *k't*, *kut*, or *kit*, being the affix form of the second person, which the letter *k* represents in the Massachusetts as well as in the Delaware. *To kusussem*? "What hast thou done?" *Gen.* iv. 10. Here the verb is employed in another form, not being combined with the idea of *to me*, which appears expressed in the former word by the *n*, descriptive of the first person. This is, however, but my humble conjecture, which I offer with great diffidence, after the question has been given up by those who are much more skilled than I am in the Indian languages; of which I profess to know nothing except the little I have acquired in the solitude of the closet.

I have only to add a remark respecting the verb *nutāpip*, which, as Judge Davis observes, (in the Postscript to his letter,) is used for *I am*, in Eliot's Bible: "*Before Abraham was, I AM—Negonne onk Abrahamwi nutāpip.* John viii. 58." At the time when Judge Davis wrote to me, I could not explain the meaning of *nutāpip*; but I am now able to do it. *N'dappin* is a Delaware verb, which signifies *to be* (in a particular *place*) *stare*; the preterite is *n'dappineep*, *stabam*, *hic stabam*. There can be no doubt but Eliot's *nutāpip*, that is to say, *n'tāpip* or *n'dāpip*, is a contraction of the Delaware *n'dappineep*, and means, *I was there*.

---

 SUPPLEMENTARY OBSERVATIONS. BY THE EDITOR.

AFTER the *Notes and Observations* of Mr. Du Ponceau had been delivered to the printer, I employed the few leisure moments, which I could command, in considering some of the points discussed in them; and in the course of my inquiries some unexpected facts came under my notice. These suggested reflections, which led to a further correspondence between Mr. Du Ponceau and Mr. Heckewelder; and as this correspondence throws much light upon the structure of the Indian Languages, I have thought it would be useful to state in this place some of the facts, to which I have alluded, together with the substance of their additional remarks upon them.

### I. On the Verb To BE.

It will be recollected, that in conformity with what has been observed in modern times, by Dr. *Edwards* in the *Mohegan* language and by Mr. *Zeisberger* and Mr. *Heckewelder* in the *Delaware*, the author of the present Grammar had said a century and a half ago of the *Massachusetts* language—"We have no *complete distinct word* for the Verb Substantive, as other, learned languages, and our English tongue have; but it is under a regular composition, whereby many words are made verb substantive;" which kind of "composition," he adds, takes place in *nouns, adnouns, adverbs*, or the like.

Notwithstanding this emphatick observation, however, the venerable author, in his version of the Scriptures, had repeatedly found occasion to translate the verb *to be*, and accordingly often attempted to render it by some equivalent Indian word; a striking instance of which is to be found in the passage already brought under discussion in the preceding *Notes*: *I am that I am*, "Nen nuttinniin nen [*or ne*] nuttiniin."\* This circumstance led me to examine some of the passages, in which the verb *to be* occurred in

\* Eliot's *first* edition has *nen nuttinniin NE nuttinniin*; but the *second* has *nen* in both places. This difference will not affect the reasoning respecting the substantive verb, but will only make a difference in the grammatical analysis of the sentence.

the English version of the Bible ; and I soon found, that Eliot appeared to have been driven to the necessity of resorting to Indian words, apparently very different from each other. For one example of this we need not go beyond the very text above cited ; where, though in the first part of the verse he employs the expression *Nen* NUTTINIIN for *I am*, yet, in the latter part, he uses the words *Nen* UKOH : *I AM hath sent me unto you*—" *Nen ukoh anoteamwe nuttanconuk en kuhhogkáont.*" In other parts of his version he uses various other forms of expression for the different tenses of the English verb ; as will be seen in the following examples :

Gen. iii. 9. Where art thou?	Toh <i>kutapin</i> ?
— v. 24. And he was not.	Kah mattah na <i>wutápéin</i> .
— xviii. 24. For the fifty righteous that are there- in.	Newutche napannatahshinchag- odtog sampwesecheg na <i>apit- cheg</i> .
Exod. viii. 21. And also the ground whereon they are.	Kah wame ohkeit ne <i>aphettit</i> .
— xx. 21. Where God was.	Ne God <i>apit</i> .
1 Sam. xix. 3. Where thou art.	Uttah <i>apean</i> .
1 Kings xxii. 4. I am as thou art.	Nen <i>netatuppe</i> ken.
Job xxxviii. 4. Where wast thou?	Uttah <i>kutapineas</i> ?
Psalms xxxvii. 36. And lo he was not.	Kah kusseh matta <i>ohtano</i> .
Isa. xxiii. 13. This people was not, till the Assyrian, &c.	Yeug missinninnuog <i>matta ap- pupaneg</i> noh pajeh Assyri- ansog, &c.
John viii. 58. Before Abra- ham was I am.	Negonne Abrahamwi, <i>nutapip</i> .
Rev. i. 4, 8, & iv. 8. From him which is, and which was and which is to come.	Wutch noh noh <i>koh</i> , noh <i>koh m<sup>o</sup></i> noh <i>paont</i> .
— xvii. 8. The beast that was and is not and yet is.	Puppinashimwoh, noh mo, ka noh matta, kah noh yeuye <i>apit</i> .

In many other places, however, the author uses some form of the word *nuttiniin* :



Gen. xxxi. 40. Thus I was ;  
 in the day the drought  
 consumed me and the frost  
 by night. } Yeu *mo nuttinaiin*, kesukodaew  
 kusittau nuttônauûshik, kah  
 toohpu nukonâeu.

— xxxi. 41. Thus I have  
 been twenty years in thy  
 house. } Yeu *nuttinaiin* neesnechage kod-  
 tumwae kekî.

This apparent diversity in the modes of expressing the same idea excited my curiosity. It was manifest that the venerable author had experienced a difficulty in finding, what he calls in his Grammar, a “complete” verb substantive ; and that he had been obliged to content himself with words which only approximated to the strict signification of that verb. I therefore endeavoured to ascertain the precise import of the words, which he thus appeared to have used as substitutes for it. With this view I began to read *Cotton’s English and Indian Vocabulary*, (the MS. mentioned in the *Introductory Observations* to the present Grammar, from which the Hon. Judge Davis had extracted the example of the verb *to be*, that had given rise to the discussion in Mr. Du Ponceau’s Notes.\* In the course of my reading, I soon met with the verb *nuttinaiin*, used by Eliot, in Exod iii. 14. But I was not a little surprised at the same time to find, that *Cotton* translated it, not by our verb *to be*, but by the verb *to become*. He gives it in this form :

“I am become . . . . . *nuttinîi*.

We are become, . . . . . ——— *yumun*.

To become, . . . . . *unniinat*.”

This discovery now led me to examine Eliot’s Bible for texts where the verb *to become* occurred ; in order to see how far *Eliot* agreed with *Cotton*, in rendering that English verb ; and I found, that he also had rendered it sometimes by *nuttinaiin*, the very word, which he had in other places used for the verb *to be*.

Upon returning to my examination of *Cotton’s Vocabulary*, I soon met with another of Eliot’s substitutes for the verb *to be*—the word *nutapip*, which occurs in this text: *Before Abraham was I am*—“Negonne onk Abrahamwi *nutapip*.” John viii. 58. But here again I found that *Cotton* had affixed

\* See page xxv. of the Notes.

to the Indian word a different idea from that which *Eliot* seemed to have done; for *Cotton* explained *nutapip* by our verb *to be able*, in different modes and tenses as follows:

“I am able, . . . . . nuttâppinũm.  
 Thou art able, . . . . . ken kuttâppinũm.  
 He is able, . . . . . nagum tâppinũm.  
 We are able, . . . . . nuttâppinnumũmun.  
 Ye are able, . . . . . kuttâppinnumuwõ.  
 They are able, . . . . . nâg tappinuwõg, &c.  
 I was able, . . . . . nuttâppinũmup.  
 Thou wast able, . . . . . kuttâppinũmup.  
 Be thou able, . . . . . ken tapinish.  
 Let him be able, . . . . . noh tapinetch.  
 Let us be able, . . . . . tapinumuttuh.  
 Be ye able, . . . . . tapinumõõk.  
 Let them be able, . . . . . tapinnumhittitch.  
 At thou able? . . . . . sun kuttapinnum?  
 To be able, . . . . . tapinumuat.”

As I had discovered these various explanations of the Indian words in question, in the same manuscript where the Hon. Judge Davis had found the supposed substantive verb (*ainneat*) which had given occasion to the discussion in the preceding Notes, I communicated to Mr. Du Ponceau the facts, which had thus fallen under my observation, and referred him to several texts of *Eliot*'s Bible, where the words in question occurred; requesting him, at the same time, to favour me with his reflections on the subject; for whether *Cotton* was right in translating *nuttinniin* by *become*, while *Eliot* had rendered it by our verb *to be*, was a point which my own acquaintance with the language did not enable me to determine.

Mr. Du Ponceau, in his reply to my letter, (after observing, that “perhaps *Cotton* could find no better word for *become*”) says—“But if the word means strictly and precisely *become*, how can it mean *TO BE* in the text, *I am that I am*? *Eliot*'s translation would then be—*I become, I become*. This is still farther from the meaning of his text than the Delaware *n'dellsin*, *I AM SO*.\* If I may indulge a conjecture, I should say, that the *Wapanachki* had no proper word

\* See Mr. Du Ponceau's Notes, p. xxviii.

for either *be* or *become*, and have perhaps used the same *approximation* in both cases. In general, it appears to me, that the idea of *existence* is never presented singly in any Indian word, but always coupled with some accessary idea, which connects the word with what is to follow. Thus, if they meant to say *I have now become good*, they would probably say, *I am now so that I am good*, or use a word implying or leading to that compound idea. It is true, the relation *back* to what I formerly was, does not here appear; and there lies the difficulty." Mr. Du Ponceau, however, without expressing a settled opinion of his own, consulted Mr. Heckewelder, and has obligingly furnished me with their correspondence; the substance of which I cannot communicate to the reader in a more useful and interesting form than their own language.

In the first letter which Mr. Du Ponceau wrote to Mr. Heckewelder (Oct. 8, 1821) he made the following inquiries: "I wish to know how you express the word *become* in Delaware, as thus: *I was once bad, I have now become good*; and these Scriptural phrases:

*The man is become as one of us.* Gen. iii. 22.

*What will become of his dreams?* Gen. xxxvii. 20.

*What is become of him?* Exod. xxxii. 1.

*To them gave he power to become the sons of God.* John i. 12.

"In the Natick, (or Massachusetts,) Eliot expresses this word by *nuttinniin*, the same which he uses for *I am that I am*. I think this word is derived from the Delaware *n'dellsin*, *n'tellsin*, changing the *l* into *n*, which is very frequent among Indians. If the Delawares use *n'dellsin* for *become*, it will confirm me in my opinion.

"In the short History of the Bible, at the end of Zeisberger's Spelling Book, it seems to me I have found the word *become* expressed by *n'dellsin*. See page 127, line 10—*That they would become too powerful*. It seems to me that the word *wtellitsch*, in the translation, is meant to express *become*. See also page 136, line 9—*wtellitsch sokenapalan*. Does not this mean, *should be*, or *become* baptized? You will find the word *become* in several other parts of Zeisberger's History of the Bible; as, for instance, pages 119 and 120, third paragraph—*become confirmed*; page 123, second line from the bottom—*become universal*. In these phrases I do not find *n'dellsin*, nor indeed any word to express *become*; which seems in the Delaware to be understood."



To these inquiries, Mr. Heckewelder replied in two different letters. In his first (in consequence of being requested to return an immediate answer) he merely gives a translation in Delaware of the English phrases proposed, without any comment or grammatical explanation, as follows :

- “ 1. To become.

*Allumilissin—elsin.*

2. I was once bad, I have now become good.

*Nemomachtschilissihump, schukmetschi n'nolilissi.\**

3. The man is become as one of us.

*Na lenno lüssu, elsiyenk.*

4. What will become of his dreams ?

*Ta hatsch léke eechdelungwamoagana untschi?* or, *koecu hatsch w'delungwamoagana untschi?* what benefit will he derive from his dreams?†

5. What is become of him ?

*Ta eli achpit?* (where is he?) or, *ta uchtenden?* how is he? what is he about? or, *ta léke hockeyal*, how does it look about him? (*Germ.* Wie sieht es um ihn aus?)

6. To them gave he power to become the sons of God.

*Milap nikik allewussowoagan wentschitsch gask wequise-muxit na-Gettanittowit;* or, *milap nekik wdallewussogan wentschitschgaski getannellowitall quisemaouna.*”

Mr. Heckewelder's second letter (of Oct. 13) contains a minute consideration of the word *become*, with an explanation of the true import of the different words by which it is expressed in the Delaware language; and the whole letter is so interesting, and throws

\* “*Machtschi*, bad; *schuk*, but; *metschi*, ready, already; *olilis*, good, (from *wulit*.) P. S. D.”

† “*Nane léketsch*; amen, so be it, so may it happen, *koecu*, what, something. P. S. D.”

so much light upon the structure of the Indian languages, that I am unwilling to abridge it. He writes as follows :

"By your two letters of the 8th and 9th of October, I discover that my first answer to your questions had not reached you. In that I attempted to translate the Scripture passages quoted by you, for the purpose of discovering what word the Delawares have for our word *BECOME*, or *TO BECOME* ; the German word for it being *werden*.

"I have since also given the quotations from Scripture, contained in your *last* letters, due consideration, but cannot discover any kind of word in the Delaware language, that would answer *generally* to the English word *become*, or the German *werden* ; neither do I believe there is such a word in their language. Yet they are never at a loss to convey the sense or meaning of this word by means of syllables from two or more words joined together ; and, indeed, often the *termination* of a word is sufficient for that purpose. The word *állemi*, which implies something *progressing, advancing, towards a close, going on, &c.*, is with them joined (generally *prefixed*) to a word which is expressive of the object it is progressing to : Thus, *allemiken* (to ripen) contains the meaning of the two words, *állemi gischiken*, which, when separated, are lengthened out as here written ; *tepiken* (Zeisb. p. 37) being the general word for any thing that bears fruit or grain, *when or being ripe, full-grown, &c.* Again : the word *allemilek* implies a *prediction*, or any thing *expected, progressing towards* the point, or towards establishing the fact ; as for instance, when I say—*metschi ALLEMILEK endchen ndelloweneep*, it is the same as saying, *all that I had said (or foretold)* is now coming to pass.

"In this way the word *become* is, in a manner, interwoven in the words of their language ; and by examining the passages you quote from Zeisberger's Translation, it will be found so. As, in his History of the Bible, p. 119, third paragraph, for the English word *increase*, or, *that they increased*, he has the word *allemikenéwo*, from the word *allemi gischiken* (the termination *éwo* signifying *they*) that is, *they became more numerous*.\* At pages 126—7, where you take the word *wtellitch* to express *become*, which word, however, has a different signification) Zeisberger says—*ahanhocqui gischigápannik* ; which words imply *an additional or extraordinary increase*, which had taken place in Egypt, &c. ; and for the words—

\* "The word *gischiken* is also applicable to the birth of an infant—*sound born*, J. H."

the king became apprehensive, Zeisberger has—*wentschi Sakima nechasop*\* *wtellitsch wsami m'chelhittin, woak allowiwunan*—which is—therefore the King became fearful, that by means of this increase they might finally be too powerful for them: Here *sop* answers for *jealous*.

"The passage *wtellitsch Sokenapálan*, which you quote from page 136, line 9—*nil milápanil Allouchsowoagan wentschitsch undamemensichtit Getannittowittink* is translated from the German text, which reads thus: *Denen gab er macht kinder Gottes zu werden. John i. 12.* The words *kinder zu werden* (in English *to become children*) are expressed in the Indian word *undamemensichtit*; in which the two last syllables *ichtit* express the words *to become*; (*Germ. werden*;) so that the two last words, *undamemensichtit Getannittowittink*, taken together, clearly imply *to become children of God*.

"The next passage you quote, (from page 108, and which you find in Matt. xviii. 3,)

	Mattatsch	gluppiwéque,	woak	mattatsch	amemensuwiwéque,
(ENG.	<i>If not</i>	<i>you turn back,</i>	<i>and</i>	<i>if not</i>	<i>as children ye become,)</i>
(GERM.	<i>Wo nicht</i>	<i>ihr umkehret,</i>	<i>und</i>	<i>wo nicht als die kinder ihr werdet,)</i>	

is as clearly set forth in their language as in either of ours; the word *become* (*Germ. werden*) being incorporated in the last word, or expressed by the last syllables *wiweque*. The word *wentschi* for *therefore*, (in German, *darum*,) Zeisb. p. 17, with the *tsch* at the end of it, points or directs to something that is to take place in future; it implies as much as to say in German—*damit es geschehen möge*. The reason for my going there is also expressed by them thus—*wentschitsch na ayane*.

"Thus there are many Indian words, which, though necessary in explaining a thing, do not effect it without an additional word. For example, the word *anenáwi* would be, in German, *endlich*, and in English, *at last, finally, &c.* Now, by adding the syllable *itsch* to it, so as to make it *anenáwitsch*, it directs you *forward*, to something that is yet *to take place*, which is generally set forth in the next following word or words; as *anenawitsch knémeneen Ménach-*

\*"For *nechásin* and *nechasil*; see Zeisb. p. 30. *Nechasop*, in the text, stands for *jealous, fearful, &c.* J. H."



*king*, that is, in German, *endlich werden wie doch Pittsburg sehen*—*finally, or at last, we shall see Pittsburg*, or (as is properly meant) *arrive at Pittsburg*; the last word in this Indian expression being their name for that place. But I may also say—*auwiéwi knementsch Ménachking, finally we shall see (or arrive at) Pittsburg.*”

These observations of Mr. Heckewelder will be rendered still more useful to the student, by the following additional explanations, which were communicated in a subsequent letter to Mr. Du Ponteau. Mr. H. says—

“The structure of the Indian languages is, as you observe, truly wonderful.....I once believed myself competent to understand every word they used; and I can still plainly see the necessity of every syllable in a word, by which to explain themselves properly. Not being able, however, to answer your questions intelligibly, otherwise than by examples, setting forth words and phrases, which will lead to the required solution, I shall adopt that method.

“Thus with regard to the syllable *UND*. I begin with the word *unden*, *Zeisb.* p. 16. This (says Z.) is *to take from*, which so far is correct; for, if an Indian becomes possessed of an article not seen with him before, he will be asked—“*TA GUNDEN?\** *where did you get it? or how did you come by it?*” for the word *unden* of itself instructs us, that the article was obtained at *some* place, or came to hand through or from *some* source. As, *Zeisberger*, p. 67—*UNDENUMMEN*, *to take it from*, or, more properly, *to have obtained it (es bekommen)*—*WUNDENASIK*, *where it is to be got from* (*Zeisb.* p. 72) points to a *certain* place where the article was obtained or *may be had*.

“When the syllable *UND* or *WEND* is *prefixed*, in a *spiritual* sense, it applies to *favours, gifts, &c.*, not to things purchased, or on which a price is set. Thus *WENDENUXOWOAGAN*, *reception, admittance.* *Zeisb.* 111.—*UNDOOCHWENALL*, *he came for their sake.* *Zeisb.* 67.—“*Christ undoochwenep getemaxitschit*” is, *Christ came for the purpose of (saving or relieving) the poor, or needy.* *WENDaptonachga*, *of, or from the word.* *Zeisb.* 95.—*Christ wundaptonalgun*, *Christ (by or through his word) speaks unto us* (that is, *we do not ourselves hear him speak, yet what he says is directed to us*) *from his place of abode*; *UNDEN Christink*,

\* In this word *gunden*, and some others, Mr. Heckewelder seems (according to the practice of German writers) to use the letter *g* for *k*; this latter being the usual prefix to denote the second person.

it proceedeth or cometh *from* him ; *UNDamemensemichtit*, *through* or *by.....to become*, &c.

"I can go no further in explaining the syllable *und* (from *unden*) than to add, that when used in a *temporal* sense, it implies *to get* or *have gotten*, *procured*, or *purchased* such a thing or article from the place or person at the time named. In a *spiritual* sense, it is applied to a thing *obtained* by free will or through *grace*—to be *admitted*, *received*, *BE*, or *BECOME* a *partaker*, &c. of, in, or to whatever one or the other of the *connected* words indicates.

"WENTSCHI is simply *therefore* (Germ. *darum*, *um desswillen*.)

"WENTSCHITSCH is *thereby* (Germ. *dadurch*) and directs to the future.

"We have no such words as *nentschi*, *kentschi*, in the language. The letter *w*, in *wentschi*, does not point to the third person, but is necessary to distinguish that word from UNTSCHI, *from*, *of*, (*Zeisb.* 16.) which, being a general word, is frequently either wholly or partly incorporated in other words ; as, for instance : *Ta unt-schiew*—*where does it come from?* *Nik lennowak wemi* utenink UNTSCHIJeyih—*those men are all come from the city*.

"NUNTSCHihilla uteney—I came, with speed, from the city. *Kuntschihilla* uteney—are you come, with speed, from the city? *Untschihilleu* uteney—he came, speedily, from the city or town. *Kuntschihillahummo* uteney—are you all come from the city or town?"\*

To these remarks should be added a brief explanation of the terminations *muxit* and *sichtit*, which occur in some of the preceding examples :

"In looking over your letter (says Mr. H.) after I had written this, I find that I had not sufficiently explained the terminations *muxit* and *sichtit*. Please to turn to Zeisberger's Spelling Book, page 104, for the word MACHELEMUXOWAGAN, *honour* ; p. 82, for the word MACHELEMUXIT,† he that is honoured ; and p. 52, for MACHELENDAM, to honour, &c. Now MACHELEMAU or MACHELEMÆ is, *honour him*, &c. ; MACHELEMUXichtit, may be *or become honoured*. Now it will be understood as ex-

\* "The syllables *hilla* (taken from the word *schihilla*, quickly, speedily,) added to the word *untschi*, make the compound *untschihilla*, and denote either *quick running* or *riding*. J. H."

† "It is all the same whether I write this word *muxsit* or *mucksit* : I have seen the word *maxen* (shoes) written *möcksen*, &c. J. H."

actly the same thing, whether I say WENTSCHI MACHELEMUX-ichtitetsch, or WENTSCHITSCH, MACHELEMUXichtit, to become honoured. The same thing takes place in the word UND-AMEMENSichtit; the future, *to be made, become*, in the first words, is in the termination ichtitetsch; in the last, it is partly in the termination of the word wentschitsch, and partly in the termination of the second word ichtit."

I cannot omit adding here (from a letter of Mr. Du Ponceau) the following elucidation of the Indian method of expressing our verbs:

"We are now (says he) upon the word *become*; and Mr. Heckewelder has told us, that there is no proper word for it in the language of the Delawares, but yet that they are never at a loss for a method of conveying that idea. Let us see how they go about it. Mr. H. instances the words *to become honoured*; in Delaware wentschi machelemuxichtitetsch, or (what is equivalent) wentschitsch machelemuxichtit. This may be passed as follows:

"Wentschi (as explained in Mr. Heckewelder's letter) is *therefore*; wentschitch is *thereby*, and directs to the future.

"Machelemuxichtit. In the *Transactions of the Historical and Literary Committee*, (p. 445 of Mr. Heckewelder's Correspondence,) we have the substantive machelemuxowoagan, *honour*, or *the being honoured*. The verb is machelendam (3d conjug.) *to honour*; machelemuxit (particip.) *he who is honoured*; machelemuxichtit (3d pers. plur. conditional, or conjunctive) *if, or when they are honoured*. Observe, that the phrase *to be honoured* is here taken in a plural sense—wentschimachelemuxichtitetsch or wentschitsch machelemuxichtit. Tsch is the sign of the future; and it is a matter of indifference, says Mr. Heckewelder, whether it is suffixed to the preposition *by it*, or to the verb *to be honoured*; hence, the two modes of rendering the sentence. Thus "*to become the children of God*" is expressed in Zeisberger's Harmony, by "*wentschitsch undamemensichtit Getannittowitink*;" WENTSCHITSCH, *thereby in future*, UNDAMEMENSICHTIT, (from awemens, child,) *to become the children*. Here the word *become* is not at all used, but a compound verb, from the substantive *child*, expresses the idea; as in the Latin word *beatificari* (a word formed much after the Indian manner) the syllable *fi* awakening in the mind the idea of *fieri*; but as there is no such word as *fieri* in the Indian (in the mere abstract sense) the same idea is differently expressed. Lastly; GETANNITTOWITINK, *of God—ink or onk* is a termination of



relation, and here expresses the genitive. See *Zeisberger's Grammar*: "Nihillalquonk Allogewoaganall, *God's the Lord's works.*"

The preceding discussion respecting the verbs *to be* and *to become*, has been confined (as the reader will have observed) to two of the Indian languages only, the Delaware of the present day, and the Massachusetts as spoken a century and a half ago. But since the correspondence of Mr. Heckewelder and Mr. Du Ponceau, I have been enabled to extend my inquiries on the present question to some other Indian dialects; though not with the same minuteness and certainty as in the case of the Delaware language. For the information which I have obtained, I am indebted to the Rev. Herman Daggett, Superintendent of the *Foreign Missionary School*, established at Cornwall, in the State of Connecticut; who, notwithstanding the pressure of ill health, was so obliging as to make particular inquiries for me on this subject of the different Indian pupils under his care. In his letter to me, of the 22d of October, 1821, he says——

"I have, strictly speaking, but *four* Indian languages in my school; the Choctaw, the Cherokee, the Muhhekunneau (or Stockbridge) and the Iroquois, including the Oneida, Tuscarora and Caughnewaga. The youth of these nations, or tribes, agree in saying, as far as I can make them understand the subject, that *they have no substantive verb*. Where we should say, *I am here*, they can only say, *I here* or *I stand* or *live here*. I have now but one *Stockbridge* lad; he recognizes, in some measure, his own language in the few words you have given from *Eliot*, but appears to know nothing of the verb conjugated by *Cotton*.\* The word *nuttinniin*, he says, signifies *always the same, without change*; and *nutapip*, *I was born*, or *I born*.

"The attempts of the different youths at translating the given passages [of scripture] are not very satisfactory. Some of them have a word, or part of a word, which, they say, signifies *AM* or *WAS*, in *connexion*; but they say it has not that meaning *by itself*. Their translation, they say, is good Cherokee or good Choctaw, &c.; but when I try to bring them to explain and analyze, they are at a loss.....I can plainly discover that there is a beautiful *con-texture* in their languages."†

\* The words of *Eliot* here alluded to, were—*Negonne onk Abrahamwi nutapip*—John viii. 58; and the verb conjugated by *Cotton* was *ainneat*, which is given above, at p. xxv. As to the close affinity between the *Muhhekunneau* (Mohegan) and the Massachusetts, see above, *Introductory Observations*, p. 239.

† For specimens of the Cherokee language, the reader is referred to Dr. Jarvis's *Discourse on the Religion of the Indian Tribes of North America*;

From the whole of this investigation, then, it appears—

1. That the observation made by Eliot, at the very early period when he wrote, that there was “no complete distinct word for the verb substantive” in the Massachusetts language, is very fully confirmed by what we find to be the case in the *Delaware* language; which is the main stock of the Massachusetts and other northern dialects, and from which we may reason (in respect to general properties) to the derivative dialects, without much hazard of falling into any material errors.

2. That the Massachusetts verb *nuttinniin* (or *n'tinniin*, as it would now be written) which Eliot sometimes uses for our verb *to be*, and sometimes for *become*, is nothing more than an *approximation* to the strict meaning of those English words.

But the precise import of the Massachusetts verb *nuttinniin* does not yet appear so clearly as to leave no uncertainty upon the subject; though it seems to have a close affinity with the Delaware verb *n'dellsin*, and probably is (as Mr. Du Ponceau has above observed) the very corresponding verb in that kindred dialect. If, upon further investigation, this should prove to be the fact, beyond all doubt, then we shall need no other authority for the fundamental idea of this verb, than that of Mr. Heckewelder, who informs us, that in the *Delaware* it is, *I act so, I act for myself* (in German, *so bin ich gestellt*.) Yet, until the identity of the two verbs is incontrovertibly established, it may be allowable in an inquiry of this nature to offer even conjectures; with the hope, that if such conjectures should not be entirely well founded in themselves, they may be the means of exciting such further investigations, as may at last conduct us to the true solution of the problem. Under this impression, I shall submit one other view of the subject, which has occurred to me upon a fresh examination of Eliot's Grammar, and some other works relative to the dialects of our *northern* Indians. I offer it as a mere conjecture; and I should not venture to do even that, if I had not obtained the approbation of Mr. Du Ponceau himself, who thinks this view not unworthy of being submitted to the reader.

Eliot, in p. 23 of his Grammar, has the following curious remark: “There be also suppletive syllables of no signification but for ornament of the word, as *tit, tin, tinne*; and these, in way of an elegancy, receive the *affix*, which belongeth to the noun or verb following, as *nuttit, kuttit, wuttit, NUTTIN, kuttin, wuttin, NUT-TINNE, kuttinne, wuttinne*.”

During a very recent perusal of his Grammar, this remark at-

the learned Notes of which contain much valuable information on the *Languages* of the Indians.

tracted my notice; and it immediately occurred to me that, possibly, the suppletive syllable *tinne* might be a constituent part of the verb *nuttinniin*; in which case the verb itself would be simply *nuttiin*, or (as we should now write it) *n'tiin*. Pursuing the investigation, upon this hypothesis, I found in *Cotton's MS. Vocabulary* several instances, in which the suppletive *tin* (as well as some of the other suppletives) appeared to be thus incorporated into different verbs with the affixes of the different persons, in conformity with Eliot's observation. This led me to continue my inquiries for a verb of the form I have mentioned (*n'tiin*; and I had the satisfaction at last of meeting with it in *Roger Williams's Vocabulary* of the *Naraganset* dialect; which is now well known to be nearly the same language with the *Massachusetts*. In that *Vocabulary*, the verb in question occurs in the three following phrases; in one of which, however, it is somewhat obscured by the author's very irregular orthography:

"Yo ntin . . . . . I live here.  
 Tou wuttin? . . . . . where lives he?  
 Tuckuttiin [tou kuttin?] . . . . where keep you?"\*

Now, if *Eliot's* verb *nuttinniin* is in fact the same with *Williams's* verb *n'tiin*, the signification of it, as the reader perceives, is very different from that of the pure substantive verb; some other idea being united with that of mere existence in the abstract. How far this analysis of the verb *nuttinniin* may be well founded, is submitted to the candid reader, with all that hesitation, which ought to be felt by one, who has no more knowledge of the Indian languages than I possess.

Thus far the present remarks have been directed to the meaning of *Eliot's* verb *nuttinniin*; and it now only remains, to ascertain the signification of his other substitutes for the "complete substantive verb," which occur in the texts above cited (p. xxxi.). The explanations of these last will take up the less time, as the remarks upon the former, in connexion with the general question, have been extended to so great a length. I shall give them in a very concise form, as they occur in *Mr. Du Ponceau's* letters to me. He says—

"I have studied the problems, and think I have gone a great way towards solving them.

\* The English word *keep* seems to be here used by *Williams*, in the provincial signification, which it has in some parts of New England at the present day; that is, in the sense of *to stay, reside*, or (as *Williams* says in the other two phrases) *to live*. See his *Key*, chap. i. in *Massachusetts Historical Collections*, vol. v. p. 80, 81.



"I. Rev. i. 4. From him which is, and which was, and which is to come—*Wutch noh, noh koh, noh koh mó, noh paont.*

WUTCH (Delaw. *wentschi*) from.

NOH, *he, him* (Gram. p. 7.) used again for *who* or *which*.

KOH. This word is embarrassing, because of the letter *k*, indicating the second person. I am unable at present to explain it in a manner perfectly satisfactory to myself.

NOH PAONT. This is easily explained from the Delaware. In that language, we find PAHUMP, *to come*; PEU, *he comes*; PEWAK, *they come*. PAONT is undoubtedly an inflexion of the same verb. In Eliot's Grammar, p. 22, we find WOI NAPEHNONT, *O! that it were*; which literally is—*O that it came (to pass.)*

MO. That *mo* is a particle indicative of the past, I have little doubt; as in Gen. xxxi. 40, above quoted: YEU MO NUTTINNAIH—YEU, *this*, (used for *thus*)—MO, *heretofore*, NUTTINNAIH, *was so or so* (from *n'dellsin*.) as stated in the notes before communicated.

"If I am right thus far, then every thing is explained but *koh*, which I cannot yet sufficiently account for.

"II. Rev. xvii. 8.....and yet is—*kah noh yeu yeu APIT.*

KAH NOH YEUYEU APIT—and he, this this (*yeu yeu*, Gram. p. 8.) *is there*; *ápit* (pronounced as *épit* in German) *illic stat. Yeu duplicated, perhaps used for which.*

"III. Gen. v. 4.....*kah matta na WUTAPEIN.*

NA is an expletive which I cannot explain.

WUTAPEIN (Delaw. *w'dappin*, *he is there*.) See *Zeisb. Delaware Grammar.*

"IV. Psalm xxxvii. 36..... *matta ohtano*, *was not*.

OHTANO is probably a form of the same verb, and means *he was not there*. *W'dano, w'tano, ohtano*; the *o, u* and *oh* are often used by Eliot for the Delaware *w* sibilant. For the same reason, we say, the *Ottawas, Utawas*, while their proper name is *W'tawas, or Wtawas.*"

## II. Numerals.

ELIOT, in his Grammar, gives as the numeral *one*, the word *nequt* only, corresponding to the Delaware *n'gutti*, and the Naraganset *nquit*. But in his Bible he uses also the word *pasuk*, corresponding to the Abnaki *pézekou* of Father Râle's dictionary, and the Naraganset *páwsuck* of Roger Williams's Key. Now, in

reading Cotton's valuable Vocabulary, the following curious distinction, in the use of these two different numerals, attracted my notice :

“*Negut*, a thing that is past.  
*Pasuk*, a thing in being.”

I lost no time in communicating this distinction of Cotton's to Mr. Du Ponceau, with a wish that he would ascertain from Mr. Heckewelder, whether any thing of the kind was to be found in the *Delaware* language. This circumstance gave rise to the following interesting observations on the *Delaware numerals* :

“The *Delawares* (says Mr. H. in his first letter) have the following words for *one*, viz: *n'gutti*, *máwat*, *mauchsú*, and *ma-jouchsu*. The two first are generally made use of for what is *inanimate*; the latter two, for what is *animate*. *Páschuk* is the true *Mahicanni* word for *one*.”

In a subsequent letter, Mr. H. gives the following more copious explanation in respect to the *Delaware numerals*; which serves at the same time to elucidate the curious structure of the *Indian languages* :

“Not being quite satisfied with the partial answer I gave you in a hurry respecting the numeral *one*, I will now expatiate more fully thereon; first, pointing out what words the *Delawares* have in their language, equally necessary to be known, in addition to the one above quoted; as much depends, in speaking their language, upon having each word in its proper place; for although the numeral *n'gutti*, for *one*, may be in a manner considered as the *general* word in this language for the number *one*, (be the same *animate* or *inanimate*) yet it is not always the case. Indeed the *first* syllable of that word, *n'gut*, (*I* leave out always the prefixed *n*, there being no necessity for it, as it is only put there to explain the numeral; as by saying “*one single one*,”) I say, that although this first syllable is very useful, and *prefixed* to a great number of *compound* words, all which tend to show that this syllable *gut* cannot be dispensed with, as will by and by be shown by examples; yet, the *latter* syllable of the numeral, the *ti*, is not only in numerous cases useless, but would be even improper, if retained. *Ex.* The Indian name or word for a *one-legged* person, being *gut-gat*, is a compound of two words; *gut*, from *GUTTI*, *one*, and *gát*, from *WICHGAT*, *the leg*: *GUTGATSU*, *he is one-legged*, or *has but one leg*. *GUTOKENAK* is the word for *one day*; *GUTAWICAN*, *one fathom* (*awican* being the word for *one fathom*, or six feet;) *GUT-TAPACHKI*, *one hundred*, &c. Generally speaking, the

Indians are very nice in the selecting of words. I will give you such as are in conjunction with the one in question, viz. GUTTI, one: Zeisb. 11, 'MAWAT (only) one.' Zeisb. 13, MAYAAT (is the same in the Minsey.) The two latter of these three words can in no wise be made use of with that which is *animate*; on the other hand, the words MAUCHSU and MAYAUCHSU are the proper words for what is animate: MAUCHSU LENNO is *one man*; MAUCHSU TIPAS, *one (single) fowl*, &c. (*Mayauchs* is the Minsey word for the same. See Zeisberger 52, at bottom.) If I meant to say to a *Lenape*, that of all the men who had returned from hunting, only one (single person) had killed a deer, I could not make use of the numeral *n'gutti*, for that one, but I must say—*bischi apallawiwak lennowak weemi allod mauchs* (or *mayauchs*) *schuk, mescheu*. See, for *mayauchs*, Zeisb. p. 52, at bottom; and for *memayauchs*—*siyenk*, every ONE of us, *memayauchsiyeeek*, every ONE of you, Zeisb. p. 105.

"You inquire further, whether it is the same in the Delaware, as Cotton says it is in the *Natick* [Massachusetts] that there are 'two words for the numeral one—*n'gutte* or *nequt*, for a thing past, and *pasuk*, for a thing present.' In this remark, I consider Cotton to be under a mistake; for I am sure, that the *Mahicanni* word *n'gutte* (the same as the Delaware *n'gutti* or *gutti*) is a general word, and in constant use for the present. The *Mahicanni* say—*guttiē* or *gutta* for one: "*Gutta-gūn* (in Delaware, *gutti-gull*) ONE six-penny piece—*n'guttōxena* (Delaw. *guttāxen*) ONE pair of shoes, &c. I presume the *Natick* word *nequt* answers to the Delaware *guttēn*, since it points to the past, as for instance—*gūtten n'gachti angeln*, ONCE I was on the point of dying; *gūtten woapan*, ONCE of a morning; *schuk gutten Cuequenāku m'pahn*, ONLY ONCE I have been at Philadelphia, &c. The *Delawares* have also the word *nekti* (See Zeisb. p. 14) much in use when speaking of any one thing or article, and not being possessed of more than the one of that kind.

"I have already said (in my last letter) that *paschuk* is a true *Mahicanni* word for one; and so I suppose *nequt* to be, in its proper place.

"You inquire how this word *paschuk* is pronounced, whether as in German, or as in English, with the acute *a*. I always write words according to the pronunciation of the Germans; but in writing the word according to the English alphabet, I should write it *pawshuk*.

"I will add one observation on certain differences between the languages of the *Mohegans* (or *Mahicanni*) and the *Delawares*, both in respect to the words themselves, and the manner of pro-



nouncing. The Mohegans, by *changing* some of their letters in words from that of the Delawares, by *dropping* others entirely, and by drawing out their words in speaking, give the language a different sound from what it otherwise would have, were they to abide by the proper letters, and speak *off hand* as the Delawares do. They generally drop the letter *L* of the Delawares, and supply its place with the letter *N*; and where the Delawares have a *single* vowel, they sound their word as if there were *two*. For example :

For the Delaware . .	<i>koecu</i>	(what) they say,	GAQUAI ;
For . . . . .	<i>auween</i>	(who) . . . . .	AWAAN ;
For . . . . .	<i>ni</i>	(I) . . . . .	NIA ;
For . . . . .	<i>oyos</i>	(meal) . . . . .	WIAAS ;
For . . . . .	<i>niluna</i>	(we) . . . . .	NIANA ;
For . . . . .	<i>dee</i>	(heart) . . . . .	OTTAHA, &c. .

To these remarks on the Indian *numerals*, it may be useful to add an important observation made by Mr. Heckewelder, in the *Transactions of the Historical and Literary Committee*. He there says—"On the subject of the numerals, I have had occasion to observe, that they sometimes differ very much in languages derived from the same stock. Even the *Minsi*, a tribe of the Lenape or Delaware nation, have not all their numerals like those of the *Unami* tribe, which is the principal among them."\*

\* Correspondence with Mr. Du Ponceau, in the *Transactions*, p. 381.

INDEX OF INDIAN WORDS IN ELIOT'S GRAMMAR: INCLUDING SELECT WORDS FROM HIS TRANSLATION OF THE BIBLE.

*Advertisement.* THE following Index was originally intended by the editor to include only those Indian words, which are contained in Eliot's *Grammar*; and Mr. Du Ponceau had prepared (from the *Grammar and Bible* together) a separate List of words, corresponding to the seventy English words of the *Comparative Vocabularies* in Dr. Barton's *New Views of the Tribes and Nations of America*. But, as many of the words in Mr. Du Ponceau's List were also to be found in the *Grammar*, and would of course be repeated in an index to that work, the editor has (with the concurrence of Mr. Du Ponceau) incorporated the whole into the present Index. In order, however, to enable the reader to select from it all the words, which correspond to those of Dr. Barton's List, and thus supply the want of a separate Vocabulary, such corresponding words are here printed in SMALL CAPITALS. The words selected from the *Bible*, by Mr. Du Ponceau, will be readily distinguished by their having no references to pages annexed to them.

A.	Page	
A (a vowel often inserted for the sake of euphony)		came a man; wompi, white, wompiyeoo, it is white, 12, 16
		Arúm (in the "Northern" dialect) a dog . . . . . 2
	See Gram. p. 9.	As; a syllable added to the
Ahque (adv. of forbidding)		indicative mode of verbs,
beware, do not . . . . . 21		in order to make it inter-
ACHQUNNON, rain. See SOKANON		rogative. See Gram. p. 27.
Ah (an inflexion of animate		It is also used, to change
nouns.) See Gram. . . . . 8		the present tense into the
Ahquompak, when . . . . . 21		preterite. See Gram. pp. 62, 63
Ahtuk, a deer . . . . . 9		Ash (adv. of continuation)
Alúm (in the Nipmuk dia-		still . . . . . 21
lect) a dog . . . . . 2		Ash (the plural termination
ANOGQS, a star . . . . . 9		of inanimate nouns.) See
Anomut, within . . . . . 21		Gram. . . . . 10
Anue (adv. of choosing) more		ASKONUH, skin
rather; . . . . . 21		Askook, a snake or worm . . . . . 9
also a sign of the compar-		Asquam (adv. of choosing)
ative degree: Anue menuh-		not yet . . . . . 21
kesu, more strong . . . . . 15		Assootu, foolish . . . . . 16
Anúm, a dog . . . . . 2		Asuh, or . . . . . 22
Ao, oo and yeoo; termina-		At; a termination used in
tions added to nouns, adjec-		forming the infinitive
tives, adverbs, &c. in order		mode, which is done by
to change them into verbs		adding this termination to
substantive; as, woske-		the indicative, and taking
tomp, a man, wosketom-		away the suffix . . . . . 20
poo, he is a man, or he be-		

At, en, in, ut: (*prep.*) in, at  
or to . . . . . 22  
Ayim, he made . . . . . 8

### C.

Chaubohkish; except, besides 22  
Chuh (*adv. of calling; the  
same as hoh*) . . . . . 21

### E.

E (*used as the termination of  
the inanimate form of some  
adjectives.*) See Gram. p. 13  
E or u; the common termina-  
tions of adverbs; as wame  
or wamu, *all*; menuhke or  
menuhku, *strongly* . . . . . 21  
Ehhoh, hah (*adv. of exhorting  
or encouraging*) . . . . . 21  
Ehoh, (*interj. of encouraging*) 22  
En See át  
Emes or es; terminations  
added to primitive nouns  
to make them diminutives;  
emes is the least of them 12  
Es (mark of diminutive. See  
emes)  
Es and esu (terminations of  
the animate form of some  
adjectives.) See Gram. p. 13  
Eum, om, or um; the sign of  
the "possessive rank" of  
nouns . . . . . 12

### H.

Hah; the same as ehoh . . . 22  
Hó (*interj. of wondering*) 22  
Hog, body  
Hóh (*adv. of calling; the  
same as chuh*) . . . . . 21  
Hoo; the same as hó . . . . 22  
Horsemes; diminutive of the  
English word horse . . . 12  
Horsesog; the plural of the  
English word horse . . . 12  
Howan, who . . . . . 7  
Howanig; plural of howan 7

Hussun, a stone . . . . . 10  
Hussunemes; *diminutive of*  
hussun . . . . . 12

### I.

I (*used as the termination of  
the inanimate form of some  
adjectives.*) See Gram. p. 13  
In (*prep.*) See át  
Ishkont, lest . . . . . 22

### K.

Keek, thy house . . . . . 11  
Keekit, in thy house . . . . 11  
Keekou, your house (*plur.*) 11  
Keekuout, in your house (*pl.*) 11  
Ken, thou . . . . . 7  
Kenaau, ye . . . . . 7  
Kenawun or neenawun, we 7  
Kenuppowonuk, he died for  
thee\* . . . . . 18  
Kenuppowonukqun, he died  
for us\* . . . . . 18  
Kenuppowonukoo, he died for  
you,\* . . . . . 18  
Kenutcheq, thy hand . . . . 11  
Kenutheganash or kenutche-  
gash, thy hands . . . . . 11  
Kenutheganoo, your hand (*pl.*) 11  
Kenuthegash. See kenut-  
heganash  
Kenutheganowout,  
your hands . . . . . 11  
KESUK, heaven  
KESUKOD, day  
Kesukquieu, toward heaven 21  
KOON, snow  
Kooadchansh, I keep thee 17  
Kooadchanumoush, I keep it  
for thee or for thy use . 17  
Kooadchanumwanshun, I  
keep it for thee, I act in  
thy stead\* . . . . . 18

\* "This form [of the verb] is of  
great use in Theologie, to express  
what Christ hath done for us."





Nag or neg, they . . . . .	7	found in the same part of the Grammar.	
Nagoh or nahoh, they . . . .	7		
Nagum or noh, he . . . . .	7	Netatup (adverb of likeness)	
Nahen, (adv.) almost . . . .	21	like so . . . . .	22
Nahoh. See nagoh		Newutche, wutch, wutche;	
Nahohtôeu (adverb of order)		for, from, because . . . .	22
second . . . . .	21	Neyane. See neane	
Nahpenont, woi, toh; oh that		NIPPE, water	
it were. <i>Lat.</i> utinam . . . .	21, 34	Nipmuk; the name of a tribe	
NAMOHS, a fish . . . . .	9	of Indians. See <i>Introductory</i>	
Nano (a sign of the compara-		<i>Observations</i> , p. 238,	
tive degree) more and more . .	15	note.	
Naumóg (the ó accented being		Nish, these . . . . .	7
pronounced as in the Eng-		Nishwu (adv. of order) third	21
lish word vogue) if YE see . .	3	Nôadtuck (adv.) a long time	21
Naumog (the o unaccented be-		Nogkus, belly	
ing pronounced as in log)		Nogque. See ne nogque and	
if WE see . . . . .	3	yeu nogque	
NAUMON, son		Noh or nagum, he . . . . .	7
NAUW, there . . . . .	21	NOSH, my father	
Nawhutche, some . . . . .	8	Noochumi, weak . . . . .	13
Ne, that . . . . .	7	Nootau, fire	
Neane (sometimes written in		Nooaadchanumun-toh;	
<i>Eliot's Bible</i> , neyane) as . . .	22	I wish, or desire, to keep it	19
Neek, my house . . . . .	11	Nooadchanit, I am kept . . .	16
Neekit, in my house . . . . .	11	Nooadchanittimun, we keep	
Neekun, our house . . . . .	11	each other. <i>This form</i>	
Neekunonut, in our house . . .	11	<i>always wants the singular</i>	
NEEMAT, my brother		<i>number . . . . .</i>	17
Neen, I (ego) . . . . .	7	Nooadchanumoun, I do not	
Neenawun or kenawun, we*	7	keep it . . . . .	19
Neetomp, my friend		Nooadchanumun, I do keep	
Neg. See nag		it . . . . .	19
Negonnu (adv. of order) first	21	Nooadchanumun neek,	
Nemehkuh, so . . . . .	22	I keep my house . . . . .	17
Nen, I (ego)		Nooadchanumunas? do I	
Ne nogque, towards that way	21	keep it? . . . . .	19
NEPAUSHADT, moon		Nooadchanumunash noowéat-	
NEPAUZ, sun		chimineash, I keep my corn	17
NEPUN, summer		Nooaantam, I am wise . . . .	13, 24
Nequt (numeral) one† . . . .	14	Nooompes, I am white . . . .	16, 20
<i>The other numerals will be</i>		Nooompesuonk, my white-	
		ness . . . . .	20

\* See Mr. Du Ponceau's remarks on these two forms of the plural, p. xix. of his *Notes*.

† Cotton, in his MS. Vocabulary of the language of the *Plymouth In-*

dians, has this remark—"Nequt, a thing that is past; Pasuk, a thing in being." But see the observations on this subject, p. xlv. of the preceding *Notes*.

N'puhkuk, my head. <i>See</i>	
PUHKUK	
Nuhog, my body. <i>See</i> hog	
NUKON, night	
Nummissis, my sister	
NUNKOMP, a young man, a	
youth . . . . .	9
Nunkompaemes ( <i>diminutive</i>	
of nunkomp) . . . . .	12
Nunkompaes ( <i>diminutive of</i>	
nunkomp) . . . . .	12
NUNKSQAU,* a girl . . . . .	9
Nunksquaemes ( <i>diminutive</i>	
of nunksquau) . . . . .	12
Nunksquaes ( <i>diminutive of</i>	
nunksquau) . . . . .	12
NUNNAUMON, my son	
Nunnogkus, my belly. <i>See</i>	
nogkus	
Nunnuccowonuk; he died for	
me . . . . .	18
Nunnutcheg, my hand . . . .	11
Nunnutcheganash, my hands	11
Nunnutcheganum, our hand	11
Nunnutchegannunnonut, our	
hands . . . . .	11
NUPPOONK, death	
Nuskon, my bone. <i>See</i> uskon	
Nusseet, my foot. <i>See</i> seet	
Nutcheg. <i>See</i> menutcheg	
Nuttah, my heart. <i>See</i> metah	
and tah . . . . .	11
Nuttahhun, our heart. <i>See</i>	
metah and tah . . . . .	11
Nuttaunoh, my daughter. <i>See</i>	
taunoh	
Nuttin. <i>See</i> tin . . . . .	23
Nuttoon, my mouth	
Nux; yea, yes . . . . .	21

\* The last syllable of this word is printed in the original edition of the Grammar as it is in the present one (*qu*); but the diminutive, at p. 12, has the same syllable printed *qua*, as it is also in the Bible. *See* Joel iii. 3; Zech. viii. 5. The form *qua*, therefore, seems to be an error of the press.

Nuxyeucutch, let it be yea.	
James v. 12 . . . . .	16

## O.

Og (the plural termination of	
animate nouns.) <i>See</i> Gram. p. 9	
Oh (an inflexion of animate	
nouns.) <i>See</i> Grammar, p. 8	
OKASOH, mother	
OHKE, earth	
Ohkeiyeu ( <i>adv.</i> ) towards the	
earth . . . . .	21
Ongash and ongashash (the	
plural termination of ver-	
bal nouns in ONK.)	
<i>See</i> Gram. p. 10	
Onk; a termination often	
added to verbs, in order to	
turn them into nouns . . . .	13, 20
Onkoue, beyond . . . . .	21
OO. <i>See</i> aō	
oom. <i>See</i> eum	
oosqheonk, blood	
oowee ( <i>interj. of sorrow</i> ) . . .	22
Oxemes ( <i>diminutive of the</i>	
English word) ox . . . . .	9
Oxesog ( <i>plur. of the English</i>	
word ox) oxen . . . . .	9

## P.

Pâ; a particle added to the	
indicative mode, to give it	
the sense of the first per-	
son of the imperative . . . .	25
Pagwodche ( <i>adv. of doubting</i> )	
it may be . . . . .	22
Pasuk ( <i>numeral</i> ) one. <i>See</i>	
the note on nequt	
Paswu, lately . . . . .	21
Paummuonah, to pay* . . . .	42

\* Roger Williams says, this is "a word newly made from the English



Paummuôunat, not to pay . . .	58
Peasik or peesik, small; used in expressing a degree of comparison . . . . .	15
PETUHQUNNEG, bread	
Pigsemes ( <i>diminutive of the English word</i> ) pig . . . .	12
Pish. <i>See</i> mos	
POMANTAMÓONK, life	
POPON, winter	
PSUKSES, a little bird . . . .	12
Puppinishim, a beast . . . .	9
PUHKUK, a head	

## Q.

Quah ( <i>interj. of disdain</i> )	22
Qunnuhtug ( <i>from qunni, long, and mehtug, wood or tree</i> ) used to denote a pike . . .	15
Qussuk, a rock . . . . .	10
Qut, but . . . . .	22

## S.

Sasabbath-dayeu, every sab- bath ( <i>made a frequentative by doubling the first sylla- ble. See note on the word mohmoeg.</i> )	
Saup, tomorrow . . . . .	21
SEPU, river	
SEET, foot	
Sheepsemes ( <i>diminutive of the English word</i> ) sheep	12
Sohsúmóonk, forest	
SOKANON, SOKANUNK; rain	
Sun, sunnummatta? ( <i>adv. of asking</i> ) is it, or is it not?	21

word pay." *Key into the Languages of America*, ch. xxv.; in *Mass. Hist. Collect.* vol. v. p. 100. Williams writes the first person singular, indicative mode, *cuppáimish*, I will pay you; but Eliot writes it *kuppau-mush*, at the same time directing the reader to pronounce *pay* and *nót pau*. See *Gram.* p. 28.

## T.

TAH, the heart. <i>See</i> metah	
Tahshé; a suppletive word used with the numerals. <i>See Gram.</i> . . . . .	14
TASKON, horn	
TAUNOH, daughter	
Teanuk, presently . . . . .	21
Teaogku ( <i>adv.</i> ) rather, unfin- ished . . . . .	21
Tiadche, unexpectedly . . . .	22
Tin, tinne, tit; suppletive syllables used "for orna- ment of the word." <i>See Gram.</i> . . . . .	23
Tinne. <i>See</i> tin	
Tit. <i>See</i> tin	
Toh; annexed to every per- son and variation in the optative mood. <i>See</i> p. 65. <i>See also</i> nahpenont	
Toh ( <i>adverb of doubting</i> ) it may be . . . . .	22
TOHKOI, it was cold	
Tohkônogque, although . . . .	22
Tohneit, if . . . . .	22
Tohsu; a suppletive, used with the numerals . . . . .	14
Tohsunash, how many . . . .	8
Tohsuog, how many . . . . .	8
Tohwutch, why . . . . .	20
TOOHPU; ice, frost	
TOON, mouth. <i>See</i> muttoon	
Tummunk, the beaver . . . .	9

## U.

Uh (an inflexion of animate nouns.) <i>See Grammar</i> , p. 8	
Um. <i>See</i> eum	
Us; a syllable added to the present tense in order to form the preterite . . . . .	62, 63
USKON, a bone	
Ut. <i>See</i> át	
Uttiyeu, or tanyeu ( <i>pron. rel.</i> ) which . . . . .	7
Uttiyeu ( <i>adv.</i> ) where . . . .	21

## W.

Waantam, he [is] wise . . .	13
Waantamoonk, wisdom . . .	10
Waantamunát, to be wise . . .	26
Waantamounát ( <i>the negative form of the preceding verb</i> )	27
Waantamwe ( <i>adv. of quality</i> )	22
Wadchaneh ( <i>imperat. mode</i> )	
keep me . . . . .	19
Wadchanittéinat, to be kept	62
Wadchanónat ( <i>animate form</i> )	
to keep . . . . .	42
Wadchanounat ( <i>anim. form neg.</i> ) not to keep . . . . .	58
Wadchanounát ( <i>infn. pass. neg.</i> ) not to be kept . . . . .	63
Wadchansh, keep thou . . . . .	19
Wadchanumunát ( <i>inan. form</i> )	
to keep it, e. g. a tool, a garment, &c . . . . .	26
WADCHU, mountain	
WANNONKOOK, evening	
Wahsuk. <i>See</i> wasuk	
Wame or wamu ( <i>adv.</i> ) all	21
WASUK, husband	
Week, his house . . . . .	11
Weekit, in his house . . . . .	11
Weekou, their house, . . . . .	11
Weekuwout or weekuwomut, in his house: "Hence we corrupt this word Wigwam." <i>Gram.</i> . . . . .	11
Wehtauog, his ear. <i>See</i> MEHTAUOG	
WEQUAI, light	
Weshagan, hair of animals. <i>See</i> meesunk	
Wetu, a house . . . . .	11
WEYAU, flesh	
WISHITOO, the beard	
Woh ( <i>conj. of possibility</i> ) may or can. <i>This word is added to the indicative mode in order to form the potential</i> . . . . .	20

Woi. <i>See</i> napehmont	
Woi ( <i>interj. of sorrow</i> ) <i>the same with</i> owée . . . . .	22
WOMONITTUONK, love	
Wompesu, he is white . . . . .	16
Wompi, white . . . . .	13
Wompiyeuoo, it is white . . . . .	16
Womposketomp ( <i>from</i> wompi <i>and</i> wosketomp) a white man . . . . .	15
Woskeche ( <i>adv.</i> ) without . . . . .	21
WOSKETOMP, a man . . . . .	9
Wosketompoo, he is a man, or he became a man . . . . .	12, 16
Wunnamuhkut, truly . . . . .	21
Wunnegen ( <i>adv. of quality</i> )	22
WUNNEPAG, leaf	
Wunnonkou, yesterday . . . . .	21
Wunnutcheg, his hand . . . . .	11
Wunnutcheganoo, their hand	11
Wunnutcheganowout, their hands . . . . .	11
Wunnutcheganash, wunnutchegash, his hands . . . . .	11
WUSKODTUK, his forehead	
WUTCH ( <i>subst.</i> ) a nose	
Wutch ( <i>conj.</i> ) <i>See</i> newutche	
Wutche <i>See</i> newutche	
Wuttah, his heart. <i>See</i> metah	
Wuttalihou, their heart . . . . .	11
Wuttaskonoh, his horn. <i>See</i> taskon	
Wuttát, behind . . . . .	21

## Y.

Yeu ( <i>inan. form sing.</i> ) this	7
Yeug ( <i>anim. form plur.</i> ) these	7
Yeu nogque, towards this way	21
Yeuoh ( <i>anim. form sing.</i> ) this or that . . . . .	7
Yeuoo. <i>See</i> aoo	
Yeush ( <i>inan. form plur.</i> ) these	7
Yeu waj, for this cause . . . . .	22
Yeu yeu, now . . . . .	21

---

## SKETCHES OF MINISTERS AND CHURCHES IN NEW HAMPSHIRE.

Continued.

---

### WINCHESTER.

THE Congregational church in this town was organized on the 12th of November, 1736, by twelve professors of religion. The Rev. Joseph Ashley, who was graduated at Yale College, 1730, was settled as the first minister; and continued there until the depredations of the Indians occasioned his removal in 1747. He was succeeded by Rev. Micah Lawrence, 14 November, 1764. Mr. Lawrence was graduated at Harvard College in 1759; dismissed from the ministry 19 February, 1777. Rev. Ezra Conant succeeded Mr. Lawrence, and was ordained 19 February, 1788. He was dismissed 13 October, 1806. Rev. Experience Porter succeeded Mr. Conant, 12 November, 1807, and was dismissed 20 February, 1810. Rev. Salmon Bennett, the present minister of the church, and successor to Mr. Porter, was ordained 10 September, 1817. The members belonging to his church amount to about 100.

### KINGSTON.

Rev. Mr. Choate was the first minister of Kingston. He went from Ipswich, Mass. with the first settlers, and resided in garrison with them. He was never ordained. After the people built separate dwelling houses, they invited Rev. Ward Clark to take the pastoral care of the church, which was probably gathered about 1725. His ordination took place the same year. He died in 1737, and was succeeded by Rev. Joseph Secombe, in 1738. Mr. Secombe was a learned, useful and worthy man. He died in 1760, and was succeeded by Rev. Amos



Tappan, who was ordained in 1761, and died in 1771. Mr. Tappan was succeeded by the Rev. Elihu Thayer, D. D. who was ordained in 1776, and died in 1811. Rev. John Turner is the present minister of the town, and was settled in 1810.

### CHESTER.

The first settlements in Chester were made in the year 1719. Two parishes were early established by an act of the Legislature.

A Congregational church was organized as early as 1729, and the Rev. Moses Hale was ordained that year. He received his education at Harvard College, where he was graduated in 1722. Becoming partially deranged, he was dismissed by an ecclesiastical council, in Aug. 1734. Rev. Ebenezer Flagg, who was graduated at Harvard College in 1725, was ordained the successor of Mr. Hale in 1736, and continued in the ministry the long period of sixty years, and died 14 November, 1796, at the age of 92. Rev. Nathan Bradstreet was settled as a colleague with Mr. Flagg in 1793, and received a dismission in October, 1818. Rev. Joel R. Arnold, the present pastor, was ordained 8 March, 1820.

The Presbyterian church was regularly organized in 1732. Rev. John Wilson, a native of Ulster, in the north of Ireland, was ordained in 1734, and departed this life, 1 February, 1779. He was a pious, useful and respectable minister—lived respected and died lamented. After the death of Mr. Wilson, the church was vacant twenty-four years, but the publick worship of God in that period was regularly maintained. At length, Rev. Zaccheus Colby was installed 13 October, 1803, and continued the pastor only about five years, on account of being seized with a paralytick affection, which rendered him incapable of performing his official duties. Publick worship was maintained by hiring occasional preaching, till 19 February, 1817, when Rev.

Clement Parker was ordained. The parish now consists of 113 legal voters, and the church of 69 communicants. The Congregational parish consists of 138 legal voters, and the church of 55 communicants.

CONCORD, 12 *September*, 1821.

## ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF DONATIONS.

THE thanks of the Massachusetts Historical Society are presented for the following donations.

A. HOLMES, *Corresponding Secretary*.

A MS. containing the Address of General Washington to the Officers of the Army, 1783—the original, and other documents.

*Presented by William A. Hays, Esq.*

MS. List of Donations to Boston, after the Port Bill

*Nathaniel Noyes, Esq.*

Documents received from Washington.

*Congress of United States.*

Some Laws, &c. of Massachusetts; and a Statement of the State Prison, of last year.

*Commonwealth of Massachusetts.*

Ramsay's (Alexander, M. D.) Address and Anatomical Apparatus.

*Mr. John Farmer.*

Catalogus Collegii Gulielmi, 1820.

*Dr. Jonathan Porter.*

Codman's Sermon before the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company, 1820; and Report of said Company.

*The Company.*

Constitution of the State of Alabama.

*George Burroughs, Esq.*

Du Ponceau (Peter S., LL. D.) Discourse on the early History of Pennsylvania. *The Author.*

[Parker] (Edward L.) Century Sermon, commemorating the first settlement of Londonderry, 1819. *Dr. J. Park.*

Rev. Henry Ware's Two Discourses, containing the History of the Old North and New Brick Churches, united as the Second Church in Boston. *The Author.*

Willard (S.) and Danforth (J.) Fast Sermons, 1704.

*James Savage, Esq.*

MS. of Rev. Mr. Turell, on Witchcraft.

*Dr. Redford Webster.*

A Volume of Tracts, containing Mitchel's Massachusetts Election Sermon, 1667; Higginson's do. 1663; Walley's New Plymouth do. 1669.

*Lemuel Shaw, Esq.*

Certificate of Major Small to Andrew Richman, on enlisting into the Royal Highland Regiment, 18th December, 1775.

*Mr. Joseph Pierce.*

State Prisons and the Penitentiary System vindicated.

*Gamaliel Bradford, Esq.*

Catalogue of the Library of Bowdoin College, 1821,

*Professor Cleveland.*

Holmes's Two Discourses on the completion of the Second Century from the Landing of the Forefathers of New England at Plymouth; Dr. Channing's Discourse at the Dudleian Lecture; Report of the Middlesex Bible Society, 1821.

*A Holmes.*

Reports of the Society for propagating the Gospel among the Indians and others in North America, for 1818 and 1819; and Rev. Mr. Lowell's Sermon before that Society, 1820.

*The Society.*

*Old Letters and Papers from Governour Hutchinson's MS. Collection, viz.* Original Letter, 1628, supposed to be Rev. John Cotton's, respecting the conduct of



two Persons betrothed to each other; Some Transactions of Commissioners of the United Colonies, 1646, original; Letter of President Arnold, of Providence, respecting the Quakers, 1657, and giving reasons for treating them with moderation, rather than persecuting them; Result of a Council of Ministers in and about Boston, 1659, in the case of Rev. Mr. Stone of Hartford; Letter of Lord Willoughby, 1667; Master Cheever's Petition to Andros, to be continued school-master, 1688; Order or Warrant for keeping sacred the 30th of January—1688; Judge Stoughton's Answer to Sir E. Andros, for delay in giving Judgment in certain Causes in Court, 1688; List of Actions in Court, 1688; Opinion of Council respecting Leverett's Ship, with Colony Seal, 1686; Officers of the Town of Boston, 1686; Opinions of the Elders of the Churches about the Charter, 1686; Commission of Governour Phips to E. Hutchinson, 1693; Pay of Ministers in the vicinity of Boston, 1657; List of Pastors of Churches, in 1707, who petitioned in favour of Mr. Leverett, as President of College.

*Alden Bradford, Esq. Sec'y of State.*

A plan of the Town of Rochester in the County of Plymouth, with a Topographical Description of it.

*Abraham Holmes, Esq.*

Sermons of John Calvin upon the Ephesians.

*Ezekiel Little, Esq.*

Reports of American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, from 1812 to 1820 (inclusive.)

*The Board.*

Rev. Mr. Lowell's Discourses delivered in the West Church in Boston, December 31, 1820; and at the Ordination of Rev. Richard M. Hodges in the South Parish in Bridgewater.

*The Author.*

Botta's History of the War of the Independence of the United States of America. Translated from the Italian, by George Alexander Otis.

*The Translator.*

The New York Spectator.

*The Publishers, Francis Hall & Co.*

The Columbian Centinel.

*Benjamin Russell, Esq.*

The Weekly Messenger.

*Nathan Hale, Esq.*

The New England Galaxy.

*Mr. J. T. Buckingham.*

The Boston Gazette.

*Messrs. Russell & Gardner.*

Rev. P. Dickinson's Election Sermon, New Hampshire, 1816; W. Allen's do. 1818; N. Parker's do. 1819; Journals of the Senate and of the House of Representatives of the State of New Hampshire, from 1816 to 1820 (inclusive); Answer to the "Vindication of the Official Conduct of the Trustees of Dartmouth College," &c. with Remarks on the Removal of President Wheelock, by Josiah Dunham; Reply to Rev. Francis Brown, President of Dartmouth College, by Martin Ruter; Report of the Committee of General Assembly of Ohio on the communication of the Auditor of State, respecting proceedings of the Bank of the United States; Militia Law of New Hampshire, 1820; Governour Bell's communication, covering the Report of the Justices of the Superiour Court on the question of granting New Trials; The New England Missionary Intelligencer, for October, 1819; Brief Statement of the Sufferings of Mary Dyer, occasioned by the Society called *Shakers*, 1818; Compendious Narrative, elucidating the character, &c. of Mary Dyer, 1819; Defence of Adams's Oration.

*Mr. Jacob B. Moore of Concord, N. H.*

Bibliotheca Americana.

*Rev. John Codman.*

END OF VOL. IX. SECOND SERIES.

COLLECTIONS  
OF THE  
MASSACHUSETTS  
HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

---

VOL. X.  
OF THE SECOND SERIES.

---

BOSTON:  
PRINTED MDCCCXXIII.  

---

*REPRINTED*  
CHARLES C. LITTLE AND JAMES BROWN.  
MDCCCXLIII.



COLLECTIONS

BOSTON:  
PRINTED BY FREEMAN AND BOLLES,  
WASHINGTON STREET.

## CONTENTS.

---

Article	Page
I. Memoir of Hon. Joshua Thomas . . . . .	1
II. Detection of Witchcraft . . . . .	6
III. Representatives of Boston before the American Revolution	23
IV. Topographical Description of Rochester . . . . .	29
V. Letter from Dr. Watts . . . . .	39
VI. Account of Cumington. . . . .	41
VII. Gale of September, 1815 . . . . .	45
VIII. Churches and Ministers in New Hampshire . . .	54
IX. Notes on Duxbury . . . . .	57
X. Descriptive and Historical Account of Boscawen . .	71
XI. Biographical Notice of Hon. James Winthrop . . .	77
XII. Dr. Edwards' Observations on the Mohegan Language	81
XIII. Notes to Dr. Edwards' Observations . . . . .	98
XIV. Obituary Notice of Professor Peck . . . . .	161
XV. Memoirs of William Blackstone . . . . .	170
XVI. On the Aboriginal phrase Shawmut . . . . .	173
XVII. Notes on the Springs of Boston . . . . .	175
XVIII. Instances of Longevity in New Hampshire . . .	176

---

### HUTCHINSON PAPERS.

XIX. Letter from R. Levett to Mr. Cotton . . . . .	182
XX. Mr. Cotton's Answer . . . . .	183
XXI. Letter from Mr. Cotton to Francis Hutchinson . .	184
XXII. Letter from Pres. Dunster to Gov. Winthrop . . .	187

---

XXIII. Acknowledgment of Donations . . . . .	188
XXIV. List of Members . . . . .	191

Article	Page
XXV. General Table of Contents of the Ten Volumes of the Second Series . . . . .	193
XXVI. Index of Authors . . . . .	200
XXVII. Chronological Table of the most Remarkable Events	204
XXVIII. General Index . . . . .	228
XXIX. Officers of the Society . . . . .	393
XXX. List of deceased Members . . . . .	395
XXXI. Errours corrected . . . . .	ib.
XXXII. Conclusion of the Twentieth Volume . . . . .	397



## COLLECTIONS, &c.

---

MEMOIR OF HON. JOSHUA THOMAS, OF PLYMOUTH, WHO DIED  
JANUARY 10, 1821.

IT is now almost thirty years since the formation of the Historical Society of Massachusetts. Its enlightened and liberal founders were past the meridian of age. The persons first chosen members of the association were also generally selected from among those who had attained some celebrity as men of information, and had reached the same period of life. The most of them, therefore, have been called away from these scenes of labour and enterprize. Sullivan, Belknap, Eliot, Thacher, Minot, Tudor and others, have received our parting regrets; and their memories are cherished as patriots, and as benefactors of mankind. The institution they founded has already been attended with great advantages, in collecting and preserving materials necessary for a perfect history of America; and its objects are justly appreciated by the intelligent part of the community.

It is now our melancholy duty to record the death of another highly esteemed member of our Society. The Hon. Joshua Thomas, late of Plymouth, who died in January, 1821, was early chosen one of the association. His attachment to the principles and manners of the first settlers of New England, his general and extensive information, and his particular taste for the early history of Massachusetts, were qualifications which justly entitled him to this election.

Mr. Thomas was born in 1751, in the ancient town of Plymouth, hallowed as the early abode of our pilgrim fathers, who fled to this *new* world, in 1620, to avoid the

unchristian persecutions of men who bore the Christian name in the *old*. He was descended from one of the most respectable families in that colony, his ancestor being *William Thomas* of Marshfield, who was a particular friend of Governor Winslow, and settled near him. This William was a deputy from Marshfield to the Assembly of the colony, and an assistant several years. He did not come to Plymouth till about ten years after the plantation began : but he was active in promoting the interests and views of the company during this period.\* One of his grandsons was clerk of the Court ; and one was judge of probate for the county of Plymouth. After the union of Plymouth with Massachusetts in 1692, by the charter of William and Mary, the latter was one of the Council : and it is reported of him, that he was opposed to the severe measures at that time adopted against the *pretended* witches in Essex county.

The grandfather of Mr. Thomas married a Miss Pattishall of Boston, and resided there some years. His father, who was born in the town last named, was an eminent physician in Plymouth, and lived to an advanced age, greatly esteemed for his social virtues, and for his useful services in the profession.

Mr. Thomas received his education at Harvard University ; and was considered one of the first scholars in the large class of which he was a member. He was particularly distinguished for a flowing and elegant style of writing ; and in subsequent periods of his life, he gave repeated evidence of this happy talent. He was graduated in July, 1772. After passing a few months in teaching youth (an employment in which, formerly, some of the best scholars in the state engaged for a short period, on leaving the University) he gave his attention to theological studies, with a view to the clerical profession. But he was never employed in its publick services. The political controversy with Great Britain, which was now becoming highly interesting, and approaching to a crisis, seems to have engaged his chief attention, as it did that of other patriots

\* See Gov. Bradford's Letters, Vol. III. Hist. Coll.

of that eventful period. He was adjutant of a regiment of newly organized militia, raised in Plymouth county in the autumn of 1774; and, at their request, he delivered a publick address on the political state of the country, which was received with great approbation and applause.

In April, 1775, soon after the battle of Lexington, Col. John Thomas of Kingston, who had been an officer in 1758, raised a regiment, and marched, with others, to Roxbury. Here he acted for some months as commander of the several regiments encamped at that place, with the rank of general, while General Ward commanded at Cambridge, and was actually commander in chief of the Massachusetts troops, until the arrival of General Washington, in July following, who had received a commission to command the American forces of all the colonies. Mr. Thomas was aid to General Thomas at this period, and for this whole campaign; and his intelligence and activity rendered him highly useful to the general, and the division under his command.

In the same capacity he accompanied General Thomas, in the spring of 1776, to Ticonderoga and Crown Point, on Lake Champlain, who was entrusted with the chief command of the American troops in that quarter. After a few months' service in this expedition, General Thomas died, (greatly lamented,) and the command devolved on General Schuyler of New York. Major Thomas then left the army and returned to his native town, where he engaged in the study of the law; and was occasionally employed by government in various agencies for the publick service; but did not again go into the field. His father and three brothers engaged in the military service, in the trying period of May, 1775, and two of them continued to the close of the contest.

In the year 1781 he was elected a representative from Plymouth, and after serving the town in this capacity for several years, he was chosen one of the senators for that county, and in 1792 was appointed judge of probate, on the decease of the Hon. Joseph Cushing. This office he sustained until his death, a period of twenty-nine years; and its various duties were discharged with a correctness



and integrity, with an impartiality and patience, never exceeded, perhaps, by any one ; and which secured to him the esteem and respect of the whole county. There was such amenity in his manners, and such a spirit of accommodation in the discharge of his official duties, as well as in the private circle, that all who associated with him, either for publick business or social converse, were pleased and delighted. His memory was uncommonly retentive, and he was full of anecdotes calculated to illustrate the opinions and manners of men of former days, particularly of the patriots and statesmen of 1775. He was fond of perusing the works of ethical and theological writers. His reading was very extensive on these subjects. He was well acquainted with the various systems of theology in the Christian world ; but gave his decided preference to that, which is now denominated Unitarian and liberal. He went to the fountain of inspiration for his religious sentiments ; he admitted no other authority as decisive but the Bible ; and this, he believed, every one was bound to examine and interpret for himself. Yet he approved, generally, of the writings of *Price* and *Watson*, of *Mayhew*, *Chauncy* and others of their catholic views. In his political character he ranked among the ardent friends of rational freedom, and was a true disciple of the Washington School. Though an enemy to arbitrary rulers, who forgot right and attempted to exercise illegal and unconstitutional power, he was a firm supporter of all legitimate authority, and a ready advocate of law and order. In the various critical periods of the commonwealth, during his active life, he united his efforts, with other good men, in vindicating correct constitutional principles, in opposition to popular excitements and party feelings.

His qualities as a parent, neighbour and friend, were peculiarly happy and commendable. He was indulgent, mild, generous, disinterested. As a lawyer, also, he shared largely in the esteem and confidence of the people. He was too honourable to impose on the ignorant, or to exact even the usual fees for professional business of the poorer classes. Most men, with the portion of business

which he had as a lawyer, and without a charge of dishonesty, would have accumulated much more than he did. He was many years president of the bar in Plymouth county; and the following vote, passed, unanimously, at the first court holden in that county after his decease, fully shows the high estimation, which his brethren of the profession had of his talents and character. — “The Bar, taking into consideration the afflicting dispensation of providence, in removing by death their highly respectable President, the Hon. Joshua Thomas, distinguished by his literary and legal acquirements, his moral and social virtues, and with a deep sense of the loss, which the community, in general, and this Bar, in particular, have sustained by this melancholy event, do resolve, that they will, in token of their respect for his memory, wear *crape* from this time till the end of the next term of the Supreme Judicial Court for this county.”

The honourable notice taken of our friend by Judge Putnam, at a session of the Supreme Judicial Court in Plymouth, in May, 1821, at the first term thereof in the new court house, is worthy of preservation. — “Alas! that our joy, on this interesting occasion, should be mixed with grief for the loss of that excellent and venerable man, who presided in your courts, and was so long the widow’s friend, and father of the fatherless. This temple of justice is but one of the durable proofs of his influence, and of the never-failing confidence, which your people had in his integrity and judgment. His respected name will descend with distinguished honour to posterity: but the benignity of his countenance and manners can be properly estimated only by those who had the happiness to know him. If he were here to-day, he would rejoice with you, because he would have believed that this well-timed liberality will be productive of lasting honour and benefit to the county as well as to the state. He was fully impressed with that veneration for the laws and for the magistracy, which will ever be associated with these walls.”

When a Bible Society was formed in the counties of Plymouth and Norfolk in 1814, he was chosen president,

and so continued to the time of his death. He was also president of the Pilgrim Society, lately established at Plymouth, and his death is deeply lamented by all its members. The regrets of the Historical Society are mingled with those of others, with whom he was associated for useful and patriotick purposes; and they improve the earliest opportunity to record this sketch of his character and services, from a respectful regard for his memory, and as an incitement to others to honourable exertion for the good of the publick and of posterity.

---

#### DETECTION OF WITCHCRAFT.

[Governour Hutchinson, in Vol. II. p. 26 of edition 3, has given a very brief abstract of this curious paper by the Rev. Mr. TURELL, minister of Medford. Our copy is from the original MS. which was owned by the historian of Massachusetts, made by Dr. Andrew Eliot, his friend. ED.]

#### *The Introduction.*

ALTHOUGH I am as far as any one from holding or maintaining the doctrine of the Sadducees; and firmly believe the existence of spirits, an invisible world, and particularly the agency of Satan, and his instruments, in afflicting and tormenting the children of men, (when permitted by God;) yet I fear the world has been wretchedly imposed upon by relations of such matters. Tricks and legerdemain have been fathered upon Satan, and others, falsely reputed as being in covenant with him, by ignorant and designing people, in which they were not so immediately concerned. Many things have been dubb'd witchcraft, and called the works of the devil, which were nothing more than the contrivance of the children of men, who are wise to do evil, and which by strict examination might have been detected. There are some books in the world, filled with stories of witchcrafts, apparitions, trances,



&c. to which we owe no more faith than to the tales of fairies, and other idle romances. Where one relation is exactly according to truth, there are two, at least, that are wholly the fruit of wild imagination, or intolerably mixt with deceit and falsehood. Hence some have taken occasion to doubt of, and deny the existence of spirits, and an invisible world; and others to turn all that wise men say or write about them into ridicule. 'Tis a pity the world has been so credulous, and furnished these scepticks with matters to make sport of. At the same time, it is a thing horrid to think of, that we should be imposed upon by false relations, and our understandings daily affronted by lies. It would certainly have been a singular kindness, if those who have been instrumental in detecting falsehoods of this nature, especially causes of pretended witchcrafts, had been careful, and have taken and emitted authentick accounts of them, from time to time; which might have proved an happy means of preventing the like, or stopping their progress. When I consider this, and what every one owes to his own generation, and to posterity, I reckon myself obliged to offer a *story*, full of remarkable circumstances, which was the subject of much discourse and debate, in the day of it, and has lately, by the wonderful providence of God, and his most powerful word, been brought to light and unfolded. I trust it may be of some service to the world, and therefore commend it to the divine blessing.

E. T.

---

*The Account itself.*

IN the year of our Lord 1720, at Littleton, in New England, lived Mr. T—— B——, three of whose children were in very odd and unaccountable circumstances for many months; viz. E——h, aged about eleven years; J——a, aged about nine years; and M——y, aged about five years. All of them were supposed to be under an evil hand, (i. e.) afflicted by Satan. I shall divide the history of them into six parts or chapters, that you may

receive it with greater advantage. (1.) I shall relate speeches or facts ; (2d) what people thought or spake about them in the time of it ; (3d) explain all that was dark and unintelligible in their behaviour ; (4th) declare the reasons and motives that induced and led them to it ; (5th) the manner in which they were treated, and how they ought to have been treated ; (6th) the means by which things were brought to light ; and then add some useful reflections on the whole.

First, then, I shall relate speeches and facts, or what was said and done by these children supposed to be under an evil hand. I shall begin with E——h, who was first in the plot, of whom I am able to give the most particular account. This girl, of about eleven years old, for eight months together, acted after a very strange manner. She began with telling stories which she had heard or read ; agreeably and surprisingly accommodating them to the present time, company, occasion, &c. She proceeded in a short time to the relating of dreams ; strange and unaccountable ones. From dreaming she fell into trances, and would, to all appearance, swoon away, and lie as one dead for a considerable time ; out of which she would anon awake, and tell her friends, and those about her, what affrighting or pleasing visions she had of this or the other worlds. She made an unlawful use of sieves, eggs, and other things, to shew tricks and tell futurities ; a practice which many foolish people run into. When she was put upon reading the scriptures, which she could do very well, and fixed her eye upon the words God, or Christ, or Holy Spirit, &c. she would drop down as one thunder-struck, scarce any sign of life remaining with her ; and this she would do as often as they put her to read those words. Many strange noises were daily heard in the house, and stones often flung down chimney, by which not only the food that was dressing, and the utensils, were damaged, but the family was endangered. She would frequently tear her clothes, and disfigure herself, bite her attendants, and spit upon them, and her visitors too, excepting the pastor of the church, whom she appeared to have no power to hurt. 'Twas very common

to find her in ponds of water, at a considerable distance from the house, crying out, in great distress, she should be drowned. Sometimes she would be seen on the top of the house, and on the tops of trees, crying out that she should fall and kill herself; and when asked how she got there, she answered, she flew there. She did frequently complain of wounds and pinches and prickings, which she said she received by invisible hands, and the usual marks of such things were seen upon her. She accused a certain woman of the town for afflicting her, and as causing all the evil she suffered, and would often cry out to her mother—There she is! there she is! there's Mrs. D——y. Two things are very remarkable relating to Mrs. D——y's pretended appearances. One time E——h said to her mother, there was a little bird in such a part of the room: Her mother went directly to the place, and having something in her hand, struck the place pointed to. E——h immediately cry'd out, O mother, you have hit it on one side of the head; and it was found afterwards that Mrs. D——y was at the same time hurt on one side of her face. Another time E——h said to her mother, There's Mrs. D——y; she is just there; coming to afflict me! Her mother struck the place with something, and E——h cry'd out, You have hit her on the bowels. It was found that Mrs. D——y received much hurt at the same time, and said she felt something break within her. She was then big with child, took to her chamber, and died in a few weeks. And as soon as she knew of Mrs. D——y's death, she ceased all complaints, and quickly grew composed and easy; and has never been known to use the like strange behaviour since.—I proceed now to give some account of J——a, when she appeared to be under the like influences of an evil hand. She was a girl of about nine years old. I discoursed with her, and she confirms what has been related before of her sister. You must know it was four months after her sister that she began to talk and act like her, and to complain of Mrs. D——y's afflicting her. Indeed she was never seen to fall into those trances, or heard to relate such visions as her sister; but



was in other respects equally odd and unaccountable, and in one instance she fairly outdid her. J——a was often seen upon the top of an high barn, when a young man could not without great difficulty get up ; and there she would cry for help, saying she was carried there through the air. But when Mrs. D——y's death was known, an entire stop was put to all her actions of this kind. The youngest sister, M——y, of about five years old, commenced this odd behaviour about six months after E——h, and two after J——a, and was not in many articles outdone by her sisters. Her complaints and speeches and actions were much the same. I am not able to say how far this child remembers these things, not having seen her ; but the sisters say, she retains but a very confused notion of them. In one circumstance she differed from both her sisters, viz. notwithstanding the news of Mrs. D——y's death was brought to her, she carried on the old stroke, with bitter complaints of her, for many weeks ; persisting in it that, let her sisters be ever so well, she remained under an evil hand. I must be so just as to tell you here, that there passed a day or two before Mrs. D——y's death was known to either of these children, and that these days were as much filled with complaints of her, as the months before. Thus have I finished the first head proposed, by giving you a plain and honest account of speeches and facts. The reader may now make a pause, and judge whether this be witchcraft or not, or stay till he hears the sentiments of others, which it is the business of the next head to relate.

2d, I am to relate what the thoughts and discourses of people were about the behaviour of these children, in the time of it. The news of Mr. B——d's family being under trouble presently took air, and spread about the neighbourhood, and also reached many places at a considerable distance ; many went to visit them ; some out of compassion, and others out of curiosity, to make observations on their carriage, whom they found ready enough to make their moans and show their distressed case. The children were pitied by most that visited

them or that heard of them, as being in great adversity. There were many conjectures formed about the causes of their behaviour: Some thought they labored of bodily maladies; others that their minds were disordered, and that a strange kind of distraction had seized on them. Others, from some of their actions, (which were silly enough,) thought them to be underwitted; others that they were perverse and wicked children. But so far as I can learn, the greater number thought and said they were under an evil hand, or possessed by satan. This was the general cry of the town, and though many of this opinion were not so uncharitable as to judge or condemn Mrs. D——y as afflicting them, or to censure her as one in covenant with the devil, (having sufficient reason to believe the accused are not always the guilty persons;) yet they scrupled not to say, some evil spirit afflicted them in her shape. Indeed, that circumstance I named, of their complaining of Mrs. D——y, after she was really dead, stumbled many, who before seemed fully persuaded the children were bewitched; as also Mrs. D——y's protestations of her innocence all along, together with her forgiving spirit upon her death bed: For when one asked her, among other questions, whether she forgave the wrong done her reputation by Mr. B——d's children, she answered, she freely forgave them all. People at a distance, forming their judgment of these matters from the parents of the children, and other relations, (who made their story as lamentable and doleful as it could be,) plumply pronounced it witchcraft as much as that which was formerly acted at Salem; [Vide History of New England, on Witchcraft.] all which, it may be, arose from as small a beginning, though attended and followed with more fatal effects. And it may be with some difficulty that my next head will undeceive some persons; which is,

3dly, To explain what was dark and unintelligible in these children's speeches and behaviour. Whoever has considered well of what was said under the first particular, let the general conclusion he has drawn up in his mind be what it will, he must certainly be nonpluss'd, if

called upon to interpret some things to his own or others' satisfaction: 'Tis the business of this head to explain them. First, then, as to E——h's telling of strange stories, dreams, &c. I have this to say of it, that she was owner of a good share of mother wit, and was more than ordinarily delighted with reading, and had a tenacious memory, by which means she could relate most things she had heard or read, and apply them; she could leave out or put into a story that which would render it surprising. As to her falling down as dead, upon reading the words God, Christ, and Holy Ghost, &c. she did it willingly and per-versely, having read in some accounts of witchcraft that afflicted persons always do so. The noises and disturbances in the house were made by these children, who could climb up and down about it and upon it. They would steal away unseen, and go down into ponds of water, and climb to the tops of trees, and sometimes get so high that they could not for their lives, of themselves, safely come down. And though it was a common report that they flew to those places, (and it is true that they said so,) yet no person ever saw them flying: Those that have often asserted it formerly, dare not give their oaths to it. E——h told me she never could get upon the barn, which J——a climbed to the top of; and though J——a climbed upon it, yet she could not come down; and that those who came to help her used ladders for the purpose. The wounds, the pinches, the bruises they complained of, (the marks of which were to be seen) they privately gave with their own hands. E——h told me she once in company pinched her forehead, and then immediately complained of a violent pain in her head, and desired one to hold it, which was done; and all the while the person held it she complained she was pinched, and when the hand was taken away the plain mark of a pinch appeared, which confirmed her being bewitched to all that were present.

The children falsely accused Mrs. D——y, and all the reason they give for it is this—they had proceeded so far in their wicked course that they were both ashamed and afraid to come to a confession of it. And an accusation



of somebody (no matter who) was the next step. Mrs. D——y is pitched upon by E——h without any foundation. She owns she never appeared to her, or did her the least hurt, and when she told her mother of the bird in the room, she saw nothing; her mother struck at nothing; and the hurt which Mrs. D——y received was no ways owing to such a cause; but, as I am informed, Mrs. D——y was troubled with an ague in her face, and had at that time been applying an harsh and hot medicine which an unskilful neighbour had simply advised her to, which took off the skin from one side of her face. And when she told her mother, in the other instance, that Mrs. D——y was in such a part of the room, she did not see her nor any appearance at all; and her mother only fought with the air and the floor; Mrs. D——y received no injury by it; but at that time (as I heard) was riding on an horse behind her husband, and said to him she believed she had broke something within her, upon which she took to her chamber, and in a short time after died. I should note here that she was with child, and the horse was going exceeding swift and hard. Her death exceedingly *terrify'd* the two eldest of these children, who were very capable of reflection; but the youngest, through weakness, paid no regard unto it. These sisters, who were not afraid of wilfully sinning against God, were now trembling for fear of seeing an apparition from the dead. E——h told me she expected no other for a long time, but that Mrs. D——y would come and revenge the wrongs offered her. The fear of some such thing has at times kept her in a state of bondage until now.

I pass now, in the 4th place, to declare the reasons and motives that excited these children at first, and afterwards, to such a behaviour. E——h tells me freely, her's took its rise from folly and pride: When she found she pleased others (whether elder or younger) or caused admiration in them, she was over pleased with, and admired herself, grew conceited and high minded. She thought, to be able to deceive her parents and neighbours was a fine accomplishment; but for a long while after she indulged this humour, she had no thought of nor

design about what it ended in. She never dreamt of witchcraft in all her dreams. She knew not but that other people's speaking of such a thing might put it into her head. She owns she was so much lifted up with pride, that she could not think of humbling herself. She was sorry that ever she began, but could not entertain a thought of leaving off, and therefore, as is the way of the wicked, she told one lie to hide another; adding sin to sin, and proceeding from evil to evil, until she had filled up the measure of iniquity to that height as has been described. J——a, observing her sister's performances for four months together, especially her being in ponds and upon trees, &c. (although at the same time she really believed her sister to be under an evil hand) had the curiosity to try if she could not perform the like pranks in a natural way, which she found herself able to do with as great facility. She outdid her sister in one thing, namely, in the instance given of climbing a barn, which E——h never attained to. Upon this she feigned herself to be in the like circumstances. E——h, finding J——a so active and cunning, and having many times mourned the want of an associate and assistant, she took J——a aside one day, (though with much reluctance, fearing that thereby the plot might sometime or other be discovered,) and told her the whole lying story with a great deal of truth; and persuaded her to join in the hellish design of deceiving and grieving their parents and neighbours, and ruining the character of Mrs. D——y, and serving the devil. Thus they took wicked counsel together, and J——a complied with all that was proposed, and vowed secrecy. By this agreement they had opportunity and better advantage of contriving and carrying on the accursed scheme. Now, whilst one held the neighbours in discourse, &c., the other would surprise them with a shrill cry, and be found at a great distance, when it was asserted and believed that they were both together but a moment before. The youngest daughter, M——y, believed her sisters, E——h and J——a, were both possessed and bewitched, and yet commenced the same behaviour about two months after

J—a ; but upon different reasons and motives. This little girl had observed what sort of treatment her sisters had met with during their disorders, viz. that they seemed to be more the object of their parents' care and love, as well as pity, than ever ; and more than her dear self, (who was now in some measure neglected on their account,) though her years called for greater tenderness ; she therefore thought, that if she made the like complaints, they would soon turn the tide of their affections into the right channel ; and accordingly she feigned herself afflicted, said and acted as they did, to the very last, without being found out ; nay, she held it longer than her sisters, as I hinted under a former head ; and, as E—h tells me, it was with unwearied pains (by promises and threatenings) they hindered her from proceeding, and so put a period to this wicked affair.

I pass now, in the 5th place, to shew the manner in which these children were treated, and how they ought to have been managed during their strange behaviour. I have already told you, under the 2d head, what people's opinions were about them and their actions, and we may be sure they were treated accordingly. The parents scarce ever entertained an hard thought of them ; they never once imagined the truth—that such folly and wickedness could be bound up in the hearts of their dear children ; and therefore they treated them with all imaginable tenderness. They sent for physicians, to find what was amiss in their bodies, to heal them ; and for the elders to pray for them and over them ; and the credulous neighbours came often to visit and pity them. But as there were those who all along suspected they were dissemblers, we must suppose they met with rougher treatment from them. They would solemnly put some serious questions to them, and sometimes reprove, rebuke, exhort and warn them. The number of those were small, compared with others who bolstered them up in their folly : Few cared to meddle far in an affair that was so dark and intricate ; none made a business of it to detect them. Some reverend and wise persons advised the parents to separate them, and offered to receive them into their



houses, (when they came to ask them to keep a day of fasting and prayer on their account,) but the fond and weeping parents could not think of it, but returned sorrowful home. Had this prudent method been fallen into, or had they been all along carefully watched (as we would those we suspect of forgery and deceit,) they might easily have been countermined and confounded in most of their projections and actions. E——h told me that, even when none suspected them, they were put to a thousand shifts to ripen and to bring things to pass, and as often in danger of being found out; and had not almost any excuse or reason been swallowed, all their schemes would have been dashed to pieces. I make no doubt, but in this long course of sinning Satan was very officious, and now and then suggested a thought to them, when they were brought to an extremity. But yet if all matters had been thoroughly scanned and canvassed, I question whether he would have been able to furnish them with such excuses as would clear them before wise and good men. E——h told me one story which is very remarkable to this purpose: The three children were in bed together, and contriving mischief; one of them was sent out by the others to a closet to fetch a bottle, with which she quickly returned to them. In a few minutes, they complained of a bottle, which (as they said) was, without hands, conveyed to them, and by which they were grievously afflicted. In the midst of these complaints, E——h had this thought starting in her mind, What if my father should have seen my sister fetch the bottle? Upon which, she lift up her voice and said. Why do you complain of the bottle? Sister just now fetched it for me to smell of: I wish every thing came to us by the same natural means. Her thought was right; for her father was sitting in an apartment where he saw one of the children fetch the bottle. Now if one such matter had been followed up close, it is not unlikely but the whole cheat would have been discovered; had the parents been severe, and used the children as they deserved, the lying spirit would have departed from them, which abode with them many years after-

wards, as you will hear under the next head.—I proceed now to speak of the means by which the whole affair was brought to light. After Mrs. D——y's death, (though the witchcraft ceased,) the children persisted in it, that they uttered nothing but the truth, throughout the long day of their supposed trials and afflictions, with relation to any particular. But, alas! their consciences (especially E——h's) contradicted them: That inward monitor being awakened, severely lashed, and wrecked, and tortured them. For some years afterwards, E——h wore a gloominess upon her mind. She did not care to talk of this business; and when questions were put to her by her parents and others, she would artfully turn the discourse to other subjects. She was very much grieved for her folly, but not enough to denominate her a true penitent. She was convicted, but not converted. However, in a short time after this, she sought the ordinance of baptism from her pastor, who examined her about this very affair, telling her that some of the good neighbours suspected her of falsehood. But to him she asserted her innocence, and so came with a lie in her right hand, (a sure symptom of unregeneracy,) and was baptized. After this, she informs me, she lived not without many serious thoughts upon what she had been, and said, and done. In her conversation with her sister J——a, she would say to her sometimes, very gravely, This whole matter of our deceit and wickedness will be brought to light, and we shall be ashamed. And so it was, very remarkably, as follows: These two young women removed from Littleton to Medford, where the providence and ordinances of God further awakened E——h; insomuch that she sought the ordinance of the Lord's supper, (by asking an admission into full communion with the church of Christ here.) She came to me on the 14th of September, 1728, for this end. I discoursed with her and examined her about her belief and practice, and endeavoured to learn the state of her soul, and her past temper and conversation, as far as was proper. She gave me a very good account of herself; she discoursed very sensibly and religiously upon the ques-

tions and heads I proposed to her. I therefore encouraged her to come to the sacrament, giving such instruction and advices as were needful, and so propounded her the next Lord's day. I knew but little of the dark story I have now told the world, and was entirely ignorant of her being an actor in it. It was therefore to my great surprise, that on the Saturday, P. M., the day before she was to be received into the church, she came to visit me under the deepest concern and trouble of mind imaginable ; inquiring of me what dreadful things I had heard of her, that made me preach so terribly against lying and liars, on the last Sabbath, from the 19 Proverbs, 5—He that telleth lies shall not escape. I asked her what made her think I had heard any thing of her ? Nobody had been with me to object any thing against her. She then frankly told me that she had been greatly awakened and convinced by the word preached, insomuch that she is resolved no longer to cover her sin, as she had done, to the disturbance of her peace, and the hazard of her salvation ; but to confess it both to God and man, that she might hope to find mercy. She told me that she had long endeavoured to flatter herself that God would be gracious to her and forgive her, though she should omit the making an open and publick declaration of the matters she was guilty in to man ; but that now she was quite of another mind, having received new light from the gospel. She proceeded then to tell me the substance of what has been related, bewailing and lamenting her egregious folly, and weeping bitterly for it, desiring to be truly humble before God and man, so long as she had a day to live. She blessed God that he did not snatch her out of the world in the time of her presumptuous pride and folly, and cast her into the lake of fire and brimstone, in which all liars have a part. She desired all might be warned by her folly to avoid the like. She further desired me to draw up something agreeable to the discourse I then had with her, and to read it (in form of a confession) to the congregation of God's people ; and she promised she would be present publickly to own and acknowledge the same. I complied with



her request, and after sermon read her confession, while she stood in view of the people, and signified her consent unto it. Her humble acknowledgment and penitent confession being thus free and voluntary, and her heart, which was shut up and hardened, being thus opened and tender, I looked upon this change wrought on her as a work of God's holy spirit, which I hoped would prove saving; and lest she should be swallowed up with over much sorrow, admitted her to our holy fellowship and communion; and, so far as I know, she has ever since behaved as a good Christian. May she prove an eminent one, and answer the just expectations of God and his people concerning her!

Nothing further remains, but (7thly) to make some inferences and reflections. And whoso is wise will observe these things, and be made wiser and better by them. We see by this example what a world of sin and sorrow the indulging of pride and a foolish curiosity will lead people unto. Who could have thought that telling of idle stories would have come to such a story as this! A little spark will kindle a great fire, and it is difficult to stop after we have begun a sinful course. 'Tis the safest way, therefore, to leave off every sin, as the wise man bids us do anger, (Prov. 17. 14.) before it be meddled with. Would you enjoy a quiet mind and conscience, maintain your innocence, avoid the appearance of evil, abstain even from those things that are capable of misconstruction. Young people would do wisely now to lay aside all their foolish books, their trifling ballads, and all romantick accounts of dreams and trances, senseless palmistry and groundless astrology. Don't so much as look into these things. Read those that are useful to increase you in knowledge, human and divine, and which are more entertaining to an ingenious mind. Truth is the food of an immortal soul. Feed not any longer on the fabulous husks of falsehood. Never use any of the devil's playthings; there are much better recreations than legerdemain tricks. Turn not the sieve, &c. to know futurities; 'tis one of the greatest mercies of heaven that we are ignorant of them. You only gratify Satan, and invite

him into your company to deceive you. Nothing that appears by this means is to be depended on.

The horse shoe is a vain thing, and has no natural tendency to keep off witches or evil spirits from the houses or vessels they are nailed too. If Satan should by such means defend you from lesser dangers, 'tis to make way for greater ones, and get fuller possession of your hearts. 'Tis an evil thing to hang witch papers on the neck for the cure of the agues, to bind up the weapon instead of the wound, and many things of the like nature, which some in the world are fond of. Be warned against thus trading with the devil, lest you barter away your soul for some worldly advantage. Those who allow themselves in such practices, are the most likely persons to covenant with the devil. Again, we learn from this relation what a state of gross ignorance many of the world are in at this day. The follies of children are deemed witchcraft, and their enterprises supernatural! What a cloud has the fall brought upon the human understanding! Alas! how ignorant must we needs be of Satan's devices, if those of children cannot be seen through by us! If we can't dive to the bottom of their shallow designs and actions, we are certainly in great danger of falling into the snares and depths of Satan. Let this humble our pride, and overcome our self conceit; teach us lowliness of mind, and make us think soberly.

Again, we learn from this relation what method to use with our children, if ever they should appear in the like circumstances with these children. To shew this was one great end of my telling the story, that ignorant persons and masters may be instructed, and that such as have knowledge might be excited unto their duty. You must not indulge your children, you must not encourage them, you must not suffer sin upon them.

The rod of correction may sometimes be properly and seasonably applied to drive this folly far from them. The various tempers of children must be consulted, for these will call for a different management; but be sure to hold on suspecting them. Take this for a rule—Be

as watchful and careful to find them out, as if you knew they had a design to deceive you.

It was unguarded tenderness and affection that encouraged the children you have been reading of in their course of folly and wickedness. If parents and near relations will stand by and comfort such, they wo'n't care for all the world of strangers that come to see and help them. Again we learn, from this story, that Divine Providence seldom suffers such flagrant wickedness to pass wholly undiscovered and unpunished. Whatever arts or stratagems they may use to conceal their sins or put them out of remembrance, it is impossible so to stifle and hide them, but that conscience, and the word of God may, some time or other, bring them to mind, and give them a bitter remorse. The judgments of Providence have often brought sinners to confess and discover their sins, as well as punished them for them. God's providences fulfil those threatenings of his word—140 Psalm, 11—Evil will haunt the wicked to overthrow him: 64 Psalm 8—Their own tongues shall be made to fall upon themselves. If we look back upon this story, we may see the holy, and wise, and good providence of God at work to discover the truth, to clear the innocent and bring the guilty to repentance, to instruct the world. Who would have thought of such a discovery eight or nine years after these things were acted? His judgments are unsearchable, and his ways past finding out; but our ways and doings are ever before him. The unquiet consciences of sinners have sometimes been such flaming evidences against them, as to force a confession of their sins from them, and oblige them to make full discoveries. So Joseph's brethren (in the 42d chapter Genesis, 21 v.) said one to another, We are verily guilty concerning our brother, in that we saw the anguish of his soul, when he besought us, and we would not hear. We are verily guilty, is the cry of conscience in every sinner's breast. There's no appeasing or quieting of it. *Expellas furca licet usque recurrat.* It will regain its power and recover its force, and fall upon him with greater violence and fury. So these sis-



ters said one to another, We shall some time or another be found out, for we are guilty. Lastly, the word of God, the hammer which breaketh the rock to pieces, when accompanied with the holy spirit, convinces of sin, of righteousness and judgment ; and is the power of God to salvation. We read, in Heb. 4. 12, It is quick, and powerful, sharper than any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of the soul and spirit, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart. There are many other glorious characters and encomiums given of it, the highest of which it well deserves ; and many wonderful effects it has produced, which we have read of and beheld. This was the mighty engine, in the hand of God, for the discovery of this wicked plot, as is very seriously affirmed by the persons concerned. 'Twas the foolishness of preaching. Let none then despise prophesyings, but duly and conscientiously attend the word, and not neglect the great salvation. Forsake not the assembling yourselves together, as the manner of some is. None know what they lose by unnecessarily staying at home. It is, you see, a good thing to draw near unto God. Let us give thanks unto God for his written and preached word, and praise its power, which has brought this story to our hands. To conclude, let us give honor to the Son of God, our Saviour, who was manifested for this purpose, that he might destroy the works of the devil. May he hasten the accomplishment of that prophecy and promise, which in his times he will show who is the blessed and only potentate. Rev. 20, 1, 2, 3—I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit, and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, and cast him into the bottomless pit, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more.

---

REPRESENTATIVES OF THE TOWN OF BOSTON IN THE GENERAL COURT BEFORE THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

THE General Courts of Massachusetts Bay, from the year 1630, when the charter was brought over, and the government transferred from the company in England to the inhabitants here, consisted of all the freemen of the colony. On 14 May, 1634, it was for the first time held by twenty-four deputies from the towns, each sending three. Those from this town, with much care and great labour collected from the colony records, which in some years are lost, and the town records, which are silent about the four first elections and some of the succeeding, are herein exhibited. Small capitals are used for the first appearance, and large capitals denote that the gentleman was at some time speaker. Σ.

1634. May 14. JOHN COGGESHALL, EDMUND QUINCY, Capt. JOHN UNDERHILL.

1634, 5. March 4. Coggeshall, WILLIAM COLBURN, RICHARD BELLINGHAM.

1635. May 6. Coggeshall, Colburn, WILLIAM HUTCHINSON.

Sept. 2. Colburn, Hutchinson, WM. BRENTON.

March 3. Colburn, Hutchinson, Brenton.

1636. May 25. Coggeshall, Hutchinson, Brenton.

Sept. 8. Coggeshall, Hutchinson, Brenton.

Dec. 7. Coggeshall, Colburn, Brenton.

1637. April 18. Coggeshall, Colburn, Brenton.

May 17. HENRY VANE, WILLIAM CODDINGTON, ATHERTON HOUGH.

Sept. 26. Coddington, Hough, WILLIAM ASPINWALL.

For the Court 2 Nov. following, Coggeshall, Coddington and Aspinwall were chosen by the town, 16 Oct. But the General Court, having dismissed and disfranchised Coggeshall and Aspinwall, in the violent heats of the Antinomian controversy, sent warrant to Boston to elect others in their room. 6 Nov. the town chose Colburn

and JOHN OLIVER. The latter was in the same condemnation with the majority of Boston people, and he was dismissed. But whether the Court had too much discretion to insult the town by a warrant for a third election, or whether the town had too much spirit to choose another, is unknown.

1637, 8. March 12. Hough, Oliver, JOHN NEWGATE.

1638. May 2. Hough, Oliver, ROBERT KEAYNE.

Sept. 6. Hough, Newgate, Keayne.

1638, 9. March 13. Hough, Keayne, EDWARD GIBBONS.

From this time, for above forty years, Boston was allowed only two members, and it became common to choose for six months.

1639. May 22. Keayne, Gibbons.

Sept. 4. Gibbons, WILLIAM TYNG.

1640. May 13. Gibbons, Tyng.

Oct. 7. Tyng, WILLIAM HIBBINS.

1641. June 2. Tyng, Hibbins.

Oct. 8. Gibbons, Tyng.

It now became common to choose deputies for a year.

1642. Gibbons, Tyng.

1643. Gibbons, Tyng.

1644. Gibbons, THOMAS HAWKINS.

1645. Keayne, Gibbons. [Gibbons.

1646. Keayne, Gibbons; but in Nov. Tyng in lieu of

1647. Gibbons, Tyng.

1648. Keayne, JAMES PENN.

1649. Keayne, Penn.

1650. ANTHONY STODDARD, THOMAS MARSHALL.

1651. JOHN LEVERETT, THOMAS CLARK.

1652. Leverett, Clark.

1653. Leverett, Clark.

1654. Clark, THOMAS SAVAGE.

1655. Clark, Savage.



- 1656. Clark, Savage.
- 1657. Clark, Savage.
- 1658. Clark, EDWARD HUTCHINSON.
- 1659. Stoddard, Savage.
- 1660. Stoddard, Savage.
- 1661. Savage, EDWARD TYNG.
- 1662. Savage, Tyng.
- 1663. Leverett, Clark.
- 1664. Leverett, Clark.
- 1665. Leverett, Clark.
- 1666. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1667. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1668. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1669. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1670. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1671. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1672. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1673. Stoddard, THOMAS CLARK, jun.
- 1674. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1675. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1676. Stoddard, Clark.
- 1677. Stoddard, Savage.
- 1678. Stoddard, Savage.
- 1679. Stoddard, JOHN RICHARDS.
- 1680. Stoddard, ELISHA HUTCHINSON.
- 1681. Stoddard, Hutchinson, ELISHA COOKE.
- 1682. Stoddard, Hutchinson, Cooke.
- 1683. Stoddard, Hutchinson, Cooke.
- 1684. Stoddard, JOHN SAFFYN, JOHN FAYER-  
WEATHER.
- 1685. Saffyn, ISAAC ADDINGTON, TIMOTHY  
PROUT.
- 1686. Saffyn, Prout, PENN TOWNSEND.

Now came the usurpation of charter privileges under Governour Sir Edmund Andros. In 1689 was a glorious revolution.

- 1689. May. THOMAS OAKES, JAMES TAYLOR,  
JOHN CLARK, THEOPHILUS FRARY.

1689. December. Prout, Townsend, Oakes, ADAM WINTHROP.

The proceedings, it is well known, were quite irregular until the new charter of William and Mary arrived; but Courts were held, and Boston representatives were

1690. Prout, Townsend, Clark, Frary.

1691. Prout, Townsend, Frary, Winthrop.

1692. Prout, Townsend, Frary, Winthrop.

After Sir William Phips's arrival, all the towns were allowed, by the charter of William and Mary, to send two.

1692. June. Townsend, Frary.

Boston, by the first statute under the new charter, was allowed four, and thenceforward till the revolution in 1775.

1693. May. Townsend, Frary, Taylor, JOHN EYER.  
Sept. Townsend, Taylor, Eyer, DANIEL ALLEN.

Nov. Townsend, Frary, EDWARD BROMFIELD, TIMOTHY THORNTON.

1694. Townsend, Frary, Bromfield, Thornton.

1695. Townsend, Frary, Bromfield, Thornton.

1696. Townsend, Eyer, NATHANIEL BYFIELD, NATHANIEL OLIVER.

1697. Townsend, Byfield, SAMUEL LEGG, JOSEPH BRIDGHAM.

1698. Townsend, Eyer, Byfield, Legg.

1699. Frary, Eyer, ANDREW BELCHER, JOHN WHITE.

1700. TIMOTHY CLARK, ISAIAH TAY, JAMES BARNS, BEZOUN ALLEN.

1701. Oliver, Legg, Belcher, White.

1702. Legg, Belcher, White, SAMUEL CHECKLEY.

1703. Oakes, Legg, Checkley, EPHRAIM SAVAGE.

1704. Oakes, Checkley, Savage, ELIZUR HOLYOKE.

- 1705. Oakes, Checkley, Savage, Holyoke.
- 1706. Oakes, Checkley, Savage, Holyoke.
- 1707. Oakes, Checkley, Savage, Holyoke.
- 1708. Barns, Savage, JOHN CLARK, THOMAS HUTCHINSON.
- 1709. Barns, Clark, Hutchinson, THOMAS FITCH.
- 1710. Barns, Savage, Clark, Hutchinson.
- 1711. Clark, Hutchinson, Fitch, ADDINGTON DAVENPORT.
- 1712. Clark, Hutchinson, Fitch, Davenport.
- 1713. Clark, Hutchinson, Fitch, Davenport.
- 1714. Clark, Hutchinson, ADAM WINTHROP, OLIVER NOYES.
- 1712. Winthrop, Noyes, WILLIAM PAYNE, ELISHA COOKE, jun.
- 1716. Noyes, Payne, Cooke, ANTHONY STODDARD.
- 1717. Tay, EDWARD HUTCHINSON, JOSEPH WADSWORTH, HABIJAH SAVAGE.
- 1718. Tay, Hutchinson, Wadsworth, Savage.
- 1719. Tay, Noyes, Cooke, WILLIAM CLARKE.
- 1720. May. Tay, Noyes, Cooke, W. Clarke.  
July. J. Clark, Noyes, Cook, W. Clarke.
- 1721. May. J. Clark, Cooke, W. Clarke, WILLIAM HUTCHINSON.  
Aug. J. Clark, Cook, W. Clarke, Hutchinson.
- 1722. Tay, J. Clark, Cook, W. Clarke.
- 1723. Tay, J. Clark, Cooke, EZEKIEL LEWIS.
- 1724. Tay, J. Clark, Lewis, THOMAS CUSHING.
- 1725. Tay, W. Clarke, Lewis, Cushing.
- 1726. Wadsworth, Lewis, Cushing, JOHN BALLANTINE.
- 1727. Wadsworth, Lewis, Cushing, NATHANIEL GREENE.  
November. Cooke, Lewis, Cushing, SAMUEL WELLES.
- 1728. Cooke, Lewis, Cushing, Welles.
- 1729. Cooke, Lewis, Cushing, Welles.
- 1730. Cooke, Lewis, Cushing, Welles.
- 1731. Feb. Cooke, Lewis, Cushing, Welles.  
May. Cooke, Lewis, Cushing, Welles.



- 1732. Cooke, Savage, Cushing, Welles.
- 1733. Cooke, Cushing, Welles, OXENBRIDGE THACHER.
- 1734. Cooke, Cushing, Welles, Thacher.
- 1735. Cooke, Thacher, TIMOTHY PROUT, THOMAS CUSHING, jun.
- 1736. Cooke, Thacher, Prout, Cushing, jun.
- 1737. Cooke, Prout, Cushing, jun. THOMAS HUTCHINSON, jun.  
After Cooke's death, JOHN WHEELWRIGHT was chosen for next session.
- 1738. Cushing, jun. Hutchinson, jun. JOHN READ, SAMUEL SEWALL.
- 1739. Cushing, jun. EDWARD BROMFIELD, JAMES ALLEN, CHRISTOPHER KILBY ; and Kilby going agent to England, for next session NATHANIEL CUNNINGHAM was chosen.
- 1740. Cushing, jun. Hutchinson, Bromfield, Allen.
- 1741. Prout, Cushing, Bromfield, Allen.
- 1742. Prout, Cushing, Bromfield, Allen.
- 1743. Prout, Cushing, Hutchinson, ANDREW OLIVER.
- 1744. Prout, Cushing, Hutchinson, Oliver.
- 1745. Welles, Cushing, Hutchinson, Oliver.
- 1746. Welles, Hutchinson, Oliver, THOMAS HUBBARD.
- 1747. Hutchinson, Allen, Hubbard, SAMUEL ADAMS.
- 1748. Hutchinson, Allen, Hubbard, JOHN TYNG.
- 1749. Allen, Hubbard, Tyng, SAMUEL WALDO.
- 1750. Allen, Hubbard, Tyng, HARRISON GRAY.
- 1751. Allen, Hubbard, Tyng, Gray.
- 1752. Allen, Hubbard, Tyng, Gray.
- 1753. Welles, Allen, Hubbard, JAMES BOWDOIN.
- 1754. Welles, Allen, Hubbard, Bowdoin.
- 1755. Hubbard, Tyng, Bowdoin, WILLIAM COOPER.
- 1756. Welles, Hubbard, Tyng, THOMAS FLUCKER.
- 1757. Hubbard, Tyng, Flucker, BENJAMIN PRATT.
- 1758. Hubbard, Tyng, Flucker, Pratt.
- 1759. Hubbard, Tyng, Flucker, Pratt.
- 1760. Welles, Flucker, ROYALL TYLER, JOHN PHILLIPS.

1761. Tyler, Phillips, JAMES OTIS, jun. THOMAS CUSHING.  
1762. Tyler, Phillips, Otis, jun. Cushing.  
1763. Tyler, Otis, jun. Cushing, OXENBRIDGE THACHER, jun.  
1764. Tyler, Otis, jun. Cushing, Thacher, jun.  
1765. Otis, jun. Cushing, Thacher, jun. THOMAS GRAY.  
1766. Otis, jun. Cushing, SAMUEL ADAMS, JOHN HANCOCK.  
1767. Otis, jun. Cushing, Adams, Hancock.  
1768. Otis, jun. Cushing, Adams, Hancock.  
1769. Otis, jun. Cushing, Adams, Hancock.  
1770. Bowdoin, Cushing, Adams, Hancock.  
1771. Otis, jun. Cushing, Adams, Hancock.  
1772. Cushing, Adams, Hancock, WILLIAM PHILLIPS.  
1773. Cushing, Adams, Hancock, Phillips.  
1774. Cushing, Adams, Hancock, Phillips.
- 

TO THE REV. DR. HOLMES.

*Rochester, Sept. 25, 1821.*

SIR,

I TAKE the liberty to present to you a short topographical sketch of the town of Rochester in the county of Plymouth. I am sensible that, in the fourth volume of the new series of the publications of your Society, there is a topographical description of that town, and I have read the same with great pleasure and satisfaction, and the account there given I think is correct in all its parts. But as there are many particulars, which could not be known to the writer of that account, I thought I would sketch out some of those particulars, which might serve as an appendix ; which I have done, and which I now,

with a rough draught of the town, present to you, that you may (if you think proper) communicate the same to the Society.

I am, Sir,

With due respect,

Yours, &c.

ABRAHAM HOLMES.



TOPOGRAPHICAL DESCRIPTION OF THE TOWN OF ROCHESTER,  
IN THE COUNTY OF PLYMOUTH.

THIS town is situated in the south-westerly corner of the county of Plymouth, and is bounded on the north by Middleborough, on the east by Wareham, on the west by Fair Haven, on the south by Buzzard's Bay. Its breadth is about six miles, from east to west, and its mean length about nine or ten miles, though, to the extremity of some points running into the sea, it is farther, and from the heads of some coves it is not so far.

*Soil.*

The soil in this town is very variant. Near the centre it is a light sandy soil, tolerable for tillage, but indifferent for grazing. Some parts of the town are rocky, iron-bound, unfit for cultivation, and will probably be kept for wood: in other parts the soil is luxuriant, and produces good crops of grass. On the sea shore are considerable margins of salt marsh, without which it would be difficult to keep the stock of cattle necessary for the use of its inhabitants. The town never produces a sufficiency of corn for its own consumption; large quantities are imported from the southern states. As much pork is made as is consumed, but part of the beef is supplied from the western counties. Little or no wheat is raised here, but large quantities of flour are imported from New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore and Alexandria.



*Manufactures.*

The principal manufacture in this town is SALT. This business is carried on on an extensive scale, and it is believed that more salt is manufactured in this town than in any other town in the commonwealth ; and it is the most productive of any business here practised. Here is one forge for making iron, but the scarcity of water in a great measure cramps its usefulness in the summer season. Here is also one furnace which, in the winter season, does much business. There are nine saw mills in this town, the operations of all which are confined to the fall, winter and spring seasons. There are also nine corn mills, but two of which grind any in the summer. Ship building is a very considerable branch of business in this town. Four ships, besides sundry smaller vessels, have been built here this season, most of which were built for foreign markets. Potash was formerly manufactured in this town, but that has long been discontinued.

*Parochial Divisions.*

This town was originally one entire parish. The Rev. Samuel Arnold was the first minister. The records of that time are lost ; but it is supposed that he died pretty early in the eighteenth century. In the year 1710 the Rev. Timothy Ruggles was here settled in the ministry. While he was the minister, the population of the town increased, and the inhabitants of the south-westerly part of the town, living remote from the place of publick worship, proposed to be set off in a distinct parish. The residue of the town, convinced of the propriety of the measure, gave their consent ; and they were accordingly incorporated by metes and bounds about the year 1733, and the Rev. Ivory Hovey was ordained their minister. This parish contains that part of the town, which still retains the *Indian name* of Mattapoissett. Mr. Hovey was a very pious and useful minister, yet nevertheless some internal difficulties arose in the parish, and in 1767 he thought proper to ask a dismission, which was granted ; and he afterwards settled in the south parish in

Plymouth, where he remained the minister until he died, at the advanced age of more than ninety years. In January, 1772, the Rev. Lemuel Le Baron was settled in the ministry in this parish, who is still their minister.

In the original parish, the Rev. Mr. Ruggles remained the minister until the year 1768, when he died in November. In the preceding September, the Rev. Jonathan Moore was ordained a colleague with him. During the ministration of Mr. Ruggles, an unhappy controversy arose between him and Noah Sprague, Esq. which terminated in the erection of a poll parish, taking in the north-westerly part of the town, and some who lived in the immediate neighbourhood of the meeting-house of the first parish, a part of Middleborough and a part of Freetown. In this parish the Rev. Thomas West was ordained the minister, about the year 1748. In the first parish a great degree of unanimity prevailed until the year 1788, when an unhappy difficulty arose between the Rev. Mr. Moore, the minister, and Major Earl Clapp, a leading man in the church and parish. This difficulty, though personal in its commencement, very soon became general, and a more spirited controversy seldom if ever was known. This terminated in the dismissal of Mr. Moore, and in February, 1799, the Rev. Oliver Cobb was settled as the minister of that parish and of another parish in said town, the origin of which will be narrated in the sequel of this narrative.

It has herein been stated that a poll parish had been established in the north-westerly part of this town, &c., and that the Rev. Thomas West had been settled its minister. Mr. West remained their minister until about the year 1781, though before this time some of the leading members of his church and parish grew dissatisfied with his doctrine, and some of them went off and joined the Baptist connexion; and at this time his advanced age, and the infirmities incident thereto, induced him to ask a dismission, which was granted. The members of this poll parish now found themselves, on account of diminutions, to be incompetent to settle a minister. They negociated with the first parish, in the year 1791,

and agreed with them for a division line between that precinct and them, by which they relinquished a number that belonged to the poll parish, and took in a larger number by metes and bounds, which had belonged to the first parish. They then applied to the Legislature, and obtained an act of incorporation, making a territorial parish, taking in a part of the first and second parishes in Middleborough and a part of Freetown. In 1793 they settled the Rev. Calvin Chaddock as their minister. Mr. Chaddock remained their minister for a number of years, (nine or ten) when, on account of some difficulties, he voluntarily asked a dismissal, which was granted. Since that time there has been no settled minister ; but they have employed a number of ministers from time to time to preach to them. More than half the people, who live within the limits of this parish, are of different denominations of Christians from those who procured the act of incorporation.

In the year 1798 a number of the inhabitants of the south-easterly part of the first parish, living remote from the place of publick worship, having built a meeting-house, petitioned the Legislature to be incorporated into a distinct parish ; the first parish accompanying said petition with a certificate that they had no objection to the prayer of said petition. They were accordingly incorporated. These petitioners had no idea of settling a minister by themselves, but of joining with the first parish in settling one, who should preach alternately in each meeting-house. They accordingly joined in settling Mr. Cobb, as before mentioned ; but they have a church separately in said parish ; and a considerable part of both parishes can attend each meeting, the meeting-houses being only four miles distant from each other.

A very considerable part of the inhabitants of this town are Baptists or Quakers ; but catholicism so far prevails that no considerable inconvenience arises therefrom. In the election of any kind of officer, no attention is paid to the particular denomination of Christians to which the candidate belongs. An incorporated Baptist society is in the south-westerly part of the town,



who have a meeting-house ; and a number more in the north-westerly part of the town are incorporated with a Baptist society in the northerly part of Fair Haven. Most of the people in the north-easterly part of the town belong to a Baptist society in Middleborough, and in the south-easterly part of the town a number of Baptists have associated together. In the north-westerly part of the town a number are of the denomination of Quakers, and attend religious worship in the northerly part of Fair Haven. About two miles south-easterly from the centre of the town stands an ancient *Friends'* meeting-house ; but the society has for a great number of years been gradually decreasing, and about five years since their publick speaker died at an advanced age, and it was thought the society would become extinct ; but about that time a young gentleman, who had recently assumed a religious character, embraced their religious sentiments ; altered his dialect and dress accordingly ; resigned his commissions as a justice of the peace and a captain in the militia, joined their society, and became a publick speaker. This event has had a considerable effect on the society. If it has not increased their numbers, it has called the luke-warm into activity ; has brought to the meeting, occasionally, many of the leading people of that denomination from New Bedford and Fair Haven, and has brought to attend meeting some who before that were contented with their private devotion at home, and will doubtless be the means of perpetuating the society. In the second parish some of the Congregational order, who had a degree of dislike to their minister's preaching, joined with a number of the Baptist denomination ; and a few Universalians built, the present year, a meeting-house but a small distance from the parish meeting-house. This house is not claimed by any particular denomination, but is open to all without exception.

#### *Ponds.*

Quitticus Pond is on the north-westerly corner of this town ; a small part of the north end is in Middleborough,

and a small part on the west lies in Freetown. This pond is pretty well stored with pickerel and perch. Formerly large quantities of alewives went into it through a small brook from Assawamsett Pond; but very few pass now. A part of Assawamsett Pond lies on the north side of this town, and the line of the town crosses two islands of considerable bigness in this pond. Assawamsett Pond is the largest collection of water in Massachusetts. Its length, from north to south, is about six miles; its breadth in some places nearly four miles; but the width is very variant. At one place, called Long Point, in the summer, the width is not more than tree rods. At this place there is a bridge. At another place, about a mile from this, a point of land but a rod or two wide runs across the pond, lacking about two rods. Over this was formerly a bridge, which has now gone to decay. In this pond is a vast quantity of iron ore, which increases nearly as fast as it is dug. In the southerly part of this pond are large quantities of fish, such as pickerel, white fish, perch, roaches, chubs, horn fish; and vast quantities of sea or white perch are taken in the fall of the year, when the young alewives can be had for bait, which is the only bait which can be used with success. The land on the southerly side of this pond is very uneven and hilly, and the bottom of the pond is as uneven as the land to which it is adjacent. It is not uncommon for water to be from ten to twenty-five feet deep, and within a few rods to be not more than three or four feet deep. This pond is the source of Namasket River, which is a considerable branch of Taunton River. Snip-tecot Pond is wholly in this town. The seat of this pond may be considered as the height of land. Snip-tecot Brook runs north out of this pond into Assawamsett Pond, and may be considered as the first source of Taunton River. Mattapoissett River runs south out of the southerly part of this pond. A few rods south of this pond lies Long Pond, nearly a mile in length, and from five to twenty rods in width. Here

are large pickerel, but they are of a muddy taste. Not far from this, to the southward, lies Snow's Pond, which has no visible connexion with any other water. This pond is deep and has some fish. It contains perhaps thirty-five or forty acres. On the right hand of the road from Rochester to Plymouth lies Merry's Pond, a most beautiful sheet of water, and is nearly as round as a circle. In this pond are a few fish of the minor species. There is no natural inlet or outlet to this pond ; but a few years since the town, at the expense of \$100, cut a canal from it to Sippican River, hoping to induce the alewives into the pond. No success attended the attempt. This pond is about three quarters of a mile in diameter.

### *Rivers.*

There is no run of water in this town, which geographers would call a river ; but there are two, which are complimented with that name by the inhabitants. The first is Mattapoissett River, which issues out of Sniptecot Pond, and empties into the sea at Mattapoissett Harbour, after running about eight miles, including its windings. On this stream stand three corn mills and four saw mills, two of which only keep up the pond in the summer, both of which are on the same dam. This stream, though small, is of some consequence, besides what results from the mills, namely, on account of the alewife fishery. The privilege of taking said fish in said river, the inhabitants are by law authorized to sell, which brings into the treasury about \$400 annually. It would be much more productive, if the taking the fish illegally could be effectually prevented. The other is Sippican River, on which stands three corn mills, three saw mills, one forge, one fulling mill, one trip-hammer shop, and one foundry. There are sundry other rivulets, on some of which mills are erected. In the north part of the town is a furnace (called stillwater furnace, on account of the sluggishness of the stream.) It stands on Black River, which rises in Middleborough,



and only the south-easterly end of it is in Rochester. Its operation is confined to the winter season, and then it is very productive.

### *Schools.*

This town supports twenty-four months of publick schools in a year, besides about thirty-two private schools in the spring, summer and fall, and about sixteen private schools in the winter season. Writing is brought to great perfection in this town, and there are few people in this town, who are not pretty well instructed in reading, writing and arithmetick. There are not many who have received collegiate education that belong to this town for fifty years last past. Samuel West, D. D. Benjamin West, John Sprague, Zepheniah Briggs, Thomas Hammond, ——— Mead, Elnathan Haskell, Anselm Bassett, William Ruggles and Nathaniel Cobb are all that are now recollected by the writer. It is believed that the late Brigadier Ruggles was the first native of this town, who received a collegiate education. After him John Sprague, the late chief justice of the county of Worcester, had a collegiate education; and it is not now remembered that any other inhabitant of this town has had a publick education.

### *Miscellaneous.*

It appears that this town was incorporated in 1686, but the oldest records that are now to be found go no further back than 1697. Their first representative appears to have been chosen in 1718, namely, John Hammond. The whole number of different representatives which they have chosen is twenty-eight, and as late as 1786, they had had but fourteen different representatives. The reason why the number has so increased since is not owing to the frequent changes; but sometimes they have chosen two, sometimes three, and once four. The whole number of town clerks, which this town has had is eleven. The whole number of justices, which have been appointed in town, is thirty; five of whom have been of the quorum, and one through the common-

wealth. There are in said town fifteen merchants' shops or stores.

A considerable number of the inhabitants go to the southern states to spend the winter season; some mechanicks to work at their respective trades; a number of masters of vessels, with their crews, to coast up and down in the rivers. Some go for piloting; and when they arrive there, they are sure of having the preference. This southern business is far from being unproductive. The whole of the adventurers two years ago returned with about \$75,000, the result of their business.

### *Police.*

The prudential affairs of the town are conducted by a board of three selectmen, who are generally the assessors of taxes. The collection of taxes is annually sold to the lowest bidder, who is holden to procure securities to the selectmen's satisfaction; and then he is chosen constable, and is to warn all town meetings free of fees. The demands against the town are adjusted annually by a committee of nine chosen annually for that purpose. For a long time the poor of the town were billeted out separately to those who would support them cheapest; and some were partially assisted by the selectmen, as occasion required. But in this mode the number of the poor and the expense of supporting them had so alarmingly increased, that the town totally altered the system, provided a poor house, and appointed an overseer, and by that means have greatly diminished the expense; and it is hoped that some improvement in the system will still further relieve the inhabitants from this kind of expense. Two years ago the accounts allowed by the committee on accounts amounted to \$1515,77. This year the amount was a little above \$600.

### *Population.*

The number of inhabitants is something rising of three thousand. The exact number I do not presume to ascertain; for there is a variance between the number as taken by the officer in the last census, and that taken

by the constable the same year; and which is most correct the writer of this does not undertake to determine. About one thirtieth part of the population of this town are above seventy years of age;\* the hundred thirty-ninth part are above eighty years of age; and the five hundredth part are above ninety; and within one year last past, six persons of more than eighty years of age have died or removed out of town. In the spring of the year 1816, a fiftieth part of the population of this town were swept away by an epidemick distemper. Owing to emigrations the increase of the population of this town has been very slow. In 1784 the population was a little rising of two thousand four hundred.

LETTER FROM DR. I. WATTS TO A FRIEND IN NEW  
ENGLAND, MAY 8, 1734.†

DEAR SIR,

MY friends at New England will forgive me if I am not so punctual and express in my present answer to their last letters; for having made a slow and long work of the removal of our abode to Newington, near London, my papers are not all so ready at my command as they will be. Yours of last October is before me, and I thank you for the account you give me of the affairs

\* The number of persons in Rochester, who are more than seventy years of age, is one hundred thirty and one.

† This letter was given to me by Asahel Stearns, Esq. professor of law in Harvard College. It was probably written to Rev. Dr. Colman, or Rev. Thomas Prince, both of whom corresponded with *Dr. Watts*. What is said of *Gov. Belcher* shews the effect of the calumnies which his enemies had circulated in England. The dissenters in England must for a time have detested or distrusted him; especially until the anonymous letter sent to Mr. Holden, purporting to be from some of the principal ministers of Boston, was proved to be a forgery. [*Vide Hutchinson's Hist. Mass. II. 356.*]

Professor Stearns, if I recollect rightly, found this letter in a book belonging to the library of Harvard College. This does not lessen the probability that it was addressed as above suggested. Both the gentlemen mentioned were doubtless in the practice of taking books from the library. J. D.

January 25, 1820.



there, and for every sermon I have received from you. In the little books I now send, I must beg the favour of your distribution of them; being very seldom in London, except Lord's days, I must put them all together, and send them by one hand. If the honourable governor should hereafter inquire, how I came to omit the poem addressed to him among this collection, if you cannot avoid the question, then, in as soft a manner as possible, let the true reason be known, (viz.) that the unhappy differences between him and the people have given occasion for hard things to be said of him here, almost in all companies where his name is mentioned, and I was not willing to give new opportunities of calumny and reproach against a gentleman who has so many valuable qualities.

You inquire my age. I am near sixty; but a great part of my life has been worn out with sickness and wasted under incapacities; otherwise, perhaps, I might have been so voluminous an author as to have overloaded the world. I thank God who has given me any powers to write while I can preach so little, and has made my writings in any measure accepted and useful. May the God of grace be ever with you, and render all your labours so successful that they may be crowned with abundant fruit in this and the future world.

Yours in all affectionate esteem and service,  
I. WATTS.

*May 8th, 1734.*

P. S. Since this was written I found yours of Sept. last, wherein I must excuse myself from the compliments you pour out upon me. May the good Spirit of Holiness be sent down among you in answer to the appointed days of prayer you mention.

---

SOME ACCOUNT OF CUMMINGTON, IN HAMPSHIRE COUNTY,  
MASSACHUSETTS. BY JACOB PORTER.

*Preliminary Remark.*

SEVERAL things stated in the writer's Account of Plainfield have an equal reference to this place. These it is not thought necessary to repeat.

*Name.*

The name is derived from Col. John Cummings of Concord, who purchased this town of the General Court, June 2, 1762.

*Situation and Extent.*

Cummington is a post town, in the north-west part of Hampshire county, about seven miles long, and three broad. It is bounded north by Plainfield and Ashfield, east by Goshen, south by Chesterfield and Worthington, and west by Peru and Windsor in Berkshire county.

*Surface.*

It is situated on a ridge of mountains, and owing to the abrupt declivities of the hills, the pastures and woods may be viewed as a picture. These hills, when robed in green, decked with sunbeams, and enriched with flocks, afford a prospect, which to the eye of taste, is even enchanting.

Westfield River, a considerable stream, rising in Windsor, runs through this town in a south-east direction, and empties into the Connecticut at Westfield. It was by the Indians called Agawam. There are two tanneries, three woollen factories, a cotton factory, six saw mills, three grain mills, and a mill for cleaning clover seed, the most of them on this stream.

*Geology and Mineralogy.*

Mica slate is the prevailing rock in this place, and, indeed, in this part of the country. The strata are vertical, and their direction is north and south, generally varying a little from west to east. This rock is often used for jambs, hearths, and door stones, and is sometimes so fine that handsome grave stones are made of it. Beautiful sienite is found on the summit of Deer Hill and elsewhere. A quarry of soap-stone of a good quality, though rather difficult to be worked, is opened in the west part of the town. Very fine specimens of chlorite, actynolite and talc are found at the same place. The talc is translucent, in laminated masses, frequently curved or undulated; its colour, which is very delicate, is a greenish white. Beautiful stauratide is found at Keith's Hill; its crystals are of a dark brown colour, with smooth, glistening surfaces. Two or three prisms are frequently united, generally without intersecting each other. That interesting mineral, the chromate of iron, has also been discovered in this town. Garnets are very abundant; they are of all sizes, from a pin's head to that of a bullet. Serpentine and black jasper have been found on the banks of Westfield River.

*Climate.*

The summer on these mountains, though short, is generally very pleasant. The winter is long and dreary; and the inhabitants are frequently obliged to endure

"The icy fang,  
And churlish chiding of the winter's wind."

SHAKSPEARE.

*Literature.*

Eight young gentlemen from this place have received a publick education. The inhabitants have a library consisting of 72 volumes. The largest private library belongs to Peter Bryant, Esq. and contains about 700 volumes. There are six school districts, in which schools are regularly taught about half the year. A



taste for reading, and for literature in general, is evidently on the increase.

### *Religion.*

The Rev. James Briggs began to preach here in July, 1777, and was ordained July 7, 1779. He was born at Norton, in this state, January 18, 1746, old style, and educated at Yale College, the usual honours of which he received in 1775 and 1778. A church had been gathered previous to the time when he began to preach in the town; but of this event no record is to be found.

The following extract from the records of the town will show the terms on which he was settled: "Voted to give Mr. Briggs two hundred acres of good land, and sixty pounds, stated by rye at three shillings and four pence a bushel, for settlement; fifty pounds the first year, and rise five pounds a year till it amounts to sixty pounds, stated by rye at three shillings and four pence a bushel, beef at twenty shillings a hundred, and flax at eight pence a pound." His present salary is two hundred and fifty dollars a year.

There have been four general reformatations during his ministry. The church at present consists, as the pastor informs me, of about one hundred and sixty members.

The edifice for publick worship is a neat wooden building, furnished with a bell, and handsomely painted. It was erected in 1793.

Besides this society, there are a few Baptists, who occasionally hold meetings in private houses.

### *Benevolent Societies.*

The Society for promoting Christian Knowledge, formed January 5, 1810.

The Heathen School Society, formed March 3, 1817.

The Bible Association, formed May 5, 1817.

The Cummington Peace Society, formed September 3, 1819. This society, consisting of fifty-two members, is auxiliary to the Massachusetts Peace Society.

*History.*

Col. Brewer emigrated from Worcester, and began a settlement here in 1764. After him the principal settlers were from the towns of Hardwick, Abington and Bridgewater, with some few from Weymouth and Hingham.

The first settler now living is an aged widow, who, with her husband, moved into the town in June, 1765. She informs me that the same week they arrived there, all the men in the town, seven in number, assembled, and built them a log house, which was finished in a day, so that they moved in before night; "and a drier house," said she, "I never lived in." The first person born in the town was one of her daughters, who is now fifty-one years old.

Cummington was incorporated June 23, 1779. The first town meeting was held December 20, the same year. At this meeting, Deacon Barnabas Packard acted as moderator; and the following town officers were chosen: Deacon Barnabas Packard, town clerk; Adam Porter, town treasurer; and William Ward, Deacon Ebenezer Snell, and Lieutenant Joshua Shaw, selectmen and assessors.

According to the census of 1810, this town contains one thousand and nine inhabitants.

*Plainfield, February 1, 1820.*

---

## SUPPLEMENT.

Since the preceding sketch was written, the publick have been called to lament the death of the Hon. Peter Bryant, Esq. a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society. He died of the pulmonary consumption, at the place of his residence, March 19, 1820, in the fifty-third year of his age. His funeral was attended on the twenty-first by the largest collection that I recollect to have seen in the town on any similar occasion.

Dr. Bryant was born at Bridgewater, August 12, 1767. He studied physick and surgery at Norton, with Dr. Prilete, a French practitioner. When about twenty-two

years of age, he came to Cumnington, where he settled, and acquired a very extensive and lucrative practice, and a reputation truly enviable. His nice and discriminating judgment, and very extensive reading, fitted him for eminent usefulness in his profession. As a consulting physician, his services were peculiarly acceptable to his medical brethren. He was also in the habit of instructing students in medicine. These were attracted from different parts of the country by his well selected library, his extensive practice, and his general reputation. The advantages enjoyed at this school are thought to have been superiour to any in the western part of the state.

He was also a writer of no ordinary talents. Of his poetick effusions, many have enriched the magazines and publick prints of the day. His manuscript poems, though, generally speaking, too local for the publick eye, are admired by his friends. Hudibrastick verse, if not better adapted to his genius, appears to have been more cultivated by him than any other. He retained his faculties in a very remarkable degree to the close of life. In 1806, Williams' College conferred on him the degree of Master of Arts, as did the University at Cambridge that of Doctor of Physic in 1818.

During the latter part of his life, he was deeply interested in politicks, and was several times a representative, and once a senator, in the General Court.

According to the census of 1820, Cummington contains one thousand and sixty inhabitants.

*Plainfield, April 1, 1820.*

NOTICES, BY REV. EZRA S. GOODWIN OF SANDWICH, OF THE  
EFFECTS IN THAT VICINITY OF THE GREAT STORM OF  
23 SEPTEMBER, 1815.

THE following notes on the storm or hurricane of September 23, 1815, and the extraordinary tide attending it, relate to a very small section of the country ; being



confined to the county of Barnstable, and particularly to that part of it contiguous to Buzzard's Bay.

At the present time, (December, 1818,) it may not be improper to arrange such minutes under three heads.

1. Notes on the *wind* and its effects.

2. Notes on the *tide* and its effects.

3. Notes on the more lasting influence of the sea water on the land.

*First.* In regard to the wind and its effects. It began to rise in the latter part of the night preceding the 23d; about sunrise it had risen to a *hard gale*, but was not then thought much more violent than many of the severe gales experienced in this region: It however continued increasing till about 10 o'clock, from which time till near 2 P. M. it was extremely high. The gale did not consist of an uniform current, but sudden gusts or blowings of wind, at short intervals; the most severe of which were about 11 o'clock. The first abating of the gale was observed by longer intervals between the gusts. It subsided in the course of the afternoon, and by night the weather was quite moderate. The sky was cloudy throughout the day, but no rain fell. The course of the wind, early in the morning, was east; from which point it gradually changed to a few degrees west of south, and blew from the latter quarter when most violent.

But the gale was not by any means so severe in this region as in the parts of the country north and west of this. Some trees were torn up, but most of them stood in loose soil, or were so shaped, or exposed, that they could not resist any very high wind that should take them at advantage. Some buildings were prostrated, but they were old, or feeble; and, indeed, several buildings, which sustained this gale without damage, have since been blown down. No chimney was broken off or much injured. Salt works are more liable to injury from high winds than any other species of property on shore in this county; but they suffered little from the wind alone. A few covers were removed from their places and broken, and in some instances, where pecu-

liarly exposed, some of the vats were lifted from the stakes on which they were built, and twisted or broken. It may afford a useful hint to remark, that a lot of salt works, in a very bleak and exposed situation, had been previously wattled with bushes, between the stakes which supported it, which so effectually defended it, that no damage was suffered; while a large, shallow reservoir, about eight inches deep, standing in front of another lot of salt works, was lifted, in a body, and cast over upon them in a very shattered condition; but its peculiar form and exposure rendered it a fit subject for this kind of violence. And, generally, this species of property, though from its constitution specially liable to injury from high winds, yet endured so little on this occasion, from the wind alone, that the loss sustained from this cause has been scarcely reckoned worthy of account. When this is compared with the prostration of forests and edifices, and the great destruction of property by the wind, in counties north and west of this, we must conclude, that the gale in this region was comparatively light.

It was still more moderate in the lower parts of the county; decreasing gradually, till at Provincetown it was called a *hard blow*, but by no means a hurricane.

2. In regard to the extraordinary *tide* and its effects.

The interior part of Buzzard's Bay communicates with several small bays or inlets, in most cases by narrow passages. In these small bays, and near the head of tidewater in Monimet or Back River, the water rose, during the gale, at least eight feet higher than is usual in the highest course of tides. In the open bay it was much higher. Seven miles below the places where the above observation was made, it is judged that the tide was ten feet or more above the common level of spring tides. It appears to have been higher still lower in the bay.

The land is in many places low and level, and continues so at some distance from the shore, when it rises suddenly into hills. All the low ground was overflowed of course. The water from Buzzard's Bay approached

so near to the source of a brook, which falls into Barnstable Bay, that observers have generally judged, that if it had risen fourteen or fifteen inches more, perpendicularly, it must have passed across the Cape, following the course in which a canal has often been projected, about two miles west of the village of Sandwich.

The tide in Buzzard's Bay is three hours earlier than in Barnstable Bay, which would bring high water in the former, on the 23d of September, 1815, at about 11 o'clock and 40 minutes, when the gale was at the greatest height. On this occasion, therefore, both wind and sea operated together, and much damage was done.

Coasting vessels are almost the only kind of shipping in this bay. Several of them were at that time moored near the shore at the landing places, where great quantities of cord wood had been collected, to be shipped on board them for market. Being a light kind of craft, they were scattered about in various directions, and most of them driven high upon the shore.

Dwelling houses are but thinly scattered over that region; but where they stood near the sea the inhabitants were obliged to abandon them and flee to high places for shelter. These houses being generally erected on ground a little elevated, none were destroyed; one only was filled with water as high as the chamber floor. No lives were lost.

Salt works, though they resisted the *wind*, suffered extremely from the *tide*. The business of salt making has been carried on to a great extent on the eastern shore of Buzzard's Bay. But all the works within the reach of this tide, were carried away. The shore was literally swept with the besom of destruction. On the island of Mashena, a large amount of this kind of property was lost. The water washed away the salt *works*, apparently without an effort. A salt *house* connected with them, being partly filled with salt, maintained its position till the tide had risen nearly to the roof, when it was overset, and floated across the bay. The ruins of these works were found in the woods at Wareham. In one instance, a large lot of salt works was floated, in a



body, the distance of several miles, without being broken. Had it been caught and brought to an anchor, it would probably have been saved, but with slight damage. It was, however, driven upon a craggy shore, where the tide left it, and it fell to pieces over the rocks; but the salt *house*, which sailed in company the whole distance, chanced to find a better resting place. It was lodged directly across a road, where it settled upon corner stones so well adapted, that its perfect shape was maintained. It was afterwards launched like a vessel, and conveyed back to its original position, without being essentially injured by the excursion. The place where it grounded is about nine feet above the level of the common high tides.

After the flood was passed, it was striking to observe how small vessels, and these light fabricks, had been made the *sport* of winds and waves. Some of the coasting vessels were floated completely into the forest. One of these was lodged among trees so large, that they sustained it in an upright position, till it was relaunched, with very little damage. Another was lifted over a bluff and laid in front of a dwelling house—as one might say, across the door-stone. The vessel proved a defence to the house, which might otherwise have suffered greatly. The wrecks of salt works appeared in some places to have been heaped together in fantastick mood, presenting strange appearances of ruins; of buildings partly finished, and left in that condition; and of the others, the design of which, in such spots, could not be conjectured.

The injury done in Buzzard's Bay was much greater than that in the Vineyard Sound. The waters in the latter place were not heaped up, as in the former. But the tide in Falmouth harbour was so high as to create much confusion, and do much damage among the shipping there. A brig was driven ashore at Hyannis; but below that place the wind was more moderate, and the waters had sufficient sea room; so that little or no damage was done.

*In regard to the immediate effect of the tide upon the soil and its productions.* Grass was entirely killed. There was not a green blade to be seen, in any place,

over which the flood had passed. In a few spots, near running springs, some new shoots appeared in the course of the autumn: but on uplands, none grew till another season; and then it was not the same *kind* of grass which grew there before, excepting in a very few instances. Several cedar swamps were filled with sea water, which, having no outlet, soaked into the ground. The trees in these swamps perished forthwith; the leaves withering and falling off in a very short time. In trees cut from these swamps during the winter following the storm, the sapwood had turned nearly black; and there is scarcely an instance in which a cedar tree survived the effect of this flood. Pine and oak trees suffered a similar fate, excepting a very few, which stood *near the shore*. They had perhaps grown accustomed to the influence of salt water, and could better endure it; but a very great proportion of *them* died. Most of the shrubs and bushes, over which the tide passed, perished also. It has been observed, that one or two species of laurel, and the common bayberry were but little if at all injured, and some of the swamp whortleberries survived. Apple trees were, generally, on such high ground, that the tide did not reach them. A few only were surrounded by the water, and none of them were so situated that the water could remain about them for any length of time. They were, however, as much exposed as many of the cedars which died; but the apple trees survived, and yet live, though evidently stunted as to their growth. With these exceptions, the destruction of vegetable life was very general, if not universal.

A great part of the *cultivated* lands, in that vicinity, are in low places near the shore; they were overflowed of course. In fields where Indian corn was standing, the roots were, in most cases, torn out of the ground; and where this did not take place, the stalks were wrenched and twisted, and the spikes broken off. The soil was so washed in these fields, that they exhibited the appearance of a sea shore, rather than of cultivated land. Indian corn, where it had previously grown hard or ripe, was fit for food; for some time the people washed it be-

fore grinding ; but they soon discovered that the washing was unnecessary, as the grain had no taste of sea water, or so little as to be disregarded. But where this grain had not already grown hard, it would not, though left standing in the field ; it either perished in the husk, or very soon after it was taken out. It was a common remark, that no part of the plant could be dried by any means, and by far the greater part of the harvest was lost, not being yet ripe. Potatoes and other roots, if left long in the ground, perished ; but where they had ripened, and were taken up within a few days after the flood, and well dried, they were good, and were kept and used as usual during the season.

It is the practice of our farmers to sow winter rye in August. This plant had, of course, advanced considerably in growth at the time of the storm. Where the salt water passed over it, it was entirely killed ; unless we except one or two spots in very low and wet ground ; but in these, the rye was so much injured, as nearly amounted to total destruction. Some fields were immediately resown ; in these, the rye sprung up, endured the winter, and produced a good crop. But the fences having been principally of cedar, were almost all swept off, and the fields laid common ; and few people felt encouraged to commence the labour of the season anew, with the additional expense and trouble of procuring and setting up new fences.

Fresh water was, for a long time, a rarity of price. The wells were generally overflowed and left full of sea water. Watering places for cattle suffered a similar fate ; and so extensive was the influence of the flood, that several wells and watering places into which the tide water did not run, were yet made salt. The water in them acquired the taste and quality of sea water, and was totally unfit for domestick purposes. The inhabitants were obliged to transport this necessary article, for family use, from a great distance ; and travellers who needed it were glad to receive it in a measure of the smallest capacity. In some wells near the shore, the water used to rise and fall with the tide, still remaining fresh ; but the severe



discipline of this flood changed their habit; the water in them remained at a fixed height, and salt.

When this extraordinary tide was sweeping over the land, the spray arising from it was very great. It is spoken of as having resembled a *driving snow storm*, through which objects could be discerned only at short distances. But the leaves of the trees did not afterwards exhibit any of the dark red colour, (as if they had been scorched,) which was observed in more northern regions, and especially in the vicinity of Boston. The leaves of trees destroyed by the flood exhibited very soon the appearance of *death*, but not of having been burnt; neither was salt spray collected on window glass to any amount.

3. In regard to the more permanent influence of the sea water on the land.

Very little rain had fallen for several weeks previous to the storm; the soil in this region, naturally inclined to dryness, was very dry. A large proportion of the salt water, therefore, penetrated the earth, which may be said to have been saturated with it. Many persons have expressed an opinion, that the water of this tide was much more strongly impregnated with the ingredients of sea water, than that of ordinary tides. Perhaps, with some limitation, this opinion may be correct, as there are several streams of fresh water emptying into Buzzard's Bay, which may diminish the strength of ordinary tide waters; but would have but little influence on this occasion. Salt was observed to have crystallized in many places on the shore within a few days after this flood. This may in some measure account for the remarkable saltiness of the wells and watering places. This saltiness continued in them, unabated, till the first week of the following March. The winter had been severe, and the ground frozen very deep till the middle of February, when there were several weeks of moderate weather, with soft rains, which dissolved the snows and opened the ground; shortly after which, it was discovered that several of the wells and watering places were fresh. The water in these had been tasted but a few days pre-

vious, and was then as disagreeable as at first. The freshness must have taken place suddenly. After a succession of dry weather, these wells, &c. grew salt again, but not to the same degree as before ; and it has been observed, that, after heavy rains, they would be fresh, but become salt after dry weather ; the degree of saltiness diminishing from time to time. At the present period they are perfectly fresh ; but some of them did not entirely recover until the opening of the ground in the spring of 1818 ; and in a large pond, which has but a very small outlet, the water still retains some taste of sea water.

Several of the overflown fields were, in the spring of 1816, sown with oats, which produced a more abundant crop than ever was known in that region before. Indian corn flourished remarkably, as also spring grain ; and the land, generally, was found in a much better state for tillage, than before it had been overflown. On grass lands, the effect was various. Grasses which had been sown, perished ; and there grew in place of them the common wild grass of the country, which continues to keep possession, where the fields have been left to the ordinary course of nature ; but where they have been ploughed and sown again, good grass is produced. Generally speaking, whatever grasses were growing on level grounds, perished ; and those of a poorer sort sprung up in their place. In several places where the land lay sloping toward the sea, the natural grass in pasture grounds was killed ; and, in the following year, clover grew there. In 1817 the clover decreased in quantity, and nearly disappeared in 1818. Mosses, also, were destroyed by the sea water, and grass grew where they had been. Sea water appears to have acted as an alterative, and may, perhaps, be found useful, in some cases, as a manure.

The effect of this flood upon the land is now nearly past ; it has been of some temporary service to the soil ; but this temporary benefit is by no means an equivalent for the destruction of property which took place at the time of the storm. The harvests were then generally in

the field, and the annual produce of the salt manufactories had not been removed to a place of safety. The dependence of many families for their yearly subsistence was in a great measure lost; and much distress was brought upon the people in several respects. Contemplating them, as from their places of refuge, beholding the progress of this destructive flood, perhaps the following extract may not be thought inapplicable:

“ Still overhead  
The mingling tempest wears its gloom, and still  
The deluge deepens; till the fields around  
Lie sunk and flatted in the sordid wave.

—————All that the winds had spared  
In one wild moment ruined; the big hopes  
And well earn'd labours of the painful year.”

## CHURCHES AND MINISTERS IN NEW HAMPSHIRE.

Continued.

### DUNSTABLE.

THE oldest church in this section of New Hampshire was gathered at Dunstable on the 16th December, 1685. The original constituting members were, Rev. Thomas Weld, Jonathan Tyng, John Cummings, John Blanchard, Cornelius Waldo, Samuel Warner, Obadiah Perry, and Samuel French. Rev. Thomas Weld was the first minister. He was a native of Roxbury, and graduated at Harvard College in 1671. The time of his ordination is not exactly known, though it is presumed to have been soon after the church was organized. There is a tradition among some of his descendants, that his death was occasioned by the Indians, who beset his garrison in April or May, 1702; but this seems rather improbable, since an event of this kind would not have escaped the notice of our historians. A rough flat stone, with no inscription, points out the place of his interment. His first wife, Eliz-



abeth, died 19 July, 1687, at the age of 31. Mary Weld, his second wife, died 2 June, 1731, in her 64th year, at Attleborough, Massachusetts, where her son, the Rev. Habijah Weld, who was born about six months after his father's death, was a settled minister above fifty-four years. He was born 2 September, 1702; graduated at Harvard College 1723; and died 14 May, 1782, at the age of eighty. A short account of Attleborough by him is published in the Hist. Coll. Vol. I. second series.

Rev. Thomas Weld was succeeded in the ministry at Dunstable by Rev. Nathaniel Prentice, who graduated at Harvard College in 1715. The date of his ordination is not known. He died February 25, 1737, and was succeeded by Rev. Josiah Swan, who graduated at Harvard College in 1733. According to the Rev. Dr. Belknap, he was ordained in the year 1739. He was dismissed in 1746, in consequence of a division of the town, by running the line between the provinces of New Hampshire and Massachusetts. He, however, remained in town several years, and afterwards removed to Lancaster, Massachusetts, and from thence to Walpole in this state, where he died. Rev. Samuel Bird, from Dorchester, succeeded the Rev. Mr. Swan. He entered Harvard College in the same class with the Rev. Bishop Bass, and would have graduated in 1744, but in consequence of some rash censures upon the governours of the college, and the Rev. Mr. Appleton of Cambridge, did not obtain his degree. He was ordained in 1747; dismissed in 1751; and afterwards removed to New Haven, where he died. The settlement of Mr. Bird caused a division in the church and town. A second church was organized, and an additional meeting-house was erected, in consequence of this division. After his dismissal, an union of these churches was effected by means of an ecclesiastical council, which was convened in 1759. Rev. Joseph Kidder succeeded Mr. Bird after a long interval. He was born at Billerica, 18 November, 1741; graduated at Yale College, 1764; and was ordained 18 March, 1767. Difficulties having arisen in respect to his civil contract, it was dissolved by mutual consent and by advice of a coun-

cil, on the 15th June, 1796. But his pastoral relation to the church continued till his death in September, 1818, having almost completed his 77th year. He was the only surviving minister of those in the regular exercise of their ministry, at the time of his settlement, in the state of New Hampshire.

Rev. Ebenezer P. Sperry, the sixth pastor in succession, was ordained as a colleague with Rev. Mr. Kidder on the 3d September, 1813. Mr. Sperry continued in the ministry but little more than five years, and was dismissed from his pastoral charge. The church is now vacant.

[Authorities for the preceding :—Dr. C. Mather's Hecatombolis—Note in Alden's Collection of American Epitaphs—Historical Collections, Vol. IX.—Belknap's Hist. N. H.—Rev. Dr. Burnap's Sermon at Funeral of Rev. Jos. Kidder.—Rev. M. Sperry's Summary—MS. documents.]

#### LITCHFIELD.

A Congregational church was gathered in this town in 1741. Rev. Joshua Tufts, who graduated at Harvard College in 1736, was the first minister. He was dismissed in 1744. Rev. Samuel Cotton, a descendant from the celebrated John Cotton, B. D. one of the first ministers in Boston, succeeded, and was ordained in February, 1765. He received his education at Harvard College, where he graduated in 1759. He was dismissed in 1784, and afterwards removed to Claremont, where he is still living, but not in the exercise of the ministry. After his removal the church continued in a broken state till 1809, when a church was again formed in the Presbyterian order, and Rev. Nathaniel Kennedy was settled. He was dismissed by the Presbytery in April, 1812, and was resettled at Kensington. Rev. Enoch Pilsbury succeeded Mr. Kennedy. He was ordained 25 October, 1815, and died 15 February, 1818, at the age of 30.

---

---

NOTES ON DUXBURY IN THE COUNTY OF PLYMOUTH. IN  
A LETTER TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE SOCIETY.

August 25, 1820.

SIR,

IN 1793, at the request of my respected friend, Hon. James Winthrop, I prepared a topographical description of Duxbury, the place of my nativity. It was afterwards published in Vol. II. of the Collections of the Historical Society. The account was prepared at short notice, and contained very little relating to the history of the early inhabitants of that ancient town. I have since collected some anecdotes and facts respecting the first settlers there, which I have now the pleasure to communicate, and which serve to shew, more fully, the opinions and manners of "the Pilgrims," while they preserve a recollection of the particular virtues and deeds of individuals.

Of the first company, who came to Plymouth in 1620, and who were the worthy founders of that ancient colony, several located themselves, within a few years, on the north side of the bay, and soon after gave to it the name of Duxburrow. Among those who took up their residence in this place, we find some, who were men of influence, and who were concerned in administering the government—as Capt. Myles Standish, William Brewster, William Collier, John Alden, and Jonathan Brewster; and many who were substantial landholders and freemen—as William Bassett, Love Brewster, Francis Eaton, Experience Mitchell, Philip Delano, Henry Sampson, Stephen Tracy, George Soule, Edmund Chandler, Edward Bumpas, Henry Howland, Richard Church, Daniel Prior, Moses Simmons, Francis West, Edmund Freeman, Thomas Bisbee, Edmund Hunt, and Edmund Weston. And, a few years later, the following persons were distinguished inhabitants of Duxburrow: Constant Southworth, Samuel Nash, Rev. Ralph Partridge, Francis



Sprague, William Paybody, Christopher Wadsworth, Joseph Rodgers, &c.

William Brewster, often, in the early records, called *Elder* Brewster, lived only a few years of the latter part of his life in Duxbury. He died in 1644, aged eighty-two. He was the oldest person of the company, being sixty-one, or sixty-two, when they landed in Plymouth. Stephen Hopkins is supposed to be the next oldest. There is, indeed, no direct and positive assertion in the early records, that he resided in Duxbury: But it appears evident, from the account of the settlement of his estate between his two sons, Jonathan and Love, that he not only owned lands in that place, but that he built a house there, and resided in it, a short time before his death. His name is also on the list of freemen in Duxbury in 1643. The settlement he made, and on which his sons and grandsons afterwards lived, was in the south-east part of the town, adjoining land owned and occupied by Capt. Standish; and which is not only pleasant on account of its local situation, but contains some of the best soil in that part of the country.

The character of this learned, pious and apostolick man has been so fully and justly given by Rev. Dr. Belknap, and by the writer of the ecclesiastical history of Plymouth, that it would be entirely superfluous here to speak of his various social and Christian virtues. It is sufficient merely to mention, that he has ever been considered one of the founders and supporters of the Puritan church, which first existed in the north of England, then fled to Holland, and afterwards to this part of the New World, and here was established "upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the Chief Corner Stone."

Capt. Myles Standish, the military hero of the company, and the defender of the pilgrims, had land allotted him in Duxbury, at an early period; and here his family resided. He had a large tract granted him on a peninsula in the south or south-east part of the town. The soil is good, and under judicious cultivation at this day yields a handsome income. Captain's Hill is included in this

tract, and affords an extensive and beautiful view of the surrounding country.

The heroism and bravery, the zeal and fidelity of Capt. Standish, and his great services to the infant colony, have been deservedly eulogized by Dr. Belknap, in the *American Biography*. No one was more able, and no one more disposed, than this learned and patriotick writer, to appreciate the labours and sufferings of the leaders of the pilgrims; yet in his biography of Standish, he has unfortunately omitted to record several of his publick actions, which merit recollection, and the preservation of which are justly due to the character of this brave and useful man. Perhaps it is not too much to say, that, but for him, the infant settlement had been broken up, and most of the early inhabitants had fallen a prey to the power and cruelty of the savages.

Dr. Belknap observes, in the closing paragraph of the biography of Standish, "that, after 1628, we have no account of him, and that he is not mentioned in the Pequot war in 1637." Standish did not, indeed, share in the honour of that hazardous enterprise. Capt. Mason, of Connecticut, attacked the Pequots by surprise, and achieved a most brilliant and useful victory, before either the men from Plymouth or Massachusetts arrived. But it is also a fact, that the government of Massachusetts applied to Plymouth for aid in that expedition; that the magistrates there immediately ordered men to be raised for the purpose, and Capt. Standish was appointed to command them. Major Stoughton commanded the Massachusetts troops, and was to have been chief of the whole military united. In 1642, Gov. Winslow and Capt. Standish were sent by the Court of Plymouth to Massachusetts, to solicit protection from the Indians, who, it was said, were meditating an attack upon them. In 1645, the commissioners of the four united colonies appointed a council of war, and placed Capt. Standish at its head. Mason of Connecticut, and Leverett and H. Atherton of Massachusetts, were his colleagues. At this time, a war was apprehended with the Narraganset Indians, and the troops were to be commanded by "Sargent

Major Gibbons." He was also appointed, 1649, to command and inspect all the military companies in the colony; and "he condescended thereunto."

In 1653, a period of great alarm, Capt. Standish was one of the council of war in Plymouth colony; and in 1654 he was appointed to the command of the Plymouth forces, consisting of about sixty men, destined to act in concert with the Massachusetts and Connecticut troops, against the Narraganset Indians and the Dutch, who had combined to destroy all the English people in these parts. The news of peace between England and Holland, which reached America in June, rendered the expedition unnecessary; and the troops were discharged. It is also proper to mention, as it shews the confidence the magistrates of Plymouth colony had in Capt. Standish, that he was sent to Boston, in the spring of the same year, to consult with Major Sedgwick, appointed commander in chief, respecting the proposed expedition against the Indians and Dutch. He was a man of talents and judgment, as well as of great courage, and was often selected to advise as well as to execute. He was frequently employed in surveying grants of land and laying out roads; and was sometimes made arbitrator between those who had disputes and controversies. In ecclesiastical concerns, he was also sometimes called upon to settle differences. In 1655, he and John Alden were appointed by the Court, on a petition from Marshfield, to go to that town and signify to them the Court's desire, that the inhabitants there would take notice of their duty, and contribute, according to their ability, freely to the support of the ministry. He was also sent to Rehoboth, in the course of the same year, for a similar purpose. He was treasurer of the colony for several years, and held the office in 1656, the year he died. When he was chosen to this office for the last time, on settlement of his accounts for the two former years, it appeared that he had £15 of publick money in his hands; but this was granted him as a compensation for his services, he not having received any salary during that period. He had also, at the same time, a grant of 300 acres of land near



Satuckett Pond in Bridgewater. In 1651, Gov. Bradford was authorized by law to deputize some one to act in the office, should any exigency require it. In 1653, expecting to be sometime absent, he appointed Capt. Standish.

Capt. Standish left three sons—Myles, Alexander and Josiah. The eldest removed to Boston, and was living there in 1662. Alexander and Josiah were several times representatives from Duxbury; and the former was sometime captain of the military company there. Josiah was also one of the council of war, at the time of alarm occasioned by the Sachem Philip's warlike preparations. He married a daughter of John Alden. Some of the descendants of Capt. M. Standish, to the fourth generation, lived on the land, which he originally owned in Duxbury. But there are none of them now living in that place. Josiah inherited the land in Bridgewater, which had been granted his father, and one of his children settled on it. Some of his descendants are now living in the county of Plymouth.

William Collier, for many years an assistant, resided in Duxbury. He was early chosen to advise the governor in the civil affairs of the colony, and continued to be appointed to that trust till he was very aged, in 1670, when the court allowed him a servant at the publick expense. He was esteemed as a man of great sobriety, prudence and integrity. In 1642, he and Edward Winslow were appointed to treat with the court and government of Massachusetts on the subject of a union of the four colonies. He was afterwards one of the commissioners from Plymouth colony, who met those from Massachusetts, Connecticut and New Haven, to devise measures for the general defence and welfare of the whole. During several years, he was chosen one of the council of war in the Old Colony. He is said to have been opposed to the measures of intolerance towards the Quakers, who, though not so severely persecuted by the government of Plymouth as of Massachusetts, were forbidden there to disseminate their wild and disorganizing opinions, and were often banished the

limits of the plantation. On this subject, John Browne and James Cudworth were in sentiment with him.

It is not known whether he left any son. One of his daughters was married to Gov. Prince, who is said to have lived some time in Duxbury; one married Love Brewster, son of Elder W. Brewster, and one married Constant Southworth, son in law of Gov. Bradford.

John Alden, who made one of the company which settled Plymouth colony, and is said to have been the first who stepped upon the memorable rock, when they landed on that inhospitable shore, in December, 1620, was also an inhabitant of Duxbury. It is not certain what year he fixed his residence here; but it is supposed it was soon after Capt. Standish and Mr. Brewster settled at Captain's Hill, and Gov. Winslow at Careswell,\* in the south part of what is now Marshfield, and adjoining to Duxbury. In 1632, he, with Capt. Standish and Jonathan Brewster were desired to move to Plymouth for the winter.

A pathway was early laid out from Plymouth over Jones's River, and crossing Island Creek, so called, wound along near the shore of the bay to accommodate Standish, Brewster, Sprague and others in the south and east part of the town, and then led over Blue River, near the head of the salt water, and passing John Alden's settlement on the north side of this river, was continued over Stony Brook, near Philip Delano, who had just begun a farm there, by Duck Hill, to Careswell, above-mentioned, the residence of Gov. Winslow. Soon after a path was made to Green's Harbour, a little northeast of Winslow's house, and thence to North River, where a ferry was established; and from here to the settlements in Scituate, now become considerable.

John Alden had also land early granted him on the south side of Blue River, and several pieces of salt marsh in the vicinity. And at a later period he had land granted him at the North River in Bridgewater, and on Taunton River. The farm on which he lived is now in possession of Judah Alden, Esq. one of his descendants.

\* The name given by Gov. Winslow to his farm.

John Alden was quite a young man in 1620; only about 21 or 22 years of age. He died in 1686, and was in his 89th year. Gov. Prince was also young; but a few years older than Alden. He is named as one of the company, from the time of the first landing, and could not, therefore, have been a member of any other family, and was the fifth or sixth in order, on the list of purchasers, or "old comers," as they were denominated. He was early a magistrate, a representative from Duxbury, an assistant for more than thirty years, often one of the council of war, an arbitrator, a surveyor of lands for the government and for individuals, and on several important occasions, was authorized to act as agent or attorney for the colony. He lived to a great age, as before observed, and was elected an assistant in 1686, the year he died. This is evidence, that he retained his strength and judgment to the last. It is believed, that he survived all his early companions: Philip Delano died a few years before him: Gov. Prince died in 1673. He frequently presided in the Court of Assistants, in the absence of the governour, being the eldest member for several years; and sometimes, on that account, called deputy governour. For several years after the decease of Capt. Standish, he was treasurer of the colony. He is represented as a man of strong intellect and good judgment, decided, ardent, resolute and persevering. The writers, who mention him, bear ample testimony to his industry, integrity and exemplary piety. He was a Puritan, both in theory and in conduct. He gave great support to the clergy and the church, and discountenanced every thing of a disorderly or innovating kind.

He had a large family of children, all of whom were respectably established in the world; and some were called to act in publick stations. His son, John, lived in Boston, and for many years commanded an armed sloop belonging to Massachusetts. His son, Joseph, inherited his land in Bridgewater, and settled there. David, another son, was several years a representative from Duxbury. Samuel, a son of David, lived to the



age of 93, in Duxbury, and died there in 1780. He was father of Col. Ichabod Alden, who commanded one of the regular Massachusetts regiments in the war of the revolution, and was killed by the Indians, at Cherry Valley, in 1778. And a daughter of this Samuel is now living at Bath, in the state of Maine, aged about 75. Jonathan, another son of John Alden, was commander of the military company in Duxbury, and lived on the farm which his father had occupied. A son and grandson of his were members of the General Court of Massachusetts from that place, in more recent times. One of his daughters was married to Mr. Bass of Braintree, in 1649 or 1650; and a daughter of theirs was the maternal ancestor of the venerable President ADAMS. William Paybody, one of the first settlers of Duxbury, several years a representative from the town, and who, in 1672, was called "an ancient freeman of the colony," married with another daughter. One was married to Josiah Standish; and Samuel Delano, son of P. Delano, married the fourth.

Jonathan Brewster, eldest son of William, before noticed, was a representative from Duxbury in 1639, and for several years after. He was probably more than 21 years of age when the company first arrived; for he is named separately from his father, in the earliest lists of the "first comers," and had lands allotted him, in 1623, in the same manner as others of the company had. He was a man of respectability and property, and was often employed in transacting the publick affairs of the town and colony. His farm was contiguous to Capt. Standish, contained much valuable marsh, and had the advantage of bordering on the bay for almost a mile. He had a numerous family of children; and his son, William, was sometime deacon of the church in Duxbury—a man greatly esteemed, and beloved, and possessed of much of the good qualities of his worthy and pious grandfather. Love Brewster, the other son of the first William, lived in Duxbury, also, a little north of his brother. He married a daughter of Mr. Collier, the assistant; but it does not appear from the

early records, that he was much engaged in publick life. He sold a part of his farm, in 1633, to Dr. Comfort Starr, who removed from Cambridge, Massachusetts, and settled in Duxbury. One of his sons removed into the colony of Connecticut, and some of his descendants are still citizens of that state.

The Elder, William Brewster, died without a will, and he had advanced much to his oldest son, Jonathan, who had an expensive family; but the two sons referred the settlement and division of the estate, in a very amicable manner, to their father's "ancient friends, Gov. Bradford, Gov. Winslow, Gov. Prince and Capt. Standish," being at the house of Gov. Bradford, after the funeral of their father, and in presence also of Rev. R. Partrich, J. Reyner of Plymouth, and Edward Buckley of Marshfield. Jonathan and Love had each, then (1643) a dwelling house there. The elder, it appears, lived in the family of his son, Love, at the time of his last sickness. The estate was settled to the satisfaction of the brothers; and Mr. Vassall of Scituate made the division of the real estate accordingly. The inventory shews, that the elder had a considerable library, especially for that time, being about 100 volumes in Latin, and 400 in English.

Philip Delano (sometimes written De La Noye) was among "the first comers," and early settled at Duxbury. It appears from some of the records of Plymouth colony, that he lived a little north or north-west of John Alden, and by the path leading to Careswell and Green's Harbour, on the south of Stony or Mill Brook, and below the site of the cotton factory now standing there. His wife's name was Hester Dewesberry. He was married after they settled at Duxbury. He lived to a great age, and died but a short time before J. Alden. He left three sons, Samuel, Thomas and John. He was often one of the grand inquest of the colony, and was also much employed in surveying and dividing lands. A mill was early erected on the brook near the house of P. Delano, by one Polard, who was so permitted by the Court.

William Bassett, one of the first settlers in Duxbury, fixed his residence a little north of this brook, on the path which led to Careswell, the farm of Gov. Winslow. He was a representative from Duxbury in 1640 and 1644, and afterwards marshal of the colony. Peregrine White, the first child born after the company arrived, married one of his daughters. Many of his descendants have lived in Sandwich. It is said his son, William, removed to that place, and was also some time chief marshal of the colony.

Samuel Nash was also a representative from Duxbury; and for several years, from 1653 to 1677, was sheriff or chief marshal of the colony. At an earlier period, he was lieutenant of the military company commanded by Capt. M. Standish. When he was quite aged and infirm, the Court advised him to live with his son-in-law Clarke: "He sold his estate and complied with the proposal." There have been no persons of that name in Duxbury for many years.

William Paybody was likewise a deputy for Duxbury for several years. In 1672 he is spoken of as "an ancient freeman of the colony." In 1659, a large tract of land on Taunton River was purchased of Ousemaquin and Philip, and of the squaw sachem, Tatapanum, by Paybody, Nash and others of Duxbury, and Josiah Winslow and others of Marshfield. One of Paybody's sons settled on this tract, which now makes part of Little Compton. A part of the tract he sold afterwards "to Benjamin Church of Duxbury, a carpenter, and a son of Richard Church." This is the Benjamin Church known as a great warrior against the Indians, not only about Mount Hope, but against the hostile tribes at the eastward. He commanded an expedition in that country, and discovered great skill and prudence, as well as courage. He is represented as possessing military talents and bravery, almost equal to the renowned Myles Standish.

Francis Sprague was another of the early settlers in Duxbury, and a man of influence and property for the period in which he lived. At that time, it was only



the more sober and grave persons, who were permitted to sell spirituous liquors. Mr. Sprague was licensed for this purpose. William Collier had been allowed to do the same, at an earlier period. Samuel, a son of Mr. Sprague, was secretary of the colony in 1690; and many of his descendants have been eminent in public life in various parts of New England.

Edmund Chandler, Christopher Wadsworth and George Soule, who were among the earliest settlers in Duxbury, were representatives from that town.

Of those who were persons of some distinction at a little later period, and who were chiefly the children of the "first comers," may be mentioned John Bradford, Constant Southworth, Samuel Seabury, Arnold, Holmes, &c. John Bradford was a representative for Duxbury people in 1652; and afterwards for Marshfield. He was son of Gov. Bradford, by his first wife, who died in Cape Harbour, December, 1620. By his second wife, Mrs. Southworth, the governour had two sons, William and Joseph. The eldest was many years a representative of Plymouth, an assistant, member of the council of war, treasurer of the colony, major of a troop of horse, commissioner of the United Colonies, deputy governour, and a counsellor in 1692 and 1693, after the union of Massachusetts, Plymouth, Maine, &c. He lived in that part of Plymouth, now called Kingston, on the south side Jones's River; and possessed very large tracts of land in that place and in Duxbury, and some in Dartmouth. He had nine sons and several daughters, and his descendants are yet numerous in the Old Colony; and some are to be found in Rhode Island, some in Connecticut, some in New Jersey, and some in Pennsylvania.

Constant Southworth, a son of Gov. Bradford's second wife, was many years a deputy from Duxbury. He was admitted a freeman in 1637. He also held a commission in the military company there. He was a man of good education. His mother has been represented as a superiour woman, whose mind was cultivated by much reading. Southworth was one of the council

of war, treasurer of the colony, and sometimes agent or attorney for the government. He married a daughter of W. Collier. His son, Edward, was representative in 1690, and also in 1692, after the charter of William and Mary. Samuel Seabury, John Tracy, John Wadsworth, and Seth Arnold were also representatives from Duxbury, about the years 1680—1691. The descendants of Wadsworth remain. The name of Seabury is extinct there. Some of the family went to Connecticut and their descendants are still there. Arnold was son of the minister of Marshfield, and Holmes was a son of Rev. Mr. Holmes of Duxbury, who succeeded Mr. R. Partrich, (who came in 1637, and died in 1658,) as pastor of the church in Duxbury. Mr. Holmes was the minister here only for a few years. After him came Mr. Wiswall, who was employed as agent for the colony in England, about 1690; and also officiated as teacher of youth, as well as pastor of the church.

I add the following facts, though of a miscellaneous nature, as they serve further to describe the circumstances of the *pilgrims*.—In 1632, “cattle were much increased, and corn fields were required to be enclosed.” [This relates to all the settlements.]

In 1633, a tax was laid on all the inhabitants in the colony, as follows: W. Bradford, £1. 7; E. Winslow, £2. 5; M. Standish, £0. 18; W. Brewster, £1. 7; J. Alden, £1. 4; W. Collier, £2. 5; J. Howland, £1. 4; Jona. Brewster, £1. 4; F. Sprague, £0. 18; P. Delano, £0. 18; W. Bassett, £1. 7; R. Church, £1. 7, &c.

In 1638, an annual fair was allowed in Duxbury for cattle and other commodities.

In 1636, the Court recognizing the compact signed in Cape Harbour in 1620, and referring to the charter from Charles I. in 1629, by a publick act “claimed all the privileges and rights of free-born subjects of England.”

In 1634, “a palisado was ordered to be made beyond the creek at Eagle’s Nest, where Standish, Brewster and Paybody lived.”

In 1641, George Soule was fined for attending Quaker meeting. Samuel Eaton and Goodwife Hall presented for mixed dancing. A. Sampson presented for striking J. Washburn in the meeting-house on the Lord's day. N. Bassett and J. Prior presented for disturbing the church and publick worship. F. Sprague fined for selling wine contrary to order of Court. Edward Hunt presented (1650) for shooting a deer on the Sabbath. G. Russel presented for not attending publick worship.

In 1643, the men able to bear arms, from 16 to 60, were 76. One was John Alden, Jun., probably then 17 or 18; one was W. Brewster, grandson of the first Mr. Brewster. The list of freemen in 1645, is as follows, in part: Win. Collier, John Alden, R. Partrich, E. Chandler, C. Wadsworth, H. Howland, S. Nash, E. Mitchell, P. Delano, H. Sampson, C. Southworth, M. Simons, F. Sprague, &c.

In 1654, when 60 men were raised to go against the Dutch, Duxbury was ordered to furnish six, and Plymouth seven; and the citizens were desired to attend publick worship with their fire arms. In 1651, eight wolves were killed in Plymouth, and two in Duxbury.

J. Coventry presented (1650) for proposing marriage with K. Bradbury, a servant of Mr. Bourne, without asking leave of her master. A. Peirce presented for idleness, and for neglecting publick worship on the Lord's day. Bryant and Ames presented for drunkenness. Duxbury presented for not mending the high way at Island Creek, and for not keeping the bridge over Jones's River in repair (1648.)

In 1633, a path was ordered to be cut from Green's Harbour, near Gov. Winslow's, to Massachusetts, probably through Scituate. A few years after, one was laid out from Plymouth to the "bay," over Jones's River, and passing through land of Gov. Bradford, kept further from the sea, and crossed North River at Hanover, or the upper part of Scituate, where the ship yard has been in later times.

In 1654, Thomas Clarke tried for taking £6 for the use of £20; but was cleared on trial. Several persons



were fined about this time for playing at cards ; but it does not appear where they lived.

In 1638, the cut at Green's Harbour was agreed to be widened eighteen feet, and made six feet.

Two representatives were sent from each town ; and the election was twice a year.

At the funeral of Gov. Josiah Winslow, 1680, £40 were allowed by the Court for the publick expenses. Thomas Gannett and Edward Hunt lived at Houndsditch, near Blue River, in 1644.

Chickatabut, alias Wampatuck, sachem of Massachusetts, sold land to P. White, in 1666, in Bridgewater, on the line between the bay and Plymouth.

In 1655, Gov. Bradford declared his unwillingness to accept his office for a full year, for these reasons—unless some speedy course should be taken to redress the same—that the support of ministers was neglected, on account of which many had removed ; that error had not been suppressed, and great confusion likely to follow ; and that the deputies declined acting upon them, when suggested to them. At this time, and before, the Quakers were troublesome, by disputing the power of the civil magistrate, opposing a regular and learned clergy, and setting up an inward light as superiour to all written law and rules, both political and Christian.

In 1658, a house of correction was ordered to be built in Plymouth.

H. Norton, a Quaker, was banished the colony in 1657, and sent to Rhode Island. He spoke very contemptuously of the authority of the magistrates, and reproached the governour. He was at first treated mildly, and advised to desist ; but was not softened by this moderation. He had before made disturbance in Boston, and insulted Gov. Winthrop. The Quakers were very irregular about this period. They were probably, in some cases, treated with severity. But it is evident that they were not only visionary and eccentric, but, in some respects, advanced dangerous opinions, and disturbed the peace of the community by their denial of the civil authority and power. Some of them denied

the real humanity of Christ ; and they also opposed all learning, and denied the necessity of education in ministers of the gospel. They refused to take the oath of allegiance. And they often attended the assemblies of other Christians on the Lord's day, and made confusion by opposing the regular minister.

The following order of Court was passed, 1660 : "Whereas there is a constant monthly meeting of Quakers from divers places in great numbers, which is very offensive, and may prove greatly prejudicial to the government, and as the most constant place for such meetings is at Duxburrow, the Court have desired and appointed Constant Southworth and William Paybody to repair to such meetings, together with the marshal or constable of the town, and to use their best endeavours, by argument and discourse, to convince or hinder them."

The people of this ancient town are still distinguished for great simplicity of manners, for economy, industry and enterprise ; and the population is much increased within the last thirty years.

In this circumstantial and detailed account, my object has been to preserve some recollections of the first settlers of Plymouth colony. If I have yielded too much to local feelings, I hope you will excuse them.

With great respect, &c.

ALDEN BRADFORD.

Hon. JOHN DAVIS, }  
President of the Historical Society. }

## A DESCRIPTIVE AND HISTORICAL ACCOUNT OF BOSCAWEN IN NEW HAMPSHIRE.

**BOSCAWEN** is a pleasantly situated town in the county of Hillsborough, on the west side of Merrimack River, in latitude  $43^{\circ} 19'$  north. It is six and a half miles in length and six and a quarter in breadth, and contains about forty square miles. It is bounded north by Salisbury, east by the River Merrimack, which di-

vides it from Canterbury, Northfield and a part of Sanbornton, south by Concord and Hopkinton, and west by Warner.

### *Rivers.*

Beside the Merrimack, which forms the eastern boundary, the west part of the town is watered by Blackwater River, running parallel with the former through the whole extent of the town, and about five miles distant from it. It is not a large stream, but very important, both on account of the fertile fields on its borders, and the numerous water privileges it affords. It empties itself into Contoocook River in Hopkinton. There are several other streams of less note gliding through the valleys, imparting richness and fertility to almost every farm, and some of them affording sites for water machinery. Over these streams this town supports more than two miles in length of plank bridges. There are seventeen saw mills, five grain mills, five carding machines, two mills for grinding tanners' bark, and one for grinding lead for potters' ware.

### *Ponds.*

*Great Pond* lies near the centre of the town, and is about two miles in length and one mile in width. *Long Pond*, in the west part of the town, is two miles long, and from one half to three-fourths of a mile wide. Both abound with fish common to fresh water ponds, and each furnishes a mill seat at its outlet.

### *Aspect and Soil.*

In general aspect, Boscawen presents a surface agreeably diversified by such an alternation of hill, plain and valley, as is equally gratifying to the eye of the traveller, and serviceable to the more important views of agriculture. The soil seems to admit of three divisions—the *intervale*, plain, and highland. The *intervale* upon the Merrimack, nearly the whole length of the town, is widely extended; it was originally very fertile, and at this period bountifully rewards the labour of the husbandman. Bordering the *intervalles* on the west, are



large *plains*, the natural growth of which was hard wood and white pine. The soil here is thinner, but when cultivated yields rich harvests of grain. The *high land*, which comprises about five-sevenths of the whole town, lies in large swells far extending from the north to the south. The natural growth is white oak and hard wood. It is of a deep, productive soil, affording many good farms, most delightfully situated. The vales, though less noticeable, are not less productive. Compared with towns in its vicinity, Boscawen is not hilly. There are few spots where stones abound. There are no morasses nor stagnant waters.

#### *Health, Mortality, &c.*

From the numerous streams of living water, and the peculiar direction of the swells of the hills, this town probably derives that pure air and uniform temperature, which so generally prevail, and which are so conducive to health. The number of deaths for the last eleven years, ending the 1st of January, 1819, was 269. The number of births on the records, prior to that time, was 1395, which falls considerably short of the whole number.

#### *Education.*

There are 13 school districts, which average about 35 scholars to each, and 13 school houses, most of which have been lately built, and are commodious. For the attention paid to education in this town, much credit is due to the indefatigable exertions of the Rev. Dr. Wood, who, since his settlement, has entered at the different New England colleges between 80 and 90 young gentlemen, of whom 31 have been engaged in the work of the ministry.

#### *Societies and Library.*

This town is distinguished for the number and respectability of its societies. There is a Musical Society, a Moral Society, an Agricultural Society, a Society to aid in the education of heathen children, which have paid in two years one hundred and seventeen dollars; and two

Female Cent Societies, paying annually about fifty dollars. The Boscawen Social Library was founded the 7th February, 1792, and incorporated the 2d December, 1797. It contains about 220 volumes.

### *Population.*

In 1740, there were between 20 and 30 families ; in 1760, there were between 50 and 60 families ; in 1775, the number of inhabitants was 585 ; 1790, 1108 ; in 1800, 1414 ; and in 1810, 1828. The census of the present year will probably give about 2300.

### *Villages.*

The principal village is in the east section of the town. It has about 30 dwelling houses, situated on a spacious street, nearly two miles in length, very straight and level. The Fourth New Hampshire Turnpike passes through this village. Here the eye of the observant traveller is attracted and delighted by the fertile intervalles and windings of the Merrimack, on which, to this place, it is expected boats from Boston, through the Middlesex Canal, will soon arrive.

There is another village now forming on a pleasant eminence, near the west meeting-house, promising, at no very distant period, a centre of business. There is a meeting-house in each of these villages.

### *Churches.*

The early church records of this town are lost, and the date of the formation of the First Congregational Church is not ascertained. Rev. Phineas Stevens, A. M. who was graduated at Harvard College in 1734, was the first minister. He was ordained over the church at Contoocook, the original name, the 29th October, 1740, and died the 19th January, 1755. He was succeeded by Rev. Robie Morrill, A. M. who was graduated at Harvard College in 1755, and was ordained 29th December, 1761. He was regularly dismissed 9th December, 1766. Mr. Morrill was succeeded by Rev. Nathaniel Merrill, A. B. who was graduated at Harvard College in 1767. He was ordain-

ed the 26th October, 1768, and dismissed the 1st April, 1774. Mr. Merrill was succeeded by Rev. Samuel Wood, D. D. a native of Connecticut, who was graduated at Dartmouth College in 1779. He was ordained the 17th October, 1781, when his church consisted of 20 members. The civil contract between him and the town being dissolved, the religious society over which he presides was formed in 1802, and incorporated the 18th June, 1807. His connexions with the church have ever remained.

The Second Religious Society was formed the 20th March, 1804, and incorporated the 19th June, 1810. The Second Congregational Church was organized the 10th September, 1804, and Rev. Ebenezer Price, A. M. was installed on the 26th of the same month. Mr. Price is a native of Newburyport, was graduated at Dartmouth College, 1793, and had, previously to his settlement in this town, been ordained at Belfast in Maine. The number of communicants in both churches, in 1819, was about 300. Two hundred and fifty-nine have been added to the first, and ninety-two to the second church, since the settlement of their respective pastors.

### *History.*

This town was granted by the General Court of Massachusetts Bay, in 1733, to ninety-one proprietors, who held their first meeting on the 2d May, at Newburyport. The proprietors gave to it the name Contoocook, its original Indian name, which it retained until the town was incorporated. It was divided into 104 shares, of which 91 were appropriated to the proprietors, 9 to gentlemen for their services and influence, and 4 for publick uses. The first settlement commenced, early in the season of 1734, by Nathaniel Danforth, Andrew Bohannon, Moses Burbank, Stephen Gerrish and Edward Emery. Others soon followed, to the number of 27 families. On the 7th January, 1735, Abigail Danforth was born, the first child of European extract born in the place ; and she with the two next born were living in 1819. To defend these families against the hostilities



of the Indians, the proprietors built for them, in 1739, a log fort, 100 feet square and 10 feet high, where they and succeeding settlers lived in garrison several years. They had previously built a convenient log house for divine worship and their publick meetings. Notwithstanding the protection afforded by these means of security, several persons were killed in 1746, and others taken prisoners. Among the killed were Elisha Cook and his son, with a man of colour; of the prisoners were Thomas Jones, Enos Bishop and Nathaniel Maloon, his wife and whole family (excepting one son) who were carried to Canada. Mr. Jones died in captivity.

Contoocook was incorporated the 22d April, 1760, when it received the name of BOSCAWEN, in compliment to Edward Boscawen, a celebrated English admiral, who died the 10th June, 1761. The first town meeting was on the 18th June, 1760, when George Jackman was chosen town clerk, and continued in that office thirty-six years successively. This venerable man is still living, in the 85th year of his age, in the possession of his faculties, and displaying great vigour of mind. He was twenty-two years one of the selectmen, four years representative to the General Court, twice a delegate to the State Convention, fifty-nine years proprietor's clerk, and has been a member of the church forty-four years. He was commissioned a justice of the peace under George II. and has been in commission under all the changes of government since, and perhaps has been the longest in commission of any man in the state.

For the greater part of the preceding account, the writer acknowledges his obligations to the Rev. Dr. Wood, and Rev. Mr. Price, ministers of said town, who kindly furnished him with a valuable document relative to its topography and early history.

JOHN FARMER.

Amherst, N. H. 4 January, 1821.

*Rev. A. Holmes, D. D.*

---

BIOGRAPHICAL NOTICE OF HON. JAMES WINTHROP, WHO  
DIED SEPTEMBER, 1821, AGED 69.

**MR. WINTHROP** was descended through a very respectable line of ancestors, from John Winthrop first governour of Massachusetts; and was of the fifth generation from that worthy and justly celebrated character. Gov. Winthrop was of a distinguished family in Groton, in England, about fifty miles from London. On a sepulchral monument, in that place, his great grandfather is called, "the Lord and Patron of Groton." It was most fortunate, or rather, we should say, it was providential, that such a character as Gov. Winthrop was disposed to join the perilous enterprize of establishing an English and Christian colony in this new world, in 1630. He was very ably and happily qualified for the situation. Like many others, who early came to New England, he had great piety, and great firmness of character, which fitted him to guide and govern an infant plantation, where peculiar trials and sufferings were to be endured, and society almost to be formed anew. The father of Judge Winthrop was a professor in Harvard College. He was very eminent as a mathematician and astronomer; and was also greatly distinguished as a statesman and patriot.

Mr. Winthrop became a member of the University at the early age of thirteen; and made good improvement of the advantages he enjoyed. He soon discovered a fondness for mathematical pursuits, in which he excelled; and as a classical scholar, he ranked among the first of his contemporaries. He was, in truth, a man of various and extensive literature. In philosophy, and in a knowledge of the rudiments of general language, he particularly excelled. He also read all the learned, modern languages; as the French, Spanish, Italian and German; and few persons understood the Hebrew so

well as he did. In the latter part of his life, he acquired a considerable acquaintance with the Chinese.

On leaving college, he gave his attention to no particular study, with a view to a profession for life. Yet he was very studious, and ambitious of a literary character, contemplating, probably, some professorship in the University. In 1771, he was appointed Librarian; and on the death of his father, in 1778, he had the support of many learned men and friends of the college for the chair of mathematicks and natural philosophy. But he was not chosen. His manners were peculiar and eccentric, and not the most conciliating. He was very independent in his sentiments; and by some was considered obstinate and conceited. There was, also, at this time, an apprehension of his becoming addicted to intemperance, which probably operated to prevent his election. It may be thought that friendship would dictate the concealment of such a charge. But it will not be discreditable to Judge Winthrop, we believe, to have mentioned this temporary defect of character, when it is stated, as it may be with the strictest truth, that his good resolutions were stronger than his passions; and that for the last thirty years of his life, he was perfectly correct and temperate in all his habits.

At the time of our political controversy with Great Britain, he was in all the vigour and ardour of youth; and he early discovered an interest and a decision, in relation to the dispute, which justly entitle him to the high honour of a firm and zealous patriot. In this respect, as well as in his literary taste and pursuits, he followed the steps of his respected and venerable father. In 1775, he was appointed post master in Cambridge, which was considered a responsible office, as the American army was stationed in that place. His ardent and patriotick feelings induced him, on the morning of the memorable 17th of June, to join the detachment, which had taken possession of Breed's Hill in Charlestown, during the preceding night. He armed himself, and in company with Major James Swan, proceeded to Charlestown; and a part of the distance, they were accompanied by the brave



and patriotick WARREN, who fell in that memorable battle. Mr. Winthrop was at the redoubt, and at the temporary breastwork thrown up on the eastern side of the hill, and was among the last who left Charlestown, when the American troops were obliged to retreat. In descending the eminence towards the neck, he was struck by a musket ball. Though the wound was, fortunately, not mortal, the shock was so powerful as to throw him prostrate on the ground. The enemy did not pursue our troops; and he escaped, and returned to Cambridge.

Professor Winthrop was, soon after this time, made judge of probate for the county of Middlesex by the Provincial Congress, and his son was appointed his register. He remained in the office till his father's death, during the judgeship of O. Prescott, and also in the time of J. Prescott, until the year 1817, when he resigned. He was in this laborious and responsible station upwards of forty years, and discharged its various duties with ability, promptitude and fidelity.

In 1779, he accompanied Professor Sewall and several other learned gentlemen, to Penobscot, to make observations on the transit of the planet Venus over the sun's disc; which, in that meridian, was more fully to be seen than at Cambridge. When the unhappy insurrection took place in the interior of the state, in the year 1786, Mr. Winthrop attended General Lincoln, as a volunteer, and was among the most active in suppressing the riotous assemblies of the people, and in discountenancing the sentiments, by which many inconsiderate citizens were, at that time, actuated.

Mr. Winthrop continued in the office of librarian about twenty years; and although he was register of probate the greater part of the time, and several years, also, a judge of the Court of Pleas for Middlesex, he found leisure for much reading. He had also a very valuable library of his own. And for the last thirty years of his life, he was engaged, occasionally, and when publick duties permitted, in theological, mathematical and philological studies. With Christian theology he was particu-

larly conversant. He was a firm believer in the divine origin of the gospel, and made publick profession of it, as the only foundation of a hope of immortality. The Jewish history and ancient chronology were also very familiar to him: and the prophecies he studied with unusual interest and diligence. He published several essays on the subject, which discover great ingenuity and learning; although by some they have been considered more fanciful than solid and satisfactory. But it should be considered, that the subject of prophecies is necessarily involved in some difficulty and obscurity; and that the most learned men, who have attempted to explain them, have often exposed their own comparative ignorance and imbecility.

In his intercourse with others he was strictly just; and was ever ready, by his bounty, to assist the meritorious poor. He also possessed much of a publick spirit. The West Boston Bridge and the Middlesex Canal were forwarded by his early and active influence: and he was one of the founders of the Historical Society, whose labours are becoming more valuable in the estimation of an enlightened community, and by whose attention and industry many important publick documents have been rescued from oblivion. Judge Winthrop took a great interest in the objects of this association. He was one of the standing committee till his death, and was seldom absent from his place at the hour of meeting.

If we were to speak of his social qualities, we might justly add, that he was a pleasant, and generally an instructive companion. His conversation was most frequently on useful and literary topicks; and yet there was, sometimes, an appearance of trifling and levity in familiar discourse, which induced a stranger to form an opinion not sufficiently favourable to his learning and his worth. We have no hesitation, however, in ranking him among the most learned, useful and patriotick citizens of Massachusetts.

DOCTOR EDWARDS' OBSERVATIONS ON THE MOHEGAN  
LANGUAGES.*Advertisement to the present Edition.*

IT was the intention of the Historical Society to have published in the present volume of their Collections the copious *English and Indian Vocabulary of Josiah Cotton, Esquire*, mentioned in their last volume.\* At the time, however, when that was contemplated, it was not considered, that a large part of the present volume was to be reserved for a *General Index* to the ten volumes, which form the *Second Series* of the Collections; and this *Index*, together with several articles, which had been prepared for publication, would not allow sufficient room for the whole of the manuscript alluded to: It became necessary, therefore to defer the publication of that work for the present. But, as the attention of the learned, both at home and abroad, is now so much engaged in the subject of the Indian Languages, the Society have felt an unwillingness to intermit their co-operation in a department of learning, which has peculiar claims upon every American. They have, therefore, thought it would be useful to continue their intended series of *Indian Tracts*, at this time, by a republication of Dr. Edwards' *Observations on the Language of the Muhhekaneew Indians*. This short, but valuable tract, was originally printed in the year 1788, and was afterwards republished;† but it is again entirely out of print. The work has been for some time well known in Europe, where it has undoubtedly contributed to the diffusion of more just ideas, than once prevailed, respecting the structure of the Indian languages, and has served to correct some of the errors, into which learned men had been led by placing too im-

\* See the *Introductory Observations to Eliot's Indian Grammar in Hist. Collect.* vol. ix. p. 241, of the present series.

† See *Carey's American Museum*, vol. v. p. 22.



PLICIT confidence in the accounts of hasty travellers and blundering interpreters. In the *MITHRIDATES*, that immortal monument of philological research, Professor Vater refers to it for the information he has given upon the Mohegan language, and he has published large extracts from it.\* The work, indeed, has the highest claims to attention, from the unusually favourable circumstances, in which the author was placed for acquiring a thorough acquaintance with the language, as he has particularly stated in his *Preface*. To a perfect familiarity with this dialect (which, it seems, he began to learn at six years of age among the natives) he united a stock of grammatical and other learning, which well qualified him for the task of reducing an unwritten language to the rules of grammar. But, though he might have relied upon his own knowledge alone, yet so extremely solicitous was he to have the work entirely free from errors, that, lest his disuse of the language for some time might possibly have exposed him to mistakes, he took pains to consult an intelligent chief of the tribe, (who was acquainted with English as well as his native language) before he would commit the work to the press. Rarely indeed does it happen to any man to be so favourably circumstanced for the acquisition of exact knowledge on these subjects; and the present work may accordingly be regarded as a repository of information, upon which the reader can place reliance.

While the present edition of the *Observations* was preparing for the press, it occurred to the editor, that the learned author might possibly have made a revision of the work in his life time, and that his corrections might be in the possession of his descendants. Application was accordingly made, at the editor's request (by the Rev. Dr. Holmes, Corresponding Secretary of the Society) to J.W. Edwards, Esquire, of Hartford, a son of the author, for the purpose of obtaining the use of a revised copy, if any such existed. It will be seen, however, by the following

\* *Mithridates*, vol. iii. part 3, p. 394, note. These extracts appear to have been made from the copy in *Carey's Amer. Museum*, in which some slight typographical errors are to be found.

extract from the reply of Mr. Edwards, that no entire revision of the work was ever made, with a view to republication, but only a few errors of the press corrected :

“The original manuscript of my father’s *Observations on the Muhhekaneew Language* is not found among his papers.....The original impression was taken under my father’s immediate inspection, and is therefore probably pretty free from errors of the press. A copy, now in possession of Dr. Chapin, is corrected *in my father’s handwriting* ; in this, only three typographical errors are noticed. They are the following :

1. “On the 11th page, line 15 from top, the word *pehtunquissou* is corrected to read *pehtuhquissou* (the *n* should be *h*.)
2. “On the 16th page, line 3 from top, the two last syllables in the last Indian word should be *wukon* (the original letter is erased and the letter *u* inserted.)
3. “On the 17th page, line 19th from top, instead of ‘*the* third person,’ read ‘*a* third person’.....

“The essay was never revised or corrected by the author, as I have reason to believe, with any view to its improvement or future publication. A few facts, tending to show my father’s acquaintance with the Indian language and his means and advantages of acquiring it, are stated in a preface to the *Observations*. To these I do not know that I could add any thing.”

The editor has only to add, that he has thought it might be useful, in the present state of these studies among us, to add a few Notes to Dr. Edwards’ work, with a view to confirm some parts of it by observations made since his time, and in different parts of the continent ; and with the further view of showing the great extent of the *Delaware language* (several dialects of which are enumerated in the first page of the work) the editor has subjoined a *Comparative Vocabulary*, containing specimens of some of those dialects. In comparing the words there given, it may not be unnecessary for the

reader to be apprised, that, as they are taken from writers and other persons of different European nations, it will be necessary to give the letters the same powers which they have in the languages of those different nations. The very same dialect, as written by a German, a Frenchman and an Englishman, often appears like so many different languages; and in making an extensive comparison of the Indian dialects, the want of a *common orthography* is severely felt by the student. It is to be hoped, however, that, with the co-operation of European scholars, we shall be able to remedy this inconvenience.

JOHN PICKERING.

Salem, Massachusetts, }  
May 15, 1822. }

OBSERVATIONS ON THE LANGUAGE OF THE MUHHEKANEW  
INDIANS;

*In which the Extent of that Language in North America is shewn; its Genius is grammatically traced; some of its Peculiarities, and some Instances of Analogy between that and the Hebrew are pointed out.*

*Communicated to the Connecticut Society of Arts and Sciences, and published at the Request of the Society.*

*By JONATHAN EDWARDS, D. D. Pastor of a Church in New Haven, and Member of the Connecticut Society of Arts and Sciences.*

NEW HAVEN, Printed by Josiah Meigs, M,DCC,LXXXVIII.

3

*Preface.*

THAT the following observations may obtain credit, it may be proper to inform the reader, with what advantages they have been made.

When I was but six years of age, my father removed with his family to *Stockbridge*, which, at that time, was inhabited by Indians almost solely; as there were in the town but twelve families of whites or Anglo-Americans,



and perhaps one hundred and fifty families of Indians. The Indians being the nearest neighbours, I constantly associated with them; their boys were my daily school-mates and play-fellows. Out of my father's house, I seldom heard any language spoken, beside the Indian. By these means I acquired the knowledge of that language, and a great facility in speaking it. It became more familiar to me than my mother tongue. I knew the names of some things in Indian, which I did not know in English; even all my thoughts ran in Indian: and though the true pronunciation of the language is extremely difficult to all but themselves, they acknowledged, that I had acquired it perfectly; which, as they said, never had been acquired before by any Anglo-American. On account of this acquisition, as well as on account of my skill in their language in general, I received from them many compliments applauding my superiour wisdom. This skill in their language I have in a good measure retained to this day.

After I had drawn up these observations, lest there should be some mistakes in them, I carried them to Stockbridge, and read them to Capt. *Yôghum*, a principal Indian of the tribe, who is well versed in his own language, and tolerably informed concerning the English: and I availed myself of his remarks and corrections.

From these facts, the reader will form his own opinion of the truth and accuracy of what is now offered him.

When I was in my tenth year, my father sent me among the six nations, with a design that I should learn their language, and thus become qualified to be a missionary among them. But on account of the war with France, which then existed, I continued among them but about six months. Therefore the knowledge which I acquired of that language was but imperfect; and at this time I retain so little of it, that I will not hazard any particular critical remarks on it. I may observe, however, that though the words of the two languages are totally different, yet their structure is in some respects analogous, particularly in the use of prefixes and suffixes.

5

*Observations, &c.*

THE language which is now the subject of observation, is that of the *Muhhekaneew* or Stockbridge Indians. They, as well as the tribe at New London, are by the Anglo-Americans, called *Mohegans*, which is a corruption of *Muhhekaneew*,\* in the singular, or *Muhhekaneok*, in the plural. This language is spoken by all the Indians throughout New England. Every tribe, as that of Stockbridge, that of Farmington, that of New London, &c. has a different dialect; but the language is radically the same. Mr. Elliot's translation of the Bible is in a particular dialect of this language. The dialect followed in these observations, is that of Stockbridge. This language appears to be much more extensive than any other language in North America. The languages of the Delawares in Pennsylvania, of the Penobscots bordering on Nova Scotia, of the Indians of St. Francis in Canada, of the Shawanese on the Ohio, and of the Chippewaus at the westward of Lake Huron, are all radically the same with the Mohegan. The same is said concerning the languages of the Ottowaus, Nanticooks, Munsees, Menomonees, Messisaugas, Saukies, Ottawaumies, Killistinoes, Nipegons, Algonkins, Winnebagoes, &c.† That the languages of the several tribes in New England, of the Delawares, and of Mr. Elliot's Bible, are radically the same with the Mohegan, I assert from my own knowledge. What I assert concern-

6

ing the language of the Penobscots, I have from a gentleman in Massachusetts, who has been much conversant among the Indians. That the language of the Shawanese and Chippewaus is radically the same with the Mohegan, I shall endeavour to shew. My authorities for what I say of the languages of the other nations are Capt. *Yoghum*, before-mentioned, and *Carver's Travels*.

\* Wherever *w* occurs in an Indian word, it is a mere consonant, as in *work*, *world*, &c.

† [See a Comparative Vocabulary of several of these languages, at the end of the *Notes* to the present edition. EDIT.]

To illustrate the analogy between the *Mohegan*, the *Shawanee*, and the *Chippewau* languages, I shall exhibit a short list of words of those three languages. For the list of *Mohegan* words, I myself am accountable. That of the *Shawanee* words was communicated to me by General *Parsons*, who has had opportunity to make a partial vocabulary of that language. For the words of the *Chippewau* language I am dependent on *Carver's Travels*.

<i>English.</i>	<i>Mohegan.</i>	<i>Shawanee.</i>	
A bear	Mquoh	Mauquah	
A beaver	Amisque.*	Amaquah	
Eye	Hkeesque	Skeesacoo	
Ear	Towohque	Towacah	
Fetch	Pautoh	Peatoloo	
My Grandfather	Nemoghhome†	Nemasompethau	
My Grandmother	Nohhum	Nocumthau	
My Grandchild	Naughees	Noosthethau	
He goes	Pumissoo	Pomthalo	
A girl	Peesquausoo	Squauthauthau	
House	Weekumuhm‡	Weecuah	
He (that man)	Uwoh	Welah	
His head	Weensis	Weeseh (I imagine mispelt, for weenseh.)	
His heart	Utoh	Otabeh	7
Hair	Weghaukun	Welathoh	
Her husband	Waughecheh	Wasecheh	
His teeth	Wepeeton	Wepeetalee	
I thank you	Wneeweh	Neauweh	
My uncle	Nsees	Neeseethau	
I	Neah	Nelah	
Thou	Keah	Kelah	
We	Neaunuh	Nelauweh	
Ye	Keauwuh	Kelauweh	
Water	Nbey	Nippee	
Elder sister	Nmees	Nemeethau	
River	Sepoo	Thepee	

\* e final is never sounded in any Indian word, which I write, except monosyllables.

† gh in any Indian word has the strong guttural sound, which is given by the Scots to the same letters in the words *tough*, *enough*, &c.

‡ [Qu. Weekuwuh? EDIT.]



The following is a specimen of analogy between the Mohegan and Chippewau languages.

<i>English.</i>	<i>Mohegan.</i>	<i>Chippewau.</i>
A bear	Mquoh	Mackwah
A beaver	Amisque	Amik
To die (I die)	Nip	Nip
Dead (he is dead.)	Nboo, or nepoo*	Neepoo
Devil	{ Mtandou, or Man- nito† }	{ Manitou
Dress the kettle } (make a fire) }	Pootouwah	Poutwah
His eyes	Ukeesquan	Wiskinkhie
Fire	Stauw	Scutta
Give it him	Meenuh	Millaw
A spirit (a spectre)	Mannito	Manitou
How	Tuneh‡	Tawnè
8 House	Weekurnuhm	Wigwaum
An impostor (he is an impostor or bad man) }	{ Mtissoo	Mawlawtissie
Go	Pumisseh	Pimmoussie
Marry	Weeween	Weewin
Good for nought	Mtit	Malatat
River	Sepoo	Sippim
Shoe	Mkissin	Maukissin
The sun	Keesogh	Kissis
Sit down	Mattipelh	Mintipin
Water	Nbey	Nebbi
Where	Tedah	Tah
Winter	Hpoon	Pepoun
Wood	Metooque	Mittie

Almost every man, who writes Indian words, spells them in a peculiar manner : and I dare say, if the same person had taken down all the words above, from the mouths of the Indians, he would have spelt them more

\* The first syllable scarcely sounded.

† The last of these words properly signifies a spectre, or any thing frightful.

‡ Wherever *u* occurs, it has not the long sound of the English *u* as in *commune*; but the sound of *u* in *uncle*, though much protracted. The other vowels are to be pronounced as in English.

|| [*Qu. Weekuzuhm?* EDIT.]

alike, and the coincidence would have appeared more striking. Most of those, who write and print Indian words, use the letter *a* where the sound is that of *oh* or *au*. Hence the reader will observe, that in some of the Mohegan words above, *o* or *oh* is used, when *a* or *ah* is used in the correspondent words of the other languages ; as *Mquoh*, *Mauquah*. I doubt not the sound of those two syllables is exactly the same, as pronounced by the Indians of the different tribes.

It is not to be supposed, that the like coincidence is extended to all the words of those languages. Very many words are totally different. Still the analogy is such as is sufficient to show, that they are mere dialects of the same original language.

I could not, throughout, give words of the same signification in the three languages, as the two vocabu- 9  
laries from which I extracted the *Shawanee* and *Chippewau* words, did not contain words of the same signification, excepting in some instances.

The Mohauk, which is the language of the Six Nations, is entirely different from that of the Mohegans. There is no more appearance of a derivation of one of these last mentioned languages from the other, than there is of a derivation of either of them from the English. One obvious diversity, and in which the Mohauk is perhaps different from every other language, is, that it is wholly destitute of labials ; whereas the Mohegan abounds with labials. I shall here give the numerals, as far as ten, and the *Pater Noster*, in both languages.

*Mohegan.*

Ngwittoh  
Neesoh  
Noghoh  
Nauwoh  
Nunon  
Ngwittus  
Tupouwus  
Ghusooh  
Nauneeweh  
Mtannit

*Mohauk.*

Uskot  
Teggeneh  
Ohs  
Kialeh  
Wisk  
Yoiyok  
Chautok  
Sottago  
Teuhtoh  
Wialeh

The Pater Noster, in the Mohegan language, is as follows :

Noghnuh, ne spummuck oieon, taugh mauweh wneh wtukoseauk neanne annuwoieon. Taugh ne aunchuwutammum wawehtuseek maweh noh pummeh. Ne annoihitteech mauweh awauneek noh hkey oiecheek, ne aunchuwutammun, ne aunoihitteet neek spummuk oiecheek. Menenaunuh noonooch wuhkamauk tquogh nuh uhhuuyutamauk ngummauweh. Ohquutamouwenauunuh auneh mumachioeaukeh, ne anneh ohquutamouwoieauk numpeh neek mumacheh annehoquaukeek. Cheen hquukquaucheh siukeh annehenaunuh. Panneeweh htouwenaunuh neen maumtehkeh. Keah ngwehcheh  
 10 kwiouwauweh mauweh noh pummeh; ktanwoi; estah awaun wtinnoiyuwun ne aunoieyon; hanweeweh ne ktinnoieen. Amen.

The Pater Noster, in the language of the Six Nations, taken from Smith's History of New York, is this :

Soungwauneha caurounkyawga tehseetaroan sauhson-eyousta esa sawaneyou okettauhsela ehneauwoung na caurounkyawga nughwonshauga neatewehnesalauga taugwaunautoronoantoughsick toantaugweleewheyoutaung cheneeyeut chaquataulehwheyoustaunna toughsou taugwaussareneh tawautottenaugaloughtoungga nasawne sacheautaugwass coantehsalohaunzaickaw esa sawaneyou esa sashoutzta esa soungwasoung chenneauhaungwa; auwen.\*

The reader will observe, that there is not a single labial either in the numerals or Pater Noster of this language; and that when they come to *amen*, from an aversion to shutting the lips, they change the *m* to *w*.†

In no part of these languages does there appear to be a greater coincidence, than in this specimen. I have never noticed one word in either of them, which has any analogy to the correspondent word in the other language.

Concerning the Mohegan language, it is observable, that there is no diversity of gender, either in nouns or pronouns. The very same words express *he* and *she*,

\* [See Note 1. EDIT.]

† [See Note 2. EDIT.]



*him* and *her*.\* Hence, when the Mohegans speak English, they generally in this respect follow strictly their own idiom: A man will say concerning his wife, *he sick, he gone away, &c.*

With regard to *cases*, they have but one variation from the nominative, which is formed by the addition of the syllable *an*; as *wnechun*, his child, *wnechunan*. This varied case seems to suit indifferently any case, except the nominative.†

The plural is formed by adding a letter or syllable to the singular; as *nemannauw*, a man, *nemannauk*, men: *penumpausoo*, a boy, *penumpausoouk*, boys.‡

The Mohegans more carefully distinguish the natural relations of men to each other, than we do, or perhaps any other nation. They have one word to express an elder brother, *netohcon*; another to express a younger brother, *ngheesum*. One to express an elder sister, *nmase*; another to express a younger sister, *ngheesum*. But the word for younger brother and younger sister is the same,—*Nsase* is my uncle by my mother's side: *nuchehque* is my uncle by the father's side.

The Mohegans have no adjectives in all their language; unless we reckon numerals and such words as *all*, *many*, &c. adjectives.|| Of adjectives which express the qualities of substances, I do not find that they have any. They express those qualities by verbs neuter; as *wnissoo*, he is beautiful; *mtissoo*, he is homely; *pehtuhquissoo*, he is tall; *nsconmoo*, he is malicious, &c. Thus in Latin many qualities are expressed by verbs neuter, as *valeo*, *caleo*, *frigeo*, &c.—Although it may at first seem not only singular and curious, but impossible, that a language should exist without adjectives; yet it is an indubitable fact. Nor do they seem to suffer any inconvenience by it. They as readily express any quality by a neuter verb, as we do by an adjective.

If it should be inquired, how it appears that the words above mentioned are not adjectives; I answer it appears,

\* [See Note 3. EDIT.]

† [See Note 4. EDIT.]

‡ [See Note 5. EDIT.]

|| [See Note 7. EDIT.]

as they have all the same variations and declensions of other verbs. *To walk* will be acknowledged to be a verb. This verb is declined thus; npumseh, I walk; kpumseh, thou walkest; pumissoo, he walketh; npumsehnuh, we walk; kpumsehmuh, ye walk; pumissoouk, they walk. In the same manner are the words in question declined; npehtuhquisseh, I am tall; kpehtuhquisseh, thou art tall; pehtuhquissoo, he is tall; npehtuhquissehnuh, we are tall; kpehtuhquissehmuh, ye are tall; pehtuhquissoouk, they are tall.

Though the Mohegans have no proper adjectives, 12 they have participles to all their verbs: as pehtuhquisseet, the man who is tall: paumseet, the man who walks; waunseet, the man who is beautiful; oieet, the man who lives or dwells in a place; oioeteet, the man who fights. So in the plural, pehtuhquisseechek, the tall men; paumseecheek, they who walk, &c.

It is observable of the participles of this language, that they are declined through the persons and numbers, in the same manner as verbs: thus, paumse-uh, I walking; paumse-an, thou walking; paumseet, he walking; paumseauk, we walking; paumseauque, ye walking; paumseecheek, they walking.

They have no relative corresponding to our *who* or *which*. Instead of *the man who walks*, they say, the walking man, or the walker.\*

As they have no adjectives, of course they have no comparison of adjectives;† yet they are put to no difficulty to express the comparative excellence or baseness of any two things. With a neuter verb expressive of the quality, they use an adverb to point out the degree: as annuweeweh wnisssoo, he is more beautiful; kahnuh wnisssoo, he is very beautiful. Nemannauwoo, he is a man: annuweeweh nemannauwoo, he is a man of superior excellence or courage; kahnuh nemannauwoo, he is a man of extraordinary excellence or courage.

Beside the pronouns common in other languages, they express the pronouns, both substantive and adjective, by

\* [See Note 6. EDIT.]

† [See Note 7. EDIT.]

*affixes*, or by letters or syllables added at the beginnings, or ends, or both, of their nouns. In this particular the structure of the language coincides with that of the Hebrew, in an instance in which the Hebrew differs from all the languages of Europe, ancient or modern. However, the use of the affixed pronouns in the Mohegan language is not perfectly similar to the use of them in the Hebrew: as in the Hebrew they are joined to the ends of words only, but in the Mohegan, they are sometimes joined to the ends, sometimes to the beginnings, and sometimes to both. Thus, *tmohhecan* is a hatchet or axe; *ndumhecan* is my hatchet; *ktumhecan*, thy hatchet; *utumhecan*, his hatchet; *ndumhecannuh*, 13 our hatchet; *ktumhecannoowuh* your hatchet; *utumhecannoowuh*, their hatchet. It is observable, that the pronouns for the singular number are prefixed, and for the plural, the prefixed pronouns for the singular being retained, there are others added as suffixes.

It is further to be observed, that by the increase of the word, the vowels are changed and transposed; as *tmohecan*, *ndumhecan*; the *o* is changed into *u* and transposed, in a manner analogous to what is often done in the Hebrew. The *t* is changed into *d*, *euphoniæ gratia*.

A considerable part of the appellatives are never used without a pronoun affixed. The Mohegans can say, my father, *nogh*, thy father, *kogh*, &c. &c. but they cannot say absolutely *father*. There is no such word in all their language. If you were to say *ogh*, which the word would be, if stripped of all affixes, you would make a Mohegan both stare and smile. The same observation is applicable to *mother*, *brother*, *sister*, *son*, *head*, *hand*, *foot*, &c.; in short to those things in general which necessarily in their natural state belong to some person. A hatchet is sometimes found without an owner, and therefore they sometimes have occasion to speak of it absolutely, or without referring it to an owner. But as a *head*, *hand*, &c. naturally belong to some person, and they have no occasion to speak of them without referring to the person to whom they belong; so they have no words to express them absolutely. This I presume is a



peculiarity in which this language differs from all languages, which have ever yet come to the knowledge of the learned world.\*

The pronouns are in like manner prefixed and suffixed to verbs. The Mohegans never use a verb in the infinitive mood, or without a nominative or agent; and never use a verb transitive without expressing both the agent and the object, correspondent to the nominative and accusative cases in Latin. Thus they can neither say, *to love*, nor *I love*, *thou givest*, &c. But they can say, *I love thee*, *thou givest him*, &c. viz. *Nduhwhunuw*, I love him or her; *nduhwhuntammin*, I love it; *ktuhwhunin*, I love thee; *ktuhwhunoohmuh*, I love you, (in the plural) *nduhwhununk*, I love them. This I think, is another peculiarity of this language.

Another peculiarity is, that the nominative and accusative pronouns prefixed and suffixed, are always used, even though other nominatives and accusatives be expressed. Thus they cannot say, *John loves Peter*; they always say, *John he loves him Peter*; *John uduhwhunuw Peteran*. Hence, when the Indians begin to talk English, they universally express themselves according to this idiom.

It is further observable, that the pronoun in the accusative case is sometimes in the same instance expressed by both a prefix and a suffix; as *kthuhwhunin*, I love thee. The *k* prefixed, and the syllable *in*, suffixed, both unite to express, and are both necessary to express the accusative case *thee*.

They have no verb substantive in all the language.† Therefore they cannot say, *he is a man*, *he is a coward*, &c. They express the same by one word, which is a verb neuter, viz. *nemannauwoo*, he is a man. *Nemannauw* is the noun substantive, *man*: that turned into a verb neuter of the third person singular, becomes *nemannauwoo*, as in Latin it is said, *græcor*, *græcatur*, &c. Thus they turn any substantive whatever into a verb neuter:‡ as *kmattannissauteuh*, you are a coward, from

\* [See Note 8. EDIT.]

† [See Note 9. EDIT.]

‡ [See Note 10. EDIT.]

*matansautee*, a coward: *kpeesquausooeh*, you are a girl, from *peesquausoo*, a girl.\*

Hence also we see the *reason*, why they have no verb substantive. As they have no adjectives, and as they turn their substantives into verbs on any occasion; they have no use for the substantive or auxiliary verb.

The third person singular seems to be the radix, 15 or most simple form of the several persons of their verbs in the indicative mood: but the second person singular of the imperative seems to be the most simple of any of the forms of their verbs; as *meetseh*, eat thou: *meetsoo*, he eateth: *nmeetseh*, I eat: *kmeetseh*, thou eatest, &c.

They have a past and future tense to their verbs; but often, if not generally, they use the form of the present tense, to express both past and future events: as *wnuk-uwoh ndiotuwohpoh*, yesterday I fought; or *wnukuwoh ndiotuwoh*, yesterday I fight: *ndiotuwauch wupkoh*, I shall fight to-morrow; or *wupkauch ndiotuwoh*, to-morrow I fight. In this last case the variation of *wupkoh* to *wupkauch* denotes the future tense; and this variation is in the word *to-morrow*, not in the verb *fight*.†

They have very few prepositions, and those are rarely used, but in composition. *Anneh* is to, *ocheh* is from. But to, from, &c. are almost always expressed by an alteration of the verb. Thus *ndoghpeh* is I ride, and *Wnoghquetookoke* is Stockbridge. But if I would say in Indian, *I ride to Stockbridge*, I must say, not *anneh Wnoghquetookoke ndoghpeh*, but *Wnoghquetookoke ndinnetoghpeh*. If I would say, *I ride from Stockbridge*, it must be, not *ocheh Wnoghquetookoke ndoghpeh*, but *Wnoghquetookoke nochetoghpeh*. Thus *ndinnuoghoh* is, I walk to a place: *notoghogh*, I walk from a place: *ndinnehnuh*, I run to a place: *nochehnuh*, I run from a place. And any verb may be compounded, with the prepositions *anneh* and *ocheh*, to and from.

\* The circumstance that they have no verb substantive, accounts for their not using that verb, when they speak English. They say, *I man*, *I sick*, &c.

† [See Note 11. Editr.]

It has been said, that savages have no parts of speech beside the substantive and the verb. This is not true concerning the Mohegans, nor concerning any other tribe of Indians, of whose language I have any knowledge. The Mohegans have all the eight parts of speech, to be found in other languages; though prepositions are so rarely used, except in composition, that I once determined that part of speech to be wanting. It has been  
 16 said, also, that savages never abstract, and have no abstract terms, which, with regard to the Mohegans, is another mistake. They have *uhwundowukon*, love; *seekeenundowukon*, hatred; *nsconmowukon*, malice; *peyuh-tommauwukon*, religion, &c. I doubt not but that there is in this language the full proportion of abstract to concrete terms, which is commonly to be found in other languages.\*

Besides what has been observed concerning prefixes and suffixes, there is a remarkable analogy between some words in the Mohegan language and the correspondent words in the Hebrew.—In Mohegan *Neah* is I; the Hebrew of which is *Ani*. *Keah* is thou or thee: the Hebrews use *ka* the suffix. *Uwoh* is this man, or this thing; very analogous to the Hebrew *hu* or *hua*, ipse. *Neaunuh* is we: in the Hebrew *nachnu* and *anachnu*.

In Hebrew *ni* is the suffix for *me*, or the first person. In the Mohegan *n* or *ne* is prefixed to denote the first person: as *nmeetseh* or *nemeetseh*, I eat. In Hebrew *k* or *ka* is the suffix for the second person, and is indifferently either a pronoun substantive or adjective. *K* or *ka* has the same use in the Mohegan language: as *kmeetseh* or *kameetseh*, thou eatest; *knisk*, thy hand. In Hebrew the *vau*, the letter *u* and *hu* are the suffixes for he or him. In Mohegan the same is expressed by *u* or *uw*, and by *oo*: as *nduhchunuw*, I love him, *pumissoo*, he walketh. The suffix to express *our* or *us* in Hebrew is *nu*; in Mohegan the suffix of the same signification is *nuh*; as *nognuh*, our father; *nmeetsehnuh*, we eat, &c.†

\* [See Note 12. EDIT.]

† [See Note 13. EDIT.]



How far the use of prefixes and suffixes, together with these instances of analogy, and perhaps other instances, which may be traced out by those who have more leisure, go towards proving, that the North American Indians are of Hebrew, or at least Asiatick extraction, is submitted to the judgment of the learned. The facts are demonstrable; concerning the proper inferences every one will judge for himself. In the modern Armenian language, the pronouns are affixed.\* How far affixes are in use among the other modern Asiaticks, I have not had opportunity to obtain information. It is to be desired, that those who are informed, would communicate to the public what information they may possess, relating to this matter. Perhaps by such communication, and by a comparison of the languages of the North American Indians with the languages of Asia, it may appear not only from what quarter of the world, but from what particular nations, these Indians are derived.

It is to be wished, that every one who makes a vocabulary of any Indian language, would be careful to notice the prefixes and suffixes, and to distinguish accordingly. One man may ask an Indian, what he calls *hand* in his language, holding out his own hand to him. The Indian will naturally answer *knisk*, i. e. *thy* hand. Another man will ask the same question, pointing to the Indian's hand. In this case, he will as naturally answer *nnisk*, *my* hand. Another may ask the same question, pointing to the hand of a third person. In this case, the answer will naturally be *unisk*, *his* hand. This would make a very considerable diversity in the corresponding words of different vocabularies; when if due attention were rendered to the personal prefixes and suffixes, the words would be the very same, or much more similar.

The like attention to the moods and personal affixes of the verbs is necessary.† If you ask an Indian how he expresses in his language, to *go* or *walk*, and to illustrate your meaning, point to a person who is walking; he

\* Vide Schroderi thesaurum Linguae Armenicæ.

(† See Note 14. EDIT.)

will tell you *pumissoo*, he walks. If, to make him understand, you walk yourself, his answer will be *kpumseh*, thou walkest. If you illustrate your meaning by pointing to the walk of the Indian, the answer will be *npumseh*, I walk. If he take you to mean *go* or *walk*, in the imperative mood, he will answer *pumisseh*, walk thou.

---

NOTES BY THE EDITOR.

IN the *Introductory Observations* prefixed to *Eliot's Grammar of the Massachusetts Indian Language* (published in the preceding volume of these Collections) it was stated to be an observation of the early American writers, that there was but one principal Indian language throughout all New England, and even in territories beyond it ; and that, this observation was in accordance with the opinions of the later writers, who had taken a more extended view of the various dialects than was practicable at the first settlement of the country. In the same place the reader was referred to the opinions of the Rev. Dr. *Edwards* and the Rev. Mr. *Heckewelder* ; both of whom, it was observed, agreed in the fact as stated by the old writers, and only differed from one another in this circumstance, that each of them considered the particular dialect, with which he happened to be most familiar, as the principal or standard language, and the rest as branches, or dialects, of it. Dr. *Edwards*, therefore, as the reader will have already seen in the present work, speaks of the *Mohegan* as the principal or fundamental language, which "is spoken by all the Indians of New England ;" while Mr. *Heckewelder*, on the other hand, considers the *Delaware* (more properly called the *Lenni Lenape*) as the common stock of the same dialects ; observing, that "this is the most widely extended language of any of those, that are spoken on this side of the Mississippi. It prevails (he adds) in the extensive regions of Canada, from the coast of Labrador to the mouth of Albany River, which falls into the furthestmost part of Hudson's Bay, and from thence to the Lake of the Woods, which forms the north-western boundary of the United States. It appears to be the language of all the Indians of that extensive country, except those of the Iroquois stock, which are by far the least numerous." \*

\* Transactions of the Historical and Literary Committee, &c. p. 106.

Although the high authority, on which we have these opinions, will hardly be thought to need any support, yet the Editor has thought it would be satisfactory to many readers, to see *specimens* of the dialects themselves; and he has accordingly annexed a short *Comparative Vocabulary*\* of several, which are only mentioned by name in Dr. Edwards' work as belonging to the common stock, of which he speaks. Authentick specimens of these dialects could not easily be obtained at the period when Dr. Edwards wrote; and at the present time some of them, perhaps, are only to be found in the extensive collection of Mr. *Du Ponceau*, to whose ardour in the cause of learning our country is so much indebted for its literary character abroad as well as at home. These specimens, while they afford ample proof of the justness of Dr. Edwards and Mr. Heckewelder's opinions on this point, will not be without use in some other respects. The Editor has thought it proper to confine himself to the short list of English words given by Dr. Edwards (pp. 6 and 7) as far as the corresponding Indian words could be found in those vocabularies, to which he had access. The List might have been much enlarged; but, short as it is, it will be found sufficient for the present purpose. In this comparative view of the several dialects, the reader will, undoubtedly, be much surprised to discover the remarkable fact, that even the very distant tribes, known to us by the name of *Cree* or *Knisteneaux* Indians (sometimes called Killistenoës) whose territories lie towards the *Pacifick* Ocean, nearly as far as the Rocky Mountains, speak a kindred dialect with the tribes on the coasts of the *Atlantick*.

In addition to this comparative Vocabulary, the Editor has thought it might be gratifying to most readers, to see some comparisons of the *grammatical structure* of the American languages; and he has, therefore, added some remarks on that subject also. But these remarks, though not limited to the *Northern* dialects alone, are necessarily confined to a very few particulars.

---

#### NOTE 1.

*On the evidence of affinity or diversity of dialect, to be derived from specimens of the Indian Numerals, and translations of the Pater Noster.*

P. 10. Dr. EDWARDS here makes a comparison of the *Pater Noster* and the *Numerals* in Mohegan and Mohawk, for the pur-

\* See the end of these Notes.



pose of giving his reader some general idea of the difference between those two languages. But these specimens alone were, probably, not intended as conclusive evidence on this point; for he goes on to state, from his own knowledge, that “in *no part* of these languages does there appear to be a greater coincidence than in this specimen.” Persons who are as familiarly acquainted with any one of the Indian dialects, as Dr. Edwards was, and who have observed the manner in which translations are made into them, will not hastily draw a general inference, respecting their similarity or dissimilarity, from such specimens alone. But the student, who is just entering upon these inquiries, should attend to the following cautions of Mr. Du Ponceau and Mr. Heckewelder.

In respect to the translations of the *Pater Noster*, the former of those writers observes: “Notwithstanding the strong affinity, which exists between the Massachusetts and these various languages of the Algonkin or Lenape class, is too clear and too easy of proof to be seriously controverted, yet it is certain, that a superficial observer might with great plausibility deny it altogether. He would only have to compare the translation of the Lord’s Prayer into the Massachusetts, as given by Eliot in his Bible, Mat. vi. 9, and Luke xi. 2, with that of Heckewelder into the Delaware from Matthew, in the Historical Transactions, vol i. page 439, where *he would not find two words in these two languages bearing the least affinity to each other*. But this does not arise so much from the difference of the idioms, as from their richness, which afforded to the translators multitudes of words and modes of expressing the same ideas, from which to make a choice; and they happened not to hit upon the same forms of expression.” Mr. Du Ponceau then further observes, that “even Eliot’s own translations of the Lord’s Prayer, as given in Matthew and Luke, differ more from each other than the variations of the text require.” *Notes on Eliot’s Indian Grammar*, p. vii.

“On the subject of the *Numerals* (says Mr. Heckewelder) I have had occasion to observe, that they sometimes *differ very much* in languages derived from the same stock. Even the *Minsi*,\* a tribe of the Lenape or Delaware nation, have not all their numerals like those of the *Unami* tribe, which is the principal among them. I shall give you an opportunity of comparing them:

\* Called by Edwards (p. 5) the *Munsees*. EDIT.

*Numerals of the Minsi*

- 1 Gutti
- 2 Nischa
- 3 Nacha
- 4 Newa
- 5 *Nalan* (*Algonk. narau*)
- 6 Guttasch
- 7 *Nischoasch* (*Algonk. nissouassou*)
- 8 Chaasch
- 9 *Nolewi*
- 10 *Wimbat*

*Numerals of the Unami.*

- 1 N'gutti
- 2 Nischa
- 3 Nacha
- 4 Newo
- 5 Palenach
- 6 Guttasch
- 7 Nischasch
- 8 Chasch
- 9 *Peschkonk*
- 10 *Tellen.*

“You will easily observe, that the numbers *five* and *ten* in the Minsi dialect resemble more the Algonkin, as given by La Hontan, than the pure Delaware. I cannot give you the reason of this difference. To this you will add the numerous errors committed by those who attempt to write down the words of the Indian languages, and who either in their own have not alphabetical signs adequate to the true expression of the sounds, or want an *Indian ear* to distinguish them. I could write a volume on the subject of their ridiculous mistakes.” *Correspondence with Mr. Du Ponceau, in Historical Transactions*, vol. i. p. 381.

As an example of the effect of the difference in orthography, to which Mr. Heckewelder here alludes, the Editor subjoins the *Mohawk* numerals, as given by Edwards, and as they are written in the “Primer for the use of the Mohawk Children,” published in 1786; in which last, however, it should be observed, that it is designed to give the *foreign* sounds to the vowels:

*From the Mohawk Primer.*

- 1 Uskat
- 2 Tekeny
- 3 Aghsea
- 4 Kayéry
- 5 Wisk
- 6 Yáyak
- 7 Tsyàdak
- 8 Sadégo
- 9 Tyoughtouh
- 10 Oyéry

*From Edwards.*

- 1 Uskot
- 2 Teggenneh
- 3 Ohs
- 4 Kialeh
- 5 Wisk
- 6 Yoiyok
- 7 Chautok
- 8 Sottago
- 9 Teuhtoh
- 10 Wialeh.

The *Pater Noster*, in the same Primer, is also very different in its orthography from the one originally published in *Smith's History of New York*, (afterwards published by *Edwards*, and

more recently in the *Mithridates*) and, as this *Primer* is now a rare book among us, and this copy of the prayer is not published in the *Mithridates*, the Editor has thought it might be useful to insert it in this place :

*From the Mohawk Primer.*

"Songwaniha ne Karonghyàge  
tighsideron, Wasaghseanadogegh-  
tine; Sayanert 'sera iewe; Tagh-  
serre eghniyàwan tsiniyought ka-  
ronghyàkouh oni Oghwhentsyage:  
Niyadewighneserage tacwanada-  
ranondaghsik nonwa; neoni  
tondacwarighwiyoughston, tsini-  
yought oni Tsyakwadaderighwi-  
youghsteani; neoni toghsa tac-  
waghsarinéght Tewadatdenake-  
raghtònke nesàne sadsyadac-  
waghs ne Kondighseròhease.  
Amen."\*

*From Edwards' Observations.*

Soungwauneha caurounkyawga  
tehseetaroan sauhsonyouta esa  
sawaneyou oketiauhsele ehneau-  
woung na caurounkyawga nugh-  
wonshauga neatewehnesalauga  
taugwaunautoronoantoughsick to-  
antaugweleewheyoutaung che-  
neeyeut chaquataulehweyou-  
staunna toughsou taugwaussare-  
neh tawautottenaugaloushtoungga  
nasawne sacheautaugwass coan-  
tehsalohaunzaickaw esa sawaune-  
you esa sashoutzta esa soungwa-  
soug chenueauhaungwa; auwen.

---

## NOTE 2.

### *The Labials.*

P. 10. Baron *La Hontan*, in speaking of the want of *labials* in the *Huron* language (which belongs to the same family with the *Mohawk*, mentioned by Edwards) relates the following fact, to show the extreme difficulty, which the Indians of that stock experience in learning the European languages, on account of the *labials*. The particular combinations of sounds, into which the Indians naturally fall, when attempting to speak those languages, may be of some use in the prosecution of these inquiries :

"The *Hurons* and the *Iroquois*, (says he) not having the *labials* in their languages, it is almost impossible for them to

\* The learned *Vater*, whose vigilance in these researches nothing can escape, refers to an edition of this *Mohawk Primer* of the year 1781, and the *Common Prayer*, in the same language, of the year 1769. See *Mithridates*, vol. iii. part 3, p. 313, *note*. The only editions, which have come under the Editor's notice are, the *Primer* of 1786, and the *Common Prayer* of 1787; both of which are in the library of Harvard University.



acquire the *French* language well. I have spent four days in making some Hurons pronounce the labials, but without success; and I do not believe, they would be able to pronounce these French words, *bon, fils, monsieur, Pontchartrain*, in ten years; for instead of saying *bon*, they would say *ouon*; for *fils* they would say *rils*; for *monsieur*, *caonsieur*, and for *Pontchartrain, Conchartrain*."

---

## NOTE 3.

*Genders.*

P. 10. "*It is observable that there is no diversity of gender, either in nouns or pronouns. The very same words express he and she, him and her.*"

So Eliot says of the *Massachusetts* dialect: "The variation of Nouns is not by *male* and *female*, as in other, learned languages, and in European nations they do;" but (as he observes afterwards) the nouns are classed under the two divisions of *animate* and *inanimate*, comprehending, respectively, the names of animate and inanimate things; under the latter of which, he says, are included the names of *all Vegetables*. See his *Gram.* pp. 9, 10. Eliot does not expressly state, as Edwards does, that the same word expresses *he* and *she*; but in his Grammar he does not give any distinct word for *she*, and in his Bible he uses the same term for *she* (namely *noh*) which in his Grammar is translated *he*. For examples, see the book of *Ruth*, i. 3; ii. 3, 13, &c. In other places the word *noh* seems to be equivalent to the demonstrative pronoun *this* or *that* or (what is the same thing) the article *the*: "Noh Moabitseh squa—it is the Moabitish damsel," &c. *Ruth* ii. 6.

Mr. Heckewelder, in speaking of the *Delaware* language, has the following remarks upon this point: "In the Indian languages, those discriminating words or inflexions, which we call *genders*, are not, as with us, in general intended to distinguish between male and female beings, but between *animate* and *inanimate* things or substances. Trees and plants (annual plants and grasses excepted) are included within the generick class of *animated* beings. Hence the personal pronoun has only two modes, if I can so express myself; one applicable to the animate, and the other to the inanimate gender; *nekama* is the personal pronominal form, which answers to *he* and *she* in Eng-

lish. If you wish to distinguish between the sexes, you must add to it the word *man* or *woman*. Thus, *nekama lenno* means *he* or *this man*; *hekama ochqueu*, *she* or *this woman*. This may appear strange to a person exclusively accustomed to our forms of speech; but I assure you the Indians have no difficulty in understanding each other." *Correspondence with Mr. Du Ponceau*, p. 368, Letter vii. The reader will observe here an apparent difference of opinion between Eliot and Mr. Heckewelder, in respect to the class of nouns, in which *vegetables* are ranked in these two dialects; the former calling "*all vegetables*" *inanimate*, and the latter ranking "*trees and plants* (annual plants and grasses excepted) in the class of *animated* beings." This apparent contradiction was alluded to in Mr. Du Ponceau's *Notes to Eliot's Grammar* (p. xiii.) as well as in the *Introductory Observations* to the same work. If there is, in reality, this difference between two kindred dialects, and in a peculiar characteristic of the Indian languages, the fact is a very remarkable one.

In the *Delaware* language (according to Mr. Zeisberger the male of *quadrupeds* "is expressed by *lennowechum*, which signifies *the male of beasts*, thus—*Lennowechum nenayunges*, *moccaneu*, *goschgosch*, the male of the horse, dog, hog; and of *fowls* and *birds*, by *lennowehelleu*, the male of fowls and birds..... The *females* of fowls and birds are called *ochquehhelleu*, and those of quadrupeds, *ochquechum*." *MS. Grammar*. See also the remarks of Mr. Heckewelder on this point, in the letter last cited; where he adds (in conformity with Mr. Zeisberger also) that "there are some animals, the *females* of which have a particular distinguishing name, as *nunschetto*, a doe; *nunscheach*, a she-bear."

---

#### NOTE 4.

##### *The Cases.*

P. 10. "*With regard to cases, they have but one variation from the nominative,*" &c.

Eliot also observes, that in the *Massachusetts* dialect, the nouns are not "varied by cases, cadencies and endings;" he, however, adds—"yet there seemeth to be one cadency or case of the first declination of the form *animate*, which endeth in *oh*, *uh* or *ah*, viz. when an *animate* noun followeth a verb transitive, whose object that he acteth upon is *without* himself." *Gram.* p. 8. But see Mr. Du. Ponceau's *Notes on Eliot's Gram.* p. xiv.

In the *Delaware*, Mr. Zeisberger observes, that there are “no declensions as we have in our language; but this makes no deficiency in theirs, as their place is sufficiently supplied by the inseparable pronouns and by verbs, which I call *personal*, or in the *personal mood*, because I do not know another name for them.” \* *MS. Grammar*.

In the *Mexican* language (says *Gilij*) “the noun has *no other* inflexion, than that which serves to distinguish the singular number from the plural, as in our language.” *Saggio di Storia Americana*, torn. iii. p. 229. The same writer observes, also, that “in *none* of the *Orinokese* languages are the nouns declined after the Greek and Latin manner; for they have only two terminations, for the singular and plural numbers, as in Italian.” *Ibid.* p. 162.

On the other hand, the *Quichuan* (or *Peruvian*) language is said to have, in addition to the six cases of the Latin, a *seventh* case, which is called by Father *Torres Rubio* the *effectivo* (the sign of which is *with*) denoting, sometimes the instrument with which an act is done, and sometimes the *concomitancy* of one act with another.†

---

## NOTE 5.

### *The Numbers.*

P. 10. “*The plural is formed by adding a letter or syllable to the singular,*” &c.

One of the most remarkable features of the American languages is, the variety and mode of using the *Numbers* of the nouns and pronouns. Some of them (the *Guaranese*, for example) have only a *singular* number, and are destitute of a distinct form for the *plural*.‡ Some, on the other hand, have not only the singular and plural, but a *dual* also, like the Greek and various other languages of the eastern continent; while a third

\* In the *South American* languages they are called, by the Spanish grammarians, *transitions*.

† *Arte y Vocabulario de la Lengua Quichua General de los Indios de el Peru.* Lima, 1754.

‡ In the *Guaranese* language (which is the common fashionable language of *Paraguay*) according to *Gilij*, “the plural number has no distinguishing mark from that which is called the singular. To designate a multitude, the *Guaranese* use either the word *hetà* (many) or the numerals themselves.” *Saggio di Storia Americana*, vol. iii. p. 251.



class of them has not only a singular, dual, and plural (that is the common unlimited plural of the European languages) but also an additional plural, which is denominated by some writers the *exclusive* plural, by others the *particular* plural, and by others the *limited* plural; but which, if it should prove to be peculiar to the languages of this continent, might very properly be called the *American* plural, as was suggested on a former occasion.\* For an explanation of this number in the *Delaware* and *Chippeway* languages, the reader is referred to the *Correspondence of Mr. Heckewelder with Mr. Du Ponceau* (Historical Transactions, vol. i. p. 429,) and to Mr. Du Ponceau's *Notes on Eliot's Grammar*, p. xix. To the remarks there made, the Editor will only add a few extracts from writers on the *South American* languages, to show the general resemblance of the languages in different parts of the continent.

*Gilij*, in his account of the languages of the *Orinoco* country, after mentioning the great simplicity of the nouns (which have no cases) makes the following observations upon the use of the nouns in composition with the pronouns of the different numbers:

"But, easy as the knowledge of the inflexions of the nouns is, when they are used by themselves and unconnected with a person, it is excessively difficult and perplexing to acquire the various and inconceivable inflexions of the contracted [or combined] nouns. I shall presently speak of the primitive pronouns, and the particles which distinguish them; but at present I shall speak of the inflexions of the nouns; and it is necessary to mention the numerous ones, which those nouns have, that I call *contracted*.

"Let us, then, take a noun which begins with a vowel; for example, the word *apòto*, a rule. As it stands here, indeed, it is an absolute and independent word; but in contracting (or combining) it with the particles of the possessive pronouns, it is declined, if I may so speak, in the following manner:

Japotòi . . . . .	my rule.†
Avapotòi . . . . .	thy rule.
Itapotòi . . . . .	his rule.

"Thus far every thing is not only clear, but methodical; but at this point the embarrassment of novices in the language be-

\* See Notes on Eliot's Grammar, p. xix

† The reader will take care to pronounce these words according to the powers of the *Italian* alphabet.

gins. *Jumna-japotòi* is *our rule*; but the word for *our* is not a word, which can be applied alike in all cases; though it may be used on some occasions, it must not be on all. Let us give an example to illustrate this metaphysical point:

“When a *Tamanacan*, in addressing *us* [foreigners] says in his own language, *jumna-japotòi patcurbe*, (*our rule is good*) the expression is correct and elegant. But may it hence be inferred, that he can use the same expression in addressing *his own countrymen*? By no means. If his discourse is directed to *one* only, he must say *capotòi*, that is, *our (rule) of us two*; in which case the dual of the Greeks occurs. But perhaps the speaker would address himself to *several* of his countrymen; and in that case he can no longer make use of the word *capotòi*, but must have recourse to another word, which is limited, in some sort, to the persons *spoken to*, but cannot be applied to others; that is, *capotòi-chemò*, *our rule of us alone*. This precision is something very different from barbarous. The *dual* number, indeed, is not new to the learned; but hitherto they have not been aware of a *plural*, which was only applicable to a limited number of persons, as we see in the expression *capotòi-chemò* and the like. In my MS. Grammar of the *Tamanacan* language, I have called this mode of speech *the determinate plural*.” The author afterwards, referring his readers to what is here said of the numbers of the *nouns*, observes, that precisely the same peculiarity exists in the numbers of the *verbs*.\*

The same writer, in speaking of the language of the Incas (which, he observes, is very extensively spoken) has the following observations on this point:

“It is to be noted (as before observed in the case of the *Tamanacan* language) that the pronoun *we* is expressed in two ways. If the persons spoken to are included with the person speaking, v. g. *we* (Italians) *love literature*, the idea is to be expressed, when other Italians are thus spoken to, by the pronoun *gnocàncis*; but if the word *we* is addressed to foreigners, then it must be expressed by *gnocaicu*;.....thus, *jajancis* is *our father*, when another person is included; but when such other is excluded, *jajàicu* must be used.....The *verb*, in the first person plural, has the same variation that has been mentioned in the pronoun *we*.”

In the language of *Cichitto*, [Chiquito] also, he observes, that “there is, in the *first person plural*, the *inclusive number*, as it

\*. Saggio, &c. vol. iii. pp. 163 and 181.

is called, and the *exclusive* number, exactly as in the language of the *Incas*." \*

*Gilij* also mentions a singularity in the languages of the *Orinoco*; which is, that the *plural* form of nouns is not applied to *irrational* animals; but in order to denote the plural in such cases, they annex to the noun a numeral, or some word of multitude; as, I saw two, three or many tigers, &c. But, again, in the case of *inanimate* beings, they use the plural number; as, *mata*, the field, *matac-ne*, the fields; *cene*, this thing, *cenec-ne*, these things, &c.†

In the language of *Chili* (according to Febrès) the noun has an analogy to the nouns of the eastern languages, in having three numbers, the singular, dual and plural.‡

---

## NOTE 6.

### *The Pronoun Relative.*

P. 12. "*They have no relative corresponding to our who or which.*"

Both the Delaware and the Massachusetts languages have this relative pronoun (See *Mr. Du Ponceau's Notes on Eliot's Grammar*, p. xx.) and it, therefore, appears strange, that a dialect so closely allied as the Mohegan should be destitute of it. Yet it seems hardly possible, that Dr. Edwards could have been mistaken in this particular.

The same deficiency is found in some of the languages of *South America*. In the *Quichuan* (says Torres Rubio) "there is no simple word to express the relative *quis* or *qui*.....but the relatives are expressed by the participles," &c. And *Gilij* says the same thing of the other side of the continent. "The *Orinokese* (says he) know nothing of the relative pronouns *who*, *which*, &c. but they nevertheless employ certain expressions instead of them, which very well supply their place. In the *Tamanacan* they supply the above relatives by the particle *manecci*; v. g. *Pare Cabrut'-po manecci patcurbe*, the Father

\* Saggio, &c. pp. 236, 237 and 246. See also *Torres Rubio's Arte*, &c. pp. 6 and 52.

† Saggio, &c. 162.

‡ *Arte de la Lengua general del Reyno de Chile*, p. 8.



who (or he) is in Cabruta, is good. But sometimes, by a laconism, they employ only the latter part of that word; v. g. *Ciongaic* pe itegèti *Pare nepui necci*, what is the name of the Father who is come? "The *Maipuri*, instead of the above, make use of the particle *ri*; v. g. *Maisuni-ri caniacàu*, tacàu *catti-che*, he who is bad goes to hell."\*

---

## NOTE 7.

### *The Adjectives, and Degrees of Comparison.*

Pp. 11, 12. "*The Mohegans have no adjectives in all their language.....As they have no adjectives, of course they have no comparison of adjectives.*"

Mr. Zeisberger, in speaking of the *Delaware* language, expresses himself in more qualified terms: "There are not many of these [adjectives] because those words, which with us are adjectives, here are *verbs*; and, although they are not inflected through all the persons, yet they have tenses. The adjectives, properly so called, end in *uwi* and *owi*, and are derived sometimes from substantives and sometimes from verbs. Ex. *Genamuwi*, grateful, from *genam*, thanks; *wewoatamowi*, wise, prudent from *wewoatam*, to be wise.....There are also adjectives with other terminations; as,

Nenapalek . . . . .	unworthy, good for nothing.
Woapelechen . . . . .	white.
Asgask . . . . .	green.
Allowad allohak . . . . .	powerful, strong.
Ktemaki . . . . .	poor, miserable, infirm," &c.

*MS. Gram.*

In the languages of *South America*, also, the verbs serve as adjectives. See *Fèbrès' Grammar of the Language of Chili*, p. 29.

On the subject of the *comparison of adjectives* Edwards observes, that the Mohegans, in order to express degrees of comparison, use an *adverb* with their verbs that express qualities; of which he gives this example—" *annuweeweh wnissoo*, he is more beautiful."

\* *Saggio*, &c. p. 167.

In the *Delaware*, also, according to Zeisberger, the degrees are distinguished in a similar manner. The *comparative* degree is expressed by the word *allowiwi* (*alloweewee*, as it would be written in our English orthography) thus: "*Wulit*, good; *allowiwi wulit*, more good, better." *MS. Gram.* The word *allowiwi*, it will be observed, is the same with the Mohegan *anuweeweh*; the letter *l* of the *Delaware* being changed (according to the general rule in these two kindred dialects) into *n* in the *Mohegan*.

The same mode of expressing this degree of comparison was used in the *Massachusetts* language; in which also the adverb employed for the purpose was substantially the same with those of the *Delaware* and the *Mohegan*. "There is (says Eliot) no form of comparison that I can yet finde, but degrees are expressed by a word signifying *more*; as *anue menuhkesu*, more strong," &c. *Gram.* p. 15.

In some languages of the other parts of this continent, also, the same thing has been noticed. In the *Mexican* language (says *Giliŷ*) "comparatives are not formed by a new word distinguishable from the positive word, but by the adverb *occacci*, which signifies *more*; v. g. *In tēuatl occacci tiqualli*, thou art more good than he." *Saggio*, &c. tom. iii. p. 230. The same author informs us, that the *Orinokese* "are entirely destitute of comparatives; and their speech resembles in this respect the Hebrew. Universally, where one person is compared with another, they employ a negative mode of expression, and instead of saying *such an one is better than another*, they say, *such an one is good, and such an one is bad*." *Ibid.* p. 166. He makes a similar remark in respect to the language of the province of *Cichitto* [*Chiquito*] which is near the middle of *South America*. Proceeding still farther south, we find the same thing in the language of *Chili*: "Comparatives (says Father Febrès) are formed by means of the particles *yod* or *doy*; v. g. *Pu Patiru xod cūmey pu Huinca mo*, the Fathers are better than the Spaniards; or thus—*Pu Huinca cūmey, hulu pu Patiru xod cūmey*, the Spaniards are good, but the Fathers are more good; or thus, by making a verb of *yod* or *doy*—*Pu Patiru xodvi cūmegem mo ta pu Huinca*; that is, the Fathers are more than, or exceed, the Spaniards in goodness."\*

\* *Arte de la Lengua*, &c. p. 54.

## NOTE 8.

P. 13. "*A considerable part of the appellatives are never used without a pronoun affixed,*" &c.

Mr. Du Ponceau, in his interesting Correspondence with Mr. Heckewelder, has the following remark upon this passage: "On the subject of the word *father*, I observe a strange contradiction between two eminent writers on Indian languages evidently derived from the stock of the Lenni Lenape or Delaware. One of them, *Roger Williams*, in his *Key to the Language of the New England Indians*, says 'osh' (meaning probably *och* or *ooch*, as the English cannot pronounce the guttural *ch*) *father*; *nosh*, *my father*; *kosh*, *thy father*, &c. On the other hand, the Rev. Jonathan Edwards, in his *Observations on the Language of the Muhhekaneew* (Mohican) Indians, speaks as follows—'A considerable part of the appellatives are never used without a pronoun affixed. The Mohegans say, *my father*, *nogh* (again *noch* or *nooch*) *thy father*, *kogh*, &c. but they cannot say absolutely *father*. There is no such word in their language. If you were to say *ogh*, you would make a Mohegan both stare and smile.'" Mr. Du Ponceau then asks—"which of these two professors is right?" To which Mr. Heckewelder makes the following reply: "Notwithstanding Mr. Edwards' observation (for whom I feel the highest respect) I cannot help being of opinion, that the monosyllable *ooch* is the proper word for *father*, abstractedly considered, and that it is as proper to say *ooch*, *father*, and *nooch*, *my father*, as *dallemons*, *beast*, and *n'dallemons*, *my beast*; or *nitschan*, *child*, (or a child) and *n'nitschan*, *my child*. It is certain, however, that there are few occasions for using these words in their abstract sense, as there are so many ways of associating them with other ideas. *Wetoochwink* and *wetochemuxit* both mean '*the father*' in a more definite sense, and *wetochemelenk* is used in the vocative sense, and means '*thou our father*.' I once heard Captain Pipe, a celebrated Indian chief, address the British commandant at Detroit, and he said, *NOOCH! my father*.'"\*

In consequence of this difference of opinion, the Editor, in the course of the last year, addressed a letter on the subject to the Rev. Herman Daggett, the Superintendant of the Foreign Missionary School at Cornwall, in Connecticut. In addition to the *Naraganset Vocabulary* of Roger Williams, reference was

\* Correspond. of Mr. Heckewelder and Mr. Du Ponceau, pp. 403 & 411.



made to a specimen of the *Mohegan* language (taken from the mouth of an educated native by the Rev. William Jenks) which is published in the *Historical Collections*, vol. ix. p. 98, *First Series*, and in which the word for *father* is given without any pronominal affix. Mr. Daggett's reply was as follows—"I am satisfied, that there is no word in any of the Indian languages used in the Foreign Missionary School, by which to express in the abstract the relation of *Father* and most of the other social relations. '*Adam was the father of all men*' is a sentence, which my Indian scholars say they cannot translate without a change of expression. The *Choctaws* brought me the following—*Adam quo-hut-tuk-moomah Ing-ka yut-tok*; but they observed that *Ing-ka* had the pronominal prefix of the third person singular, which they said was unavoidable." \*

To these remarks it is only necessary to add one other, respecting the Delaware word *ooch*, above mentioned. It must not be supposed (as has been conjectured) that this word, like the Cherokee term *Ing-ka*, may comprehend an affix of the third person singular; for the Delaware has a distinct form for the third person singular, which is, "*oochwall*, his or her father." *Zeisberger's MS. Gram.*

---

## NOTE 9.

### *The Verb To BE.*

P. 14. "*They have no verb substantive in all their language.*"

The want of this verb in many of the American languages, is one of their most remarkable characteristics. The fact here stated by Edwards, in respect to the *Mohegan*, corresponds with what Eliot had observed, a century and an half before, in the *Massachusetts*, and with what the Rev. Mr. Heckewelder has lately said of the common stock of both those dialects, the *Delaware*; in which, says he, "the late Mr. Zeisberger and myself sought many years in vain for this substantive verb.....I cannot find a single instance in the language, in which the verb *I am* is used by itself, that is to say, uncombined with

\* The resemblance between this Choctaw word for *Father* and the Peruvian *Inca* (which was first suggested by Mr. Du Ponceau) is a little remarkable.

the idea of *the act* to be done." Mr. Heckewelder, in addition to Mr. Zeisberger's and his own opinion, gives also that of the Rev. Mr. *Dencke* to the same effect, in regard to the *Chippeway* as well as the *Delaware*.\* Mr. Du Ponceau, who has extended his inquiries to many other dialects both of North and South America, was originally inclined to believe, that "the want of the substantive verb was a *general rule* in the Indian languages."† But subsequent researches (as he observes in a late letter to the Editor) have led him to doubt, whether that will prove to be the case, to the extent in which his remarks will naturally have been understood by his readers. This question is briefly discussed in the *Notes on Eliot's Indian Grammar*, published in the preceding volume of these Collections; to which the reader is referred.† But it may not be without use, at the present early period of these investigations, to add in this place, by way of caution to the student, some further remarks upon the subject.

We must not suddenly infer, that the American languages have a verb substantive, because we happen to find in some of the grammars a certain verb under that name, and a conjugation of it in due form, just as would be found in the languages of the European authors of those works. Every man, who has studied the modern languages, knows, that several of them have two distinct verbs (derived from the Latin *stare* and *esse* respectively) in the use of which there is a well-settled distinction, that prevents their ever being confounded in the languages to which they belong, but yet in translating, either from or into, a foreign language, this distinction is continually disregarded; as in English, for example, we should render them both by our single verb *to be*, though this would often be an incorrect representation of their true import. Every one, also, (as Mr. Du Ponceau has justly observed) must "know too well the inclination of grammarians to assimilate those [Indian] idioms to their own, to be shaken by paradigms, in which the verb *sto*, for instance, might be translated by *sum*, or *I am*, for want of sufficient attention to the shade of difference between them."‡ In order, therefore, to arrive at a satisfactory conclusion on this point, it becomes necessary for us to do something more than adopt the general remarks of grammarians, or the loose translations of interpreters; we must examine critically some of the principal dialects of each stock of languages in the different parts of the continent. With a view to this object, the

\* Letter to Mr. Du Ponceau, in the *Notes on Eliot's Gram.* p. xxvii.

† See *Notes*, p. xxiv.

‡ *Ibid.* p. xxvi.

Editor has thought it might be useful, at the present time, to take a very brief review of some of the facts, which have been ascertained in this case, in respect to a few of the *Northern* as well as the *Southern* languages of this continent.

1. *The North American Languages.* In respect to some of the languages of *North America*, we are already possessed of all the information that can be desired on this point; and the question may be considered as fully settled; but of others, we cannot yet speak with so much certainty. The *Delaware*, which, according to Mr. Heckewelder, is the most widely extended of any on this side of the Mississippi, is ascertained to have no substantive verb. This we have upon the authority of Mr. Zeisberger and Mr. Heckewelder; neither of whom, after the strictest examination, could discover such a verb in the language. To these may also be added the authority of the Rev. Mr. *Dencke*, the missionary of the United Brethren in Upper Canada.\* Of the numerous dialects of this stock, our information is also entirely satisfactory in respect to the *Massachusetts*, the *Mohegan* and the *Chippeway*, the last of which is very extensively spoken among the northern tribes. For the first of these, we have the authority of *Eliot*; for the second, that of *Edwards*; and for the last, that of Mr. *Dencke*.† From what we thus find to be the case in the Delaware stock itself, as well as in the three dialects just mentioned, there seems to be no hazard, then, in making the inference, that its other various dialects will also be found to have no substantive verb. The *Iroquois* stock (if we may judge of all the dialects by those which have been the subject of inquiry) seems to be also destitute of this verb. The inquiries made by the Rev. Mr. Daggett of the different Indian pupils of that stock, who are under his care at the Foreign Missionary School in Connecticut, (the result of which was published by the Editor in the Notes on *Eliot's Grammar*) seem to leave little or no room for doubt in respect to this family of languages. The particular dialects examined by him were, the *Oneida*, *Tuscarora* and *Caughnewaga*. Of the *Floridian* family (as Mr. Heckewelder denominates it, meaning to comprehend the dialects spoken by the Indians on the southern frontier of the United States) we have not so ample information as of the languages already mentioned; but from the inquiries made at the Missionary School respecting two of its dialects (the *Choctaw* and *Cherokee*) it should seem, that the substantive verb is wanting. Yet, on the other hand, the Rev.

\* Notes to *Eliot's Grammar*, p. xxviii.

† Ibid.



Mr. *Buthrick*, the present missionary among the Cherokees (in one of his early communications on this subject, for which the Editor is indebted to a learned friend) expressly mentions a peculiar manner of using what he calls *the substantive verb*; observing, that “the verb *to be* is not used in the present tense, and I think not in the imperfect. Instead of this, changes are made in the beginning of the word, which would otherwise follow it; as, *â skî yû*, man—*tse skî yû*, I am a man,” &c. Whether his subsequent study of the language has confirmed this observation or not, the Editor is unable to state.\*

2. *The South American Languages.* Some of these appear to have the substantive verb, though it seems to be more limited in its use, than is the case in the European languages; while in others, the same mode of expressing it is adopted, which is found in the languages of the *North*; that is, annexing a syllable or particle to the noun, which changes it into a verb. *Gilij*, after observing that every language must have its peculiarities, its excellencies and defects, makes the following general remarks on the *verb substantive* of the *Orinokese* dialects:

“These same reasons are most conclusive against those persons, who would have, in some of the American languages, the verb *sum* precisely as it is in the Latin. I say in *some*, and not all of them, as many boast. In the *Tamanacan* (to speak of one which is best known to me) there is the verb *uoccih*, a substantive verb like *esse* in Latin; *uocci*, I was; *uocciçi*, I shall be, &c. But he, who should expect to find it in every tense, as in Italian or Latin, would be egregiously mistaken. All the Indians known to me (and not merely the *Tamanacans*) make no use of the substantive verb in the signification of *the present*. The following are examples from three of their languages. In the *Tamanacan*, *patcurbe ure*; in the *Maipuri*, *sonirri canà*; in the *Pajuri*, *repè ju*, all signify merely, *I good*.”†

This author, in another place, observes, that “the above-mentioned verb substantive becomes equivalent to the Latin *fi*, wherever, instead of *uocciçi*, they say *uoic tarì*; and it is thus the root, if I may so speak, of the verbs that end in *tarì*; v. g. *Ponghèmtarì*, to become a Spaniard; *Tamanàcutarì*, to become a *Tamanacan*.”‡ In the *Guaranese* language, he says, that one class of neuter verbs “is formed by noun substantives or adjectives united to the pronouns *ce*, *nde*, &c.; v. g. *ce mâràngatù*,

\* It is a curious fact, that this very mode of using what is considered as the substantive verb, is found in some of the *South American* languages. See the observation of *Gilij*, respecting the *Orinokese* dialects, in the following pages.

† *Saggio*, &c. p. 302.

‡ *Ibid.* p. 180.

I good; *nde mâràngatù*, thou good. And this (says my author) is precisely the conjugation of the verb substantive *essere*, to be. In fact, all nouns united (or conjugated) with the pronouns become verbs, and include the verb substantive.\* In the *Maipuri* language he also speaks of the passive voice being formed by the termination *au*, which they take from "the substantive verb *caniàcàu*; but he says, at the same time, that this verb is the Italian *essere* or *stare*; and in another place he renders the same verb by the Italian *stare* alone, and not by *essere*.†

On crossing the continent of America from the Orinoco country into *Peru*, we find in the *Quichuan*, or *General Language* of the latter region, a verb called by grammarians the substantive verb of that language; that is, *cani*, which is conjugated at large in the valuable Grammar of Father *Torres Rubio*, and has every appearance of the true substantive verb. In addition to this, it may be remarked, that this verb is also used in forming the passive voice of other verbs, by being joined with their participles. Yet it will be observed that this same verb *cani* seems to have the signification of *stare* as well as *esse*. The author at fol. 151 of his *Vocabulario*, or Dictionary, gives this example: "*Canì*, I am [i. e. *sum* vel *sto*] as, *Cozcopì cani*, I am [*sum* vel *stò*] at Cuzco." Nor does there appear to be, in this work any distinct word for the verb *stare*. But whatever may be the true character of this Quichuan verb, we find that in the language of the Province of *Chiquitos* "the verb substantive is wholly wanting; and they supply its place by means of the pronouns and in other ways."‡

Proceeding still farther south, however, we again find, in the language of *Chili*, the substantive verb; for so the grammarians of that language denominate it. Father *Febrès* says, "Abstract nouns, as *goodness*, *whiteness*, &c. are formed by annexing *gen* (which is the verb *sum*, *es*, *est*) to adjectives or substantives; v. g. *cùmegen*, goodness; *lighgen*, whiteness," || &c. Yet the author, in one of his dictionaries (annexed to the Grammar) renders the Spanish verbs *haver* and *tener*, as well as the substantive verb *ser*, by this same Chilese word *gen*; and, in his other dictionary, he explains the Chilese *gen* by the several Spanish verbs *ser*, *estar*, *haber*, *tener*, and *nacer*.§ The Editor

\* Saggio, &c. p. 256.

† Ibid. p. 187, 189.

‡ Gilij, Saggio, &c. p. 247.

|| Arte, &c. p. 51. Qu. if this Chilese word *gen* has any affinity with the Quichuan *cani*?

§ P. 494.

will close these remarks by mentioning, that Mr. Du Ponceau (in a late letter) is inclined to believe, that the *Quichuan* verb *cani* is the pure substantive verb; observing very justly, that “the *general character* of the Indian languages does not prevent varieties from existing in them; but the *genus* is still the same. Those varieties, time and study will discover.”

---

NOTE 10.

*Verbs formed out of Nouns.*

P. 14. “*Thus they turn any substantive whatever into a verb neuter,*” &c.

So in the *Massachusetts* language, Eliot observes, that nouns may be turned into verbs and verbs into nouns.\* To the same effect Mr. Zeisberger says of the Delaware—that “substantives, and also adverbs, assume the character of verbs, as we have already said of adjectives.”† The same thing takes place in the *South American* languages. *Gilij*, in speaking of the *Orinokese* dialects, says—“Every noun [in the *Tamanacan*] may be made into a verb.....as, *Tamanacu*, a *Tamanacan*; *Tamanacutari*, to become a *Tamanacan*.”‡ So in the *Chilese* (says *Febrès*) “verbs are made from nouns by adding *n*; and the same thing may be done with almost all the other parts of speech, as pronouns, participles, adverbs, &c. ....and, on the other hand, the verbs are changed into nouns, by taking away the final *n*, and sometimes without taking it away.”||

---

NOTE 11.

*The Tenses.*

P. 15. “*They have a past and future tense to their verbs,* &c.

The author here states a very curious fact respecting a mode of expressing the *future* tense; which is done by annexing the sign of the future to an adverb or other word in the sentence.

\* Indian Gram. pp. 13 and 21.

† MS. Gram. Mr. Du Ponceau's translation.

‡ Saggio, &c. p. 172.

|| Arte, &c. p. 56.



“ This (as Mr. Du Ponceau justly observes in a letter to the Editor) is in analogy with the Delaware; in which the sign of the future is affixed to the adverb, *not* (for example) as—*attatsch pendawite* for *atta pendawitetsch*, if I shall not hear; or, to the adverb *at*, as in *tatsch elsiya* for *ta elsiyatsch*, as I shall be situated.” By a similar analogy the *pronominal* affixes of the nouns and verbs in the *Massachusetts* language may be joined to the adverb or adjective;\* and the following observation of *Gilij* may be intended to describe something of the kind in the *Orinokese* languages also: “ I shall mention (says he) a most extraordinary thing, but, at the same time, what is a matter of fact; in the *Tamanacan* language even the *adverbs* and the other *particles* are declined, wherever they are united with possessive nouns.”†

---

## NOTE 12.

### *Abstract Terms.*

P. 15. “ *I doubt not but that there is in this [the Mohegan] language the full proportion of abstract to concrete terms, which is commonly to be found in other languages.*”

This was doubtless the case also in the *Massachusetts* dialect, as we do not find *Eliot* making any complaint of the want of those terms (as he does of the want of a verb substantive) though he had constant occasion for the use of them in translating the Bible. He also gives some examples of them in his Grammar.

In the *Delaware* language, both Mr. Zeisberger and Mr. Heckewelder give various examples of abstract terms; and from the latter writer we learn, that the *Delawares* have a general mode of forming those words, by means of the termination *wagan* (or *woagan*, as the German missionaries sometimes write it, to express the sound of the English *w*) “ which answers to that of *ness* in English and *heit* or *keit* in German.” *Correspondence with Mr. Du Ponceau*, p. 408. Letter xviii.

They are also found in some (and perhaps will be in all) of the languages of *South America*. *Gilij*, in speaking of the numerous dialects spread over that vast extent of country through which the *Orinoco* flows, observes, that it has been made a

\* *Eliot's Gram.* p. 24.

† *Saggio*, &c. p. 165.

question sometimes by the missionaries, “whether the Orinokese have abstract noun substantives, as *whiteness*, *beauty*, &c. The doubt in this case has arisen from the common practice with the Indians of uniting words with the pronouns; but I know, to a certainty, (whatever others may think) that some of the *Orinokese* have such nouns. Of this we have most manifest instances in the *Tamanacan* words *checcite* or *cheictivàte*, bigness; *aremutunde*, whiteness, &c.....and the following are examples of them in composition: *Veròro tenèi achère càige iche-cilli*, I saw a dog, his bigness like a tiger, *that is*, of the bigness of a tiger; *càreta càige itaremutunù*, like paper his whiteness.” The author adds, however, that the *Maipuri*, “so far as he recollects,” do not make use of abstract terms.\* In the languages on the *western* side of South America, there appears to be no want of abstract terms. Father *Torres Rubio*, it is true, in his valuable Grammar of the *Quichuan* language (fol. 31) first informs his reader that there are no abstract nouns in it; but this expression is evidently to be understood in a qualified sense, because he immediately goes on to inform us, in the same sentence, how such terms are formed—“they are formed (says he) of the concrete term and the infinitive of *sum*, *es*, *fui*, and, being so formed, they are varied (or declined) by means of the *possessive particles* thus—*yurac caniy*, my whiteness,” &c. the analysis of which expression (though not given by the author) seems to be as follows:

<i>Yurac</i>	. . . .	a white thing.
<i>Canì</i>	. . . .	to be.
<i>Y</i>	. . . .	my ( <i>the possessive particle of the first person singular, always united with the noun.</i> )†

Proceeding farther south, on the same side of the continent, we find the wonderfully regular language of *Chili* abundantly supplied with abstract terms, or, at least, with an extraordinary capacity of forming them at pleasure. Father *Febrès*, in his Grammar of that language, says, that “abstract nouns, as *goodness*, *whiteness*, &c. are formed by subjoining the word *gen* (which is the verb *sum*, *es*, *est*,) to adjectives or sub-

\* Saggio, &c. vol. iii. p. 170.

† Arte y Vocabulario de la Lengua Quichua, &c.

stantives; as *cùmegén*, goodness; *lighén*, whiteness," &c.\* And the Abbè *Molina* affirms, that the practice of forming abstract terms is even carried farther than in the European languages; for (says he) "instead of saying *pu Huinca*, the Spaniards, they commonly say, *Huincagen*, the Spaniolity—*tamén cuiàgen*, your trio, that is, you other three—*èpu tamen cayugen layai*, two of you other six will die; *literally*, two of your sixths."†

---

### NOTE 13.

#### *Analogy between the Mohegan and Hebrew Languages.*

P. 16. "*Besides what has been observed concerning prefixes and suffixes* [p. 12.] *there is a remarkable analogy between some words in the Mohegan language and the correspondent words in the Hebrew,*" &c.

The slight resemblances between the Hebrew and the Indian languages (of New England) could not pass unobserved by our ancestors, at a period when there were at least as many good Hebrew scholars, in proportion to our population, as we now have, and when the Indian languages were much more familiarly known than at present. *Roger Williams* says on this point—"Others and myselfe have conceived some of their words to hold affinitie with the Hebrew." But he afterwards adds—"Yet againe I have found a greater affinity of their language with the Greek tongue."‡ Other early writers also mention the subject. The comparison has been recently pursued at considerable length by the Rev. Dr. *Jarvis*, in the learned Notes to his *Discourse on the Religion of the Indian Tribes of North America*; in which the author concludes his remarks upon one of the dialects (the Cherokee) in these emphatic terms—"It will immediately be seen that a language so remarkably rich in grammatical forms as to surpass even the Greek, differs *toto cælo* from the Hebrew, one of the simplest of all languages."||

\* *Arte de la Lengua General del Reyno de Chile*; compuesto por el P. *Andrés Febrès*, Misionero de la Comp. de Jesus. Lima, 1765.

† Hist. of Chili. American translation.

‡ Preface to his *Key into the Language of America*, Lond. 1643; republished in vols. iii. and v. (First Series) of these Collections

|| New York Hist Collect. vol. iii. p. 245.



## NOTE 14.

*On making Indian Vocabularies.*

P. 17. “It is to be wished, that every one who makes a vocabulary of any Indian language, would be careful to notice the prefixes and suffixes [of nouns.] The like attention to the moods and personal affixes of the verbs is necessary.”

A similar caution is necessary throughout these languages; the Indians being more in the habit of employing specific terms than Europeans are. “It was a good while (says Mr. Heckewelder) before I found out, that when you asked of an Indian the name of a thing, he would always give you the specific, and never the generic denomination.....I found myself under very great embarrassment in consequence of it when I first began to learn the Delaware language. I would point to a tree, and ask the Indians how they called it; they would answer, an *oak*, an *ash*, a *maple*, as the case might be; so that at last I found in my vocabulary more than a dozen words for the word *tree*.”\* The same thing is observable in the use of their verbs. In the Cherokee (says the Rev. Mr. Buthrick in his communication before cited) “thirteen different verbs are used, to express the action of *washing*, as follows:—

“Cũ tũ wõ,	I am washing myself, as in a river.
Cũ lě stũ lă,	“ my head.
Tsě stũ lă,	“ another person’s head.
Cũ cũ squõ,	“ my face.
Tsě cũ squõ,	“ another’s face.
Tă cà sũ lă,	“ my hands.
Tă tse yà su la,	“ another’s hands.
Tă cõ sũ lă,	“ my feet.
Tă tse yâ sũ la,	“ another’s feet.
Tă cũng kě lă,	“ my clothes.
Tă tse yũng kě lă,	“ another’s clothes.
Tă cũ tẽ yă,	“ dishes, &c.
Tsě yũ wă,	“ a child.
Cõ wẽ lă,	“ meat.

“This difference of words prevents the necessity of mentioning the object washed. So also with the verbs *love*, *take*, *have*, *leave*, *die*, *weigh*, &c.”

\* Correspondence with Mr. Du Ponceau, in Historical Transactions, vol. i. p. 437. (Letter 24.)

*Gilij* mentions the same thing in the languages of *South America*. After speaking of the extraordinary degree to which discrimination is carried in various instances, he says—"The same variety is found in words applied to different objects, but whose difference among us is disregarded; and these words are multiplied in proportion as the objects of them are multiplied. To express *I wash my face*, requires a different word from that which would express washing *my feet, my hands, &c.* ..... the old age of a man, of a woman, and of a garment, the heat of the body, of a fire, of the sun and of the climate, are all different words." \* Again—"In our language, and in many others, there is but one word (*mangiare*) for *to eat*; but in the *Tamanacan*, there are several, according to the thing eaten: *Jacurù* is to eat bread, or the cassava; *jemerì*, to eat fruit, honey; *janeri*, to eat meat, &c."†

---

#### NOTE 15.

*On the Dialects mentioned by Dr. Edwards as being radically the same with the Mohegan.*

Dr. Edwards, at the beginning of his *Observations*, has given seventeen different names of Indian languages, which were considered to be so many kindred dialects of the Mohegan; namely, the languages of

1. The Massachusetts Indians; used in Eliot's translation of the Bible;
2. Delawares, in Pennsylvania;
3. Penobscots, bordering on Nova Scotia;
4. St. Francis Indians, in Canada;
5. Shawanese, on the Ohio;
6. Chippewaus, westward of Lake Huron;
7. Ottowaus; more properly called W'tawas;
8. Nanticokes;
9. Munsees (Minsi);
10. Menomonees (Menomenes or Folles Avoines);
11. Messisaugas;
12. Saukies (Sauks or Sacs);

\* Saggio, &c. vol. iii. p. 338. See also Mr. Heckewelder's remarks on the words *old* and *young*, in the Delaware—*Notes on Eliot's Gram.* p. xvi.

† Saggio, &c. vol. iii. p. 172.

13. Ottagaumies (Foxes or Renards ;)
14. Killistenoës (Knisteneaux ;)
15. Nipegons ;
16. Algonkins ;
17. Winnebagoes.

A very small part of this list is given by Dr. Edwards upon his own authority ; and we now find, by a more extensive acquaintance with the Indian languages than was attainable when he wrote, that the list needs some corrections. This will be seen in the course of the following remarks ; which the Editor has subjoined, for the sake of presenting to the student a more clear and distinct view of the different languages contained in the annexed *Comparative Vocabulary*, as well as of the geographical situation of the Indian nations that speak them. The specimens themselves are given upon the authorities mentioned under each dialect ; and some of them have never before been published.

To the several dialects of the *Delaware* stock, which are enumerated by Dr. Edwards under the general name of *Mohegan*, the Editor has added corresponding specimens of two others ; namely, the *Narraganset*, collected from Roger Williams' "Key into the Language of America," and the *Abnaki*, from Father *Râle's* MS. Dictionary, belonging to the library of the University in Cambridge.\*

The true name of the Mohegan Indians, as we are informed by Mr. Heckewelder, is *Mahicanni* ; which, (according to the German pronunciation) is very nearly represented by

\* Of this valuable MS. the Editor has given a brief account, in the *Memoirs of the American Academy*, vol. iv. p. 358. The work itself has lately attracted the notice of eminent foreign scholars, who take the liveliest interest in the expected publication of it. In the *Allgemeine Literatur-Zeitung*, or *General Literary Intelligencer*, published at Halle in Germany (in which it is understood that Professor Vater is a writer) particular mention has been lately made of it, and its publication warmly approved of. That distinguished scholar, Baron William von Humboldt, also expresses himself in the following strong terms in a late letter upon this subject : "The publication of the Dictionary of Father *Râle* will be of still more importance [i. e. than the Cotton MS.] and I cannot but solicit you, as earnestly as possible, to do every thing which may depend upon you personally to effect it. For, as far as I recollect, but little is known of the Abnaki dialect ; and this work would both enrich our present stock with one language more, and would preserve the language in question from that perpetual oblivion, to which, without the publication of this work, it is probably destined." Such decided opinions, coming from so high authority, it is to be hoped, will not be disregarded by those who are ambitious of maintaining the literary character of our country.



Dr. Edwards' English name, *Muhhekaneew*. Mr. Heckewelder observes, that the Dutch call them *Mahikanders*; the French, *Mourigans* and *Mahingans*; the English, *Mohiccons*, *Mohuccans*, *Muhhekanew*, *Schaticooks*, *River-Indians*.<sup>\*</sup> Dr. Edwards informs us, that the particular dialect treated of in his work, is that of the tribe, which is familiarly known here by the name of the *Stockbridge* Indians, who take this English name from that of the town, which was for some time their principal residence. The Indian name of the territory, which now contains Stockbridge, Sheffield, and some other towns in the south-west-erly corner of Massachusetts, was *Housatunnuck*, more commonly written *Housatonic*, and sometimes *Ousatannock*; a name by which the well-known river in that quarter is still called. These Indians, after living in dispersed situations about the Housatonic, were collected together in the year 1736, at Stockbridge, under the care of the Rev. John Sergeant, their former laborious and faithful missionary.<sup>†</sup> Afterwards they removed to *Oneida* county, near Lake Ontario, in the state of New York,<sup>‡</sup> where they still reside, under the care of their worthy missionary, the present Mr. Sergeant. The place where they reside has been named *New Stockbridge*. In the year 1796 their number was about three hundred.|| They are destined, it seems, to a further removal; for Mr. Sergeant has informed the Editor (in a late letter) that "the Stockbridge tribe, with the Six Nations, have obtained a fine country in the vicinity of Green Bay; and eventually they will emigrate thither in the course of a few years. They will visit that country this summer; perhaps a few families will remove."

The Mohegans, it appears by a work already cited, have long recognized the Shawanese as their "younger brother;"<sup>§</sup> which accords with what Mr. Heckewelder states on this point, as will be seen hereafter.

For further information respecting the tribes of the Mohegan nation, the reader is referred to the valuable Memoir of the Rev. Dr. Holmes.<sup>¶</sup> The Editor will now proceed to the other

<sup>\*</sup> Historical Account and Introduction, p. 26.

<sup>†</sup> Historical Memoirs relating to the Housatunnuk Indians; by the Rev. Samuel Hopkins, (Boston, 1753,) pp. 43, 50.

<sup>‡</sup> Histor. Collect. vol. v. p. 195, note.

|| Ibid. vol. iv. p. 67.

<sup>§</sup> Hopkins' Histor. Mem. of the Housatunnuk Indians, p. 90.

<sup>¶</sup> Histor. Collect. vol. ix. p. 75.

nations mentioned by Dr. Edwards ; noticing them in the order in which they occur in his work.

1. The *Massachusetts* Indians. The name of this nation is familiar to every American reader. *Gookin*, who wrote in 1674, says that these Indians "inhabited principally about that place in Massachusetts Bay where the English now dwell. These were a numerous and great people. Their chief sachem held dominion over many other petty governours."\* Of their language we have an invaluable treasure in *Eliot's Grammar* and his *Translations* of the Scriptures and of various Religious Tracts, which were enumerated in a former volume of these Collections.† It may be here remarked, that this language has often been called the *Natick* ; apparently from the accidental circumstance, that Eliot established his first *Indian church* in the town of that name which is near Boston, and which was once the town of greatest note among the Indians in this quarter. But Eliot himself calls it the *Massachusetts* language.

2. *Delawares*. Of this people we have recently had the most ample information in the interesting work of the Rev. Mr. Heckewelder. According to the tradition handed down to them by their ancestors, this nation resided, many hundred years ago, in a very distant country in the *western* part of the American continent. They determined on migrating eastward, and accordingly set out together in a body, and after various adventures and conflicts with other nations, a part of them crossed the Mississippi, and about one half of the nation settled on the shores of the Atlantic. This portion was divided into three tribes, two of which were distinguished by the names of the *Turtle* and the *Turkey*, the former calling themselves in their own language *Unâmis*, and the other *Unalachtgo* ; their settlements extended from the *Mohicannittuck* (River of the Mohicans, which we call the North, or Hudson's River) to beyond the Potomack. The third tribe, the *Wolf*, commonly called the *Minsi*, which we have corrupted into *Monseys* or *Munsees*, chose to live back of the other two. The proper national name of the Delawares is *Lenni Lenape*, which signifies "Original People," a race of human beings who are the same

\* Historical Collections, vol. i. p. 148.

† Vol. ix. (Second Series) p. 242. To the list there given, should be added the following—*Shepherd's Sincere Convert and Sound Believer*. Eliot, in a letter to Sir Robert Boyle, dated July 7, 1688, mentions this tract as one which he had "translated into the Indian Language many years since." See *Histor. Coll.* vol. iii. p. 187.

that they were in the beginning, *unchanged and unmixed*. They are known and called, by all the western, northern, and some of the southern nations, by the name of *Wapanachki*, which the Europeans have corrupted into *Apenaki*, *Openagi*, *Abenakis* and *Abenakis*.\* All these names, as Mr. Heckewelder informs us, however differently written and improperly understood by authors, point to one and the same people, the *Lenape*, who are by this compound word called "People at the rising of the sun," or, as we should say, *Eastlanders*; and this people is acknowledged by near forty Indian tribes (whom we call nations) as being their "grandfathers." For further particulars of their history, as well as of their language, the reader is referred to Mr. Heckewelder's work.

Mr. Heckewelder says, it is not in his power to ascertain the whole number of the Delawares at the present day. They are very much scattered; a number of them, chiefly of the Monsey tribe, living in Upper Canada, others are in the state of Ohio, and some on the waters of the Wabash in the Indiana Territory. A considerable number of them has crossed the Mississippi.† In a late *Account of the Indian Tribes of Ohio*, by John Johnston, Esq. Indian Agent of the United States, it is said that this nation is now reduced to a very small number; and that the greater part of them reside on White River, in Indiana. A small number, it appears, resides on Sandusky River.‡

In connexion with the tradition, that the Delawares emigrated from "the western" part of this continent, it may not be undeserving of notice, that a dialect of their language is extensively spoken in a very distant western region of the continent at the present time, by the Crees or Knisteneaux, as was observed in the introduction to these Notes. The specimen of Delaware in the following *Vocabulary* was obligingly furnished by Mr. Heckewelder.

3. *Penobscots*. This is the well-known tribe, of which a remnant still resides in the state of Maine. The fullest vocabulary of their language, within the Editor's knowledge, is a small *Manuscript* of the *French Missionaries*, who have occasionally resided with this tribe; from which collection the

\* Heckewelder's Account, chap. i. and Introduction, p. 29. It may be here remarked, that the name of the *Abenakis* is written, by Father R  le, as well as by some of the later French missionaries, in three syllables—*Abnakis*, or *Abnaquis*.

† Histor. Account, p. 68.

‡ See *Arch  ologia Amer.* vol. i. pp. 270, 271.



words in the annexed Vocabulary have been extracted. For the perusal of this MS. the Editor is indebted to the Right Reverend Bishop *Cheverus* of Boston ; who has also obligingly given his permission, that the Historical Society may make such further use of it as they shall think proper.

4. *St. Francis Indians.* These are a Canadian tribe. The latest account we have of the remnant of them, which still resides in Canada, is in the "Report of the Select Committee of the Society for propagating the Gospel among the Indians and others in North America," dated the 29th of October, 1821. They are there described as "the Abanakis, or St. Francis Indians, near the mouth of the St. Francis River, consisting of 65 families and 360 souls." Their Chief had his education, in part, at Dartmouth College in New Hampshire. Two females of this tribe came from Canada to Boston in July, 1824, and were placed by the Society above-mentioned under the care of the Rev. *Thomas Noyes* of Needham near Boston.\* From that gentleman, and from the Rev. Dr. Holmes, Secretary of the Society, the Editor has obtained several words of their dialect, from which he has selected those contained in the following *Vocabulary*. The words, as might be expected, will be found to correspond with the Abnaki from Father *Râle*.

5. *Shawanese.* An account of this nation will be found in Mr. Heckewelder's work. We are there informed, that General Gibson (who had a thorough knowledge of the Indians, and spoke several of their languages) thought their true name was *Sawano* ; and that they are so called by the other Indian nations, from being a *southern* people. "*Shawanau* (says Mr. H.) in the Lenape language means the south ; *shawanachau*, the south wind."† They formerly inhabited the southern country, Savannah in Georgia, and the Floridas, but were compelled by the neighbouring nations to leave that territory ; when they settled on the Ohio. They call the Mahicanni their "elder brother," and the Delawares their "grandfather." Of that portion which remains in the state of Ohio, we have a particular account, drawn up by Mr. Johnston, in the first volume of the *Archæologia Americana*, before cited. That writer states, that the Shawanese have a tradition, that their ancestors *crossed the sea* ; though the Indians in general believe, that they were created on this continent. He adds, however, that it is

\* See the Report, pp. 41, 42 ; annexed to the Rev. Mr. Tuckerman's Discourse preached before the Society in 1821.

† Historical Account, &c. pp. 29, 69.

somewhat doubtful, whether the yearly sacrifice, which they make for their safe arrival in this country, has any other reference than to their crossing some great river or arm of the sea.\* A short vocabulary of their language is given by the same writer, from whom one of the specimens in the following Vocabulary is taken; the other is from Dr. Edwards. "Their language," according to Mr. Heckewelder, "is more easily learned than that of the Lenape, and has a great affinity to the Mohican, Chippeway and other kindred languages. They generally place the accent on the last syllable."†

6. *Chippeways* or *Chippewaus*. Dr. Edwards speaks of this nation as being "at the westward of Lake Huron." They are dispersed in various other territories. *Loskiel* describes them as "a numerous nation, inhabiting the north coast of Lake Erie." He states their number to be (at the time he wrote) about fifteen thousand.‡ Mr. Schermerhorn, in his Report to the *Society for propagating the Gospel*, describes them, under the names of "Algonquins or Chippeways," as follows; "We now find them extending between the Straits of Detroit and Michigan Lake; on the south borders of Lake Superior; the heads of the Mississippi, Red River and Lake Winipie; up the Dauphine River and Sashashawin to Fort George; from thence with the course of Beaver River to Elk River, and with it to its discharge into the Lake of the Hills; from this, east to the isle *à la Crosse* and by the Mississippi to Churchill."|| Probably several other tribes have been erroneously included with them by travellers, in consequence of the Chippeway dialect being a common language of intercourse among the northern Indians; agreeably to the observation of Prof. Vater respecting the Winnebago dialect, as will be seen in a subsequent part of these Notes. Specimens of the Chippeway language are given by Carver and Long, from whose travels the words in the annexed Vocabulary have been selected.

7. *Ottowaus*. The Ottowas, Outawas, or more properly *Wtawas* (with the whistled *W*, as Mr. Heckewelder observes) are a Canadian tribe. "They reside (according to Pike) on the north-west side of Lake Michigan and Lake Huron, and hunt between those lakes and Lake Superior."§ Mr. Du Pon-

\* Archæolog. Amer. vol. i. pp. 273, 276.

† Historical Account, p. 73.

‡ Loskiel's Hist. of the Mission of the United Brethren. Lond. 1794.

|| See Hist. Coll. Second Series, vol. ii. p. 10.

§ Pike's Journal, Appendix to Part First, p. 63.

ceau informs the Editor, that he knows of no vocabulary of their language extant.

8. *Nanticokes*. These were a body of the Lenape (or Delawares) who, in the ancient emigration of that people from the interior towards the sea coast, proceeded, together with their offspring, to the south, in Maryland and Virginia.\* Mr. Du Ponceau states, that the specimen in the following Vocabulary is all that he has been able to obtain of their language. He adds, also, in respect to that specimen—"The Nanticoke words are some of them double, being taken from different vocabularies; one by General Murray, the other by Mr. Heckewelder. I prefer the latter." The name of this nation, according to Mr. Heckewelder, is properly "*Nentico*, or, after the English pronunciation, *Nantico*."†

9. *Munsees*, or *Minsi*. These were a part of the Delawares, the *Wolf* tribe. Mr. Heckewelder describes them as the third of the great tribes, into which the Delawares upon the Atlantic coast divided themselves at the period of the emigration above-mentioned. He adds, that they are commonly called *Minsi*, which we have corrupted into *Monsey*. "They extended their settlements from the *Minisink*, (a place named after them,) where they had their council seat and fire, quite up to the Hudson on the east; and to the west or south-west far beyond the Susquehannah; their northern boundaries were supposed originally to be the heads of the great rivers Susquehannah and Delaware; and their southern boundaries, that ridge of hills known in New Jersey by the name of *Muskanecun*, and in Pennsylvania, by those of *Lehigh*, *Coghnewago*, &c. Within this boundary were their principal settlements; and, even as late as the year 1742, they had a town, with a large peach orchard, on the tract of land where Nazareth, in Pennsylvania, has since been built; another, on *Lehigh* (the west branch of the Delaware) and others beyond the Blue Ridge; besides small family settlements here and there scattered."‡

Mr. Du Ponceau remarks, that "the few variations of their dialect from the Delaware, or Unami, do not entitle it to the name of a language." The words in the annexed Vocabulary are from Barton's *New Views*.

\* See Heckewelder's Account, in the Transactions of the Histor. and Lit. Committee, &c. p. 35.

† Ibid. p. 26.

‡ Heckewelder's Account, &c. p. 34.



10. *Menomonees*, or *Menomenes*. “The *Menomenes*, or Fols Avoins, as termed by the French (says Pike) reside in seven villages, situated as follows, viz.—1. at the River Menomène, fifteen leagues from Green Bay, north side of the lake; 2. at Green Bay; 3. at Little Kakalin; 4. Portage of Kakalin; 5. Stinking Lake; 6. entrance of a small lake on Fox River; and 7th, behind the Bank of the Dead.....The language which they speak is singular; for *no white man has ever yet been known to acquire it*; but this may probably be attributed to their all understanding the Algonquin, in which they and the Winnebagoes transact all conferences with the whites or other nations; and the facility with which that language is acquired, is a further reason for its prevalence.”\*

11. “The *Messisaugers*, or *Messasagucs* (says Barton) are a most dirty race of Indians, residing about Lakes Huron and Superior.”† The few words, which we have of their language, are to be found in Barton’s work; from which the specimen in the following Vocabulary has been extracted.

12. *Saukies*, or *Sauks*. “The first nation of Indians (says Pike) whom we met with in ascending the Mississippi from St. Louis, were the Sauks, who principally reside in four villages. The first, at the head of the Rapids de Moyer, on the west shore, consisting of thirteen log lodges; the second, on a prairie on the east shore, about sixty miles above; the third, on the Riviere de Roche, about three miles from the entrance; and the last, on the River Iowa. They hunt on the Mississippi and its confluent streams, from the Illinois to the River Des Iowa, and on the plains west of them, which border on the Missouri. They are so perfectly consolidated with the Reynards, that they scarcely can be termed a distinct nation.”‡ In respect to the *language* of the Saukies (or *Sacs*, as they are called by the French) Mr. Du Ponceau says—“There is no vocabulary extant, that I know of.”

13. *Ottagaumies*; called by us the *Foxes*, and by the French, *Renards*. “They reside (according to Pike) in three villages—1. on the west side of the Mississippi, six miles above the rapids of the River De Roche; 2. about twelve miles in the rear of the lead mines; and 3. on Turkey River, half a league from its entrance. They are engaged in the same wars and

\* Pike’s Journal, Appendix to Part First, p. 58.

† Barton’s New Views, p. xxxiii.

‡ Pike’s Journal, Appendix to Part First, p. 56.

have the same alliances as the Sauks, with whom they must be considered as indissoluble in war or peace.”\* In respect to their *language*, Pike says they speak the “Sauk, with a small difference in the idiom.”† Lewis says, that the Sauks and Foxes “speak the *same language*.”‡

14. *Knisteneaux*, or *Killistenoes*. “These people (says McKenzie) are spread over a vast extent of country. Their language is the same as that of the people who inhabit the coast of British America on the Atlantic, with the exception of the Esquimaux, and continues along the coast of Labrador and the Gulf and banks of St. Lawrence to Montreal. The line then follows the Utawas River to its source; and continues from thence nearly west along the high lands which divide the waters that fall into Lake Superior and Hudson’s Bay. It then proceeds till it strikes the middle part of the River Winipic to the discharge of the Saskatchewan into it; from thence it accompanies the latter to Fort George, when the line, striking by the head of Beaver River to the Elk River, runs along its banks to its discharge in the Lake of the Hills; from which it may be carried back east, to the Isle *à la Crosse*, and so on to Churchill by the Mississippi. The whole of the tract between this line and Hudson’s Bay and Straits (except that of the Esquimaux in the latter) may be said to be exclusively the country of the Knisteneaux.”|| Mr. *Harmon*, who has given the latest account of these Indians, with a copious vocabulary of their language, in his valuable *Journal*, says, the Cree or Knisteneaux language is spoken “by at least three fourths of the Indians of the north-west country on the east side of the Rocky Mountains.”§ The Editor has, in the following Vocabulary, given a specimen of their language both from *McKenzie* and *Harmon*.

15. *Nipegons*. This nation will be presently noticed, under the name of the *Winnebagoes*. See Sect. 17.

16. *Algonkins*. These Indians (says Pike) “reside on the Lake of the Two Mountains, and are dispersed along the north

\* Pike’s Journal, Appendix to Part First, p. 57.

† See his Abstract of the number, &c. of the Indians on the Mississippi, &c.

‡ Statistical View of the Indian Nations, &c. published by Congress in the State Papers of 1806.

|| McKenzie’s Voyages, p. 82. 3d Amer. edit.

§ Harmon’s Journal, published at Andover, Massachusetts, 1820.

sides of Lakes Ontario and Erie. From this tribe the language of the Chippeways derives its name, and the whole nation is frequently designated by that appellation. The Algonkin language is one of the most copious and sonorous languages of all the savage dialects in North America; and is spoken and understood by the various nations (except the Sioux) from the Gulf of St. Lawrence to Lake Winipic.\* The specimen in the following Vocabulary is from *La Hontan*; upon whose authority, however, we cannot place entire reliance, if we may believe Charlevoix; who asserts that Sagard, Cartier and La Hontan "took at random a few words, some from the Huron and others from the Algonkin tongues, which they very ill remembered, and which often signified something very different from what they imagined."†

17. *Winnebagoes*, or *Nipegons*. Dr. Edwards gives these as the names of two different nations, speaking dialects of the Delaware stock; an error, into which he was probably led by the extremely irregular orthography, under which Indian names are so frequently disguised. But it now appears, that these are only two different names for the same nation, or rather two modes of writing the same name. "The Nipegons or Winnebagoes (according to Professor Say, who accompanied Major Long in his Expedition) are the same people; and the French call them *Puants*. They speak a dialect of the Naudowessie, not at all akin to the Delaware or Mohegan."‡ The Naudowessie (or Sioux) is one of the two great families denominated by Mr. Du Ponceau the *Ultra-Mississippian Languages*; the Pawnee being the other.

This error of Dr. Edwards respecting the language of the Winnebagoes did not escape the notice of the learned Vater; as will appear by the following remarks of his, to which the Editor has been referred by Mr. Du Ponceau:

"Since I wrote my last letter to you (says he) I have looked into the *Mithridates* on the subject of the Winnebagoes or Puants. We ought always to look into that admirable book before we sit down to write, or even to think, on any Indian language. I find Professor Vater fully agrees with me as to the

\* Pike's Journal, Appendix to Part First, pp. 63, 65.

† Charlevoix's Account, &c. vol. i. p. 300, English edit. 1761. See also Mr. Du Ponceau's Report, p. xxxiv.

‡ Letter from Mr. Du Ponceau to the Editor. A specimen of their language, furnished by Professor Say, will be found in the following Vocabulary.



origin and affinity of this nation, and gives good authority for it:—‘By putting together (says he) the latest accounts derived from authentick sources, it is possible to connect with the Osage nation (already important of itself) kindred tribes of more distant as well as of neighbouring territories; and in this case also to discover again a widely extended race of American Indians, which, through the Winnebagoes or Puants of the territories hitherto considered, and through the Ottos, passing over the Pawnees, reaches to the north-eastern frontier of New Mexico. That these Winnebagoes speak the same language with the Ottos, Pike expressly assures, us (Pike’s Journal, pp. 172, 174)\* and therefore we must expect to find a nearer affinity between these two nations, through the neighbouring tribes, than through the Osages....The *Sacs* and *Ottogamis* are closely allied together....and speak the same language; so that the latest observers of those countries agree in this, that they are in fact to be considered as one nation. The Sacs pass for the elder branch of the two allied nations. (*Vergennes, Memoire sur la Louisiane*, p. 90.) According to Carver, they both speak the Chippeway; but he expressly adds, that he does not know whether they have merely adopted it. *Edwards* reckons both these nations among those that speak the Mohegan; (*Observations on the Language of the Muhhekaneew Indians*;) but, as he also includes the Winnebagoes, *he has clearly asserted too much*....According to the information of Lewis and Clarke, these two nations (Sacs and Ottogamies) speak a language different from others; with which of the neighbouring idioms it has most affinity is yet to be discovered.’—*Mithridates*, vol. iii. part 3, pp. 267, 270. You will wonder with me (continues Mr. Du Ponceau) at the astonishing penetration of the great Vater, in discovering, *without a vocabulary*, the error of Edwards, (in classing the Winnebago with the Delaware dialects,) and accounting for it in the very natural way, that they speak the Chippeway as a trading language. I must repeat, that those who make researches into the Indian languages without first studying the *Mithridates*, will often find their discoveries forestalled in it.”

The Winnebagoes or Puants (says Pike) “reside on the Rivers Ouisconsing, De Roche, and Green Bay, in seven villages, which are situated as follows, viz.—1. at the entrance of Green Bay; 2. end of ditto; 3. Wuckan, on the Fox River; 4. at

\* Appendix to Part First, American edition, p. 58.

Lake Puckway ; 5. Portage of the Ouisconsing ; 6 and 7. both on Roche River.....From the tradition amongst them, and their speaking the same language of the Otos of the River Platte, I am confident in asserting that they are a nation who have emigrated from Mexico to avoid the oppression of the Spaniards.” —*Pike, Appendix*, p. 58. The specimen of their language, in the following Vocabulary, was obligingly furnished by Professor Say.

# COMPARATIVE VOCABULARY

OF

VARIOUS DIALECTS

OF THE

LENAPE (OR DELAWARE) STOCK

OF

NORTH AMERICAN LANGUAGES :

TOGETHER WITH

A SPECIMEN

OF THE

WINNEBAGO (OR NIPEGON) LANGUAGE.



	MOHEGAN. (From <i>Edwards.</i> )
1. A bear	1. Mquoh
2. A beaver	2. Amisque (1) *
3. Eye	3. Hkeesque
4. Ear	4. Towohque
5. Fetch	5. Pautoh
6. My Grandfather	6. Nemogghome (2)
7. My Grandmother	7. Nohhum
8. My Grandchild	8. Naughees
9. He goes	9. Pumissoo
10. A Girl	10. Peesquasoo
11. House	11. Weekuwuhm
12. He (that man)	12. Uwoh
13. His Head	13. Weensis
14. His Heart	14. Utoh
15. Hair	15. Weghaukun
16. Her Husband	16. Waughech eh
17. His teeth	17. Wepeeton
18. I thank you	18. Wneeweh
19. My uncle	19. Nsees
20. I	20. Neah
21. Thou	21. Keah
22. We	22. Neaunuh
23. Ye	23. Keaunuh
24. Water	24. Nbey
25. Elder sister	25. Nmees
26. River	26. Sepoo
27. To die (I die)	27. Nip
28. Dead (he is dead)	28. Nboo or nepoo (3)
29. Devil	29. Mtandou or mannito (4)
30. Dress the kettle (make a fire)	30. Pootouwauh
31. His Eyes	31. Ukeesquan
32. Fire	32. Stauw
33. Give it him	33. Meenuh
34. A spirit (a spectre)	34. Mannito
35. How	35. Tunch (5)
36. An impostor (he is a bad man)	36. Mtissoo
37. Go	37. Pumisseh
38. Marry	38. Weeween
39. Good for nought	39. Mtit
40. Shoe	40. Mkissin
41. The sun	41. Keesogh
42. Sit down	42. Mattipeh
43. Where	43. Tehah
44. Winter	44. Hpoon
45. Wood	45. Metooque

\* See the *Explanatory Remarks* at the end of this Vocabulary.

## MOHEGAN.

(From the Rev. William Jenks; in  
Mass. Hist. Coll. vol. ix. p. 98.)

- 1.
- 2.
- 3.
- 4.
- 5.
6. Mâhghomân (6)
7. Ohmân (a grandmother)
- 8.
- 9.
10. Peesquâthuh
11. Weekwom
- 12.
- 13.
- 14.
- 15.
16. W'ghân (a husband)
- 17.
- 18.
19. Oosêthân (an uncle)
- 20.
- 21.
- 22.
- 23.
24. M'ppêh
- 25.
26. Thêpow (7)
- 27.
- 28.
- 29.
- 30.
- 31.
32. 'Thtouw
- 33.
- 34.
- 35.
- 36.
- 37.
- 38.
- 39.
- 40.
41. Kesogh
- 42.
- 43.
44. Poon
- 45.

## LENAPE, or Delaware.

(From the Rev. Mr. Heckewelder.)

1. Machk
2. Tamáque
3. Wuschgink (8)
4. Whittawakall (*plural*)
5. Nátem (to fetch)
6. N'muchomes
7. Nohum
8. Nochwis
9. Waeu *or* eu
10. Ochquésis
11. Wikwam (9)
12. Nekama
13. Wil (10)
14. W'dee
15. Milach
16. Wechian
17. Wipitall
18. Genamel
19. N'schis
20. Ni
21. Ki
22. Nilúna, kiluna
23. Kilúwa
24. Mbi
25. Mis
26. Sípu
27. Angel
28. Angelluk
29. Machtando, matshi-manitto
30. Tendeuhel (11)
31. Wuschgink(-all *plural*)
32. Tendey
33. Milau
34. Tschipey, tschitschank (12)
35. Taam
36. Matschíleno
37. Aal (*imperative*)
38. Wikingen (to marry)
39. Taköeu lapemquattowi
40. Maxen
41. Gischuch
42. Lemattáhpil (13)
43. Tani, ta-talli
44. Lówan
45. Tachan

<i>MUNSEE, or Minsi.</i> (From Barton's <i>New Views.</i> )	<i>SHAWANESE.</i> (From Edwards.)	<i>SHAWANESE.</i> (From <i>Archæologia Americana.</i> )
1.	1. Mauquah	1. Muga
2. Amochk, <i>H.</i> (14)	2. Amaquah	2. Amaghqua
3. Wuschgink	3. Skeesaco	3.
4. Wichtawak	4. Towacah	4.
5.	5. Peatoloo	5.
6.	6. Nemasompethau	6.
7.	7. Nocumthau	7. Cocumtha [your?]
8.	8. Noosihethau	8.
9.	9. Pomthalo	9.
10. Ochquesis	10. Squauthauthau	10. Squithetha
11. Wichquam	11. Wecuah	11. Wigwa
12.	12. Welah	12.
13. Wilustican	13. Weeseh (16)	13.
14. Uchdee	14. Otaheh	14.
15.	15. Welathoh	15.
16.	16. Wasechah	16. Wysheana
17. Wichpit (tooth)	17. Wepeetalee	17.
18.	18. Neauweh	18.
19.	19. Necseethau	19.
20. Ni	20. Nelah	20.
21.	21. Kelah	21.
22.	22. Nelauweh	22.
23.	23. Kelaueh	23.
24. 'Mbi	24. Nippee	24. Nipe
25.	25. Nemeethau	25. Neeshematha(my)
26.	26. Thepee	26. Sepe
27. Angellowoagan (15)	27.	27.
28.	28.	28. Nepwa
29.	29.	29. Matchemenetoo
30.	30.	30.
31.	31.	31.
32. Tendeu or twen-	32.	32. Scoote
33. [daigh]	33.	33.
34.	34.	34.
35.	35.	35.
36.	36.	36.
37.	37.	37.
38.	38.	38.
39.	39.	39.
40.	40.	40.
41. Gischuch	41.	41. Kesathwa
42.	42.	42.
43.	43.	43.
44. Lowan	44.	44.
45. Chos	45.	45.



## NANTICOKE.

(From Gen. Murray and Mr. Heckewelder.)

1. Winquipim ; winkpen, *H.*
2. Nataque
3. Nucks, skeneequât, *H.*
4. Nuch, tow, huck
- 5.
- 6.
- 7.
- 8.
- 9.
10. Pech, quah
11. Youck, huck ; iahaak, *H.*
- 12.
13. Nulahammon (the head)
14. Weúscheu (heart)
- 15.
16. Wéchsiki (husband)
17. Wüpt (tooth)
- 18.
- 19.
20. Nee
21. Kee
- 22.
- 23.
24. Nip ; nep
25. Nimpz
26. Pamptuckquah, peemtuck, *H.*
27. Angel (death)
- 28.
29. Matt, ann-tote
- 30.
31. Mukschkintsch (the eye)
32. Tunt
- 33.
34. Tsee-e-p (ghost, dead man)
- 35.
- 36.
- 37.
- 38.
- 39.
40. Mechkissins
41. Aquiquaque ; ahquak ; ack-  
[quechkq, *H.*
- 42.
- 43.
44. Pooponu, huppoon, *H.*
45. Pomp-tuck-koik, michsch, *H.*

## NARAGANSET.

(From *Roger Williams.*)

1. Mosk (17)
2. Tummòck
3. Wuskeésuck
4. Wuttóvwog
5. Pautínnea (18)
- 6.
- 7.
- 8.
- 9.
10. Squásese (little girl)
11. Wetu (19)
12. Ewò (he, that)
13. Uppaquóntup (the head)
14. Wuttàh
15. Wésheck
16. Wásick (an husband)
17. Wépitteash
18. Taûbotneanawáean
19. Nissesè
20. Neèn
21. Keèn
- 22.
- 23.
24. Nip
25. Wéticks, wéesummis
26. Séip
27. Níppitch ewò (20)
28. Kitonckquêi, (he is dead)
- 29.
30. Potouwássiteuck (let us make)
- 31.
32. Sqúttà or nòte or yòte
- 33.
- 34.
- 35.
- 36.
37. Maúchish or ànakish (be go-  
[ing)
- 38.
- 39.
40. Mocússinass and mockussín-
41. Nippâwus (21) [chass (*pl.*)
42. Máttapsh
43. Tou
44. Papòne
45. Wudtuckqun

## MASSACHUSETTS.

(From Eliot.)

1. Mosq
2. Tummunk
3. Muskeesuk (22)
4. Mehtauog
5. Paudtah
- 6.
7. Kokummussit
- 8.
- 9.
10. Nunksqua
11. Wétu (23)
12. Noh *or* nagum
13. Puhkuk
14. Wuttah
15. Weshagan (24)
16. Wasuk *or* wessuke
17. Meepitash
18. Kuttabuttantamoush
19. Wussissesoh (his uncle)
20. Neen
21. Ken
22. Neenawun *or* kenauwun
23. Kenaau
24. Nippe
- 25.
26. Sepu
27. Ut-nuppun (to die)
28. Nuppoo (he died)
29. Mattannit
- 30.
31. Wuskesukquash (*plur.*)
32. Nootau
33. Aninnumau
34. Mattanit
- 35.
- 36.
37. Pomushagk
38. Wetauakon (to marry)
- 39.
40. Moxinash (*plur.*)
41. Nepauz (25)
42. Apsh (*imperat.*)
43. Uttiyeu
44. Popón
45. Mehtug *or* mahtug

## PENOBSCOT.

(French Missionaries' MS.)

- 1.
2. Toumakoi
3. Ousisegoul (eyes)
4. Ntawag (my ear)
- 5.
6. Mousomesse
7. Nakoume
- 8.
- 9.
10. Nanskois
11. Wigwam
12. Egman
- 13.
- 14.
15. Piasoumal
16. Ousainampaimal
17. Nipit
- 18.
- 19.
20. Nja
21. Kia
22. Niona
- 23.
24. Kneppi
- 25.
26. Sibø
27. Matchinai
- 28.
- 29.
- 30.
- 31.
32. Scouté
- 33.
- 34.
35. Tanequapa
- 36.
- 37.
38. Ounipawi
- 39.
- 40.
41. Gisous
- 42.
43. Tanai
44. Papoun
45. Awaisounal

<i>ABNAKI.</i> (From Father <i>Râle's</i> MS. Dictionary.)	<i>ST. FRANCIS INDIANS.</i> (From Rev. Dr. Holmes and Rev. Mr. Noyes.)
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. <i>Aésses</i></li> <li>2. <i>Tema'kâé</i></li> <li>3. <i>Tsísekə</i></li> <li>4. <i>Metasaks or mtasaks</i></li> <li>5. <i>Nepétən</i> (I bring)</li> <li>6. <i>Neməsəmes</i></li> <li>7. <i>Nə'kəmes</i></li> <li>8.</li> <li>9. <i>Nepeməssé</i> (I go)</li> <li>10. <i>Nañkskâé</i></li> <li>11. <i>əigsam</i></li> <li>12.</li> <li>13. <i>ətep</i></li> <li>14. <i>Nerésaŋgan</i> (my heart)</li> <li>15. <i>Nepiésəmar</i> (my hair)</li> <li>16.</li> <li>17. <i>Nipit</i> (my tooth)</li> <li>18. <i>Kedaramihi</i></li> <li>19. <i>Nesis</i></li> <li>20.</li> <li>21.</li> <li>22.</li> <li>23.</li> <li>24. <i>Nebi</i></li> <li>25.</li> <li>26. <i>Síps</i></li> <li>27. <i>Nemetsíné</i> (I die)</li> <li>28.</li> <li>29. <i>Matsiniśéska</i></li> <li>30. <i>Nepədase</i> (26)</li> <li>31.</li> <li>32. <i>Skétai</i></li> <li>33. <i>Neméghen</i> (I give it)</li> <li>34.</li> <li>35. <i>Tañni</i></li> <li>36.</li> <li>37.</li> <li>38.</li> <li>39.</li> <li>40. <i>Mkessen</i></li> <li>41. <i>Kizəs</i></li> <li>42. <i>Nedápi</i> (I sit)</li> <li>43.</li> <li>44. <i>Pebən, pebəné</i> (27)</li> <li>45. <i>Aəassəa</i></li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. <i>Owousous</i></li> <li>2. <i>Temarqua</i> (28)</li> <li>3. <i>Woosesuck</i></li> <li>4. <i>Wootououk</i></li> <li>5. <i>Melee</i></li> <li>6. <i>Nemahhōme</i></li> <li>7. <i>Nocomus</i></li> <li>8. <i>Nocis</i></li> <li>9. <i>Acommā mousjou</i></li> <li>10. <i>Nunksquaskis</i></li> <li>11. <i>Wigwam</i></li> <li>12. <i>Acommā</i> (29)</li> <li>13. <i>Tassoulquon</i></li> <li>14. <i>Wollewongon</i></li> <li>15. <i>Hotopequon</i></li> <li>16. <i>Neswear</i></li> <li>17. <i>Webeit</i></li> <li>18. <i>Neerwillewoone</i></li> <li>19. <i>Nesorksciss</i></li> <li>20. <i>Neah</i></li> <li>21. <i>Mosork</i></li> <li>22. <i>Keunnah</i></li> <li>23. <i>Keah</i></li> <li>24. <i>Nehbee or nupee</i></li> <li>25. <i>Nechemees</i> (sister)</li> <li>26. <i>Seeboo or seepoo</i></li> <li>27. <i>Machēner</i></li> <li>28. <i>Accommā machēner</i></li> <li>29. <i>Matthantoo</i></li> <li>30. <i>Walleloo scoottah</i></li> <li>31. <i>Accommāne woosesuck</i></li> <li>32. <i>Squuttah or scoottah</i></li> <li>33. <i>Melaun</i> (give it)</li> <li>34. <i>Orweppee</i></li> <li>35. <i>Turnē</i></li> <li>36. <i>Kulok sannup</i></li> <li>37. <i>Pumoosah or mousho</i></li> <li>38. <i>Nepowo or weewooh</i></li> <li>39. <i>Pesoworto</i></li> <li>40. <i>Mokasin or mokkausin</i></li> <li>41. <i>Keesoos</i></li> <li>42. <i>Appeh or arpee</i></li> <li>43. <i>Tauneh</i></li> <li>44. <i>Pehboon or perpoon</i></li> <li>45. <i>Arparse</i></li> </ol>



<p><i>MESSISAUGAS.</i> (From Barton's <i>New Views</i>.)</p>	<p><i>ALGONKIN.</i> (From La Hontan.)</p>
1.	1. Mackoua
2.	2. Amik
3. Wuskink	3. Ouskinchic
4.	4.
5.	5.
6.	6.
7.	7.
8.	8.
9.	9.
10.	10. Ickouessens
11.	11. Entayant (home)
12.	12.
13.	13. Ousticouan (head)
14.	14. Micheone (heart)
15.	15.
16.	16.
17.	17. Tibit (teeth)
18.	18.
19.	19.
20. Nindoh	20.
21.	21.
22.	22.
23.	23.
24. Nippee	24. Nipi
25.	25.
26.	26. Sipim
27.	27. Nip
28.	28.
29.	29. Matchi
30.	30. Poutaoue
31.	31.
32. Scuttaw, scutteh, scooteh	32. Scoute
33.	33. Mila (give)
34.	34. Manitou (ghost, dead man)
35.	35. Tani
36.	36. Malatissi (impostor)
37.	37.
38.	38.
39.	39.
40.	40. Mackisin
41. Keeshoo	41.
42.	42.
43.	43. Ta
44.	44. Pipoun
45. Netaukun	45. Mittick

<i>ALGONKIN.</i> (From McKenzie.)	<i>CHIPPEWAY.</i> (From Edwards.)
1. Macqua	1. Mackwah
2. Amic	2. Amik
3. Oskingick	3.
4. Otawagane	4.
5.	5.
6. Ni-mi-chomiss	6.
7. No-co-miss	7.
8.	8.
9.	9.
10.	10.
11.	11. Wigwaum
12.	12.
13. O'chiti-goine	13.
14. Othai	14.
15. Winessis	15.
16. Ni na bem	16.
17. Nibit (my)	17.
18.	18.
19. Ni ni michomen	19.
20. Nin (I <i>or</i> me)	20.
21. Kin (you <i>or</i> thou)	21.
22.	22.
23. Ninawa	23.
24. Nipei	24. Nebbi
25. Nimisain	25.
26. Sipi	26. Sippim
27. Nipowen	27. Nip
28.	28. Neepoo
29. Matchi manitou	29. Manitou
30.	30. Poutwah
31. Oskingick (eyes)	31. Wiskinkhie
32. Scoutay	32. Scutta
33. Mih (to give)	33. Millaw
34.	34. Manitou
35.	35. Tawnè
36.	36. Mawlawtissie
37. Pemoussai (to walk)	37. Pimmoussie
38.	38. Weewin
39.	39. Malatit
40. Makisin	40. Maukissin
41. Kijis	41. Kissis
42. Na matape win (to sit down)	42. Mintipin
43.	43. Tah
44. Pipone	44. Pepoun
45. Mitic	45. Mittic

<b>CHIPPEWAY.</b> (From Long's Travels, Lond. edit. 1791.)	<b>KNISTENEWAUX.</b> (From McKenzie.)
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Mackquáh</li> <li>2. Amik</li> <li>3. Wiskinky (eyes)</li> <li>4. Nóndawan</li> <li>5.</li> <li>6.</li> <li>7.</li> <li>8.</li> <li>9.</li> <li>10. Equoysince</li> <li>11. Wigwaum</li> <li>12.</li> <li>13. Eshtergóan</li> <li>14. Oathty</li> <li>15. Lissy (human hair) (30)</li> <li>16. Nabaim</li> <li>17. Weebit</li> <li>18. Neegwotch</li> <li>19.</li> <li>20. Nin, nee (I, me, my)</li> <li>21. Keen, kee (thou, you)</li> <li>22. Neennerwind (we, us, our)</li> <li>23. Keennerwind (ye, your)</li> <li>24. Nippee</li> <li>25.</li> <li>26. Seepee</li> <li>27.</li> <li>28. Neepoo</li> <li>29. Matchee mannitoo</li> <li>30. Pooter chebockwoy</li> <li>31.</li> <li>32. Scotay or squitty</li> <li>33. Darmissey</li> <li>34.</li> <li>35. Tawny</li> <li>36.</li> <li>37. Pamosây (go, walk)</li> <li>38. Tuckunnumkewish</li> <li>39.</li> <li>40. Maukkissin</li> <li>41. Geessesesey</li> <li>42. Mantetappy</li> <li>43. Aúnday</li> <li>44. Bebone.</li> <li>45. Meteek</li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Masqua.</li> <li>2. Amisk</li> <li>3. Es kis och (eyes)</li> <li>4. O tow ee gie</li> <li>5.</li> <li>6. Nee moo shum</li> <li>7. N'o kum</li> <li>8.</li> <li>9.</li> <li>10.</li> <li>11.</li> <li>12.</li> <li>13. Us ti quoin</li> <li>14. O thea</li> <li>15. Wes ty ky</li> <li>16. Ní nap pem (my)</li> <li>17. Wip pit tah</li> <li>18.</li> <li>19. N'o'kamiss (my)</li> <li>20. Nitha</li> <li>21. Kitha (thou, you)</li> <li>22. Nithawaw</li> <li>23. Kitha (you, thou)</li> <li>24. Nepee</li> <li>25.</li> <li>26. Sipee</li> <li>27. Nepew</li> <li>28.</li> <li>29.</li> <li>30.</li> <li>31.</li> <li>32. Scou tay</li> <li>33. Mith (to give)</li> <li>34.</li> <li>35.</li> <li>36.</li> <li>37. Pimoutaiss (to walk)</li> <li>38.</li> <li>39.</li> <li>40. Maskisin</li> <li>41. Pisim</li> <li>42. Nematappe</li> <li>43.</li> <li>44. Pipoun</li> <li>45. Mistick</li> </ol>



<i>KNISTENEAX.</i> (From <i>Harmon's Journal</i> . 1820.)	<i>WINNEBAGO</i> (or <i>Nippegon</i> .) (From Professor Say.)
1. Musk-quaw	1.
2. A-misk	2. Nah-a-pah
3. Mis-kee-sick	3. Shtasso (eyes)
4. Me-tâ-wâ-ki	4. Naunt-shou-ah (ears)
5.	5.
6. E-mo-shome	6.
7. O-kome	7.
8.	8.
9.	9.
10.	10.
11.	11.
12.	12.
13. Is-te-gwen	13. Nahs-soo (head)
14.	14. Nach-keh (heart)
15. Mis-te-ky-ah	15.
16. Ne-nâ-bem	16.
17. Mee-pit (tooth)	17. Hee (teeth)
18. We-nâ-cum-mâ	18.
19. O-ko-miss	19.
20.	20.
21.	21.
22. Ne-on	22.
23.	23. Ne-eh
24. Ne-pee	24. Nee-nah ; neeh
25. E-miss	25.
26. Se-pee	26. Nee-shan-nuk
27.	27.
28.	28. Ah-noo (dead)
29.	29.
30.	30.
31.	31. Shtas-soo (eyes)
32. Es-quit-tu	32. Peych <i>or</i> pyche
33. Me-yow, may-gu (31)	33.
34.	34.
35. Tâ-ne-say	35.
36.	36.
37. Ke-to-tain (to go)	37.
38. Wee-ke-mow	38.
39. Na-mâw-ca-qui-me-wâ-sin	39.
40. Mos-ca-sin	40.
41. Pe-sim (32)	41. Weedah
42. Ap-pee	42.
43. Tâ-ne-tay	43.
44. Pe-poon	44.
45. Mis-tick (firewood)	45.

---

EXPLANATORY REMARKS ON THE PRECEDING COMPARATIVE  
VOCABULARY.

---

MOHEGAN.

(1) *Amisque*. “*E* final is never sounded in any Indian word which I write, except monosyllables.” *Edwards*.

(2) *Nemoghme*. “*Gh* in any Indian word has the strong guttural sound, which is given by the Scots to the same letters in the words *tough*, *enough*, &c.” *Edw.*

(3) *Nboo* or *nepoo*. “The first syllable scarcely sounded.” *Edw.*

(4) *Mtandou* or *mannito*. “The last of these words properly signifies a spectre or any thing frightful.” *Edw.* See the remarks of Mr. Heckewelder on the word *tschipey*, a spirit, in the Delaware language; No. 12. *infra*.

(5) *Tuneh*. “Wherever *u* occurs, it has not the long sound of the English *u* as in *commune*; but the sound of *u* in *uncle*, though much protracted. The other vowels are to be pronounced as in English.” *Edw.*

(6) *Mâghomân*. “Wherever *gh* occurs in the above specimen, the pronunciation is extremely guttural, and appears to be a strong characteristic of the language, hardly imitable by us.” *Jenks*.

(7) *Thēpow*. “*Th* sounded as in *thing*.” *Jenks*.

The recurrence of this sound of *th*, in Mr. Jenks' specimen of Mohegan, in cases where Dr. Edwards uses the letter *s*, constitutes a striking difference between their two vocabularies. This circumstance once led the Editor to suspect, that the difference might possibly have been occasioned by some inattention in writing down the words. But Mr. J. (whose great accuracy is well known) in answer to an inquiry on this point, says—“With respect to the sound of *th*, in my scanty specimen of Mohegan, published in 1804, I well recollect my informant's pronunciation, and have correctly described it, I find, as being like *th* in *thing*.” Unless, therefore, the individual Indian in question had a defective utterance, that occasioned a lisping pronunciation of the letter *s*, (which, however, Mr. J. does not intimate to have been the case) the specimen under consideration apparently belongs to a different dialect of the Mohegan from that spoken by the Stockbridge tribe. Its close resemblance to the Shawanese, in this sound of *th*, deserves notice; the more particularly so, as that sound is not found in the other dialects of the Comparative Vocabulary, with the exception of the *Knisteneaux*, in a few instances.

LENAPE or DELAWARE.

(8) *Wuschgink*. The student will observe, that the German writers of Indian words often use the letter *g* in cases where an

Englishman or Frenchman, for example, would use *k*; and the substitution of *k* for *g* will often disclose analogies that are not at first obvious. In the present instance, the Indian words for *eye*, in the kindred dialects, are generally written by English and other writers with the letter *k*, as will be seen in the Vocabulary. So the word for *sun*, which in Delaware is written with *g* (*gischuch*) is commonly written by the French and English with *k*; as *keesogh*, *keesuck*, *kizous*, &c. There are undoubtedly slight modifications of this sound in different dialects, which would sometimes require the use of *g* and sometimes of *k*; but the remark of Mr. Heckewelder on this point should be kept in mind by the student: "Sometimes (says he) the letters *c* or *g* are used in writing the Delaware language instead of *k*, to shew that this consonant is not pronounced too hard; but, in general, *c* and *g* have been used as substitutes for *k*, because our printers had not a sufficient supply of types for that character."\*

(9) *Wikwam*. "The *i* long, as *ce*." *Heckewelder*.

(10) *Wil*. "The *i* long." *Heckew*.

(11) *Tendeuhel*, make a fire. "I could send you no proper word for *dress the kettle*, as the Indians have no such expression." *Letter from Mr. Heckewelder to the Editor*.

(12) *Tschipey* or *tschitschank*. "The word *tschitschank*, for the soul or spirit in man, is the only proper word, and none other is to be made use of in discoursing on religion or religious subjects; though *tschipey* has been made use of, even by missionaries, who knew no better, and had learned it so from Indians, who had no conception of the purity of the soul or spirit, other than that after this life they would undergo a transformation, similar to something they had not before seen. Therefore they call the place or world they are to go to after death, *Tschipey-ach-gink* or *Tschipeyhacking*, the world of spirits, spectres or ghosts; where they imagine are various frightful figures. None of our old converted Indians would suffer the word *Tschipey* to be made use of in a spiritual sense; and all our Indians were perfectly agreed, that *Tschitschank* implied the *immortal soul* or *spirit* of man; and they had a reverence for the word itself, whereas the other had something terrifying in it." *Letter from Mr. Heckewelder*.

(13) *Lematachpil*. "The *i* long." *Heckew*.

#### MINSI.

(14) *Amochk*. This Minsi word is from Mr. Heckewelder's letter, before cited; all the others are from Barton, who informs us, that they also were originally obtained from Mr. Heckewelder. *New Views*, preface, p. x.

(15) *Angellowoagan*. The termination *-woagan*, (which corresponds to *-ness* in English and *-heit* or *-keit* in German) is commonly written *wagan* by Mr. Heckewelder; who informs us, that the Ger-

\* Correspond. with Mr. Du Ponceau, Letter xi. p. 382.



man missionaries sometimes put the letter *o* after the *w* in order to express the *English* sound of this last letter. *Correspondence with Mr. Du Ponceau, Letter xviii.*

## SHAWANESE, or SHAWANOESE.

(16) *Weesch.* Dr. Edwards thinks this word is mis-spelt, for *weensch.* *Observations, p. 6.*

## NARAGANSET.

(17) *Mosk.* "As the Greekes and other nations and ourselves call the seven Starres, or Charles' Waine, the *Beare*, so doe they [the Indians] *mosk* or *paukunnawaw*, the *Beare*." *Williams' Key, preface.*

(18) *Pautiínnea*, bring hither.

(19) *Wetu*, an house ; *wetuómuck*, at home.

(20) *Nippitch ewò*, let him die.

(21) *Nippáíous*, sun. *Kesuck* is used for *the heavens*.

## MASSACHUSETTS.

(22) *Muskeesuk*, eye or face.

(23) *Wétu.* "*Weekuwout* or *wekuwomut*, in his house. Hence we corrupt this word *wigwam*." *Eliot's Gram. p. 11.*

(24) *Weshagan* ; the hair of beasts.

(25) *Nepauz*, sun. *Kesuk* is used for *the heavens*, as in the *Naraganset* dialect.

## ABNAKI.

(26) *Nepédave*, I blow the fire. *Râle.*

(27) *Peben*, the present winter ; *pebsné*, the past winter. *Râle.*

## ST. FRANCIS.

(28) *Temarquá.* In this specimen of the St. Francis dialect, the letters *ar* and *or* and *ur* appear to be used frequently to denote the sounds which we usually denote in English by *ah*, *aw* and *uh*.

(29) *Acommā*, he. "*Norsannup*, that man."

## CHIPPEWAY.

(30) *Lissy*, human hair. "*Opeeway*, hair of beasts." *Long.*

## KNISTENEÀUX.

(31) *Meyow*, *maygu* ; to give. *Harmon.*

(32) *Peesim*, sun ; *keesick*, sky. *Harmon.*

## NOTE 16.

*On the Winnebago Dialect.*

From the annexed *Comparative Vocabulary* it is already apparent, that the *Winnebago* dialect does not belong to the *Lenape* (or *Delaware*) stock, as was supposed at the time when Dr. Edwards wrote. This error has been accordingly corrected, (upon the authority of Professor *Say*) in the Notes upon that *Vocabulary*; where it is further observed, that the dialect in question has been since found to belong to the *Sioux* or *Naudowessie* stock.\* The Editor now has it in his power, through the kindness of Mr. Du Ponceau, to exhibit a small Table of several dialects, belonging to this latter stock; which will satisfactorily show the affinity of the *Winnebago*, and at the same time form a useful addition to our Indian vocabularies.† Mr. Du Ponceau, in his letters, makes the following observations on this point:

“I send you eight words in seven different dialects of what I call the *Sioux* or *Naudowessie* race of Indians. You will see that it extends from Lake Michigan to Louisiana, and forms one of what I call the two great *Ultra-Mississippian* Languages; the other is the *Pawnee*, or *Panis*, of which I have a vocabulary, but none of the idioms of its cognate tribes. Those I understand to be the *Keres*, *Comanches*, *Kiaways*, *Paducas* and others, yet but little known. Major Long had collected vocabularies of those languages on his expedition to the westward; but they were lost by the desertion to the Indians of a party of men who had charge of them. This Professor Vater bitterly laments, in a note at the end of the second part of his *Analekten der Sprachen kunde*. That these languages are branches of the *Pawnee* is a surmise of some of our travellers; the fact itself however, as we have no vocabularies of them, we cannot completely ascertain; but it appears to me very probable, because the *Pawnee* being a language *sui generis*, and having no connexion in etymology with the *Sioux* branch, it is nearly evident that it does not stand single; therefore I have put the *Pawnee* by the side of the *Sioux*, at the head of a second class, and I have little, if any doubt, that the fact will turn out so, when vocabularies shall enable us to ascertain it.”

An accurate *classification* of the Indian Languages must necessarily be a work of great labour, and for which we are

\* See p. 132.

† See p. 151.

not yet in possession of sufficient materials. It is a remarkable fact, and one which should be duly weighed by American scholars, that, for the best systematick arrangement of the languages of our own continent, we are still obliged to resort to the learned of the old world. To them we are indebted for that wonderful monument of philology, the *MITHRIDATES*; in which is to be found the substance of all that was known respecting the languages of America, until the late publications of Mr. Heckewelder and Mr. Du Ponceau. In that work we find a classification of the Indian languages, made with a sagacity and justness of discrimination, which are truly astonishing, when we consider under what disadvantages it must have been undertaken by writers, who are placed at so great a distance from the countries where those languages are spoken. The classification there given (both of the American and all the other languages of the globe) is made with so much care and ability, that it has been followed by the present learned *Ade-lung*, in his late *Survey of all the known Languages and their Dialects*.\* By the labours of the distinguished philologists above-mentioned, and of Baron *William von Humboldt* (who is now devoting his eminent talents to the *American* languages in particular) we may hope soon to be possessed of as perfect a classification, and as accurate general views of these languages, as can be desired. But while learned foreigners are thus devoting themselves to the more general views of the American languages, the scholars of our own country should not neglect to employ the means, which their local situation affords them, of carefully collecting all those details of the various dialects, which will be essential to the formation of an exact classification of them, and to the ultimate object of these inquiries—a just theory of language. Much has been recently done, in both these respects by Mr. Du Ponceau and Mr. Heckewelder, whose publications upon this subject (apparently dry and barren, but in reality interesting and fertile in results) have eminently contributed to the common stock of learning and to the elevation of our literary character. But, it may be added (as Mr. Du Ponceau himself observes) that “the knowledge, which the world in general has acquired of the American languages, is yet very limited.....The study of the different languages of the different races of men, considered in relation to their internal structure and grammatical forms, has but lately begun to be attended to, and may still be considered as being in its infancy; the difficulties which

\* Uebersicht aller bekannten Sprachen und ihrer Dialekte. 8vo. pp. xiv—185. St. Petersburg, 1820.



attend the pursuit of this interesting branch of science ought not to deter us from still pursuing it, in hopes of discovering some path, that may lead to a better knowledge than we yet possess of the origin, history, connexions, and relations, of the various families of human beings, by whom this globe now is and formerly was inhabited." \*

## COMPARATIVE TABLE

*Of Dialects of the Sioux or Naudowessie Stock; comprehending the Winnebago. Communicated by Mr. Du Ponceau.*

	SIoux.	OTTO.	KANZES.	MAHA or O MAHA.	OSAGE.	YANKTON.	WINNEBAGO.	NAUDOWESSIE. (From Carver's Travels.)
Mouth	Ee	Ee	Eh	E-hah	Ehaugh	Ee	Ee	Eeh
Hand	Nopay	Nawé.	F. Nombé.	F. Nombé.	Nomba	Napa	Nahper	
Foot	See hah (feet)	Ce. (Engl.)	Seh		See	Cé-há <sup>2</sup>	See	
Ear	Nokh-ray	Nantois.	F. Nabhah	Netah	Naughta	Nongkopa		Nookah (ears)
Sun	Wee	Pé			Meah	Oué	F. Wee-dah	Paahtah
Fire	Paytah	Pégé.	F.		Pajah	Pá-ta <sup>2</sup>	Peyeh	Paahtah
Water	Meneh	Nee	Nee	Nee	Neah		Nenah, neh	Mench
Dog	Shonkah	Shangocani	Shongay	Shinouda	Shongah	Shonka	Shonk	Shungush

"N. B. The letter F after an Indian word means French pronunciation; the words having been received through French interpreters. The rest is English pronunciation; and the figures 1, 2, over the vowels refer to *Walker's* pronunciation. P. S. DU PONCEAU." The column containing the *Naudowessie* (as Carver calls it) has been added to Mr. Du Ponceau's Table by the Editor.

\* Report on the American Languages; pp. xxii. and xlvi.

## POSTSCRIPT.

SINCE the preceding Notes were written, the Rev. Dr. Morse has published his *Report on Indian Affairs*, made to the Secretary of War, and comprising "a Narrative of a Tour performed in the summer of 1820 under a commission from the President of the United States, for the purpose of ascertaining, for the use of the Government, the actual state of the Indian tribes in our country." This important publication contains (among other things) copious *geographical* details of the Indian Nations, which would have superseded most of the remarks upon that point in the preceding Notes. The Editor has only to regret it was not sooner laid before the publick, and that it is now too late for him to avail himself of it with a view to making any improvements in the present work. He has, however, thought it would be acceptable to the reader if he should add from the Report (as Dr. Morse has obligingly permitted) the following specimen of the Mohegan dialect, as spoken by the present remnant of the *Stockbridge* tribe :

*Translation of the 19th Psalm into the Muh-he-con-nuk Language, done at the Cornwall School under the superintendence of Rev. John Sergeant, Missionary.*

1. Neen woh-we-koi-wau-con-nun wih-tom-mon-nau-woh neh week-chau- nauq-tho-wau-con Poh-tom-now-waus; don neh pau-inuh-hom-mau-we-noi-eke wpon-nooth-ne-kaun      wnh-tau-nuh- kau-wau-con.	1. The heavens de- clare the glory of God ; and the firmament shew- eth his handy work.
---	--

2. Woh-kom-maun aup-to-naun, don tpooh-quon wau-wiht-no-waun nooh- tom-mau-wau-con.	2. Day unto day utter- eth speech, and night un- to night sheweth knowl- edge.
---	---

3. Stoh nit-hoh aup-to-nau-wau-con een-huh un-neekh-tho-wau-con neh au-ton-nih stoh ptow-wau-mooq.	3. Their is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard.
--	---

4. Wtoh-pih-haun-woh pkoch-chih au-so-khaun mau-weh pau-paum'h hkey-eke, don neen wtaup-to-nau-wau-con-no-waun pau-chih wihq'h hkey-eke. Whuk-kau-wauk wtuh-tow-waun we-ke-neet neen ke-soo-khun.

5. Nuk nun au-now ne-mon-nawu tauq-peat wauk wpih-tow-we-kau-neek, don au-nom-me-naut au-now uh-wau-pau-weet nee-mon-nawu au-naut-wau-cheh.

6. Nik woh-wok nun wih-que-khuk woh-we-koi-wau-con-nuk, don neh wtin-ih wew-no-khaun psih-kauch aun-quib-quok: don-stoh nit-huh kau-qui kau-cheekh-no-wih nih stop au-pauth-mooq.

7. Neh wton-kom-meek-tho-wau-con Tau-paun-mo-waut kse-khau-yow, wquilg-nup-puhg-tho-haun-quon nuh wchuch-chuh-queen: neh wtaup-to-nau-wau-con weet-nuth-theek nuh Tau-paun-mo-waut wau-we-che-khun, wih-wau-wau-tom-no-haun-quon nuh stoh kau-qui wau-wih-tauq.

8. Neen wtun-kom-meek-tho-wau-con-nun. Tau-paun-mo-waut-wneekh-nuh, wtih-hon-nom-mih-hooq-nuh nuh wtuh-heen: neh whok-koh-keet-wau-con Tau-paun-mo-waut kse-khau-yow, wih-wau-po-haun-quon-nuh neen wkees-que-nuh.

9. Qkhaun Tau-paun-mo-waut penau-yow, neen o-neem-wau-wau-con-nin. Tau-paun-mo-waut wnau-mau-wau-con-no-won wauk conut-tuh toht que-wih.

10. Un-no-wewu uh-hau-youn-quohk neen don khow-wot, quau, don mkeh wowh-nihk khow-wot; un-no-wew sook-te-pook-tuh don aum-wau-weh soo-kut queh-now-wih neh wse-khi.

4. Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world. In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun,

5. Which is as a bridegroom coming out of his chamber, and rejoiceth as a strong man to run a race.

6. His going forth is from the end of the heaven, and his circuit unto the ends of it; and there is nothing hid from the heat thereof.

7. The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple.

8. The statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes.

9. The fear of the Lord is clean, enduring forever: the judgments of the Lord are true, and righteous altogether.

10. More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold; sweeter also than honey, and the honey-comb.



11. Wonk-nuh-hun, neen wewh-chih kton-nuh-kau-con eh-hom-maum-quoth-theen; don koh-khon-now-wau-tau-thow neen htawu mau-khauk hpon-noop-to-wau-con.

12. Ow-waun aum wke-sih nooh-tom-mon-nuh wpon-non-nuh-kau-wau-con-nun? kse-khih-eh key-oh neh wchih nke-mih mbon-nun-nuh-kau-wau-con-nih-koke.

13. Kaun-nuh kton-nuh-kau-con wonk neh wchih maum-cheen-wih-nau-kih mchoi-wau-con-nih-koke; cheen un-naun-tom-hun neen wauch aum un-nowh-kau-quoh: nun kauch ney-oh no-noi, wauk chih n'nkus-see-khoi neh wchih mau-khauk mchoi-wau-con-nuk.

14. Un-naun-toh neen ndaup-to-nau-wau-con-nun don neh oi-nih pnow-waun-tok nduh, wauch aum wow-we-kih-nau-yon, O Tau-paun-me-yon, duh-wau-paw-con wonk Pohp-quaukh-kon-neet.

11. Moreover, by them is thy servant warned; and in keeping of them there is great reward.

12. Who can understand his errors? cleanse thou me from secret faults.

13. Keep back thy servant also from presumptuous sins; let them not have dominion over me: Then shall I be upright, and I shall be innocent from the great transgression.

14. Let the words of my mouth, and the meditation of my heart, be acceptable in thy sight, O Lord, my strength and my Redeemer.

## I. INDEX OF MOHEGAN AND OTHER INDIAN WORDS, EXPLAINED IN EDWARDS' OBSERVATIONS.

☞ THE references in this Index to Dr. Edwards' work are made to the *original* paging, which is preserved in the margin of the present edition.

*Chip.* denotes Chippeway words;

*Moh.* ——— Mohawk; and

*Shaw.* ——— Shawanese.

The words not thus designated are all *Mohegan*.

A.	Page.		Page.
Amaquah, a beaver ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6	Kpumseh, thou walkest	11
Amik, a beaver ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7	Kpumsehmuh, ye walk	11
Amisque, a beaver	6	Ktuhwhunin, I love thee	14
Anneh, to	15	Ktuhwhunoohmuh, I love you	
Anuweeweh, more	12	( <i>plur.</i> )	14
		Ktumhecan, thy hatchet	12
		Ktumhecannoowuh, your hatchet	13
C.			
Chautok, seven ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9		
		M.	
G.			
Ghusooh, eight	9	Mackwah, a bear ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7
		Malatat, good for naught ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8
H.		Manitou, a spirit or spectre, ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7
Hkeesque, eye	6	Mannito, a spirit or spectre, devil	7
Hpoon, winter	8	Matansautee, a coward	14
K.		Mattipeh, sit down	8
Kahnuh, very	12	Maukissin, a shoe ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8
Keah, thou,	7, 16	Mauquah, a bear ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6
Kelah, thou ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7	Mawlawtissie, an impostor, he is a bad man ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7
Keauwuh, ye	7	Meenuh, give it him	7
Kelauweh, ye ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7	Meetsch, eat thou	15
Keesogh, the sun	8	Meetsoo, he eateth	15
Kialeh, four ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9	Metooque, wood	8
Kissis, the sun ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8	Millaw, give it him ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7
Kmattanissauteuh, you are a coward	14	Mintipin, sit down ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8
Kmeetseh, thou eatest	15	Mittic, wood ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8
Knisk, thy hand	17	Mkissin, a shoe	8
Kogh, thy father	13	Mquoh, a bear	7
Kpeesquasooeh, you are a girl	14	Mtandou or mannito, devil	7
Kpehtuhquisseh, thou art tall	11	Mtannit, ten	9
Kpehtuhquissehmuh, ye are tall	11	Mtissoo, an impostor, he is an impostor or bad man	7

Mtissoo, he is homely	11	Nmeetsch <i>or</i> nemeetsch, I	
Mtit, good for naught	8	eat	15, 16
<i>N.</i>			
Naughees, my grandchild	6	Nmeetsehnuh, we eat	16
Nauneeweh, nine	9	Nnisk, my hand	17
Nauwoh, four	9	Nochehnuh, I run from	15
Nbey, water	8	Nocumthau, my grandmother	
Nboo <i>or</i> nepoo ; dead, <i>or</i> he is		( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6
dead	7	Noosthethau, my grandchild	
Ndinnehnuh, I run to	15	( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6
Ndinnohoh, I walk to	15	Nogh, my father	13
Ndiotuwauch wupkoh, I shall		Noghoh, three	9
fight to-morrow	15	Nohhum, my grandmother	6
Ndoghpeh, I ride	15	Notoghogh, I walk from	15
Nduhwhuntammin, I love it	14	Npehtuhquisseh, I am tall	11
Nduhwhununk, I love them	14	Npehtuhquissehnuh, we are	
Ndumhecan, my hatchet	12	tall	11
Ndumhecannuh, our hatchet	13	Npumseh, I walk	11
Nduwhunuw, I love him <i>or</i>		Npumsehnuh, we walk	11
her	14, 16	Nsase, an uncle by the mo-	
Neah, I ( <i>pronoun</i> )	16	ther's side	11
Nebbi, water ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8	Nsconmoo, he is malicious	11
Neaunuh, we	7	Nsconmowukon, malice	16
Neauweh ( <i>Shaw.</i> ) See		Nsees, my uncle	7
<i>Wneeweh.</i>		Nuchehque, an uncle by the	
Neesoh, two	9	father's side	11
Neepoo ; dead, he is dead		Nunon, five	9
( <i>Chip.</i> )	7	<i>O.</i>	
Nelah, I ( <i>pronoun</i> ) ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7	Ocheh, from	15
Nelauweh, we ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7	Ohs, three ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9
Nemannauw, a man	10	Oiect, the man who lives <i>or</i>	
Nemannauk, ( <i>plur.</i> ) men	10	dwells in a place	12
Nemannauwoo, he is a man	12	Oioetet, the man who fights	12
Nemeetsch : See Nmeetsch		Otaheh, his heart ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7
Nemeethau, elder sister ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7	<i>P.</i>	
Nemoghome, my grandfather	6	Paumse-an, thou walking	12
Nepoo <i>or</i> nboo ; dead, he is		Paumseauk, we walking	12
dead	7	Paumseauque, ye walking	12
Neeseethau, my uncle ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7	Paumseecheek ; they walking,	
Netohcon, an elder brother	11	they who walk	12
Ngheesum, a younger brother		Paumseet, the man who walks	12
<i>or</i> sister	11	Paumseet, he walking	12
Ngwittoh, one	9	Paumse-uh, I walking	12
Ngwittus, six	9	Pautoh, fetch	6
Nip ; to die, I die	7	Peatoloo, fetch ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6
Nippee, water ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7	Peesquasoo, girl	6, 14
Nmase, an elder sister	11	Pehtuhquissecheek, the tall	
Nmees, elder sister	7	men	12



Pehtuhquisseet, the man who is tall	11	Utumhecannoowuh, their hatchet	13
Pehtuhquisssoo, he is tall	11	Uwoh ; he, that man, this man, this thing	6, 16
Pehtuhquisssook, they are tall	11		
Penumpauso, a boy	10		
Pepoun, winter ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8	W.	
Peyuhtommauwukon, religion	16		
Pimmoussie, go ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8	Wasech eh, her husband	
Pomthalo, he goes ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6	( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7
Poutouwah ; dress the kettle, make a fire	7	Waughech eh, her husband	7
Poutwah, dress the kettle, &c. ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7	Waunseet, the man who is beautiful	12
Pumisseh ; go, walk thou	8, 17	Weecuah, house ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6
Pumissoo, he goes	6, 11	Weekuwuhm, house	6
Pumissook, they walk	11	Weenseh, his head ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6
		Weensis, his head	6
		Weesch : See weenseh	
S.		Weeween, marry	8
Scutta, fire ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7	Weewin, marry ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8
Sekeenundowhukon, hatred	16	Weghaukun, hair	7
Sepoo, river	7	Welah, he, that man, ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6
Sippim, river ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8	Welathoh, hair ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7
Skeesacoo, eye ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6	Wepeetalee, his teeth ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7
Sottago, eight ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9	Wepeeton, his teeth	7
Squathauthau, a girl, ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	6	Wialeh, ten ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9
Stauw, fire	7	Wigwaum, house ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7
		Wisk, five ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9
		Wiskinkhie, his eyes ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7
T.		Wnechun, his child	10
Tah, where ( <i>Chip.</i> )	8	Wneeweh, I thank you	7
Tawné, how ( <i>Chip.</i> )	7	Wnissoo, he is beautiful	11, 12
Teggen eh, two ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9	Wnoghquetookoke, Stock-bridge	15
Tegah, where	8	Wnoghquetookoke ndinne-	
Teuhtoh, nine ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9	toghpeh, I ride to Stock-	
Thepee, river ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7	bridge	15
Tmohhecan, hatchet or axe	12	noche-	
Towacah, ear ( <i>Shaw.</i> )	7	toghpeh, I ride from	
Towohque, ear	6	Stockbridge.	15
Tuneh, how	7	Wnukuwoh ndiotuwoh, yes-	
Tupouwus, seven	9	terday I fight	15
		ndiotuwohpoh,	
U.		yesterday I fought	15
Uhwhundowukon ( <i>noun</i> ) love	16	Wupkauch ndiotuwoh, to-	
Ukeesquan, his eyes	7	morrow I fight	15
Unisk, his hand	17		
Uskot, one ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9	Y.	
Utoh, his heart	7		
Utumhecan, his hatchet	12	Yoiyok, six ( <i>Moh.</i> )	9

## II. INDEX OF THE PRINCIPAL MATTERS IN EDWARDS' OBSERVATIONS AND THE EDITOR'S NOTES.

☞ THE references to Dr. Edwards' work are made to the *original paging*, which is preserved in the margin of the present edition. The other references (distinguished by the letter N) are to the *numbers* of the Editor's Notes.

A.		D.	
	Page.		Page.
Abstract terms; as common in the Mohegan as in other languages	16 and N. 12	Daggett (Rev. H.) his remarks on the modes of expressing the relations of <i>futher, mother, &amp;c.</i> in various dialects	N. 8
— formed in the Delaware by the termination <i>wagan</i>	<i>ib.</i>	Declensions, none in Delaware	N. 4
— in the South American languages	N. 12	Delaware language, radically the same with the Mohegan	5
Adjectives, none in Mohegan	11	— the most widely extended of any language, east of the Mississippi. See <i>Introduction to Notes.</i>	
— few in the Delaw.	N. 7	— Indians, where situated, &c.	N. 15
— mode of expressing degrees of comparison	<i>ib.</i>	Dual number, in some American languages	N. 5
— their place supplied by verbs	<i>ib.</i>		
Affixes, used to express the pronouns	12	F.	
— manner of using them	14	Father, Mother, &c. not used without the pronominal affixes, <i>my, thy, &amp;c.</i>	13 and N. 8
— analogy of Hebrew and Mohegan	16	Future tense, expressed by affixing the sign of it to the adverb, &c. which accompanies the verb.	15 and N. 11
Algonkins speak a dialect of Mohegan	5		
Appellatives ( <i>father, mother, &amp;c.</i> ) never used in Mohegan without a pronominal affix	13		
C.		G.	
Cases, only one in Mohegan which varies from the nominative	16	Genders, no diversity of in Mohegan	10
— in the Massachusetts lang.	N. 4.	— in the Massachusetts and Delaware	N. 3
— none in the Mexican lang.	<i>ib.</i>	— in Delaware, in the case of certain animals, expressed by a distinct word	<i>ib.</i>
— seven in the Quichuan	<i>ib.</i>	Guaranese language has only a singular number	N. 5
Cherokee, specimen of verbs in,	N. 14		
Chili, the language has a singular dual and plural number	N. 5		
Chippeway language, radically the same with the Mohegan	5		
— specimen of	7		
Comparison of adjectives	12		

## H.

- Hebrew, its analogy in some respects to the Mohegan 12, 16  
 Hurons and Iroquois cannot pronounce the labials N. 2

## I.

- Iroquois : *See* Hurons.  
 Infinitive mode, never used in Mohegan 13  
 Inflexions of nouns, none in the Mexican or Orinokese languages N. 4

## K.

- Killistenoos : *See* Knisteneaux.  
 Knisteneaux speak a dialect radically the same with the Mohegan 5  
*See also Notes.*  
 ——— where situated, &c. N. 15

## L.

- Labials, abound in Mohegan 9  
 ——— none in Mohawk *ib.*  
 ——— remark of La Hontan respecting N. 2  
 La Hontan, his acquaintance with the Indian languages denied by Charlevoix N. 15  
 Lenni Lenape, the true name of the Delawares *ib.*  
 Lord's Prayer : *See* Pater Noster.

## M.

- Mahicanni, the true name of the Mohegans N. 15  
 Massachusetts language, radically the same with the Mohegan 5  
 ——— Indians, their situation, &c. N. 15  
 Menomonees 5  
 ——— where situated, &c. N. 15  
 Messisaugas or Messisauagers 5  
 ——— where situated, &c. N. 15  
 Mexican language has no inflexions of nouns, except for the singular and plural N. 4  
 Minsi or Munsee, radically the same with the Mohegan 5  
 ——— numerals N. 1  
 Mohawk, entirely different from Mohegan 9  
 ——— specimen of *ib.*

- Mohawk, has no labials  
 ——— numerals *ib.* and N. 1  
 Mohegan, dialects of it spoken throughout New England 5  
 ——— various dialects enumerated *ib.*  
 ——— has eight parts of speech 15  
 ——— radically the same with the language of Eliot's Bible 5  
 ——— Lord's Prayer in it 9  
 ——— its resemblance to Hebrew in the affixes 12, 16  
 ——— Indians, various names of N. 15  
 Muhhekanneew : *See* Mohegan.  
 Munsees : *See* Minsi.

## N.

- Nanticokes, or Nanticooks 5  
 ——— where situated, &c. N. 15  
 Natick language, properly called the *Massachusetts* *ib.*  
 Nipegons 5  
 ——— the same with the Winnebagoes N. 15  
 ——— where situated, &c. *ib.*  
 Nouns may be turned into verbs in the Indian languages 14 and N. 10  
 Numbers (of nouns, &c.) their variety in the American languages N. 5  
 Numerals, in Mohegan & Mohawk 9  
 ——— how far they may be used to ascertain affinities of dialects N. 1

## O.

- Orinokese languages have no inflexions of nouns N. 4  
 ——— do not apply the plural number to irrational animals N. 5  
 Orthography of the Indian languages, example of the differences occasioned by its unsettled state N. 1  
 Ottowaus, *more properly* W'tawas 5  
 ——— where situated, &c. N. 15  
 Ottogamies 5  
 ——— where situated, &c. N. 15



<i>P.</i>		Specific terms, more used than generic ones	N. 14
Parsons (Gen.) his list of Shawanese words	6	St. Francis Indians, dialect of Mohegan	5
Participles, all Mohegan verbs have them	11	_____ where situated	N. 15
_____ are declined, as verbs are	12	Stockbridge dialect, the one which is the subject of Edwards' work	5
Pater Noster, in Mohegan	9	Suffixes: <i>See</i> Affixes.	
_____ in Mohawk	<i>ib.</i>		
See also <i>Note</i> 1.		<i>T.</i>	
_____ how far translations of it may be used, to prove affinities of dialects	N. 1	Tenses, past and future used	15
Penobscot language, radically the same with the Mohegan	5	_____ past and future expressed by a form of the present	<i>ib.</i>
Peruvian language: <i>See</i> Quichuan.		_____ expressed sometimes by variations of the noun or adverb accompanying the verb	<i>ib.</i>
Plural number, how formed in Mohegan	10	_____ and N. 11	
_____ of the American languages, various forms of	N. 5	<i>U.</i>	
Prefixes: <i>See</i> Affixes.		Unami numerals	N. 1
Prepositions, very few in Mohegan	15		
_____ rarely used except in composition	<i>ib.</i>	<i>V.</i>	
Pronouns, prefixed and suffixed to nouns and verbs	13	Verb substantive, wanting in Mohegan and many other Indian languages	14
<i>Q.</i>		_____ and N. 9	
Quichuan, or Peruvian, language has seven cases of nouns	N. 4	_____ transitive, never used without expressing both agent and object	13
<i>R.</i>		Verbs, the nominative and accusative pronouns always affixed to them	14
Rale's MS. Dictionary of the Abnaki	N. 15	_____ their radix is the third person sing. indic.	15
Relations (of <i>father, mother, &amp;c.</i> ) more carefully distinguished by the Mohegans than by Europeans	11	_____ formed out of nouns	14
_____ remarks on the Indian mode of using nouns expressing these relations	N. 8	_____ and N. 10	
Relative pronouns <i>who</i> and <i>which</i> wanting in Mohegan	12	_____ how used in the American languages in speaking of different objects	N. 14
_____ also wanting in some languages of S. America,	N. 6	Vocabularies of Indian languages, caution, to be used in forming them	17
<i>S.</i>		_____ and N. 14	
Saukies	5	<i>W.</i>	
_____ where situated, &c.	N. 15	Wagan, a Delaware termination for abstract terms; corresponding to <i>-ness</i> in English, & <i>-heit</i> or <i>-keit</i> in German	N. 12
Shawanese, radically the same with the Mohegan	5	Winnebagoes	5
_____ specimen of	6	Woagan, the same as wagan	N. 12
		W'tawas (or Ottowaus)	5

## OBITUARY NOTICE OF PROFESSOR PECK.

IT being an established custom of the Massachusetts Historical Society to notice the decease of its members, and to give some account of their life and character, it was thought that this could not be better done, in the present instance, than by copying the following article, published in the Boston Daily Advertiser of the 8th of October, 1822; which is understood to have been written by a distinguished citizen and scholar, whose undeviating friendship and kindness, for many years, brightened the existence of our departed associate. Some notes are here added by a member of the Society, to whom the deceased was known, and by whom he was respected and beloved from early life.

---

DIED at Cambridge on the 3d instant, WILLIAM DANDRIDGE PECK, Esq. aged 59, Massachusetts Professor of Natural History in Harvard University.\* Mr. Peck enjoined on his surviving friends not to permit any ceremonious interment, or any of those publick testimonies of respect, by which the members of that seminary are accustomed, very properly, to express their regret at

\* Mr. Peck was the son of Mr. John Peck, and was born in Boston, May 8th, 1763. His mother, whose original name was Jackson, died when this son was seven years old. Though this bereavement occurred to him at so early an age, he felt it keenly, and cherished her memory with fond affection, through the whole course of his life. It is not improbable that the event contributed, with other circumstances, to cast the shade of melancholy over the mind of the son, which at times required the best influence of his friends to disperse. At the commencement of the siege of Boston, in 1776, the family removed to Braintree, where the subject of this memoir for a time pursued his studies under the direction of the Rev Mr. Weld; and removing afterwards to Lancaster, he was placed under the care and tuition of the Rev. Mr. Ward of Brookfield, by whom he was prepared for admission to the College, and by whom he was ever after esteemed and beloved.

the loss of an associate, and valued officer.\* Mr. *Peck's* injunction should not be considered as expressive of his disapprobation of a custom, highly important in such an institution. No such opportunities should be lost of impressing on the minds of youth, the value of a virtuous and honourable, literary and scientific life.—To Mr. *Peck's* personal character alone this dread, even of posthumous praise, is to be ascribed : and in the short account of his blameless life, which it may be permitted to one of his earliest friends to give, as a very feeble expression of tenderness and respect, the causes of this uncommon fear of exciting publick attention will be perceived. It is not, however, from private feelings alone, that this brief sketch of Mr. *Peck's* biography is presented. The institution of which he was a member, and the state of which he was a distinguished citizen, have a claim to the just praise of his talents and knowledge, which he was too diffident to permit to be noticed ; and we have a right to make this sacrifice of private duty, for higher and more important objects.

There was nothing about Mr. *Peck's* life or character, which could furnish the materials of a highly wrought picture ; nothing which would address itself to the passions or the imagination. It was simply the example of an unaided and retired individual, struggling, during the greater period of his life, against every discouragement, upborne by his genius and love of study, and constantly

\* Mr. P. was seized with his last illness, which was a third attack of *hemiplegia*, on the night of the 10th of September preceeding his death. His powers of utterance were gone, but those of his understanding seemed not in the least affected. He was at once impressed with the conviction, that it was to be his last sickness, and the next morning wrote with a pencil, "no funeral, no eulogy ;" thus exhibiting, to the last, that aversion to parade, which was always a distinguished feature of his character. It seems not improbable that he was moved, in this instance, by the remembrance that the funeral obsequies of his valued friend and associate, *Levi Frisbie*, A. M. *Alford* Professor of Natural Religion, Moral Philosophy, and Civil Polity, had then lately been attended, with all the respect which was due to the memory of that excellent man. A very just and impressive Eulogy was delivered on that occasion, in the chapel of the University by Mr. *Norton*, *Dexter* Professor of Sacred Literature. It is not necessary to add, that due regard was paid to this dying request of Mr. P. He was privately entombed, without any of those ceremonies usual on similar occasions, and which would doubtless have been affectionately observed, in this instance, by every member of the University.



adding new stores to a powerful mind, capable of comprehending all that it received from reading and observation, and of analyzing, arranging and preserving it.

Mr. *Peck* was admitted Bachelor of Arts at Cambridge in 1782.\* He was destined for commercial pursuits, and passed a regular apprenticeship in the counting house of the late Hon. Mr. *Russell*. His exactitude and industry acquired for him the confidence and lasting friendship of that distinguished merchant.†

Mr. *Peck's* father was a man of very great genius in the mechanick arts. He was the most scientifick, as well as the most successful naval architect, which the United States had then produced. The ships built by him were so superiour to any then known, that he attracted the attention of Congress, and was employed by them to build some of their ships of war. But his talents did not bring him that pecuniary reward, which all who knew the superiority of his skill have admitted was his due; and, disgusted with the world, he retired to a small farm in *Kittery*, resolved that his models, founded, as his son always affirmed, on mathematical calculations, should never be possessed by a country, which had treated him with so much ingratitude.‡

\* While an undergraduate, Mr. P. was considered as among the most respectable of his class, making it his rule to give the needful application to every prescribed study: and while he was distinguished for his classical attainments, he also at that period discovered an attachment to those branches of Natural History, his progress in which so much occupied and delighted him through life. It was remarkable of him that although it was a fixed principle of his conduct, by a strict conformity to the laws and regulations of the College, to retain the favourable opinion of every member of the government; at the same time, by the uniform courtesy of his deportment, and his habitual kindness, he equally possessed the respect and good will of the undergraduates.

† It was in conformity to his father's wishes, that Mr. *Peck* received a mercantile education. His own predilections were for the profession of medicine; and after the removal of the family to *Kittery*, he made application to Dr. *Bracket*, to be received as his pupil. The writer of this has been informed, that the doctor, having at the time the number of students allowed by the rules of the faculty to be taken by one physician, was on that account obliged to decline the proposal. On circumstances so trivial in themselves, often depend the complexion and whole course of a man's after life.

‡ These models the son preserved, with the most scrupulous attention and care, to his death, believing that they must one day be duly valued, and come into general use. He once received the offer of a very handsome sum of

The failure of the father's schemes defeated Professor *Peck's* prospects as a merchant ; and, at an early age, he too imbibed not a little of his father's discontentment with the world, (a very pardonable error in a young man, who venerated his father's talents and virtues,) and retired to the same obscure village, to pass the whole of that period of life, which nature has designed should be the most active.

During nearly twenty years Professor *Peck* led the most ascetick and secluded life, seldom emerging from his hermitage.\* But his mind, so far from being inactive, was assiduously and intensely devoted to the pursuits, to which the bent of his genius and taste inclined him. At a time when he could find no companion, nor any sympathy in his studies, except from the venerable Dr. *Cutler* of *Hamilton*, who was devoted to one branch of them, botany, Mr. *Peck* made himself, under all the disadvantages of very narrow means, and the extreme difficulty of procuring books, an able and profound botanist and entomologist. But his studies were not confined to these two departments only. In zoology, ornithology and ichthyology, his knowledge was more extensive than that of any other individual in this part of the United States, and perhaps in the nation.†

money for them, from one of our most intelligent, enterprising and successful merchants. This offer he declined accepting, avowing as the reason, his wish that the government of the United States might first avail itself of the principles, in the construction of national ships. It is believed that he once communicated this wish to some member of the government, from which, however, nothing resulted. The models, together with many drawings, yet remain : but it is to be feared that the professor's knowledge of the principles on which they were formed, will be found requisite to the full understanding and use of them.

\* Though Mr. *Peck* undoubtedly sympathized in the chagrin felt by his father, he never indulged to misanthropick feelings. On the contrary, he made occasional visits to *Boston*, and there enjoyed in a high degree the society of many friends, by whom he was respected and beloved. He also made frequent excursions to *Portsmouth*, where he found those who were alive to his merits, and who assisted by their attentions to enliven his sequestered life. The late worthy Dr. *Bracket*, before named, and his excellent lady, ever welcomed him to their hospitable mansion as a beloved son ; and so long as they lived to bless and adorn the society in which they moved, they contributed all in their power, and this was very much, to his comfort and enjoyment.

† During Mr. *Peck's* residence at *Kittery*, and two or three years that he lived in a delightful spot in *Newbury*, where the river *Artichoke* joins the

One trait in his character ought here to be noticed ; and the more so, because the opposite defect is the most prevailing one in our country.—What he *did know*, or attempt to study, he studied profoundly ; and if his knowledge failed in extent, it was in all cases owing to want of health or means. To those who knew him well, before his removal from his obscurity to *Cambridge*, it appeared astonishing how, with advantages so slender, and under discouragements so chilling, he could have acquired so much.

It was principally with a view to draw this learned and indefatigable labourer of natural history from his retreat, that the subscription for a Professorship of Natural History at *Cambridge* was commenced. This has once been denied : but the writer of this article, and one of his friends, having been the most active circulators of the subscription, and fully and entirely acquainted with its origin, *knew it to be true*. Mr. *Peck* was elected by the subscribers the first professor :\* and it is due to his memory to say, that he resisted the first solicitations most feelingly, and with great zeal. He desired his friends to recollect the hermit life he had led ; and that, at so advanced a period, after habits of seclusion had been so long rooted, it would be impossible for him to come forth into active life, and to give to his favourite pursuits all the interest, and the charms of eloquence, of which they are susceptible ; but which he feared he was not qualified to do.

But his friends, who wished the country to do an act of tardy justice to merit so long neglected, would not listen to his objections, and compelled him to accept the appointment. The Board of Visitors wished him to visit the scientifick establishments of *Europe*, with which he complied. Having been with him during a part of that tour, we are enabled to state confidently, that he was re-

*Merrimack*, prior to his removal to *Cambridge*, he made a most beautiful collection of the insects with which our country abounds, with many fine preservations of aquatick plants, and of the more rare species of fishes to be found on our coast, and in our rivers and lakes.

\* March 27th, 1805.



ceived by the men of science in *England* and *France* as a brother, and his merit was highly appreciated.\*

Mr. *Peck* inherited his father's taste for mechanical philosophy, and as an artist he was incomparable. His most delicate instruments, in all his pursuits, were the products of his own skill and handicraft. We shall never forget the astonishment of one of the first opticians of *London*, when Mr. *Peck* requested him to supply a glass, which had been lost out of a microscope *made by himself*,—nor the warm friendship he discovered for him, when he was satisfied that he was so able a self-instructed artist.†

But Professor *Peck's* knowledge and taste were not confined to natural history and mechanicks. We are aware that, with some men, these qualifications are considered of secondary merit. Mr. *Peck* had that delicate tact as to every subject of taste, which all men admit to be the proof of superior genius. He was a good classical scholar; more correct than many, who make higher pretensions to it. He was truly and deeply a lover and a correct judge of the fine arts. He was fond of painting, and sculpture, and architecture; without professing to have skill in them. No man, who ever saw the exquisite accuracy and fidelity, with which he sketched the subjects of his peculiar pursuits, in entomology or botany, could doubt the refinement of his taste.

Of his character in social life,—of his virtues,—we are disposed to follow his own wishes, and to leave them to the recollection of a few friends, who knew him intimately. They were of that pure, and simple, and sincere, and unaffected character, which such a life, devoted to

\* Mr. P. was three years absent on this tour. His longest stay was in *Sweden*. To him, the country that gave birth to *Linnaeus* was classick ground. During his absence he collected a valuable library of books connected with the subjects of his professorship, and which belong to the foundation; together with many exquisite preservations of natural subjects, and rare specimens of art, many of which were presented to him by the scholars and men of science in *Europe*, with whom he formed an acquaintance in his travels.

† His favourite exercise and amusement was with his lathe; and he has left some fine specimens of turning, executed by him after he had wholly lost the use of one of his hands.

such innocent and delightful pursuits, was calculated to produce. If greater probity, sincerity, honour, delicacy,—are often to be met with, society must indeed be happy.

If it should be asked why, with such attainments, Professor *Peck* has left no greater and more enduring publick proofs of his learning and genius? we reply by asking, where can be found a case in a young country, a country so much in want of such talents, in which a man of genius and profound erudition was suffered to pine, for twenty years, neglected and unknown?—And could it be expected, after all his hopes and prospects had been so long chilled, that he would come out, with a debilitated frame, a constitution broken down by study and meditation, with all the ardour and activity of early cherished and flattered youth? It is unjust to expect it:—and yet Professor *Peck* has left enough to convince every reading man, and every feeling mind, that he was fully worthy of the honour conferred upon him; and such generous and honourable minds will only regret that our country and its seminaries had not availed themselves of his talents, while health and hope and joy would have given energy and eloquence to his pen, and thus have enabled him to erect for himself a better monument than this tribute of truth and friendship; and to produce for his country some work, which would have done it honour abroad, and have stimulated its youth to equal exertions in science.

But he has not lived in vain: He has shewn what may be done without encouragement, and amidst all possible discouragements: and his cheerful, philosophical and resigned exit proves, that a life so employed has its reward even on earth.\*

\* Religion, as well as philosophy, sustained Mr. *Peck*, during the varied scenes of a life in which he suffered much, gave him an habitual cheerfulness during his protracted infirmities, and brightened his last hours with the enlivening hopes of a Christian. Mr. *Peck's* family were Congregationalists. From some cause, not now to be ascertained, he was not baptized in his infancy. In his riper years he gave his decided preference to the discipline and worship of the Episcopal Church, and, when more than thirty years of age, he was baptized by the late excellent Bishop *Bass*. The writer of this

THIS article cannot be better concluded, than by the following closing paragraphs of a Sermon, preached by the Rev. President *Kirkland* before the University, on the Sunday after the death of Professor *Peck*, from *Isaiah* lvii. 2: "He shall enter into peace: they shall rest in their beds, each one walking in his uprightness."

THE subject is adapted to the occasion which calls our thoughts to a respected and beloved member of our academick body, who has in the last week gone to his rest. We are deprived of another of our literary ornaments, another of our associates in interesting and important duties and cares.

We felt the great affliction, which it pleased God he should suffer in a protracted period of infirmity, when his strength was weakened in the way; and we mourn the loss of one so valued and endeared. Whilst we are affected with the sense of these chastisements, we would acknowledge the alleviations that attend the inflictions of Heaven. We would take a grateful notice of that good Providence, which, amidst trials and difficulties, allotted our friend a large portion of blessings, and we would especially place among these blessings, his aptitude and inclination to study the works of nature; and the opportunity he enjoyed for so much of his life of indulging the predominant inclination of his mind. We are consoled that he found much of that inward repose which he coveted. He experienced the benign and soothing influences of faith, hope and charity. Not that he was exempt from mortal suffering. His susceptibility of temperament, his delicacy of taste and generosity of disposition, could not fail to lay him open at times to inquietude and even to anguish. But philosophy and religion did much to mitigate and assuage in him those feelings, which few are permitted, in this state of trial and imper-

note was one of his "chosen witnesses," and can never lose the remembrance of the impressive solemnity, with which the holy office was administered, nor of the pious humility, with which it was received.



fection wholly to avoid or overcome. He was distinguished for uprightness and probity of mind ; for a delicacy of moral sentiment corresponding to the purity and refinement of his perceptions in subjects of taste. He ever exercised a firm and tender reliance on the truths of natural and revealed religion, and paid an exemplary respect to the duties of the Christian profession.

His peculiar pursuits contributed no doubt to form his temper and character, and exerted a powerful moral influence upon his affections.

The examination of the works of God is an inexhaustible source of pleasure and improvement to the individual. The multitude and variety of objects in the external creation ; the beauty, the structure, economy, connexion and uses of the animated and inanimate parts of nature must be acknowledged to be fitted to delight an elegant mind, and to produce emotions sublime and pleasing. In this view, these studies are entitled to high consideration. But the highest recommendation of the pursuits of the naturalist is their tendency to carry lessons of truth and virtue to the heart. From looking at the creatures and things on earth, are not our thoughts and affections drawn to him, who is the original Fountain of being, order and life, who thus reveals himself to his intelligent offspring, man, in unnumbered forms, and speaks to him in unnumbered voices, and calls him to adore the Author, Benefactor and Father of all ? Are we not constrained to trust him, whose power, wisdom and benignity are seen above and below, from the heavenly bodies to the minutest insects, "those puny vouchers of omnipotence ?" Are we not taught resignation to the providence and government of God, believing that he who never destroys the least particle of dust will never annihilate the noblest of his creatures on earth ? Shall we withhold our homage, our love, our obedience, from this greatest and best of Beings ?

The student of nature should feel himself near to the Divinity, walk in his presence, will what he wills, and co-operate with him for the common good. Can mean, selfish sentiments dwell in his heart, and must he not feel

prompted to imitate the benevolence which he sees and partakes? Those who knew our excellent friend can bear witness to the good effect of his studies upon his mind and heart. He was intimately conversant with the productions of divine power and wisdom in the external creation. He was accustomed to see God in his works. He lived and died in a sense of his being and presence, and the hope of his favour. May the principles and expectations which he cherished, and all the considerations of reason and religion adapted to sustain the heart of the afflicted, have power to minister comfort to those who were united to him by strong and tender ties.\* It is not for us to judge when the Arbiter of life and death has no further any use for his servants on earth, or when it is fit they should pass from weariness to rest, and from service to reward.

As for man, his days are as the grass; as a flower of the field, so he perisheth: for the wind passeth over it and it is gone, and the place thereof shall know it no more. Blessed be God that the virtuous dead are prisoners of hope; that death is not the extinction of being; and that a renovated, superiour life shall visit the grave.

MEMOIRS OF MR. WILLIAM BLACKSTONE, AN EARLY PLANTER  
OF BOSTON.

WHEN the first planters of Massachusetts arrived, in the year 1630, they found Mr. William Blackstone,† an Episcopal minister, already seated on the peninsula of *Shawmut*, now the city of Boston, at the west part of it, near a spring, where he had a cottage, a garden plot, and,

\* Mr. Peck left a widow and one child, a son, aged about ten years. With a mind peculiarly adapted to the serene enjoyments of domestick life, Mr. P. from a discreet regard to prudential considerations, deferred a matrimonial connexion until his settlement in the Professorship at *Cambridge*, gave him assurance of a competent support for a family. The worthy lady of his choice was a daughter of the late Rev. *Timothy Hilliard*, D. D.

† Whether *Blackston* or *Blackstone* be the true orthography is submitted. Both are common to the records. It is *Blaxton* in Prince's *Chronology*.

subsequently, an orchard planted by his hand.\* “Having escaped the power of the lord bishops in England, and soon becoming discontented with the power of the lord brethren here,” he made a removal about the year 1635. In the year 1634 all the then inhabitants of Boston purchased of him all his right and title to the peninsula of *Shawmut*, he having been the first European occupant, each of whom paid him six shillings, and some of them more. With the proceeds of this sale he purchased cattle and made the removal already noticed, having resided in Boston, it is conjectured, about ten years.† The place to which he removed—the “Attleborough Gore” of history—fell within the limits of Plymouth colony, in the records of which colony we find further memoirs of this respectable and memorable man. His name, however, does not occur in those records until the year 1661, the date of “Rehoboth north purchase,” when this remark occurs in describing the bounds—“From Rehoboth, ranging upon Patucket River, to a place called by the natives *Wawepoonseag*,‡ where one Blackstone now liveth,” &c. This is probably the aboriginal name of a rivulet now known as “Abbot’s Run,” in Cumberland, R. I. and which is tributary to the Patucket.—His house was situated near the banks of the river, on a knoll, which he named “Study Hill.” It was surrounded by a park, which was his favourite and daily walk for a series of years.

His wife, Mrs. *Sarah Blackstone*, died “in the middle of June, 1673. His death occurred May 26, 1675, having lived in New England about fifty years. His age can only be conjectured from the dates already given. Two children are noticed in the records—*John Blackstone*, who appears to have had guardians appointed by Plymouth government, 1675, and a daughter married to

\* It has been said, that the first orchard in Massachusetts and the first in Rhode Island were planted by his hand.

† Leichford, who wrote in 1641, makes this remark.

‡ *Wawepoonseag*. This word has the animate plural termination. It may denote a place where birds were probably ensnared or taken. *Wawce* is a name for the “goose” of one species, and *poonseag* seems to indicate “nets” or “snares.”



Mr. *John Stevenson*, who received an assignment of part of Mr. Blackstone's real estate, for his kind care of him in his declining years. The death of Mr. Blackstone happened at a critical period—the beginning of the Indian war of 1675—6. His estate was desolated, and his house and library burned by the natives. These disastrous events, however, he did not live to witness; they occurred a short time after his decease. He lies buried on classick ground, on Study Hill, where, it is said, "*a flat stone marks his grave.*"

His name, now extinct here, will be found on the first list of freemen of Massachusetts, 1630, and we hope and trust the musing stranger will hereafter find it on some marble tablet of historical inscriptions, by the side of his *spring*, and the banks of his *stream*.



*Inventory of the Lands, Goods and Chattels of Mr. William Blackstone: Taken, May 28, 1675, by Mr. Stephen Paine and others, of Rehoboth.*

REAL ESTATE NOT PRIZED.

Sixty acres of land and two shares in meadows in Providence. The west plain, the south neck, and land about the house and orchard, amounting to two hundred acres, and the meadow called Blackstone's meadow.

LIBRARY.

3 Bibles, 10s.—6 English books in folio, £ 2	£ 2	10
3 Latin books in folio, 15s.—8 ditto large	}	2 15
quarto, £ 2		
15 small quarto, £ 1 17 6.—14 small do. 14s.		2 11 6
30 large octavo, £ 4.—25 small do. £ 1 5		5 5
22 duodecimo		1 13
53 small do. of little value		13
10 paper books		5

£ 15 12 6

Remainder personal 40 11

Total personal £ 56 3 6

This note is made in the margin : "This estate (the moveables) was destroyed and carried away by the natives." *Plymouth Colony Records*, 1675.

Sept. 1822.

S. D.

ON THE QUESTION—WHAT IS THE MEANING OF THE ABORIGINAL PHRASE *SHAWMUT*?

IT is recorded in our annals, "that the first planters of Massachusetts found but one spring at Charlestown, the water of which was brackish, being overflowed by the tide ; that Mr. Blackstone, the first Englishman who had ever slept on the peninsula of *Shawmut*, going over to Charlestown at this juncture, August, 1630, informed Gov. Winthrop of an excellent spring of water at *Shawmut*, and invited him over to his side of the river," &c. &c. Thus far is authentick history. Let us now examine the Indian dialects, in connection with the wants and pursuits of the aborigines.

Water was to them, as it is to all, an article of the first necessity. As they did not dig wells, they travelled far to find springs ; the places where they were found became desirable situations, and, according to their migratory habits, occasional places of residence. If the ground were fertile in the vicinity, and fishing stations were at hand, such places became the almost permanent abode of a great aboriginal population. An examination of some of the native dialects affords these results :

*Ashim* signifies "a spring," in the dialect formerly spoken by the natives of Mashpee, in the county of Barnstable.

*Ashimuit*, called also *Shumuit*, was the name of an Indian village, which existed in former ages, on what is now the confines of Sandwich and Falmouth, where there is a large spring, still the resort of the natives in that vicinity.

"*Shaume-neck*," and "*Shaume-river*," is the record name of Sandwich itself. There is a *spring* near the

town neck, and there is another near the source of the river or brook which passes through that village.

*Shimmuo* is the aboriginal name of a place in Nantucket, where an Indian village formerly existed, and where there is a large spring.

*Shamouahn* is the Micmac name for "water," and for "drink."

These instances, which may be multiplied, are sufficient examples of this aboriginal phrase, in its uses and application. The result seems almost conclusive, that when the spring at *Mishawumut*, "a great spring," was overflowed by the tide, the aborigines were probably in the daily habit of crossing over in their canoes to the opposite peninsula to procure fresh water, where springs were excellent and abundant. Hence the name *SHAWMUT*, *fountains of living water*.

If it be objected, that this name for a spring does not occur in Eliot's Indian Bible, I can only say, that anomalies are incident to all languages, aboriginal as well as cultivated; that the words *fountain*, *source*, and *spring*, so different in orthography and in sound, are all used by us in one sense, and applied to one object; that the aborigines have qualifying names for cold, clear, red, white, great springs, as well as civilized man; that *wutohkekum*, the Massachusetts and Narraganset name for "a spring," is derived from *wuttatash*, "drink," and *likegat*, "day," or "clearness"—that is, "a clear spring;"\* and that the word *ashim* has a similar origin from *wuttatashmuit*, in which the compound ideas of "drink" and "a spring" are understood: hence the evident derivations *tashmuit*,† *ashimuit*, *ashim* and *shumuit*, all meaning the same thing—"a spring."

Sept. 1822.

S. D.

\* Hence *Keekamuit*, "a clear spring," the aboriginal name of Bristol, R. I.

† The name of a place in Truro, where the forefathers "first found and drank New England water."——Nov. 1620: The residence of the Rev. Mr. Avery, a former minister of Truro, was in the vicinity of a very copious spring, and which is the *Tashmuit* part of the township.



## NOTES ON THE SPRINGS OF BOSTON,

Communicated in connexion with the preceding article.

1639. UNDER this date Wood, an early writer, says—"This place (Boston) hath very good land, affording rich corn fields and fruitful gardens; having likewise *sweet and pleasant springs*." To which it may be subjoined, that "Spring Lane" derived its name from a copious spring in that vicinity formerly.

A respectable author (the late Rev. Dr. Lathrop) remarks on the springs of Boston, "that on the north, as well as on the south side of Beacon Hill, and on the range of high ground connected with it, many springs are found; and some of them seem to be inexhaustible." He adds—"It is to be hoped those hills will be regarded with a kind of religious respect."\* If it be admitted that hills are the reservoirs of springs, what may be the consequence of levelling the hills, as it respects springs? Will they not sink deeper, and occasionally disappear?

Mr. Feron, who analyzed the waters of Boston, says—"The water of Beacon Hill, Charter Street, and some in New Boston, appeared most free from impurities."

A modern writer on Boston (Shaw) remarks that, in 1800, "Blackstone's spring is yet to be seen on the westerly part of the town, near the bay which divides Boston from Cambridge."

Sept. 1822.

\* Transactions of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

---



---

 INSTANCES OF LONGEVITY IN NEW HAMPSHIRE.

*A list of such Persons in New Hampshire as have attained to the one hundredth year of their age, or have exceeded that period; together with a considerable number, who have died between 90 and 100 years.*

Time of Decease.	Names.	Residence.	Age.
1686,	John Browne,	Portsmouth,	98
1689,	Moses Cox,	ditto	93
1732,	William Perkins,	Newmarket,	116
1736,	John Buss,	Durham,	108
1739,	James Wilson,	Chester,	100
1754,	William Scoby,	Londonderry,	110
1754,	James Shirley,	Chester,	105
1765,	Elizabeth Hight,	Newington,	100
1772,	Howard Henderson,	Dover,	100
1775,	William Craige,	Chester,	100
1775,	Mrs. Craige,	ditto	100
1775,	Mrs. Lear,	Portsmouth,	103
1775,	Mrs. Mayo,	ditto	106
1776,	John Morrison,	Peterborough,	98
1783,	Rev. Joseph Adams,	Newington,	93
1787,	Robert Macklin,	Wakefield,	115
1788,	William Partridge,	Portsmouth,	92
1788,	Madam Warner,	ditto	91
1789,	Mrs. Ulrick,	Hollis,	104
1790,	Mrs. Hayley,	Exeter,	101
1791,	Jacob Green,	Hanover,	100
1791,	Widow Davis,		100
1791,	James Shirley,	Chester,	100
1793,	James Wilson,	ditto	100
1795,	Dea. Joseph Bouttell,	Amherst,	90
1795,	Rebecca Bouttell,	ditto	91
1796,	Rev. Ebenezer Flagg,	Chester,	92
1796,	Mary Cate,	Portsmouth,	90

Time of Decease.	Names.	Residence.	Age.
1796,	Mrs. Taylor,	Portsmouth,	95
1797,	Mr. Jenkins,	ditto	98
1800,	Jeremiah Towle,	Hampton,	94
1800,	Elizabeth Newmarch,	Portsmouth,	100
1800,	Thomas Wason,	Chester,	100
1801,	Deborah Hale,	Concord,	97
1801,	Dea. Benjamin Foster,	Walpole,	94
1801,	Hannah Smith,	Nottingham-west,	92
1801,	Sarah Lang,	Greenland,	96
1801,	Ezekiel Leathers,	Durham,	102
1802,	Abednego Leathers,	ditto	101
1803,	Grace Towne,	Amherst,	96
1805,	Hannah Lovejoy,	ditto	102
1806,	Sarah Burdet,	ditto	94
1806,	Dea. Francis Chase,	Newtown,	91
1806,	Lydia How,	Westmoreland,	91
1807,	Dea. Nathan Hall,	Mason,	92
1808,	Hannah Bouttell,	Amherst,	95
1808,	Martha Chesmore,	Dunbarton,	101
1808,	Daniel Davis,	Allenstown,	105
1808,	Margaret Bacon,		101
1808,	Mrs. M'Clench,	Merrimack,	100
1808,	Elizabeth Potter,	Lebanon,	100
1808,	Catharine Sherburne,	Conway,	101
1809,	Joshua Foss,	Barrington,	100
1809,	Sarah Stewart,	Amherst,	92
1810,	Catharine Sanborn,	Sanbornton,	100
1810,	Mrs. Hixon,	Portsmouth,	100
1810,	Tabitha Bohannon,	Salisbury,	101
1811,	Mrs. M'Intire,	Goffstown,	106
1811,	Maj. Ezra Deolph,	Hopkinton,	102
1811,	Mary Bean,	Sutton,	100
1811,	Nathan Blake,	Keene,	100
1811,	Benjamin Conner,	Exeter,	100
1812,	James Atwood,	Hampstead,	100
1812,	Abigail Wright,	Hollis,	96
1812,	Hannah Gurdy,	Chester,	98
1813,	Joanna, Hixon,	Newington,	105



Time of Decease.	Names.	Residence.	Age.
1813,	Mary Davidson,	Goffstown,	100
1813,	Dye, (a negro)	Exeter,	105
1813,	Lt. John M'Curdy,	Dunbarton,	95
1813,	John Wardwell,	Londonderry,	96
1814,	Mary Wallace,		94
1815,	Abigail Sanborn,	Hampton,	94
1815,	Abigail Mason,	ditto	94
1815,	Rebecca Trickey,	Rochester,	96
1815,	Widow Horn,	Dover,	95
1815,	Peter Folsom,	Gilmanton,	97
1815,	Dorothy Hall,	Winchester,	94
1815,	Jonas Wheeler,	New Ipswich,	90
1815,	Anna Leavitt,	Hampton,	100
1815,	Sarah Morse,	Salem,	100
1815,	John Shaw,	Holderness,	101
1815,	Dr. John Crocker,	Richmond,	100
1816,	Elizabeth Richards,	Newington,	101
1816,	Phebe Dow,	Seabrook,	101
1816,	Zeno, (a negro)	Nottingham,	101
1816,	William Taylor,	Milford,	98
1816,	Joanna Gordon,	Epping,	95
1816,	Joseph Batchelder,	Wilton,	96
1816,	Mary Patten,	Bedford,	95
1816,	Barnabas Palmer,	Milton,	96
1816,	John Brown,	Amherst,	95
1817,	Hannah Badger,	Gilmanton,	95
1817,	Widow Patterson,		95
1817,	Susan Harvey,	Nottingham,	90
1817,	Samuel Webb,	Exeter,	90
1817,	Joseph Kidder,	Temple,	92
1817,	Mary Calfe,	Concord,	98
1817,	Grisel Patterson,		95
1817,	Col. John M'Duffee,	Rochester,	94
1817,	Elizabeth Darling,	Portsmouth,	102
1817,	Elizabeth Pitman,	Epsom,	100
1817,	Abigail Craig,	Rumney,	105
1817,	Mrs. Bunker,	Barnstead,	105
1817,	Mary Fernald,	Portsmouth,	100

Time of Decease.	Names.	Residence.	Age.
1818,	Hannah Foss,	Gilmanton,	103
1818,	Dorcas Rowe,	Meredith,	100
1818,	Corydon, (a negro)	Exeter,	100
1818,	Ann Nock,	Dover,	94
1818,	Robert Alexander,	Dunbarton,	93
1818,	Robert M'Clure,	Acworth,	97
1818,	Elizabeth Hayes,	Atkinson,	97
1818,	Elizabeth Straw,	Salisbury,	94
1818,	Deborah Hoit,	Stratham,	93
1818,	Deborah Ball,	Portsmouth,	92
1818,	Mary Moore,	Nottingham-west,	94
1818,	Charles Huntoon, Esq.	Unity,	93
1818,	Jemima Goffe,	Bedford,	90
1818,	Margaret Combs,	Merrimack,	90
1818,	Joseph Sylvester,		91
1819,	Archibald Stark,	Hopkinton,	90
1819,	Samuel Farrington,	Washington,	94
1819,	James Steel,	Antrim,	95
1819,	Paul Pinkham,	Dover,	91
1819,	Hannah Daniels,	Keene,	97
1819,	Elizabeth Moody,	Pelham,	90
1819,	Abigail Whitaker,	Marlborough,	96
1819,	Molly Cromwell,	Dover,	94
1819,	Widow Heard,	Concord,	91
1819,	Eleanor Pike,	Meredith,	101
1819,	Jacob Davis,	Sutton,	105
1819,	William Prescott,	Gilford,	102
1820,	Samuel Downs,	Somersworth,	100
1820,	Widow Cilley,	Poplin,	101
1820,	Abigail Corson,	Rochester,	97
1820,	Josiah Folsom,	Exeter,	95
1820,	Jenny Smith,	Hancock,	98
1820,	John Herriman,	Plaistow,	97
1821,	Amos Abbott,	Concord,	93
1821,	Jonathan Foster,	Mason,	100
1821,	Joanna Aplin,	Keene,	100
1821,	Jane M'Lellan,	Wentworth,	100
1821,	Mrs. Godfrey,	Deerfield,	101

Time of Decease.	Names.	Residence.	Age.
1821,	Mary Smith,	Salem,	101
1822,	Reuben Abbott,	Concord,	100
1822,	Thomas Walker,	Sutton,	103
1822,	Maj. Gen. John Stark,	Manchester,	94
1822,	Capt. Wm. Marshall,	Hampstead	97
1822,	Mrs. Submit Sanderson,	Chesterfield,	93

*Of Uncertain Date.*

Mr. Lovewell,	Dunstable,	120
Mrs. Belknap,	Atkinson,	107
Mrs. Tucker,	Rye,	100
Mrs. Beals,	Keene,	101
Mrs. Parker,	Chesterfield,	103
Mrs. Welch,	Rumney,	100
Mrs. Copp,	Sanbornton,	100
Dea. Noah Johnson,	Plymouth,	100
Mrs. Cunningham,	Peterborough,	99
Mrs. Emerson,	New Chester,	96
Mrs. Smart,	Sanbornton,	99
Thomas Drew,	Durham,	93
Hannah Fuller,	Andover,	95
Mr. Stevens,	New Chester,	90
Jane Woodward,	Greenfield,	96
Hannah Bradford,	Milford,	96
Isaac Smith,	Montvernon,	91
Thomas Livingston,	Henniker,	95

*Now living, upwards of 100 years.*

Lucy Wilson,	Keene,	100
Tryphena Stiles,	Somersworth,	101
Madam Mary Barnard,	Amherst,	101
Sarah Kelley,	New Hampton,	103
Mrs. Cephas,	Chesterfield,	105
Samuel Welch,	Bow,	112



*Remarks.*

It is believed that the preceding list comprises nearly all, who have, in the state of New Hampshire, attained to their hundredth year; but those between 90 and 100 being far more numerous, it would be attended with some difficulty, and require considerable time, to collect a complete list. Between the years 1735 and 1761, there died in Hampton, 23 persons of 90 years and upwards. In Dover, between 1767 and 1786, five persons died above 90 years of age, and one of 100. In Exeter, in four years, preceding 1789, two persons died between 90 and 100 years. In Portsmouth, in 1801, two persons died, one aged 99, the other 95; in 1802, in the same place, one person died at the age of 90; another at the age of 94. In 1782, two women died in Londonderry, each at the age of 93. The oldest person who has died in the state was Mr. Lovewell, at the age of 120, who was the father of Col. Zaccheus Lovewell, mentioned in Belknap's Hist. N. H. Vol. II. The oldest now living is Mr. Samuel Welch, of Bow, who was born at Kingston in this state, September 1, 1710.

*Concord, N. H. 28 October, 1822.*

---

---

HUTCHINSON PAPERS.

[By direction of the Governour and Council of this Commonwealth, the Secretary of State has deposited with the Massachusetts Historical Society a large collection of documents, publick and private, which appear to have been used by the late Thomas Hutchinson, Esquire, Governour of his Majesty's Province of Massachusetts Bay, in the composition of that History, which will probably continue to be the best narrative of any of the settlements on this continent. Several of these papers are printed in the collection of papers by Hutchinson, sometimes called the third volume of his History. Those here printed have been transcribed with great care by gentlemen of experience in the chirography of the different seasons of their date. In succeeding volumes other pieces may enrich our Collections. ED.]

Sir

FIRST I give you thanks for your kindness to me at my being with you both first and last, as also for your kind letter, whereby I am sometimes restrained from unseasonable reproofs, as after I conceive they would have been.

Now (being the more bold upon the consideration of your former love) I desire to be troublesome to you for the resolution of these questions: first, whether it be convenient that I should pray for my good lady in the publick assembly; being then the mouth of the people to God, such a petition seems to be heterogeneal, and like a string out of tune; if convenient, whether when she is present, and in what words.

Another question is concerning their toys they use at the time, which they say they celebrate in remembrance of Christ's birth (though they never less remember him) viz. carding, dancing, &c. I know not what my duty is, that I may discharge a good conscience. I have oft upon occasion spoken against mixt dancing after feasts, little thinking there had been any such suffered and practised here.

A third is this: on Valentine's day they have a custom to write names in papers and put them together in an hat, and then every one draws a Valentine (so they term it.) I would know whether it be lawful.

Our two young ladies came to me being sick on an ague to draw one, which since hath not troubled me, and therefore the rather I desire your judgment in this case, that if it be a sin, I may humble myself for my negligence, and may upon occasion speak against it.

Remember, I pray you, my best love to Mrs. Cotton, Mr. Holden, and Mr. Vicars. So I commend you and yours to the peace of God, desiring the continuance of your prayers for us.

Yours in all Christian affection,

ASHBY, March 3, 1625.

R. LEVETT.

*To my much respected and very kind  
friend, Mr. COTTON, preacher of  
the word at Boston, give these.*

A reply, in Cotton's hand, is written on the same paper, as follows :

Good Mr. Levett,

I AM glad to hear of your recovery and of the constancy of my lady's good affection and respect to you. The Lord go on still to establish both unto you, that you may have the more opportunity to do God and that family faithful service, according to your desire.

To pray in particular for friends by name, even in publick, is not unlawful. Paul desired it for himself, as well of the whole church of Ephesus as of the private members, Eph. vi. 19. Neither is it inexpedient so to pray for kings, or any other, in authority or in any eminency either for place or distress. And though themselves be present, yet there will be no suspicion of flattery or other inconvenience, if we do not so much praise them to God for their stiles and virtues, as pray for his mercy, the blessing to them and theirs. If I were to pray in any great man's family, I would usually crave some or other mercy and blessing from God upon his servant the governor of this family ; and in the publick congregation, in praying for the nobility or gentry, I would also mention his servant or servants then assembled, with some title of their reference to the congregation.

Carding I take to be unlawful, and containing in it a lottery, at least in the shuffling and cutting and dealing. And a lottery also it is to choose Valentines in that sort you mention. Where man and his action is only causa per accidens of an event (as in carding and in choice of Valentines) God is the only and immediate causa per se. Now to appeal to him and his immediate providence for dispensing these ludicra, seemeth to me a taking of God's name in vain.

Dancing (yea though mixt) I would not simply condemn. For I see two sorts of mixt dancings in use with God's people in the Old Testament, the one religious, Exod. xv. 20, 21, the other civil, tending to the praise of conquerors, as the former of God, 1 Sam. xviii. 6, 7.



Only lascivious dancing to wanton ditties, and in amorous gestures and wanton dalliances, especially after great feasts, I would bear witness against, as a great flabella libidinis.

Your witness bearing against such things, is (I take it) in opening some scripture, and from thence instructing in the truth and dissuading the contrary.

---

BOSTON, *this 12th of 6*

*To our beloved Brother, FRANCIS HUTCHINSON, at Acquethnick.*

Beloved Brother in our Lord Jesus,

YOUR letters of the 9th of the 5th were read to the church the 19th of the same, in which you “desired to be recommended to the word of God’s grace, according to Acts xx. 32, and so to be dismissed from your covenant with us, because you being forced to attend upon your parents there, where you live, you could not attend upon the duties of the covenant.” But though we find the church willing to gratify you in any lawful motion, because they hear a good report of your constancy in the truth and faith of the gospel, yet in this motion they neither can nor dare assent unto you, as wanting warrant from scripture light. The place, which you quote, doth not suit with your case. For in Acts xx. 32, when Paul commended the elders of Ephesus to the word of God’s grace, it was not a recommendation or dismissal from one church to another; (much less from a church to no church, which is your case,) but they, being elders of a Christian church at Ephesus, Paul commended them to the study of the scriptures, and to the preaching of the word of grace, which was fit, (by the blessing of Christ) to build up them and their hearers to salvation. Were you gifted of God to preach the word

to his people, or if there were elders that could preach the same to you in a church estate, (as they did at Ephesus) we should readily recommend you unto them, and to the word of grace, dispensed by them. But we dare not recommend you from a church to no church. For the covenant of the church is a perpetual and everlasting covenant, Jer. l. 5. And therefore, though we may recommend you from one church to another, and so from one covenant to another; yet we cannot recommend you to no church, nor dismiss you from our covenant, till the Lord dismiss you. Do not think the Lord dismisseth you by your parents' authority, who call you to serve them in a place so far distant, that the duties of church covenant cannot be performed between us and you. For, first,—your parents deal sinfully, and bring upon themselves the guilt of your breach of covenant, if they detain you there needlessly; seeing the covenant, which you entered into with the church, was undertaken with their consent and desire, and therefore now it will stand in force before the Lord, both against them and you, if you do break your covenant, Numb. xxx. 4. Secondly,—distance of place, though it hinder some duties of church fellowship, yet not all. We may still be helpful one to another, in prayers and counsels and others. And when God's hand calleth to such distance, he accepteth such duties as we can perform, and exacteth not such duties as we cannot perform. We read of some proselytes and members of the church of the Jews at Hierusalem, who were scattered in a far greater distance than you are from us. For some dwelt in Parthia, some in Mesopotamia, some in Pontus and Asia, some in Phrygia and Pamphylia, and others in many other regions, Acts ii. 8 to 11. And yet they still kept covenant and communion with the church of Jews; as did also the Eunuch of Æthiopia, who came when he could (though he could come very seldom) up to Hierusalem for to worship, Act viii. 27. And Solomon's mariners, that made a three years' voyage for gold (1 Kings, x. 22) they were not dismissed from their church covenant by their far distance and long absence but still continued

as before ; and we doubt not the prayers of the church were not in vain to make their voyage safe and prosperous.

But that which is the sum of your request, so far as it is lawful, we would be loath to neglect. We are desirous to recommend you to the guidance and keeping of the grace of Christ in all our solemn assemblies : And if God will be pleased to give your father to hearken to our counsel, to remove to any orthodox and orderly church, we shall, at your request, be willing to recommend you to them ; but further to go the Lord doth not allow us.

One thing we thought good further to acquaint you with, that our teacher, being thought by some to say, that you forebore sitting at table with your mother, though others deny it, and others remember it not, nor he himself ; yet to be sure that no mistake might follow of it, he publicly professed before the face of the church, that if he so spake, it was his forgetfulness, but verily thinketh it was either his own misplacing of his intentions and words, or a mistake in the hearers, who applied what he spake in general to your particular case. For, in the general, he said, indeed, that with excommunicate persons no religious communion is to be held, nor any civil familiar connexion, as sitting at table. But yet he did put a difference between other brethren in church fellowship, and such as were joined in natural or civil near relations, as parents and children, husband and wife, &c. God did allow them that liberty, which he denies others. Upon his speech, the offence that was conceived by some, was removed ; and we hope, neither doth any offence rest upon you therefrom. To your father and self, and others of our brethren, we have written at large, to satisfy such doubts, as we understand by our messengers have troubled them. The Lord watch over you all for good, and keep you spotless and blameless, faithful and fruitful to him, to his heavenly kingdom in Christ Jesus. In whom we rest, your loving brethren.

J. COTTON,

With the rest of the Elders, in the name of the Church.



Worthy Sir,

BEING informed that there is a part of the goods that be come over (in the late ships) that belong to the College, therefore being unwilling to trouble the whole Court with the business, I thought it sufficient to acquaint you with my mind, so much rather because you have received in my accounts for the last year, and may when you please (on two days' warning) for this year, since the beginning of 8.ber, 1642, to the same, 1643. Now two things do I desire; the first, that what is coming to the College may be paid me in kind, for the last year's rate, which was given me, besides all the delays and over-prevailing entreaties of some poor neighbours that thought themselves overcharged, and so have got partly some releases, and many whole forbearance even to this day. This inconvenience hath been distractive, that I was to receive it at so many men's hands; and albeit the constables should have saved me this labour, yet our neighbours, knowing I should receive it inevitably, appealed from them to myself. Yea, also, that gross sum of £40, that was to be paid from one man, hath not; nor indeed could it be paid without distraction to myself in accounts, and turnings over; and unwillingness in some to receive there, with some words of complaint as if their expectation were not answered in that which they received, wherein they in a sort both blamed myself, because they received not satisfaction at my hands immediately, and him from whom they had it, though both of us causelessly. Therefore, my first desire is, that the College may have its due in kind, if this may be no offence; else I submit.

The second thing is this, that you would be pleased to inform those whom it may concern, that hitherto, with all conscionable and diligent providence that I could, have I disbursed and expended whatever hath come to hand in mere buildings for the house; and seeing that now that work in this house will draw to a period (though haply £30 will not fully finish it yet) I desire to know whether the country will allow me any personal interest in any of the said goods, for and in consideration of the abatements

that I have suffered, from £60 to £50, from £50 to £45, from £45 to £30, which is now my rent from the ferry, and you know in what manner in my family charged, and by my tenants discharged. I was and am willing, considering the poverty of the country, to descend to the lowest step, if there can be nothing comfortably allowed me; I still sit down appeased, desiring no more but what may supply me and mine with food and raiment, (and to give every one their own) to the furtherance of the success of our labours for the good of Church and Commonwealth, without distraction in the work whereunto I am called, and, by God's great mercy and goodness, cheerfully therein abide; desiring your prayers for a continuance, and your praises to God for the sanctifying of all the passages of his fatherly providence towards

Your loving and much bounden

HENRIE DUNSTER.

*Cambr. 7 bris 18th, 1643.*

This letter was undoubtedly to Governour WINTHROP.

#### ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF DONATIONS.

THE thanks of the Massachusetts Historical Society are presented for the following donations.

A. HOLMES, *Corresponding Secretary.*

Webster's Discourse at Plymouth, December 22, 1820, in commemoration of the first settlement of New England. *Presented by the Trustees of the Pilgrim Society.*

Tuckerman's Discourse before the Society for propagating the Gospel among the Indians and others in North America, 1821. *The Society.*

A Vindication of Mr. Adams's Oration; Trial of Daniel Davis Farmer for the murder of Anna Ayer, 1821. *Mr. J. B. Moore.*

Tenth Report of the New Hampshire Bible Society.

*Mr. John Farmer.*

Wells's Address before the Massachusetts Charitable Mechanick Association. *The President of the Association.*

Perry's Discourse in Bradford 200 years after the settlement of New England. *The Author.*

Pierce's Discourse at the Dudleian Lecture, 1821. *The Author.*

Charter of the New Hampshire Medical Society. *Hon. Samuel Morrill.*

Colman's Sermon at the Installation of Rev. James Flint in Salem. *The Author.*

Jenks's Sermon before the Massachusetts Society for the Suppression of Intemperance, 1821. *The Author.*

The true Travels, Adventures, and Observations of Captain John Smith, in Europe, Asia, Africke and America. 2 vols. 8vo. Richmond, Virg. *John Dorr, Esq.*

Ancient Sermons, 12mo. (title page wanting.) *James Savage, Esq.*

Rev. Israel Evans's Discourse, delivered at Easton, 17th October, 1779, to the Officers and Soldiers of the Western Army; Rev. Mr. French's Election Sermon, New Hampshire, 1822; Historical Sketch of Amherst in New Hampshire, by John Farmer; Memorial from Auctioneers of the City of New York to the Congress of the United States; Report on a Disease afflicting Cattle at Burton, N. H. by James F. Dana, M. D.

*Mr. John Farmer.*

Topographical and Historical Sketch of the Town of Andover, N. H. by Jacob B. Moore. *The Author.*

Collections, Topographical, Historical and Biographical, relating principally to New Hampshire. Nos. I. and II. of Vol. I.

*The Editors, J. Farmer and J. B. Moore.*

Minutes of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the United States, from A. D. 1814 to 1821 (excepting the year 1818;) Narrative of the State of Religion within the Bounds of the General Assembly of



the Presbyterian Church ; Extracts from the Report of the Board of Missions to the General Assembly of ditto ; Fifth Report of the United Foreign Missionary Society, 1822 ; Fifth Report of the Philadelphia Sunday and Adult School Union Society, 1822. *Rev. Timothy Alden.*

Sketches of the Ecclesiastical History of the State of Maine, from the earliest settlement to the present time, by Jonathan Greenleaf, Pastor of a Church in Wells.

*The Author.*

Two Discourses, containing the History of the Church and Society in Cohasset, delivered December 16, 1821 ; with a Geographical Sketch of Cohasset ; by Jacob Flint.

*The Author.*

Historical Sketch of the Convention of the Congregational Ministers in Massachusetts ; with an Account of its Funds ; its connexion with the Congregational Charitable Society ; and its Rules and Regulations.

*Corresponding Secretary.*

Report on Free Negroes and Mulattoes.

*Theodore Lyman, jun. Esq.*

Another copy of the same Report.

*Nathan Hale, Esq.*

Historical Notices of the New North Religious Society in Boston, with Anecdotes of Rev. Andrew and John Eliot.

*Mr. Ephraim Eliot.*

Europe, or a General Survey of the present Situation of the principal Powers, &c. with Remarks on the Census of the Government of the United States.

*The Author of the Remarks.*

A Sketch of the Life of Robert Morris : written for the Philadelphia Edition of the Edinburgh Encyclopædia.

*The Author.*

The New York Spectator.

*The Publishers, Francis Hall & Co.*

The Columbian Centinel. *Benjamin Russell, Esq.*

The Weekly Messenger. *Nathan Hale, Esq.*

The Boston Gazette. *Messrs. Russell & Gardner.*  
 The New England Galaxy. *Mr. J. T. Buckingham.*

## FOR THE CABINET.

Seven elegant Medals, representing distinguished characters and events, preserved in a handsome case:—  
 1. Christopher Columbus.—2. Washington.—3. Franklin.—4. Paul Jones.—5. Kosciusko.—6. William Washington.—7. John Eger Howard.—The two last commemorate the battle of the Cowpens. All have appropriate emblems and inscriptions. On the reverse of G. Washington's is the following: *HOSTIBUS PRIMÒ FUGATIS.—BOSTONIUM RECUPERATUM, XVII. MARTII MDCCLXXVI.*  
*Hon. George William Erving.*

---

MEMBERS OF THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY,  
 ELECTED SINCE THE PUBLICATION OF THE LIST, VOL. 1.  
 P. 8.

## RESIDENT MEMBERS.

James Savage, Esq. of Boston.  
 Ephraim Eliot, Esq. of Boston.  
 Rev. Charles Lowell, of Boston.  
 Hon. Charles Jackson, LL. D. of Boston.  
 Levi Hedge, Esq. Professor of Logick and Metaphysicks in Harvard University.  
 William Tudor, jun. Esq. of Boston  
 Hon. Joseph Story, LL. D. of Salem.  
 Leverett Saltonstall, Esq. of Salem.  
 \* Rev. Stephen Palmer, of Needham.  
 Ichabod Tucker, Esq. of Salem.  
 John Pickering, Esq. of Salem.  
 Francis C. Gray, Esq. of Boston.  
 Nathaniel G. Snelling, Esq. of Boston.  
 Hon. Nahum Mitchell, of Bridgewater.  
 Benjamin R. Nichols, Esq. of Salem.  
 William Winthrop, Esq. of Cambridge.  
 Nathan Hale, Esq. of Boston.  
 Rev. Samuel Ripley, of Waltham.

Rev. Edward Everett, Professor of Greek Literature in Harvard University.

James C. Merrill, Esq. of Boston.

Hon. Daniel Webster, of Boston.

Rev. William Jenks, of Boston.

James Bowdoin, Esq. of Boston.

Rev. Henry Ware, jun. of Boston.

William J. Spooner, Esq. of Boston.

Rev. Ezra Goodwin, of Sandwich.

John Lowell, LL. D. of Boston.

*CORRESPONDING MEMBERS.*

Elkanah Watson, Esq.

Rev. Eliphalet Nott, D. D. President of Union College.

\* Elias Boudinot, LL. D.

Hon. John C. Smith.

John Pintard, Esq.

David Hosack, M. D.

John W. Francis, M. D.

Rev. William Harris, D. D.

Hon. De Witt Clinton, LL. D.

Rev. James Richards.

George Chalmers, Esq.

Hon. Charles H. Atherton.

Michael Joy, Esq.

Rev. Robert Morrison.

Samuel Bayard, Esq.

Major Hugh M'Call.

Baron Humboldt.

Peter S. Du Ponceau, Esq.

William T. Williams, Esq.

Jonathan Goodhue, Esq.

Robert Southey, Esq.

Gulian C. Verplanck, Esq.

Elisha Hutchinson, Esq.

Robert Walsh, Esq.

J. Van Ness Yates, Esq.

M. Carlo Botta.

Hon. Jeremiah Mason.

N. A. Haven, jun. Esq.

Mr. John Farmer.

Sir Walter Scott.

Fred. Adelung.

William Lee, Esq.

Admiral Sir Isaac Coffin.

George W. Erving, Esq.



GENERAL TABLE OF CONTENTS OF THE TEN VOLUMES OF  
THE SECOND SERIES, METHODICALLY ARRANGED.

I. RELATING PARTICULARLY TO  
THE SOCIETY.

1. THE Act of Incorporation of the Massachusetts Historical Society, Feb. 19th, 1794. i. 1.
2. Laws of the Society. i. 3.
3. First Circular Letter, specifying articles, on which the Society request information. i. 14.
4. Circular Letter of 1813. ii. 277.
5. List of the Members. i. 8. x. 191.
6. Officers of the Society. i. 13. x at the end
7. Members deceased. x. at the end.
8. Donations to the Society. ii. 285. iii. 292. iv. 304. vii. 297. viii. 329. ix. 369. x. 188.
9. Prospectus of Hubbard's History of New England, about to be published. ii. 231.
10. Letters respecting Hubbard's History. iii. 286.
11. Note on an ancient Manuscript, ascertained to be a part of Governour Winthrop's Journal. iv. 200.
12. Account of the New England Library, collected by Rev. Thomas Prince. vii. 179.

II. HISTORY.

13. The New Life of Virginea, 1612. viii. 199.
14. A brief Relation of the Discovery and Plantation of New England, 1607—1622. ix. 1.
15. Those parts of Mourt's Relation or Journal of a Plantation settled at Plymouth in New England, which were not printed in the 1st Series, 8th volume, 1620—1621. ix. 26.
16. Those parts of Edward Wins-

low's Relation of things remarkable in Plymouth, which were not printed in the 1st Series, 8th volume, 1622—1623. ix. 74.

17. Necessaries for going to Virginia, 1626. ii. 267.

18. Hutchinson Papers: The first — Letter from R. Levett to John Cotton, 1625. x. 182.

19. Mr. Cotton's Answer. x. 183.

20. Letter from Matthew Craddock to John Endicott, 1629. viii. 116.

21. Pincheon Papers, 1629—1724: The first, viii. 228.

22. Annals of New England, by Thomas Prince: the three first Numbers of the second volume, 1630—1633. vii. 189.

23. The first writ of Quo Warranto against the Charter of Massachusetts, June 17th, 1635. viii. 97.

24. Apology of John Pratt for the ill report, which he had raised against New England, 1635. vii. 125.

25. Boston Votes, 1635. vii. 136.

26. Accounts of William Pincheon with the General Court of Massachusetts, 1632—1636. viii. 223.

27. Letter from Sir Richard Saltonstall to Gov. Winthrop, complaining of injury done to him by Mr. Ludlowe and others, on Connecticut River, 1636. viii. 42.

28. History of the Pequot War, by John Mason, 2637. viii. 120.

29. Letter from Roger Ludlowe to William Pincheon, 1637. viii. 235.

30. Letter from John Cotton to Francis Hutchinson. x. 184.

31. Form of Government agreed to by the first Settlers on the island of Rhode Island, 1638. vii. 77.

32. A Barque, the first vessel built at Plymouth, 1641. iv. 99.

33. Letter from Henry Dunster, President of Harvard College, 1643. x. 187.

34. New England's Jonas cast up at London, 1647. iv. 107.

35. Laws of Rhode Island, 1647. vii. 78.

36. Description of Virginia, 1649. ix. 105.

37. Johnson's Wonder-Working Providence of Sion's Saviour in New England; or a history of New England from 1628 to 1652. ii. 49. iii. 123. iv. 1. vii. 1. viii. 1.

38. Correction of an errour in Hutchinson on New England Coins, 1652. ii. 274.

39. Letters on New England Coins. ii. 276.

40. Letter from Oliver Cromwell to Rhode Island Colony, 1655. vii. 80.

41. Letter from the Commissioners of the Colony of Providence Plantations respecting the interference of Englishmen in the war between the Narragansets and Mohegans, 1657. vii. 81.

42. Letter from the Commissioners of the United Colonies of New England to the General Assembly of the Colony of Providence Plantations, respecting the Quakers, 1657. vii. 82. (Note.)

43. Letter from the General Assembly of the Colony of Providence Plantations, in answer to the above, 1658. vii. 82.

44. Letter from the Commissioners of the Colony of Providence Plantations to their Agent, John Clarke, respecting the Quakers, 1658. vii. 85.

45. Address of the Colony of Providence Plantations to Richard Cromwell, 1659. vii. 88.

46. Commission of the Colony of Providence Plantations to John Clarke, as their Agent, 1660. vii. 90.

47. Charles the second's Letter to the General Court of Massachusetts, June 23th, 1662. viii. 52.

48. Answer of the General Court. viii. 47.

49. Historical Account of the Planting and Growth of Providence, 1636—1663. ix. 166.

50. Narrative of the Negotiation between the General Court of Massachusetts and the King's Commissioners, 1664. viii. 92.

51. Decision of Charles the second's Commissioners relative to Misquama-cock, on the eastern side of Pawcatuck River. vii. 91.

52. Commission from Charles the second's Commissioners to Justices in the Narraganset country, 1665. vii. 92.

53. Propositions of Charles the second's Commissioners to the General Assembly of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, 1665. vii. 94.

54. Declaration of the Assembly on the above. vii. 95.

55. Address of the Assembly to the King, respecting Charter Rights, 1665. vii. 98.

56. Address of the Assembly to the Earl of Clarendon, on the same subject. vii. 101.

57. Reasons showing why that part of Rhode Island, called the King's Province, should remain to the Colony. vii. 104.

58. Claims of Rhode Island respecting the Eastern line of the Colony. vii. 107.

59. Letter from Sir Robert Boyle to Gov. Endicott, relative to Charles the second's Commissioners, 1665. viii. 49.

60. Letter from Charles the second's Commissioners to the General Court of Massachusetts, stating the reasons for which they were sent over by the King, 1665. viii. 55.

61. Answer of the General Court to the above, 1665. viii. 59.

62. Reply of the Commissioners to the Answer of the General Court, 1665. viii. 61.

63. Letter from the General Court to the Commissioners, May 9th, 1665. viii. 63.

64. Answer of the General Court to the 5th Instruction of the Commissioners, 1665. viii. 63.

65. Answer of the Commissioners to the Letter of May 9th, 1665. viii. 64.

66. Oath of Allegiance proposed by the Commissioners, 1665. viii. 64.

67. Answer of the General Court to the 6th Instruction of the Commissioners, relative to the College, Schools, and Christian Indians, 1665. viii. 65.

68. General Court's construction of the Charter of Massachusetts, in answer to the 7th and 8th Instructions, 1665. viii. 67.

69. Answer of the General Court to the Commissioners respecting the Regicides, 1665. viii. 67.

70. Petition of Gorton and others to the Commissioners, March, 1665. viii. 68.

71. Answer of the General Court to the Commissioners, respecting Trade, 1665. viii. 71.

72. Answer of the General Court to the Commissioners, respecting the administration of Government, Militia, Fort. and number of Vessels, 1665. viii. 71.

73. Answer of the General Court to the Commissioners, respecting the Oath of Allegiance and Ecclesiastical Privileges, 1665. viii. 72.

74. Oath of Allegiance in Massachusetts, 1665. viii. 74.

75. Replies of the Commissioners to the General Court, 1665. viii. 74.

76. Speech of Col. Nicholls, King's Commissioner, to the General Court, 1665. viii. 77.

77. Answer of the General Court to the above Replies, 1665. viii. 80.

78. Correspondence continued, 1665. viii. 81.

79. Summons to Joshua Scottow to appear before the Commissioners, 1665. viii. 82.

80. Reply of the Commissioners to the above Answer of the General Court, 1665. viii. 82.

81. Proposal of the Commissioners to the General Court to amend the Province Laws, 1665. viii. 84.

82. Letter of the General Court to the Commissioners, respecting the Limits of the Province, 1665. viii. 87.

83. Proceedings of the General Court respecting the Complaint of Thomas Deane, 1665. viii. 88.

84. Letter from the Commissioners to the General Court, relative to the same, 1665. viii. 89.

85. Grant of £500 to the King's Navy by the General Court, 1665. viii. 90.

86. Thomas Danforth's Declaration, when he took the Oath of Alle-

giance, and Account of a Conference of a Committee of the General Court with the Commissioners, 1665. viii. 91.

87. Non-Conformist's Oath, in rhyme, 1666. iv. 104.

88. Proceedings of the General Court of Massachusetts on the Requisition of the King to send Agents to answer for refusing the jurisdiction of the Commissioners last year, 1666. viii. 98, 110.

89. Petitions from sundry persons in Boston, Salem, Ipswich, and Newbury, relating to the same, 1666. viii. 103.

90. Letter from Charles the second to the General Court of Massachusetts, recommending the Invasion of Canada, 1666. viii. 101.

91. The General Court's Answer to the King's Recommendation, 1666. viii. 108.

92. Papers collected by Thomas Danforth, Deputy Governour of Massachusetts, the heads of which have been given above, 1662—1667. viii. 46—112.

93. Letter from the General Assembly of Rhode Island to the Government of Plymouth, relative to the apprehended War with the Natives and the Encroachments of Connecticut, 1671. vii. 109.

94. William A. Burwell's Letter respecting the History of Bacon and Ingram's Rebellion. i. 27.

95. History of Bacon and Ingram's Rebellion in Virginia. 1676. i. 27.

96. Letter from the General Assembly of Rhode Island to the General Assembly of Connecticut, relative to Encroachments on the Narraganset country. 1676. vii. 110.

97. Rise and Progress of the Bass and Mackerel Fishery at Cape Cod, 1677. iii. 220.

98. Deposition of William Coddington, respecting the purchase of Rhode Island, 1677. vii. 76.

99. General History of New England, by William Hubbard, 1606—1680. v. and vi. volumes.

100. Letter from William Penn on the Name of his Colony, 1681. vii. 186.

101. Deposition of Roger Williams,



- respecting Canonicus, Miantonomoh, and the Grant of Providence, 1682. vii. 75.
102. Letter from William Penn to Gov. Hinckley, 1683. vii. 185.
103. Letter from Sir Edmund Andros to Joseph Dudley, 1686. ii. 260.
104. Proceedings in Massachusetts under the administration of Sir Edmund Andros, 1686. viii. 179.
105. Letter from Edward Randolph to Major Pincheon, 1686. viii. 237.
106. Letter from the Commissioners of Massachusetts to Col. Pincheon, 1690. viii. 238.
107. Letter from Thomas Wells to Col. Pincheon, 1690. viii. 239.
108. Account of the Expedition against Canada, 1690. iii. 255.
109. Recantation of Confessors of Witchcraft, 1692. iii. 221.
110. Act of the General Court of Massachusetts, for the setting forth of general Privileges, 1694. viii. 326.
111. Note on Paper Money, 1703. iv. 99.
112. Proceedings against William Rous and others, and Petition for the grant of a Writ of Habeas Corpus, 1706. viii. 240.
113. Election of John Leverett as President of Harvard College, 1707. iv. 64.
114. Letter from Sebastian Rasles to Captain Moody, 1712. viii. 258.
115. Letter from Samuel Sewall to Col. Pincheon, 1713. viii. 242.
116. Detection of pretended Witchcraft at Littleton, 1720. x. 6.
117. Letter from Otis Westbrook to Gov. Dummer, 1723. viii. 264.
118. Intercepted Letter from Sebastian Rasles, 1724. viii. 266.
119. Samuel Quincy's Letter respecting Georgia, 1735. ii. 188.
120. Number of Negro Slaves in Massachusetts, 1754. iii. 95.
121. Account of Braddock's Defeat, 1755. viii. 153.
122. Letter from Dr. Franklin on Inoculation for Small Pox, 1759. vii. 71.
123. Letter on the Introduction of English Exercises at Commencement, 1763. i. 249.
124. Estimate of the Charges of Massachusetts, 1764. viii. 198.
125. History of Free Schools in Plymouth Colony, 1663—1771. iv. 79.
126. Letter from the Connecticut Delegates to the first Continental Congress, to Gov. Trumbull, 1774. ii. 221.
127. Donations received for Boston during the operation of the Port Bill, 1775. ix. 158.
128. General Gage's Instructions to Capt. Brown and Ensign D'Berniere; Narrative of what occurred to them, and of the Battle of Lexington, 1775. iv. 204.
129. British Account of the Battle of Lexington, in a letter from Gen. Gage to Gov. Trumbull, 1775. ii. 224.
130. List of the Killed, Wounded and Missing in the Battle of Lexington, 1775. viii. 44.
131. Major Meigs's Journal of the Expedition against Quebec, 1775. ii. 227.
132. Anecdote of Soldiers of Arnold, 1780. iv. 51.
133. Notice of the first Settlements in Tennessee, 1768—1780. vii. 58.
134. Letter from Richard Henry Lee to Samuel Adams, 1781. i. 186.
135. Expenses of Canada to Great Britain. from June, 1776, to Oct. 1782. iii. 122.
136. Brief History of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company, 1638—1786. ii. 185.
137. Number of Inhabitants in Rhode Island, 1730, 1748, 1755, 1774, 1783, and 1791. vii. 113.
138. Rhode Island State Papers, selected and authenticated by Samuel Eddy, Esq. Secretary of the State, with Notes, 1638—1791. vii. 75—113.
139. Account of Fires in Massachusetts, 1701—1800. i. 81.
140. Tons of Shipping in Massachusetts, 1806. iii. 122.
141. Letter from Bishop Watson, 1807. i. 250.
142. Historical Sketch of the Progress of Medical Science in Massachusetts to 1813. i. 105.
143. Discourse before the Massa-

chusetts Historical Society, Dec. 22d, 1813, by John Davis, i. (1)

144 Russian Voyage of Discovery, 1815. iv. 98.

145. Progress of Vaccination in the United States, 1002—1816. iv. 97

146. Letter from Timothy Pickering on the Origin and Progress of Attempts for the Abolition of Slavery in Pennsylvania. viii. 183.

147. Letter from Timothy Matlack on the same subject, 1817. viii. 184.

148. Celebration at Plymouth of the Landing of the Forefathers, 1817. vii. 133

149. List of such Persons in New Hampshire, as have attained the one hundredth year of their age, or have exceeded that period, together with a number, who have died between ninety and a hundred years, 1686—1822. x. 176.

### III. ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

150. Opinion of the Council of Massachusetts about Malden Church, 1652. viii. 325.

151. Ecclesiastical History of Massachusetts, 1662. i. 194.

152. Letter from the General Court of Massachusetts to Dr. John Owen, inviting him to Boston, 1663. ii. 265.

153. Doings of an Ecclesiastical Council in Boston for the conviction of Anabaptists, 1668. viii. 111.

154. Declaration for Episcopacy in Connecticut, 1772. ii. 128.

155. Joseph Moss's Letter on this Declaration. ii. 129.

156. Joseph Webb's Letter on the same subject. ii. 131.

157. Sentiments of several Boston Ministers on the same. ii. 133.

158. A Relation of the same Occurrence. ii. 137.

159. Davenport and Buckingham's Letter on the same subject. iv. 297.

160. Singing by Notes first introduced in the Churches in Boston, 1724. iv. 301.

161. Dr. Andrew Eliot's Remarks on Bishop Secker's Sermon, preached in 1741. ii. 190.

162. Account of the Dissenting Interest in the Middle Provinces, 1759. i. 156.

163. Number of English Missionaries in America, 1762. i. 158.

164. Catalogue of Ministers in New Hampshire, 1767. iv. 78.

165. View of the State of Religious Liberty in the Colony of New York, 1773. i. 140.

166. Letter from the General Association of Congregational Ministers in Connecticut to the Clergymen in Boston, 1774. ii. 255.

167. Answer to the above. ii. 257.

168. Churches and Ministers in New Hampshire, 1685—1819. viii. 175. ix. 367. x. 54.

### IV. BIOGRAPHY AND CHARACTER.

169. Letter from William White to Gov. Winthrop, 1648. iv. 198.

170. Biographical Memoir of Rev. John Lothrop, 1653. i. 163.

171. Notice of Captain Edward Johnson, 1672. ii. 95.

172. Memoirs of William Blackstone, an early planter of Boston, 1675. x. 170.

173. Order of Procession at the Funeral of Gov. Leverett, 1679. viii. 44.

174. Letter from Roger Williams to Gov. Bradstreet, 1682. viii. 196.

175. John Dunton's Journal in Massachusetts, 1686. ii. 97.

176. Letter from Anthony Wood to Dr. Increase Mather, 1690. vii. 187.

177. Memoir of Joshua Scottow, 1697. iv. 100.

178. Biographical Memoir of Rev. Charles Morton, 1698. i. 158.

179. Penhallow's Account of Rev. Charles Morton. 1. 161.

180. Notes on Ezekiel Cheever, 1708. vii. 129.

181. Biographical Memoir of Father Rasles, 1724. viii. 250.

182. Letter from Dr. Watts, 1734. x. 39.

183. Letter from Dr. Colman to Gov. Belcher, 1743. ii. 186.

184. President Stiles's Note on Hubbard's History, and Bulkeley's Gospel Covenant, 1778. ii. 260.

185. Letter from Joel Barlow, relative to Professor Ebeling, 1794. viii. 269.

186. Letter from Professor Ebeling to President Stiles, 1794. viii. 270.

187. Biographical Notices of Isaac Lothrop, Esq. 1808. i. 258.

188. Biographical Memoir of Hon. James Sullivan, 1808. i. 252.

189. Notices of the Life of Major General Benjamin Lincoln, 1810. iii. 233.

190. Memoir of Rev. William Emerson, 1811. i. 254.

191. Notice respecting John Rodgers, D. D. of New York, who died, 1811. ii. 270.

192. Memoir of Rev. Joseph S. Buckminster, 1812. ii. 271.

193. Memoir towards a Character of John Eliot, D. D. 1813. i. 211.

194. Biographical Notice of Rev. Peter Whitney, 1816. vii. 177.

195. Sketch of the Life and Character of Professor Mac-kean, 1818. viii. 157.

196. Sketch of the Life and Character of Caleb Gannett, Esq. 1818. viii. 277.

197. Memoir of Hon. William Tudor, 1819. viii. 285.

198. Memoir of Hon. Joshua Thomas, 1821. x. 1.

199. Biographical Notice of Hon. James Winthrop, 1821. x. 77.

200. Biographical Notice of Professor Peck, 1822. x. 161.

## V. RELATING TO THE INDIANS.

201. Letter from the Eastern Indians to the Governour of Massachusetts, 1721. viii. 259.

202. Indian Names of the White Mountains and Piscataqua River. ii. 266.

203. Observations on the Massachusetts Language. ix. 223. (30.)

204. Eliot's Indian Grammar. ix. 243.

205. Notes and Observations on Eliot's Indian Grammar. ix. 313.

206. On the question, What is the

meaning of the aboriginal phrase Shawmut? x. 173.

207. Edward Winslow's Account of the Religion, Manners, and Customs of the Indians, 1623. ix. 90.

208. Description of Mashpee, an Indian Plantation. iii. 1.

209. State of the Indians in Mashpee and parts adjacent, 1767. iii. 12.

210. Historical Sketch of the Society for propagating the Gospel among the Indians and others in North America. ii. 45.

211. Dr. Edwards' Observations on the Mohegan Language. x. 84.

212. Notes to Dr. Edwards' Observations. x. 81. 98.

213. Account of the Five Indian Nations, 1721. viii. 243.

214. Schermerhorn's Report respecting the Indians inhabiting the Western parts of the United States. ii. 1.

215. Hazard's Remarks on Schermerhorn's Report. iv. 65.

## VI. TOPOGRAPHY, STATISTICS, AND LOCAL HISTORY.

### MAINE.

216. Description of Natardin or Cartardin Mountain. viii. 112.

217. Topographical and Historical Sketch of Freeport. iv. 176.

218. Topographical and Historical Sketch of Saco. iv. 184.

### NEW HAMPSHIRE.

219. Note on Lancaster. iii. 97.

220. Geographical Sketch of Bath. iii. 105.

221. Note on Plymouth. iii. 109.

222. Note on New Holderness. iii. 113.

223. Note on Wolfeborough. iii. 117.

224. Note on Middletown. iii. 120.

225. Note on the County of Hillsborough. vii. 65.

226. Note on New London. viii. 173.

227. Account of Boscawen. x. 71.



228. Bill of Mortality for Amherst, 1805—1814, with Remarks. iv. 73.  
 229. Sketch of Amherst. ii. 247. iv. 74.  
 230. Sketch of Walpole. vii. 124.  
 231. Historical Sketch of North Hampton. iv. 189.

## VERMONT.

232. Statistical Account of Middlebury. ix. 123.

## MASSACHUSETTS.

233. Historical Sketch of Haverhill. iv. 121.  
 234. Historical Sketch of Tyngsborough. iv. 192.  
 235. Births, Marriages, and Deaths in Billerica. 1654—1704. ii. 162. iv. 76.  
 236. Topographical Description & Historical Account of Sudbury. iv. 52.  
 237. Topographical Description & Historical Account of East Sudbury. iv. 60.  
 238. Topographical and Historical Description of Waltham. iii. 261.  
 239. Historical Sketch of Charlestown. ii. 163.  
 240. Deposition of John Odlin and other inhabitants of Boston, respecting Blackstone's sale, 1684. iv. 202.  
 241. Notes on the Springs of Boston. x. 175.  
 242. Representatives of Boston in the General Court, before the American Revolution, 1634—1774. x. 23.  
 243. Number of Houses in Boston, 1789. ix. 204.  
 244. Bill of Mortality for Boston, 1816. vii. 134.  
 245. Bill of Mortality for Boston, 1817. viii. 40.  
 246. Bill of Mortality for Kings-chapel, Boston, 1747—1814. iii. 290.  
 247. Historical Sketch of Brookline. ii. 140.  
 248. Note on the Historical Sketch of Brookline. iii. 284.  
 249. Topographical Description of Needham. i. 178.  
 250. Topographical and Historical Sketch of Lunenburg. i. 181.

251. Notices of Shrewsbury. i. 162.  
 252. Account of Plainfield. viii. 167.  
 253. Account of Cumington. x. 41.  
 254. History and Description of Scituate. iv. 219, 303.  
 255. History and Description of Abington. vii. 114.  
 256. Description of Bridgewater. vii. 137.  
 257. Notes on Duxbury. x. 57.  
 258. Notes on Halifax. iv. 279.  
 259. Description of Kingston. iii. 204.  
 260. Notes on Plymouth. iii. 162. iv. 302.  
 261. History and Description of Plympton. iv. 267, 283.  
 262. Description of Carver. iv. 271.  
 263. Topography and History of Wareham. iv. 285.  
 264. Bills of Mortality for the first precinct in Middleborough, 1804—1812. ii. 261.  
 265. Topography and History of Rochester, by Samuel Davis. iv. 250, 302.  
 266. Topographical Description of Rochester, by Abraham Holmes. x. 29.  
 267. Note on Attleborough. i. 184.  
 268. Notes on New Bedford. iii. 18.  
 269. Papers relating to Cape Cod Canal. viii. 192.  
 270. Description of Dukes County. iii. 38. viii. 328.  
 271. Notes on Nantucket. iii. 19.

## CONNECTICUT.

272. Heads of Inquiry relative to Connecticut, 1774. ii. 216.  
 273. Statisticks of New Haven, 1774. ii. 217.  
 274. Statisticks of New London, 1774. ii. 219.

## PENNSYLVANIA.

275. Account of the Loganian Library in Philadelphia. ii. 269.

## BRITISH PROVINCE.

276. Note on Jamaica. iii. 285.

## SOUTH ATLANTIC OCEAN.

277. Letter concerning the Islands of Tristan D'Acunha. ii. 125.

## VII. NATURAL HISTORY, &amp;c.

278. Notices of the effects of the Great Storm of 23d September, 1815. x. 45.

279. Account of Earthquakes in New England, 1805, 1806. iv. 70.

280. Letter respecting Mounds. i. 103.

281. Account of a Fossil Tooth, from Albany, 1706. ii. 263.

282. Remarks on the cultivation of the Oak. i. 187.

283. On collecting Mineral and Fossil substances. i. 25.

284. Method of Preserving Marine Productions. i. 25.

285. Method of collecting and preserving Vegetables. i. 23.

286. Method of taking impressions of Vegetable Leaves by means of Smoke. i. 24.

287. Directions for preserving Animals. i. 18.

288. Methods of preserving Animals and their Skins. i. 20.

289. Method of preserving Birds and other Animals. i. 21.

290. Method of preserving the Skins of Birds. i. 19.

## VIII. FINE ARTS.

291. Criticism on the Landing of the Fathers, a picture by Henry Sargent. iii. 225.

292. Another on the same subject. iii. 230.

## INDEX OF AUTHORS.

*Note The figures refer to the numbers in the preceding Table of Contents.*

## A.

Addington, isaac. 110.  
Alden, timothy. 202. 279.  
Allen, james. 113.  
Andros, edmund. 103.  
Arlington, lord. 90.

## B.

Barlow, joel. 185.  
Bartlett, josiah. 142. 239.  
Belknap, jeremy. 3.  
Bellows, a. 230.  
Bowdoin, james. 269.  
Boyle, robert. 59.  
Bradford, alden. 198. 199. 257. 280,  
Bradstreet, simon. 42.  
Bramton, thomas. 23.  
Burwell. william. 94.

## C.

Carr, robert. 51. 52. 53.

Chickering, joseph. 171.  
Child, john. 34.  
Coddington, william. 98.  
Coggeshall, john. 96.  
Cogswell, jonathan. 218.  
Colman, benjamin. 183.  
Cotton, john. 19. 30.  
Craddock, matthew. 20.  
Cromwell, oliver. 40.  
Cutler, manasseh, 290.  
Cutler, timothy. 154.

## D.

Danforth, thomas. 50. 82. 86. 88. 92. 153.  
Davenport, john. 159.  
Davis, john. 143. 187.  
Davis, samuel. 32. 97. 125. 148. 160. 172. 206. 241. 254. 255. 258. 260. 261. 262. 263. 265.  
D'Bernicre, ensign. 128.  
Deane, silas. 126.

Dudley, joseph. 231.  
Dudley, paul. 213.  
Dunster, henry. 33.  
Dunton, john. 175.  
Du Ponceau, peter-s. 205.

E.

Ebeling, professor. 186.  
Eddy, samuel. 138.  
Edwards, jonathan. 211.  
Eliot, andrew. 39. 161. 167.  
Eliot, john, of boston. 4. 151.  
Eliot, john, of roxbury. 204.  
Endicott, john. 48. 152.  
Eustaphieve, alexis. 291.  
Eustis, william. 132.

F.

Fancher, dr. 145.  
Farmer, john. 149. 164. 168. 225.  
226. 227. 228. 229. 235.  
Franklin, benjamin. 122.  
Freeman, james. 120. 208. 243. 246.  
268. 270. 271.  
French, jonathan. 231.

G.

Gage, thomas. 129.  
Goodwin, ezra. 278.  
Gorton, samuel. 70.  
Greenough, nathaniel. 244.

H.

Hall, frederick. 232.  
Harris, dr. of jamaica. 276.  
Harris, thaddeus-mason. 181. 194.  
Hazard, ebenezer. 191. 215. 275.  
Hedge, levi. 195.  
Hollis, thomas. 39.  
Holmes, abiel. 8. 11. 12. 178. 196.  
210.  
Holmes, abraham. 266.  
Hopkins, stephen. 49.  
Hubbard, thomas. 124.  
Hubbard, william. 99.

I.

I——, r——. 13.  
Johnson, edward. 37.

K.

Kirkland, john-t. 189.

L.

Lathrop, john. 170.  
Lawrence, nathaniel. 234.  
Lee, richard-henry. 134.  
Lettsom, john-c. 283. 284. 285. 287.  
288. 289.

VOL. X.

Levett, r. 18.  
Lincoln, benjamin. 282.  
Lowell, charles. 219. 221. 222. 323.  
224.  
Ludlowe, roger. 29.  
Lyon, william. 180.

M.

Mac-kean, joseph. 9. 10. 136. 193.  
Mason, john. 28.  
Mather, cotton. 157.  
Matlack, timothy. 147.  
Meigs, return-jonathan. 131.  
Miller, jeremiah. 274.  
Mitchell, nahum. 256.  
Moss, joseph. 155.  
Mourt, g. 15.

N.

Nason, reuben. 217.  
New England, president and council  
of. 14.  
Nicholas, edward. 47.  
Nicholls, richard. 60. 62. 65. 75. 76.  
78. 79. 80. 81. 84.  
Noyes, nathaniel. 127.

O.

Odlin, john. 240.  
Oliver, andrew. 209.  
Orme, robert. 121.

P.

Palmer, stephen. 249.  
Peck, william-d. 286.  
Pemberton, thomas. 139.  
Penhallow, samuel. 179.  
Penn, william. 100. 102.  
Pickering, john. 203. 212.  
Pickering, timothy. 146.  
Pierce, john. 247.  
Pincheon, william. 21. 26.  
Porter, jacob. 252. 253.  
Pratt, john. 24.  
Prince, thomas. 22.

Q.

Quincy, samuel. 119.

R.

Randolph, edward. 104. 105.  
Rasles, sebastien. 114. 118. 201.  
Rawson, edward. 61. 63. 64. 67. 68.  
69. 71. 72. 73. 74. 77. 83. 85. 104.  
150.  
Ripley, samuel. 238.  
Robinson, james. 245.  
Rodgers, john. 165.



## S.

Saltonstall, leverett. 233.  
 Saltonstall, richard. 27.  
 Sanford, john. 41. 43. 44. 93.  
 Savage, james 38. 177. 192. 242.  
 248.  
 Savage, thomas. 108.  
 Schermerhorn, john. 214.  
 Seaver, benjamin. 277.  
 Sewall, samuel. 112. 115.  
 Smith, isaac. 123.  
 Smith, john. 17.  
 Spencer, elihu. 162.  
 Stiles, ezra. 184.  
 Stoughton, william. 106.  
 Sullivan, james. 1.  
 Sumner, joseph. 251.  
 Sutherland, david. 220.

## T.

Thacher, samuel-cooper. 190.  
 Thompson, isaac. 264.  
 Throop, benjamin. 166.  
 Tudor, william, jun. 197.  
 Turell, ebenezer. 116.  
 Turner, charles. 216.  
 Tyng, dudley-atkins. 200.

## UNKNOWN.

31. 35. 36. 45. 46. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58.  
 66. 87. 89. 91. 95. 109. 111. 130.  
 133. 144. 158. 173. 250. 292.

## W.

Watts, isaac. 182.  
 Watson, bishop. 141.  
 Webb, joseph. 156.  
 Weld, habijah. 267.  
 Wells, thomas. 107.  
 Westbrook, otis. 117.  
 White, william. 169.  
 Whitney, peter. 236. 237.  
 Williams, roger. 101. 174.  
 Willis, zephaniah. 259.  
 Winslow, edward. 16. 207.  
 Winthrop, james. 188.  
 Wood, anthony. 176.  
 Wooster, david. 273.

## AUTHORS OF LETTERS, EXTRACTS, &amp;c. FORMING PARTS OF THE PRECEDING PAPERS.

## A.

Adams, eliphalet. iv. 175.  
 Adams, john. viii. 291. 309. 311.  
 313. 314.  
 Allen, james. ii. 148.  
 Allerton, isaac. ix. 54.  
 Ames, fisher. viii. 316. 317. 318.  
 320. 322. 323.  
 Annesly, s. ii. 98.  
 Ascham. viii. 220.

## B.

Barnard, edward. iv. 141. 144. 145.  
 Barton, r. vi. 511.  
 Benedict. viii. 111.  
 Bennett, henry. vi. 665.  
 Bradford, william. vii. (Prince's An.  
 89.)  
 Buckminster, joseph-s. i. 255.

## C.

Clap, capt. vii. (Prince's An. 91.)  
 Clavigero. ix. 227.  
 Cotton, john. v. 209. vii. (Prince's  
 An. 80.)  
 Crowe. iii. 195.  
 Cushman, robert. ix. 64.

## D.

Davy, humphrey. ix. 141.  
 Douglas, william. iv. 230.  
 Du Ponceau, peter-s. ix. 226. 232.  
 Dyer. iii. 191. iv. 257.

## E.

Edwards, jonathan. ix. 226. 230. 239.  
 Eliot, ephraim. iii. 289.  
 Eliot, george. iii. 286. 287.  
 Eliot, john, of boston. i. 218. iii. 92.  
 iv. 144.  
 Endicott, john. vi. 557.

## F.

Folger, walter. iii. 27.  
 Fox, charles. i. (28.)  
 Frothingham, nathaniel-l. i. (31.)

## G.

Gannett, caleb. viii. 282.  
 Gardiner, richard. ix. 27.  
 Gerry, elbridge. i. 137.

H.

Hawley, gideon. iii. 16.  
Heckewelder, John. ix. 225. 232.  
239.  
Hill. i. 201.  
Hutchinson, thomas. i. (22. 23. 30.)

J.

James, edwin. ix. 146.  
Jones, w. vi. 617.

K.

Kirkland, john-t. viii. 279. x. 168.  
Knox, henry. viii. 308.

L.

Leverett, john. vi. 596.  
Lincoln, benjamin. iii. 240. 243.  
Lothrop, john. i. 171. 173.  
Lowell, john. x. 161

M.

Machin, thomas. viii. 195.  
Martyr, peter. i. (24.)  
Mather, cotton. i. 203. 206. vii.  
130.  
Maxwell, john. viii. 241.  
Mayhew, matthew. iii. 67.  
Molina. ix. 229. 232.  
Mills. ii. 22.  
Morrice, william. vi. 561.  
Morton, nathaniel. i. 169.  
Morton, thomas. vi. 428.

N.

Neal, daniel. i. 165. 167.  
Nishokken. vi. 653.  
Nowell, increase. vi. 502.

O.

Oldmixon. i. (30.)  
Oliver, peter. iii. 288.

P.

Parr, dr. i. 244.  
Peirce, william. vii. (Prince's An. 87.)  
Peters, hugh. ix. 197.  
Prince, thomas. i. (21.) 169. viii.  
120.

R.

Rawson, edward. v. 269. vi. 572.  
594. viii. 52. 55.  
Robinson, john. ix. 30.

Rogers, ezekiel. vi. 541.  
Rogers, nathaniel. vi. 552.  
Rous, william. viii. 240.

S.

Salstonstall, richard. iv. 171.  
Sandys, edwin. v. 46.  
Shearman, abraham. iii. 18.  
Smith, john. i. (20.)  
Standish, miles. vii. 139.  
Stearns, charles. iii. 283.  
S——, j——. vi. 606.

T.

Thaxter, joseph. iii. 71.  
Thomas, joshua. i. 259.  
Tudor, william. viii. 287. 289. 296.

W.

Wallcut, thomas. i. 17.  
Walley, john. ii. 148.  
Warren, john-c. i. 247.  
Washington, george. viii. 193. 307.  
Wheelwright, john. vi. 366. 367.  
Whitbourne, richard. viii. 225.  
Whitfield, henry. vi. 655.  
Willard, joseph. iii. 98. 101.  
Williams, roger. ix. 191.  
Willis, comfort. vii. 157.  
Winthrop, john. i. 169. v. 126. 150.  
vi. 454. vii. (Prince's An 27.)  
Wood, anthony. i. 164.

EDITOR'S NOTES.

Bradford, alden. iii. 164.  
Davis, john. i. 27. 80. 187. ii. 261.  
266. ix. 26—73. x. 39.  
Freeman, james. iii. 12. 16. 221. 271.  
Holmes, abiel. i. 185. ii. 1. 45. 49.  
327. 270. v. and vi. with j. mac-  
kean. vii. 130. viii. 265. 267—  
276.  
Mac-kean, joseph. i. 8—13. 194. 249.  
ii. 128. 133. 137. 186. 190. 277.  
iv. 65. 297. v. Prefatory notice.  
vii. 189.  
Savage, james, ii. 51—96. iii. 123—  
161. 225. 255. iv. 1—51. 64. 104.  
111. vii. 1—58. 75. 82. 125. 136.  
189. viii. 1—39. 46—112. 116. 192.  
199. 227. 326. 327. ix. 74—104.  
166. 197. 203. x. 6. 181. 188.

A CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE OF THE MOST REMARKABLE  
EVENTS RECORDED IN THE TEN VOLUMES.

*Note. The year begins in January.*

1492. Christopher Columbus, genoese, discovers hispaniola, cuba and other islands. v. 8.
- 1497, and other subsequent years. John and Sebastian Cabbot, under a commission from henry vii. of england, coast north america between  $40^{\circ}$  &  $67^{\circ}$  n. lat. v. 8.
1534. J. Quartier, (Cartier,) a florentine, sailing under a commission from francis i. of france, discovers new france and new-found-land. v. 9.
1590. The colony of virginia, established only a few years before, is abandoned. v. 9.
1602. Bartholomew Gosnold builds a store-house on cuttyhunk, one of the elizabeth islands. He names this island elizabeth; and to nomans-land he gives the name martha's vineyard; and to cape cod the name it now bears. iii. 80. v. 10.
1603. Captains Gosnold, Salterne and Martin Pring on the coast of new england: Perhaps the last gives the name martin's vineyard, as sometimes styled. iii. 80. v. 11.
1605. Capt. Weymouth on the coast of new england. v. 11.
1606. Charters granted by james i. for two colonies, virginia and new england; including from  $34^{\circ}$  to  $44^{\circ}$  n. latitude. v. 84.
- 1606, 1607. Captains Popham and Rawley Gilbert establish a colony at the mouth of sagadahock (kennebeck) river: 100 men are landed. v. 13. 36.
1608. New York discovered by hudson. i. 140. [Dr. Holmes places this voyage of hudson under the year 1609; as does prince. vi. 666 places it under the year 1610.]
- Capt. John Smith president of virginia. vii. 39.
1609. June. Sir T. Gates, Sir G. Sommers and Capt. Newport set sail from england with a colony for virginia. viii. 204.
1610. Hudson's river discovered by capt. hudson. [But prince and dr. holmes place this discovery under 1609; and i. 140 places the discovery in 1608, and says that its settlement began in 1610, under the states general of the netherlands, who granted it to their west india company and named it, new netherlands.] vi. 666.
- June. Lord De La Warre, as governour, with sir f. wainman and others, arrives in virginia. viii. 206.
1611. May. Sir T. Dale, with a fleet, arrives in virginia. viii. 207.
1614. Capt. John Smith visits and gives its name to new england. i. 4. 20. v. 13. 214.
- Epenow, one of the indians who had been forcibly carried to england, returns to martha's vineyard. iii. 80.
1615. Capt. John Smith admiral of new england. vii. Prince 39.
1616. Nov. [14 James I.] New England granted to the "council of new england established at plymouth," consisting of forty persons. vi. 617. 618. [This must be intended for 18 james i. nov. 3d. Hubbard, however, gives it, more than once, 14 james i.]
- The first independent or puritan, or brownist church, in england, formed by rev. henry jacob, who becomes its pastor. i. 166. 167.



1617. A comet seen by the indians of massachusetts and an english ship on the coast. ii. 65.  
Pestilence amongst the indians of new england. iii. 90.
1618. The greatest mortality ever known amongst the indians of new england. ii. 66.
1620. Nov. 3. New England granted by patent of james i. to the "council of new england established at plymouth," consisting of duke of lenox and others, in all forty persons. vi. 617. 618. See A. D. 1616. ante.  
Nov. 9. The colony, consisting of an hundred persons, intended for hudson's river, then within the limits of the virginia patent, is by fraud brought to cape cod—and,  
Nov. 10, [Prince says 11th] finding their patent from the virginia company was void and useless, now that they were landing in another territory, they sign an instrument for mutual government, and choose mr. john carver their governour. v. 53. 54. vi. 666. 667. ix 168.  
Dec. 25. They erect their first house at plymouth. v. 57.
1621. Mr. John Carver, governour of plymouth colony. v. 62.
- 1622, 9, and 1635. Grants made of new hampshire and maine to sir f. gorges and capt. mason. vi. 612.  
[19 James I.] March 9. Council of plymouth convey land between naumkeag and merrimack, to be called mariana. vi. 614. 618.  
Aug. 10. Council of plymouth grant to sir f. gorges and capt. mason from merrimack to sagadahock. vi. 616. 619.  
Mr. Weston plants weymouth. v. 72.
1623. Indians of martha's vineyard conspire with those of massachusetts and elsewhere, to extirpate the english. iii. 81.  
Merchants of plymouth and the west of england send out a mr. tomson to plant at pascataqua; which place he shortly after abandons. v. 105. 214.
1624. Five assistants first chosen in plymouth colony: one only had been, heretofore, annually chosen. v. 90.  
Mr. E. Winslow brings the first horned cattle to plymouth. v. 94.  
People of dorchester, england, send persons to plant at cape ann. v. 106.
1625. Pestilence [plague] in london. v. 95.
1628. March 19. Council established at plymouth for governing, &c. new england, grants land between merrimack and charles river to sir h. roswell and others. v. 108. vi. 618.  
Mr. J. Endicott, "with some store of servants," sent out to provide for the colony about to come to Massachusetts. They at first fix upon gloucester; but build salem. ii. 69. v. 109. 114.  
"First planting in new england." iii. 123. [Johnson and some others use the words *new england*, as exclusive of plymouth colony; which was, strictly speaking, not a new england colony.]
- 1628 and 9. New hampshire in part settled by people from massachusetts. vi. 619.
1629. March 4. [4 Charles I.] The grant to roswell and others was confirmed by letters patent, which incorporates them to govern, &c. A colony is sent out soon after. vi. 618.  
March 18. Matthew Craddock sworn in chancery governour, and thomas goffe deputy governour, of the new england patentees in england. v. 121. 109.  
April 10. The company of patentees in england appoint mr. j. endicott their deputy governour or agent to preside over the colony at salem, in subordination to them. v. 114. 122. 123.  
May 13. The second court of election held in london. Mr. Craddock and Mr. Goffe are re-elected governour and deputy governour. v. 122.  
Rev. Messrs. Higginson, Skelton and Bright, with others, ar-

rive at naumkeag, which now receives the name salem. ii. 70. v. 112.

Mishawum, now charlestown, taken possession of as english property, by direction of mr. endicott, for the new england patentees. ii. 163. [The charlestown records and dr. holmes agree in making this date 1628: but prince places it in june 24, 1629. See prince, 1628, 1629, and 1630, note 90; and dr. holmes, 1628.]

Oct. 20. J. Winthrop and J. Humphrey in england appointed governour and deputy governour of massachusetts by the patentees, & the government of the colony removed thither. v. 124.

Mr. Bradford governour of plymouth colony. v. 115.

Nov. 7. The council of plymouth grant land, from merrimack to sagadahock, to capt. mason and his heirs. vi. 619.

Nov. 17. The council of plymouth grant land between merrimack and sagadahock rivers, to sir f. gorges and capt. mason. v. 225. vi. 616. [Dr. Holmes says 1630.]

1630. Plymouth receives a second charter; the first for virginia being useless. v. 82.

March 23. Mr. Thomas Dudley chosen, in england, deputy governour of massachusetts in the place of mr. humphrey. v. 124.

April 7. Gov. Winthrop and company at yarmouth, on board the arbella, about to sail for new england, address the brethren of the church of england. v. 126.

June 12. Gov. J. Winthrop with a part of his fleet arrives at salem. v. 129.

July 2. Small-pox brought over in the talbot to naumkeag. v. 131.

Gov. J. Winthrop with 1500 persons settle at Charlestown. ii. 164.

Aug. Rev. John Wilson is settled at charlestown; he removes to boston in november following. ii. 171.

The charter is brought over by some of the massachusetts patentees. v. 115.

Aug. 23. First court of assistants held at charlestown on board the arbella. v. 146. ii. 164.

Sept. 7. Second court of assistants held at charlestown. v. 147.

Sept. 28. Boston richer than charlestown in the proportion of 11 to 7. vii. 1 Prince.

Sept 30. Isaac Johnson is buried in a part of his lot, now the chapel burial-ground, boston. i. (xxx.) vii. 1 Prince.

The first capital punishment in plymouth colony. vii. 2 Prince.

Oct. 19. The first general court held: it gives the assistants power to make laws and to choose officers for their execution. vii. 3 Prince. v. 147.

Nov. 9. First court of assistants held at boston. vii. 6 Prince.

Rev. John Wilson removes to boston. ii. 171. vii. 1 Prince.

Dec. Peace between england and spain proclaimed. vii. 16 Prince.

The winter did not set in before the end of December. v. 138.

Plymouth colony has in ten years increased from 100 to nearly 300 souls. i. (viii. xxii.)

1630 to 1643. 21200 persons come over to massachusetts. i. (viii. xxii.) ii. 81.

1630 to 1634. General court of massachusetts constituted of all the freemen. x. 23.

1631. May 18. First court of election in Massachusetts: j. winthrop and thomas dudley governour and deputy governour. v. 148. iii. 123, 124.

The council of new england grant to sir f. gorges, capt. mason and others. vi. 619.

Ferry between boston and charlestown established, which is granted in 1640 to harvard college. ii. 166.

July 4. Governour Winthrop launches the first vessel at mystick, the blessing of the bay. v. 171.

- Rev. J. Wilson ceases to preach on the charlestown side of charles river. -ii. 91. [But ii. 171 places this in nov. 1630.]
- Captain John Smith dies vii. 39 Prince.
- Small-pox very fatal amongst the indians. iii. 127.
- Third church in massachusetts formed at dorchester. ii. 90.
- Fourth church in massachusetts formed at boston. ii. 91.
- Fifth church in Massachusetts formed at Roxbury. ii. 92.
- Sixth church formed at lynn ii. 93.
- Seventh church formed at waretown. ii. 94.
1632. Gustavus king of sweden killed. vii. 82 Prince.
- March 29. Treaty made between england and france, by which canada, nova scotia, &c. are given up to the latter. vii. 78 Prince.
- May 9. J. Winthrop and T. Dudley governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 53 freemen sworn, and the magistrates first chosen by the freemen. iii. 128. v. 149.
- June 20. Maryland patented by charles i. to cæcilius, baron baltimore. vii. 80.
- Small-pox very destructive to the indians. ii. 165.
- Winter very cold: boston harbour frozen from island to island. iii. 131.
1633. J. Winthrop and T. Dudley governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 46 freemen sworn; rev. messrs. hooker, john cotton, stone, with mr. haynes and others, arrive at boston. iii. 132. 134.
- J. Winthrop, jun. begins the settlement of agawam, now ipswich, by order of the massachusetts general court. vii. 84. 86 Prince.
- Muddy river, now brookline, used as a pasture for boston cows. ii. 141.
- Pestilential fever at plymouth, and amongst the massachusetts indians. v. 194. vi. 662. vii. 96 Prince.
- Small-pox destroys many massachusetts indians. v. 194.
- Cows sell for £20 sterling at plymouth. iii. 183.
- First ferry in plymouth colony, at kingston, jones's river. iv. 224.
- October 16. Thanksgiving throughout new england (massachusetts) then consisting of seven churches. iii. 134.
- Eighth church formed at cambridge by rev. mr. hooker. iii. 136. 137.
- First fruit produced from English grain, a little rye, was shewn to the massachusetts court; and rejoiced the people iii. 137.
- Connecticut river visited by plymouth people. i. (vii.)
- Mr. E. Winslow governour of plymouth colony. vi. 661.
- First baptist church in england formed in london by rev. john spilsbury: the second was not formed till 1639. ix. 197.
1634. Feb. 21. The patent of massachusetts ordered to be forthcoming in london on complaint, &c. v. 153.
- Plymouth people, before this time, have a trading house at machias. v. 163.
- May 14. The freemen choose t. dudley and r. ludlow governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. v. 156. 204 freemen sworn. iii. 139.
- May 14. 24 deputies, 3 from each town, with the assistants, composed, for the first time, the general court of massachusetts. v. 156. x. 23.
- Charlestown organized, and sends 3 deputies to massachusetts general court. ii. 165.
- Massachusetts determines to fortify governour's island in boston harbour. iii. 148.
- Ninth church gathered at ipswich by rev. n. ward. iii. 141.
- Shawmut, now boston, purchased of rev. william blackstone, an episcopal clergyman, who had been there some years. x. 171.
- Tenth church in massachusetts formed at newbury: this church is called presbyterian; the nine



others, congregational or independent. iii. 144.

The sagamoreship or earldom of agawam is named essex. iii. 142.

Newbury is, at this time, noted for its fine white oak timber. iii. 144. 145.

Two dutch ships arrive at boston with provisions. iii. 147.

Mr. Thomas Prince governour of plymouth. vi. 664.

1634 and 5. Providence planted by roger williams and others. ix. 170. 172. vi. 335. [Dr. Holmes places this under 1636.]

1635. April 22. Council of plymouth grants from naumkeag to pascataqua to capt. mason. vi. 617. 619.

April 25, or June 7. The council of plymouth surrenders its "grand charter," viz. the patent 18 james i. nov. 3d; and immediately a quo warranto and judgment for the king, that the massachusetts charter be void and the franchise return to the king. v. 272. vi. 618. viii. 96. [Judgment in this case was given april 4th, 1638, says dr. holmes; but see v. 268. 272. 273. and hutch. coll. 101 — 104.]

Grand juries were first introduced; and 100 offences presented in massachusetts. v. 159.

An attempt made to annul all the patents in north america, and to send out a general government of the 12 provinces proposed to be created. v. 227.

The lords commissioners, appointed to manage the new england colonies, demand the massachusetts patent, but governour winthrop evades and refuses. v. 263. 164. 265.

Rev. Hugh Peter comes out, and settles as minister at salem. iii. 154.

Eleventh church in massachusetts formed at Cambridge by rev. mr. shepherd, composed of those who purchased of those gone to hartford. iii. 153.

Cows are at £28 in new england. iii. 150.

May 6. J. Haynes and R. Bellingham governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 145 freemen sworn. iii. 147. v. 157.

About 3000 persons arrive this year in massachusetts. iv. 2.

Mr. R. Harlakenden, "leader of the military," and eleven ministers, including rev. messrs. norton, shepherd, and r. mather, come out to massachusetts. iii. 147. 148. 150.

The french take possession of penobscot, and claim to the 40° n. lat. v. 161.

June. Dutch ships bring flanders' mares, sheep and heifers to massachusetts. v. 177.

J. Winthrop, jun. and Sir H. Vane, jun. sent out by lords say, brook and others to begin the planting of their province of connecticut — of which the former is made governour — arrive at boston. v. 177.

August 15. Very violent hurricane in new england. v. 198. 162.

November. J. Winthrop, jun. builds the fort at saybrook. v. 178. 179.

Mr. E. Winslow goes to england as agent to answer the charges brought by morton and gardiner against new england. vi. 662.

1635 and 6. People of massachusetts, chiefly from cambridge, under mr. haynes and the rev. messrs. hooker, stone, and wareham, settle in and about hartford, connecticut, which had been examined the year before. iii. 151. v. 176. 177. vi. 306, 307. ix. 175.

1636. May 25. Sir H. Vane, jun. and J. Winthrop governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 83 freemen sworn. v. 233. iv. 1.

E. Winslow governour of plymouth colony. vi. 662.

General court of massachusetts grants £400 to the school in newtown, soon after called harvard college. ii. 107. v. 237.

Morton, "the host of merri-mout," produces a great stir in

the churches of massachusetts; and is "dealt with as David did with shimmei." iv. 35.

John Oldham killed by the pequot, which causes, in part, the pequot war. v. 248.

Oct. A code of laws, after the mosaic, reported to the general court of massachusetts. v. 247.

Saugus receives the name "linne." iv. 3.

A settlement made at saco, or pepperellborough. iv. 187.

Concord, first inland town in massachusetts, settled. iii. 155. [Dr. Holmes places this in 1635.]

Hingham church formed. iii. 160. [Dr. Holmes says 1635.]

1636 and 7. Religious divisions run high in massachusetts, produced by followers of mr. wheelwright and mrs. hutchinson. (iv. 7—21) and in consequence many persons are disarmed. vii. 6. v. 286.

1637. May 3. The king in council orders the patent of massachusetts to be delivered up in london. v. 272. 273.

May 17. At a court of election held at cambridge, j. winthrop and t. dudley chosen governor and deputy governor of massachusetts, and 125 freemen sworn. iv. 21. v. 236.

First indian war. Massachusetts and connecticut send troops against the pequots. iv. 23. 44—48. ix. 176. x. 59.

May 26. Mystic fight; captains mason and underhill destroy pequot forts, kill several hundred of the natives, and soon subdue them. vi. 446. viii. 141.

At this time, as was supposed, the narragansets and niantics could bring into the field 30,000 warriors. iv. 42. But it is said the narragansets are at this time 4000. ix. 176. 177.

November. The antinomian controversy induces the general court of massachusetts to dismiss two of the boston representatives. x. 23.

Synod at cambridge. ix. 178. v. 298.

New Haven, connecticut, set-

tled, under mr. eaton, rev. mr. davenport and others. vii. 6. 7. ix. 175. [See 1638.]

Dedham, county of suffolk, planted, being the fourteenth church; and weymouth about this time, being the fifteenth church in massachusetts. vii. 9. 10.

There is a windmill at scituate, plymouth colony. iv. 224.

1637 and 8. Rhode Island, Providence, and some towns near narraganset bay, planted; the first by boston folks, mr. coddington, mr. clarke and others, who are in 1638. vi. 334. ix. 178.

1638. April 4. The lords commissioners for foreign plantations issue a summons to governour winthrop, of massachusetts, to transmit the patent of massachusetts to them; which he declines to do. v. 268. 269.

May 2. J. Winthrop and T. Dudley elected governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 130 freemen sworn. v. 236. vii. 12.

Mr. Eaton, Mr. Hopkins, Mr. Davenport, who came out to boston the year before, remove with many others to connecticut, and establish new haven colony. v. 262. 263.

June 1. A violent earthquake in new england. vii. 14.

Rowley, massachusetts, planted under ezeziel rogers. vii. 12.

Joseph Glover, coming over to massachusetts as printer, dies at sea. vii. 12.

Scituate, plymouth colony, contains 22 freemen and 19 townsmen; in all 41 males. iv. 229.

Three white persons, after much consultation, executed at plymouth for killing an indian. vi. 663.

3000 persons come out for connecticut. v. 263.

Mrs. Hutchinson leaves massachusetts. vi. 336.

Pawtuxet, rhode island, settled by arnold and others. ix. 182.

Harvard College is established,

Rev. J. Harvard of charlestown, who died this year, having bequeathed to the school at new-town, now cambridge, £779 17 2. it receives his name. A college building is erected. i. 105. ii. 107. v. 247. vii. 16.

Gov. Winthrop has, prior to this time, the first orchard and first vineyard in new england, on governour's island, then governour's garden, in boston harbor. i. (xxx.) [In ix. 174, it is said, but no authority given, that mr. blackstone had an orchard before the arrival of the massachusetts colony.]

1639. Newport, rhode island, settled. ix. 181.

A military muster of 1000 men, in two regiments, under the governour and deputy governour, at boston. i. (xxix.)

May 22. J. Winthrop and T. Dudley chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 83 freemen sworn. vii. 16. v. 237.

Royal charter of the province of maine to sir f. gorges v. 224.

Sept. 4. Military company, the ancient and honourable, formed in boston; but refused incorporation on political grounds. v. 243. [But see ii. 185, where it is said, that it was incorporated and endowed under the title of "the military company of the massachusetts," in 1638, april.]

Sept. 4. Sudbury, massachusetts, incorporated. iv. 52.

About this time roger williams, having become a baptist, establishes the first baptist church at providence. ix. 197.

Hampton, near merrimac river, in the county of "northfolk" planted, being the seventeenth church in massachusetts. vii. 17.

Exeter, new hampshire, settled. v. 223.

Salisbury, near hampton, massachusetts, planted. vii. 18.

Boston representatives reduced to two, which continued more than forty years. x. 24.

1639 and 40. Very cold winter. vii. 18. 19.

1640. May 12. T. Dudley and R. Bellingham chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 192 freemen sworn. v. 237. vii. 20. 21.

People cease coming, in great numbers, to new england. vii. 20. 21.

Previous to this year much cotton had been brought from "the indies" to new england. v. 239.

Oct. 22. Forty-one persons combine to form a government at pascataqua. vii. Prince, advertisement.

Sudbury, nineteenth church, established in Massachusetts. vii. 22.

South-hampton, long island, settled. vii. 22.

Ferry established between charlestown and malden. ii. 167.

Charlestown ferry granted to harvard college ii. 166.

Braintree, twentieth church in massachusetts, established. vii. 24.

People cease coming to new england. v. 146.

1641. June 2. R. Bellingham and J. Endicott chosen governour and deputy governour of Massachusetts; 503 freemen sworn in the year. vi. 370. vii. 32.

The first barque of 50 tons built in plymouth colony; cost £200. iv. 99.

A church gathered at edgarton, martha's vineyard, by thomas mayhew, jun. iii. 71.

James Forett, agent for the earl of stirling, grants nantucket, martha's vineyard, then and long before in the possession of english families, and the elizabeth islands, to thomas mayhew of watertown, massachusetts, who removes to edgarton the following year. These islands were not within any of the new england governments. iii. 81. 82.

Sept. 24. People south of piscataqua, viz. at dover, strawberry-bank, &c. declared a part of massachusetts jurisdiction. vi. 372.



Providence island, west indies, partly peopled from new england, is captured by the spaniards. vi. 378.

Plymouth colony punishes for attending quaker meetings, and for neglect of publick worship. x. 69.

1642. Jan. 18 to Feb. 21. Boston harbour is frozen over so as to bear carts and horses. vi. 421. vii. 33.

May 18. J. Winthrop and J. Endicott chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 1232 said to be the number of freemen sworn. vi. 372. vii. 35.

Conspiracy of all the indians against the english colonies. vi. 446. 451.

The first class graduates at harvard college. v. (iv.)

3000 indians on martha's vineyard, or in duke's county. iii. 90. 92.

Providence plantation and rhode island unite to send roger williams as agent to obtain a charter for them. ix. 184. 185.

The price of cows falls in a few days from £22 to £7 and £3. vii. 35.

There are about 1000 acres of land in orchards and gardens, and 15,000 acres under cultivation, and 12,000 neat cattle, and 3000 sheep in massachusetts. vii. 38. [Should not this be under 1651, when johnson wrote?]

Woburn is established as a town. vii. 38.

Feoffees for the college at cambridge appointed, to consist of all the magistrates of the colony, and the elders of the six next adjoining churches. vi. 372.

A body of laws, which had been long under consideration, was established in mass. vi. 372.

1643. March 5. An earthquake in new england. vii. 50.

May 10. J. Winthrop and J. Endicott chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 87 freemen sworn. vi. 673. vii. 44.

Plymouth contains 146 persons from 16 to 60 years old. iii. 169.

Massachusetts, plymouth, connecticut and new haven colonies enter into a confederacy to support each other in any "just war"—each colony to send the same number of commissioners, but the charges of war to be paid in proportion to the number of inhabitants. vi. 467. 474. vii. 45.

Battle between uncas, sachem of the mohiggaus, and miantonemo, sachem of the narragansets; the latter defeated, taken prisoner, and afterwards killed by uncas the ally of massachusetts colony. vi. 449. 452. vii. 47.

The gortonists broken up, &c. vii. 59. 50.

Warwick, fourth town in rhode island, settled by w. arnold and others. ix. 182.

Bricks are made in plymouth at 11s. a thousand. iii. 183. 184.

Plymouth's town expenditure is £9. iii. 183. 184.

Wolves are very destructive. iii. 183. 184.

In 15 years previous to this date, about 198 or 298 ships had been employed in bringing 21,000 men, women and children to massachusetts. ii. 81. 83.

General and fatal disease (yellow fever?) amongst the indians of martha's vineyard. iii. 91. vi. 656.

Mr. Rigby, proprietor of the "plough patent" in maine, sends out mr. cleaves as his agent, which produces a contest between him and the agent of sir f. gorges regarding the right of property. vi. 268. 370.

Haverhill, mass. settled. iv. 126. [It is somewhere said to have been settled at an earlier date.]

Duxbury has 76 persons, between 16 and 60 years of age, capable of bearing arms. x. 69.

1644. March 14. Roger Williams obtains a charter for providence and rhode island, under the title of "the providence plantations," from the commissioners of plan-

tations, the earl of warwick president. vii. 78. 90. ix. 184. 185.

Elder W. Brewster of plymouth colony dies. vi. 663. x. 58.

May 29. J. Endicott and J. Winthrop chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 145 freemen sworn. vi. 373. vii. 51.

Thomas Dudley chosen serjeant major of massachusetts: the first time the office was filled. vi. 373. vii. 53.

The anabaptists begin to grow troublesome in massachusetts. vi. 373.

The indians massacre many whites in virginia. vi. 411.

D'Aulney's agent comes to boston and enters into a treaty with massachusetts, which is not ratified by d'aulney. vi. 488. 494.

A company was formed in massachusetts, with a monopoly for 21 years, to discover the "great lake" and to collect beaver. vi. 442.

In massachusetts there are 26 military bands, which train eight days in each year. vii. 53.

In massachusetts there are four counties, and three regiments of troops. vii. 53. 55.

Martha's Vineyard, previously attached to no jurisdiction, is annexed to that of massachusetts, (iii. 82,) and th. mayhew soon after establishes courts and juries and records amongst the indians themselves. iii. 84.

Hull, massachusetts, incorporated. vi. 409.

Reading and Wenham, massachusetts, planted, being the 24th and 25th churches. vii. 51.

1645. T. Dudley and J. Winthrop chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 56 freemen sworn. vi. 374. viii. 1.

A ship of more than 400 tons built and equipped at boston. vi. 524.

D'Aulney captures la tour's fort at st. john's. vi. 498.

The commissioners of the unit-

ed new england colonies publish a declaration of war against the narragansets,—but,

The narraganset indians make a treaty of peace with the united colonies. vi. 454. ix. 203.

First baptist church formed in england by rev. henry jessie. i. 168.

The manufacture of iron begun at lynn. v. 374.

Haverhill, massachusetts, 26th church, formed. viii. 1.

Springfield, massachusetts, 27th church, formed. viii. 3.

1646. J. Winthrop the ninth time, and T. Dudley chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 72 freemen sworn. vi. 499. 518. viii. 6.

E. Winslow goes agent for massachusetts to england, who is instructed to deny the power of appeal from the courts of massachusetts to those of england. vi. 505.

The second synod in massachusetts, by publick authority, sits at cambridge; and though it adjourns to june 8 of the following year, it does not begin business till 1648, when the "platform" and westminster confession of faith are agreed on. i. 196. vi. 536. 537. viii. 8.

Mr. Hubbard, of hingham, tried by the court and a jury of twelve men, is fined for disseminating the idea, that the charter placed massachusetts on the footing of a common corporation in england, and, in consequence, that punishment with death, &c. was unlawful. The disputes, that arose about this trial inform the people of england, that new england allowed no appeal to that country; that the people of new england were styled subjects of their own government; and that the writs of courts in new england did not run in his majesty's name, but in that of the government of new england. iv. 110. 125.

Sept. D'Aulney sends two commissioners to settle differences and to effect a treaty with

massachusetts, in which they are successful. vi. 495. 496.

Commissioners of the united colonies, who had been, since the confederation, chosen in massachusetts by the magistrates and deputies, were chosen by the vote of the freemen. vi. 499.

The freemen and voters in plymouth are 79. iii. 170.

Qualifications of townsmen in plymouth first regulated. iii. 187.

1647. J. Winthrop and T. Dudley chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 85 freemen sworn. The office of serjeant major general is filled annually; all other military commissions are for life, or good behaviour. vi. 518. viii. 11.

Sir William Berkeley, governour of virginia, makes a successful experiment by planting rice, which he finds to thrive well there. ix. 118.

Epidemic fever through new england and all the english colonies, including st. christopher's and barbadoes. vi. 532.

June 8. Synod sits at cambridge, but adjourns for business to the following year, this being sickly. vi. 536. 537. [The platform for discipline is said to have been given out this year. v. 184; but see i. (x.) vi. 537. 623.]

Providence plantations form a code of laws. ix. 189.

1648. J. Winthrop and T. Dudley chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 94 freemen sworn. vi. 518. viii. 14.

Code of laws, which had been in preparation two years, is printed in massachusetts. viii. 10.

An unsuccessful attempt made to settle the bahama islands by people of new england. vi. 523.

June. Margaret Jones executed at boston for witchcraft. vi. 530.

June 4. Canonicus, the great chief of the narragansets, dies. vi. 464.

Oct. Cambridge platform was given out to the government and

the churches; and the westminster confession of faith agreed on by the synod. i. (x.) vi. 537. 537. 623.

First house of publick worship erected at plymouth. iii. 200.

Andover settled. viii. 14.

Malden settled. viii. 15.

Second church formed at boston, the 30th in massachusetts. viii. 16.

1649. March 26. J. Winthrop, the governour of massachusetts, to which office he had been eleven times elected, dies at boston. iii. 123. iv. 401. vi. 519. vii. Prince, advertisement. viii. 18.

Selectmen first chosen at plymouth. iii. 186.

May. T. Dudley and J. Endicott chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 499. 519. viii. 18. [Dr. Holmes places j. endicott in the chair, as does viii. 17.]

Caterpillars very numerous this year. viii. 18.

Virginia contains about 15,000 english and 300 negroes. ix. 105.

Six publick brew-houses are in virginia. ix. 106.

Beef 2 l-2d. and pork 3d. a pound in virginia. ix. 106.

Parliament incorporates the society for propagating the gospel amongst the indians of new england. [It was incorporated by the king, charles ii. in 1661, says dr. holmes.] vi. 660.

"The holy, heavenly, sweet-affecting and soul-ravishing minister, mr. thomas shepheard," of cambridge, rev. mr. booker of hartford, and rev. mr. phillips of watertown, die. viii. 17.

1650. T. Dudley and J. Endicott chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts; 55 freemen sworn. vi. 519. viii. 19.

Malt houses common in plymouth, &c till this period—and Barley much raised. iii. 188.

Forty families of indians attend regularly on the preaching of mr. mayhew at "martin's" vineyard. vi. 659.

1651. J. Endicott and T. Dudley



chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 542. viii. 20.

Boston so increased as to require a court for itself, which is held by commissioners. vi. 542.

Malden is fined by the massachusetts general court for irregularly settling a minister. vi. 550.

1651, 2 & 3. Maine comes under the jurisdiction of massachusetts. vi. 542. 543. [Dr. Holmes places this under nov. 22, 1652.]

Bridgewater settlement begun. vii. 146.

1652. J. Endicott and T. Dudley chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 542.

May. Money first ordered to be coined in massachusetts. ii. 274.

Dec. 23. Rev. John Cotton dies. vi. 553.

1653. J. Endicott and T. Dudley chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 542.

July 31. T. Dudley, deputy governour of massachusetts, dies. vi. 552.

Oct 13. Massachusetts north boundary-line run. vi. 543.

1653 & 4. A period of great alarm in new england, from the narraganset indians and the dutch, who had combined against the colonists. x. 60.

1654. May 3. R. Bellingham and J. Endicott chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 543. 544.

The laws of massachusetts are ordered, "for the first time," to be printed. vi. 543. 544.. [But see 1648.]

1654 to 1705. Deaths, marriages, and births in Billerica. ii. 162.

Sixty soldiers prepared by plymouth to be sent against the dutch. x. 69.

June. News of peace between england and holland arrives in america. x. 60.

1655. J. Endicott and R. Belling-

ham chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 544. 545.

Treaty of peace between the english and dutch. vi. 549. [See 1654. econ.]

A fleet from england takes possession of the french places about st. john's river. vi. 549.

Billerica settlement begun. vi. 545. [But see ii. 162.]

Groton settlement begun. vi. 545.

An epidemic cough passed through new england. vi. 554.

1656. May 14. J. Endicott and R. Bellingham chosen governour & deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 555.

June 3. Bridgewater, massachusetts, incorporated. vii. 140.

Mrs. Hibbins hung for a witch. vi. 574.

First saw-mill in plymouth colony, carried by a brook in scituate. iv. 225.

Religious dissensions in hartford, windsor and weathersfield, connecticut, produce the settlement of hadley and north hamp-ton. vi. 316.

Capt. Miles Standish dies. x. 60.

1657. May 6. J. Endicott and R. Bellingham chosen governour & deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 555.

Harvard college is endowed with 2000 acres of land. vi. 555.

Gov. William Bradford, of plymouth colony, dies. vi. 555.

Plymouth colony banishes h. norton, a quaker. x. 70.

1658. April 20. The coldest day in the year. vi. 647.

May 19. J. Endicott and R. Bellingham chosen governour & deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 555.

1659. May 11. J. Endicott and R. Bellingham chosen governour & deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 555.

Two quakers, w. robinson and m. stephenson, hung for returning to massachusetts, contrary to

a previous statute, after being expelled the colony. vi. 571. 572. 573.

An indian church formed by mr. mayhew at martha's vineyard. iii. 92.

1660. May 30. J. Endicott and R. Bellingham chosen governour & deputy governor of massachusetts. vi. 555.

Messrs. Whaley and Goffe, "regicides," arrive in massachusetts. viii. 67.

Mary Dyer, a quaker, hung for returning into massachusetts, contrary to a previous statute, after being expelled the colony. vi. 573.

1661. J. Endicott and R. Bellingham chosen governour and deputy governor of massachusetts. vi. 575.

A committee of massachusetts general court makes a manly report on the rights and liberties of the colonists and their duties of allegiance to the king. i. (xxvii.) ii. 96.

King Charles II. writes to New england to forbear corporal punishment of quakers. vi. 574.

Aug. 8. Charles II. proclaimed in massachusetts by order of the general court. vi. 575.

Mr. Bradstreet and Mr. Norton sent agents of massachusetts to acknowledge king charles ii. &c. vi. 576.

Rev. John Eliot completes his translation of the new testament into the massachusetts language. ix. 242.

- 1661 and 2. General court of massachusetts censures a book, because it was offensive to the government of england. vi. 575.

1662. April 23. John Winthrop, governour of connecticut, having gone to england for the purpose, obtains a charter for that colony. vi. 310.

J. Endicott and R. Bellingham chosen governour and deputy governor of massachusetts. vi. 575.

Synod at boston, being the third in massachusetts. i. 196. vi. 587. 602.

Plymouth town expense is £25 12 3-4*sh.* iii. 186.

1663. J. Endicott and R. Bellingham chosen governour and deputy governor of massachusetts. vi. 575.

Providence plantations obtain a second charter from charles ii. vii. 79. ix. 195.

The court in plymouth colony proposes for consideration, that every town in that jurisdiction should take measures to have a school master; which is the first publick step towards the establishment of schools in that colony. iv. 79. 80.

Plymouth colony has twelve incorporated towns. iv. 80.

Rev. John Norton dies at boston. vi. 640.

Rev. John Eliot completes his translation of the old testament into the massachusetts language. ix. 242.

1664. March 12. Charles II. gives new york and new jersey to his brother, the duke of york; the inhabitants to enjoy freedom of religion, excepting that the protestant religion is named, and the ministers may be chosen, and *must* be paid by a majority of householders in each town. This grant includes nantucket, martha's vineyard and the elizabeth islands. i. 140. iii. 85.

J. Endicott and R. Bellingham chosen governour and deputy governor of massachusetts. vi. 575.

Col. R. Nichols and Geo. Cartwright, with Sir Robert Carr and S. Maverick, are sent commissioners by charles ii. to review the legislative and judicial proceedings of new england. The two first arrive this year at boston. vi. 577. 664. 665. viii. 92.

Aug. 27. New York, or New Netherlands, which was pretty well peopled by the dutch, is surrendered, by articles signed this day, to the english under col. nichols. i. 140. vi. 311. 667.

The colony of new haven becomes a part of connecticut un-

der the charter. vi. 311. [Dr. Holmes places this under 1665, may 11, the date of the first election according to hubbard.]

1665. March 15. J. Endicott dies governour of massachusetts, and was buried 23 march, having been sixteen years governour of massachusetts. vi. 575. viii. 52.

R. Bellingham and Francis Willoughby chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 575. 581.

Massachusetts sends £500 for his majesty's navy, *as a present*. vi. 587.

General court of massachusetts proclaim by sound of trumpet, that they do not intend to obey the summons of the four commissioners of charles ii. col. nichols, etc. then sitting at boston as a court of appeals. vi. 583.

Whereupon the commissioners leave boston. vi. 584.

The commissioners, col. nichols, etc. appoint justices in maine, and take that province, called yorkshire, under the power of his majesty, from under that of massachusetts, or that of sir f. gorges' agent, who were then disputing the jurisdiction. vi. 584 —:

This government continued only two or three years. vi. 585.

Six towns of indians in massachusetts profess christianity. viii. 66.

The act regulating trade of great britain *is said* to have been observed some years before this time in massachusetts. viii. 71.

Massachusetts has 4400 militia, 132 ships; and the expenses of government are about £1200. viii. 72.

Rev. Dr. John Owen, about to become minister of the church at boston, is induced to remain in england. ii. 266.

Caleb Cheeshahteumuck graduates at harvard college; the only indian, who has received the honours of that university. ii. 178.

First baptist church of boston, massachusetts, was gathered at charlestown. ii. 172.

A law in massachusetts requires, that a free school shall be established in every town; and for every 100 families a "grammar school" besides. "The country is generally well provided with schools." viii. 66. [The law above referred to was passed in may, 1647. See massachusetts colony laws, 186.]

1666. 250 persons from st. christopher's come to boston in distress, and are kindly entertained. vi. 592.

R. Bellingham and F. Willoughby chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 591.

1667. R. Bellingham and F. Willoughby chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 691.

Aug. 7. Rev. J. Wilson, of the first church in boston, dies. vi. 604.

Mendon, massachusetts, planted. vi. 591.

Brookfield, massachusetts, was planted, liberty for which was granted in 1660. vi. 591. 592.

1668. R. Bellingham and F. Willoughby chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 591.

Maine, or yorkshire, returns under the jurisdiction of massachusetts. vi. 593. 596.

Wheat at plymouth is 5s. 6d., barley 4s., rye 3s. 6d., corn 3s., and peas 3s. a bushel. iii. 187.

1669. R. Bellingham and F. Willoughby chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 591.

Piscataqua people give £60 per annum, for seven years, to harvard college. vi. 543.

North hampton,  
Chelmsford,  
Lancaster and

Hadley settled in massachusetts: a few families had been at the last place since 1647. vi. 543.



1670. R. Bellingham and F. Willoughby chosen governour and deputy governour of mass. vi. 591.  
Second indian church at martha's vineyard by t. mayhew. iii. 92.  
Freemen of plymouth are 51. iii. 170.  
"Fish boats at plymouth," and the fishery of importance there. iii. 167.  
June. The general court of plymouth colony grants the profits of the fishery at cape cod to establish a free school in one of the twelve towns of that jurisdiction. It was opened in 1672, and was the first in that colony: but no school house erected till about 1700, when plymouth became subject to the laws of massachusetts. iv. 80. 81. [The reader should distinguish between plymouth and massachusetts colony, and is referred to 1665 ant.]
1671. March 16. Rev. John Davenport, minister of Boston, dies. vi. 603.  
R. Bellingham and J. Leverett chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 610.  
Edgarton, and Tisbury, before called middletown, martha's vineyard, incorporated by governour lovelace of new york. iii. 85.  
John Morton instructs the first town school in plymouth, which is just opened, "to read, write, and cast accounts." iv. 86.  
T. Mayhew obtains a commission from new york to govern martha's vineyard and the elizabeth islands. iii. 85.
1672. Laws first enacted in plymouth colony regarding schools. There is nothing in its records on this subject of a previous date. iii. 173. iv. 80.  
R. Bellingham and J. Leverett chosen governour and deputy governour of mass. vi. 610.  
Free school is opened in plymouth colony, supported by the profits of the cape cod fishery. iv. 80. 81.  
Rev. C. Chauncey, president
- of harvard college, dies. vi. 607.  
Tar seems to have been made in considerable quantity at plymouth. iii. 187. 188.  
R. Bellingham dies governour of massachusetts. vi. 610.
1673. Major J. Leverett chosen governour of massachusetts. vi. 611. 612.  
M. Colve, sailing under a dutch commission, surprises and captures new netherlands. vi. 612. 607.  
June 5. Weather is so cold, as to freeze water in new england. vi. 648.  
Governour Prince, of plymouth colony, dies. x. 63.
- 1674 Feb. 9. New Netherlands returns to the english by the treaty of westminster. vi. 667.  
May 27. J. Leverett chosen governour of mass. vi. 612.  
300 families, or 1500 indians, in duke's county. iii. 91. 92.  
300 families of indians on martha's vineyard and chappaquidick. iii. 86.
- 1674 and 5. Indian troubles in virginia, which lead to bacon and ingram's rebellion. i. 80.
1675. May 12. J. Leverett chosen governour of mass. vi. 612.  
June 21. [Dr. Holmes says June 24.] The war with king philip, which had threatened new england four years, begins: a general combination of indians against the english. i. (xxix) iii. 86. vii. 156.
- 1675 and 6. Marlborough, massachusetts, partly destroyed by the indians. vi. 592.
1676. March 10. The king summons massachusetts to appear by their agents at whitehall, that the claims of capt. mason and sir f. gorges may be determined: mr. w. stoughton and mr. p. buckley were sent agents, and remained nearly three years, returning in 1679. vi. 613. 614.  
April 18. Indians attack sudbury, massachusetts, kill many persons, and do much other damage. iv. 56. 57.

- May 3. J. Leverett chosen governour of massachusetts. vi. 612.
- May 8. Indians do much damage at bridgewater, massachusetts. vii. 156.
- June. The fish in a pond at watertown die suddenly without any assigned cause. vi. 648.
- Nov. A destructive fire in boston, which burns the meeting house at the north end of the town. vi. 648.
- Canal across cape cod contemplated. viii. 192.
- Bacon, the leader of the rebellion in virginia, about this time burns, at jamestown, the first church built in that colony. i. 54. 80.
- 1676, 1689, 1702, 1721, 1730, 1752, 1764, 1776, and 1792. The small-pox in boston. A sixth part die of those who have it naturally; and one two-hundredths of those by inoculation. i. 109.
1677. May 27. J. Leverett chosen governour of massachusetts. vi. 612.
- Dr. Thatcher, a clergyman and physician, publishes a tract on medicine, the first, on that subject, in new england. i. 105.
- A brick building erected for harvard college, by subscription. vi. 610.
- About this time roger williams publishes a book against the quakers. v. 209.
1678. May 8. Simon Bradstreet and Thomas Danforth chosen governour and deputy governour of massachusetts. vi. 612.
- Sir William Berkeley dies governour of virginia, which office he had held from 1640. i. 80.
- A dry dock at charlestown, massachusetts. ii. 166.
- The town of nantucket was begun. iii. 34.
1679. March 16. J. Leverett, governour of massachusetts, dies. vi. 611. viii. 44.
- Aug. 5. [Dr. Holmes says 8.] A very destructive fire at boston. vi. 649.
- Sept. 18. Sir William Jones, king's attorney general, reports against the claim of captain mason vs. massachusetts. vi. 621. [Dr. Holmes thinks that in regard to maine, a purchase was effected by massachusetts of captain mason in 1677; but, it seems, there was a judicial determination besides. See vi. 614 et seq.]
- 1679 and 80. A synod at boston. vi. 622. 623.
1680. Synod agrees upon a confession of faith for the churches. vi. 623.
1682. General Court of Massachusetts grants £50 to rev. william hubbard, for compiling history of new england. ii. 281.
- Destructive fire at boston. vi. 649.
- Joseph Dudley and J. Richards sent to england, agents of massachusetts colony. vi. 614.
- Edward Cranfield arrives with a commission from the king to govern new hampshire. vi. 614.
1683. Charles II. appoints commissioners to examine the claims to the narraganset country. iv. 160.
- 1683 and 4. Freemen in plymouth are 55. iii. 170.
1684. S. Bradstreet governour of massachusetts. iv. 203.
1685. Joseph Dudley, president, with a council of sixteen persons, appointed by james ii. to govern massachusetts, maine, new hampshire, and narraganset; whose powers are objected to in massachusetts. viii. 180.
- Plymouth colony is divided into three counties. i. (vii.)
- Plymouth county is incorporated. vii. 161.
- Mr. Gookin delivers the indian lecture at natick this year. ii. 111.
- The laws of plymouth colony are revised and published. i. (vii.)
1686. Charter of massachusetts is taken away. iv. 160.
- Dec. 19. Sir Edmund Andros, as royal governour of massachusetts, arrives, and the next day lands at boston. ii. 260. viii. 180.

Massachusetts privileges usurped by sir ed. andros. x. 25.

March. Boston harbour is frozen over. ii. 99.

A custom in massachusetts is, that all males go out on military days; those not having guns, to take pikes, etc.; the officer to pray before and after the exercises. ii. 107.

Rev. J. Eliot has made a practice of having an indian lecture delivered to the natick tribe every summer. ii. 108.

Rochester incorporated by plymouth colony. iv. 250. x. 37.

Representation and power of levying taxes strongly connected in the minds of massachusetts people at this period. viii. 179.

1687. Peltry and furs, to this period, are the chief articles of export from plymouth. iii. 189.

Plymouth town votes the following prices for grain: wheat 4s. rye and barley 3s. and corn 2s. 6d. a bushel. iii. 188.

1689. Revolution in massachusetts against the usurpations of sir ed. andros, and the charter resumed. x. 25. 26.

Freemen in plymouth are 75. iii. 170.

Small pox in boston. i. 109.

1690. The expedition commanded by sir william phips, after appearing before quebec, abandons its object and returns to new england. It consisted of 2,000 men, principally pressed in new england for the service. Small-pox, want of ammunition, false intelligence, etc. occasioned the miscarriage of the expedition, which cost massachusetts £50,000, for the payment of which paper bills were first issued by the massachusetts colony. iii. 255 to 260.

1691. Sir Henry Ashurst, Increase Mather, and J. Wiswall, appointed agents of plymouth colony to england to procure a charter. iii. 190.

1692. The charter of william and mary to massachusetts arrives, and annexes martha's vineyard and other islands to that colony.

They had been under the jurisdiction of new york. iii. 87.

Plymouth colony becomes a part of massachusetts, under the charter of william and mary. x. 2.

Two deputies first sent by plymouth to massachusetts legislature, held at boston, june 8, under the new charter. iii. 190.

The episcopalian church in boston [king's chapel, built in 1688—hist. coll. first series, index.] the only one of that denomination in massachusetts. ii. 203.

Proceedings in massachusetts against the witches. iv. 160.

Sir William Phips arrives as governour of massachusetts, under the charter of william and mary. iii. 190. x. 26.

Boston representatives reduced from 4 to 2; but the number was altered by statute to 4, which continued till the revolution in 1775. x. 26.

1692, 1723, 1729, 1731, 1734, and 1735. Acts passed in massachusetts exempting episcopalians, anabaptists and quakers from taxes for the support of the congregational or "established" church. ii. 202. 205.

1692 to 1735. Acts passed in massachusetts during this period for the support of the ministry. ii. 202. 205.

1693. Colonel Fletcher, governour of new york, attempts to establish the episcopal church in that colony, which produces much excitement. i. 141. 143.

1694. June. The house of representatives of massachusetts pass an important act, declaring their powers, amongst others, to be the same with those of the british house of commons, in originating money bills, etc. viii. 326. 327.

1695. Martha's Vineyard, the elizabeth islands, and noman's land, separated from nantucket and made duke's county by the legislature of massachusetts. iii. 88.

1696. There are 88 churches in massachusetts, 1 church in rhode island, 5 churches in new hampshire, 3



- churches in maine, & 36 churches in connecticut; in all 133 churches in new england; to supply which there are 123 pastors. i. (xxvi.)
1697. Rev. Mr. Angier, formerly minister at rehoboth, is settled at waltham by public vote and without the assistance of the clergy, excepting one of that body, who acted as moderator iii. 275. 276. 277.
1698. There are 1000 indians in duke's county. iii. 92.
1700. Jesuits and popish priests are forbidden by the legislature of new york to preach in that colony, under penalty of perpetual imprisonment, and, in certain cases, of death, to prevent their seducing the indians to the french canadian interest. i. 143.
1701. May 26. Boston instructs its representatives to use exertions for the abolition of slavery. viii. 184. [An act for this purpose had passed the massachusetts legislature in the time of governour winthrop, viz. in 1646, "bearing witness against the heinous and crying sin of man stealing." See mass. col. laws, 53.]
- June. The first society of friends was formed at nantucket. iii. 32.
1702. Small-pox in boston. i. 109.
1705. Brookline, massachusetts, incorporated. ii. 145.
1706. First town school house in plymouth, now a part of massachusetts. iv. 81. iv. 88.
- July 13. Governour, council and representatives of massachusetts commit to prison w. rous, s. vetch and others, for illegally trading with the french and indians; whereupon a writ of habeas corpus is demanded of chief justice sewall, and refused by him. viii. 240. 241.
1707. Fitz-John Winthrop, governour of connecticut, dies. iv. 161.
1708. Aug. 29. Indians and french from montreal do great damage at haverhill, massachusetts. iv. 129.
1712. Abington, massachusetts, incorporated. vii. 114.
1713. Wheat is 8s. a bushel, and flour 35s. a barrel, at boston. viii. 243.
1714. Chilmark, martha's vineyard, incorporated. iii. 88.
1720. About this time, rev. cotton mather causes the introduction into new england of inoculation for the small-pox, which is first performed by dr. zabdiel boylston. i. 106. vii. 73.
- Indians in duke's county are 800. iii. 92.
- Indian corn at plymouth is 4s. to 5s. a bushel. iii. 212.
- Witchcraft in mass. x. 7.
1721. The clergy of massachusetts publish pamphlets in favour and against inoculation for the small pox, which disorder was in boston. i. 106. 109.
- An unsuccessful attempt made by colonel thomas westbrooke, with his troops, to seize father rasles, or ralle, at norridgewock; which incenses the indians. viii. 253.
1722. Rev. Timothy Cutler, the rector, and Daniel Brown, the tutor of yale college, with the reverend messrs. john hart, samuel whitelsey, james wetmore, jared eliot, and samuel johnson, clergymen of the congregational or presbyterian order, declare publicly their belief of the invalidity of any other ordination than the episcopal, which produces warm disputes and a stir in the colonies. ii. 128. 129. iv. 301.
- Indians capture nine families at merry-meeting bay, attack the fort at st. george's, and destroy brunswick, maine. viii. 254.
1723. Feb. 24. Great storm and tide at plymouth. iii. 192. [This is the great storm in new england, which dr. holmes has placed under 1724.]
1724. Aug. 23. (O. S. 12.) Norridgewock indian village destroyed by the massachusetts soldiers, and father ralle, or rasles, is killed there. viii. 254.
- Sept. 20. Gurdon Saltonstall, governour of connecticut, dies. iv. 161. 173.

- About this time singing, by notes, was introduced into the churches of mass. iv. 301.
1727. Five episcopal churches, only, in massachusetts. ii. 203.
1730. Rhode Island colony has, including negroes & indians, 17,935 inhabitants. vii. 113.
- In-culation for the small-pox introduced at Philadelphia. vii. 73.
- Small-pox in boston. i. 109.
1732. Savannah, geo. settled. ii. 189.
1734. Halifax, massachusetts, incorporated. iv. 279.
1735. Destructive fever in boston and its vicinity. i. 107.
1737. Long disputed boundary between massachusetts and new hampshire settled by commissioners. iv. 127. [Dr. Holmes places this under 1740.]
1738. Jan. 15. Waltham, massachusetts, incorporated. iii. 280.
1739. Wareham, massachusetts, incorporated. iv. 286.
1741. Fifteen missionaries & school-masters employed in new york, connecticut, and massachusetts, by the society in england for propagating the gospel amongst the indians. ii. 193.
- Two missionaries and school-masters are employed in north carolina by the same society. ii. 193.
- New Hampshire contains about 27 ministers of the gospel. iv. 79.
1742. North Hampton, in new hampshire, is incorporated. iv. 189.
- Indian corn, near plymouth, is 20s. a bushel. iii. 212.
- A Spanish prize, estimated at £800,000 old tenor, is sent into boston. iv. 292.
1745. Expedition against louisbourg; plymouth sends a full company of soldiers. iii. 192.
1746. Indian corn 2s. 8d. a bushel at plymouth. iii. 212.
- Several persons killed and others captivated at contoocook, now boscawen, new hampshire, by the indians. x. 76.
- 1747 and 8. Putrid sore throat fatal in many towns of massachusetts. iii. 216.
1748. A town meeting in boston declared illegal because held on the training day of the ancient and honourable artillery company. ii. 185.
- Rhode Island colony contains 34,128 inhabitants. vii. 113.
1749. A female negro burnt to death at cambridge, and a male negro hung in irons, for poisoning their master. ii. 166.
- The settlement of walpole, new hampshire, begins. vii. 124.
1750. Malt houses common in plymouth to this period. iii. 188.
1752. Small-pox in boston. i. 109.
1754. The college in the city of new york, now called columbia, is established. i. 152.
- Dr. James Lloyd introduces some improvements in surgery, in massachusetts. i. 110.
- 1754 and 5. The whole number of negro slaves in massachusetts, of 16 years and upwards, is about 4580. iii. 95. 96. 97.
1755. Rhode Island contains 46,636 inhabitants, including 4697 negroes and indians. vii. 113.
- July 9. Gen. Braddock is defeated by the french and indians on the banks of the monongahela river; in which battle major george washington distinguishes himself. viii. 154. 155.
- 1755 to 1770. Three vessels, in the whole 470 tons, employed in the liverpool trade by plymouth merchants. iii. 167.
1758. The presbyteries of new york, new jersey, pennsylvania, maryland and virginia, unite into a synod, called the synod of new york and philadelphia. i. 156.
- Gen. Wolfe reconnoitres louisbourg previous to its second capture under gen. monckton. iii. 192.
1759. The virginia presbytery consists of 14 ministers:
- Maryland presbytery consists of 11 ministers:
- Pennsylvania presbytery consists of 29 ministers:
- New Jersey presbytery consists of 11 ministers:

New York presbytery consists of 35 ministers :

The dutch reformed presbytery of new York and new jersey consists of 20 ministers. i. 156.

Lutheran ministers in new york are 2 :

In new jersey none :

In philadelphia about 4. i. 157.

French protestant ministers in new york are 2 :

In new jersey and pennsylvania none. i. 157.

Independent or congregational ministers in new york are 3 :

In new jersey and pennsylvania none. i. 157.

Baptist ministers in new york are 3 :

In new jersey are 5 :

In pennsylvania about 4. i. 157.

The episcopal ministers in new york are 7 :

In new jersey are 5 :

In pennsylvania are about 4. i. 157.

1760. April 22. Boscawen, hillsborough county, new hampshire, incorporated. x. 76.

1760 to 1813. Deaths, disorders, persons bred at college during this period at brookline. ii. 154. et. seq.

1761. Deaths and disorders at edgartown, martha's vineyard. iii. 64.

New Holderness, new hampshire, incorporated. iii. 116.

Middlebury, vermont, incorporated. ix. 123.

1762. Missionaries maintained in america by the society in england for propagating the gospel etc. are 85, who receive about £3727 in salaries. i. 158.

Pepperellborough incorporated : its name was changed to sacco in 1803. iv. 185.

Edward Devotion bequeaths \$2280.65 to brookline, massachusetts, the interest to be appropriated to schools. ii. 151.

1763. Treaty of peace between england, france and spain. i. 249.

Fever carries off nearly all the

remaining indians at nantucket. iii. 36.

June 14. Indians and mulattoes at mashpee incorporated for the choice of overseers, etc. which act was repealed in june 13, 1788. iii. 9. 10.

July 5. Lancaster, new hampshire, incorporated. iii. 103.

Plymouth, new hampshire, incorporated. iii. 111.

An english oration introduced at the commencement exercises, harvard college. i. 249.

New London, connecticut, has 79 sail of vessels ; being 7 sail more than in 1774. ii. 212.

1764. Small-pox in massachusetts, which causes a long vacation at harvard college. i. 109. 249.

Hospitals for inoculation for the small-pox first established in massachusetts. i. 108.

The expenses of the province of massachusetts bay amounted to £24,500, of which £1000 were for bounties on wheat. viii. 198. 199.

Indians in duke's county are 313. iii. 92.

Plymouth contains 2225 inhabitants, including 77 negroes and 48 indians. iii. 170.

Waltham, massachusetts, contains 107 families, or 663 inhabitants, and 94 dwellings. iii. 271.

Duke's county contains 394 families, or 2300 white inhabitants ; and 46 negroes and 313 indians. iii. 88.

Sept. Bridgewater contains 3990 inhabitants. vii. 168.

1765. New Bedford has only two or three small vessels in the whale fishery at this period. iii. 18.

1767. Indians at mashpee are 271. iii. 14.

New Hampshire contains about 52,700 inhabitants, divided into nine regiments of foot, and one of horse guards, 80 justices of the peace and 31 representatives. iv. 79.

Ministers of the gospel in new hampshire are 64. iv. 78. 79.

1768. East Tennessee began to be settled by a few persons under



general robertson; though it did not acquire that name for many years after. vii. 58.

1769. Dec. 22. Landing of the pilgrims at plymouth first publicly noticed at that place by the old colony club. iii. 176.

1770. July 3. First dissenting ordination performed in nova scotia. viii. 231.

The medical establishment at harvard college begun by a bequest of e. hersey; which was made adequate to its object by the bequest of j. cummings, william erving and e. sprague, made a few years after. i. 116.

Great storm and tide at plymouth. iii. 192.

Wolfborough, new hampshire, incorporated. iii. 119.

1771. The classis of Amsterdam, holland, resigns its ecclesiastical dominion over the dutch churches of new york and new jersey. i. 140.

1772. New York contains 148,124 inhabitants. i. 147.

1773. New York has 23 ministers of dutch churches, and 24 vacant congregations of that denomination:

45 presbyterian ministers, and 15 vacant churches:

21 episcopal ministers, and 1 vacant church:

3 lutheran ministers, and 10 vacant churches:

12 anabaptist ministers, and 4 vacant churches:

2 french protestant churches, both vacant:

2 moravian ministers, and 1 vacant church:

17 quaker meeting houses:

1 synagogue of jews:

7 baptist separate preachers:

Roman catholics are prohibited. i. 147 to 151.

Sept. 1. Delegates from the consociated churches of connecticut and the synod of new york and philadelphia meet in convention at stanford, and are addressed by president stiles. i. 140.

1774. Rhode Island contains 59,678 inhabitants. vii. 113.

The association of congregational ministers of connecticut write a letter of encouragement to the boston churches, considering them as suffering in the cause of liberty; and send relief to those suffering under the boston port bill. ii. 255. 258.

New Haven has 108 vessels, in the whole 7170 tons, and 756 seamen: its imports from great britain are about £4000 sterling, and purchases at boston about £40,000 sterling per annum; its foreign trade is to the french west india islands, the receipts from which are about £3000 sterling per annum, and to great britain, only, in europe. ii. 218.

New London, connecticut, has 72 vessels, in the whole 3247 tons, and 496 seamen, and 20 coasting vessels: its trade principally to the west indies; its purchases of british goods amount to £150,000 or £160,000 sterling per annum; its exports are £70,000 sterling. ii. 219. 220.

Sept. 5. The first continental congress is organized at philadelphia: peyton randolph is chosen president, and charles thompson secretary. ii. 221.

Each colony to have one vote in this congress resolved upon; which is not to be a precedent. ii. 221.

Committees are appointed to state american grievances and the british acts, that affect american trade and manufactures. ii. 221.

Sept. 16. Suffolk resolves arrive by express from boston, and are highly applauded by congress. ii. 221.

September. Non-importation of british goods and manufactures, or any goods from great britain or ireland, after dec. 1, resolved on by congress. ii. 221.

Lord Dunmore, with 1500 virginians, pursues the indians in ohio: he issues a proclamation cutting off the county of westmoreland from pennsylvania. ii. 223.

Montreal, canada, sends £100 for the relief of those suffering under the boston port bill. ix. 161.

1775. Provincial congress sits at cambridge and watertown. iii. 234.

April 18. British troops under col. smith, leave boston to destroy american stores at concord. ii. 224.

April 19. Battles between the british and american troops at lexington and concord, massachusetts. ii. 224. iii. 234.

April 19. Charlestown, massachusetts nearly abandoned: the inhabitants return in 1776. ii. 167.

June 17. Battle of bunker's or breed's hill; col. prescott commanding the american, and lord howe the british troops. ii. 167.

June 17. Charlestown, massachusetts, is burnt by the british troops. ii. 167.

July. Gen. G. Washington, with a commission from congress to be commander in chief of the troops of the american colonies, arrives at cambridge to take the command. x. 3.

Nov. 12. Gen. Montgomery takes montreal, with its shipping etc. ii. 238.

Dec. 31. Gen. Montgomery assaults quebec, and is killed within the pickets. ii. 244.

Small-pox in boston. i. 109.

2000 persons inoculated for the small-pox by drs. rand and hayward, near boston. i. 108. 109.

Dr. Benjamin Church is made director of the continental hospital, and superseded by dr. morgan. i. 111.

Cherokee indians convey kentucky country to col. henderson, which was taken possession of in 1779 by gen. robertson. vii. 62.

Hillsborough county, new hampshire, contains 15,986 inhabitants. vii. 69.

Lancaster, new hampshire, contains 61 inhabitants. iii. 105.

Plymouth, new hampshire, contains 382 inhabitants. iii. 113.

New Holderness, new hampshire, contains 172 inhabitants. iii. 116.

Wolfborough, new hampshire, contains 211 inhabitants. iii. 120.

Middletown, new hampshire, contains 233 inhabitants. iii. 121.

New Bedford, massachusetts, has 40 or 50 vessels employed in the whale fishery, when the war puts an end to the business. iii. 18.

1776. March 2. The americans begin the bombardment of boston. viii. 294.

Plymouth contains 2655 white inhabitants. iii. 170.

Duke's county contains 482 families, or 2822 white inhabitants, and 59 negroes. iii. 88.

Waltham, massachusetts, contains 870 inhabitants. iii. 271.

Expedition against ticonderoga and crown point, under general thomas. x. 3.

Inhabitants return to charlestown, massachusetts. ii. 167.

Dysentery fatal throughout most of the united colonies. iii. 216.

1776 to 1782. Canada cost great britain 1,299,519£. 19s. 6 1-2d. sterling. iii. 122.

1777. Sept. 19. Battle between the americans under general gates, and the british troops under general burgoyne, at stillwater, saratoga county, new york; the former successful. iii. 237.

Washington county, north carolina, is formed, comprising what is now east tennessee. vii. 61.

American expedition against the british troops on long island, which is successful. ii. 227.

1778. The british and hessian troops, who had been taken prisoners at the battle of saratoga, are stationed at charlestown, in massachusetts. ii. 168.

Middletown, new hampshire, incorporated. iii. 121.

Aug. 29. Battle on rhode island between the american and british forces. iv. 302.

1779. April. General Robertson, with a few others, establishes himself near the present site of nashville, tennessee. Lexington, kentucky, was then a new settlement. vii. 63.
- June 20. General Lincoln attacks the british troops at stony ferry, near charleston, south carolina. iii. 240.
- June 23. Cummington, massachusetts, incorporated. x. 44.
- July 16. Stony point taken by assault by americans under general wayne. ii. 227.
- Sept. Convention is held at cambridge to form the constitution of massachusetts, which was adopted the following year, and abolishes slavery. vii. 162.
- British general grey carries off from martha's vineyard 120 oxen and 10,000 sheep, american property. iii. 89.
- Oct. 9. American and french troops, the former under general lincoln, and the latter under counts d'estaing and dillon, after some days siege, ineffectually attack savannah, georgia, in which they lose count pulaski, who is mortally wounded. iii. 242.
- New London, new hampshire, incorporated. viii. 175.
- Winter extremely severe in the mississippi valley. vii. 64.
1780. The American Academy of Arts and Sciences is incorporated in massachusetts. i. 112.
- April 10. East Sudbury, massachusetts, incorporated. iv. 53.
- May 12. General Lincoln, in charleston, south carolina, capitulates to the english forces under sir h. clinton and admiral arbutnot. iii. 244.
- Dr. J. Warren, professor of harvard college, delivers the first lecture, in massachusetts, on anatomy. i. 111.
- At plymouth, massachusetts, indian corn is 3s. 4d. and rye 4s. a bushel; beef 2 1-2d. and pork 4d. a pound. iii. 212.
1781. Oct. Colonel Scammell dies of a wound received at the siege of yorktown. iv. 96.
- General Lincoln is made secretary of war, by congress. iii. 245.
- Massachusetts Medical Society is established, but not organized till the following year. i. 112. 134.
- 1781 to 1815. Bill of mortality in kingston, massachusetts, during this period. iii. 218.
1782. First licentiate in medicine in massachusetts. i. 113.
- Canada costs great britain 1,299,519£ 19s. 6 1-2d. sterling to this year from 1776. iii. 122.
1783. Duke's county contains 522 families, or 3056 white inhabitants. iii. 89.
- Waltham, massachusetts, contains 698 inhabitants. iii. 271.
- Plymouth, massachusetts, contains 2380 inhabitants, including 35 negroes. iii. 170.
- Rhode island contains 51,869 inhabitants, being several thousands less than in 1774. vii. 113.
1785. March. "The Plymouth Journal" printed at plymouth, its first newspaper. iii. 177.
- Great storm and tide at plymouth. iii. 192.
- Charlestown contains 150 buildings and 550 inhabitants. ii. 169.
- 1785 to 1806. Deaths and disorders in Edgartown, martha's vineyard. iii. 65.
- 1785 to 1807. No young man dies of consumption in edgartown, martha's vineyard; not so of the females. iii. 65.
1786. Charlestown bridge to boston completed, to the surprise of many. ii. 172.
- Mr. Reed, at bridgewater, invents a machine for cutting nails. vii. 119.
- Rebellion in massachusetts, headed by shays and day. iii. 246. x. 79.
1787. Rebellion in massachusetts under shays and day, which is quelled by massachusetts army. iii. 246.
- The management of the funds belonging to the scotch society



- for promoting christianity in foreign parts, is transferred to massachusetts. ii. 45.
- Nov. Massachusetts Society for propagating the Gospel amongst the Indians, incorporated by the legislature of massachusetts. ii. 46.
- Malden bridge built. ii. 167.
1788. Convention sits at boston for the adoption of the federal constitution. vii. 161.
- The legislature of massachusetts recommends a collection to be made in all the churches, for the benefit of the society for propagating the gospel amongst the indians. \$1561 were collected. ii. 46.
- 1788 to 1806. Deaths, marriages, etc. at chilmark, martha's vineyard. iii. 65.
- 1788 to 1815. Deaths and baptisms at kingschapel, boston. iii. 291. 292.
1789. Massachusetts Medical Society is authorized, by the legislature, to point out a course of studies to be pursued by medical students. i. 113.
- 1789 to 1814. Births, deaths, valuation, etc. in charlestown, massachusetts. ii. 182. 183.
1790. Duke's county contains 3265 white inhabitants. iii. 89.
- Carver, massachusetts, incorporated. iv. 271.
- Haverhill, massachusetts, contains 2408 inhabitants. iv. 138.
- Lancaster, new hampshire, contains 161 inhabitants. iii. 105.
1791. Massachusetts Historical Society instituted. i. 138.
- Massachusetts Humane Society incorporated. i. 121.
1792. At Leipzig fair there were 2227 new books produced, whereof 1411 were entirely new productions. viii. 274.
- In Saxony, out of 2,000,000 people, there are 700 authors living. viii. 274.
- German authors living are 4000. viii. 274.
- Small pox in boston. i. 109.
1795. United States, by general wayne, make a treaty with the western indians, called the treaty of granville, or greenville. ii. 4.
- Strong and violent party divisions in the united states, occasioned by the treaty (mr. jay's) with great britain. ii. 176.
- Brookfield, new hampshire, incorporated. iii. 120.
1797. Dr. Belknap discovers the cellar of a store-house erected by bartholomew gosnold in 1602, on cuttyhunk, one of the elizabeth islands. iii. 78.
1799. Dr. Jenner's discovery of vaccination is transmitted to the united states. i. 121.
- Dec. 14. General Washington dies. ii. 173.
1800. Feb. 22. Congress sets apart this day to commemorate the death of general washington. ii. 173.
- A navy yard is located at charlestown, massachusetts. ii. 174.
- New Hampshire contains 183,858 inhabitants;—472 justices of the peace, 92 attorneys at law, and 129 ministers of the gospel. iv. 79.
- Vaccination is first performed in the united states by dr. benjamin waterhouse. i. 122.
1802. Experiments made by physicians, under the direction of the boston board of health, result decidedly in favor of vaccination. i. 123.
- Mashpee contains 380 indians in 80 dwellings, few if any of whom are of pure blood. iii. 4.
1803. Middlesex canal, massachusetts, opened. ii. 174.
- United States' marine hospital erected at charlestown, massachusetts. ii. 175.
- Chelsea bridge and salem turnpike constructed. ii. 171.
1804. Oct. 9 and 10. A hurricane destroys many timber and other trees in massachusetts. iii. 166. vii. 114.
1805. New Bedford has 73 ships and 39 brigs. iii. 19.
- Massachusetts state prison, at charlestown, erected. ii. 175.

1806. Massachusetts has 450,061 tons of shipping. iii. 122.

1806 and 7. State of thermometer at nantucket and salem. ii. 22.

1807. Boston athenæum established. i. 139.

Duke's county contains 350 indians, a few only of whom are of pure blood. iii. 93. 94.

Plainfield, massachusetts, incorporated. viii. 172.

Indians on nantucket are two men, and six women. iii. 36.

1808. Massachusetts Pharmacopœia published by drs. j. jackson, and j. c. warren. i. 115.

Mashpee contains 357 indians, of impure blood. iii. 4.

Dec. 10. Governour J. Sullivan dies. i. 254.

1809. Medical lectures are transferred from cambridge to boston. i. 115.

Tyngsborough, massachusetts, incorporated. iv. 196.

1810. May 9. General Lincoln dies. iii. 250.

Jonathan Lambert, an american, becomes the first settler of the island of tristan d'acunha. ii. 125.

1811. Rev. Wm. Emerson, of boston, dies. i. 256.

1812. Narraganset indians are 150. ii. 47.

June 9. Rev. J. S. Buckminster dies. ii. 271.

1813. Rev. Dr. John Eliot, of boston, dies. i. 226.

The first instance of the discharge of a cargo, at plymouth, of a vessel from beyond the cape of good hope. iii. 197.

The choctaw squaws manufacture 18,000 or 20,000 yards of cloth. ii. 22.

1814. British ships burn vessels at wareham, mass. iv. 288.

The general court of massachusetts, to encourage the publication of hubbards's history of new england, purchase some hundreds of copies. ii. 281.

Indians in the united states, west of the alleghany mountains, are estimated at 70,115, of whom 18,204 are warriors. ii. 20.

Indians in lower louisiana, be-

tween the rivers arkansaw and rio del norte, are estimated at 53,890, of whom, 15,720 are warriors. ii. 30.

Indians between the arkansaw and missouri rivers are estimated at 37,839, of whom 10,152 are warriors. ii. 39.

Indians west of the mississippi, and north of the missouri river and the lakes, in the united states, are estimated at 15,900, of whom 4100 are warriors. ii. 44; and the

Indians in the british territory, within the same bounds, are estimated at 35,550, of whom 9800 are warriors. ii. 44.

1142 children instructed at the primary and other town schools in charlestown, mass. ii. 184.

1815. Sept. 28. (Sept. 23. See x. 45.) Great gale in new england. iv. 264. 265.

New Hampshire contains 144 ministers of the gospel, 162 attorneys at law, 1004 justices of the peace, 184 representatives, 37 regiments of militia. iv. 79.

Indians at herring pond, plymouth, are about 50, and of mixed blood. iii. 201. iv. 302.

Plymouth contains 409 dwellings. iii. 168.

1816. Deaths in boston are 904. vii. 134.

Feb. 29. Rev. Peter Whitney dies. vii. 177.

1817. Deaths in boston are 907. viii. 40. 41.

1818. March 17. Rev. J. McKean, D. D. LL. D. dies. viii. 164.

April 25. Caleb Gannett, Esq. dies. viii. 279.

1819. July 8. Hon. W. Tudor dies. viii. 285.

1821. There are 131 persons more than 70 years old in Rochester, massachusetts, being one thirtieth of its population. x. 39.

Jan. 10. Hon. Joshua Thomas dies. x. 1.

Sept. Hon. James Winthrop dies. x. 77.

1822. Oct. 3. William Danbridge Peck, Esq. professor of natural history in harvard college, dies. x. 161.

# A GENERAL INDEX TO THE TEN VOLUMES OF THE SECOND SERIES.

*P. stands for Prince.*

## A.

- Abarginny men. ii. 66.  
 Abbainoch, a god among indians. ii. 66.  
 Abbot, rev. hull, minister of charles-town. ii. 171.  
 Abbot, rev. thomas. ii. 178.  
 Abbot, rev. abiel, of haverhill, dismissed. iv. 146.  
 Abbot, abiel. iv. 144.  
 Abbot, benjamin, ll. d. principal of exeter academy. ii. 271.  
 Abbot, daniel. vii. P. 4.  
 Abbot's run. x. 171.  
 Abbot, amos. x. 179.  
 Abbot, reuben. x. 180.  
 Abenaki, or wapenachki, indians, meaning of. ix. 240.  
 Abington, massachusetts, account of. vii. 114. its boundaries, incorporation, timber, good grazing town, called "little comfort," origin of its name. 114. 115. 117. effects of hurricane in. 114. 115. its markets. 115. its orchards and cider. 116. its mills, roads, military, manufactories and schools. 118. its manufactory of tacks. 119. its population, deaths, and ecclesiastical history. 120. 121. its history. 121. its indian name. 122. incorporated. 123. 146. its settlement begun. 123. origin of its inhabitants. 123.  
 Abnakis, indian language, father rasles' dictionary of, seized and placed in harvard college library. viii. 253.  
 Absaroka indians, their number, residence and warriors. ii. 36.  
 Academies in hillsboro' county, new hampshire. vii. 70.  
 Acadie. iv. 158. its copper. v. 24. See acady, and laccady. vii. 78.  
 Acadians. iii. 194.  
 Acady, disputes about. yi. 478. see acadie.  
 Acamake shore, virginia, its settlement, named northampton county. ix. 111.  
 Acawmuck, or accomeck, its meaning, name of a county in virginia. iii. 175. ix. 111.  
 Acco-kesaws, indians, their number, residence and language. ii. 25.  
 Accomack. i. 46. 47. 57. (xx.)  
 Accometicus. v. 14.  
 Accord pond. iv. 220. vii. 115—117.  
 Accord pond shares. vii. 122.  
 Account of providence, rhode island, probably by stephen hopkins. ix. 166—203.  
 Accusations against massachusetts before the king and council. v. 146.  
 Accushnet river. iv. 303.  
 Ackanootus, an indian. iv. 293.  
 Ackers, john. ii. 144.  
 Ackers, john, jun. ii. 144.  
 Ackers, william. ii. 144.  
 Acorns, manner of planting. i. 192.  
 Act of uniformity. i. (xxix.)  
 Act of massachusetts historical society. i. 1.  
 Act respecting french protestants. i. 144.  
 Act incorporating mashpee indians. iii. 9.  
 Act of privileges of massachusetts, 1694, claiming the same that belong to the british house of commons for its house of representatives. viii. 326. 327.  
 Acts for the support of episcopacy in new york. i. 143. 144.  
 Acts respecting plymouth schools. iv. 80.  
 Acts respecting mashpee indians. iii. 10.  
 Acts, private, to be pleaded. viii. 242.  
 Acushnet river. iii. 18. 19.  
 Adam's chair. iii. 267. 268.  
 Adams, rev. zabdiel, of lunenburg. i. 184.  
 Adams, chester. ii. 181. 182.  
 Adams, nathan. ii. 181.  
 Adams, henry. ii. 178. 179. 180. 181.  
 Adams, ashur. ii. 181.  
 Adams, benjamin. ii. 181.  
 Adams, hon. john. his dissertation on canon and civil law. i. (xxvii.) president of the united states. viii.



286. x. 64. his letter to j. tudor.  
 291. his letters from congress at philadelphia to w. tudor. 309. 311. 313.
- Adams, rev. eliphalet, of taunton and new london. iv. 86. extract from his funeral sermon on governour saltonstall. 169.
- Adams, rev. joseph, of newington, new hampshire. iv. 78. x. 176.
- Adams, rev. john, of durham, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Adams, rev. joseph, jun. of stratham, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Adams, ———. iii. 66.
- Adams, ———. a distiller in lancaster, new hampshire. iii. 100.
- Adams, samuel, lieutenant governour of massachusetts. iii. 249. his description of rev. samuel fothergill's prayer. viii. 189. x. 28. 29.
- Adams, rev. phineas, of haverhill, his character. iv. 150.
- Adams, phineas, esq. iv. 150, 169.
- Adams, mrs. iv. 244.
- Adams, john, of plymouth. iv. 244.
- Adams, james. iv. 244.
- Adams, thomas, assistant. v. 121. 124. viii. 97.
- Adams, samuel, of ipswich. viii. 107.
- Adams, ———. viii. 236.
- Adams, hugh, quoted. viii. 256.
- Addaire indians, their residence, number, and language. ii. 24.
- Addington, isaac, of boston. iv. 236. x. 25. secretary of massachusetts. viii. 240. 242. 305.
- Address of massachusetts company to the church of england, from on board the arbella. v. 126.
- Address of massachusetts to charles ii. on his restoration. vi. 557.
- Addresses before massachusetts humane society, list of. i. 121.
- Addresses from rhode island colony to charles ii. and earl clarendon about charter rights. vii. 98—109.
- Adelung, professor, one of the authors of the mithridates. ix. 231.
- Adelung, hon. frederick, one of the authors of the mithridates. ix. 231. x. 192. his survey of all known languages and their dialects referred to. x. 150.
- Administrators first authorized in massachusetts to sell lands for payment of debts. vi. 592.
- Admiralty court in england, a ship seized in boston harbour under a pretended commission from, which produces disturbances. vi. 474. 475.
- Admiralty, a court of in massachusetts, 1666. viii. 101.
- Adultery punished by death in massachusetts. vi. 426.
- Adultery with another's wife punished in massachusetts by the death of both parties. vii. P. 35.
- Advertisement to dr. edward's observations on the mohegan language, by j. pickering. x. 81—84.
- Africa has 276 languages. ix. iii.
- Agamenticus granted to capt. champernoon and mr. gorges. v. 224. made a corporation. vi. 467. or york, maine, comes under the jurisdiction of massachusetts. vi. 543.
- Aganemo, sachem of the nianticks, comes to boston. v. 254. 255.
- Agar, william, sworn a freeman of massachusetts. vii. P. 29.
- Agawam. i. (iv.) or ipswich, sagamoreship of, named essex. iii. 142. its settlement. v. 155. "simple cobbler of," extract from. vi. 624. ordered to be planted by j. winthrop, jun. vii. P. 84. who begins to plant it; names of its ten first settlers. P. 86. its tax. viii. 230.
- Agawam, now ipswich, sagamore of, forbidden to enter english houses. vii. P. 31. his wigwam attacked by tarratines, or eastern indians. P. 32. 33.
- Agawam, or springfield, settled. v. 308.
- Agawam, now westfield river. x. 41.
- Agawam, plymouth colony, its bounds settled. iii. 187. leased and sold. 188. iii. 162. iv. 293. 294. 296. now wareham. iv. 285.
- Agawam brook, in plymouth colony. iii. 175. 164. iv. 286.
- Agawam, or agawaam, lands appropriated to plymouth schools. iv. 86.
- Ager, jonathan. viii. 106.
- Ager, alger, or auger. vii. 151. 155.
- Agissawamg indians. ii. 66.
- Agriculture begun by massachusetts people. iii. 129. 132. its increase. iv. 35.
- Ague, cure of. x. 182.
- Agues, shaking, early in massachusetts. iv. 102.

- Aikin, ———. i. 133.  
 Alabama indians, their language, number and residence. ii. 18. 26.  
 Alabama river. ii. 19.  
 Alarum given in massachusetts to try the soldiers who were preparing for indian war. vii. P. 67.  
 Albany, or aurania fort. v. 18. account of. vii. 674.  
 Albemarle frigate. iii. 195.  
 Alcibiades, a mistake of raphael in painting. iii. 229.  
 Alcock, job, lieutenant at york. vi. 600.  
 Alcock, george. vii. P. 4. sworn freeman of massachusetts. vii. P. 29. deacon of dorchester and roxbury churches, then united. vii. P. 64. viii. 232.  
 Alden, john. iv. 220. vii. 137. 138. assistant at plymouth colony. vii. 153. P. 83. arrested at boston. v. 167. x. 57. 60. 61. 62. 63. 65. 68. 69.  
 Alden, judah. x. 62.  
 Alden, capt. john. x. 63. 69.  
 Alden, david. x. 63.  
 Alden, col. ichabod. x. 64.  
 Alden, samuel. x. 63. 64.  
 Alden, jonathan. x. 64.  
 Alden, rev. timothy. vii. 169.  
 Alden, rev. timothy, jun. quoted iii. 35. 201. his letter on earthquakes in new england. iv. 70. his letter respecting the indian names of white hills and pascataqua. ii. 266. his epitaphs referred to. x. 56.  
 Alden, joseph. vii. 148. 150. 153. x. 63.  
 Alden, isaac. vii. 148.  
 Alden, john. vii. 150. 159.  
 Alden, ———. vii. 123.  
 Alder brook. iii. 100.  
 Aldersey, samuel. viii. 97.  
 Aldersly, ———, subscribes £75 for massachusetts colony. v. 122.  
 Alderton, john. ix. 38. or allerton, isaac. ix. 56.  
 Aldrich, john. vii. 149.  
 Aleche, or egeish, their residence, number, and language. ii. 24.  
 Ales. See wakes. vii. P. 77.  
 Alewives, a manure. iii. 158. notice of. iv. 294.  
 Aleworth, francis, chosen lieutenant at court of assistants. vii. P. 32.  
 Alexander, sir william. v. 15. afterwards earl of sterling, has nova scotia assigned to him. v. 89. sells his right to nova scotia to la tour. vi. 483. nova scotia granted to. ix. 5.  
 Alexander, robert. x. 179.  
 Alford, john, of charlestown, his donation to society for propagating the gospel amongst the indians. ii. 46.  
 Alger, ager, or augur. vii. 151. 155.  
 Alger, ebiezer. vii. 160.  
 Alger, abiezer. vii. 160.  
 Algonquin indians, their language. ii. 6. 7. 10—12.  
 Al-la-ka-we-ah, or paunche indians, their number and residence. ii. 36.  
 Allegiance in massachusetts. viii. 48. 54.  
 Allegiance, form of the oath of, observed in massachusetts. viii. 73.  
 Allegiance, form of the oath of, sent by the king's commissioners, col. nichols and others, to massachusetts general court. vii. 64.  
 Allegiance, form of, prescribed by general court of massachusetts for citizens and magistrates. viii. 74.  
 Allegiance, complaints of the king's commissioners about. viii. 76. 78.  
 Allegiance, form of, in dalton's justice, taken by gov. bellingham, &c. with a salvo. viii. 88. 91.  
 Allegiance, a day of prayer in massachusetts general court, owing to disputes about. viii. 98.  
 Allegiance, oath of, required by the king to be taken in rhode island. vii. 94.  
 Allegiance, engagement of in rhode island. vii. 96.  
 Allegiance altered in rhode island. vii. 97.  
 Allen, rev. james, of brookline, his writings and character. ii. 147. 148. 153. 156.  
 Allen, james. ii. 157.  
 Allen, mrs. mary, her donation of church plate to brookline. ii. 153.  
 Allen, ———. iii. 66.  
 Allen, rev. ebenezer, of wolfsborough, new hampshire. iii. 120.  
 Allen, rev. james, of boston. ii. 101. senior fellow of harvard college. iv. 64.  
 Allen, john, of scituate. iv. 239.  
 Allen, ———. iv. 199.

- Allen, rev. thomas, of charlestown. ii. 171. vii. 41.
- Allen, rev. john, of dedham, arrives. vii. 1. 9. answers president chauncy's antisynodalia. i. 202. 204. vi. 590. his death. vi. 607. viii. 41. viii. 111. 112.
- Allen, ———. iv. 260.
- Allen, holmes. iii. 10.
- Allen, george. iii. 11.
- Allen, elizabeth. iii. 32.
- Allen, rev. benjamin, of bridgewater. iv. 94. and of cape elizabeth. vii. 164.
- Allen, thomas, of norwich. v. 302.
- Allen, capt. bozoun. iv. 103. vi. 417. 493. vii. 54.
- Allen, edward, of ipswich, his barn burnt by lightning. vi. 628.
- Allen, james, a native of bridgewater. vii. 170.
- Allen, samuel. vii. 149. 150. 154. 157. 159.
- Allen, nathaniel. vii. 150.
- Allen, ebenezer. vii. 150.
- Allen, josiah. vii. 150.
- Allen, eli. ha. vii. 150.
- Allen, nehemiah. vii. 150.
- Allen, capt. jacob. vii. 154. 150.
- Allen, lieutenant. viii. 156.
- Allen, daniel. x. 26.
- Allen, bezoun. x. 26.
- Allen, james, of boston. x. 28.
- Allerton, isaac. iii. 164. assistant at plymouth colony. v. 67. sent to england to negotiate a settlement between the plantation and adventurers. v. 98. his trading house at machias attacked by la tour. v. 163. returns to massachusetts. vii. P. 30. agent of plymouth to england, discharged for breach of instructions. vii. P. 64—"corrections." sails for england, is no longer employed by plymouth colony. vii. P. 34. sets up trade to kennebeck, to the injury of plymouth people; his trading house at penobscot broken up, and people killed by the french. vii. P. 74. 87. viii. 117. ix. 56.
- Allerton, ———. iv. 85.
- Allerton's hill. iv. 234.
- Allerton's point. v. 240. vii. P. 62.
- Allerton or alderton. ix. 56.
- Allin, bozoun. See allen.
- Allin, ———. vii. 29.
- Alluvial soil at middlebury, vermont. ix. 125. 126.
- Allyn, ———, secretary of connecticut. vii. 125.
- Alms-house at boston. i. 126.
- Alsted, his account of wars in germany very accurate. vii. P. 17.
- Amber found at nantucket. iii. 27.
- Ambrose, ship, rear admiral of the fleet for new england. v. 129. commanded by capt. john low. 128. arrives at salem. 132. vii. P. 10. saved by capt. peirce in the lyon. v. 140. vii. P. 19.
- America, origin of its name. v. 8. its natives less numerous in north than in south. v. 29. professor ebeling's history of referred to. viii. 270—273. 276. reasons showing the lawfulness of removing to from england. ix. 64. has 1214 languages. ix. (iii.)
- American academy of arts and sciences incorporated. i. 112.
- American museum (carey's) referred to. x. 81. 82.
- American farmer, letters of. iii. 37.
- American recorder. ii. 169.
- American, north, indian languages, observations on by j. pickering, esq. ix. 223.
- Americus, his discoveries. v. 8.
- Ames, ———, presented to plymouth court for drunkenness. x. 69.
- Ames, david. vii. 154.
- Ames, doctor, his lawsuit. vii. 154.
- Ames, william. vii. 153. 154.
- Ames, richard. vii. 153. 154.
- Ames, nathaniel. vii. 153. 154.
- Ames, thomas. vii. 153. 154.
- Ames, rev. dr. w. v. 43. vii. 29. 166. a non-conformist. 118. protected by richard brown. 187. 188. author of medulla theologiae. vii. 165.
- Ames, dr. seth, of amherst, notice of. ii. 251.
- Ames, rev. william. vii. 29.
- Ames, john. vii. 157. 158. 138. 149. 150. 153. 154.
- Ames, thomas. vii. 159.
- Ames, fisher, his descent. vii. 166. 154. viii. 298. his letter to w. tudor about candidates for office in congress at new york. viii. 316. his letters to w. tudor. viii. 317. 318. 320. 322. ditto about national



- bank to be established. 322. ditto about a theatre, etc. 323.
- Ames, sylvanus. vii. 169.
- Amherst, new hampshire, sketch of by john farmer; its situation and boundaries. ii. 247. its public buildings and dwellings; its ponds; 248. its social library and musical society; its academy; its schools; its bank; its inhabitants. 249. courts held at; its history; its indian name; its first settlers; its church gathered, and first minister ordained. 250. its injuries by indians. 251. raises a company in revolutionary war; its first newspaper. 252. its voters; its franklin society. 254. its bill of mortality. iv. 73. or souhegan, an account of its ministers and churches. viii. 176.
- Amherst journal and new hampshire advertiser. ii. 252.
- Amherst, massachusetts, general lincoln, arrives there in pursuit of rebels. iii. 247.
- Ammeguntick lake. ii. 235.
- Ammunition, &c. required to be kept by each soldier in mass. vii. 56.
- Amonoosuck river. iii. 106.
- Anabaptists in new york. i. 149. in rhode island. vi. 336. ii. 58. in rhode island, divisions among. vi. 343. 344. disturbed by gorton. vi. 343. increase in massachusetts. vi. 347. their opinions subversive of government vi. 347. banished from mass. vi. 347. troublesome in massachusetts. 373. law against. vi. 413. sometimes called wedder-droppers. vi. 624. 626. become very numerous in new england; ministers appointed to convert them. viii. 111. a public dispute held with them at boston. 111—112. See baptists.
- Anatomical museum of harvard college. i. 117.
- Anatomical lectures at fryeburg. i. 126. at plymouth. i. 126.
- Anatomical association at harvard college. i. 109.
- Ancient society of charlestown. ii. 172.
- Ancient and honourable artillery company, brief history of, incorporated, gift to of 1000 acres of land, interrupted during the government of sir. e. andros, its title first used, its charter declared void, taxes remitted. ii. 185. intermission of during the revolutionary war. 186. oldest military company in united states. 180.
- Anderson, dr. robert, of edinburgh. viii. 167.
- Anderson, —. iv. 79.
- Andover, twenty-eighth church in massachusetts, planted by simon bradstreet and others, origin of its name. iv. 138. v. 237. vi. 416. viii. 14. 15. earthquake felt at. iv. 71. attacked by indians. iv. 123.
- Andrew, rev. —, of milford, connecticut. ii. 128. 132.
- Andrew, an indian, sets fire to a house near portsmouth, new hampshire, and captures a young woman. vi. 631.
- Andrews, abraham. ii. 178. instructor. 180.
- Andrews, john. viii. 107.
- Andrews, richard. iv. 220.
- Andrews, —, missionary from new york to the five nations of indians. viii. 245.
- Andrews, —, his present of heifers to the ministers and poor of massachusetts. v. 170. 171.
- Androskoggin river. iv. 185. or ambrosskoggin river. v. 228.
- Andros, major, governour at new york, vi. 629. sends a sloop with soldiers to pemaquid, which causes the indians there to desist from hostilities. vi. 636. usurps the privileges of massachusetts charter. x. 25. i. (xviii.) claims clark's island. iii. 189. seized and removed from the government of massachusetts. iv. 160. papers relating to his administration in massachusetts. viii. 179—183. his letter to w. clark, governour of rhode island, about his reception at boston and the surrender of rhode island charter. 180. administers the oath of allegiance, &c. to the members of his council at boston. 182. minutes of the doings of his council. viii. 181. who take order about sending declarations to clerks of courts, summoning plymouth and rhode island councillors to boston.

- and other members of council to be present. 181.
- Anecdote of the lock of a gun, which killed king philip. iv. 63. of a hanging at plymouth. v. 77. of arnold and his soldiers when he deserted. iv. 51.
- Anequeasset. iv. 266. 267.
- Angel gabriel, ship, cast away at pemaquid. vii. 199. its passengers lost on their way to Boston in another ship. v. 200.
- Angier, rev. samuel, of rehoboth and waltham. iii. 273. 274. 277. vii. 164. 165. difficulties attending his ordination at waltham. 276. dies. 278.
- Angier, oakes, esq. iv. 93. vii. 160. 165. 166. 170.
- Angier, charles. vii. 169.
- Angier, rev. john, of bridgewater. iii. 276. vii. 165. 168. iv. 90. 93.
- Angier, rev. samuel, of bridgewater. vii. 165. 166. 168. 170.
- Anglo saxons. i. (xviii.)
- Angoum, or anguum, an excellent harbour in new england. ix. 37.
- Angur, lieut. andrew, of scarborough. vi. 600.
- Anian straits. v. 27.
- Animals, directions for preserving. i. 18. in virginia, list of. ix. 120.
- Ann, the ship, arrives at scituate. iv. 241. the third that brought pilgrims to plymouth colony. vii. 148.
- Annable, ———. iv. 260.
- Annable, anthony, arrives at plymouth in the fortune. iv. 230. 222. 224. 233. account of. iv. 243.
- Annals of new england, by rev. t. prince, vol. 2. part 1. vii. 189. dr. prince's notice of. vii. 179.
- Annesley, rev. dr. ii. 97. 100. 101. 103.
- Anniball, anthony. i. 175. See annable, anthony.
- Annisnippi, iv. 275.
- Annisnippi brook. iv. 268.
- Answer of charles ii. to address from massachusetts. vi. 561.
- Answers of ministers to questions about baptism, etc. proposed by general court of massachusetts. vi. 587.
- Anthology, boston. i. 255. ii. 73.
- Anthony, ———. viii. 323.
- Antichrist, johnson's chapter on the fall of, and the increase of gentile churches. viii. 32. his poetry thereon. viii. 36.
- Antinomian controversy. x. 23. heresy. ii. 58.
- Antinomians. vi. 360.
- Antipas, m. drowned. vi. 648.
- Anti-synodalia of president chauncy. i. 202. answered by rev. mr. allen. vi. 590.
- Antonio, town. ii. 24.
- Apannow. v. 61.
- Apaum, or umpame, now plymouth. iii. 175.
- Aplin, joanna. x. 179.
- Apollonius, rev. ——— of middleburg, his sylloge questionum answered by rev. john norton. vi. 640. 641.
- Appalaches indians, their number and residence. ii. 26.
- Appeals, in what order to be made in massachusetts. vi. 400.
- Appeals to england denied in governour winthrop's time. vi. 514. claimed by king's commissioners, col. nichols and others, but denied to them by massachusetts general court; juries not to be used by king's commissioners in hearing such appeals. viii. 91. 92. 110.
- Appaches indians, their residence, valour, number, warriours and language. ii. 29.
- Appleton, rev. dr. jesse, president of bowdoin college. ii. 249. iv. 181.
- Appleton, rev. dr. nathaniel, of cambridge. ii. 149. x. 55.
- Appleton, john. viii. 107.
- Apsley, sir allen, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Aquedneck, or rhode island, purchased by coddington and others. vii. 77.
- Aquetequas. iv. 266.
- Aquethneck, or rhode island. viii. 122. discovered by massachusetts people. vii. P. 5. planted. ix. 178.
- Aquetnet, sandwich. iv. 293.
- Aquidneyk, or rhode island. vi. 336.

- Arbella, ship, before called the eagle, origin of its name. ii. 79. first court of assistants on board. 164. arrives at salem. vii. P. 10. the ship in which the leading men of massachusetts colony came to new england. v. 128. commanded by capt. milbourne. v. 128. court held on board at yarmouth, england. v. 124. the admiral of the fleet for massachusetts. v. 129. sets sail with the fleet for massachusetts. v. 129. arrives. 130.
- Arbuthnot, admiral. iii. 244.
- Archæologia americana, referred to. x. 136. quoted. x. 138.
- Argall, sir samuel, governour of virginia, dislodges the french from penobscot. v. 15. routs the first settlers at hudson's river. vi. 667. viii. 211. sent from virginia; dislodges the french from new england. ix. 5. governour of virginia; is superseded. ix. 9.
- Argall, john, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Arians. ii. 73.
- Aricaries indians, their residence, numbers, &c. ii. 34.
- Arkansas river. ii. 23. 28. 29.
- Arkansas indians, their residence, number and warriors; stupid and filthy. ii. 28.
- Arlington, lord. viii. 102.
- Arminians attribute god's election to the will of man. ii. 73.
- Arms to be supplied to inhabitants of plymouth. iii. 183. every person in massachusetts to be provided with. vii. P. 23. 23. 26.
- Armstrong, capt. samuel t. ii. 180.
- Armstrong, george. iii. 184. 185.
- Arnold, col. benedict, his expedition to quebec. ii. 227. marches from roxbury. 227. to newburyport; sails for kennebeck, and arrives; signal used during the voyage. 228. proceeds towards quebec; joins his troops up the kennebeck; arrives at scohegin falls; at norridgewock. 230. his men put on allowance. 233. capt. morgan's division ordered to return to cambridge; loss of provisions, guns, etc. 234. arrives at chaudiere river. 235. at wolfe's cove; crosses the plains of abraham; summonses quebec. 237. is attacked by canadians; attacks quebec. 240. under gen. montgomery attacks quebec. 243. his division attacks quebec. 244. is wounded. 245. anecdote of himself and his soldiers when he deserted from west point. iv. 51.
- Arnold, deacon william. ii. 171.
- Arnold, the general, an armed brig, lost in plymouth harbour. iii. 195.
- Arnold, rev. samuel. iv. 259. of rochester, notice of. iv. 261. 262. x. 31.
- Arnold, ———, iv. 260.
- Arnold, rev. samuel, of marshfield. iv. 261.
- Arnold, ———, of providence plantation, argues in favour of husband's authority over his wife. vi. 337. 338.
- Arnold, benedict, interpreter to indians. vi. 404. 405. and others made magistrates of rhode island, by king's commissioners. vi. 93. 97.
- Arnold, ———. x. 67. 68.
- Arnold, seth. x. 67. 68.
- Arnold, richard. viii. 182.
- Arnold, william. ix. 170. 182.
- Arnold, rev. joel r. of chester, new hampshire. ix. 368.
- Aroostook, a branch of st. john's river. viii. 114.
- Arowsick island. vi. 630.
- Arrabella. See arbella.
- Artichoke river in newbury. x. 164.
- Artificers to fix their own wages. vii. P. 23.
- Articles on which information is wanted by massachusetts historical society. i. 15.
- Articles of confederation of the united colonies of new england. vi. 467.
- Arundall, sir t. sends capt. weymouth on a voyage of discovery to north america. v. 11.
- Arundell, earl of, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Ascham, quoted. viii. 219, 220.
- Ascowequassummis, indian, its meaning. ii. 122.
- Ascutney mountain. viii. 174.
- Ash, ———. iv. 119.



- Ashburton, ———. iii. 163.  
 Ashby, anthony. viii. 106.  
 Ashe, general, his defeat. iii. 239.  
 Ashim, its meaning. x. 173. 174.  
 Ashimuit, its meaning. x. 173. 174.  
 Ashimuit pond. iii. 3.  
 Ashley, ———, seized and sent prisoner to england for selling powder to indians, contrary to his bond. vii. P. 34.  
 Ashley, rev. joseph, of winchester, new hampshire. ix. 367.  
 Ashuelot, or keene, new hampshire. iii. 198.  
 Ashurst family, friendly to new england. i. (xxvii)  
 Ashurst, sir henry, agent for plymouth colony. iii. 190.  
 Asia has 987 languages. ix. 3.  
 Askug, indian, its meaning. iii. 175.  
 Aspinwall, william, first secretary of rhode island. vii. P. 4. 69. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. P. 58. ix. 179. disfranchised and dismissed massachusetts house of representatives. viii. 233. x. 23. deacon of boston and charlestown church. v. 185. acknowledges his errors and is reconciled to boston church. vi. 344. 442.  
 Aspinwall, dr. william. i. 108. ii. 158. his hospital. ii. 160.  
 Aspinwall, dr. william, jun. ii. 158.  
 Aspinwall, col. thomas. ii. 158.  
 Aspinwall, samuel. ii. 156. 144. 147.  
 Aspinwall, eleazer. ii. 144.  
 Assabet river. iv. 53. 54.  
 Assanipi river. iv. 226.  
 Assawampsett pond, the largest in massachusetts. x. 35.  
 Assecomet, an american indian, sent with capt. h. challons, on discovery to new england. ix. 3.  
 Assembly's catechism, translated into indian language. ii. 48.  
 Assembly of divines at westminster, their advice to the churches of new england. vi. 409.  
 Assinboin indians. ii. 12. their residence. ii. 41.  
 Assinboin river. ii. 12. 42.  
 Assistant fined for whipping a man contrary to law. vii. P. 6.  
 Assistants, first court of, held at charlestown. iv. 155. their negative voice questioned by the deputies of massachusetts. v. 174. 175. — third court of held at charlestown; how composed; its doings; orders that indians have no guns sold them, nor any truck with them; levies £50 for military purposes on nine towns in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. — how chosen. vii. P. 3. — fourth court of; offers premium for killing wolves; proposes to establish a ferry for charlestown. vii. P. 6. — fifth court of and second at boston; fines an assistant for whipping contrary to law; fines for sab-bath breaking; levies £60 for the salaries of the rev. messrs. wilson and phillips. vii. P. 6. — court of at boston. vii. P. 20. orders that persons be sent to england as unfit to inhabit massachusetts; sends to england sir christopher gardiner and another as prisoners; punishes a quack for making inefficacious water as a cure. vii. P. 21. — court of at watertown; orders satisfaction to sagamore john; alters the number of its quorum. vii. P. 21. 22. — court of at boston; orders that artificers fix their own wages; that the towns see that every person is provided with arms; that cards, dice and tables be destroyed. vii. P. 23. — court of at boston; orders that watches be kept every night at dorchester and watertown; that guns shall not be fired at night; that people shall be provided with powder, bullets and match; that soldiers shall be trained every saturday; that persons shall not travel except in company; takes order against the settlement of roger williams at salem. vii. P. 25. 26. — court of at boston; fines a man, and expels him and his wife from the colony, for a contempt of authority. vii. P. 27. — chosen at general court. vii. P. 29. — court of at boston; orders that persons shall not leave the jurisdiction without leave, or buy provisions of ships that arrive without permission; makes payment for a canal; fixes price of charlestown ferry. vii. P. 30. — court of at boston; levies £30 on the towns in massachusetts, to pay for the canal from charles river to newtown; forbids the sagamore

of agawam, now ipswich, to enter any house in massachusetts for one year. vii. P. 30. orders that assistants have power, which is given to each of them, to grant warrants, summonses and attachments. vii. P. 31.—court of at boston; orders a watch to be kept at night in boston, charlestown and roxbury; regulates trainings; chooses a lieutenant for the company, and permits its captain to go to england. vii. P. 32.—court of at boston; fines four men for drinking too much; chooses an ensign. vii. P. 34.—court of at boston; sentences a man for soliciting an indian squaw. vii. P. 34.—court of at boston; punishes a thief, by requiring two fold to be restored, and his title, mr. to be stricken off. vii. P. 35.—court of at boston; orders that adultery with another's wife be punished with the death of both parties; that a house be pulled down, and no person give the tenant house rooin, or entertain him; that corn pass in payment, unless money or beaver be expressly mentioned. vii. P. 35.—court of at boston; levies £60 for a palisado at newtown. vii. P. 56. 57.—chosen by the freemen in massachusetts. vii. P. 57.—court of at boston; orders that courts, held every three weeks, shall be holden monthly; admits freemen. vii. P. 57.—court of at boston; grants governour's garden to gov. winthrop; admits four freemen. vii. P. 58.—chosen by the whole court, including freemen. vii. P. 60.—court of at boston; orders a day of thanksgiving for the success of the protestants in germany and the safe arrival of passengers; orders that there be a trucking house for indians in every plantation. vii. P. 61.—court of at boston; orders that no training gun be charged with bullets, except in certain cases; fines a man for drunkenness; admits freemen. vii. P. 63.—court of at boston; orders that a boat be sent to examine into the murder of w. bagnall, and the guilty be brought prisoners to boston; chooses w. pinchon treasurer;

admits freemen. vii. P. 65.—court of at boston; punishes a man for swearing, and another for selling a pistol to an indian. vii. P. 66.—court of at boston; forbids mr. bachelor to preach; orders that boston be the place for publick meetings; that a house of correction and a house for the beadle be erected at boston; punishes a man for theft, drunkenness and fornication, and banishes him on pain of death; orders that no person take tobacco publickly on penalty; admits a freeman. vii. P. 68.—court of at boston; orders that companies train once a month; that sir r. saltonstall pay john sagamore damages; that the neck of land between powder hill and pullen point be annexed to boston. vii. P. 72. 73.—called together at boston to consult about massachusetts, owing to the purchase of port royal by the french; who order that a fort and plantation be begun at nantasket; that the boston fort be completed; that a plantation be begun at agawam. vii. P. 84.—court of at boston; reverses the order against rev. mr. bachelor, that he do not gather a church in massachusetts; punishes and disfranchises a man for sedition; levies £30 for payment of capt. partrich and capt. underhill an half year; punishes a thief, who is to be the servant of some person for three years; admits freemen. vii. P. 85. 86.—court of at boston; orders that no more persons go to plant agawam; admits freemen. vii. P. 86.—court of at boston; appoints a day of thanksgiving throughout massachusetts; admits freemen. vii. P. 92.—court of at boston; grants £100 to gov. winthrop for extra charges of government; punishes a man for drunkenness on the sabbath; orders that no person sell strong-water without leave of the governour, nor sell nor give strong-water to the indians; orders that fences of corn-fields be erected on penalty; orders that swine breaking into corn-fields may be killed, the owner of the hog to have the carcass, but to pay for

- damage to the corn. vii. P. 93. — the king's letter about their number in massachusetts. viii. 54.  
 Assistants in plymouth colony, their number increased. v. 90. 91. seven for the first time chosen there, which number continues till it became a part of massachusetts colony. vii. P. 83.  
 Assookamuck. iv. 267.  
 Assoomsin-ewet, a sachem and famous hunter — its meaning. iv. 284.  
 Assowampamock. iv. 267.  
 Athamochas, or hobbamockas. iii. 127.  
 Athearn, ———. iii. 66.  
 Athenæum, boston. i. 138.  
 Athenæ oxonienses. i. 163.  
 Athenian mercury, by john dunton. ii. 97.  
 Athenianism, by john dunton. ii. 97.  
 Atherton, captain, of dorchester. iv. 24. x. 59. goes to the narragansets for tribute. vi. 463. 464. his courage. 464. 465. chief military officer in new england; dies. vi. 641. vii. 54.  
 Atherton, hon. charles h. x. 192.  
 Atkinson, theodore. iii. 119.  
 Atkinson, john. viii. 106.  
 Attacapos indians; their residence, number and language. ii. 25. 26.  
 Attachments to be granted by any assistant in massachusetts. vii. P. 31.  
 Attleborough, note on. i. 184.  
 Attleborough gore. x. 171.  
 Atwater, jeremiah. ii. 130.  
 Atwood, ———. iv. 277.  
 Atwood, john. iv. 100.  
 Atwood, james. x. 177.  
 Aubray, ———, a painter. iii. 197.  
 Auger, ager, or alger. vii. 151. 155.  
 Auglaize river. ii. 5.  
 Augochee, hepzibah. iii. 17.  
 Augusta, maine, earthquake felt at. iv. 70.  
 Aumkuck, or painted bird, at carver. vi. 275.  
 Aurania, or albany fort. v. 18. dutch fort at attacked by indians. vi. 432.  
 Aurania fort. vi. 521.  
 Aurean academy at amherst, new hampshire. ii. 249. vii. 70.  
 Austin, jonathan w. i. 231.  
 Austin, jonathan l. i. 249.  
 Austin, charles. i. 258.  
 Austin, james t. ii. 175.  
 Austin, william. ii. 177. 178. 179. 180. Austin, gen. nathaniel, sheriff of middlesex. ii. 180. 181.  
 Austin, saint, his complaint of the church being over-burdened with canons. vi. 413.  
 Austin, major. viii. 215.  
 Authority, contempt of, punished. vii. P. 27.  
 Authors, how many living in germany in 1792. viii. 274.  
 Averill, israel. viii. 45.  
 Avery, rev. ———, drowned in coming to new england. v. 200.  
 Avery, rev. ———, of truro. x. 174.  
 Avogall indians. ii. 26. 27.  
 Ayer, deacon james. iv. 127.  
 Ayer, obadias. iv. 168.  
 Ayer, ———. iv. 132.  
 Ayer's pond. iv. 122.  
 Ayers, ———, a pioneer. ii. 232.  
 Azores, touched at by gosnold. v. 10.
- B.
- Babboosuk pond in amherst, new hampshire. ii. 248.  
 Babcock, rev. joshiah, of andover, new hampshire. iii. 112.  
 Babcock, adam. iii. 197.  
 Babcock, elisha. iv. 201.  
 Bachelder, rev. william, minister of baptist church in haverhill. iv. 151.  
 Bachelor, rev. stephen. See batchelor.  
 Bacheller, rev. samuel, of haverhill. iv. 147. difficulties during his ministry. 147. 148. 149. his dismissal; a representative to general court. 149.  
 Backus's history of baptists referred to. iv. 264. viii. 111.  
 Bacon, col. and ingram, their rebellion in virginia. i. 33.  
 Bacon, col. taken prisoner. i. 35. his trial and acquittal. 35. proclaimed traitor. 39. his declaration. 41. the oath taken by him and his associates. 45. advances against the indians. 47. blocks up the town. 50. sends for women into the camp. 51. attacked. 53. sets fire to jamestown. 54. goes to gloucester. 55. resolves to fight. 55. is forsaken



- by brent's men. 55. designs to go to accomack; dies. 57. his epitaph. 58. 59.
- Bacon, margaret. x. 177.
- Bacon, joseph. viii. 45.
- Bacon, lieut. john. viii. 45.
- Bacon, ———. vii. 151.
- Bacon, rev. jacob, of plymouth. iii. 198.
- Bacon, lieut. isaac. iv. 229.
- Bacon, john. iv. 229.
- Badger, rev. stephen. ii. 149.
- Badger, rev. moses, episcopal missionary to new hampshire. iv. 78. of providence. 164. 167. 169.
- Badger, john. viii. 106.
- Badger, hannah. x. 178.
- Bagnall, walter, or great wat, murdered by indians at richmond's island. v. 142. vii. P. 35. his murder ordered to be examined into, and the guilty brought prisoners to boston. vii. P. 65. one of his murderers hung. vii. P. 83.
- Bagou beauf. ii. 27.
- Bahama islands, or eleutheria. vi. 523.
- Bainbridge, commodore william. ii. 174.
- Baker, deacon jonas. iii. 104.
- Baker, john. viii. 107.
- Baker, continuation of, quoted. vii. P. 51.
- Baker, samuel. iv. 234.
- Baker, nathaniel. iv. 234.
- Baker, nicholas. iv. 234.
- Baker, grace. iv. 234.
- Baker, ———. iv. 260.
- Baker, rev. nicholas, of scituate. iv. 233. 234.
- Baker, lieut. iv. 218.
- Baker, j. of boston, executed at london. vi. 419.
- Baker's river. iii. 110.
- Baker's island. v. 130.
- Baker's brook. viii. 168.
- Bailey, rev. jacob. i. 103.
- Bailey, kendall. ii. 181.
- Bailey, ———. iv. 7.
- Bailey, rev. abner, of salem, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Bailey, ———, his dissuasive from the errors of the times referred to. iv. 117.
- Bailey, ———. vii. 151.
- Bailey, guido. vii. 149. 157.
- Bailey, rev. john. ii. 101.
- Bailey, rev. thomas. ii. 101.
- Balch, rev. ———, of bradford. iv. 145.
- Balch, john. v. 107.
- Baldwin pond. iv. 63.
- Baldwin, william. iv. 60.
- Baldwin, rev. samuel. iv. 60.
- Baldwin, ensign. iv. 219.
- Balfour, walter, teacher of baptists at charlestown. ii. 172.
- Ball, deborah. x. 179.
- Ball, ———. viii. 229.
- Ball, ———. iv. 19.
- Ball, rev. ———. iv. 119.
- Ballantine, john. x. 22.
- Balstone, william. vii. P. 84. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. P. 29. 69.
- Baltimore, lord, his province. v. 180.
- cæcilius, lord, a papist, obtains a patent from charles i. for maryland. See maryland. vii. P. 80.
- Bancroft, archbishop. i. 165.
- Bangs, edward. iv. 100.
- Banks, sir john. v. 272.
- Banner, peter, an architect. ii. 161.
- Baptism, disputes about. i. 196. infant. i. 167. contention about. iv. 12. ditto in rhode island. vi. 338. ditto in connecticut and massachusetts. vi. 562. ditto in new england. 587. 601. 602. of infants in rhode island, king's requisition about. vii. 94. the first at boston. vii. P. 5.
- Baptisms in shrewsbury, massachusetts. i. 162.
- Baptisms and church members at brookline. ii. 152. 153.
- Baptist church founded at providence. i. 210. at haverhill. iv. 151. the first formed in england, then one at providence. ix. 197. the first of boston gathered in charlestown, 1665. ii. 172.
- Baptists, rise of, in massachusetts. i. 207. law against in massachusetts. i. 210. history of, by crosby. i. 168. their former catholic spirit. i. 168. a publick dispute held with them at boston. viii. 111. 112. See anabaptists.
- Barbadoes. iii. 259. sends letters to new england, requesting a supply of ministers. vi. 410. pestilential fever at. vi. 532.
- Barber, edward. ii. 167. viii. 45.
- Barber, capt. william. viii. 45.

- Barber, thomas. viii. 139.  
 Barbut, capt. viii. 156.  
 Barker, rev. joseph, of middleborough. iii. 201.  
 Barker, abigail. iii. 221. her confessions. 222. 223.  
 Barker, robert. iii. 22.  
 Barker, ———. iv. 224. 225.  
 Barker, james. vii. 93.  
 Barker's location. iii. 98.  
 Barlow, mores. iv. 259.  
 Barlow, aaron. iv. 259. 260.  
 Barlow, joel, his letter to president stiles, enclosing one from professor ebeling. viii. 269.  
 Barnaby, james. iv. 87. 294.  
 Barnard, rev. john, of marblehead. i. (xxx.)  
 Barnard, rev. jeremiah, of amherst, new hampshire. ii. 252. iv. 77. viii. 176.  
 Barnard, rev. edward, his character of rev. joshua gardiner. iv. 141. ordained at haverhill. iv. 143. his character. 144. 145. his epitaph. 146.  
 Barnard, rev. thomas. iv. 143.  
 Barnard, rev. dr. thomas. iv. 143.  
 Barnard, edward, of salem. iv. 169.  
 Barnard, ———. vii. 29.  
 Barnard, madam mary. x. 180.  
 Barnes, ———. iv. 211.  
 Barnes, ———, of boston. ii. 106.  
 Barnes, rev. thomas. iv. 183.  
 Barnes, john. iv. 87. 100.  
 Barnes, hon. david l. iv. 237.  
 Barnes, rev. dr. david, of scituate, notice of. iv. 235. 237.  
 Barns, james. x. 26. 27.  
 Barnstable bay, its tides. viii. 194. 196. x. 48.  
 Barque, the first built at plymouth. iv. 99. one of salem overset. vii. P. 32.  
 Barrell, joseph. ii. 168.  
 Barrell, john. vi. 546.  
 Barrett, col. iv. 216.  
 Barrett, capt. nathan. viii. 45.  
 Barrington, thomas. vi. 349.  
 Barron, capt. oliver. viii. 45.  
 Barrows, john. iv. 90. 95.  
 Barrows, elisha. iv. 302.  
 Barstow, william. iv. 228. 241.  
 Barstow, ———. iv. 260.  
 Barstow's bridge. iv. 228.  
 Bartelmew, william. viii. 229.  
 Bartlett, dr. josiah, his history of medical science in massachusetts. i. 105. his history of charlestown. ii. 163. his oration on the death of washington. ii. 173. physician to state prison. ii. 175. senator from middlesex. ii. 177. counselor. ii. 177. justice throughout the state. 179.—ii. 175. 176. 178. 180. 181.  
 Bartlett, josiah, jun. ii. 178.  
 Bartlett, george. i. 123. ii. 180.  
 Bartlett, gorham. ii. 178.  
 Bartlett, robert. iii. 184.  
 Bartlett, lieut. samuel. iii. 192.  
 Bartlett, joseph. iv. 87.  
 Bartlett, samuel. iv. 92.  
 Bartlett, thomas. iv. 110.  
 Bartlett, william. vii. 187. 188.  
 Bartlett, john. vii. 187. 188.  
 Bartlett, joseph. iv. 293.  
 Bartol, ———. iv. 181.  
 Barton, r. agent for gorton's company, his letter to j. winthrop; appointed agent to massachusetts for this purpose by the court at providence. vi. 511.  
 Barton, dr. ii. 6. 7. 13. 39.  
 Barton's new views referred to and quoted. x. 129. 130. 138. 142.  
 Bashabeas, or chiefs of the eastern indians of new england. v. 30.  
 Baskets manufactured at carver. iv. 276.  
 Bass and mackerel fishery at cape cod. iii. 220.  
 Bass, ———. iv. 249. x. 64.  
 Bass, rev. bishop. x. 55. 167.  
 Bassett, anselm. x. 37.  
 Bassett, ———. iv. 294.  
 Bassett, william. x. 57. 66. 68.  
 Bassett, n. x. 69.  
 Bassett, william. vii. 138. a forefather. vii. 147. 149.  
 Bassett, sarah. vii. 147. 149.  
 Bassett, william. vii. 147. 149.  
 Bassett, joseph. vii. 147. 149.  
 Bastable, ship, sails. vii. P. 68.  
 Bastwick, dr. his saying about rev. hanserd knollis. vi. 356.  
 Batchelder, joseph. x. 178.  
 Batchelor, rev. stephen, of lynn, sketch of. ii. 94. v. 191. 193. dismissed from lynn on account of difficulties, and settles at hampton. v. 193. 194. quarrels with mr. dalton. vi. 412. punished for incontinence, his house burnt. vi. 420.

421. vii. 17. arrives in massachusetts aged 71. vii. P. 61. 68. for contempt of authority, etc. ordered not to preach. vii. P. 68. notice of. vii. P. 76. the order that he shall not gather a church in massachusetts reversed. vii. P. 85.
- Bates, ———. iv. 294. vii. 123.
- Bates, thomas. iv. 293.
- Bath, new hampshire, account of. iii. 105. its rivers, mountains, bridges, ferries, roads, soil and produce and schools. 106. its manufactories. 107. value of land at; its church organized; revival of religion at; baptisms, births, marriages and deaths. 108.
- Bath, earl, of, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Bathing houses. i. 127.
- Batt, nicholas. viii. 106.
- Batter, edmund. viii. 106.
- Batteries at boston. vii. 54.
- Battle of lexington. iv. 215. 217.
- Baulston, william. vii. 93. 98. ix. 179. See balstone.
- Baulstone, pitie, of the first baptism in boston. vii. P. 5. See balstone.
- Baulstone, william, of boston. vii. P. 5. See balstone.
- Baxter, ———, a benefactor of harvard college. ii. 108.
- Bay of fundy, ship lost at. vi. 647.
- Bayard, hon. samuel, of delaware. viii. 167. x. 192.
- Bayberry wax early made for candles. viii. 253.
- Bayle, ———. iv. 19.
- Bayley, capt. prosecuted at boston by madam la tour. vi. 486. 489.—490.
- Bayley, lieut. viii. 156.
- Baylies, william. v. 160.
- Baylies, frederick, missionary to the indians. iii. 93.
- Bayon rapid. ii. 26.
- Beacham, ———. iv. 269.
- Beachies, theories of their formation. iii. 173.
- Beadle, house for, ordered to be built at boston. vii. P. 68.
- Beal, ———. vii. 123.
- Beal, william, his prosecution. vii. P. 50.
- Beals, mrs. ———. x. 180.
- Bean, john, agent with gen. robertson to treat with indians, etc. vii. 59.
- Bean, mary. x. 177.
- Beans, indian, 16s. a bushel. vii. 36.
- Bear hill. iii. 268.
- Bear's cove, or bingham, settled. v. 158. its church gathered. v. 192.
- Bearslow, joseph. vii. 144.
- Beauchamp, john. iv. 220.
- Beauford, ———. iii. 241.
- Beaumont, ———. iv. 240.
- Beaver, price of. vii. P. 1. payment frequently made in. vii. 35.
- beaver trade, its revenue to massachusetts. viii. 231. confined to one person in each town in massachusetts. viii. 231.
- Beaver brook. vii. 117. 122. 146. 166. 172.
- Beaver dam brook. iii. 173. 179. iv. 272. 275.
- Beaver dams, how erected by that animal. iii. 179.
- Beaver indians. ii. 43.
- Beaver falls. iv. 272. 275.
- Beaver pond. iii. 265.
- Beaver river. ii. 11.
- Beaver's brook. iii. 262. 265. 272.
- Becancourians indians. viii. 246. 247.
- Beckley, john, clerk of the house of representatives in congress. viii. 316.
- Beckworth, capt. viii. 156.
- Beddies indians, their residence and number. ii. 25.
- Bedford, new hampshire. vi. 74.
- Bedford, long island. vi. 669.
- Beech hill. vii. 114.
- Beede, rev. thomas. i. 258. of wilton, new hampshire. viii. 177.
- Beers, isaac. viii. 269. 273. 274.
- Bees, earliest notice of, in plymouth colony records. iv. 242.
- Belcher thomas, captain of the talbot. v. 128.
- Belcher, gov. jonathan, his letter from rev. dr. colman. ii. 186. 206. arrives in new england. vii. 179. a note about him. x. 39. 40.
- Belcher, edward, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 29.
- Belcher, edmund. vii. P. 69.
- Belcher, jeremiah. viii. 107.
- Belcher, ———. viii. 233.
- Belcher, andrew. x. 26.
- Belknap, rev. dr. jeremy. i. 214. iii. 78. 80. 221. 290. iv. 77. x. 55.
- of dover, new hampshire. iv. 78.



- his american biography quoted. x. 59. his history of new hampshire referred to. i. (xviii.) viii. 254. 256. x. 56. typographical error in. iii. 102.
- Belknap, mrs. x. 180.
- Belknap's pond. iv. 122.
- Bell, one placed in the church at new-town. vii. P. 75.
- Bell, philip, governour of barbadoes, punishes familists. vi. 346.
- Bell, joseph. viii. 45.
- Bell, ———. i. 138.
- Bellamie, john, a printer. v. 126.
- Bellingham, richard, governour of massachusetts. i. (xii.) ii. 63. vi. 370. 543. 545. 575. 581. 591. 610. vii. 32. viii. 88. 90. 97. 98. 99. 110. a lawyer, arrives. iii. 143. deputy governour of massachusetts. 147. iv. 110. v. 157. 237. vi. 544. 546. vii. 20. 129. a representative from boston. x. 23. elected deputy governour from 1656 to 1665. vi. 555. 575. his death and character. 610. 611.
- Bellows, a. his account of walpole, new hampshire. vii. 124.
- Bellows, col. benjamin. vii. 125.
- Bellows falls. vii. 124.
- Bellisle, straits of. iii. 168.
- Ben, william. vii. 187. 188.
- Bendall, ———. iii. 285.
- Bendall, edward. vii. P. 69. viii. 233.
- Benedict's history of baptists, an error in, corrected. iv. 151. referred to. viii. 111.
- Benet, edward. viii. 229.
- Benevolent trout, fable of. iii. 7.
- Benezet, anthony, writes against slavery. viii. 188.
- Bennet, john, an instructor. ii. 180.
- Bennet, rev. philip, of virginia, arrives at boston to obtain a supply of ministers. vi. 410. viii. 29.
- Bennet, richard, his orchard in virginia. ix. 118.
- Bennet, rev. salmon, of winchester, new hampshire. ix. 367.
- Bennet, henry. vi. 666. viii. 107.
- Benson, ———. vii. 155.
- Bentley's history of salem, quoted. iv. 160.
- Berian, rev. michael, of canada. ii. 240.
- Berkeley, sir william, sails for accomack. i. 46. sails for the west-vol. x.
- ern shore of virginia. i. 47. arrives at town. 49. leaves james-town. 54. removes to york river. 65. his forces. 67. dies. 80. governour of virginia. vi. 522. captures opechankenow, the aged sachem of virginia. ix. 111. 117. makes a successful experiment by planting rice in virginia. 118.
- Berkeley, alderman of london. vi. 490. 491.
- Bermuda, its church compelled to leave the island. viii. 31. whose members suffer much, but are relieved by supplies sent by massachusetts people. 32.
- Bernard, thomas. i. 249.
- Bernard, thomas, governour of massachusetts. iii. 234.
- Bernard, col. iv. 219.
- Bernard, ———, his book against weymouth church covenant referred to. v. 276.
- Bernard, nathaniel, lecturer at st. sepulchre's, london, severely punished for preaching against altars, &c. as popish. vii. P. 79.
- Berry, sergeant james. ii. 175.
- Berry, ———. ii. 235.
- Besbedge, thomas. iv. 239.
- Besbeege or bisbee, thomas. iv. 222.
- Bessey, ———. iv. 260. 294.
- Best, capt. ellis, comes to new england. v. 36.
- Bestiality punished. vi. 421.
- Beverly, major, takes hansford. i. 62. puts him to death. 62. takes chiesman and wilford. 63. surprises harris. 67.
- Bewet, hugh, expelled massachusetts jurisdiction. v. 277. ix. 170.
- Bewit, hugh. See bewet.
- Beza. i. 247.
- Bible society of plymouth and norfolk counties. x. 5.
- Bible translated into indian. vi. 660.
- Bicknell apple. vii. 116.
- Bicknell, ———. vii. 123.
- Big-bellied indians, their residence and number. ii. 35. 36.
- Bighome river. ii. 36.
- Big track indians. ii. 31.
- Bigelow, major timothy. ii. 227. 230. 235.
- Bigelow, hon. timothy, extract from his oration at the funeral of hon. s. dana. ii. 252.

- Bigelow, rev. jacob. iii. 269. of sud-bury. iv. 59.
- Biggs, john. vii. P. 86.
- Bigelow, william. ii. 252.
- Billerica, table of its marriages, births and deaths; granted by henry dunster and others to ralph hill and others. ii. 162. iv. 76. settled. vi. 372. or shashin, settled. vi. 545.
- Billingsgate, cape cod. iv. 283.
- Billington, francis. iv. 93. discovers billington sea. ix. 37. 44.
- Billington, john, executed at plymouth for murder. 5. 101. being the first execution there. vii. P. 2.
- Billington sea. iii. 170. 180. 181. iv. 88. discovered by francis billington. ix. 44.
- Bills issued by massachusetts to pay the expense of expedition to canada. iii. 259. form of. 261.
- Bingham, caleb. ii. 175.
- Biography of rev. charles morton. i. 158. 161. of rev. john lothrop of scituate and barnstable. i. 163. of rev. dr. john eliot, of boston. i. 211. of gov. james sullivan. i. 252. of rev. william emerson, of boston. i. 254. of isaac lothrop, esq. i. 258. of edward johnson. ii. 95. of rev. joseph s. buckminster, of boston. ii. 271. of major general benjamin lincoln. iii. 233. of joshua scottow, esq. iv. 100. of master ezeziel cheever. vii. 129. of rev. peter whitney. vii. 177. of rev. dr. joseph mackean. viii. 157. of father ralle, or rasles. viii. 250. of caleb gannet, esq. viii. 277. of hon. william tudor. viii. 285. of hon. joshua thomas. x. 1. of hon. james winthrop. x. 77. of professor william dandridge peck. x. 161. of rev. william blackstone. x. 170.
- Bird, sir william. vii. P. 44.
- Bird, thomas. iv. 240. 242.
- Bird, rev. samuel, of dunstable. x. 55.
- Bird island. iv. 253.
- Bird's hill. i. 180.
- Birds in virginia, a list of. ix. 121.
- Bisbee, thomas. iv. 222. x. 57.
- Bishop, enos. x. 76.
- Black, ———. iv. 260.
- Black, or blackman, rev. ———. iv. 234.
- Blackberries. i. (xxi.)
- Blackbourne, rev. francis, arch-deacon of cleaveland. ii. 190.
- Blackbourne, rev. gideon, missionary to cherokees. ii. 13. his manner of teaching indians. 14. 21. 22. iv. 66—68.
- Black fox, an indian. ii. 13.
- Blake, benjamin. iii. 119.
- Blake, john. vii. 121.
- Blake, rev. ———. vii. 167.
- Blake, sergeant major. viii. 235.
- Blake, nathan. x. 177.
- Blackfeet indians, their residence, language and number. ii. 42.
- Blackliston, john. vi. 349.
- Blackman, mrs. rebecca. iv. 101.
- Blackman, rev. adam. iv. 234.
- Blackman, peter. iv. 259.
- Blackman, or black, rev. ———. iv. 234.
- Blackmer, ———. iv. 260. 294.
- Blackmer, capt. iv. 261.
- Blackowitz, charles, surveys plymouth harbour. iii. 197.
- Black point, maine, planted by capt. cammocks, mr. gains and others. v. 224. vi. 600. attacked by indians and resolutely defended. 532. 533.
- Black rock. iii. 75.
- Blackstone, rev. william. ii. 70. 86. iii. 285. his sale of boston. iv. 202. 203. v. 113. vii. P. 4. x. 171. sworn a freeman. P. 29. an episcopal minister, found by massachusetts colony at boston; removes to pawtucket, now cumberland river; is said to have had the first orchard in boston; had the first orchard that bore fruit in rhode island; his "yellow sweetings;" used to preach often at providence, and to travel on a bull. ix. 175. memoirs of. x. 170. 171. 172. inventory of his estate. 172.
- Blackstone, mrs. sarah. x. 171.
- Blackstone, john. x. 171.
- Blackstone's meadow. x. 172.
- Blackstone's point. ii. 86. iv. 203.
- Blackstone's spring, in boston. x. 175.
- Blackwater, in rochester. iv. 253.
- Blackwater. iii. 163.
- Blackwater brook. iii. 207.
- Blackwater river. vii. 66. viii. 173. 174. x. 36. 72.
- Black will, an indian, hung for the murder of walter bagnall at richmond's island. vii. P. 83.
- Blanchard, timothy. viii. 45.
- Blanchard, john. x. 54.

- Bland and carver sent to accomack, virginia. i. 47.
- Blaxton. See blackstone, rev. william
- Blazing star seen in new england, 1619. v. 51.
- Bledsoe, col isaac. vii. 63.
- Blessing of the bay, a bark launched by gov. winthrop, 4 july, 1631. v. 171. at mistick. vii. P. 31.
- Blinman, rev. richard, arrives; settles at green's harbour; removes with his people to gloucester, cape ann vi. 408. 663. vii. 32.
- Bliss, ———. iv. 215.
- Block island channel. iv. 232.
- Blodget, samuel, judge, notice of. iv. 153. his project for raising sunken vessels; his canal. 154.
- Blood indians. ii. 42.
- Bloody point, origin of its name. v. 217.
- Bloody tenent, by roger williams. v. 203.
- Bloody tenent washed, by rev. mr. cotton, quoted. vi. 402.
- Blossom, thomas, a pilgrim, dies. vii. P. 96.
- Blueberry island. viii. 174.
- Blue hills. iii. 163.
- Blue mountain. iii. 285.
- Blue river. x. 62. 70.
- Boar, (bear?) a great black one, eight feet in length, killed at dedham. vi. 649.
- Boardman, rev. andrew, of chilmark. iii. 74.
- Boerhaave. i. 108. 138.
- Bohonnon, andrew. x. 75.
- Bohonnon, tabitha. x. 177.
- Boiling rock. iv. 71.
- Bolton, rev. robert, notice of; his works esteemed in new england. vii. P. 54.
- Bolas river, virginia. ix. 110.
- Boluxas indians, their residence and number. ii. 26.
- Bond, dennis. ix. 185.
- Bonham, george. iii. 187.
- Bonitham, capt. obtains a grant from sir f. gorges, of land about saco river. v. 224.
- Bonney, thomas. vii. 138.
- Book savouring of fifth monarchy spirit creates disturbance in new england. vi. 575.
- Books distributed among indians. ii. 48.
- Books and manuscripts deposited in the library of massachusetts historical society by old south church. vii. 179.
- Boon, ———. viii. 242.
- Borland, john, impeached; claims habeas corpus in massachusetts. viii. 240—242.
- Boscawen, new hampshire, account of. x. 71. its boundaries. 71. its rivers, ponds, aspect and soil. 72. its intervale. 72. its health and mortality; its schools, societies and library. 73. its population at different periods; its villages and ecclesiastical history. 74. its indian name. 74. 75. its history; its original grant from massachusetts. 75. its indian troubles, fort, and incorporation; origin of its name. 76.
- Boston. i. (ix.) account of fires in, from 1701 to 1800. i. 81. its alms-house. i. 126. its church gathered; its fairs; johnson's description of its buildings, trade, etc. ii. 91. 92. remonstrates against the incorporation of brookline. 143. opinion of its ministers on the subject of episcopacy. 133—137. called by the indians shawmut. 141. its first baptist church gathered at charlestown. 1665. 172. copy of a letter of its ministers, intended to have been sent those of connecticut. 257. a place of trade. iii. 142. iv. 71. sale of, by blackstone. 202. so named on account of rev. john cotton; settled. v. 134. 135. 158. its fort ordered to be finished. 162. its military company made the first. 165. its church flourishes. 190. its deputies sent home, having been illegally chosen. 259. meeting of ministers at, about church difficulties. 286. discussions in its church relative to settling rev. mr. wheelwright. 287. 288. errors in its church. 291. 292. 294. men in and about, go to rhode island with mrs. hutchinson. vi. 336. its church sends messengers, with letters to mr. coddington about communicating with excommunicated persons. 340. its fortifications erected. 445. its har-



bour frozen over from jan. 18 to feb. 21. vi. 421. a company of its people incorporated for discovering the great lake, and carrying on the beaver trade; who are opposed by the swedes of delaware. 442. 443. a ship captured in its harbour, under a pretended commission from the admiralty court in england; disturbances in consequence. 474. 476. some of its merchants trade with la tour. 478. court of commissioners at. 542. meeting of commissioners at, on account of rumours of war. 546. its church forbidden by general court to settle mr. powell, in consequence of which he is made ruling elder. 551. convention of ministers at, and their answers to questions proposed by the general court about baptism, etc. 587. relieves 250 people who had been driven from st. christopher's, and sends them to the caribbee islands. 592. its merchants send provisions to his majesty's fleet in distress at the caribbee islands. 592. its church disputes about the settlement of rev. j. davenport. 602. synod at on account of public calamities. 621. fire at, in 1676. 648. 649. fire at, in 1679. 649. its meeting house burnt. 649. its batteries, &c. vii. 24. 54. its castle built and rebuilt, cost £4000. 56. 57. account of small pox in. 71. methods taken in, to prevent small pox, and the efficacy of them. 72. deaths in, by inoculation and by the natural small pox. 74. its bill of mortality for 1816. 134. its votes in 1635, relating to new comers, law suits, etc. 136. contained but one congregation in 1635. 136. appoints allotters. 136. taxed £11 out of £50 in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. its first burying ground. P. 2. its first baptism. P. 5. its ferry to charlestown proposed; its taxes for the support of ministers. P. 6. its neck proposed for a fortified town. P. 7. gov. winthrop the first member of its church. P. 12. ice in its harbour breaks up for seven years on feb. 10. P. 19.

its people die of scurvy. P. 19. fires at. P. 22. 29. its ferry to charlestown regulated. P. 30. an alarm at. P. 24. the neck of land between pullen point and powder hill annexed to it. P. 72. 73. its tax. P. 57. & P. 31. viii. 230. its church advises with plymouth, whether a magistrate can be a ruling elder, and whether there can be several pastors to the same church. P. 64. its fortification or fort on cornhill begun. P. 61. its meeting house begun by contributions made there and at charlestown, then being one congregation. P. 65. its camp to prepare soldiers against the indians. P. 67. a house for the beadle ordered to be built at. P. 68. ordered to be the place of all publick meetings. P. 68. list of 151 members who had joined its church whilst joined with charlestown. P. 68. 69. its church dismisses rev. mr. james and others of charlestown people, to form a church in the latter place. P. 69. 70. its church admits members. P. 70. corn sent to its windmill from piscataqua P. 70. its church ordains rev. john wilson as pastor, and mr. th. oliver as ruling elder. P. 73. its harbour frozen over. P. 76. its fort ordered to be completed. P. 84. its tax. P. 85. its second church gathered, being the 30th in massachusetts. viii. 16. its bill of mortality, 1817, with the disorders of which persons died. 40. 41. its batteries and fort. 72. its petition to general court against disloyalty, and in favour of appeasing charles ii.; with the names of the petitioners. 103 —105. entreats its representatives to abolish slavery. 184. its beaver trade. 231. list of its donations from different towns, states and individuals during its port bill. ix. 158—166. its number of dwellings and stores; its publick buildings, and its streets, in 1789, with their names at that time, and some of the changes made in them prior to 1822. 204—222. list of its representatives before the revolution. x. 23. 24. its repre-

- sentatives dismissed by general court. 23. 24. allowed but two representatives, who are chosen semi-annually. 24. allowed four representatives. 26. its springs, note on. 175. its siege. 161. its indian name; sold by w. blackstone to massachusetts colony. 170. 171.  
 Boston dispensary. i. 127.  
 Boston athenæum. i. 138. contains many rare works on america. viii. 199.  
 Boston anthology. i. 255.  
 Boston magazine. ii. 169.  
 Boston news-letter, quoted. iv. 173.  
 Bosworth, ———. iv. 282. 294.  
 Bosworth, haniel. viii. 197.  
 Botanical catalogue of plants in middlebury, vermont. ix. 146—158.  
 Botany of plainfield, with the times of flowering. viii. 168—171.  
 Botta, m. carlo. x. 192.  
 Bottomless pond. iv. 55.  
 Boudinot, elias. viii. 167. x. 192.  
 Bouillon, sieur, makes a treaty between charles i. and louis xiii. vii. P. 78.  
 Bouithillier, counsellor to louis xiii. vii. P. 78.  
 Bound Brook. iii. 235. vii. 117.  
 Bourne, richard, procures a patent for mashpee indians. iii. 11. his success in teaching indians. vi. 659. 660.  
 Bourne, rev. shearjashub, of scituate. iv. 233. 234.  
 Bourne, henry. iv. 239. 247.  
 Bourne, thomas. iv. 247.  
 Bourne, ———. iv. 294.  
 Bourne, ezra. vii. 165.  
 Bourne, ———. x. 69.  
 Bouchier, sir john, a patentee of new england. v. 217.  
 Bouchier, henry, a patentee of new england. v. 217.  
 Boutell, deacon joseph. x. 176.  
 Boutell, rebecca. x. 176.  
 Boutell, hannah. x. 177.  
 Boutle, thomas. iv. 110.  
 Bowdoin, james, governour of massachusetts. ii. 46. iii. 193. x. 28. 29. his residence. iii. 197. his letter from gen. washington. viii. 193.  
 Bowdoin, hon. james. i. 127. iii. 76. iv. 256.  
 Bowdoin, william. iii. 193.  
 Bowdoin, james, esq. x. 192.  
 Bower, george. iv. 100.  
 Bowers, ———. viii. 112.  
 Bowles, deacon william. ii. 153.  
 Bowman, nathaniel. vii. P. 4.  
 Boyer, capt. viii. 156.  
 Boyle, sir robert, friendly to new england. i. (xxvii.) x. 125. the "particular acquaintance" and correspondent of gov. j. winthrop of massachusetts; his letter to gov. endicott, acknowledging the honour conferred on him by massachusetts, and advising a more guarded language to be used towards the english government. viii. 49—52. eliot's dedication of the "indian grammar begun" to him. ix. 245.  
 Boys, antipas. viii. 105.  
 Boylston, dr. zabdiel, introduces inoculation for small pox into massachusetts. i. 106. encounters opposition on account of it; is made a member of the royal society. ii. 159. dies. i. 106. ii. 159.  
 Boylston, ward-nicholas. i. 118.  
 Boylston medical society. i. 127.  
 Boylston, town of. i. 162.  
 Boylston, peter. ii. 144.  
 Boylston, nicholas, presents a bell to the church in brookline. ii. 151.  
 Boylston, richard. ii. 181.  
 Boylston, thomas. ii. 181.  
 Brackenberry, ———. v. 109.  
 Brackett, james. iii. 103.  
 Brackett, joseph-warren. iii. 103.  
 Brackett, joshua. iii. 119.  
 Brackett, dr. x. 163. 164.  
 Bradbury, thomas. iv. 170.  
 Bradbury, k. x. 69.  
 Braddock, edward, commander in chief of the king's forces in north america, killed. viii. 155. 156. his defeat on the banks of the monongahela—an original account of british and american officers killed and wounded. viii. 153—157.  
 Bradford, ———. iii. 66. iv. 284.  
 Bradford, william, governour of plymouth colony. i. (vi. xxix.) his manuscript history. i. 170. ii. 260. v. (vi.) iii. 164. 100. 184. 220. iv. 249. 291. v. 67. 90. P. 70. assists in organizing the church at salem. v. 119. 168. dies. vi. 329. 555. vii. 138. deputy governour of plymouth colony. iii. 164. 190.

- iv. 266. vii. 144. 148. governour of plymouth, notice of. vi. 550. 661. vii. 117. 190. vii. P. 3. (in prince's advertisement) quoted. P. 48. 62. vii. P. 58. his mistake corrected. P. 62. 74. sends sir christopher gardiner a prisoner to boston; letter to, from governour winthrop. vii. P. 27. comes to boston. vii. P. 38. after being governour of plymouth colony nearly 12 years, requests to be excused, and is chosen assistant. vii. P. 83. his letter from governour winthrop, giving an account of the hearing before the privy council, morton and others against massachusetts. P. 89. his history ends at 1647. P. 92. his letter from james sherry, one of the partners of the profits of plymouth colony. P. 93. comes to boston about a company to trade to connecticut. P. 94. viii. 182. ix. 38. "is vehemently taken with a grief and pain, and so shot to his huckle bone," but recovers. 44. supposed to be the author of a part of mount's relation. 73. his letters referred to. x. 2. 61. declines a re-election; his reasons. x. 70. 65. 67. 68. 69.
- Bradford, alden, letter from. i. 103. vii. 181. his letter about duxbury and plymouth. x. 57.
- Bradford, gamaliel, warden of state prison. ii. 175.
- Bradford, rev. john, of roxbury. ii. 152.
- Bradford, gershom. iii. 209.
- Bradford, major john. iii. 214.
- Bradford, israhel. iii. 208.
- Bradford, hezekiah. iii. 208.
- Bradford, perez. iii. 208.
- Bradford, ephraim. iii. 208.
- Bradford, william. iii. 208.
- Bradford, david. iii. 208.
- Bradford, john. iii. 190. 209. x. 67.
- Bradford, elisha. iii. 209.
- Bradford, capt. william. iv. 86.
- Bradford, mrs. alice. iv. 243. vii. 148.
- Bradford, hon. william, of bristol, rhode island. iv. 285.
- Bradford, rev. ephraim-p. of new boston, new hampshire. viii. 177.
- Bradford, joseph. x. 67.
- Bradford, hannah. x. 180.
- Bradford, john. vii. 138.
- Bradley, isaac, taken prisoner by indians. iv. 128.
- Bradley, joseph, his garrison taken by indians. iv. 129.
- Bradley, mrs. kills an indian with boiling soap. iv. 129.
- Bradley, rev. caleb, of falmouth, maine. iv. 181.
- Bradstreet, simon, first secretary of massachusetts. ii. 87. vii. P. 29. iv. 22. 104. 110. with others, plants andover. viii. 14. governour of massachusetts. iv. 203. assistant. v. 124. arrives. 133. vi. 363. commissioner. 466. ditto to maine. vi. 542. sent to england to represent the loyalty of massachusetts to charles ii. vi. 576. elected governour of massachusetts several years in succession. 612. vii. 129. 190. assistant. vii. P. 5. 6. 21. notice of; governour to lord rich, at college; steward to earl of lincoln, and to the countess of warwick; an assistant. vii. P. 15. 21. 23. 25. 27. 30. 31. 32. 34. 35. 58. 60. 61. 63. 65. 66. 68. 69. 72. 85. 86. 91. 92. 93. builds at newtown. vii. P. 36. agent of massachusetts to england. viii. 53. 55. 56. protests against an answer of the massachusetts general court to charles ii. viii. 108. 88. 91. 99. 100. his letter from roger williams, concerning a book he was about to publish, and an answer to gorton. 196. 198. viii. 229.
- Bradstreet, rev. simon, of charlestown. ii. 171. 178.
- Bradstreet, samuel. viii. 105.
- Bradstreet, rev. nathan, of chester, new hampshire. ix. 368.
- Bragdon, arthur, ensign at york. vi. 600.
- Bragg, ———, printer of haverhill paper. iv. 126.
- Braintree, conn. settled. vi. 319.
- Braintree, formerly mount wolaston. v. 102. ordination at. v. 276. petitions for leave to begin a plantation at showamet. vi. 414. 20th church in massachusetts planted at. vii. 24. 25. company, by order of court, remove to newtown. vii. P. 66. persons in england en-



- gage in making iron there, who pay roundly to lady experience for after wit. viii. 11.
- Brakenbury, ———, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 86.
- Brampton, thomas. viii. 97.
- Brandt, count. i. 177.
- Brant point. iii. 21.
- Brattle, hon. thomas, his account of witchcraft mentioned. iii. 221.
- Brattle, william. iii. 9. iv. 142.
- Brattle, thomas. viii. 105.
- Brattle, capt. of boston. viii. 197.
- Bray, rev. dr. ii. 193. 195.
- Bread, high price of. vii. P. 20.
- Breakheart hill. iii. 175.
- Breck, hon. samuel, a manufacturer of duck at boston. viii. 323.
- Breckenridge, ———. ii. 12. 23. 25.
- Breckl, edward. iv. 110.
- Breed, josiah. viii. 45.
- Breeden, capt. thomas, censured in massachusetts for contempt of authority. viii. 48. 82. 83. 105.
- Breed's hill. ii. 167. 168.
- Brenton, rev. dr. i. 216.
- Brenton, william, made a magistrate of rhode island by the king's commissioners. vii. 93. governour of rhode island. vii. 98. honoured in boston. 136. x. 23.
- Brereton, capt. lieut. viii. 156.
- Brett, elder william. vii. 137. 138. 143. 144. 147. 149. 150. 159. 162. 163. 168.
- Brett, nathaniel. vii. 149. 150. 159. 163.
- Brett, elihu. vii. 149. 150. 159. 163.
- Bretton woods. iii. 105.
- Brewer, ———. iv. 179. 206.
- Brewer, col. x. 44.
- Brewster, wrestling. iii. 209.
- Brewster, ———. iii. 228.
- Brewster, love. x. 57. 58. 62. 64. 65. vii. 138.
- Brewster, jonathan. iv. 224. x. 57. 58. 62. 64. 65. 68.
- Brewster, elder, his character. v. 43. 65. preaches to plymouth colony, but does not administer the sacraments. 97. 204. his death. vi. 663. vii. 29. P. 70. x. 57. 58. 62. 64. 65. 68. his library. 65.
- Bricks, advice about. ix. 133.
- Bridgden, zechariah. ii. 177.
- Bridgden, thomas. ii. 178.
- Bridge, john. ii. 162. iv. 76.
- Bridge, hon. matthew, of charlestown. ii. 167. 176. 177. 179. 180.
- Bridge, samuel. ii. 178.
- Bridge, nathaniel. iii. 269.
- Bridge, rev. josiah, of east sudbury. iv. 61.
- Bridge, ebenezer. iv. 90. 94.
- Bridge, rev. ———, of framingham. vii. 163.
- Bridges, capt. robert, sent by commissioners of united colonies of new england, to treat with d'aulney. vi. 493. assistant. 519. vii. 58.
- Bridges, mrs. her confessions. iii. 224.
- Bridgham, joseph. x. 26.
- Bridgewater, massachusetts, description of. vii. 137. a part of duxbury. 137. 140. incorporated; its taxes. 140. petitions for extension of bounds. 141. question about its bounds; purchase of indians. 142. 143. 144. its bounds; its settlement. 146. its school lands. 153. emigration from; population and taxes; first interior settlement in plymouth colony. 155. activity of its inhabitants in philip's war; attacked and burnt by indians. 156. indian fight at. 157. 158. has lost but two persons in battle; list of its representatives to plymouth & to massachusetts. 159. sends delegates to convention for forming massachusetts constitution, and for adopting united states' constitution; its senators; its ecclesiastical history; its west parish. 161. its south parish. 163. its north parish. 164. 166. its east parish. 165. titicut parish. 167. its episcopal church; its baptists. 167. its dwellings, families and persons; its schools and education; makes a grant to harvard college. 168. its academy; its educated men. 169. its ponds and rivers; indians. 171. its mills. 172. its soil and agriculture. 173. its manufactures and mechanicks. 175. its slitting mill, the second in new england. 176. its militia. 176.
- Bridgewater's monitor, quoted. vii. 161.
- Brief relation of the discovery and planting of new england. ix. 1. cause of its publication. 2. 3.

- Brief narrative, &c. by matthew may-hew, jun. iii. 66.
- Brier creek. iii. 239.
- Brierton, capt. john. v. 10.
- Briggs, walter. iv. 229. 241. 247.
- Briggs, ———. iv. 260. 282. 294. vii. 123.
- Briggs, zepaniah. iv. 261. x. 37.
- Briggs, rev. john, of plympton. iv. 270.
- Briggs, mrs. iv. 282.
- Briggs, john, aged 92. iv. 282.
- Briggs, rev. ephraim, of halifax. iv. 282. 283.
- Briggs, ———, a mathematician. v. 51.
- Briggs, clement. vii. 121.
- Briggs, rev. james, of cummington, massachusetts. viii. 172. x. 43.
- Brigham, capt. vii. 55.
- Bright, ———. ii. 70.
- Bright, rev. francis, arrives in new england. v. 112. 113. 121. 122.
- Bright. henry. vii. P. 69.
- Brighton, formerly little cambridge. iv. 143. its fair. vii. 115.
- Brigs, henry, his tractate about the width of the american continent, referred to. ix. 122.
- Brimsmead. rev. ———. iii. 187.
- Brinley, ———, quoted. vii. 96.
- Briscoe, ———, tutor at harvard college; his difficulties with president eaton. v. 247.
- Briscoe, nathaniel, of boston, drowned. vi. 422.
- Briscoe, ———, a tanner of watertown, writes a book against supporting ministers by taxes. vi. 412. summoned before court, and acknowledges his error. 412. his barn burnt. 423.
- Bristol, england, merchants of, raise money for a voyage of discovery. v. 11. people have a colony at newfoundland. viii. 226.
- Bristol, or pacanacot. vii. P. 58.
- Bristow, maj. challenges ingram. i. 71.
- British armament arrives at tybee. iii. 238. attacked at concord. iv. 216. troops at lexington. iv. 215. use old south church as a riding school. vii. 180.
- Briton, cape. See cape breton. vii. P. 78.
- Britten, j. condemned to death for adultery. vi. 426.
- Brocas, capt. makes an experiment with vines in virginia. ix. 118.
- Brock, (brook ?) capt. of the ship gift. v. 137.
- Brockhurst, capt. vi. 638.
- Bromfield, edward. x. 26. 28.
- Brook, lord. i. (xxvii.) iii. 151. iv. 156. v. 177. his purchase at pascatagua. v. 221.
- Brooke, nathaniel. ii. 49.
- Brookes, sir john, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Brookfield, new hampshire. iii. 120.
- Brookfield, massachusetts, settled. vi. 591. destroyed by indians. 592.
- Brookline, massachusetts, historical sketch of, by rev. john pierce. ii. 140. its situation and boundaries. 140. formerly called muddy river; first noticed in "new england's prospect." 141. its boundary line toward roxbury settled. 142. its first school. 142. formerly worshipped at roxbury; its incorporation opposed by boston. 143. petitions the general court to be incorporated. 144. incorporated, on condition of building a meeting house, and settling an orthodox minister within three years; not able to comply with the condition; origin of its name; mentioned by its present name long before incorporation; records of its incorporation not found in the secretary's office. 145. acres in; sends its first representative in 1709; its first meeting house; its church gathered. 146. its burial ground; fast at; 147. its engine; united in resisting great britain. 151. number of its families; baptisms and church members at; census of; number of its houses; many inhabitants of boston reside there in summer. 152. list of its ministers and deacons; its church plate. 153. its deaths; its diseases. 154. 155. list of its natives who have received a publick education. 156. 157. 158. some of its natives slain by indians. 160. its meeting house. 161. note on. iii. 284.
- Brooks, dr. i. 108.
- Brooks, rev. edward, of north yarmouth. iv. 143.

- Brooks, hon. peter c. iv. 143.  
 Brooks, william. iv. 241.  
 Brooks, gilbert. iv. 241.  
 Broom, ———. iii. 195.  
 Brown, ———. i. 138.  
 Brown, daniel. ii. 129. tutor in yale college; becomes an episcopalian. 129. 131. 137. iv. 299.  
 Brown, rev. cotton, minister of brookline. ii. 149. 153. iv. 169. his character. 143.  
 Brown, oliver, teacher at charlestown. ii. 170. 178.  
 Brown, jesse. ii. 181.  
 Brown, major. ii. 240. 243.  
 Brown, ———. iii. 111.  
 Brown, col. iii. 236. surprises the english. iii. 236.  
 Brown, rev. elijah, of sherburne. iii. 269.  
 Brown, jacob, settled on notichucky river. vii. 59.  
 Brown, chadd. ix. 197.  
 Brown, peter, for some time lost, to the grief of plymouth settlers. ix. 44. 45.  
 Brown, rev. edmund, of sudbury. iv. 58. vii. 1. 11. 23. P. 4.  
 Brown, rev. thomas, of stroudwater. iv. 143. 169.  
 Brown, rev. francis, of north yarmouth. iv. 181.  
 Brown, francis. viii. 45.  
 Brown, francis. viii. 106.  
 Brown, rev. arthur, episcopal minister of portsmouth, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Brown, ward. iv. 90. 92. 94. 143. 162.  
 Brown, mrs. joanna. iv. 143.  
 Brown, capt. his journey of military observation to worcester. iv. 205. ditto to concord. iv. 214.  
 Brown, rev. john, of haverhill. iv. 132. 169. his account of the throat distemper at haverhill. 134. his ordination, salary, character, death and epitaph. 142.  
 Brown, rev. john, of cohasset. iv. 94. 143.  
 Brown, john. iv. 220. vi. 414. vii. 138.  
 Brown, john, an assistant. v. 121. 122. viii. 97.  
 Brown, john. viii. 45.  
 Brown, john. viii. 107.  
 Brown, john. x. 178.  
 Brown, samuel. v. 122. viii. 97.  
 Brown, rev. samuel, of abington. vii. 120.  
 Brown, dr. samuel. i. 121.  
 Brown, elder richard, produces a difficulty at watertown. v. 142. 143. complains to the assistants. v. 164. dismissed from watertown for faults; formerly ruler of a church in london; his kindness to dr. ames and r. parker. 187. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. vii. P. 29. says the church of rome is a true church, which causes difficulties at watertown. P. 31. 32. and is concluded to be in an error. P. 32. but he adheres to his opinion. P. 38. 39.  
 Brown, rev. richard. iv. 141.  
 Brown, bartholomew. vii. 160.  
 Browne, james. viii. 106.  
 Browne, joshua. viii. 106.  
 Browne, william. viii. 106.  
 Browne, joseph. viii. 107.  
 Browne, john. x. 62. 176.  
 Brown, john. x. 176.  
 Brownism, v. 182.  
 Brown's island. iii. 182.  
 Brownists. i. 167. their opinions on ecclesiastical government. 200. many of, remove to holland. v. 182. put the government of the church into the hands of the people. 182.  
 Bruce, rev. john, of mount vernon, new hampshire. viii. 178.  
 Bruch, (burch?) atherton, proctor of oxford university, expelled. vii. P. 53.  
 Brunning, minheer, a dutch bookseller, of boston, described by dunton. ii. 102.  
 Brunswick, maine, destroyed by indians. viii. 254.  
 Bryant, solomon. iii. 13. 16.  
 Bryant, sergeant john. iv. 240.  
 Bryant, joseph. iii. 17.  
 Bryant, john. iii. 208.  
 Bryant, jonathan. iii. 209.  
 Bryant, benjamin. iii. 208.  
 Bryant, rev. lemuell, of braintree, now quincy, buried at scituate. iv. 238.  
 Bryant, peter, m. d. notice of. x. 42. 44.  
 Bryant, ———, presented to plymouth court for drunkenness. x. 69.  
 Buchanan, lieut. viii. 156.



- Buck, isaac. iv. 241.  
 Buckingham, rev. stephen, of norwalk, connecticut. iv. 297. his letter on episcopacy. iv. 301.  
 Buckingham, marquis of, a patentee of new england. v. 217.  
 Buckley. See bulkley.  
 Buckminster, rev. dr. joseph, of portsmouth, new hampshire. ii. 271.  
 Buckminster, ———, his tavern. iv. 207. 209.  
 Buckminster, rev. joseph s. memoir of; ordained at brattle square, boston. ii. 271. goes to europe; returns and dies; excels in philology and biblical criticism. ii. 272. his publications; his posthumous sermons. ii. 273.  
 Buffalo river. ii. 15.  
 Bulkley, rev. peter, arrives. iii. 154. 155. his "gospel covenant opened;" a masterly reasoner in theology. ii. 260. moderator of synod at cambridge. v. 298. ordained at concord. v. 274. vii. 128.  
 Bulkley, peter, sent to england to answer complaints made by heirs of gorges and mason. vi. 613. vii. 29. viii. 181.  
 Bulkley, rev. edward. vi. 663. x. 65.  
 Bull, dixie, and others, pirates. v. 160. about pemaquid, account of. vii. P. 91. viii. 232. 233. turn pirates, rifle pemaquid, &c. being the first pirates in new england. P. 73.  
 Bull, henry. ix. 179.  
 Bull, lieut. thomas. viii. 139. 140. 152.  
 Bulgar, richard. viii. 232.  
 Bullard's hill. i. 180.  
 Bullets not to be put into training guns, except in certain cases. vii. P. 63.  
 Bullen, ———, a missionary. ii. 16. 21.  
 Bullivant, dr. of boston, described by dunton. ii. 105. 124.  
 Bumpas, edward. x. 57.  
 Bumpas, jacob. iv. 259. 260. 294.  
 Bunker's hill. ii. 168. battle of. 167.  
 Bunker, rev. benjamin. ii. 177.  
 Bunker, mrs. x. 173.  
 Bunker, john. ii. 178.  
 Burbank, moses. x. 75.  
 Burbank, timothy, a chorister. iv. 301.  
 Burdet, sarah. x. 177.  
 Burdet, rev. ———, gets himself made governour of pascataqua, but is forced off. v. 221. 263. misrepresents new england. 263. arrives and consults the government of massachusetts. vi. 353. 354. governour at pascataqua. vi. 356. his misrule and vices; arrested and fined. vi. 361. goes to england and is imprisoned. 361.  
 Burgess, joseph. iv. 259.  
 Burgess, ———. iv. 260.  
 Burgess, professor tristram. iv. 261.  
 Burgoyne, general. iii. 236. stationed with his army at cambridge after his capture. viii. 295.  
 Burial hill. iii. 179.  
 Burke quoted. i. (xii.)  
 Burkit's annotations. iii. 16.  
 Burnap, rev. dr. jacob, of merrimack, new hampshire. viii. 178. 179. his sermon. x. 56.  
 Burnett, gov. i. 151.  
 Burnett, dr. ii. 63.  
 Burning, capital punishment, instance of, in massachusetts. ii. 166.  
 Burr, peter. iv. 86.  
 Burr, rev. jonathan, difficulties in dorchester about his opinions. v. 278. vii. 20.  
 Burr, john. vi. 308.  
 Burr, rev. jonathan. vii. 169.  
 Burr, john. viii. 107.  
 Burr, henry, emancipates his slaves. viii. 187.  
 Burrill, ———. vii. 123.  
 Burroughs, francis. ii. 100. his kindness to dunton, and his character by dunton. ii. 123.  
 Burroughs, rev. ———. iv. 120.  
 Burroughs, rev. ———, one of the assembly of divines at westminster. vi. 534.  
 Burrows, ———. iv. 277.  
 Burton, ———, vi. 516.  
 Burton, lieut. col. viii. 156.  
 Burwell, hon. william a. letter from. i. 27.  
 Bushnell, john. viii. 105.  
 Buss, john. x. 176.  
 Buthrick, rev. ———, quoted. x. 121.  
 Butler, rev. benjamin, of nottingham, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Butler, capt. vi. 523.  
 Butler, ———. iii. 66.  
 Buttels, john. viii. 106.

- Butterfield's meadow, origin of its name. v. 252.
- Buttermilk bay. iii. 175.
- Button, john. iv. 110.
- Buzzard's Bay. iii. 53. 75. 164. x. 47. 48. oysters at. iii. 191. its tides. viii. 194. 196.
- Byfield, nathaniel. x. 26.
- Byles, rev. dr. ii. 186. his new england hymn. iii. 176.
- Byram, or byron. vii. 151.
- Byram, nicholas. vii. 143. 145. 148. 149. 152. 154. 155. 157. 164.
- Byram, abigail. vii. 152.
- Byram, josiah. vii. 154. 155.
- Byram, ebenezer. vii. 154. 155. 159.
- Byram, joseph. vii. 154. 155.
- Byram, benjamin. vii. 155.
- Byram, eliab. vii. 170.
- Byram's brook. vii. 172.
- Byron, or byram. vii. 151.
- C.
- Cable, john. viii. 232.
- Cabot, sebastian, his discoveries. v. 8. 9. made grand pilot of england and ireland; receives a pension. 9.
- Cabot, john, his discoveries. v. 8.
- Cabot, hon. george. ii. 172.
- Cactus opuntia. iii. 24.
- Caddo language. ii. 23. 25. 28.
- Caddoques indians, their residence, number and warriors. ii. 23. 26.
- Cadiz people treat shipwrecked new englanders well. vi. 526.
- Calamus aromaticus early seen in abundance in new england. ix. 18.
- Caldwell, major. ii. 239.
- Caldwell, john. viii. 107.
- Caledon, earl of, his letter from b. f. seaver, about tristan d'acunha. ii. 125.
- Calef, robert. iii. 221.
- Calfe, mary. x. 178.
- California. ii. 29. straits of. v. 27.
- Call, samuel. viii. 115.
- Calamy, rev. dr. his account of ejected ministers referred to. i. 169.
- Callender's (rev. john) century sermon referred to. i. 210. ix. 182.
- Calvert, sir george, sends out a colony to new-foundland. viii. 386.
- Calvin. i. 247. iv. 18.
- Calvinism of the dutch. i. 140.
- Cambridge. i. (ix.) the 8th church gathered; the seat of government, iii. 136. 137. the 11th church gathered. 152. grant to. iv. 77. or newtown, settled. v. 158. a synod at, sets forth a platform. v. 184. its college founded by rev. j. harvard. 237. (See harvard college.) synod at. v. 298. its people remove to hartford. vi. 307. meeting of ministers at. vi. 415. first synod in new england held at; account of. vii. 1. provincial congress held at. 160. convention held at, to form massachusetts constitution. 161. second synod held there. viii. 8. american army at, of which general washington takes the command x. 3.
- Cambridge platform referred to. iii. 276. set forth. v. 184.
- Cameron, alexander. vii. 59. agent from england to cherokees. 59. plans the destruction of east tennessee. 60.
- Canmocke, capt. v. 216. begins to plant in maine. v. 224. vii. P. 70.
- Campbell, duncan, a scotch bookseller at boston. ii. 102.
- Campbell, col. ii. 244.
- Campbell, rev. othniel, of carver and tiverton, sketch of. iv. 277.
- Canacocome. v. 61.
- Canada, its expense to great britain. iii. 122. battle in, sir william phips commander of english and new england troops. iii. 256. surrendered by treaty of charles i. to the french. vii. P. 78. proposed to be invaded by massachusetts by order of charles ii. viii. 101.
- Canada river. iii. 259.
- Canal from charlestown to newtown. vii. P. 31/
- Canaries. vi. 256.
- Canaumut neck. iii. 2.
- Cances indians, their number and residence. ii. 25.
- Canchattas indians, their number and residence. ii. 26.
- Canfield, edward, esq. appointed by his majesty governor of new hampshire, arrives. vi. 614.
- Canne, rev. ———, author of marginal references to the bible. i. 168.
- Canon and feudal law, a dissertation on, by hon. john adams. i. (xxvii.)
- Canonicus, chief sachem of the naragansets, embassy to. iv. 42.

43. his court. 42. remains neuter in the pequot war. 43. his advice to the pequots. 44. sachem of massachusetts. vi. 452. 453. his death. 464. his war with the pequots. vii. P. 59. an enemy of plymouth colony. ix. 95. a friend of rhode island. 202. his grant to roger williams. 169. and miantonimo, their contest with ousamequin. vii. 75. his sons. an army sent against them by united colonies of new england. viii. 2.
- Cantaugcantee hill. iii. 177.
- Cape ann, origin of its name. i. (xx.) ii. 69. named by capt. mason; settled. v. 102. 105. dorchester people establish as a place for fishing. 106. or cape tragabizanda; granted by plymouth council to capt. mason. vi. 614. 615. whirlwind at. 623. french vessel wrecked at. 649. vii. 32.
- Cape breton surrendered by treaty of charles i. to the french. vii. P. 78.
- Cape charles, origin of its name. v. 12. ix. 110.
- Cape cod. iii. 21. bass and mackerel fishery at. 220. visited by gosnold; origin of its name. v. 10. indians. 33. an embalmed person and whales found there by plymouth pilgrims. ix. 35. 36. or paomet. 50.
- Cape cod canal, papers about; early proposed. viii. 192. report about of a committee of massachusetts general court in 1776, with thomas machin's estimates. 193—196.
- Cape diamond. ii. 243. 244.
- Cape François. iii. 241.
- Cape harbour. x. 67. 68.
- Cape henry, origin of its name. v. 12. fort at early. viii. 109.
- Cape james visited by capt. darmer. ix. 11.
- Cape page. iii. 40. 46. 58. 72.
- Cape page pond. iii. 72.
- Cape porpoise. v. 14. comes under the jurisdiction of massachusetts. vi. 543. vii. P. 66.
- Cape sables, scottish plantation at, purchased by the french; under the care of cardinal richlieu. v. 161.
- Cape shoals. vi. 611.
- Capel, lord, executed. iv. 157.
- Capital laws established in massachusetts, 1841, 1642. a list of. iv. 112.
- Capowake, now martha's, or marty'n's, vineyard. v. 63.
- Captain's hill. iii. 185. x. 58. 62.
- Carder, richard. ix. 179. 182.
- Cardigan mountain. viii. 174.
- Carding at christmas, questioned. x. 182. 183.
- Cards and dice forbidden. vii. P. 23.
- Careswell, the name of gov winslow's farm. x. 62. 65. 66.
- Carew, gome. v. 36.
- Carew, or cary. vii. 151.
- Carey's american museum, referred to. x. 81. 82.
- Carlisle, earl of. v. 89. vi. 668.
- Carman, capt. his victory over a turkish ship, near the isle of palma. vi. 424. drowned. 525.
- Carnes, rev. john. iv. 149.
- Carolina walnut. iv. 270.
- Carolina, north, and virginia troops, with general robertson and others, vanquish the cherokees. vii. 61.
- Carpenter, william. ix. 170. 182.
- Carr, sir robert, commissioner with col. nichols and others to new england. vi. 585. 665. vii. 79. 91. 92. (And see nichols, col. and commissioners.) viii. 52. 58. 62. 64. 75. 77. 81. 82. 84. 87. 90. 92. 95.
- Carratuncas, carrying place. ii. 231.
- Carter, ———, deputy governour of providence island. vi. 378.
- Carter, rev. thomas, first of woburn, iii. 161. ordained by one of the church members. vi. 408. vii. 40. 42.
- Carter, john, sent from east tennessee to north carolina for assistance. vii. 61.
- Cartier, ———, referred to. x. 132.
- Cartwright, rev. ———, a non-conformist. v. 118.
- Cartwright, col. george, commissioner, with col. nichols and others, to new england. vi. 577. 665. vii. 92. notice of. vi. 579. (See commissioners, and nichols, col.) is taken by the dutch and loses his papers. vi. 585. vii. 79. 98. 103. viii. 58. 62. 64. 75. 77. 81. 82. 84. 87. 90. his arrival at boston. 92. 95. 96.
- Carver, john, first governour of plymouth colony. i. (vi.) iii. 229. 231. 232. v. 46. 53. 62. dies 66. and his wife. 67. ix. 38. arrives



- with plymouth colony, consisting of about one hundred persons. 167.
- Carver, occupation of its inhabitants. iii. 164. description of. iv. 271. its situation, soil and productions; its rivers, brooks and ponds. 271. 274. its iron ore, 272. its cedars, &c. 272. its furnaces. 272. 273. its mills, and fish. 274. its manufactory of baskets; its houses and inhabitants. 276. its census. 277. its ministers. 277.
- Carver, with bland, sent to accomack. i. 46. hung. 47.
- Carver, ———, (the traveller.) ii. 2. 9. 38. x. 87.
- Cary, john. vii. 138. 143. 147. 149. 150.
- Cary, henry, viscount falkland, undertook to plant a colony in newfoundland. viii. 225.
- Cary, richard. ii. 46. 47. 178.
- Cary, rev. thomas, of newburyport. ii. 178. iv. 144.
- Cary, francis. vii. 149.
- Cary, jonathan. vii. 149.
- Cary, james. vii. 149.
- Cary, or carew. vii. 151. 154.
- Cary, eliphalet. vii. 160.
- Cary, caleb. vii. 160.
- Cary lucius. vii. 170.
- Casco bay. iv. 160. v. 14. 16. whale cast up at. vi. 642. v. 31.
- Case of the governour and company of massachusetts bay, stated by sir w. jones, king's attorney general. vi. 617—621.
- Casely, william. iv. 239.
- Casely, edward. iv. 240.
- Castahanas indians. See pastanownas.
- Castine, sieur de, marries an indian. viii. 256.
- Castine, baron de s. an indian chief. viii. 256.
- Castor and pollux. ii. 99.
- Catanoneaux indians. ii. 42.
- Catardin or nataridin mountain, a description of. viii. 112. indian superstition about. 116.
- Cate, mary. x. 176.
- Caterpillars destructive in massachusetts. viii. 18.
- Catchmay, sir richard, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Catholick missions among indians of new spain. ii. 30.
- Cattle first brought to plymouth. v. 94. early brought to virginia. viii. 210. price of, in massachusetts. v. 238.
- Cawcatant. v. 61.
- Cawgust, or saugus. iv. 3.
- Caynga, or keiuga, indians, their number, &c. viii. 244.
- Cecil, lord general. viii. 208.
- Cedar brook. iv. 272.
- Cedar point. iv. 228.
- Cedar swamp. ii. 160. iv. 272. 275.
- Centre—centre tree. vii. 141.
- Century sermon of dr. kendall cited. i. (xxv.) of callender. i. 210.
- Cephas, mrs. x. 180.
- Chactaws. ii. 3. their residence; tradition concerning their origin. 16. their language, agriculture, civilization and numbers. 17. their annuity. 18. 20. 26. 27. 28.
- Chadbourne, ———, builds a great house at strawberry bank. v. 219.
- Chaddock, capt. comes to new england for men and money. vi. 424. his pinnace blown up and strange sights seen. 425. viii. 23.
- Chaddock, ———, governour of bermudas. vi. 424.
- Chaddock, rev. calvin, of rochester. iv. 263. x. 33.
- Chactos indians, their residence and number. ii. 27.
- Challons, capt. henry, sent on discovery, with two american indians, to north america, by the new england company; his misfortunes. ix. 3.
- Chalmers, george, esq. x. 192.
- Chamberlain, deacon aaron. viii. 45.
- Chamberlain, nathaniel. viii. 45.
- Chamberlain, abraham. ii. 144.
- Chamberlain, william. ii. 162.
- Chamberlain, ———, secretary of new hampshire. vi. 617.
- Chamberlin, ———. vii. 155.
- Chambers, thomas. iv. 239.
- Chamblee. vi. 639.
- Chamisso, ———, a naturalist of berlin. iv. 98.
- Champernoon, capt. and mr. gorges, grant to of lands at agamenticus. v. 224. vi. 584.
- Champion, dickason and burgis present a bell to charlestown. ii. 170.
- Champion, ———. iii. 194.

- Champney, richard. ii. 162. iv. 76.  
 Chandler, edmund. vii. 138. x. 57. 67. 69.  
 Chandler, william. viii. 106.  
 Channing, dr. walter. i. 117.  
 Chapawack, or martha's vineyard. iii. 89.  
 Chapin, rev. perez, of pownal. iv. 182.  
 Chapin, rev. stephen, of montvernon. viii. 178.  
 Chapin, dr. x. 83.  
 Chaplain, rev. ———, elder, at weathersfield. vi. 307. 314.  
 Chapman, ralph. iv. 224.  
 Chappaquiddick. iii. 70. description of. 72.  
 Chappaquonset. iii. 74.  
 Chard, caleb. vii. 120. 123.  
 Chard, william. vii. 120.  
 Charderton, dr. vii. P. 15.  
 Charity, ship, of dartmouth, arrives with provisions. v. 240.  
 Charles ii. grants new york, martha's vineyard and other islands to duke of york. iii. 85. address to, from massachusetts, on his restoration. vi. 557. his answer. 561. gives a favourable reception to agents of massachusetts; sends commissioners to new england. 577. 665. his instructions to the commissioners. 578. 665. his letter to massachusetts requiring a declaration of war between england and france to be published in massachusetts. viii. 102. his birth and christening. vii. P. 16.  
 Charles, an indian. vii. 143.  
 Charles, the ship, arrives at salem. v. 129. 132. vii. P. 10. is attacked by dunkirkers. v. 140. 141. vii. P. 19.  
 Charles, of oleron, ship, trial of. iv. 102. owned by t. deane and others; a decision regarding it produces complaints. viii. 71. which case is appealed to the king's commissioners. 82. 83. but massachusetts general court summons the parties to a hearing, and gives notice to the commissioners. 88. 89.  
 Charles, of dartmouth, ship, cast away at piscataqua. vi. 420.  
 Charles, of barnstable, ship, brings passengers, cows and mares. vii. P. 61.  
 Charles river, named. i. (xx.) iii. 136. 265. v. 16. indians at. v. 32.  
 Charles river bridge, description of. ii. 172. pays a revenue to harvard college. 166.  
 Charles river, virginia. ix. 110.  
 Charles's neck, in rochester. iv. 251.  
 Charleston, south carolina, surrenders to the british. iii. 244.  
 Charlestown. i. (ix.) its church gathered, being the second in massachusetts. ii. 88. described by johnson. 89. history of by dr. josiah bartlett. ii. 163. its situation and extent; its indian name. 163. its first fortification; its church gathered; court of assistants at, on board the arbella. 164. most of its inhabitants remove to boston; small pox at; its first meeting house; its first delegates to general court; purchases gov. winthrop's house; fines those who neglect to attend town meeting. 165. character of its inhabitants; judicial courts at; its dry dock the first in the country; fires at. 166. its ferry and bridges. 166. 167. deserted before the battle of bunker's hill. 167. its fortifications. 168. is destroyed by the british. 167. is rebuilt. 169. its buildings and inhabitants; its votes for governor, etc.; its newspaper; its births and deaths; its streets. 169. its state taxes remitted; aided by a lottery; applies to congress for relief without effect; its publick buildings; its congregational, baptists' and universalists' meeting houses; its church bell presented by messrs. champion, dickason and burgis, of london; its law about brick buildings. 170. its bridge; its congregational, baptist and universalists churches founded. 171. its fire society; a monument erected to gen. joseph warren by its freemasons; some baptists at deny the necessity of ordination; its societies; description of its bridge. 172. 173. the first town that instituted funeral honours to washington. 173. character of its inha-

- bitants; its manufactures, marine hospital and navy yard; its military hospital. 174. its state prison; but one of its inhabitants, thomas danforth, took part with the british. 175. opposed to british treaty of 1795; its inhabitants republicans. 176. its men bred at harvard college. 177. its militia. 179. its schools and school houses. 180. 184. its professional men. 180. its washington hall. 181. its births and deaths. 182. its census. 183. its manufactures. 183. 184. iii. 136. iv. 155. planted. v. 134. 158. becomes a church distinct from boston, and settles rev. mr. james. v. 187. divisions in its church. 191. its ferry granted to harvard college. vii. 28. taxed £7 out of £50 in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. its people remove to boston. P. 1. its taxes for the support of ministers. P. 6. its people prevented from attending church in boston by the ice. P. 7. its ferry proposed and regulated. P. 6. 30. its first church member. P. 12. its people die of scurvy. P. 19. its tax. P. 57. 31. 85. viii. 230. joins with boston in contributing to build rev. j. wilson's meeting house and house at boston. vii. P. 65. list of its church members, many of whom removed to boston, being 151 that had joined it. P. 68. 69. its people, members of charlestown and boston church, which had been removed to the latter place, are dismissed to form for themselves a church at charlestown, under rev. mr. james. P. 69. 70. which is formed. P. 71. its church covenant. P. 72. fire at. viii. 24. a battery at. 72. profits of its ferry to harvard college in the time of president dunster. x. 187.
- Charlevoix. ii. 2. 7. quoted. viii. 256. x. 132.
- Charlotte furnace, in carver. iv. 272.
- Charter of new england; its date. vii. P. 13. x. 68.
- Charter of massachusetts, a legal opinion about. i. (xxvii.) taken away. iv. 160. from william and mary. iii. 87. iv. 160. x. 68.
- Charter of rhode island from earl of warwick. vii. 78. from parliament of england. vii. 83.
- Charter rights of rhode island, papers concerning. vii. 98.
- Chase, ———. iii. 66. iv. 179. 260.
- Chase, rev. stephen, of newcastle, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Chase, rev. stephen, of lynn. viii. 176.
- Chase, deacon francis. x. 177.
- Chaudiere pond. ii. 232. 234.
- Chaudiere river. ii. 233. 235. 236.
- Chaumont, father, composed a grammar of huron language. viii. 250.
- Chauncey, rev. israel, leather mitten ordination of, at stratford, connecticut. ii. 132.
- Chauncey, rev. nathaniel, of hatfield. iv. 85. 245.
- Chauncey, elnathan, of boston. iv. 85. 245.
- Chauncy, president c. protests against the synod at cambridge. i. 201. his "anti-synodalia" answered by rev. mr. allen of dedham. 202. 204. referred to. vi. 590. a great divine. ii. 260. iv. 220. 222. 233. of scituate. iv. 239. notice of. 245. his opinions on baptism. vi. 544. dies. 607. 663. vii. 10.
- Chauncy, rev. dr. charles, of boston. ii. 190. 256. iii. 198. viii. 282.
- Chawanok river. ix. 114.
- Checkett, joseph. iv. 240.
- Checkley, mrs. mary. iv. 101.
- Checkley, rev. samuel, sen. of boston. iv. 131. 142.
- Checkley, rev. samuel, jun. of boston. iv. 131.
- Checkley, samuel. x. 26. 27.
- Chedwick, charles. iv. 110.
- Cheesauncook lake. viii. 115.
- Cheesborough, william. vii. P. 60. P. 69. viii. 233.
- Cheeshalteamuck, caleb, the only indian who has received the honors of harvard college. ii. 178.
- Cheesman, capt. ii. 244. slain. 246.
- Cheever, dr. ezeziel. ii. 175.
- Cheever, thomas. ii. 178. vii. 130.
- Cheever, rev. samuel. iv. 92.
- Cheever, ezeziel, the schoolmaster, notice of. vii. 129. his accidence, written at new haven. 129. 130—132.
- Chiesman, taken by beverly. i. 63. dies in prison. 63.



- Chiesman, mrs. her great affection for her husband. i. 64.
- Chelmsford settled. vi. 543.
- Chelsea bridge, cost of. ii. 171.
- Chepachewest. iv. 289.
- Cherokees indians. ii. 13. mission to; formerly resided near charles-town; south carolina. 13. their residence, numbers, agriculture and annuities. 13. mistakes about its school corrected. iv. 65—69. make treaty with virginia. vii. 58. 59. vanquished, and make treaty with north carolina, virginia, and tennessee. 61. cede kentucky, and land on cumberland river, to the whites. vii. 62.
- Cherokees river. ii. 19.
- Cherry valley. x. 64.
- Cheselden, ———. i. 108.
- Chesmore, martha. x. 177.
- Chespiacke river, virginia. ix. 110.
- Chester, new hampshire, sketch of its ministers and churches. ix. 368.
- Cheverus, right rev. bishop. x. 127.
- Chiachioumas indians. ii. 15.
- Chickamauga, indians at, vanquished by isaac shelby. vii. 62. attack the whites there. vii. 64.
- Chickatabut. See chikkatabut.
- Chickering, rev. joseph, of woburn, his dedication sermon, and account of johnson. ii. 95.
- Chickesaws indians. ii. 3. 13. their residence. 15. formerly carried their wars to mexico and new spain. 15. their warriors. 15. their school, civilization, numbers and annuity. 16. mission to. 13.
- Chiennes indians, their progenitors supposed to have come from wales with madoc. ii. 36. their residence and number. 36.
- Chiennes river. ii. 36.
- Chignecto. iii. 194.
- Chikkatabut. v. 61. or chickatabut, a sachem at neponset. vii. 143. dines with, and receives presents from gov. winthrop. P. 25. 26. promises to pay for any damage done by his tribe. P. 29. 58. a man punished for stealing from. P. 35. his men put in the bilboes and punished by him for assaulting englishmen. P. 65. alias wampatuck, sells land at bridgewater to peregrine white. x. 70.
- Chikohacki indians. ii. 6.
- Child, dr. caleb. ii. 158.
- Child, major john, his confutation, etc. iv. 107.
- Child, dr. robert. iv. 107. his petition. 108. 111. 112. his imprisonment. 120. 199. grievances contained in his petition to court of massachusetts. vi. 500. 512. argument before the court, in which gov. winthrop says that there lie no appeals to england. 514. fined. 515. arrested for seditious petition. 515. again petitions against massachusetts; his dispute with mr. wiloughby. 518.
- Chilmark. iii. 45—49. its husbandry. 50—53. its buildings and shipping. 74. 88. its mills. 60. 61.
- Chilmark point. iii. 72. 94.
- Chilmark great pond. iii. 41.
- Chilton, mary, the first person who landed at plymouth. iii. 174. vii. 153.
- Chilton, richard. iii. 174.
- Chilton, susanna. iii. 174.
- Chilton, james. vii. 153.
- Chimnies forbidden to be of wood. vii. P. 23.
- Chipman, ward. i. 231.
- Chipman, john, esq. iv. 143.
- Chipman's hill. ix. 131. 132.
- Chippaquiddick island. iii. 19. 40. 59. 70. 93. its light house and buildings. 72. 73.
- Chippaquiddick neck. iii. 72.
- Chippaquonset. iii. 46. 56.
- Chippeway indians, their language. ii. 6. 10. 12.
- Chippeway river. ii. 12. 40.
- Chippeway indian language. See x. index. 155—158.
- Chippewyan indians, their residence, number and language. ii. 42. 43.
- Chise, its meaning. ix. 91.
- Chittenden, thomas. iv. 240.
- Choate, john, esq. iv. 137. 148.
- Choate, rev. ———, of kingston, new hampshire. ix. 367.
- Choctaws. See chactaws.
- Cholmley, capt. viii. 156.
- Chop, west and east. iii. 39.
- Choris, a russian painter. iv. 98.
- Christian disciple. i. 232.
- Christian monitor. i. 258.
- Christiantown. iii. 93.

- Christianity, its influence on indians. iii. 87. vi. 649. 660.
- Christmas, not allowed to be kept in massachusetts. viii. 86. celebration of, questioned. x. 182. 183.
- Chubbuck. iv. 294. vii. 123.
- Chudley, george, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Chuppateest island. iv. 289.
- Church, richard. iii. 184. 185. x. 57. 66. 68.
- Church, richard. vii. P. 4.
- Church, col. benjamin. iv. 63. his expedition against king philip. vii. 157. 158. x. 66.
- Church, dr. benjamin. i. 111.
- Church, ———. iv. 260.
- Church's history, quoted. iii. 175.
- Church, congregational, founded by rev. h. jacob. i. 166. one formed in plymouth, england, in 1630. vii. P. 41.
- Church officers in new england, how to act. ii. 54.
- Church of england, address of massachusetts colony to, from on board the arbella. v. 126.
- Church members only admitted to be freemen in massachusetts. v. 148. cannot be dismissed at their own request. x. 184. seven necessary to constitute. ii. 71.
- "Church government and church covenant dismissed," quoted. iv. 119.
- Church covenant, form of, at woburn. vii. 41.
- Church, can it have several pastors? vii. P. 64.
- Church at plymouth, its forms of public worship. P. 70. which are gradually given up. P. 71.
- Churches, twelve first in massachusetts, list of. i. (xxv.) in new england in 1700, list of. (xxvi.) foundation of, in new england. iii. 123. method of settling differences in those of new england. vi. 608. 609.
- Churches, bishop laud's form of consecrating. vii. P. 51. 52. popish form of, forbidden by parliament. P. 51. because it produced riots, etc. P. 76. 77. the forms were introduced by pope felix and gregory. P. 77.
- Churches and ministers in new hampshire. x. 54.
- Churchill, sarah. iii. 224.
- Churchill, stephen. iv. 87.
- Churchill, ———. iv. 294.
- Chyenne river. ii. 41.
- Cicero, quoted. i. (xvi.)
- Cilley, widow. x. 179.
- Circular letter of massachusetts historical society. i. 14. ii. 277.
- City, a great one proposed in new england. v. 229. 230.
- Civil actions early in massachusetts. v. 159.
- Civil government of first planters, outlines of. ii. 57. iv. 21.
- Clap, lieut. roger. vii. 54. one of the first settlers of dorchester, notice of. P. 40. his account of bull, the pirate. P. 91. viii. 44.
- Clap, samuel. iv. 245.
- Clapp, thomas. iv. 239.
- Clapp, edward. iv. 110.
- Clap, rev. thomas, president of yale college. iv. 245.
- Clap, rev. thomas, of taunton, afterwards judge. iv. 245.
- Clap, samuel. iv. 245.
- Clapp, major earl. x. 32.
- Clarendon, earl, saying of massachusetts. i. (xxvii.) addresses from rhode island, about charter rights. vii. 98. proposed grant to, from rhode island. 101. lord chancellor, letter quoted. viii. 76.
- Clark, thomas, sen. of ipswich. viii. 107.
- Clark, thomas, of boston. viii. 90. 91. x. 24. 25.
- Clark, thomas, of scituate. iv. 229.
- Clark, thomas, jun. of ipswich. viii. 107.
- Clark, thomas, jun. of boston. x. 25.
- Clark, thomas, 3d. viii. 107.
- Clark, nathaniel. viii. 106.
- Clark, nathaniel, secretary of plymouth colony. vii. 144. viii. 182.
- Clark, walter, governour of rhode island and providence plantations, letter from sir e. andros, about the surrender of rhode island charter. viii. 180—183.
- Clark, john. x. 25.
- Clark, john. x. 27.
- Clark, timothy. x. 26.
- Clark, rev. ward, of kingston, new hampshire. ix. 367.
- Clark, rev. ———. i. 217.

- Clark, rev. ephraim, of cape elizabeth. iv. 180.
- Clark, rev. ———, of lexington. iv. 197.
- Clark, rev. samuel, of vermont. i. 258. ii. 158.
- Clark's point. iii. 19.
- Clarke, ———. ix. 38.
- Clark, william, sworn a freeman of massachusetts. vii. P. 29.
- Clarke, john, forms a baptist church at newport. i. 210. vi. 339. 343. agent for rhode island. vii. 87. 89. 98. 99. viii. 56. his church at newport sends disputants in favour of baptists to the publick debate on that subject at boston. viii. 112. ix. 179. letter to about quakers, privileges, etc. vii. 85. commissioner. 90. 93.
- Clarke, thomas. x. 66. 69.
- Clarke, william. iv. 230. 259. 293. vii. 138.
- Clarke, susanna. iv. 303.
- Clarke, george. iv. 93.
- Clarke, dr. samuel. iii. 233.
- Clarke, william. x. 27.
- Clarke, deacon samuel. ii. 153.
- Clarke, ———, the companion of governor lewis. ii. 23.
- Clarke, ———. iii. 169. iv. 260.
- Clarke's island. iii. 162. 181. 183. 188. claimed by sir e. andros. 189. 196. named. v. 57.
- Clavigero, his valuable history of mexico referred to. ix. 225. 228.
- Clay for oil cisterns. iii. 24.
- Cleaveland, ———, preacher at bath, new hampshire. iii. 108.
- Cleaveland, ———. iii. 66.
- Cleaver, rev. ———. vii. P. 12.
- Cleaves, nathaniel. viii. 45.
- Clement, ———. iv. 132.
- Clements, robert. iv. 170.
- Clerk, ———. vii. P. 86.
- Clerke, william. vii. P. 4. See clarke.
- Cleves, ———, agent for owners of plough patent. v. 224. vi. 368. seeks aid from massachusetts; calls a court at casco. 368. appears at court in massachusetts. 369.
- Clergy. See ministers.
- Cliff at gay head. iii. 44.
- Clinical lectures at harvard college. i. 126.
- Clinton, sir h sails with an expedition for south carolina. iii. 242.
- Clinton, hon. de witt. x. 192.
- Clock, a very curious one. iii. 27.
- Clotworthy, sir john. v. 180.
- Clough, john. iv. 110.
- Coatuck point. iii. 20.
- Coatue point. iii. 23. 24. 33.
- Coatuit river. iii. 1. 3. 7.
- Coatuit pond. iii. 175.
- Cobb, elder henry. i. 175. iii. 193. iv. 222. 233. 239. 247. 277.
- Cobb, mrs. patience. iv. 247.
- Cobb, john. iv. 93. 247.
- Cobb, edward. iv. 247.
- Cobb, gershom. iv. 247. 277.
- Cobb, mrs. sarah. iv. 247.
- Cobb, elisha. iii. 193.
- Cobb, ebenezer. iii. 193. dies at kingston, massachusetts, aged 107 years 6 months and 6 days. 219.
- Cobb, capt. sylvanus, anecdote of. iii. 192. 193.
- Cobb, rev. oliver, minister of rochester. iv. 262. 263. x. 32. 33.
- Cobb, nathaniel. x. 37.
- Cobbet, rev. thomas, of lynn. ii. 231. his writings. v. 194. iii. 112. viii. 98.
- Cobbiseconte. vii. P. 74.
- Cobble hill. ii. 168.
- Cobler, simple, of agawam, extract from. vi. 624.
- Cochituate. iv. 77. now andover.
- Coddington, gov. william. iii. 235. assistant. v. 124. 128. vii. P. 6. 15. 21. 23. 60. 88. 91. 92. 93. ix. 179. goes to london. v. 140. 259. vi. 339. removed from the office of magistrate. 339. and joins with nicholas easton. 343. engagement as judge in rhode island. vii. 96. 97. magistrate of massachusetts. 129. returns to england. vii. P. 22. 25. first governor of rhode island. P. 69. arrives with his wife. P. 88. the father of rhode island. ix. 179. 180. x. 23. deposition of; makes peace with canonicus and miantonimo, in behalf of all the narragansets; settles at aquidneck, now rhode island. vii. 76. deputy governor of rhode island. 93.
- Codman, capt. john, of charlestown, poisoned by his servant. ii. 166.



- Codman, richard. ii. 178.  
 Coff, mary. iii. 32.  
 Coffin, tristrum. iv. 170. viii. 106.  
 Coffin, ebenezzer, impeached for trading with an enemy, claims habeas corpus. viii. 240. 242.  
 Coffin, rev. peter, of kingston, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Coffin, enoch, longevity of his family. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, love. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, hepzibah. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, elizabeth. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, abigail. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, john. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, enoch. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, deborah. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, benjamin. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, daniel. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, bulah. iii. 71.  
 Coffin, admiral sir isaac. x. 192.  
 Coffin, ———. iii. 66.  
 Coffin, ———. iv. 179.  
 Coggeshall, john a follower of easton. vi. 343. clerk of rhode island assembly. vii. 112. sworn a freeman. P. 72. viii. 182. 220. ix. 179. disfranchised. x. 23. made a magistrate of rhode island by the king's commissioners. vii. 93.  
 Cogswell, rev. jonathan, his account of sacco. iv. 184. ordained at sacco. iv. 183.  
 Cohakias indians. ii. 8.  
 Cohannet river. iii. 169.  
 Cohannet. iii. 169.  
 Cohasset. iv. 71. 223. 224.  
 Coinage, early, 1652, in massachusetts. ii. 274.  
 Coitmore, or coytmore, thomas, lost at sea. viii. 18.  
 Coke, sir edward, speaker of house of commons, a friend to the liberties of the people. v. 87. 123. 151. 153.  
 Colbert, g. ii. 16.  
 Colborn, deacon william. iii. 235. v. 186. vii. 136. P. 4. ordained. P. 5. 60. 69. his house burnt. P. 22. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. P. 29. x. 23.  
 Colbourn, rev. samuel-w. of abington. vii. 121.  
 Colbourn, robert. viii. 107.  
 Colby, rev. philip, of middleborough. vii. 167.  
 Colby, anthony. viii. 233.  
 Colby, rev. zaccheus, of chester, new hampshire. ix. 368.  
 Colchester brook. iii. 163. iv. 268.  
 Colchester swamp. iii. 189.  
 Colcot, edward, governour at dover, when there were but three houses. v. 219.  
 Colcot, edward, of hampton, killed by indians. vi. 633.  
 Cold, remarkable instance of, april 30, 1658. vi. 647. and june 5, 1673. 648.  
 Cold brook. iv. 223.  
 Cold harbour. v. 55.  
 Cold river. vii. 124.  
 Colden, his history of the six nations, referred to. ix. 230.  
 Cole, robert. vii. P. 60. 86. his fine. viii. 231. ix. 170.  
 Cole, james. iv. 304.  
 Cole, mary. iv. 304.  
 Cole, ephraim. iv. 87.  
 Cole, thomas, instructor. ii. 249.  
 Cole, ———. iv. 277.  
 Cole brook, south meadows. iv. 284.  
 Cole's hill, first burial place at plymouth. iii. 179. its fortification. 180.  
 Coling, william. viii. 233.  
 Colamore, peter. iv. 241.  
 Collecot, richard. viii. 231.  
 Collection in charlestown to defray expenses of rev. mr. torrey's law suit. ii. 200.  
 College. See harvard, yale, &c.  
 College of physicians, petition for. i. 133.  
 Collier, william. iv. 220. commissioner. vi. 467. vii. 138. x. 57. notice of; an agent with e. winslow to treat about the union of four colonies. 61. 64. 67. 68. 69.  
 Collier, rev. william, minister of the baptist church in charlestown. ii. 171. 178. 180.  
 Collins, ———, goes to rhode island. vi. 340. marries a daughter of mrs. hutchinson. 341. goes to boston, where he is imprisoned and fined for reproaching the churches. 342. 343. killed by indians. 345.  
 Collins, francis. viii. 106.  
 Colman, joseph. iv. 240.  
 Colman, rev. dr. benjamin. i. (xxx.) 106. 232. ii. 147. his letter to gov. belcher. 186. x. 39.

- Colman, john. iii. 32.  
 Colman, priscilla. ii. 32.  
 Colman's hill. iv. 223.  
 Colonies, episcopacy in. ii. 190.  
 Colonies of massachusetts, connecticut and new haven form a union to oppose the dutch, swedes, french and indians. vii. 44.  
 Colonies, united, termed a usurpation by the king's commissioners. vii. 92.  
 Colony from kent, england, settle scituate. iv. 239.  
 Colony court. iii. 186.  
 Colony records of massachusetts, cited. vii. 125.  
 Colorado river. ii. 25.  
 Colson, ———. iv. 249. vii. 123.  
 Columbia river. ii. 23. 43.  
 Columbus discovers north america. v. 8.  
 Colve, monsieur, from the west indies, surprises the fort at new york. vi. 611. under a dutch commission surprises new york. 667. 669.  
 Combe, francis. iv. 93.  
 Comee, joseph. viii. 45.  
 Comet appears a short time before the arrival of the first settlers of new england. ii. 64.  
 Comingoe, rev. bruin-romeas, ordained over the dutch calvinistick congregation at lunenburg, nova scotia, the first dissenting ordination in that place. viii. 281.  
 Committee meet to fix upon a place for a fortified town in massachusetts. vii. P. 7. 8.  
 Committee of massachusetts legislature to mashpee indians, their report. iii. 9. 10. 12.  
 Commission from charles ii. to cartwright and others. vi. 665.  
 Commissioners of society for propagating the gospel. iii. 8. 9. their report. 12.  
 Commissioners from massachusetts to york, maine, copy of their commission. vi. 545. an account of their doings returned and ordered to be recorded. 596. meet with difficulties in executing their commission. 597.  
 Commissioners appointed by cambridge to inhabitants of shawshin. iv. 76.  
 Commissioners of united colonies publish an account of proceedings against the narragansets and others. vi. 454. meet at boston. 466. form articles of confederation. 467. their declaration about difficulties with the narragansets. 454.  
 Commissioners from charles ii. to massachusetts, their instructions. vi. 576. after reducing the dutch at new york, return to boston. 581. resolve to sit as a court of appeals without a jury. vi. 583. summon the governour and council of massachusetts to appear before them. 583. summon by the sound of a trumpet. 583. refuse to treat any more with massachusetts; leave boston and three of them go to pascatqua; appoint justices of peace in province of maine. 584. letter from to capt. dennison. vii. 81. letter to john clarke. 85. their decision about lands in providence plantation. vii. 92. 99. 105. appoint justices of the peace in rhode island. 93. make court of assistants justices of the peace in rhode island. 92. 93. their proposition to general assembly of rhode island declaring the king's pleasure touching the oath of allegiance, admission of free-men, liberty in religious matters, laws and defence of the colony. 94. sent to inquire about the complaints of rhode island people. 99. regulate the government of rhode island. 100. See nichols, col.  
 Committee of lords and commons on the subject of gorton's complaints, send settlers to connecticut. vi. 507. 509.  
 Common prayer. i. 154. first publicly read in boston town house by rev. dr. radcliff. ii. 106. liberty of using it required by the king. viii. 48. 54. not allowed in massachusetts. 71.  
 Commons of massachusetts to propound assistants, and to inform against them. vii. P. 28.  
 Compton, lord. vii. P. 12. 13.  
 Conahasset neck. iv. 220. 221. 223.  
 Conahasset marsh. iv. 246. vii. 116.

Conanacus. See canonicus.  
 Conant, roger. v. 102. his character; appointed agent of the plantation at cape ann. 106. removes to naumkeag. 107. 109. 111. 116. vii. P. 4. sworn freeman of massachusetts. vii. P. 29. 60.  
 Conant, william. vii. 165.  
 Conant, sylvanus vii. 169.  
 Conant, william. vii. 170.  
 Conant, daniel. viii. 45.  
 Conant, jacob. ii. 178.  
 Conant, rev. ezra, of winchester, new hampshire. ix. 367.  
 Conant, gaius. vii. 170.  
 Conant's island granted to governour winthrop, and its name changed to governour's garden. vii. P. 58.  
 Concord, massachusetts. i. (ix.) british troops destroy stores at. ii. 225. iv. 216. oppose the british. ii. 225. its church, the 12th in massachusetts, gathered. iii. 154. number of its inhabitants; first inland town. 155. difficulties in planting. 156. 159. or musketaquid, settled. v. 158. ordination at. 274. fire at. vi. 419. vii. 126. provincial congress at. vii. 160.  
 Concord and lexington, list of provincials killed and wounded in those battles. viii. 45.  
 Concord river. iv. 52. 76.  
 Confederation of united colonies of new england, reasons of. vi. 465. 466. articles of. 467.  
 Confession of faith, agreed on at the synod at boston, ordered to be published. v. 624.  
 Confessors of witchcraft, their recantations. iii. 221.  
 Conformitants, or formalists. ii. 74.  
 Congregational church government. v. 183.  
 Congress, first continental, its committees; approves the suffolk resolves; its resolutions respecting the non-importation of british goods; transacts business slowly. ii. 222.  
 Conies early carried to virginia. viii. 210.  
 Conihasset. See conahasset.  
 Connecticut churches disturbed

by the episcopal controversy. ii. 129. 133. iv. 297. colony, heads of inquiry about. ii. 216. clergy of, write to the ministers of boston, on the gloomy aspect of publick affairs. 255. its signification. iii. 99. settlement at by people from cambridge. 150. 151. parts of near the sea, discovered by governour winthrop's barque, "the blessing." 171. granted to the dutch west india company. v. 172. indians at. v. 31. number of people who arrive at. 263. known to the dutch as fresh river; its first settlement; planted by massachusetts people. vi. 305. removal to. 306. sufferings at; managed by people commissioned by massachusetts. 308. but afterwards form a government for themselves. 309. purchase of mr. fenwick. 310. obtains a charter through their governour and agent, mr. j. winthrop. 310. 311. its court of election; divided into four counties. 311. towns in them. 311. 312. county courts. 312. others than church members may be magistrates; ecclesiastical affairs. 313. disturbed by the dutch. 432. quieted by commissioners. 435. plan of, sent to england. vii. 100. 105. 127. spelt conaatacut. P. 25. receives letters from lords and commons about gorton's complaints. vi. 507. 509. disputes about baptism, &c. vi. 562. or fresh river, made known to the plymouth people by the dutch. vii. P. 93. visited by them. P. 94. a trading house set up there. P. 94. 95. massachusetts and plymouth people form a company to trade there. P. 94. which project is given up. P. 94. its charter from charles ii. uniting new haven with it. viii. 124. 125. sends troops under capt. mason against the pequots. 131. again. 133. great scarcity of corn in. 153. a quo warranto sent against by sir e. andros. 237. president stiles' history of, in manuscript, referred to. 268. list of donations of towns and individuals in, made to boston during the port bill. ix. 159. 161. 165.



- colony of, settled by mr. hains, w. hopkins, mr. hooker, mr. ludlowe and others. ix. 175. defeats the pequots. x. 59. prepares to make war upon the narragansets and dutch. 60.
- Connecticut river, discovered by the dutch, and called fresh river. v. 18. plymouth trading house at. 172. vii. 124.
- Conner, benjamin. x. 177.
- Conney, john. viii. 105.
- Conohasset. See conahasset.
- Conscience, questions of. x. 182. 183. provisions for liberty of, in rhode island. vii. 78. 79.
- Consociation of churches, questions about. i. 198.
- Conspiracy of indians at martha's vineyard. iii. 81.
- Consumption; among indians. ii. 68. more frequent after a cold winter. iv. 75. formerly uncommon in new england. v. 21.
- Contempt of authority punished. vii. P. 27.
- Contoocook river. vii. 66. x. 74.
- Contoocook, now boscawen. x. 74.
- Contract, the solemn, signed in cape harbour by plymouth colony. i. (xxi.)
- Contributions to harvard college. vi. 610.
- Controversy respecting the synod at cambridge. i. 201.
- Convention held at cambridge to form constitution of massachusetts. vii. 161.
- Converse, edward. ii. 166. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman. P. 29. sets up a ferry between boston and charlestown. P. 30. 69. viii. 232.
- Cony island. iv. 239.
- Cook, capt. james. ii. 43.
- Cooke, francis. iii. 164. 184. vii. 148. his tools stolen by indians. ix. 47.
- Cooke, capt. george. ii. 96. vii. 55. sent by massachusetts, captures gorton and others. ix. 199.
- Cooke, john. iv. 100.
- Cooke, caleb. iv. 63.
- Cooke, elisha, sen. iv. 167. x. 25.
- Cooke, elisha, jun. iv. 167. x. 27. 28.
- Cooke, rev. william, of east sudbury. iv. 60. 61.
- Cooke, francis. iii. 208.
- Cooke, jacob. iii. 209.
- Cooke, jacob, jun. iii. 208.
- Cooke, robert. iii. 209.
- Cooke, william. iii. 209.
- Cooke, elisha, of boscawen. x. 76.
- Cooke, william. iv. 60.
- Cooke, rev. samuel, of west cambridge. ii. 149.
- Cooke, samuel. viii. 45.
- Cooke, sylvanus. iv. 63.
- Coolidge, joseph. viii. 45.
- Cooley, daniel. viii. 238.
- Coombe, ———. iv. 260.
- Coombs, margaret. x. 179.
- Cooper, ———. v. 197.
- Cooper, john, his donation to barnstable church. i. 175. iv. 239. 243.
- Cooper, rev. william, of boston. i. 232.
- Cooper, william. x. 23.
- Cooper, rev. dr. samuel, of boston. iv. 261. viii. 313.
- Cooper, rev. joab-g. of scituate. iv. 238.
- Cooper, ———. i. 138.
- Cooper's island. iv. 224.
- Coopers, very early incorporated in massachusetts. viii. 13.
- Coos, its signification, pronunciation, and locality. iii. 103.
- Coos county. iii. 97.
- Coose river. ii. 16. 19.
- Cop, elder david, of boston. viii. 242.
- Cope, ———. viii. 156.
- Copeland, ———. vii. 155.
- Copeland, george. vii. 169.
- Copeland, patrick. viii. 31.
- Copeley's paintings. iii. 169.
- Copin. See coppin.
- Copperas, facilities for making at newbury, vermont. ix. 134.
- Copp, mrs. x. 180.
- Coppin, robert, pilot of the first settlers at plymouth. ix. 36.
- Copt hill court. vii. 188.
- Coquillee. ii. 29.
- Coran-canas indians, their residence and numbers. ii. 25.
- Corbatant. See corbitant.
- Corbean river. ii. 40. 41.
- Corbet, miles. vi. 349. ix. 185.
- Corbitant, indian sachem. v. 68. inimical to plymouth. ix. 54.

- Corlet, ———. iii. 173. iv. 90. 91.  
an early schoolmaster in massachu-  
setts. vii. 131. 132.
- Corlis, ———. iv. 132.
- Corn, high price of, in massachusetts  
colony. v. 139. 140. scarce in  
massachusetts, having been destroy-  
ed by a hurricane. v. 162. price  
of, regulated. v. 246. a tender in  
payment of debts. v. 246. vii.  
P. 35. unless money or beaver is  
expressed. vii. P. 35. price of.  
vii. P. 1. 10. 20. 29. 59. 86.  
viii. 243. purchase of without  
leave prohibited. vii. P. 30.  
how affected by wet and cold  
summers. vii. P. 65. indian, very  
small, &c. in 1632. vii. P. 65. very  
scarce, its high price in connecti-  
cut. viii. 153. method of plant-  
ing. iii. 158.
- Cornbury, lord, persecuted by pres-  
byterians. i. 145. ii. 263.
- Cornhill harbour or creek. v. 55.
- Cornhill, ———, some of his family  
killed by indians. vi. 345.
- Cornhill, or forthill, boston, its fortifi-  
cation begun, on which charlestown  
people, &c. work. vii. P. 61.
- Cornish's tavern. iii. 201.
- Cornwallis, lord. iii. 236. 245. iv.  
167.
- Coroas indians. ii. 15.
- Corpus santos. ii. 99.
- Correction, house of, ordered to be  
built at boston. vii. P. 68.
- Correspondence of rev. dr. j. eliot. i.  
221.
- Corrivor, meaning of. vi. 625.
- Corson, abigail. x. 179.
- Corveset, zaccheus. vii. 76.
- Corwin, capt. viii. 90.
- Corydon. x. 179.
- Cosskaty. iii. 24. 26.
- Cottages forbidden to be erected at a  
distance from protection. iii. 163.
- Cotterell, francis. vi. 600.
- Cotting, amos. iii. 269.
- Cottington, lord. v. 151. 153.
- Cottle, ———. iii. 66.
- Cotton, rev. john, of boston, his resi-  
dence. i. (xxx.) 194. jealous of  
the authority of government. 195.  
ii. 86. 108. arrives. iii. 134. ap-  
pointed teacher in boston church.  
135. 285. iv. 7. 104. thursday  
lecture. 114. 143. 156. 157.  
advice to r. saltonstall. 157. v.  
65. of boston, england. 134. 135.  
168. arrives in new england. 169.  
his fast sermon. 174. 175.  
"way of the churches in new eng-  
land," influence in ecclesiasti-  
cal affairs. 182. ordained teach-  
er of church in boston. 188.  
success. 190. opinion of roger  
williams. 203. preaches at salem,  
and persuades females not to  
wear veils. 205. 215. 280. quoted.  
281. religious opinions. 289.  
discourse about sanctification.  
291. difficulties on account of  
religious opinions. 298. an-  
swers to questions submitted to  
synod at cambridge. 299.  
treatise of the new covenant re-  
ferred to. 302. letter to r.  
saltonstall. vi. 341. argues that  
magistrates should be chosen for  
life. 386. "bloody tenet wash-  
ed," quoted. 402. in favour of  
sending men to england to treat  
with divines. 409. death and  
character. 553. entered the uni-  
versity at thirteen years of age. vii.  
5. 29. 41. P. 13. 15. obliged to  
hide from bishop laud's pursuivants;  
his letter. P. 80. x. 56. so-  
lution of questions of conscience.  
183. letter to francis hutchin-  
son on the power of the church to  
dismiss a member of good standing  
at his request. 184.
- Cotton, mrs. x. 182.
- Cotton, seaborn, afterwards a student  
at cambridge college, born during  
passage to new england. ii. 85.  
son of rev. john cotton. 86.
- Cotton, rev. john, minister of ply-  
mouth. iii. 187. his salary. 188.  
iv. 245.
- Cotton, rev. john, of yarmouth. iv.  
236.
- Cotton, rev. roland, of sandwich. iii.  
173. iv. 143. 161. 234.
- Cotton, josiah. iii. 173. iv. 86. 90.  
92. vii. 165. account of; his eng-  
lish and indian vocabulary referred  
to. ix. 241. x. 81.
- Cotton, rev. john, of newtown. ii.  
149.
- Cotton, deacon thomas. ii. 153.
- Cotton, rev. john, of halifax, massa-  
chusetts. iv. 93. account of.

282. member of massachusetts convention; his library. 283. his printed works. 282. 294.
- Cotton, josiah, jun. iv. 93.
- Cotton, rev. josiah, of sandown, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Cotton, rev. samuel, of litchfield, new hampshire. iv. 78. x. 56.
- Cotton, john, esq. iv. 92. 93.
- Cotton, rev. josiah, minister of wareham. iv. 293.
- Cotton's diary, quoted. iii. 194.
- Cough, an epidemick, prevails through new england. vi. 554.
- Coulson, ———. v. 122.
- Council and president of new england, their dedication of the "brief relation, &c." ix. 1. their doings misrepresented. 2. 3. 5. send out capt. challons, who is unfortunate. 3. their charter renewed. 11. 12. 13. but is opposed and brought under notice of parliament, as a monopoly. 14. 15. send out several plantations with patents. 19. and many ships. 20. and propose to build all their ships there. 20. send people to select a port for their principal town. 20. their proposed form of government for new england. 21. 22.
- Council of plymouth resigns its charter. v. 272.
- Council, standing, in massachusetts. vii. 53.
- Counsellor, a heavy fine imposed on him who refuses to take the office in plymouth colony. vii. P. 75.
- Counties, four in massachusetts colony. vii. 53. 54.
- County courts authorized to compel support of ministers vi. 551.
- Courage of females, instances of. i. (xxiv.)
- Court, johnson's mistake about. vii. P. 4.
- Court of commissioners in rhode island. vii. 79. letter from about indian complaints. 181. 182.
- Courts in mass. regulated. v. 234.
- Courts, two general, established and regulated. v. 235.
- Courts, how to be held. vii. P. 57.
- Courts in hillsborough county. vii. 66.
- "Covenant of grace opened," by rev. peter bulkley, notice of. ii. 260.
- Coventry, j. x. 69.
- Coverly, nathaniel, prints the first newspaper in amherst, new hampshire. ii. 252. and at plymouth, massachusetts. iii. 177.
- Cowasset. iv. 223.
- Cowasset river. iv. 265.
- Cowell, joseph. viii. 181.
- Cowes, fleet for massachusetts at. v. 129.
- Cowesuek. iv. 265.
- Cowesit brook. vii. 171.
- Cowhart, capt. lieut. viii. 156.
- Cowin, john. iv. 241.
- Cowin, ———. iv. 260.
- Cowper, dr. i. 108.
- Cowper, poet, quoted. iii. 179.
- Cows at £28 each, 150 cows at £25. iii. 159. ordered to be kept at plymouth. iii. 185. price of, falls from £22 to £6 and £8. vii. 35. in massachusetts in 1630. vii. P. 7. intended for massachusetts, chiefly die at sea. vii. P. 9.
- Cowyard, or place of anchorage in plymouth harbour. iii. 182.
- Cox, john. iii. 116.
- Cox, lieut. iv. 218.
- Cox, mores. x. 176.
- Coxit. iii. 53.
- Coytmore, capt. drowned. v. 525.
- Craddock, matthew. ii. 64. chosen governour of the massachusetts company in england. v. 109. a wealthy merchant; chosen first governour of massachusetts. 120. subscribes £100 for massachusetts colony. 122. 129. 146. 226. appears before privy council in behalf of massachusetts. vii. P. 89. his fishermen. vii. P. 32. governour, &c. viii. 73. 78. 104. letter to john endicott, at salem, about sending ships, men and cattle thither, and desiring some "good sturgeon" to be sent to him, &c. viii. 116. 120.
- Crafts, rev. thomas, of middleborough. vii. 166. 170.
- Crafts, jonathan-p. vii. 170.
- Craig, abigail. x. 178.
- Craige, william. x. 176.
- Craige, mrs. x. 176.
- Cranberries found at plymouth by pilgrims. iii. 176. abundant in carver. iv. 275.
- Cranch, richard. i. 214.



- Crane, robert, subscribes £50 for massachusetts colony. v. 122.  
 Crane, daniel. vii. 160. 171.  
 Crane brook pond. iii. 181. iv. 272.  
 Cranston, capt. iv. 93.  
 Crapo, nicholas. iv. 303.  
 Crawford, and others, drowned in charles river. v. 197.  
 Creek pond. iv. 122.  
 Creeks indians. ii. 3. 26. 28. origin of their name, their language. 18. their numbers, residence, character and annuity. 19.  
 Crees indians. ii. 11. 13.  
 Croade, thomas. iv. 282.  
 Croade, ———. iv. 282.  
 Crocker, william. iv. 240.  
 Crocker, john. iv. 240.  
 Crocker, dr. john. x. 178.  
 Crocker, rev. nathan-b. vii. 167.  
 Crocker, ———. iv. 277. 294.  
 Crimble, capt. viii. 156.  
 Crito, a signature of w. tudor. viii. 298.  
 Cromwell, oliver, prevented from sailing to new england by charles i. i. (xxviii.) verbal commission from to commanders at sea. vi. 550. ix. 185. his letter to rhode island colony. vii. 80.  
 Cromwell, richard, addressed by providence plantations. ix. 192. letter to from rhode island colony. vii. 88. for confirmation of charter. 90.  
 Cromwell, capt. first a common seaman of boston, receives a commission for privatering from the earl of warwick; captures rich spanish vessels; strikes a drunken sailor, which causes his death; is tried by a council of war at plymouth, and is acquitted, *cæsus ex utero materno*. vi. 527. 528. captures a curious sedan chair. 496.  
 Cromwell, ———, the first inhabitant of tyngsborough, conceals his property and escapes from the indians. iv. 196.  
 Cromwell, molly. x. 179.  
 Crooked pond. iii. 118. viii. 168.  
 Crop, plentiful in massachusetts in 1631. vii. P. 36.  
 Crosby, jaazaniah. iv. 181.  
 Crosby, ———. iii. 66.  
 Crosby's history of baptists, referred to. i. 168.  
 Croswell, rev. andrew. iv. 278.  
 Crow indians, their language, number, warriors and residence. ii. 35. 36.  
 Crow, william. iv. 93.  
 Crow, capt. viii. 156.  
 Crow wing river. ii. 41.  
 Crown point, expedition against. x. 3.  
 Croydon mountain. viii. 174.  
 Cuba discovered. v. 8.  
 Cudworth, capt. james. iv. 222. agent to england. 225. 239. x. 62.  
 Cudworth, israel. iv. 241.  
 Cufchankamang, or windsor, connecticut, settled. vi. 307.  
 Cullen. i. 138.  
 Cultivation of the oak. i. 187.  
 Cumber, dr. vice chancellor. vii. P. 79.  
 Cumberland river early explored. vii. 62. 63.  
 Cumeehes indians. ii. 29. See *te-taus*.  
 Cumings, rev. dr. of billerica. iv. 197.  
 Cummaquid, a sachem. ix. 53. 54. submits to the king of england. 68.  
 Cummings, john. x. 54.  
 Cummings, jotham. iii. 111.  
 Cummings, john. i. 116. viii. 172. purchases cummington. x. 41.  
 Cummings, rev. abraham. iv. 278.  
 Cummington, massachusetts, account of. x. 41. origin of its name; situation and extent; surface; factories and mills. 41. geology and mineralogy; soap-stone quarry; climate; educated men, library and schools. 42. ecclesiastical history; benevolent societies. 43. history. 44. settlement, incorporation, inhabitants. 44. 45.  
 Cunningham, nathaniel. x. 28.  
 Cunningham, mrs. x. 180.  
 Curson, samuel. viii. 164.  
 Cursing punished. vii. P. 66.  
 Curtis, william. iv. 241.  
 Curtis, richard. iv. 241.  
 Curtis, ———. iv. 179. vii. 123.  
 Curwin, capt. jonathan. viii. 44.  
 Cushing, matthew, of hingham. iv. 221. 248.  
 Cushing, john, of scituate. iv. 241. 248.  
 Cushing, rev. jeremiah. iv. 133. 140. 233.  
 Cushing. rev. caleb, of salisbury. iv. 182.

- Cushing, hon. thomas. x. 27. 28.  
 Cushing, hon. john. vii. 164.  
 Cushing, thomas, jun. x. 28.  
 Cushing, rev. jonathan, of dover, new hampshire. iv. 78. 141.  
 Cushing, rev. james, of north parish in haverhill and plaistow, new hampshire, ordination, death and character. iv. 147.  
 Cushing, mrs. mary. iv. 93.  
 Cushing, rev. john, of boxford. iv. 182.  
 Cushing, hon. thomas. x. 29.  
 Cushing, rev. jacob, of waltham. ii. 152. iii. 271. 281. death and character. 282. 283.  
 Cushing, hon. william. iv. 93. chief justice. 153. 248.  
 Cushing, hon. joseph. x. 3.  
 Cushing, Matthew. iv. 90. 95.  
 Cushing, charles. iv. 90. 95.  
 Cushing, hon. john, of freeport, notice of. iv. 182.  
 Cushing, hon. nathan. iv. 248.  
 Cushing, gen. thomas-h. quarters at charlestown. ii. 174.  
 Cushing, ———, printer. ii. 252.  
 Cushing, ———. iv. 285. vii. 123.  
 Cushing's works, (mills.) vii. 172.  
 Cushenock, plymouth trading house. vii. P. 74.  
 Cushman, robert, agent for the pilgrims at leyden. v. 46. 50. 69. returns to england; reasons shewing the lawfulness of removing from england to america. ix. 64. 73.  
 Cushman, james. iv. 240.  
 Cushman, thomas. iii. 164.  
 Cushman, rev. isaac, minister of plympton. iv. 270.  
 Cushman, john. iii. 208.  
 Cushman, ebenezer. iii. 208.  
 Cushman, robert. iii. 208.  
 Cushman, thomas. iii. 216.  
 Cushman, elkanah. iii. 176.  
 Cushman, joshua. vii. 170.  
 Cushman, ———. iv. 284.  
 Cuthbertson, cuthbert. vii. 122.  
 Cutler, nathaniel. ii. 177.  
 Cutler, dr. john. i. 106. an eminent physician of boston. ii. 159.  
 Cutler, rev. timothy, president of yale college, becomes an episcopalian. ii. 129. 131. 137. iv. 162. 299.  
 Cutler, rev. dr. manasseh, of hamilton, his method of preserving skins. i. 19. a botanist. x. 64.  
 Cutler, nahum. iv. 60.  
 Cutshamakin, a sachem near boston. v. 251. vi. 405. received under the protection of massachusetts. 407.  
 Cutter, ammi-r. iii. 119.  
 Cutter, ebenezer. ii. 180.  
 Cutts, robert, of kittery, justice of peace. vi. 584.  
 Cuttyhunk island, its soil and produce. iii. 78. 80. store house, the first in north america, built at by gosnold. 78.  
 Cynanche maligna, dissertation on, alluded to. i. 107.  
 Cynikers, or seneca indians. v. 33.

## D.

- Dacre, francis. vi. 501.  
 Daggett, rev. herman, his letter quoted. x. 111. et. seq.  
 Daggett, ———. iii. 66.  
 Dale, sir thomas, brings out additional colonists, to virginia, encourages the adventurers. viii. 207. 208. his letter quoted. viii. 207. 210.  
 Dalhound, dr. lawrence, writes against inoculation. i. 106.  
 Dalkin, mrs. saved by a dog. vi. 427.  
 Dalton, rev. ———, of hampton. vi. 363. quarrels with rev. mr. batchelour. 413. character. vii. 17.  
 Dalton, hon. tristram. ii. 228.  
 Dalton's justice, referred to. viii. 88.  
 Daman, rev. george, of tisbury. iii. 74.  
 Damarin's cove. See damerill's cove.  
 Damerill's cove. v. 14. 72. vi. 532. ix. 78.  
 Damon, zachariah. iv. 229.  
 Damon, john. iv. 229.  
 Damon, rev. jude, of truro. iv. 60.  
 Damon, ———. iv. 242. vii. 123.  
 Dams, how built by beavers. iii. 179.  
 Dana, hon. samuel, of amherst, new hampshire, notice of by hon. t. bigelow, extract from. ii. 253.  
 Dana, rev. dr. joseph. viii. 158.  
 Dana, ———, of brookline. iv. 143.

- Dana, rev. s. of orford, new hampshire. iii. 108.
- Dana, hon. samuel, of charlestown. ii. 177. 178.
- Dancing and carding at christmas questioned. x. 182. 183.
- Dancing, mr. cotton "does not simply condemn." x. 183.
- Dane, deliverance, her recantation referred to. iii. 221.
- Dane, hon. nathan, of beverly. ii. 171. iii. 10.
- Danforth, thomas, deputy governour of massachusetts. iv. 77. extract from his manuscript volume. iv. 104. deputy governour of massachusetts several years in succession. vi. 612. extracts from his manuscript volume of papers in the massachusetts historical society's library, principally about the year 1665. viii. 46. 88. 90. 93. 112.
- Danforth, rev. samuel. vii. 29. his mistake corrected. vii. P. 64. viii. 111. 112.
- Danforth, jonathan. ii. 162.
- Danforth, nathaniel. x. 75.
- Danforth, abigail. x. 75.
- Danforth, thomas, attorney, the only citizen of charlestown who adhered to the british. ii. 175.
- Daniels, hannah. x. 179.
- Danson, ———. vii. 187.
- Darling, benjamin. iii. 111.
- Darling, elizabeth. x. 178.
- Dartmouth, lord. i. 151.
- Darwin. i. 138.
- Dasset, joseph. iv. 86.
- Dau, gerard. iii. 229.
- D'aulnley. iv. 158. claims as far south as pemaquid. v. 163. at war with la tour. vi. 478. complained of, to massachusetts, by la tour. 480. sends m. marie to conclude a peace at boston. 488. captures a new england vessel bound to la tour. 492. asks reparation for wrongs done by massachusetts people; receives as a present, a sedan chair, which had been sent by the viceroy of mexico to his sister. 496. captures la tour's fort, with its treasures. 497. confiscates a vessel belonging to boston. 521.
- Dauphin river. ii. 11.
- Davenport, richard, comes out with mr. endicott. v. 109. ensign. viii. 146. or dampport, capt. lieutenant. viii. 236. captain. iv. 50. killed by lightning, at the castle, boston harbour. vi. 642. vii. 56. 57.
- Davenport, rev. john, of new haven. i. 201. a great divine. ii. 260. arrives and goes to connecticut. v. 262. vi. 317. 409. vii. 1. viii. 119. preaches before synod at cambridge. v. 304. his book on the subject of baptism, &c. answered by richard mather. vi. 590. becomes minister at boston. vi. 602. dies. 603. his method of forming a church. vii. 129. 130.
- Davenport, addington. x. 27.
- Davenport, richard. vii. 159.
- Davenport, rev. addington, episcopal missionary to scituate. ii. 213. his donation to society for propagating the gospel. iv. 238.
- Davenport, rev. john, of stamford, connecticut. iv. 297. his letter on episcopacy in connecticut. 301.
- Davidson, mary. x. 178.
- Davidson, rev. william, of londonerry, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Davidson county, now kentucky. vii. 64.
- Davies, capt. of cape henry fort. viii. 209.
- Da vinci, leonardo, his mistake. iii. 229.
- Davis, capt. james, comes to new england. v. 36.
- Davis, capt. robert, comes to new england. v. 36.
- Davis, sergeant. viii. 147. captain of a troop of horse; goes against the nianticks, vi. 465. commissioner to the dutch at new york. 547.
- Davis, thomas. iv. 170. 171.
- Davis, ———, preserves haverhill meeting house. iv. 131.
- Davis, deacon ebenezer. ii. 153.
- Davis, jacob. x. 179.
- Davis, widow. x. 176.
- Davis, daniel. x. 177.
- Davis, capt. isaac. viii. 45.
- Davis, capt. john, of methuen. iv. 131.
- Davis, hon. john, his discourse before massachusetts historical society. i. (i.—xxx.) referred to. iv. 104. iii. 187. president of massachu-



- setts historical society; his letter to rev. dr. j. freeman, about mount's relation. ix. 26. his letter from alden bradford, esq. about duxbury, x. 57—71.
- Davis, ———. ii. 142.
- Davis, ———. iii. 66.
- Davis, ———. iv. 132.
- Davis, ———. iv. 260.
- Davison, secretary to queen elizabeth. v. 43.
- Davison, daniel. viii. 107.
- Davy. i. 138.
- Dawes, rev. ebenezzer, of scituate. iv. 233. 234. vii. 170.
- Day, the rebel, in massachusetts, retreats. iii. 247.
- Day, robert. viii. 107.
- D'bernier, ensign, his journey of military observation to worcester. iv. 205. to concord. 214.
- Deacons in massachusetts, how first ordained. vii. P. 5.
- Dean, stephen. iii. 187.
- Dean, rev. francis, of andover. viii. 14.
- Dean, mrs. her confessions. iii. 222.
- Dean, rev. seth, of ringe, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Deane, thomas, owner, with others, of the ship charles of oleron. iv. 102. viii. 71. appeals the case of this ship to the king's commissioners. 82. 83. summoned to make good his case before massachusetts general court. viii. 88. 89. 105.
- Deane, hon. silas. ii. 223.
- Deane, rev. samuel, of scituate. iv. 235. 237.
- Dearborn, capt. henry. ii. 231.
- Deaths in massachusetts between april and december of the first year. vii. P. 6.
- Declaration of difficulties between the english and narragansets, published by the commissioners of united colonies. vi. 454.
- Declaration of massachusetts general court about their proceedings against quakers. vi. 572.
- Dedham, its church gathered. v. 279. in the county of suffolk. vii. 9.
- Dedication of churches, producing riots, etc. is forbidden; which makes bishop laud angry. vii. P. 77. 78.
- Deeds, registry of, early established. vi. 380.
- Deep bottom. iii. 17.
- Deerfield, massachusetts, several of its inhabitants captured by indians. vi. 637. or pocomtuck. viii. 153.
- Deerfield, new hampshire. iv. 171.
- Deer hill. x. 42.
- De krusenstern, capt. iv. 98.
- De lancey, governour of new york. i. 151.
- Deland, benjamin. viii. 45.
- Delano, philip. vii. 138. x. 57. 62. 65. 68. 69.
- Delano, or de la noye. x. 65.
- Delano, samuel. x. 64. 65.
- Delano, thomas. x. 65.
- Delano, john. x. 65.
- Delaware indians, their residence, confederacy, agriculture, church, language, number and annuity. ii. 6. 7. quarrel between the dutch & new haven about trading with. vi. 545.
- Delaware, or lenni lenape, language. ix. 239. x. 83. a comparative vocabulary of its various dialects. 135—145.
- Delaware, swedish fort at, burnt. vi. 431. ix. 112. new haven trading house at, burnt by the dutch and swedes. vi. 434. 439.
- Delaware, lord, comes out governour of virginia, but returns to england. viii. 206.
- Delaware bay, account of. vi. 675.
- Delegates of connecticut, their letter to governour trumbull. ii. 221.
- Demeri, capt. viii. 157.
- Dencke, rev. ———, quoted. x. 113. et seq.
- Denham, judge, takes order against wakes and revels. vii. P. 77. 78.
- Denison, abner. iv. 179.
- Denison, cornelius. iv. 179.
- Denson, david. iv. 179.
- Denison, john. iii. 173. iv. 90. 93.
- Denison, mrs. iii. 173.
- Denman. i. 138.
- Dennison, william, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 63.
- Dennison, capt. daniel. viii. 229. his letter from commissioners' court of rhode island. vii. 81. to them. 82. major. 55. major general. ii. 282. v. (iv.) agent to d'aulney. vi. 494. commissioner to maine. 542. agent for settling disputes

- between the dutch and new haven. 545. protests against the answer of massachusetts to charles ii. viii. 109.
- Dennison, john. viii. 107.
- Dennison, joseph, jun. his donation to boston during its port bill. ix. 161.
- Denny, thomas. vii. P. 77.
- Dent's pathway to heaven. vii. P. 42.
- Deolph, major ezra. x. 177.
- Deposition of roger williams. vii. 75. of william coddington. vii. 76.
- Deputies in massachusetts, question the negative voice of the assistants. v. 174. 175. claim judicial authority, which claim is opposed. vi. 401.
- Deputies proposed to be allowed in new england, before its colonies came out. ix. 22.
- Deputy governour, how chosen. vii. P. 3.
- Derby, john. iv. 93.
- Derby, elias-h. i. 117. ii. 178. 179.
- Dermer, capt. thomas, attacked by indians. iii. 80. mortally wounded by indians. v. 40. redeems two frenchmen from the indians. 54. employed by sir f. gorges. 84. sent with capt. j. smith to new england, which voyage is unfortunate. ix. 7. at newfoundland, and returns to england. 7. 8. carries tisquantum to england, and thence to new england, whence he coasts carefully to virginia. 10. and thence back to hudson's river, making discoveries. 11. after making discoveries on the coast for two years, is wounded by the indians, and retiring to virginia, dies. 12. 13.
- De roche river. ii. 9. 10.
- De rosier, isaac, dutch secretary at hudson's river, comes to plymouth with congratulations. v. 99.
- Descent of real estate altered in massachusetts. vii. 154.
- Des moyens. ii. 9.
- Des moyens' river. ii. 39. 41.
- Despard, mark. iv. 225.
- D'estaing, count, arrives off savannah, storms it, and sails with his troops for the west indies. iii. 241. 242.
- Detection of witchcraft. x. 6.
- Detroit taken. ii. 10.
- Devens, david. ii. 176. 177. 180.
- Devens, richard. ii. 176. character of. 177. instructor. 180.
- Devil, called hobbomack by indians. vi. 657.
- Devil's den, at gay head. iii. 43.
- Devine, ———. ii. 241.
- Devon, council of, for ordering the affairs of new england. v. 84.
- Devotion, edward. ii. 144. his donation to schools in brookline. 151. and of church plate. 153.
- Devotion, john. ii. 144.
- Devotion, rev. ebenezzer, of suffield, connecticut. ii. 156.
- De wache, thomas. v. 216.
- Dewesberry, hester. x. 65.
- Dexter, ———, his fine. viii. 231.
- Dexter, gregory. ix. 197.
- Dexter, hon. samuel. ii. 46. establishes a professorship at harvard college. ii. 272.
- Dexter, hon. samuel. iv. 189.
- Dexter, col. noah. iv. 303.
- Dexter, dr. aaron. i. 116. ii. 174. vii. 181.
- Dexter, rev. elijah, of plympton. iv. 261. 270.
- Dexter, dr. theodore. ii. 178. 180.
- Dexter, ———. iv. 260.
- Dice and cards forbidden. vii. P. 23.
- Dickason, thomas. ii. 170.
- Dickinson, rev. timothy, of holliston. iii. 112.
- Dickinson, rev. pliny, of walpole, new hampshire. vii. 125.
- Dicks, capt. anthony, captured by bull and others, pirates about pemaquid. vii. P. 91.
- Dier, john. viii. 152.
- Digby, sir keuelm, a benefactor of harvard college. ii. 108.
- Digges, sir dudley, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Dillingham, john. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman. P. 29.
- Dillingham, ———. iv. 179.
- Dillon, count. iii. 242.
- Dimmack, thomas. i. 175. iv. 239.
- Dinsmore, silas, agent to chactaw indians. ii. 17. 22.
- Disarming of persons in several towns of massachusetts, on account of religious disputes. vii. 6.
- Discourses before massachusetts medical society, a list of. i. 115.
- Disney, lieut. viii. 156.

- Dispensary, boston. i. 127.  
 Disputation concerning church members and their children, in answer to 21 questions. vi. 563—570.  
 Dissenting interest in the middle states, account of. i. 156.  
 Dissentions among first settlers of massachusetts. iv. 4—9.  
 Dissuasive from the errors of the times, quoted. iv. 117.  
 District medical societies, list of. i. 114.  
 Dix, jonas. iii. 269.  
 Dix, john. iii. 269.  
 Doane, john, assistant of plymouth. vii. P. 83. being a deacon, is excused from being assistant. P. 92.  
 Dobson, capt. sails from boston eastward, to trade, is captured by d'aulney, and his vessel confiscated. vi. 521.  
 Dobson, ———. viii. 153. 156.  
 Doctrines, early disputes about in massachusetts. iv. 4—18.  
 Dod, rev. ———. vii. P. 12.  
 Dodge, david. ii. 176.  
 Dodge, rev. ezeziel, of abington. vii. 120.  
 Dodge, rev. joshua, of haverhill, his ordination. iv. 147.  
 Dodge, william. viii. 45.  
 Dogrib indians. ii. 38.  
 Dolame indians. ii. 38.  
 Dominica, its donation to boston during its port bill. ix. 164.  
 Donations to massachusetts historical society. ii. 285. iii. 292. iv. 304. vii. 297. viii. 329. 332. ix. 369. x. 188.  
 Donations, list of those made by different towns, states and individuals to boston, during its port bill. ix. 158, and post.  
 Dongan, thomas, lieut. governour of new york, confirms patent of nan-tucket. iii. 34.  
 Dorby, rev. jonathan, minister at scituate, notice of. iv. 235. 237.  
 Dorchester, england, settles cape ann. v. 106. which settlement is soon broken up. 107.  
 Dorchester, massachusetts. i. (ix.) church at, gathered; described by johnson. ii. 90. settled. v. 134. 135. 158. 186. 273. many of its church go to connecticut. 273. 307. difficulties in its church. 277. 278. taxed £7 out of £50 in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. its principal founders and first church members. P. 14. its church formed in plymouth, england. P. 14. fire at. P. 17. its tax. P. 31. 57. viii. 230. and roxbury church united. P. 64. people interfere with sir r. saltonstall's rights in connecticut. viii. 42. people from weymouth, england, arrive and settle at. vii. P. 96. first called matapan. v. 134. 135.  
 Dorpat, university of. iv. 98.  
 Dorset, earl of. v. 151. 153.  
 Doten, edward. iv. 93. ix. 38.  
 Dotey, ———. iv. 260.  
 Dotey, joseph. iv. 259.  
 Dotte. See doten.  
 Double brook, or shingle brook. iii. 178.  
 Doughty, john, proctor of oxford university, expelled. vii. P. 53.  
 Douglass, dr. william. i. 106. 107. iv. 80. quoted. 230. 295.  
 Dove, thomas, bishop of peterborough, silences five nonconformists in one day, and fifteen in one day. vii. P. 51. 52.  
 Dover, new hampshire. iv. 72. first visited. v. 214. divisions at, caused by messrs. knollis and larkham. vi. 362. declared to belong to massachusetts. 372. petition to become a part of massachusetts, granted; description of. vii. 33. longevity in. x. 180.  
 Dover cliff. iii. 80.  
 Dow, phebe. x. 178.  
 Downham, deacon. iv. 270.  
 Downing, emanuel, brother-in-law to governour winthrop. iv. 198. vi. 431. defeats the accusation of sir f. gorges and capt. mason, against massachusetts. vii. P. 85.  
 Downing, sir george. vii. 29.  
 Downs, samuel. x. 179.  
 Dowse, edward. ii. 178.  
 Dowse, joseph. ii. 178.  
 Drake, sir francis, his voyage. v. 27.  
 Drake, john, a patentee of new england. v. 217.  
 Drakes, ordnance, origin of the word. vii. P. 37.  
 Drew, capt. i. 79.  
 Drew, ———. iv. 280.



- Drew, john, of wales, arrives at plymouth. iv. 280.
- Drew, thomas. x. 180.
- Drinker, ———. viii. 112.
- Drinking healths disused in massachusetts. vii. P. 5.
- Drinking, persons fined for. vii. P. 34.
- Drinkwater iron works. iv. 236.
- Druce, dr. john, of wenham. ii. 157.
- Drummond, ———, arrives at new kent. i. 79. 80.
- Drunkenness punished. vii. P. 34. 63. 68. 93.
- Dry dock at charlestown, the first in the country. ii. 166.
- Duck river. ii. 15.
- Duck manufactory, early at haverhill. iv. 154.
- Duck hill. x. 62.
- Dudley, capt. roger. vii. P. 12.
- Dudley, governour thomas. i. (xxix.) deputy governour of massachusetts. ii. 87. iii. 124. 128. 132. iv. 2. 110. v. 109. 124. 128. 133. erects a house at newton. 136. 140. 148. 149. 236. 237. 259. vi. 499. 542. vii. 12. 16. 190. his character; a lawyer, brought up by judge nichols; a captain in netherlands; steward to the earl of lincoln; principal founder of newtown, now cambridge. vii. P. 12. 13. 15. 21. 27. 28. 30. chosen deputy governour by the general court. P. 28. his letter to the countess of lincoln, about the colony, and the proper persons to come to it. P. 24. appointed to prophecy in boston. P. 25. 31. 32. 34. 35. 38. 58. erects his house at newtown. P. 36. 60. 61. 63. 65. 66. 68. 69. 72. 85. 86. 91. 92. 93. reconciled to governour winthrop. P. 66. his narrow escape from having his house at newtown burnt, and his family blown up by gun powder. P. 71. viii. 6. 11. 14. 17. 20. four times governour of massachusetts; first major general of massachusetts. iii. 128. vi. 373. vii. 53. governour. 139. iv. 157. his views of toleration. 172. 201. v. 168. 237. vi. 374. 519. his death, character and epitaph. 552. governour. vii. 20. prince's advertisement, and P. 1. 3. 5. 6. 8. 20. one of the five undertakers. P. 2. removes to boston. P. 6. viii. 1. 19. 99. 101. agent to d'aulney. vi. 494. commissioner. 466. magistrate of massachusetts. vii. 129. assistant. v. 24.
- Dudley, governour joseph. i. 161. ii. 100. 106. 146. his letter from sir ed. andros. 260. his letter to dr. cotton mather respecting an uncommon tooth. 263. address to. iv. 64. address of fellows of harvard college to. 64. sent to england to answer complaints made by heirs of mason and gorges. vi. 614. viii. 197. and sixteen others appointed by james ii. to govern massachusetts, new hampshire, maine and narraganset. 180. and the other gentlemen, named in the king's commission as president and council, their letter from massachusetts general court about the breach of charter regarding taxation and representation, and administration of justice, &c. 179. 181. 182.
- Dudley, paul, agent of massachusetts to treat with the five nations; his memorandum of their numbers, etc. viii. 243. 245.
- Dudley, william. iv. 136.
- Dudley pond. iv. 63.
- Duggin, capt. ii. 239.
- Duke of york. iii. 34.
- Dukesberry, or duxbury. iv. 2.
- Duke's county, description of. iii. 38. history of. 79. marriages, births and deaths at. 64. 65. its census at various periods. 88. 89. its indians. 94. named. 85.
- Dummer, richard. iii. 144. v. 259. vii. P. 61. sworn a freeman. P. 72. viii. 44. 233.
- Dummer, rev. shubael, ordained at york. vi. 608.
- Dummer, jeremy, a thorough scholar. i. 30.
- Dummer, lieut. governour william. iii. 163. iv. 136.
- Dunbar, ———. vii. 123.
- Dunbar, simeon. vii. 160. 169.
- Dunbar, asa. vii. 169.
- Dunbar, col. viii. 154. 155.
- Dunbar, capt. lieut. viii. 156.
- Duncan, nathaniel, his learning; auditor general. iv. 24.

- Duncan, samuel-w. iv. 169.  
 Duncan, james-h. iv. 169.  
 Dunham, ———. iv. 277.  
 Dunham, ———. iii. 66.  
 Dunham, rev. jonathan, minister at edgartown. iii. 71.  
 Dunmore, lord, his proclamation referred to; his expedition against indians. ii. 223.  
 Dunstable, new hampshire, first english settlement in hillsborough county. vii. 66. its churches and ministers. x. 54.  
 Dunster, rev. henry, president of harvard college. ii. 162. iv. 76. 234. v. 247. suspected to incline to antipædobaptism, resigns. vi. 544. dies at scituate, and is buried at cambridge. 556. vii. 25. 31. 41. his letter to governour winthrop about his salary, the college house and the rents of charlestown ferry. x. 187.  
 Dunton, rev. john, his letter to his son. ii. 97. 98.  
 Dunton, john, sketch of; extracts from his life and errors; his letter to his father; causes of his coming to new england. ii. 97. arrives at boston. 99. his description of the boston clergy, and of merchants, and others. 100. 106. describes the principal men of massachusetts. 115. 121. visits and describes indians. 108. 115. his account of ipswich. 121. his farewell to boston. 124. his journal mentioned. v. (iv.)  
 Du ponceau, peter-s. esq. procures a transcript of mourt's relation. ix. 26. acknowledgment of historical society to, for this service. 74. his notes and observations on eliot's indian grammar. ix. 313. and post. his report on indian languages, quoted. 224. 227. 232. x. 99. & post. 150. 151. his notes on eliot's indian grammar, referred to. 104. & post. x. 192.  
 Du prat, or dupratz, ———. ii. 2. 15. 17. 28.  
 Dupy, father. viii. 249.  
 Duquesne, fort, or fort pitt. ii. 223.  
 Durand, elder. vi. 522.  
 Durant, john. iv. 241.  
 Duren, rev. ———, of virginia. viii. 31.  
 Duston, mrs. martha, of haverhill, captured by indians. iv. 128. her sufferings during captivity; her infant murdered; kills ten indians and thereby escapes; rewarded by general court. iv. 129. 198.  
 Duston, thomas. iv. 129.  
 Dutch colony at new york. i. 140. of hudson's river, teach the indians to make wampampeag. v. 100. governour writes letters to massachusetts. vi. 432. sends excuses and makes promises to massachusetts. 547. 548. ships with provision, consternation at their appearance. iii. 147. supply indians with guns; rescued by english. iv. 29. 31. claim connecticut. v. 172. relinquish to massachusetts their right to connecticut. 179. lay claim to all land between cape henlopen and cape cod. v. 322. 323. their difficulties with connecticut. vi. 432. settled by commissioners. 435. seize a ship at new haven. 436. at war with indians, and are relieved by the english. 441. have further difficulties at new haven. 521. 545. intercept the trading of new haven men with the delaware indians. 545. their difficulties with new haven settled. 541. peaceably resign themselves to charles ii. 257. at war with the english. 586. their quarrel with the english settled. 612. hold a friendly correspondence with plymouth colony. 667. at long island. vii. 23. inform plymouth people of fresh or connecticut river. vii. P. 93. oppose the plymouth people ascending connecticut river to build a trading house, though the former had advised the latter so to do. P. 95. send troops from manhatoes to dislodge the plymouth people from their trading house at, now, windsor, on connecticut river. P. 95. settled at hudson's river within the virginia patent; their fort. ix. 113. at war with the spaniards. vii. P. 81.  
 Dutch churches. i. 150.  
 Dutch sheep brought to massachusetts. vii. P. 92.  
 Dutch ship arrives with corn from virginia. vii. P. 59.

- Dutton, rev. john, of north yarmouth. iv. 181.
- Duxbury settled. vi. 662. incorporated; petition for extension of limits; inhabitants. vii. 137. deed of land from indians, and the consideration paid therefor. 139. divided; early taxes. 140. people dismissed from worshipping at plymouth, and become the second church in that colony. vii. P. 74. 75. notes on. x. 57. called originally duxburrow; pilgrim settlers. 57. 58. annual fair at, for cattle. 68. proportion of soldiers; wolves killed at; presented for not mending bridge. 69. order about its quakers. 71.
- Dwellely, richard. iv. 229.
- Dye, ———. x. 178.
- Dyer, mary, a quaker, sentenced to death. vi. 571.
- Dyer, giles, sheriff of suffolk, massachusetts. viii. 240.
- Dyer, john. iv. 87. 90. 92.
- Dyer, eliphalet, delegate to continental congress from connecticut. ii. 223.
- Dyer, jacob. vii. 124.
- Dyer, ———. vii. 123.
- Dyer's fleece, quoted. iii. 191.
- Dykes, edward. iv. 110.
- Dyneley, ———. iii. 284.
- Dyre, william. ix. 179.
- Dysentery at kingston, massachusetts. iii. 216.
- E.
- Eagle, ship, afterwards called the arbella. ii. 79.
- Eagle's nest, a palisado to be built there. x. 68.
- Eames, lieut. of hingham. vi. 417.
- Eames, thomas. iv. 56.
- Eames, rev. jonathan, of newtown, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Eames, theodore. iv. 169.
- Early, sir george, in virginia, avenges the slaughter of whites made by indians. ix. 78.
- Earthquake in new england. iv. 40. 41. vi. 646. vii. 14. 50. account of, by rev. t. alden. iv. 70.
- Easton, nicholas, a tanner, his strange notions. vi. 337. 343. vii. 97.
- Easton, col. ii. 243.
- East sunapee pond. viii. 174.
- East mud pond. viii. 174.
- East tennessee, its destruction planned by cameron. vii. 60.
- East chop. iii. 70.
- Easterbrook, rev. ———, of concord. iii. 275.
- Easterbrooks, ———, preacher at bath, new hampshire. iii. 108.
- Eastern indians, their letter to governor of massachusetts, with facsimiles of their seals. viii. 259—263.
- Eastham. iii. 14.
- East hampton, long island. vi. 668.
- East sudbury, incorporated. iv. 53. account of its settlement. iv. 60. ecclesiastical history. 61. bounds. 62. lands and ponds. 62.
- Eaton, theophilus, assistant. v. 124. arrives. v. 262. elected governor of new haven colony. vi. 320. his character. vi. 329. viii. 97. dies. vi. 316. 320. 329. 467. 521. 548. 557. vii. 1. 7. 8. 129.
- Eaton, nathaniel, first instructor of harvard college, a mere orbilius, removed. v. 247.
- Eaton, samuel, dies. vi. 331.
- Eaton, samuel, presented for mixed dancing. x. 69.
- Eaton, samuel. vii. 138.
- Eaton, benjamin. iii. 208.
- Eaton, ebenezer. iii. 208.
- Eaton, john. iv. 137.
- Eaton, joseph. ii. 178.
- Eaton, rev. samuel, of harpswell. iv. 180. 181.
- Eaton, rev. peter, of boxford. iv. 169.
- Eaton, francis. x. 57.
- Eaton, ———. iv. 132.
- Eatow, jack, a moheage indian, his exploit. viii. 146.
- Ebeling, professor christopher-d. of hamburg. ii. 277. viii. 167. his library purchased and presented to harvard college by israel thorn-dike. viii. 268. geography and history of america, referred to. viii. 268. 269. 276. letter to president stiles, giving an account of his works on america; requesting an account of connecticut, and mentioning the number of authors in germany, and their productions. viii. 270—275.



- Ecclesiastical history of massachusetts, by rev. dr. j. eliot, referred to. i. 194.
- Eckley, rev. dr. j. of boston. vii. 181.
- Edes, ———, printer of a newspaper at boston. viii. 321.
- Eddenden, ed. iv. 239.
- Eddy, samuel, esq. vii. 75.
- Eddertown. iii. 46. 47. 49. 50. 53. 60. its excellent water. iii. 40. saltworks. 61. or old town, account of; houses and schools. iii. 70. ships, harbour, and wharves. 70. 71. price of land at. 70. church first formed. 71. harbour. 73. settlement. 81. incorporated. 85. uncommon quantity of snow at. iv. 257.
- Edgecombe, sir richard, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Edmestone, capt. lieut. viii. 156.
- Edson, samuel. vii. 138. 143. 152. 157. 159. 162. 167.
- Edson, samuel. vii. 148.
- Edson, joseph. vii. 148. 157.
- Edson, josiah. vii. 150. 152. 157. 159.
- Edson, susannah. vii. 153. 162.
- Edson, josiah. vii. 153. 160.
- Edson, josiah, col. a rescinder and mandamus counsellor. vii. 153. 160. 169.
- Edson, adam. vii. 171.
- Edson, jael. vii. 171.
- Edson, john. vii. 167.
- Edson, or edwardson. vii. 152.
- Edward iv. his statute against consecration of churches and wakes, referred to. vii. P. 77.
- Edwards, rev. dr. jonathan, of new haven, his "observations on the mulhekanew, or mohegan language," referred to. ii. 6. ix. 238. published at large, with introductory observations and notes and an index, by j. pickering, esq. x. 81—160.
- Edwards, j. w. esq. x. 82. extract of a letter from him. 83.
- Edy, john, recovers from distraction by living eight days without food. v. 198.
- Eel point. iii. 20.
- Eel river indians, their annuity. ii. 7. and numbers. 12.
- Eel river. iii. 168. 178. 180. 184. 196. 204. iv. 89. 92.
- Eel river beach. iii. 162.
- Eel river bridge. iv. 229.
- Elles, rev. nathaniel, of scituate. iv. 235. notice of. 237.
- Elles, rev. nathaniel, jun. of stonington, connecticut. iv. 237.
- Elles, rev. edward, of middletown, connecticut. iv. 90. 94. 237.
- Egeish, or aleche, indians, their residence, number and language. ii. 24.
- Egg river. iii. 164. 171.
- Elder, can he be a magistrate? vii. P. 64.
- Election of governour, etc. the first in massachusetts, held on board the arbella. ii. 87. v. 148.
- Electors in massachusetts, consist of those only who pay 10s. to a single rate—a much greater sum than in england—complained of by king's commissioners. viii. 76. 79.
- Eliot, rev. john. of roxbury; first teaching elder at roxbury; character. ii. 92. 93. described by john dunton. 108. success amongst indians; draws up a covenant for them. 114. obtains lands for christian indians. vi. 544. labours amongst natick and other indians. 652. 653. viii. 29. arrives. vii. P. 37. 49. joins boston church, and preaches in the place of rev. j. wilson, then in england. vii. P. 37. 38. 69. 72. notice of. vii. P. 48—50. sworn a freeman. vii. P. 57. second minister of roxbury. vii. P. 64. 72. his death and character. vi. 606. v. 135. 187. vi. 505. vii. 41. viii. 197. list of his indian works, and when published. ix. 242. his "indian grammar begun," published at large. ix. 245. et seq. with notes and observations by p. s. du ponceau, esq. ix. 313. et seq. and supplementary observations on by j. pickering, esq. (xxx.) and an index of words with their meanings. (xlviii.) referred to. ix. 235. x. 240. et seq.
- Eliot, jacob, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 57. elder. P. 69.
- Eliot, andrew. i. 229.
- Eliot, andrew. i. 229.
- Eliot, andrew. i. 229.
- Eliot, andrew. i. 230.
- Eliot, rev. jared, of killingworth, con-

- necticut, doubts the validity of presbyterian ordination. ii. 129. 131. iv. 298. 299.
- Eliot, rev. dr. andrew, of boston. i. 227. his family. 238. his remarks on archbishop secker's sermon. ii. 190. 216. opposed to religious establishments. 202. 259. iv. 144. x. 6.
- Eliot, rev. andrew, of fairfield, connecticut. i. 228.
- Eliot, samuel. i. 230.
- Eliot, samuel. i. 230.
- Eliot, samuel. i. 228.
- Eliot, rev. dr. john, of boston; ecclesiastical history of massachusetts. i. 194. memoir of. 211. elected tutor, and declines the office. 215. inclining to the episcopal church, is invited to take charge of one at halifax. 216. 217. chaplain to marshall's regiment. 217. ordained successor to his father. 218. his correspondence. 221. character. 222. sickness and death. 255. 226. pastoral character. 232. list of honours conferred on him. 238. literary character and publications. 242. tomb of his family. (xix.) ii. 49. 190. 261. 563. writes a circular for massachusetts historical society. 277. contributions to that society. 281. iii. 12. 18. 22. 290. iv. 70. 100. his character of rev. edward barnard. iv. 144. furnishes the manuscript copy of hubbard's history. v. (iii.) viii. 158.
- Eliot, dr. ephraim. i. 229. his letter to rev. dr. freeman. iii. 289. x. 191.
- Eliot, john, printer. ii. 233.
- Eliot, george, letter from. iii. 286. 287.
- Eliot, ———. iii. 285.
- Elizabeth islands. iii. 49. 63. 70. 88. account of. 74. named by gosnold. 80. v. 10. governed by mr. mayhew. iii. 85. iv. 252.
- Elizabeth, ship, arrives with passengers, dutch sheep, and mares. vii. P. 92.
- Elk river. ii. 11.
- Ellis, john. ii. 144.
- Ellis, rev. jonathan, of plymouth. iii. 201.
- Ellis, mrs. iv. 277.
- Ellis, ———. iv. 230.
- Ellis, ———. iv. 277.
- Ellis river. iv. 185.
- Ellis's tavern, at plymouth. iv. 292.
- Elmes, rodolphus. iv. 241.
- Eleutheria, or bahama islands. vi. 523.
- Embalmed person found at cape cod, by first settlers at plymouth. ix. 35.
- Emerson, john. iii. 223.
- Emerson, moses. iv. 169.
- Emerson, rev. daniel, of hollis, new hampshire. iv. 78. viii. 178.
- Emerson, rev. william, of boston, memoir of. i. 254. ordained at harvard, and at boston; conductor of monthly anthology. 255. dies; character. 256. publications. 257. history of first church in boston referred to. (xix.) ii. 273.
- Emerson, mrs. x. 180.
- Emery, edward. x. 75.
- Emery, rev. ———. vii. 164.
- Endicott, capt. john. i. (xxii.) sent out with servants to carry on dorchester plantation at naumkeag; and to prepare for massachusetts colony, about to come to new england. v. 109. 110. arrives at and settles salem. ii. 69. letter to governor bradford. v. 115. character of. ii. 69. made deputy governor or agent at salem. v. 114. 115. 122. vii. P. 3. goes to mount wollaston to correct vices. v. 104. ii. 163. 266. iv. 198. v. 181. vi. 488. 499. vii. 32. 117. P. 1. 3. viii. 97. 100. letter to new england company complaining of irregular trade with indians. v. 123. letter from hon. robert boyle. viii. 49. 51. letter from m. craddock, about sending colonists and cattle to new england. viii. 116. 120. was governor sixteen years. 52. defaces the king's colours and is punished. v. 164. opposes the settlement of roger williams. 203. commands against the pequots. 252. viii. 131. one of the standing council. v. 259. assistant. 124. vii. P. 5. 6. 8. 14. 15. 21. 27. 29. 30. 32. 35. 36. 58. 60. 63. 66. 68. 85. 86. 91. 93. major general of massachusetts. viii. 1. 11. 14. deputy governor. vi. 370.

373. 519. 543. vii. 35. 44. viii. 19. *gouverneur*. vi. 542. 544. 555. 561. 575. vii. 51. 84. viii. 17. 20. 49. 52. dies, and is buried at boston. vi. 575. 581. viii. 52.
- Endicott, zerubabel. viii. 105.
- Engagement of allegiance in rhode island. vii. 96. altered. 97.
- England, decline of religion in. ii. 51. at war with holland. vi. 323. 586. makes peace with holland. 612. x. 60. makes peace with spain. vii. P. 16. declares war against france. viii. 102.
- English, thomas. ix. 38.
- English missionaries in america. i. 158.
- Englishman, pequot word for. viii. 138.
- Enos, col. ii. 232. 233.
- Epenow, indian, notice of. iii. 80. who had been forcibly carried to england, escapes to his own country. v. 39. an american indian, sent with capt. hobson, and others on discovery to new england; his attempt to revenge the treachery of hunt on capt. hobson's ship. ix. 6.
- Epes, ———, a schoolmaster at salem, notice of, by john dunton. ii. 118.
- Episcopacy in the colonies, remarks on. ii. 190.
- Episcopal controversy in connecticut. ii. 128. 137. iv. 297.
- Episcopalians in new york. i. 42. number of. 48. favoured by government. 50.
- Epitaph on bacon, the virginia rebel. i. 58. 59. on dr. zabdiel boylston. ii. 160. on john green, of charlestown. ii. 179. on richard russell, of charlestown. ii. 179. on judge john phillips, of charlestown. ii. 179. on rev. benjamin rolfe, of haverhill. iv. 140. on rev. joshua gardner, of haverhill. iv. 141. on rev. john brown, of haverhill. iv. 142. on rev. james cushing, of haverhill. iv. 147. on rev. thomas hooker. vi. 541. on *gouverneur* thomas dudley. vi. 552. on rev. jonathan mitchell. vi. 606. on ezeziel cheever. vii. 132.
- Epworth, capt. of the nympe frigate. iii. 197.
- Erasmus. i. 244.
- Errata, a few, in articles communicated by rev. dr. freeman. viii. 328. 329.
- Errorists. iv. 5. 21.
- Errour in a note on plymouth, corrected. iv. 302. in hutchinson's history, corrected. ii. 274.
- Errours, four score, spread abroad in new england. iv. 14. 34. religious, debated at synod at cambridge, account of. vii. 1. censured by civil government of massachusetts. vii. 14.
- Erving, capt. iv. 89.
- Erving, william. i. 116.
- Erving, george-w. esq. x. 192.
- Esau, sarah, indian. iii. 6.
- Esquimaux indians. ii. 11. their language, customs, manners, residence, numbers and warriors. 43.
- Essex, sagamoreship, of agawam. iii. 142.
- Europe has 587 languages. ix. (iii.)
- Eustis, william. iii. 10. his letter to r. webster respecting arnold and his soldiers when he deserted. iv. 52.
- Evarts, jeremiah. ii. 176. 178. 181.
- Everett, rev. noble, minister of wareham. iv. 293.
- Everett, rev. edward, professor at harvard university. x. 192.
- Everson, john. iii. 208.
- Everson, richard. iii. 208.
- Ewachim, indian corn. ix. 101.
- Ewell, henry. iv. 240.
- Ewer, rev. dr. bishop of landaff. ii. 190. 215.
- Execution, the first in plymouth colony. vii. P. 2.
- Exemption, five mile act of, extended to anabaptists and quakers. ii. 204.
- Exeter, new hampshire, planted by mr. wheelwright, and others, who form a combination for government. v. 233. 242. vi. 351. received under the government of massachusetts. vi. 373.
- Exhortation to all people and nations to advance the kingdom of christ, by johason! ii. 81.
- Expedition against louisbourg. iii. 192. against canada, in 1600, abortive. 260.
- Extortion punished in massachusetts, a curious instance of. v. 248.



Eyer, john. x. 26.  
 Eyre, thomas. v. 215.  
 Eyre, eleazer. v. 215.  
 Ezcholz, dr. of the university of dor-  
 pet. iv. 98.

## F.

- Fable of indians. iii. 3. 7. 34. of  
 benevolent trout. iii. 3. 7. about  
 tisbury pond. iii. 47.  
 Fac simile of a deed from king philip.  
 iv. 272.  
 Fairbank, rev. drury, of plymouth.  
 new hampshire. iii. 112.  
 Fairfax, sir thomas. viii. 124.  
 Fairfield, rev. john, of saco. iv.  
 188.  
 Fairhaven. ii. 19.  
 Fairs at boston. ii. 89.  
 Fairweather, john. viii. 44. And  
 see fayrweather, and fayerweather.  
 Falconet, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Fall indians, their residence and num-  
 ber. ii. 36.  
 Fall of cliff at gay head. iii. 47.  
 Falmouth. iii. 49. 54.  
 Familists, heresy of. ii. 58. depend  
 on revelations. 74. early in rhode  
 island. vi. 336. opinions extend.  
 vi. 346. punished in barbadoes.  
 vi. 346. colony of, intended for  
 sagadahock. v. 141. settle at  
 watertown; brought the plough  
 patent. vii. P. 31.  
 Fancher, dr. his table of vaccination  
 in america. iv. 96.  
 Farley, george. ii. 162.  
 Farlow, ———, executed. i. 64.  
 Farm neck. iii. 93.  
 Farmer, john, table of marriages, etc.  
 in billerica. ii. 162. sketch of  
 amherst, new hampshire. ii. 247.  
 bill of mortality for amherst, new  
 hampshire. iv. 73. letter to rev.  
 dr. holmes. iv. 77. vii. 71. 187.  
 viii. 44. x. 192. note on new lon-  
 don, new hampshire. viii. 173—  
 175. account of churches and  
 ministers in new hampshire. viii.  
 175—179.  
 Farmer's cabinet, printed at amherst,  
 new hampshire. ii. 252.  
 Farnam, ———. viii. 112.  
 Farrar, rev. stephen, of new ipswich,  
 new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Farrill attacks the followers of bacon.  
 i. 72. killed. 73.  
 Farrington, samuel. x. 179.  
 Farrow, mrs. vii. 120.  
 Farwell, ———. iv. 193.  
 Fast in massachusetts, caused by a  
 political question. v. 174. 175.  
 at charlestown and boston. v. 185.  
 at boston, for settling a pastor. v.  
 188. vii. P. 73. ordered in mas-  
 sachusetts, but changed to thanks-  
 giving. P. 18. at plymouth, occa-  
 sioned by infectious fever. P. 96.  
 Faulkland, viscount. v. 151.  
 Faunce, elder. iii. 189. 190. 192. iv.  
 91.  
 Faunce, john. iii. 213.  
 Faunce, ———. iv. 294.  
 Fayrweather, thomas. vii. P. 69.  
 Fayrweather, john. x. 25.  
 Fayerweather, thomas, esq. ii. 260.  
 viii. 199.  
 Feake, robert. iii. 268.  
 Feake, isle, in virginia. vii. P. 86.  
 Feake mount. iii. 267. 268.  
 Fearing, ———. iv. 294.  
 Fearing, israel. iv. 293.  
 Fearing, noah. vii. 160.  
 Fearing's mills. iv. 287.  
 Fearnux, nathaniel. viii. 45.  
 Feast at the court of canonicus. iv.  
 42.  
 Febres' grammar of the language of  
 chili, referred to. x. 109. et seq.  
 Federal furnace at carver. iv. 272.  
 Felps, william. vi. 308. vii. P. 60.  
 See phelps.  
 Felt, joshua. viii. 45.  
 Female magnanimity, instance of. i.  
 (xxiv.)  
 Female preacher. iv. 15.  
 Females directed to wear veils by  
 roger williams. v. 204.  
 Fences of cornfields to be kept in  
 repair. vii. P. 93.  
 Fenno, ———. viii. 242.  
 Fenwick, george, purchases saybrook  
 fort. iv. 1. lines in remembrance  
 of. 1. arrives to make a planta-  
 tion at saybrook, but returns to  
 england. v. 279. comes to con-  
 necticut. vi. 309. and claims to  
 govern it. 309. but sells to con-  
 necticut people. 310. commis-  
 sioner. vi. 466. 510.

- Fernald, william. ii. 181. major, 180.  
 Fernald, mary. x. 178.  
 Feron, ———, analyzed the springs of boston. x. 175.  
 Ferry from boston to charlestown proposed. vii. P. 6. at winnesmet, charges fixed. P. 29. at charlestown, charges fixed. P. 30.  
 Fessenden, rev. william, of fryeburgh. iii. 104.  
 Fessenden, rev. thomas, of walpole, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Fever at plymouth. iii. 192. pestilential. v. 194. which kills whites and indians. vii. P. 95. 96. at kingston. iii. 216. and ague. iv. 102. vi. 324. 325. spotted, early in massachusetts. iv. 102.  
 Field, darby, discovers and visits the white hills. vi. 381.  
 Field, william. vii. 93. form of a deed from him. ix. 198.  
 Field, john. vii. 148. 150. 157. 159. ix. 170.  
 Field, apollo. ii. 181.  
 Fifth monarchy, a book savouring of its spirit, creates uneasiness. vi. 575.  
 Filcher, ———, manager of mount wallaston plantation. v. 103.  
 Filmore, lavius. ix. 127.  
 Findley, william. viii. 183.  
 Fines, charles. v. 128.  
 Finney, robert. iii. 184.  
 Fires at dorchester. vii. P. 17. in massachusetts, account of. i. 81. at charlestown. ii. 166. at boston. vi. 648. 649. vii. P. 22. 29. at watertown. vii. P. 3. 6. 27. 66.  
 Firmin, ———, of watertown, his wigwam burnt. vii. P. 6.  
 Firmin, giles, sen. vii. P. 70.  
 Firmin, rev. giles, his letter to governor winthrop; his "real christian," mentioned. iv. 126. afterwards minister in england. vii. P. 69.  
 First encounter, named. v. 56. ix. 39.  
 First comers. x. 64. 65. 67.  
 Fish, indian mode of taking. iii. 81. indian manure, first used for that object at plymouth. ix. 60.  
 Fish in virginia, list of. ix. 121.  
 Fish, ———. vii. 1.  
 Fish, ———. arrested at exeter for speaking against the king. vi. 359.  
 Fish, elnathan. iii. 209.  
 Fish, rev. phineas of mashpee. iii. 201.  
 Fish, ———. iii. 66. 73.  
 Fisher, ———. iii. 73.  
 Fishery at cape cod, granted to plymouth school. iv. 80.  
 Fisk, rev. john, of wenham. vii. 52.  
 Fisk, rev. abel, of wilton, new hampshire. viii. 177.  
 Fiske, william. iii. 269.  
 Fiske, charles. iii. 269.  
 Fiske, john-m. ii. 178.  
 Fistula, cure of. i. 120.  
 Fitch, thomas. x. 27.  
 Fitch, mrs. i. 184.  
 Fitzrandle, edward. iv. 239.  
 Five mile act of exemption, extended to anabaptists and quakers. ii. 204.  
 Five nations of indians, their number, etc. viii. 243. 245. of what nations composed; some remarks on their language. 250. See iroquois.  
 Flagg, rev. ebenezer, of chester, new hampshire. iv. 78. ix. 368. x. 176.  
 Flax, early in massachusetts. v. 239. ix. 19. abundant in massachusetts. vii. 37.  
 Fleece, quoted. iv. 254.  
 Fleet, the king's, at caribbee islands, relieved by boston merchants. vi. 592.  
 Fleming's new hampshire register. iv. 79.  
 Fletcher, col. governour of new york, his scheme of taxation for building episcopal churches. i. 141. ii. 208.  
 Fletcher, samuel. iii. 111.  
 Flint rev. henry, of braintree. iii. 161. v. 276. notice of. vi. 607. vii. 24. 25.  
 Flint, thomas, assistant. iii. 285. iv. 77. 110.  
 Flint, edward. viii. 106.  
 Flint, william. viii. 106.  
 Flint, henry. i. (xxx.) iii. 211.  
 Flint, rev. james, of bridgewater. vii. 166.  
 Florida. ii. 26, 27. v. 9. visited by gosnold. 10. 12. taken from the french by the spaniards. v. 45.

- Floro, jeremy, an ingenious iron founder. iii. 207. 208.  
 Floyer, capt. viii. 156.  
 Flucker, thomas. x. 28.  
 Flushing, long island. vi. 669.  
 Flynt, rev. henry. viii. 253. See hint.  
 Flynt, william. viii. 45.  
 Fobes, john. vii. 138. 147. 149. or vobes. vii. 151. 154.  
 Fobes, edward and william. vii. 149.  
 Fobes, edward. vii. 159.  
 Fobes, rev. perez, of raynham. iv. 90. 95. vii. 154. 169.  
 Fobes, nathan. vii. 170.  
 Fothead, (forrett?) mr. v. 245.  
 Fogg, rev. jeremiah, of kensington, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Folger, walter, his curious clock. iii. 27.  
 Folkes, martin, extract from his treatise on english gold and silver coins. ii. 276.  
 Fols-avoine sauters indians. ii. 12.  
 Fols-avoise indians, their language, residence and character. ii. 10. their numbers and warriors. ii. 12.  
 Folsom, peter. x. 178.  
 Folsom, josiah. x. 179.  
 Food of all kinds becomes abundant in massachusetts. vii. 35.  
 Foodum, ———. vii. 23.  
 Forbes, rev. ———, episcopal missionary to new jersey. ii. 213.  
 Forbes, rev. dr. eli. iii. 170. 281.  
 Ford, thomas, expelled oxford university. vii. P. 52. 53.  
 Ford, william. vii. 138.  
 Ford, andrew. vii. 122. 123.  
 Ford's farm lands. vii. 122.  
 Fordham, manor of. i. 144.  
 Forefather's rock, account of. iii. 174.  
 Forefather's day. iii. 176. vii. 133.  
 Forefather's landing, painting of, by henry sargent. iii. 225—230.  
 Forett, james, agent of earl of sterling. iii. 34. v. 245.  
 Formalists, or conformitants. ii. 74.  
 Fornication punished. vii. P. 68.  
 Fort at saybrook burnt. vi. 530.  
 Forthill, or cornhill, boston, its fortification begun; charlestown people, &c. work upon it. vii. P. 61.  
 Fort mountain. viii. 115.  
 Fort osage. ii. 31.  
 Fort du quesne. ii. 223.  
 Fort western, unhappy individual at. ii. 228.  
 Fort halifax. ii. 230.  
 Fort george. ii. 11.  
 Fort elizabeth. iii. 80.  
 Forthill, drawing of. iii. 187.  
 Fort edward. iv. 164.  
 Fort albany, or aurania. v. 18.  
 Fortification at sewall's point. ii. 151. begun at connecticut. v. 178. at boston harbour. vi. 445.  
 Fortune, ship. vii. 121. forefather's ship, the second to plymouth. vii. 147.  
 Fosdick, deacon james. ii. 171.  
 Foss, joshua. x. 177.  
 Foss, hannah. x. 179.  
 Foster, edward. iv. 220. 222. 224. 239. account of. iv. 243.  
 Foster, mrs. lettuce. iv. 243.  
 Foster, timothy. iv. 243.  
 Foster, rev. isaac. ii. 177.  
 Foster, john. iv. 87. 95.  
 Foster, thomas. iii. 9. iv. 90. 95.  
 Foster, ann. vii. 163.  
 Foster, ———. ii. 188.  
 Foster, william. ii. 178.  
 Foster, isaac. ii. 178.  
 Foster, rev. abiel, of canterbury, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Foster, rev. joel, of east sudbury. iv. 62.  
 Foster, rev. john, of brighton. ii. 186. iv. 180.  
 Foster, gideon. ii. 170.  
 Foster, deacon benjamin. x. 177.  
 Foster, jonathan. x. 179.  
 Foster, ———. iv. 260.  
 Foster's ship yard. iv. 227.  
 Fothergill, samuel, a great pulpit orator, his exertions for abolishing slavery. viii. 189.  
 Four cliffs. iv. 228.  
 Fowle, thomas. iv. 115. vi. 500. 518.  
 Fowle, rev. robert, episcopal minister at holderness, new hampshire. iii. 112.  
 Fowler, phil. sen. viii. 107.  
 Fowler, abner. viii. 319.  
 Fox, ———, his history of james ii. i. (xxviii.)  
 Fox hill. i. (xxix.)  
 Fox river. ii. 10.  
 Fox river lake. ii. 10.



- Foxcraft, rev. ———, of boston. iii. 280.
- Foxcroft, george, assistant. v. 121. viii. 97.
- Foxe's hill. ix. 198.
- Foxes, indians. ii. 8. 9. 13. their number and annuity. 9.
- Francis, dr. john-w. x. 192.
- Franklin, dr. benjamin. i. 106. his letter concerning small pox in america. vii. 71.
- Franklin society of amherst, new hampshire, its library. ii. 254.
- Frary, theophilus. x. 25.
- Fraser, rev. ———, episcopal missionary to pennsylvania. ii. 213.
- Freake, john. viii. 105.
- Free school, early in virginia. ix. 119.
- Freeborn, william. ix. 179.
- Freeby, lieut. viii. 156.
- Freeman, samuel. vii. P. 4.
- Freeman, edmund. x. 57.
- Freeman, col. of sandwich. viii. 194.
- Freeman, rev. dr. james. i. 232. 248. iii. 285. 289. his letter to james savage, esq. containing errata in articles furnished by him for these collections. viii. 328. letter to from judge davis, accompanying mourt's relation. ix. 26.
- Freeman, john, baptist minister at mashpee. iii. 7.
- Freeman, ———, instructor. ii. 249.
- Freeman's oath, form of. iv. 114.
- Freemasons of charlestown erect a monument to general warren. ii. 172.
- Freemen, number of, in massachusetts, in 1630. ii. 88. first list of, proposed in massachusetts. vii. P. 3. 4. none but church members allowed to be sworn. v. 148. vii. P. 4. 29. admitted. vii. 12. 20. 32. 35. 44. 51. P. 4. 29. 39. 57. 58. 63. 65. 72. 75. 86. 92. viii. 1. 6. 11. 19. to elect assistants and declare grievances. vii. P. 57. to vote for governour, deputy governour, and assistants. P. 60. first choose magistrates. vii. P. 75. chose major general annually; and all other military officers for life. viii. 11. increase of. iii. 128. or electors and magistrates, letter from charles ii. about their qualifications. viii. 48. 54. in rhode island, the king's pleasure touching. vii. 94. engagement of, in rhode island. vii. 96.
- Freeport, maine, account of; its situation, rivers, soil, incorporation. iv. 176. productions, mills, trades, schools. 177. 178. history, indian name. 179. attacked by indians, church gathered. 180. church members, baptisms, deaths. 182. baptist church, universalist society. 182. 183. population. 183. deaths. 184.
- French, william. ii. 162. iv. 76.
- French, rev. jonathan, of andover. iii. 199.
- French, rev. jonathan, of northampton, new hampshire. iv. 191.
- French, ———. vii. 123.
- French, samuel. x. 54.
- French driven from florida by the spaniards. v. 45. begin a plantation in new england, but are dislodged by sir s. argall. ix. 5. make peace with spain. vii. P. 12. very early frequent narraganset bay. ix. 50. rifle plymouth trading house at penobscot; claim as far south as 40° of north latitude. v. 161. ship cast away in new england three years before arrival of plymouth colony. v. 54. pirate takes capt. j. smith a prisoner. ix. 7. barque at new england captured by capt. rocraft. ix. 8. vessel bound to virginia was wrecked in merrimack bay, and her crew arrested by governour of plymouth. v. 199. privateer wrecked in buzzard's bay. iii. 190. vessel wrecked at cape ann, and men drowned. vi. 649. protestants in new york. i. 149. army lands at savannah. iii. 241.
- Fresh lake, now billington sea. iii. 181.
- Fresh meadows. iii. 203.
- Fresh river, now connecticut river. v. 18. vi. 305. See connecticut river.
- Friars in the "straits" defeat hunt's project of selling new england indians as slaves, and instruct them in christianity. ix. 6.
- Friends, of new jersey and pennsylvania, slavery common amongst; their opposition to abolishing. viii. 188. but at last exert themselves to abolish it. 189.

- Friends' society of baltimore. ii. 7.  
 Friendship, the ship, arrives with cattle at nantasket. vii. P. 31. sails again for st. christopher's. P. 32.  
 Frink, rev. thomas, of rutland and plymouth. iii. 198. iv. 60.  
 Frisbie, levi, professor at harvard university. x. 162.  
 Frisk, david. vii. 11.  
 Frisk, john. vii. 138.  
 Frost, capt. charles, of kittery. vi. 600.  
 Frost, samuel. viii. 45.  
 Frothingham, capt. benjamin. ii. 175.  
 Frothingham, john. ii. 178.  
 Frothingham, richard. ii. 175. 176.  
 Frothingham, thomas, jun. ii. 175.  
 Frothingham, deacon james. ii. 171.  
 Frothingham, capt. james-k. ii. 180.  
 Frothingham, rev. nathaniel-l. of boston. viii. 166.  
 Frothingham, james, portrait painter. ii. 181.  
 Fruits in virginia. ix. 122.  
 Fruit trees, some hints about. ix. 139, and post.  
 Frye, mrs. her confessions. iii. 222.  
 Fryeburgh, maine, anatomical lectures at. i. 126.  
 Fuel, price of, at halifax, massachusetts. iv. 280.  
 Fuller, dr. samuel. iii. 164. 186. 228. deacon of mr. robinson's church. v. 115. vi. 662. vii. P. 70. quoted. P. 53. dies of infectious fever. P. 96. his mistake corrected. P. 78.  
 Fuller, samuel. iv. 239.  
 Fuller, bridget and samuel, give land for a parsonage house at plymouth. iii. 186.  
 Fuller, samuel. iii. 208.  
 Fuller, issachar. iv. 277.  
 Fuller, hannah. x. 180.  
 Fuller, ———. i. 51.  
 Fullerton, ithamar. iii. 119.  
 Fulton, capt. viii. 156.  
 Furnace brook. iii. 207.  
 Furnald, mrs. iv. 199.  
  
 G.  
 Gage, john. vii. P. 86.  
 Gage, lieut. col. thomas. viii. 156. general; his letter to governor trumbull, giving an account of the attack on the british troops on 19 april, 1775. ii. 224. iii. 290. his instructions to capt. brown. iv. 204. 205. 214.  
 Gager, deacon william. v. 185. his character. v. 186. surgeon and first deacon of charlestown and boston church. vii. P. 69.  
 Gains, ———, attempts to plant in maine. v. 224.  
 Gale of 1804, at abington. vii. 114. 115.  
 Gale of 1815, at rochester. iv. 264. at wareham. iv. 272. at plymouth. x. 45.  
 Gale, rev. theophilus, gave his library to harvard college. ii. 108. vii. 188.  
 Gale, william. iii. 269.  
 Galen. i. 168.  
 Gallard, john, of dorchester. vii. P. 60.  
 Gallop, john, his fight with the indians. v. 249. viii. 232.  
 Gallows hill. iii. 185.  
 Gannett, matthew. iv. 241. vii. 151.  
 Gannett, thomas. vii. 138. 147. 151. 170. x. 70.  
 Gannett, caleb. vii. 151. 170. biography of. viii. 277. minister of cumberland and amherst, nova scotia; steward of harvard college. 277. literary societies of which he was a member. 278. 279. extract of president kirkland's sermon on. 279. letter quoted. 282. account of the ecclesiastical affairs of nova scotia quoted. 282. 283. extract of letter to rev. mr. seccombe. 283. list of articles written by him for the american academy. 285.  
 Gannett, barzillai. vii. 170.  
 Garden seeds, first planted by settlers at plymouth. ix. 48.  
 Gardener, thomas, agent for dorchester plantation. v. 106.  
 Gardiner, richard, his letter from new england to capt. pierce; surmises about him. ix. 27. 28.  
 Gardiner, sir christopher. iv. 156. a prisoner in massachusetts. v. 141. complains to the king against massachusetts colony. v. 145. an enemy to new england. vi. 662. notice of; is ordered to be sent to england a prisoner. vii. P. 21. accused of bigamy, seized and

- brought to boston; a papist. P. 27. a prisoner; his letters from sir f. gorges opened by government of massachusetts. vii. P. 30. his accusations against massachusetts. vii. P. 85. 88. said to be a descendant of bishop gardiner; arrives in new england; knighted at jerusalem. v. 149. escapes to plymouth indians. 149. taken by them; wounded; sent to england; hostile to massachusetts colony. 150. 153.
- Gardiner, lieutenant lyon, an engineer sent to, connecticut. v. 179. sergeant and commander at saybrook. viii. 43. 131. 133.
- Gardiner, robert-hallowell. viii. 285.
- Gardner, sir christopher. See gardiner.
- Gardner, henry. v. 215.
- Gardner, thomas. ii. 144. 153.
- Gardner, ———, jun. ii. 144.
- Gardner, joseph. ii. 144.
- Gardner, caleb. ii. 144.
- Gardner, thomas, jun. ii. 144.
- Gardner, capt. iv. 130.
- Gardner, rev. joshua, of haverhill, his character and epitaph. iv. 141.
- Gardner, rev. john, of stow. iv. 94.
- Gardner, rev. andrew, of worcester and lunenburg. ii. 156.
- Gardner, samuel. iv. 90. 94.
- Gardner, nathaniel, instructor at boston, preacher at carver, his character. iv. 278.
- Gardner, ———, obtains a grant of bath, new hampshire. iii. 107.
- Gardner, isaac, killed by the british. ii. 157. viii. 45.
- Gardner, elisha. ii. 158.
- Gardner, dr. james. ii. 178.
- Gardner, general isaac-s. ii. 158.
- Gardner, dr. henry. ii. 178.
- Gardner, deacon elisha. ii. 153.
- Gardner, abner. ii. 178.
- Gardner, isaac-s. ii. 158.
- Gardner's mountain. iii. 106. 107.
- Garland, ———. viii. 226.
- Garn, (garrett?) richard, his misfortune. v. 138.
- Garrett, richard, his mishap and death. vii. P. 8. 9.
- Garrett, harmon. viii. 96.
- Garrett, ———, lost at sea. vi. 557. his ship lost. vii. 87.
- Garrett, joseph. iv. 229.
- Gatchel, ———. ii. 235.
- Gates, sir thomas, a patentee of new england. v. 217. comes to virginia with a colony; but is shipwrecked, of which he publishes an account. viii. 204. comes again. 208. 210.
- Gates, capt. vii. 157. general. iii. 236. 237.
- Gattery, john, ensign of kittery. vi. 600.
- Gay, rev. dr. of hingham. iii. 238. viii. 277.
- Gay, rev. bunker, of hindsdale, new hampshire. iv. 78. 79.
- Gay head. iii. 41. 45. 46. 49. 53. 93. light house. iii. 42. origin of name; clays. 44.
- Gedney, bartholomew. viii. 105. 181.
- Gedney, eleazer. viii. 105.
- Gedney, john, jun. viii. 106.
- Geery, rev. ———, of wenham, his character. ii. 119.
- Gellibrand, henry, professor of gresham college, prosecuted on account of his almanack. vii. P. 50.
- General, properties of a good one. i. 69.
- General, major, chosen in massachusetts. vii. 53.
- General, surveyor in massachusetts. vii. 56.
- General court of massachusetts to be held once a year. v. 148. vii. P. 57. to be held semi-annually. v. 235. the first held at Boston. vii. P. 3.
- General hospital of massachusetts, petition for its incorporation. i. 127.
- General hospital, chapel at quebec. ii. 242.
- Gennison, william, chosen ensign. vii. P. 34.
- Gens de lai indians. ii. 40.
- George, capt. ii. 260.
- George, sagamore, at saugus. v. 32.
- George's bank. iv. 232.
- Georgia. ii. 28. deeply in debt. ii. 189.
- Georgiana, maine. iv. 239.
- Gerard, ———. v. 24.
- Gerish, capt. vii. 55.
- Germany, its wars in 1631, account of. vii. P. 54—56. wars in. vii. P. 81. authors living in, and the



- number of their works in 1792. viii. 274.
- Gerrard, sir gilbert. ix. 185.
- Gerrish, capt. william. viii. 44. 106.
- Gerrish, stephen. x. 75.
- Gerry, governor elbridge, his speech about medical college. i. 137.
- Gery, capt. ii. 103.
- Gethins, capt. viii. 156.
- Gibbetting, instance of in massachusetts. ii. 166.
- Gibbins. See gibbons.
- Gibbons, edward. ii. 86. lieutenant. v. 251. captain. vi. 340. commissioner. 466. 495. loses all his property by the capture of la tour's fort. vi. 498. first sergeant major in massachusetts. vii. 54. major general of massachusetts. 54. P. 4. 60. 69. sworn a freeman. vii. P. 29. viii. 2. 17. 19. 20. x. 24. 60.
- Gibbons, ambrose, assistant at piscataqua. v. 220.
- Gibbons's creek. ii. 86.
- Gibson, rev. ———, instigates the isle of shoals people to revolt from massachusetts; his quarrel with mr. larkham; his apology to massachusetts. vi. 381.
- Gibson, rev. benjamin, chaplain to col. westbrook, dies. viii. 265.
- Gibson, general. x. 127.
- Gibbs, capt. john. ii. 180.
- Gibbs, rev. henry, of watertown. iii. 274. 277.
- Gibbs, ———. iv. 294.
- Gibbs, robert. viii. 105.
- Gifford, ———. iv. 260.
- Gift, ship, arrives at charlestown. v. 132. 137. vii. P. 10.
- Gilbert, bartholomew, sails with gonnold. iv. 10.
- Gilbert, sir john. v. 37. president of council of new england; dies. ix. 4.
- Gilbert, capt. rawley, comes to new england. v. 36. 37. a patentee of new england. 217. with two ships sent to begin a plantation in new england. ix. 3. 4.
- Gilbert, rev. thomas, first minister of topsfield. vi. 417.
- Gild, ———. iv. 132.
- Giles, sir edward, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Gilij on the peruvian language, quoted. x. 105, et seq.
- Gill, moses. ii. 46. 48. lieutenant governor of massachusetts. vii. 180.
- Gill, j. printer. iv. 204.
- Gill, moses. vii. 180.
- Gillan, ———. iii. 285.
- Gilman, rev. tristram, of north yarmouth. iv. 180.
- Gilson, william. iv. 220. 222. 224. erects the first windmill at scituate. 224. 239. 242. assistant at plymouth. vii. P. 83.
- Gilson, ———. ii. 105.
- Gilson, mrs. frances. iv. 242.
- Gist's plantation. viii. 154.
- Gittings, john. viii. 107.
- Gittings, samuel. viii. 107.
- Gittings, george. viii. 107.
- Glades in scituate. iv. 223.
- Gladwin, capt. viii. 156.
- Gleason, rev. charles, of dudley. ii. 157.
- Gleason, benjamin. ii. 178.
- Gloster, cape ann. See gloucester.
- Gloster men, their protestation. i. 38. oath tendered to. 56. rise for sir w. berkeley. 68. taken by ingram. 70. submit to ingram. 72.
- Gloucester, cape ann. ii. 69. planted by rev. mr. blinman and others. vi. 408. its church, being 21st in massachusetts, planted. vii. 32.
- Glover, john. iv. 24. his shallop cast away at nahant. vii. P. 20. an assistant. vi. 546.
- Glover, rev. joseph, a printer. vii. 12.
- Glover, hab. viii. 105.
- Glover, rev. ———, of springfield. viii. 237.
- Glover, rev. samuel, baptist minister of kingston. iii. 214.
- Goats of martha's vineyard. iii. 59. in massachusetts. vii. P. 7. intended for massachusetts, mostly die at sea. P. 9. brought to massachusetts. P. 30. early carried to virginia. viii. 197. 210.
- Goddard, rev. william, of westmoreland, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Goddard, john, of portsmouth. ii. 158.
- Godfrey, francis. vii. 151.
- Godfrey, mrs. x. 179.
- Goffe, thomas, chosen deputy governor of massachusetts company in england. v. 109. 120. 122. assistant. 124.

- Goffe, edward. ii. 162. iv. 76.  
 Goffe, ———, regicide. ii. 64. iv. 158. and whaley, their arrival; charles ii. sends a warrant to arrest them in massachusetts. viii. 67. 68.  
 Goffe, jemima. x. 179.  
 Golding, rev. william, of bermuda. viii. 31.  
 Goldthwait, ebenezer. viii. 45.  
 Good news from new england, or winslow's relation of things remarkable at plymouth plantation. ix. 74. 79.  
 Goode, richard. iv. 110.  
 Goodenow, asahel. iv. 60.  
 Goodenow, lieut. edmund. vii. 55.  
 Goodhue, william. iii. 269.  
 Goodhue, jonathan, esq. x. 192.  
 Goodman, john, for some time lost, to the grief of plymouth settlers. ix. 44. 45.  
 Goodrich, capt. ii. 230. 231. 233.  
 Goodridge, rev. sewall, of lyndeborough, new hampshire. viii. 177.  
 Goodwin, rev. dr. thomas. i. 203. one of the assembly of divines at westminster. iv. 20. vi. 534. 590.  
 Goodwin, edward, of boston. iv. 244.  
 Goodwin, general nathaniel. vii. 165. his donation to boston during the port bill. ix. 163.  
 Goodwin, deacon david. ii. 171. 176. 179. 180.  
 Goodwin, rev. ezra-s. of sandwich, his notice of the great storm of sept. 23, 1815. x. 45—192.\*  
 Goodyear, stephen, deputy governour of new haven. vi. 320.  
 Gookin, daniel. his historical collections, referred to. i. (xxviii. xxix.) lectures to indians. ii. 111. quoted. iii. 83. 86. accuracy of his collections. 89. iv. 24. 103. vii. 55. viii. 88. 112. estate seized by nichols and others, king's commissioners. 96. quoted. x. 125.  
 Gookin, rev. nathaniel, of northampton, new hampshire. iv. 191.  
 Goold, ———. viii. 112.  
 Goose point, plymouth. iii. 179.  
 Gooseberries found at plymouth. ix. 62.  
 Gordon, john. vii. 149. 151. 157.  
 Gordon, robert. viii. 156.  
 Gordon, hon. william, of amherst, new hampshire. ii. 253.  
 Gordon, h. w. ii. 179.  
 Gordon, william. ii. 178.  
 Gordon, joanna. x. 178.  
 Gore, ———, of new york. ii. 104.  
 Gore, hon. christopher, his farm at waltham. iii. 272. president of massachusetts historical society. viii. 41.  
 Gorges, lord, a patentee of new england. v. 217. 226.  
 Gorges, sir ferdinando, not the author of wonder-working providence. ii. 49. v. 86. assisted by sir edward coke. 87. obtains a grant of land between pascataqua and sagadahock. 89. letter to sir christopher gardiner about his claim to massachusetts. 141. instigates sir c. gardiner and others to complain to the king. 145. 151. 153. obtains a confirmation by the king of his title to maine. 232. and mason, proposed great city in new england, with abundance of church lands annexed. 229. 230. and others, grant to them by council of new england of the territory each side of the pascataqua. 215. this grant confirmed by the king. 224. a patentee of new england. 217. 224. transfers the government of maine to massachusetts. v. 261. agents claim jurisdiction over ligonia. vi. 368. heirs complain to his majesty against massachusetts. 612. letter to sir c. gardiner, shewing his intention to claim massachusetts. vii. P. 30. aims at the general government of new england. P. 88. and mason, instigated by morton, radcliffe, and sir c. gardiner, petition privy council against massachusetts, which is defeated. vii. P. 85. has a plantation at munhiggen. ix. 85.  
 Gorges, robert, son of sir ferdinando, comes to new england as lieutenant general, to repress disorders and vices among the fishermen; has the province of massachusetts bay assigned to him. v. 86. returns to england. 87. 90.  
 Gorges, thomas, arrives, goes to aga-

- menticus, where he finds all in disorder, attempts a reformation, proceeds against mr. burdett. vi. 361.
- Gorges, edward. v. 232.
- Gorham, john. ii. 178.
- Gorham, hon. nathaniel, goes to england to solicit assistance for charlestown, but without success. ii. 170. 176. 180. senator from middlesex, counsellor, representative, speaker of house of representatives, judge of court of common pleas; eulogy on, by dr. thomas welsh. 177.
- Gorham, ———. ii. 178.
- Gorham, benjamin. ii. 178.
- Gorham, dr. john. i. 116.
- Gorham, stephen. ii. 181.
- Gorton, samuel. ii. 96. iv. 116. 118. causes disturbances at providence. vi. 343. causes trouble to massachusetts; a familist. 401. injures the indians, which causes further trouble; notice of. 402. sends two heretical books to boston; and company, arrested for injuries done to the indians, and brought to boston. 402. 403. quarrels with the indians, which produces his arrest. 404. and his followers punished. 406. 407. cattle taken away; dismissed. 407. supplies miantonimo with armour. 450. writes to uncas in behalf of miantonimo. 451. and company, cause more trouble in massachusetts. 500. return from england, and arrive in boston harbour. 501. remonstrance of massachusetts against petition. 502. 506. ordered to be arrested. 511. left in quiet possession of shaomet. 512. and company, present a petition against massachusetts, to commissioners. 587. viii. 68. ix. 182. seditious and heretical; goes to rhode island, where he is whipped and banished. 663. account of the proceedings of massachusetts against. ix. 199. sentence. 200. carries complaints to england. 201. and others, banished from rhode island, foment the dispute between uncas and miantonimo vii. 45. publishes doctrines, &c. is apprehended. 48. 50.
- Gortonists, heresy of. ii. 58. deny the humanity of christ. ii. 73. iv. 5. 11. doctrines of; opposition to colonies, particularly massachusetts; warrants issued against by gov. winthrop and mr. dudley; governour sends 40 men to apprehend them. vii. 48. 50. confined for months, in different towns, and then banished, of which some complain. 50.
- Gosnold, bartholomew, store house at cuttyhunk. iii. 78. discovers martha's vineyard, and other islands. 80. makes further discoveries of the coast of virginia. v. 10. sails from dartmouth, touches the azores, west indies, and florida. 10. visits cape cod, welcomed by the indians, visits martha's vineyard. 10. coasts north of virginia, to whiston bay; returns to england. 11. voyage in 1662. v. 14. discovery of new england. vii. 179.
- Gospel, its success among the indians of new england. vi. 649. 660.
- Gospel covenant, or covenant of grace opened, by rev. peter bulkley, referred to. ii. 260.
- Gott, charles. vii. P. 4.
- Gotte, ———. v. 109.
- Gouge, col. i. 56.
- Gouge, ———, a linen draper, described by j. dunton. ii. 106. 124.
- Gould, lieutenant. iv. 218. 219.
- Gould, thomas. vi. 627.
- Goulder, francis. iii. 184.
- Gournette nose. iii. 162.
- Government established by the pilgrims. i. (viii.) established at plymouth. ii. 68. v. 61. civil, of new england. iv. 21. form of, among the first settlers of rhode island. vii. 77.
- Governour, difficulty with about salary. vii. 159. of massachusetts, how chosen. vii. P. 3. of massachusetts, to be chosen from among the assistants by the whole court, including the freemen. vii. P. 60. a heavy fine imposed on him, who should, unless twice chosen successively, refuse the office. vii. P. 75.
- Governour's island. i. (xxxi.) iv. 266. garden. i. (xxxi.) an island



- in boston harbour. vi. 479. granted to governour winthrop. vii. P. 58.
- Gowie, rev. dr. episcopal missionary to south carolina. ii. 213.
- Grain, indian. iv. 35.
- Grampusses at long island. vi. 673.
- Grant, capt. arrives in the james. vii. P. 61.
- Grant, ———. iii. 236.
- Grant of territory three miles north of merrimack, and three miles south of charles river to new england planters. ii. 63. ditto to merchants. v. 89. of cape ann by council of plymouth to captain mason, copy of. vi. 614. to mason and gorges, of territory between sagadahock and merrimack. iv. 616. of general court to cambridge. iv. 77.
- Grantham reduces ingram. i. 75. at west point. 77.
- Granville, treaty of. ii. 4. 5. 7. 8.
- Grapes, some hints about rearing. ix. 142.
- Grave of the benevolent trout. iii. 8.
- Gravelly islands. iii. 20.
- Graves, hon. thomas, of charlestown. ii. 164. v. 122. 177. admiral. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. 29. arrives in the ship plough, with familists, who have a patent for sagadahock, called plough patent; but they go to wtertown, where the ship goes to pieces. 31 brings in the ship elizabeth, passengers, dutch sheep and mares. P. 92.
- Gravescant, long island. vi. 669.
- Gray, edward, of kingston. iii. 167. 188. iv. 93.
- Gray, john. iii. 209.
- Gray, lieut. viii. 157.
- Gray, harrison. v. 23.
- Gray, general, plunders the inhabitants of martha's vineyard. iii. 89.
- Gray, john. iii. 213.
- Gray, hon. william. i. 125.
- Gray, thomas. x. 29.
- Gray, francis-c. esq. x. 191.
- Gray, ———. iii. 66.
- Great barrington. iii. 249.
- Great boar's head, in hampton, new hampshire. iv. 190.
- Great neck, in rochester. iv. 251.
- Great osage indians. ii. 31.
- Great pond in chilmark. iii. 41.
- in edgartown. 81. in haverhill. iv. 121. 122. in boscawen, new-hampshire. x. 72.
- Great james pond. iii. 46.
- Great britain, cost of canada to. iii. 122.
- Great square, at plymouth. iii. 195.
- Great herring pond, in plymouth. iii. 181.
- Great bay. iii. 190.
- Great hope, ship, of ipswich. v. 200.
- Greaves, thomas. ii. 177.
- Greaves, thomas, judge. ii. 178.
- Grecian faith necessary to him, who trades at boston. ii. 100.
- Green, master richard, one of the managers of weston's plantation, dies. ix. 82.
- Green, ———, forms the second baptist church in england. ix. 197.
- Green, john, his epitaph. ii. 179.
- Green, john. vi. 337. vii. 93. 98. a petitioner, with gorton and others, to col. nichols and others, king's commissioners. viii. 68. ix. 170. 192. deputy governor of rhode island. 201.
- Green, rev. henry, of reading. vi. 416. vii. 51.
- Green, n. viii. 44.
- Green, ———, printer. ii. 103. 124.
- Green, john. ii. 179.
- Green, jacob. ii. 179.
- Green, mary. ii. 179.
- Green, nathaniel. x. 27.
- Green, t. a printer, in boston. viii. 120.
- Green, rev. joseph, of yarmouth. iii. 12. 17.
- Green, col. christopher. ii. 227. 230. 231. 232. 233. 235.
- Green, jacob. x. 176.
- Green, rev. benjamin. iii. 269.
- Green, sergeant francis. ii. 175.
- Green, james. ii. 180.
- Green, benjamin, instructor. ii. 180.
- Green bay. ii. 10.
- Green hill, in sudbury. iv. 56.
- Green mountain. ix. 131.
- Green river. vii. 172.
- Green spring. i. 69. secured for berkeley. 79.
- Green, or great neck hill, in rochester. iv. 254.
- Green's harbour. iii. 162. 203. vii. 132. grants made at, by plymouth. 75. x. 65. cut. 70.

- Greenland, or karalit language is spoken in asia. ix. 233.
- Greenleaf, benjamin. iv. 169.
- Greenleaf, lieut. vii. 55.
- Greenough, rev. william, of newtown. ii. 152.
- Greenough, ebenezer. iv. 169.
- Greenough, nathaniel. vii. 135.
- Greensmith, ———, punished for misrepresenting the opinions of ministers. v. 294.
- Greenville, sir richard, his colony. v. 9.
- Griffin, hon. cyrus, commissioner to creek indians. iii. 249.
- Griffin, ship, arrives from england with 200 passengers. i. 169. v. 169. brings a part of mr. wilson's gift of ammunition to massachusetts. viii. 228.
- Griffith, george. v. 215.
- Griggs, ———. ii. 142.
- Grigson, thomas, magistrate of new haven, goes to england for a patent for new haven. vi. 321. is drowned. 322. 466.
- Grimes, ———. iii. 183.
- Grindall, ———. viii. 112.
- Griswold, bishop. vii. 167.
- Grose's antiquities. iii. 183.
- Gross venters indians. See fall indians. ii. 41.
- Grosvenor, rev. ebenezer, of scituate. iv. 233. 234.
- Groton, massachusetts, settled. vi. 545.
- Grubb, william. ii. 238.
- Grubbendunk, a great officer in belgia. viii. 135.
- Grunter, description of. iii. 56.
- Gryse, dr. ii. 187.
- Guadaloupe river. ii. 25.
- Guard, theodore de la. v. 155.
- Guardians of mashpee indians. iii. 10.
- Guilford, connecticut, settled. vi. 319.
- Gulf of st. lawrence. ii. 11.
- Gull island. iii. 78.
- Guns for training, not to be charged with bullets, except in certain cases. vii. 63. not to be fired at night. vii. P. 26. not to be sold to indians. vii. P. 1.
- Gurdon, john. vi. 349.
- Gurdy, hannah. x. 177.
- Gurling, ———. v. 162.
- Gurnet, the. iii. 180. 182. hill. iii. 189. 204. fort. iii. 197. nose. v. 56.
- Gurney, rev. david, of middleborough. vii. 167. 170.
- Gustavus, king of sweden, lands in pomerania. vii. P. 17. an account of his war in germany, in 1631. vii. P. 54. 55. 56. killed, to the great regret of protestants. vii. P. 81.
- Guy, edwin. v. 215.

## H.

- Habeas corpus, proceedings about in massachusetts, 1707. viii. 240—242.
- Haddington, viscount, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Hadley, samuel. viii. 45.
- Hadley, thomas. viii. 45.
- Hadley, town. iii. 247. settled in consequence of difficulties in the churches of hartford, etc. vi. 316. 543.
- Hadleys, a harbour. iii. 75.
- Hagar, uriah. iii. 269.
- Hagar, a domestick, saves two of rev. mr. rolfe's children. iv. 131.
- Hagley. iii. 169.
- Haines, john. See haynes.
- Haldimand, general. iv. 213.
- Hale, robert. vii. P. 69.
- Hale, thomas, sen. viii. 106.
- Hale, mores. iv. 90. 91. 142.
- Hale, rev. mores, of chester, new hampshire. ix. 368.
- Hale, deborough. x. 177.
- Hale, nathan, esq. x. 191.
- Hales, ———, goes to rhode island. vi. 340. becomes a disciple of mrs. lutchinson. 341.
- Halfway pond. iii. 164. 175. 200. iv. 287.
- Halifax, lord. i. (xxviii.)
- Halifax, massachusetts, soil and business. iii. 164. notes on; incorporation and mills. iv. 279. 281. rivers, brooks and ponds. 280. iron ore; houses and families; longevity of inhabitants. 281. church history. 282.
- Halket, col. sir peter, killed at brad-dock's defeat. viii. 154. 156.
- Halket, francis, major of brigade. viii. 156.

- Halket, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Hall, goodwife. x. 69.  
 Hall, edward. vii. 138.  
 Hall, samuel. v. 170.  
 Hall, judah. iii. 208.  
 Hall, ———. iii. 17.  
 Hall, rev. avery, of rochester, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Hall, deacon nathan. x. 177.  
 Hall, dorothy. x. 178.  
 Hall, rev. thomas, of leghorn. viii. 167.  
 Hall, deacon moses. ii. 172.  
 Hall, professor f. his statistical account of middlebury, vermont. ix. 123.  
 Hall, moses, instructor. ii. 180.  
 Haller i. 108.  
 Hallock, rev. moses, of plainfield. viii. 171.  
 Hamilton, or ipswich hamlet. vii. 120.  
 Hamilton, marquis. a patentee of new england. v. 217. his grant of a part of connecticut. vi. 309. sent with troops to germany. vii. P. 55.  
 Hamilton, capt. viii. 157.  
 Hamilton, lieut. iv. 219.  
 Hamilton, duke, executed. iv. 157.  
 Hamilton, dr. i. 138.  
 Hamlin, ———. iv. 260.  
 Hammond, thomas, a patentee of new england. v. 217.  
 Hammond, john. iv. 259. x. 37.  
 Hammond, samuel. iv. 259. 260.  
 Hammond, thomas. iv. 261. x. 37.  
 Hammond, ———. iv. 260. 277. 294.  
 Hampden, john, a friend to massachusetts. i. (xxvii.) iv. 158.  
 Hampton, rev. ———, persecuted by lord cornbury. . i. 146.  
 Hampton, new hampshire, settled. v. 174. 236. or winnicowet, planted. 242. dispute about title to. 242. contentions in. vi. 412. 413. in the county of northfolk, being 17th church gathered. vii. 17. longevity in. x. 181. indian barbarities at. vi. 33.  
 Hanbury, ———. iii. 164. 184. iv. 249.  
 Hanbury, william. iv. 100.  
 Hanchet, capt. ii. 233.  
 Hancock, john, governour. ii. 46. vii. 163. x. 29.  
 Hancock, rev. nathaniel, of tisbury. iii. 74.  
 Hancock, ———. iii. 66.  
 Hancock, mary. vii. 163.  
 Handelian musical society at amherst, new hampshire. ii. 249.  
 Handmaid arrives at plymouth, dismasted, with passengers, and cows. vii. P. 5. 10. master comes to boston. P. 6.  
 Hanes, midshipman. viii. 156.  
 Hanmore, ———. iv. 241.  
 Hansard, capt. viii. 156.  
 Hansford taken by beverley, and executed. i. 62.  
 Harden, or harding. xii. 151.  
 Harden, nathaniel. vii. 165.  
 Hardine, ———. vi. 343.  
 Harding, or harden. vii. 151.  
 Hardwick, purchased of indians. i. 180.  
 Hard-wood, a place on st. peter's river. ii. 41.  
 Hardy, thomas. vii. P. 86.  
 Hare indians. ii. 43.  
 Harlackenden, roger, leader of the military. iii. 148. v. 177. assistant. v. 133. mistake about. vii. P. 39.  
 Harley, robert. vi. 349.  
 Harlow, capt. edward. v. 13. comes to new england; seizes indians. 37. attacked by indians. 37. 38. carries five indians to england. 38.  
 Harlston, richard, capt. of the jewel. v. 129.  
 Harmon, capt. with troops, kills father ralle. viii. 245.  
 Harmon's journal, quoted. x. 131. 145.  
 Harones indians. viii. 246. 247.  
 Harraseekit, indian name of freeport. iv. 179.  
 Harrington, ———. i. (xiv.)  
 Harrington, rev. timothy, of lancaster. iii. 269. vii. 163.  
 Harrington, mrs. mary. iii. 271.  
 Harrington, jonathan. viii. 45.  
 Harrington, caleb. viii. 45.  
 Harris, william. vii. 98. ix. 170. 182.  
 Harris, arthur. vii. 133. 147. 149. 150. 153. 155.  
 Harris, thomas. viii. 107.  
 Harris surprised by beverley. i. 67.  
 Harris, isaac. vii. 149. 150. 157.  
 Harris, benjamin, printer. iv. 104.  
 Harris, capt. josiah. ii. 175.



- Harris, capt. william. ii. 175.  
 Harris, dr. his note on jamaica. iii. 285.  
 Harris, rev. dr. thaddeus-mason, of dorchester. i. 148. procures a copy of wonder-working providence in england. ii. 49. 152. 178. account of dorchester quoted. iii. 72.  
 Harris, rev. dr. william, of new york. x. 192.  
 Harris, william. vii. 140.  
 Harris, thomas. ii. 176. 179. 180.  
 Harris, luther. ii. 158.  
 Harris, ———. ii. 142.  
 Harrison, rev. ———, ordered to quit virginia. vi. 522. comes to new england. 523. settles in ireland. 524. viii. 31.  
 Harrison, capt. lieut. viii. 156.  
 Hart, rev. john, of east guilford, connecticut, becomes an episcopalian. ii. 129. 131. iv. 298. 299.  
 Hart, thomas. viii. 107.  
 Hart, capt. lieut. viii. 156.  
 Hartford, connecticut, settlement. iii. 151. church. iv. 1. 30. or suckiaug, settled. vi. 307. difficulties in church. 315. settled. viii. 122.  
 Hartwell, jonas. vii. 169.  
 Harvard, rev. john, of charlestown, his donation to harvard college. i. (xxxi.) ii. 109. 171. 177. v. 237. vii. 16. 28.  
 Harvard college. i. 105. anatomical museum. 117. vote on the death of rev. dr. eliot. 239. funds for missions to indians. ii. 47. described by dunton. 107. 108. iii. 137. a paper relating to. iv. 64. address of its fellows to governor dudley. iv. 65. vote of plymouth colony respecting. 85. v. 237. contributions in aid of. 237. furnishes godley ministers. 237. difficulties at, about mr. eaton, its first instructor, who is removed. 247. its feoffees appointed, to consist of all the magistrates, and the elders of the six next adjoining churches. vi. 372. two thousand acres of land given to. vi. 555. contributions for erecting new building. 610. established; description of buildings; £500 and charlestown ferry granted to; colonies grant; privileges granted. vii. 16. 27. 28. 29. 168. state in 1665; indians educating there, etc. viii. 65. 66. letter about. x. 187. receipts from charlestown ferry in president dunster's time. 187.  
 Harvest, the first at plymouth. ix. 60.  
 Harvey, susan. x. 178.  
 Harward, rev. thomas. i. 107.  
 Harwood, george, of london, treasurer of massachusetts company. v. 121. 138. vii. P. 9. viii. 228.  
 Hasanameset, or grafton. vi. 544.  
 Haselrig, sir arthur. i. (xxviii.) ix. 185.  
 Haskell, john. iv. 259. 260.  
 Haskell, major elnathan. iv. 261. x. 37.  
 Haskell's cove. iv. 260.  
 Hastings, rev. joseph-s. of northampton, new hampshire, embraces sandemanianism. iv. 291.  
 Hatch, william, sen. an early settler of scituate. iv. 78. 220. 229. 239. 243. vii. 147.  
 Hatch, jeremiah. iv. 241.  
 Hatch, walter. iv. 241.  
 Hatch, colonel, of dorchester. iv. 131.  
 Hatch, rev. nymphas, of tisbury. iii. 74.  
 Hatch's island. iv. 224.  
 Hatfield. iii. 247. attacked by indians; its inhabitants killed and captured. vi. 636. 637.  
 Hathaway, ———. iv. 260. 294.  
 Hatherly, timothy. iv. 239. 241. founder of scituate. 220. 221. 224. 225. 235. 241. v. 82. vii. 122. P. 31. 34. 61. 64—corrections.  
 Hathorne, william, his character. iv. 24. agent for massachusetts to d'aulney. vi. 494. 543. vii. 55. viii. 88. 98. 100. 110.  
 Hathorne, capt. lieutenant. viii. 156.  
 Haugh. See hough.  
 Hauxshaw, lieutenant. iv. 218.  
 Haven, elias. viii. 45.  
 Haven, rev. thomas, of reading. viii. 178. 179.  
 Haven, rev. samuel, of portsmouth. ii. 149. iv. 78.  
 Haven, rev. joseph, of rochester, new hampshire. iii. 104.  
 Haven, nathaniel-a. x. 192.

Haven, mrs. ii. 168.

Haverhill, massachusetts, indian deed of. iv. 170. historical sketch of; river fishery. iv. 121. ponds, bridges, situation and aqueduct. 122. buildings, trade, manufactures and ship building. 123. distilleries. 124. schools and library. 125. newspapers, fire club. 126. indian wars and votes respecting the defence of the town. 127. attacked by indians. 128. 130. meeting-house preserved by mr. davis; sufferings by the great descent. 131. fort against indians, and historical dates. 132. votes an allowance for killing a wolf. 133. extracts from town records; throat distemper at; alms-house. 134. meeting-houses; dissensions; petition to general court. 135. inhabitants; ecclesiastical history; ministers and church gathered. 138. 142. parishes. 147. 150. baptist church. 150. planted; origin of name. v. 137. church gathered. vi. 416. being the 26th in massachusetts. viii. 1.

Haward, or howard. vii. 151.

Haward, john. vii. 138. 147. 149. 151. 157. 159.

Haward, ensign. vii. 144. 157.

Haward, ensign john. vii. 149. 150.

Haward, james. vii. 149. 150.

Haward, jonathan. vii. 149. 150.

Haward, ephraim. vii. 150.

Hawkes, ———. iv. 52.

Hawk's meadow brook. iv. 134.

Hawkins, thomas. vi. 495. builds a ship of 400 tons at boston, 1645. vi. 524. 525. x. 24.

Hawkins, william. ix. 170.

Hawkins, benjamin. ii. 4.

Hawkins, nathaniel. ii. 176. 180.

Hawkins, sir richard, a patentee of new england. v. 217.

Hawley, rev. gideon, of mashpee. ii. 47. iii. 7—14. donation of his church. ix. 163.

Hawley, ———. iv. 302.

Hawthorne, captain. See hathorne.

Hayden, josiah. vii. 160.

Hayes, elizabeth. x. 179.

Hayley, mrs. x. 176.

Hayley, ———. iii. 194.

Haynes, john, arrives. iii. 134. governor of massachusetts. 147. v. 157. 159. removes to hartford. iii. 151. gives notice of indian hostilities; governor of connecticut. vi. 447. 449. his exertions to bring about a confederation. 466. vii. 129.

Haynes, joseph, writes against rev. mr. bacheller. iv. 148.

Haynes, deacon josiah. viii. 45.

Haynes, joshua. viii. 45.

Hayward, dr. lemel. i. 109.

Hayward, thomas. vii. 138. 141. 147. 149. 151. 159.

Hayward, joseph. vii. 143. 149. 159.

Hayward, elisha. vii. 143. 149.

Hayward, ansel. vii. 147.

Hayward, lieutenant thomas. vii. 149. 150.

Hayward, john. vii. 149. 150. 157.

Hayward, captain. vii. 157.

Hayward, nathaniel. vii. 157.

Hayward, dorothy. vii. 159.

Hayward, beza. vii. 160. 161. 170.

Hayward, barzillai. vii. 169.

Hayward, nathan. vii. 170.

Hayward, oliver. vii. 171.

Hayward, james. viii. 45.

Hazard, ebenezer, account of the loganian library. ii. 269. remarks relating to the author of "a brief view of religious liberty in new york." 270. letter correcting errors in rev. mr. schermerhorn's report. iv. 65. quoted. vii. 77. viii. 167.

Hazard, brig. iv. 285.

Hazard's historical collections, referred to. viii. 47.

Hazzen, richard. iv. 127. 168.

Heal, sir warwick, a patentee of new england. v. 217.

Heard, widow. x. 179.

Hearne, ———, maintains that adam was not created upright. vi. 337.

Hearne, the traveller. ii. 43. iii. 180.

Hearsey, william. vii. 123.

Heath, robert, a patentee of new england. v. 217.

Heath, william, of roxbury, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 86.

Heath, ———, merchant, of boston. ii. 104. 124.

Heath, joseph, his letter to governour shute, quoted. viii. 265.

- Heberden, dr. william. vii. 71.  
 Hecatompolis of doctor cotton mather, quoted. i. (xxvi.)  
 Heckewelder, rev. john, historical account of indians referred to. ix. 225. 227. 232. 240. x. 98, et post 129. 137. 150.  
 Hector, ship. v. 241.  
 Hedge, ———, "a valiant, resolute gentlemen. viii. 140.  
 Hedge, levi, professor, of harvard college. x. 191.  
 Heidelberg, now new london, new hampshire. viii. 175.  
 Heister. i. 108.  
 Hell-gate, description of. vi. 670.  
 Hemmenway, daniel. viii. 45.  
 Hemp, abundant in massachusetts. vi. 36. at connecticut river, apparently raised by indians, and indigenous. vii. P. 94. early in new england. ix. 19.  
 Hempstead plain. iii. 23.  
 Hempstead, long island. vi. 669.  
 Henchman, rev. nathaniel, of lynn. viii. 176.  
 Henderson, howard. x. 176.  
 Hendrick, a stockbridge indian. ii. 3.  
 Henley, col. david, account of his trial. viii. 295. 296. anecdote of. 297.  
 Henley, samuel. ii. 178.  
 Henley, ezekiel. ii. 178.  
 Henry viii. forbids the dedication of churches, as productive of riots. vii. P. 77.  
 Herley, captain, with captain john matthew, hobson, and sturton, and epenow and manawet, two american indians, sent on discovery to new england. ix. 5. attacked by indians; expedition defeated. 5. 7.  
 Herrick, rev. jacob, of durham. iv. 181.  
 Herrick, ———, of salem. ii. 117.  
 Herriman, john. x. 179.  
 Herring, rev. dr. archbishop of canterbury, a great and good man. ii. 200.  
 Herring pond. iii. 15. 17. 176. 201. iv. 92.  
 Herring wear. iii. 185.  
 Herring brook. iv. 225. 526.  
 Herring river. viii. 192.  
 Herrings on the coast of sweden, a fact about. iv. 295.  
 Hersey, ezekiel. i. 116.  
 Hersey, abner. i. 116.  
 Hersey, mrs. i. 116.  
 Hersey, william. vii. 120.  
 Hewes, ———, quarrel with plymouth people about cape ann. v. 110.  
 Hewes, john. iv. 239. 303.  
 Hewes's cross brook. iv. 303.  
 Hewitt, ———. iii. 184. 185.  
 Heydon, william. viii. 139.  
 Hiacoomes, a christian indian. vi. 665.  
 Hibbins, william. iii. 285. iv. 110. vi. 340. sent to england. 371. 546. 574. x. 24.  
 Hibbins, mrs. hung as a witch. vi. 574.  
 Hicks, samuel. iv. 100.  
 Hicks, robert. iv. 249.  
 Hicks, daniel. iv. 241.  
 Hicks, john. viii. 45.  
 Hicks, mrs. ii. 116.  
 Hide, richard. viii. 106.  
 Hides, abundant in massachusetts. vii. 36.  
 Higgins, ———. iv. 260.  
 Higgins, joseph, joseph, jr. and christopher, of lyme, connecticut, their donation to boston during the port bill. ix. 159.  
 Higginson, rev. francis. ii. 71. iii. 154. minister of leicester, england; silenced for nonconformity; arrives. v. 112. 116. 119. 121. dies. 120. 122. 181.  
 Higginson, rev. john. i. 170. 204. his character. ii. 117. 282. v. (iv.) 251. viii. 111. 112.  
 High-gate. iii. 179.  
 Hight, elizabeth. x. 176.  
 Hildersham, rev. arthur, of ashby de la zouch, a friend to massachusetts colony. v. 121. malleus brownistarium. 118. 121. vii. P. 12. notice of; silenced; his motto. P. 53. his works esteemed in new england. P. 54.  
 Hill, jacob. vii. 170.  
 Hill, joseph. iv. 25. vii. 55.  
 Hill, joseph, a benefactor of harvard college. ii. 108.  
 Hill, ralph. ii. 162. iv. 76.  
 Hill, ralph, jun. ii. 162.  
 Hill, jonathan. vii. 148. 150. 155.  
 Hiller. ———. iv. 260.  
 Hilliard, rev. timothy, of cambridge, tutor. i. 231. x. 170.



- Hilliard, rev. timothy, of sudbury. iv. 59.  
 Hilliard, william, printer. ii. 283.  
 Hillman, ———. iii. 66.  
 Hills, hercules. iv. 240. 243.  
 Hillsborough county, new hampshire, account of. vii. 65. manufactures in. 70.  
 Hilton, edward. v. 214. 215. vi. 354. 356.  
 Hilton, william. v. 214.  
 Hilton, ———. vii. P. 73.  
 Hilyard, job. viii. 106.  
 Hinckley, thomas, governour of plymouth colony. i. (xxii.) 176. iv. 81. 247. vii. 144. his manuscripts. 184. william penn's letter to. 185. viii. 182.  
 Hinckley, samuel. iv. 81. 239. 247.  
 Hinckley papers, extracts from. vii. 185.  
 Hingham. i. (ix.) being 13th church gathered; sends lumber to boston; its families; quarrel amongst its inhabitants. iii. 160. 233. petition of its inhabitants. iv. 108. fined for presenting the petition. 109. petition thrown over board at sea. 115. or bear's cove, settled. v. 153. church gathered. 192. ordination at. 279. quarrel about the choice of a captain. vi. 417.  
 Hinton, sir thomas. ix. 119.  
 Hirst, samuel. viii. 243.  
 Hirst, william. viii. 112.  
 Hispaniola discovered. v. 8.  
 Historical transactions, quoted. x. 101. et post.  
 Historical society. See massachusetts historical society.  
 Historical collections, notice of. ii. 284.  
 History of new england, by hubbard. v. and vi.  
 History of the county of worcester, referred to. vii. 178.  
 Hitchetee, indian language. ii. 18.  
 Hitchcock, rev. dr. enos, of providence. vii. 164.  
 Hix, robert. iv. 85.  
 Hixon, mrs. x. 177.  
 Hixon, joanna. x. 177.  
 Hoar, rev. leonard, president of harvard college, dies. i. 107.  
 Hobart, rev. peter, arrives. iii. 160. of hingham. iv. 109. trial. 110. 120. v. 192. difficulties in church. vi. 418.  
 Hobart, rev. noah. ii. 194.  
 Hobart, ———. iii. 111.  
 Hobart, rev. james, of berlin, vermont. iii. 111.  
 Hobart, elihu. vii. 119.  
 Hobart, ———. vii. 123.  
 Hobart's works in abington. vii. 172.  
 Hobbamacke, indian, a friend to the english. v. 67. 68. 70. 71.  
 Hobbamoquoi, or hobbamock, an indian devil. iii. 127. vi. 651. ix. 92.  
 Hobby, rev. william. viii. 54. 81. 84. 85. 178.  
 Hobson, capt. v. 13. comes to new england. 39. viii. 156. with captain herley and others, and two american indians, epenow and manawet, sent on discovery to new england; attacked by indians of new england; defeated and returns. ix. 6. 7.  
 Hockamock meadows in bridgewater. vii. 173.  
 Hockamock, now eastern and raynham. vii. 141.  
 Hocking, ———, captain of lord say and lord brooke's pinnace, killed at kennebeck in a quarrel with plymouth people. v. 167.  
 Hodges, ———, expelled oxford university. vii. P. 52. 53.  
 Hodges, ———, arrives at boston with an account of the loss of captain pierce's ship. vii. P. 86.  
 Hodges, henry. vii. 164.  
 Hodgkin, william. viii. 107.  
 Hoffman, martin. viii. 321.  
 Hog Island. iv. 289.  
 Hogs brought to massachusetts. vii. P. 30. breaking into cornfields, may be killed. vii. P. 93. early carried to virginia. viii. 210.  
 Hoit, deborah. x. 179.  
 Holbrook, samuel. iv. 179.  
 Holbrook, john. vii. 122. 123.  
 Holden, ———. x. 182.  
 Holden, randall, one of gorton's company. vi. 507. vii. 93. a petitioner with gorton and others to col. nichols and others, king's commissioners. viii. 68. ix. 182. 201.  
 Holden, ———. x. 39.

- Holden, oliver, esq. teacher of baptists at charlestown. ii. 172. 179.  
 Holden, mrs. ii. 187.  
 Holgrave, john. viii. 229.  
 Holland, at war with england. vi. 323. with spain. vii. P. 17. 81. makes peace with england. x. 60.  
 Holland, earl of, executed. iv. 157.  
 Holland, cornelius. vi. 349. 510. ix. 185.  
 Holland, ———. ii. 144.  
 Holland, captain. iv. 95. surveys american coast. 96.  
 Hollet, john. iv. 241.  
 Holley, rev. horace, of boston, his anniversary sermon at plymouth. vii. 133.  
 Holliman, ezeziel, rebaptizes roger williams, and is rebaptized by him. v. 338. ix. 170. 197.  
 Holliman, mary. ix. 197.  
 Hollis, thomas. ii. 190. his letter to dr. andrew eliot, about massachusetts coin. ii. 276.  
 Hollis, new hampshire, its ministers and churches. viii. 178.  
 Holman, john. vii. 159. 160. viii. 231.  
 Holman, john. vii. P. 68.  
 Holmes, lieut. vii. P. 71.  
 Holmes, rev. ———, of duxbury. x. 68.  
 Holmes, william, sen. iv. 240.  
 Holmes, ———. x. 67.  
 Holmes, abraham. iv. 259. 260.  
 Holmes, rev. william, of chilmark. iii. 74.  
 Holmes, abraham, his letter to rev. dr. holmes. x. 29. his account of rochester. 30.  
 Holmes, captain melzar. ii. 180.  
 Holmes, rev. dr. abiel, annals. i. (xxiii. xxv.) ii. 45. 160. 254. iv. 70. v. (vi.) vii. 181. acknowledgment of donations in behalf of massachusetts historical society. ii. 285. iii. 292. iv. 304. vii. 297. viii. 329. ix. 269. x. 188. 29. 82. 124.  
 Holmes, jedediah. iii. 206. 213.  
 Holmes, ———. iv. 260.  
 Holmes's hole. iii. 39. 48. 53. 70.  
 Holston river. vii. 58.  
 Holt, moses. i. 249.  
 Holton, dr. samuel, of danvers. iv. 302.  
 Holyoke, elizur. x. 26. 27.  
 Holyoke, dr. edward-a. i. 112. his thermometrical observations at salem. iii. 22.  
 Homan, jo. viii. 197.  
 Homes, joseph. iii. 208.  
 Homes, isaac. iii. 208.  
 Hooke, ———, an eminent counselor. i. (xxvii.) his opinion respecting the charter of new england. (xxviii.)  
 Hooke, rev. william, of new haven, goes to england. vi. 330. 663. labours to convert indians. 657. formerly of taunton. vii. 20.  
 Hooker, rev. thomas, of hartford, a great divine. ii. 260. arrives. iii. 134. first settles at cambridge. 137. 139. removes to hartford, connecticut. iii. 151. iv. 1. v. 136. 165. 169. 182. 189. moderator of synod at cambridge. 298. principal cause of settlement on connecticut river. vi. 305. 307. 313. death. 315. 409. opposed to sending men to england to consult with divines there. 409. his "survey," in answer to mr. rutherford, sent to england to be printed. 415. exertions to bring about a confederacy. 466. epitaph. 541. vii. 126. 128. P. 36. viii. 17. 124. 152.  
 Hooksett falls. vii. 66.  
 Hooper, ———. vii. 155.  
 Hooper, thomas. vii. 165.  
 Hooper, thomas. vii. 160.  
 Hooper, william. i. 249.  
 Hooper, hezekiah. vii. 161.  
 Hooper, rev. hezekiah. vii. 170.  
 Hooper, thomas. ii. 172.  
 Hooper, susanna. ii. 168.  
 Hop brook, in sudbury. iv. 55.  
 Hope, ship, capt. girling. v. 162.  
 Hopewell, ship. v. 129. arrives at salem. vii. P. 10.  
 Hoph, rev. ———. vii. 51.  
 Hopkins, edward. i. 231. v. 262. governour of connecticut colony; dies in england. vi. 329. vii. 1. 8.  
 Hopkins, stephen. iii. 184. iv. 100. v. 67. assistant of plymouth colony. vii. P. 83. ix. 38. 47. x. 58.  
 Hopkins, thomas. ix. 170.  
 Hopkins, stephen, governor of rhode

- island, one of the signers of the declaration of independence, probably the author of the account of providence. ix. 166.  
 Hopkins, rev. samuel, his historical memoirs of housatunnuk indians, referred to. x. 124.  
 Horace, quoted. iii. 229.  
 Horn, widow. x. 178.  
 Hornbeck, dr. professor of divinity at leyden. v. 189. vi. 641.  
 Horse neck, in carver. iv. 275.  
 Horses, none in new england. vii. P. 58.  
 Hosack, dr. david. x. 192.  
 Hosmer, titus, esq. of middletown, connecticut. ii. 240.  
 Hosmer, abner. viii. 45.  
 Hospital, marine, at charlestown. i. 125. general, petition for. i. 127. at rainsford island. i. 108. surgeons. i. 111. mates. i. 111.  
 Hospitals for inoculation. i. 108. military. i. 111.  
 Hough, allerton. v. 259. vii. 129. x. 23. 24.  
 Hough, ———, his orchard and fruits at nansamund, virginia. ix. 119.  
 Hough, joseph, of middlebury, vermont. ix. 128.  
 Houland, john. ix. 38.  
 Hound's ditch, at duxbury. iii. 179.  
 House, samuel. iv. 239.  
 House, ———. vii. 123.  
 House of sir h. vane, in boston, still standing. i. (xxx.)  
 Houses for bathing in boston, salem, &c. i. 127,  
 Houses forbidden to be thatched. vii. P. 23.  
 Houston, rev. john, of bedford, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Houston, ———, a black man, kept the first tavern in tyngsborough; his son fitted for college. iv. 194.  
 Hovey, rev. ivory, of rochester, afterwards of plymouth, his character. iii. 200. 201. his diary. 201. iv. 263. x. 31.  
 Hovey, james. iv. 87.  
 How, ephraim, his sufferings at sea. vi. 644. 645.  
 How, lydia. x. 177.  
 How, isaac-r. iv. 169.  
 Howard, john. vii. 151.  
 Howard, ———, in virginia. i. 67.  
 Howard, daniel. vii. 145. 146.  
 Howard, robert. vii. 146.  
 Howard, ephraim. vii. 159.  
 Howard, dr. abiel. vii. 151. 169.  
 Howard, daniel. iii. 9. vii. 160. 161.  
 Howard, rev. dr. simeon, of boston. vii. 152. 169.  
 Howard, ———, esq. ii. 229.  
 Howard, hon. daniel. vii. 157. 160. 161.  
 Howard, rev. bezael, of springfield. vii. 152. 169.  
 Howard, rev. zechariah, of canton. vii. 152. 170.  
 Howard, francis. vii. 109.  
 Howard, daniel. vii. 170.  
 Howard, eliakim. vii. 150.  
 Howard, gideon. vii. 160.  
 Howard, caleb. vii. 160.  
 Howard, john-e. vii. 169.  
 Howard farms. vii. 145. 146.  
 Howarth, lieut. viii. 157.  
 Howe, rev. joseph, of boston. ii. 259.  
 Howe, sir william. ii. 167.  
 Howe, general robert. iii. 238.  
 Howe, william. viii. 115.  
 Howell, ———. iv. 224.  
 Howland, john. iii. 184. iv. 220. arrives at plymouth in 1620. iv. 278. assistant of plymouth colony. vii. P. 83. x. 68.  
 Howland, henry. x. 57. 69.  
 Howland, john. iv. 278.  
 Howland, joseph. iv. 278.  
 Howland, isaac. iv. 278.  
 Howland, jabez. iv. 278.  
 Howland, john, sen. iv. 278.  
 Howland, rev. john, of carver. iv. 277. sketch of. 278.  
 Howland, john. iv. 278.  
 Howland, ———. iv. 294.  
 Howldon. See holden, randall.  
 Howlet, thomas. vii. P. 86.  
 Hubbard, william, subscribes £50 for massachusetts colony. v. 122. sworn a freeman. vii. P. 58. viii. 91.  
 Hubbard, rev. peter. See hobart.  
 Hubbard, rev. william, of ipswich; history of new england, at large, 5th and 6th vols.; account of the rise of baptists. i. 207. notice of history. 209. visited and described by john dunton. ii. 121. manuscript of history copied by judge oliver. 260. prospectus of history. 283. list



- and various notices of works. 281.  
 282. letters respecting history.  
 iii. 286. iv. 24. 93. quoted. 138.  
 printed works. v. (iv.) opinion on  
 toleration. vi. 373. 374. quoted.  
 vii. 98. 158. 159. 190. remarks on  
 history. 125. vii. (prince's adver-  
 tisement.) history corrected. P.  
 25. 30. mistake corrected. P. 33.  
 64. history defective. viii. 99.
- Hubbard, richard. viii. 107.
- Hubbard, samuel. viii. 112.
- Hubbard, thomas, estimate of the  
 expenses of massachusetts, in 1764,  
 including forts, salaries, &c. and  
 the bounty on wheat. viii. 198.  
 199. x. 28.
- Hubbard, captain, wounded. ii. 246.
- Hudibras, origin of one of its jokes.  
 v. 77.
- Hudson, capt. henry, coasts along  
 north america. v. 13. 73. disco-  
 vers hudson's river, in 1610. vi.  
 666.
- Hudson, francis. iv. 203.
- Hudson, ———. vii. 155.
- Hudson's straits. ii. 11. v. 14.
- Hudson's bay. ii. 42.
- Hudson's river. v. 18. origin of its  
 name. 13. the original destina-  
 tion of the plymouth colony. 50.  
 discovered and planted. vi. 666.  
 dutch settlement at visited by capt.  
 darmer. ix. 11.
- Huet, mrs. of hingham. vi. 422.
- Huet, rev. ———. vii. 21.
- Hughes, james, of boston, quoted.  
 viii. 316.
- Hull, rev. ———, of weymouth. v.  
 192.
- Hull, ———. iii. 285. viii. 90. 112.
- Hull, lieut. iv. 218.
- Hull, settlement of. vi. 409.
- Humane society of boston. i. 120.  
 list of addresses before. 121. its  
 huts. iii. 26.
- Humane society of newburyport. i.  
 121.
- Humbirds early found in new eng-  
 land. v. 25.
- Humboldt, baron william von. one of  
 the authors of the mithridates. ix.  
 231. 232. quoted. x. 123. 150.  
 192.
- Hume, quoted. i. (xiv.)
- Hummock pond, at nantucket. iii.  
 26. 34.
- Humphrey, john, deputy governour of  
 company in england, arrives; set-  
 tles at lynn; chosen assistant; re-  
 turns to england. i. (xxiv.) v. 106.  
 requests mr. higgins to come  
 to new england. 112. assistant.  
 121. 122. chosen deputy gover-  
 nour, but not arriving, mr. t. dud-  
 ley was chosen in his room. 124.  
 146. comes to new england with  
 propositions from persons in eng-  
 land, to come to massachusetts.  
 154. with lady susan, his wife, sister  
 to the earl of lincoln, arrives; brings  
 cattle with him. 170. returns to  
 england. 171. misfortune in his  
 family. vi. 379. appears before  
 privy council in behalf of massa-  
 chusetts. vii. P. 89. viii. 97. a  
 magistrate of massachusetts. vii.  
 129. assistant. P. 60. 92. viii.  
 229.
- Humphries, general david, commis-  
 sioner to creek indians. iii. 249.
- Hunkins, j. vi. 648.
- Hunt, capt. thomas, seizes indians,  
 and attempts to sell them to the  
 spaniards as slaves. v. 38. 39. 54.  
 defeated in his devilish projects by  
 the friars in the "straits," who in-  
 struct the indians in christianity.  
 ix. 6.
- Hunt, edmund. vii. 138. x. 57.  
 69. 70.
- Hunt, peter. iii. 208.
- Hunt. ———. iii. 17.
- Hunt, samuel, master of latin gram-  
 mar school at boston. i. 230.
- Hunter, sloop of war. ii. 239.
- Hunter, ———. i. 108.
- Hunting, capt. vi. 631.
- Hunting, elder enoch, of new london,  
 new hampshire. viii. 175.
- Huntingdon, long island. vi. 669.
- Huntington, jedidiah. i. 249. vii.  
 167.
- Huntington, rev. joshua, of boston.  
 vii. 166. 182.
- Huntington, rev. daniel, of bridgewa-  
 ter. vii. 166.
- Huntoon, charles. x. 179.
- Hurd, joseph, esq. of charlestown.  
 ii. 173. 177. 179. 180. 181.
- Hurd, joseph. ii. 178.
- Hurd, dr. isaac. ii. 178.
- Hurd, rev. isaac, of lynn. ii. 178.
- Hurd, charles. ii. 178.

- Hurd, benjamin. ii. 179. 180.  
 Hurd, benjamin, jun. ii. 181.  
 Huron, lake, indians on its borders. ii. 3.  
 Huron indian grammar, composed by father chaumont. viii. 250.  
 Hurricane in massachusetts. v. 162. in new england, 15th august, 1635. 199. 200.  
 Hurricane of october, 1804; effects at abington. vii. 114. 115.  
 Hurricane of 1815, notice of. x. 45.  
 Hurst, deacon. iii. 178.  
 Huse, abel. viii. 106.  
 Hutchins, thomas. viii. 97. x. 27.  
 Hutchinson, thomas. vii. P. 69.  
 Hutchinson, george. vii. P. 69.  
 Hutchinson, william, husband of mrs. ann hutchinson. v. 261. ruled by his wife; appointed magistrate. vi. 339. viii. 136. ix. 179. x. 23.  
 Hutchinson, mrs. ann, account of the disturbance created by in massachusetts. v. 280. character of. 284. outline of her argument before the court. 284. expelled from massachusetts; excommunicated by boston church. 285. 297. some of her opinions. 286. ordered to remove out of massachusetts on account of religious opinions. vi. 336. intends to go to pascataqua, but concludes to go to rhode island. 336. would have no magistrates; sends an admonition to church at boston. 338. while at prayer, an earthquake happens, which she attributes to the descent of the holy ghost; continues to create disturbances. 339. called a she gamaliel. 341. leaves rhode island and goes to the dutch, where she and others are killed by indians. 345.  
 Hutchinson, edward. ix. 179.  
 Hutchinson, francis, son of mrs. hutchinson, goes to boston, where he is imprisoned and fined for reproaching the churches. vi. 342. 343. killed by indians. 345. his letter from rev. john cotton. x. 184.  
 Hutchinson, edward, jun. ix. 179. x. 25.  
 Hutchinson, ephraim. viii. 44.  
 Hutchinson, capt. elisha. ii. 100. x. 25.  
 Hutchinson, hon. thomas. x. 27.  
 Hutchinson, edward. viii. 242. x. 27.  
 Hutchinson, william. x. 27.  
 Hutchinson, gov. thomas. i. (xxii.) his notice of rev. william hubbard. ii. 282. quoted. iii. 182. 221. 234. 255. 256. 287. 290. iv. 156. his furniture and library destroyed by a mob. v. (iii.) his remarks on hubbard's history. v. (v.) x. 28. his papers deposited in the library of the historical society, by order of the governour and council of massachusetts. 181.  
 Hutchinson, elisha. iii. 287. x. 192.  
 Hutchinson's history, appendix to, cited. i. (xxvii.) error in, corrected. ii. 274. unpublished volume of. iii. 287. quoted. iv. 57. 111. referred to. viii. 47. 52. 84. 97. 254.  
 Hutchinson's collection of papers referred to. viii. 49. 96. 102.  
 Huts erected by massachusetts humane society. iii. 26.  
 Huttamoiden, indian. v. 61.  
 Huxam. i. 108.  
 Hyde, dr. john-a. iv. 179.  
 Hyde, rev. ephraim, of rehoboth. vii. 166.  
 Hyde, joshua, esq. of middlebury, vermont. ix. 125.  
 Hyland, thomas. iv. 240.  
 Hymn, sung after celebration of 22d december. i. (xxx.)  
 "Hypocrisy unmasked." iv. 107. by mr. winslow. 116.  
 Hyslop, william. ii. 46. his gift of church plate to brookline. ii. 154.  
 Hyslop, david, gives a baptismal vase to brookline. ii. 154.  
 Hywassee, indian school at. iv. 67. 68.  
 I.  
 Ice in boston harbour breaks up, seven years successively, on 10th february. vii. P. 19. in plymouth harbour. iii. 196.  
 Ignatius, pun upon. iv. 103.  
 Igowam. iv. 296.  
 Illinois country visited by robertson; french settlement at. vii. 63.  
 Illonesé indians. ii. 7. 8.  
 Independence, brig. iv. 285.  
 Independence, sermon delivered on the day appointed for publishing it. vii. 177.

- Independents. i. 167. their opinions on church government. 200.
- Index of indian words in eliot's grammar, and select words from the bible, with their meanings. ix. (xlviii.) et post.
- Index of mohegan, chippeway, mohawk and shawanese words explained in edwards's observations on indian languages. x. 155.
- Index of the principal matters in edwards's observations on the indian languages and the editor's notes. x. 158.
- India creek. ii. 15.
- Indian brook. iii. 179.
- Indian hill. iii. 179.
- Indian head river. iv. 220. 227.
- Indian pond. iv. 269.
- "Indian grammar begun," by rev. john eliot, published at large. ix. 243, et post.; with introductory observations by j. pickering, esq. 223, et post.; and notes and observations by p. s. du ponceau, esq. 313, et post.; and supplementary observations, by j. pickering, esq. (xxx.) and an index of indian words, with select words from the bible. (xlviii.)
- Indian languages of north and south america, observations on, by john pickering, esq. ix. 223—243.
- Indian languages. See index. x. 155. 158.—names of tribes, and names of states and territories in which they dwell.
- Indian vocabulary, by cotton, referred to. x. 81.
- Indian war in new england, in 1675. x. 172. fable. iii. 7. 34. 43. affection, instance of. iii. 35. honesty and carefulness, instance of. iii. 36. mode of taking fish. iii. 81. woman, at kingston, massachusetts, had seven children in twenty-two months. iii. 206. grain. iv. 35. feast. iv. 42. superstition about an evil spirit on mount catardin. viii. 116. manure, or fish. ix. 60. names of places at plymouth, etc. iii. 175.
- Indians in the western parts of the united states, mr. schermerhorn's report concerning their numbers, etc. ii. 1—45. west of the mississippi, table of. ii. 23. and north of the missouri. 44. east of the mississippi, and north of the ohio to the lakes, table of. 12. in tennessee, georgia, and mississippi territory, table of. 20. in lower louisiana, table of. 30. between arkansas and missouri. 39. their number at mashpee. iii. 14. at nantucket. 36. at martha's vineyard. 86. table of their decrease. 92. 93. their number at bridgewater. vii. 171. at south hampton, long island. 23. of the iroquois, or five nations. viii. 243—245. in north america, society for propagating the gospel amongst, account of. ii. 45. incorporated. 46. funds in england for propagating the gospel among. vii. 102. wonder at the sight of a ship. ii. 65. terrified by fire arms. 65. v. 55. great mortality among in 1618, and dismay at it. ii. 66. mortality amongst. 72. vi. 650. great mortality by small-pox among. v. 194. 195. vii. P. 67. infectious fever among. P. 96. described by dunton. ii. 108—115. government monarchical; queen. 109. authority of king; nobility. 110. punishments. 111. religion; pay homage to creatures in which some deity is supposed to exist. 111. 112. priests; notions of a future state. 113. black their faces in time of mourning. 122. six churches and eighteen catechumens of. 115. manner of burial. 122. labours of rev. j. eliot among. 114. 115. destruction of, by fever and intemperance. iii. 36. attempts to convert. 36. 83. viii. 29. general war of, against the english. 81. 86. yellow fever among. iii. 91. small-pox among. 127. v. 51. 54. food; squaws paint their faces; notions of beauty. iv. 29. 30. conversion, an object with the first settlers of new england. v. 8. 12. 14. welcome gosnold on his arrival. 10. rights of succession amongst those of north america. 34. success of gospel amongst. vi. 640—660. carried to england by capt. harlow. v. 38. conspire against the english. 77. 78. vi.



446. guns not to be sold to. vii. P. 1. a trucking house for, to be erected in each plantation of massachusetts. P. 61. not to have strong water. P. 93. quarrel with massachusetts about bounds, though they had sold to massachusetts people; threaten war; sagamores come to boston to give an account of themselves. P. 67. of new england, dress and habits. viii. 27. 28. the number educating at harvard college, and of christian indians, in 1665. viii. 66. troubles in new england occasioned by, by increase mather, referred to. 125. eastern, letter to governour of massachusetts, with fac-similes of their seals. 259—263. two, come to view and parley with plymouth pilgrims. ix. 47. instruct plymouth people to use fish as a manure. 60. generally submit to king james, make peace with plymouth people, and act with good faith. 61. 68. submit to massachusetts. vii. 45. near plymouth, religious notions and worship. ix. 91, et suc. rapid recovery of their women after child-bearing. 93. rights and duties of sachems. 95. 96. actions in case of sickness and death; employment of men and women. 96. take much tobacco; customs and habits; crimes and punishments; dress. 97. 98. language copious; historical monuments. 99. title to old colony purchased. vii. 143. title to massachusetts. P. 67. chiefs acknowledge king james. v. 60. 61. vii. 99. 105. ix. 61. 68. at war with the dutch. vi. 441. christian, obtain a grant of land. 544. books distributed amongst. ii. 48. massacre in virginia. viii. 30. See names of tribes, states, territories and places, in which they dwell, &c.
- Infant baptism. i. 167.
- Influenza, at carver. iv. 279.
- Ingalls, dr. william, his lectures. i. 126.
- Ingerfield, lieut. george, of falmouth. vi. 600.
- Ingerson, john. viii. 106.
- Ingham, thomas. iv. 241.
- Ingols, samuel. viii. 107.
- Ingram succeeds bacon as leader of the rebels in virginia. i. 60. proclaimed general. 61. takes glos-ter men. 70. challenged by bris-tow. 71. reduced by grantham. 75.
- Inheritance, decision regarding. viii. 154.
- Injuries by thunder and lightning in 1670—1676. vi. 627.
- Inoculation for small-pox; opposed by dalhound; defended by the clergy of massachusetts. i. 106. introduced into new england by dr. zabdiel boylston. ii. 159. vii. 73. conscientious scruples about. 74. deaths in philadelphia by. 73. at boston, account of; means taken to prevent, and to test the efficacy of; number of deaths by, compared to those by the small-pox naturally taken; disputes in favour and against inoculation in america. 71. 72. 73. See small-pox.
- Ipswich. i. (ix.) ii. 120. 121. being the 9th church gathered. iii. 141. respectability and wealth of its first settlers; its houses and families. 142. its church. iv. 1. meeting of ministers at. iv. 158. v. 17. indians at. v. 32. settled. 158. storm at, august 15, 1635. 198. ordination at. 274. meeting of ministers at, by order of general court, to consult about the standing council, and their resolves. vi. 387. 388. injuries at, by thunder and lightning. 628. petitions massachusetts general court against disloyalty, and in favour of appeasing charles ii.; with the names of its petitioners. viii. 105—107.
- Ipswich river. iii. 141. vi. 372.
- Ipswich hamlet, or hamilton. vii. 120.
- Ireland. iii. 125. a ship arrives from, with provisions. 138.
- Irenicon, denison's. ii. 282.
- Iripegouans indians. viii. 251.
- Iron ore at martha's vineyard. iii. 49. at nantucket. 24. mill, first at scituate. iv. 224. one early at lynn. ii. 93.
- Irons, a rude fellow, drowned. vi. 642.

- Iroignes indians. viii. 246.  
 Iroquois indians. See five nations.  
 Iroquoise, chippeway indians; their numbers; catholick priests among. ii. 11.  
 Isam, captain, an enemy of massachusetts, seized with a loathsome disease, and dies by piece-meal. vi. 580.  
 Island creek. x. 62. 69.  
 Isle a la crosse. ii. 11.  
 Isle of wight, colony embarked at, for massachusetts. iv. 201.  
 Isles of scilly. iv. 116.  
 Israel river. iii. 99.  
 Iyanough, an indian. ix. 53.
- J.
- Jackarty. ii. 239.  
 Jackman, george. x. 76.  
 Jackson, samuel. iv. 240.  
 Jackson, edward. iv. 24. viii. 91.  
 Jackson, james. viii. 106.  
 Jackson, jonathan. iv. 229.  
 Jackson, lieutenant samuel. iii. 192.  
 Jackson, rev. joseph, of brookline, his character. ii. 150. delegate to convention; his character. 151.  
 Jackson, joseph, jun. dies at portsmouth, new hampshire. ii. 158.  
 Jackson, hon. charles. x. 191.  
 Jackson, dr. james. i. 117.  
 Jackson, ———. ii. 142.  
 Jackson, ———. x. 161.  
 Jackson's inn. iii. 174.  
 Jack-straw, an indian. viii. 231.  
 Jacob, henry. i. 165. his treatise on christ's church. 165. founder of congregational church; settled at leyden; comes to virginia. 166.  
 Jacob, john, of hingham. iv. 221. vii. 122.  
 Jacobs, lieutenant, kills indians. iv. 56.  
 Jacobs, margaret. iii. 224.  
 Jacobs, henry. viii. 45.  
 Jafflone river. ii. 39.  
 Jakis indians. viii. 251.  
 Jamaica, note on; situation and extent. iii. 285. productions, 286.  
 James, rev. thomas, of charlestown, goes to virginia. ii. 171. of charlestown and new haven. iii. 129. 146. v. 135. 187. removes to virginia. 191. vi. 410. sworn a freeman. vii. P. 69. 72. notice of; removes to new haven. P. 76. and thence to england. P. 77.  
 James, sagamore. v. 145. dies. 195. his wife ransomed. vii. P. 32. 34. 66. (corrections.) P. 64.  
 James, thomas. ix. 170.  
 James, john. iv. 241.  
 James ii. king of england, history of, by fox. i. 152.  
 James, dr. edwin, catalogue of plants near middlebury, vermont, with their botanical names. ix. 146, et post.  
 James, ship, of Bristol, england, arrives with passengers; narrow escape. v. 200. 201. arrives with passengers and heifers. vii. P. 61.  
 Jamestown, virginia, description of. i. 52. its fort. 209. built. viii. 203.  
 James' river. v. 38. principal settlement in virginia on. ix. 110.  
 Jameson, ———. iv. 179.  
 Janson, sir bryan, assistant of massachusetts company. v. 124.  
 Jaques, major samuel. ii. 180. 181.  
 Jaqueth, oliver, instructor. ii. 180. 181.  
 Jarvis, miss delia. viii. 285.  
 Jarvis, rev. dr. samuel-f. of boston, quoted. x. 120.  
 Jefferson society, at Charlestown. ii. 172.  
 Jefferson, new hampshire. iii. 105.  
 Jeffries, william. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman. P. 29. vi. 428.  
 Jeffries, sergeant. viii. 146.  
 Jenison, captain. viii. 236.  
 Jenkins, ———, killed by indians. vii. P. 66.  
 Jenkins, edward. iv. 239.  
 Jenkins, ———. x. 177.  
 Jenkins, ———. vii. 123.  
 Jenks, rev. william. i. 244. of bath. iv. 180. 181. of boston. x. 112. 137. 146. 192.  
 Jenner, rev. thomas; difficulties with his church at weymouth. v. 274. vii. 10.  
 Jenner, capt. thomas, notice of. ii. 99.  
 Jenner, david. ii. 178.  
 Jenner, dr. edward. i. 121.  
 Jennings, captain. vii. 55.  
 Jennings, stephen, of hatfield, goes to

- canada and ransoms his wife. vi. 637. 638.
- Jenny, john. iii. 183. 184. 187. iv. 100. 283. v. 83.
- Jenny, samuel. iv. 100.
- Jenny, ———. iv. 260.
- Jephry, isaac, his salary. iii. 13. 15.
- Jericho, long island. vi. 669.
- Jermin, sir thomas, a friend of massachusetts. v. 154. his report to the king in favour of gov. winthrop and massachusetts. vii. P. 89.
- Jerusalem, long island. vi. 669.
- Jesse, henry. i. 165. becomes an anabaptist; holds to mixed communion; lines over his study 168.
- Jesuite, pun upon. iv. 103.
- Jesuits, act against in new york. i. 143. college at quebec. ii. 247.
- Jewell, ship, harlston, captain. v. 129. arrives at salem. vii. P. 10. increase nowell one of its owners. P. 14.
- Jewett, ———. iv. 134.
- Jewett, stephen. viii. 106.
- Jewett, nehemiah, speaker of house of representatives of massachusetts. viii. 337.
- Jewitt, jeremiah. viii. 107.
- Joan of arc. vi. 574.
- John, sagamore, a friend of massachusetts; gives two sons to the english. iii. 127. v. 145. and most of his people die. 195. dies of small-pox. vi. 650. 651. vii. P. 21. 25. recovers against sir r. saltonstall. P. 21. wigwams burnt. P. 21. 22. promises to pay for damages done by his people. P. 29. wounded. P. 32. 33. 58. promises to fence his corn. P. 66. 73. viii. 231.
- Johnson, sir william. i. 149.
- Johnson, isaac. i. (xxiv.) buried at stone chapel burying ground, boston. (xxx.) ii. 79. death and character. 87. vii. P. 1. 2. 14. v. 109. assistant. 124. 128. dies. 132. 133. vii. 148. 159. one of the five undertakers; said to be a cause of the settlement of boston; buried in the now chapel burying ground; assistant and patentee of new england. vii. P. 2. 14. 69.
- Johnson, lady arbella. i. (xxiv.) ii. 79. 86. her character. v. 132, 133.
- Johnson, john, of roxbury, surveyor general. iv. 25. vi. 430. vii. 56. P. 4. 60.
- Johnson, edward. i. (xxiii.) of woburn, mistake about corrected; author of wonder-working providence. ii. 49. 95. notice of, from sermon by rev. joseph chickering of woburn; emigrated from kent, england; recorder of woburn. 95. deputy to general court; his death. 96. vii. P. 4. wonder-working providence corrected. P. 4. 39. sworn a freeman. P. 29. wonder-working providence explained. P. 75. viii. 91.
- Johnson, perseverance, of amsterdam. ii. 179.
- Johnson, humphrey. iv. 241.
- Johnson, ———. v. 24.
- Johnson, ensign. vii. 54.
- Johnson, mrs. hannah. vii. 121.
- Johnson, ———. viii. 112.
- Johnson, rev. samuel, doubts the validity of presbyterian ordination. ii. 129. iv. 299.
- Johnson, daniel. i. 249. vii. 169.
- Johnson, colonel. iii. 237.
- Johnson, rev. alfred, of freeport. iv. 180.
- Johnson, daniel. vii. 169.
- Johnson alfred jun. iv. 179.
- Johnson, deacon noah. x. 180.
- Johnson, ———. vii. 155.
- Johnston, john, esq. account of indian tribes of ohio, quoted. x. 126.
- John's pond. iii. 2.
- John's island. iii. 239.
- John's river. vii. 172. 151.
- Joliffe, john. ii. 103. viii. 44. 105.
- "Jonas, new england's, cast up at london." iv. 107. published by william vassal, and answered by mr. winslow. vi. 516. 517.
- Jones, captain. iii. 208. bribed by the dutch to carry the plymouth colony to cape cod, instead of hudson's river. v. 50. 75. vi. 667. ix. 44.
- Jones, rev. ———, of concord. iii. 154. 155. v. 274.
- Jones, margaret, hanged for a witch. vi. 530.
- Jones, ———. vii. 29.
- Jones, sir william, his majesty's attorney general, gives an opinion



- against the validity of the grant made by plymouth council to captain mason. vi. 614. 616. 621.
- Jones, mary. i. 162.
- Jones, thomas. x. 76.
- Jones, ———. iv. 294.
- Jones's river bridge. iv. 229.
- Jones's river head pond. iv. 268. 281.
- Jones's inn. iv. 207. 208. 210. 213.
- Jones's river parish, now kingston. iii. 208.
- Jones's river pond. iii. 206.
- Jones's river. iii. 162. 163. 184. 205. iv. 89. 224. 268. 279. vii. 137. x. 62. 67. 69.
- Jones's river landing. iv. 279.
- Jordan, miss olive. iii. 200.
- Jortin, rev. ———. i. 224.
- Josiah, sagamore. v. 71. 72.
- Josselin, ———. v. 216. 224. 226. commissioner of sir f. gorges. vi. 369. 584. 596. 597. 598.
- Josselyn, john. i. (xxiii. xxxi.) errors in, corrected. vii. P. 39.
- Jourdan, ———. vii. 164.
- Jourdan, clement. vii. 164.
- Journal, governour winthrop's, quoted. i. 169. return j. meigs's, of expedition to quebec, under colonel benedict arnold. ii. 227. a paper printed at plymouth. iii. 177. new england medical. i. 120.
- Joy, Michael, esq. x. 192.
- Joyliffe. See joliffe.
- Jowa river. ii. 9. 29. 41.
- Joways indians, their residence, number and warriors. ii. 39.
- Judd, dr. e. w. his marble manufactory at middlebury, vermont. ix. 129. 135. 136.
- Judith point. iii. 46.
- Judson, rev. adouiram, of plymouth. iii. 201. 203.
- Jupiter, ship, loss of. iv. 71.
- Jury, remarks on, by governour hutchinson. i. (xxii.) their verdict against rev. mr. hobart. iv. 110. grand, first used in massachusetts in 1635. v. 159. petit, try matters of fact in massachusetts. 159. not used in new haven colony. vi. 320. 332. empannelled to decide the controversy about ligonia. 369. not to be used by king's commissioners in appeals to them from massachusetts courts. viii. 91. 92. 110. introduced among indians at martha's vineyard by mr. mayhew. iii. 83.
- Justice, administration of in rhode island, required by the king to be in his name. vii. 93. not administered in massachusetts in the king's name during the commonwealth, but renewed afterwards. viii. 48. 74.

## K.

- Kamesit. iii. 175.
- Kamschatka. ii. 43.
- Kansas indians, their residence and numbers; defeated by pawnees. ii. 32.
- Karalit, or language of greenland, is spoken in asia. ix. 233.
- Kaskias indians, their numbers. ii. 8. have a catholick priest; their annuity. 9. 13.
- Kata indians. ii. 38.
- Kautantowit, his house the abode of the good after death, as believed by massachusetts indians; indian superstition about his creating mankind. ii. 113.
- Kawassa. iv. 265.
- Kean, mrs. iv. 91.
- Kean, ———. iv. 249.
- Kearsarge mountain. viii. 174.
- Keayne, robert, first commander of ancient and honourable artillery company. ii. 185. viii. 230. x. 24.
- Kebec. See quebec.
- Keekamuit, or bristol, rhode island, its meaning. x. 174.
- Kee kepenagliesek fight. viii. 246.
- Keen, ———. iv. 260.
- Keene, new hampshire, its indian name; broken up by indians. iii. 198.
- Keetoahs, indian family. iii. 8.
- Keil, ———. i. 108.
- Keith, joseph. vii. 159. 162.
- Keith, rev. james, of bridgewater, notice of. vii. 161—164. 168. iv. 80. vii. 142. 147. 149.
- Keith, james. vii. 162.
- Keith, samuel. vii. 162.
- Keith, timothy. vii. 162.
- Keith, john. vii. 162.
- Keith, josiah. vii. 162.
- Keith, margaret-hunt. vii. 162.
- Keith, mary-haward. vii. 162.

- Keith, israel. vii. 162.  
 Keith, ephraim. vii. 162.  
 Keith, jonathan. vii. 170.  
 Keith, rev. james, of duxbury. vii. 138.  
 Keith's hill. x. 42.  
 Keketicut. vii. 143.  
 Kelley, sarah. x. 180.  
 Kellog, rev. ———. iii. 108.  
 Kellogg, rev. elijah, of portland. iv. 180. 181.  
 Kellond, thomas, sent to connecticut and new haven, to arrest messrs. whalley and goffe, under a warrant from charles ii. viii. 68. summoned with thomas deane, as one of the owners of the charles of oleron. 89. 105.  
 Kelly, lieutenant. iv. 218.  
 Kemball, caleb. viii. 107.  
 Kemball, thomas. viii. 107.  
 Kembre, richard, sen. viii. 107.  
 Kempton, manasses. iii. 184.  
 Kempton, ephraim. iv. 241.  
 Kendal, rev. dr. samuel, of weston, his century sermon cited. i. (xxv.) iii. 265. 266. 268. 273.  
 Kendall, rev. james of plymouth. iii. 199—201.  
 Kendall, capt. loammi. ii. 180.  
 Kendrick, captain. iv. 288.  
 Kenenavish indians, their residence and number. ii. 38.  
 Kennebeck, indians at. v. 31. trade at, granted to plymouth people. 167. quarrel at. 167. garrison at, attacked by indians. vi. 630. viii. 252.  
 Kennebeck river. i. (vii.) iv. 70. v. 16. discovered. 11. a plantation made there by sir john popham. 13.  
 Kennebunk, singular phenomenon of earth thrown up at. vi. 646.  
 Kennedy, lieutenant. viii. 156.  
 Kennedy, rev. nathaniel, of litchfield, new hampshire. x. 56.  
 Kenonge, its meaning. iii. 182.  
 Kenrick, george. iv. 233. 239.  
 Kenrick, john. viii. 107.  
 Kent, richard. viii. 106.  
 Kent, james. viii. 106.  
 Kent, john. viii. 106.  
 Kent, richard. iv. 136. 137.  
 Kent, rev. benjamin, of charlestown. ii. 178.  
 Kent, joseph. ii. 278.  
 Kent, jonathan. ii. 78.  
 Kent, samuel. ii. 180.  
 Kent street in scituate. iv. 239.  
 Kentucky, visited by robertson. vii. 64. indian hostilities in. 64.  
 Kettell, thomas. ii. 181.  
 Kettell, john. ii. 176—180.  
 Ketticut. vii. 143.  
 Kettle island, salem harbour. v. 197.  
 Keyes, john. i. 162.  
 Keyes indians, their residence, number and language. ii. 24.  
 Kickapoos indians, residence, language, number and annuity. ii. 8. 12.  
 Kidder, joseph. x. 178.  
 Kidder, rev. joseph, of dunstable, new hampshire. iv. 78. 79. 197. x. 55. 56.  
 Kidder, samuel. ii. 161.  
 Kieft, william, dutch governour at new york. v. 245. vi. 323. cast away and drowned. 444. 546.  
 Kiehechise, its meaning. ix. 91.  
 Kiehtan, a supreme divinity among the indians near plymouth; its meaning. ix. 91.  
 Kicons, its meaning. iii. 182.  
 Kikegat, its meaning. x. 174.  
 Kilby, christopher, goes agent to england. x. 28.  
 Kildee, a species of plover; its meaning. iv. 274.  
 Kinckemnoeks indians. viii. 248.  
 Kine-pock. i. 122.  
 King, thomas. iv. 240.  
 King, ———, of boston, a singer. ii. 103. 104.  
 King, george. iii. 119.  
 King, ———. iv. 260.  
 King, ———. iv. 284.  
 King, ———. vii. 123.  
 King's colours defaced at salem. v. 164. by taking out the cross. 205. ordered to be set up on the castle. 165.  
 King's province, or narraganset country. See narraganset.  
 King's evil. i. 120.  
 King's bridge. iii. 245.  
 Kingschapel at boston, deaths in its society. iii. 290.  
 King's cedar swamp. iv. 279.  
 King's commissioners. See commissioners and reference there.  
 Kingman, john. vii. 148. 150.  
 Kingman, ———. vii. 155.

- Kingman, david. vii. 160.  
 Kingman, ezra. vii. 160.  
 Kingsbury, rev. samuel, of edgartown. iii. 72.  
 Kingsbury, capt. eleazer. viii. 45.  
 Kingston, origin of its name; separated from plymouth, iii. 163. description of. 204. soil. 205. ponds and rivers; an indian woman at, had seven children in 22 months. 206. manufactures. 207. set off from plymouth. 208. incorporated; first meeting-house; ecclesiastical history. 209. meeting-houses; dissensions at about ministerial fund; baptist society. 213. ministerial fund; houses and inhabitants. 214. roads and schools. 215. diseases at; shipping. 216. 217. 218. salt works; bill of mortality. 218. 219.  
 Kingston, new hampshire, sketch of its ministers and churches. ix. 367.  
 Kinnibiki, or kennebeck. viii. 252.  
 Kinnym, capt. eleazar. viii. 45.  
 Kinsley, martin. vii. 170.  
 Kinsman, richard, his orchard for making perry in virginia. ix. 118.  
 Kirby, or pittsford marble, remarkably fine. ix. 136.  
 Kirk, sir david. vi. 498. captain, takes fort kebec, or quebec, then a great staple for furs, from the french, in 1629. vii. P. 52.  
 Kirk, ———, an enemy of massachusetts, drowned at barbadoes. vi. 580.  
 Kirk, col. i. (xxviii.)  
 Kirk, presbyterian. iv. 13.  
 Kirke, thomas, sent to arrest messrs. whalley and goffe, under a warrant from charles ii. at connecticut and new haven. viii. 68.  
 Kirkland, rev. dr. john-t. i. 248. extract from sermon on the death of caleb gannett, esq. viii. 279. on the death of professor peck. x. 168.  
 Kitaumet. iii. 176.  
 Kitteaskeesett. iv. 267.  
 Kittle cove. iii. 76.  
 Kneeland, s. printer, of boston. viii. 120.  
 Kneeland, rev. abner, universalist minister at charlestown. ii. 172.  
 Knife river. ii. 35. 41.  
 Knife indians. ii. 43.  
 Knight, john, sen. viii. 106.  
 Knight, john, jun. viii. 106.  
 Knight, john. viii. 106.  
 Knight, richard. viii. 106.  
 Knight, ———, of wells. vi. 600.  
 Knight, lieut. iv. 218.  
 Knight's survey of new bedford. iii. 18.  
 Knistenaux indians, their language, and warriors. ii. 12.  
 Knollis, rev. hanserd, of dover. i. 168. v. 220. joke about. vi. 356. forbidden to preach in massachusetts, goes to agamenticus, comes to boston to answer accusations. 357. removed from church at dover to make way for mr. larkham. 362. quarrels with mr. larkham. 362. guilty of adultery. 363.  
 Knowles, rev. j. ordained at watertown. v. 276. goes to virginia. vi. 410. returns. 411. vii. 19. 41. goes to preach to virginia; is forced to return by the governour and others there. viii. 29. 30.  
 Knowles, ———. iv. 249.  
 Knowlton, thomas. viii. 107.  
 Knox, general henry, his letter to w. tudor. viii. 208.  
 Konickey cliff. iii. 146.  
 Kotzebue, lieut. iv. 98. 99.  
 Konaons indians. viii. 246.  
 Koy, o. ii. 16.  
 Kumas indians. ii. 26.  
 Kyaways indians, their residence, number and wars. ii. 28. 29.  
 Kyngston, felix. viii. 199.
- L.
- L, not articulated by indians. iii. 21.  
 Labrador. ii. 10. 43.  
 Lacady, including nova scotia, surrendered by treaty of charles i. to france. vii. P. 78. And see acadie and acady.  
 Laconia. v. 216.  
 Ladd, ———, printer. iv. 26.  
 Ladd, ———. iv. 132.  
 Ladies of distinction early arrive at new england. i. (xxiv.)  
 La haver. v. 162.  
 La hontan. ii. 2. 7. 8. quoted. x. 102. 132. 142.  
 Lake, captain thomas. viii. 90.  
 Lake, william. viii. 106.



- Lake huron indians. ii. 3.  
 Lake superior. ii. 11.  
 Lake of the hills. ii. 11.  
 Lake of the two hills. ii. 11.  
 Lake of the woods. ii. 12.  
 Lake George. iii. 236.  
 Lakenham parish. iv. 277.  
 Lakenham farm, in carver. iv. 283.  
 Lakenham west meadows. iv. 284.  
 Lamb, thomas. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. P. 29. viii. 232.  
 Lamb, joshua, purchases the town of hardwick of the indians. i. 180.  
 Lamb, captain, wounded. ii. 246.  
 Lamb and lyon, first settlers of new london, new hampshire. viii. 175.  
 Lambert, rev. nathaniel. iii. 108.  
 Lambert, capt jonathan, his settlement of tristan d'acunha. ii. 125. his garden. 125.  
 Lamberton, ———, of new haven, erects a trading house at delaware. vi. 439. in the new haven ship lost at sea. viii. 18.  
 Lancaster, massachusetts, settled. vi. 543.  
 Lancaster, new hampshire, description of. iii. 97. bridges, mills, manufactures, distilleries, quadrupeds. 100. birds. 101. academy and schools, social library, professional men. 102. courts held at, history, charter. 103. church, baptisms. 104. marriages and deaths, baptist society and inhabitants. 105.  
 Land, unimproved, price of, in new england. v. 230.  
 Land pilot hills. iii. 98.  
 Landaff, bishop of, (ewer.) ii. 190.  
 Landaff, bishop of, (watson) his letter. i. 250.  
 Landing of the fathers, painting of, by henry sargent. iii. 225. 230. anniversary noted. vii. 133.  
 Lane, job. viii. 46.  
 Lane, daniel. vii. 120.  
 Lane, ———. vii. 123.  
 Lang, sarah. x. 177.  
 Langdon, josiah. i. 227.  
 Langdon, rev. dr. samuel, of portsmouth, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Langdon, josiah. i. 230.  
 Langdon, ephraim. i. 227. 230.  
 Langham, ———. v. 38.  
 Langhorne, ———, writes the "public friend" against slavery; manumits his slaves. viii. 185. 187.  
 Langlois, charles-francis, a french protestant, anecdote of. iii. 194.  
 Lanham brook. iv. 55.  
 Lapelle river. ii. 42.  
 Lapham, thomas. iv. 241.  
 La platte river. ii. 29.  
 Larence, ———, arrives at new kent. i. 79. 80.  
 Larkham, rev. thomas, of dover, new hampshire, troubles with mr. knollis. v. 220. 222. causes trouble at pascataqua; put in the place of mr. knollis. vi. 362. quarrel with mr. knollis; excommunicated by mr. knollis; released from excommunication. 362. 363. leaves dover in order to escape detection of adultery. 364. quarrel with mr. gibson. 381.  
 Larnell, benjamin. viii. 243.  
 Lary, joseph. iii. 119.  
 Larvy. See lurvy.  
 Lascell, general. viii. 157.  
 "Last supper," of da vinci. iii. 229.  
 Latham, william, a forefather. vii. 153.  
 Latham, mary, condemned to death for adultery. vi. 426.  
 Latham, seth. vii. 140.  
 Latham, thomas. vii. 165.  
 Latham, charles. vii. 165.  
 Latham, robert. vii. 153.  
 Latham, arthur. vii. 153.  
 Latham, chilton. vii. 150. 153.  
 Lathrop, barnabas. viii. 182.  
 Lathrop, mark. vii. 149. 150. 155.  
 Lathrop, samuel. vii. 149.  
 Lathrop, edward. vii. 149.  
 Lathrop, isaac. iv. 87.  
 Lathrop, rev. dr. john, his memoir of rev. john lothrop. i. 163. his letter about the death of king philip. iv. 63. 131. quoted. x. 175.  
 Lathrop, mrs. iv. 131.  
 Lathrop, seth. vii. 147.  
 Lathrop, derivation of the name. i. 177.  
 Lathrop, or laythorpe. vii. 151.  
 Lathrope, b. h. i. 177.  
 Latimer, bishop. ii. 104.  
 La tour. iv. 158. attacks plymouth trading house at machias. v. 163. sends a commissioner to boston about acady. vi. 478. at war with d'aulneyn. 478. arrives at

- boston. 479. commission as admiral of france; complains of the injurious practices of d'aulney; exercises soldiers on training day at boston; returns home. 482. goes to governour endicott at salem; claims nova scotia under title from sir william alexander. 483. returns home. 484. fort captured during his absence by d'aulney. 497. 498. goes to newfoundland, to england; returns to cape sables; conspires with frenchmen on board his vessel, to put the english on shore; sufferings of the english thus put on shore. 498.
- La tour, mrs. commences an action against captain bailey. vi. 489. fights bravely against d'aulney. 493. captured by d'aulney, and dies of grief. 498.
- Laud, archbishop. i. 167. made chancellor of oxford. vii. P. 16. silences the rev. thomas shepherd; his singular interview with mr. shepherd. P. 46. 47. prosecutes professor gellibrand and his servant, w. beal, for publishing an almanack; orders a book to be published, in which the martyrs are styled traitors, rebels, &c. P. 50. consecrates st. catherine creed church, in london, and st. giles' church in the fields, with great parade and numerous forms, which papists had used before. P. 50. 51. consecrates a chapel at hammer-smith, with the same popish ceremonies as the foregoing. P. 52. introduces altars, etc. at the university of oxford, of which he was chancellor, and into churches. P. 52. 53. angry because the consecration of churches and wakes are forbidden. P. 77. 78. the principal man in the ministry of charles i.; punishes n. bernard for preaching against altars, bowings, etc. P. 79. consecrates lord treasurer weston's chapel, and marries his daughter to the duke of lenox. P. 79. 80. obtains for mr. francis windebank, a furious papist, the place of secretary of state to charles i. P. 80. his pursuivants oblige rev. j. cotton, of boston, england, to hide. P. 80. his persecuting spirit. P. 83.
- Laurel hill. ii. 223.
- Laurie, captain, in the expedition against concord. ii. 225. 226.
- Law, capt. engineer. ii. 247.
- Law of massachusetts, prohibiting any to entertain strangers without license from two magistrates. vi. 413.
- Lawrence, ———, governour of nova scotia. viii. 282.
- Lawrence, rev. micah, of winchester, new hampshire. iv. 78. ix. 367.
- Lawrence, rev. nathaniel, his account of tyngsborough. iv. 192. ordained at tyngsborough. 197.
- Laws, capital, established in massachusetts. iv. 112. of massachusetts, first printed. vi. 544. viii. 10. code of, among early settlers of rhode island. vii. 78. by whom made in massachusetts colony. P. 3.
- Lawson, rev. deodat, of scituate. iv. 235. notice of. 236.
- Lawson, roger, impeached for trading with an enemy, claims habeas corpus in massachusetts. viii. 240. 242.
- Lay, benjamin, r. vaux's life of, referred to. viii. 133. attempts to abolish slavery among the friends. 185.
- Laythorpe. See lothrop.
- Laythrop. See lothrop.
- Lazell, thomas, an early planter of halifax, massachusetts. iv. 285.
- Lazell, isaac. vii. 148. 165.
- Lazell, ebenezer. vii. 170.
- Lazell, ———. vii. 155.
- Leach, caleb, an ingenious mechanick. iii. 170.
- Leach, samuel. vii. 149. 157.
- Leach, giles. vii. 149. 155.
- Leach lake. ii. 11.
- Lear, mrs. x. 176.
- Leather mitten ordination of rev. israel chauncy, at stratford, connecticut. ii. 132.
- Leather jacket ordination, is it valid? iv. 298.
- Leathers, ezekiel. x. 177.
- Leathers, abednego. x. 177.
- Leaver, ———. ix. 45.
- Leavitt, capt. dies at sea. v. 146.
- Leavitt, anna. x. 178.
- Le baron, dr. francis. iii. 190. iv. 272.

- Le baron, rev. lemucl, of rochester. iv. 263. x. 32.
- Lechford, quoted. x. 171.
- Lechmere's point. ii. 171.
- Le clerk. i. 244.
- Lecture at boston, where all the ministers were usually present. v. 192.
- Lectures on midwifery. i. 117. medical. 118. on natural history. 118. anatomical, by dr. ingalls. 126. clinical. 126. weekly, at boston. vii. 12.
- Leder, ———. iv. 120.
- Le dran. i. 108.
- Lee, robert. iii. 184. iv. 93.
- Lee, john. viii. 107.
- Lee, samuel. vii. 188.
- Lee, richard-henry, his letter to samuel adams. i. 186.
- Lee, henry. iii. 253. his memoirs quoted. 244.
- Lee, william, esq. x. 192.
- Leech pond. iii. 181.
- Leechman, professor, of glasgow university. viii. 176.
- Leet, william, governour of new haven colony. vi. 311. 319. 331.
- Leg, capt. ii. 123.
- Le gard, fortune. v. 160.
- Legg, samuel. x. 26.
- Legge, col. iv. 92.
- Legislature of massachusetts first divided into two bodies, and in case of a different result in the two branches, to be determined by a convention of both. vi. 391.
- Leigh, quoted. vii. P. 53.
- Leighton, dr. punished for publishing "a plea against prelacy." vii. P. 16.
- Leipsic, battle of, between gustavus of sweden, and count tilly. vii. P. 55. account of the new literary productions of its fair in 1792. viii. 274.
- Lemes indians. ix. 54.
- Lenape. See delaware indian language.
- Lenni lenape, or delaware indian language. ix. 239.
- Lenox, duke of, patentee of new england. v. 217. marries lord treasurer weston's daughter. vii. P. 80.
- Lenten, ———. vii. 22.
- Lenthall, rev. ———, called before the general court for his opinions, which he retracts. v. 275. vi. 343.
- Leonard, leonardson, or lennerson. See leonard. vii. 151.
- Leonard, solomon. vii. 149. 155.
- Leonard, samuel. vii. 149.
- Leonard, john. vii. 149.
- Leonard, isaac. vii. 149.
- Leonard, rev. nathaniel, of plymouth. iii. 199. iv. 94.
- Leonard, george. vii. 164.
- Leonard, jonathan. vii. 170.
- Leonard, david. vii. 170.
- Leonard, zenas-l. vii. 170.
- Leonard, levi-w. vii. 170.
- Leonard's furnace. iv. 289.
- Leonard's tavern. vii. 117.
- Leonardson, solomon. vii. 138. 147.
- Lesley, mathey, assistant to quarter master general. viii. 156.
- Lester, ensign. iv. 218.
- Lettres edifiantes et curieuses ecrites des missions etrangeres, quoted. viii. 250.
- Lettson's method of preserving vegetables. i. 23.
- Leverett, thomas, elder, of boston. v. 188. 190. iii. 285. vii. 136.
- Leverett, john. iii. 285. governour. 167. commissioner to new york. vi. 547. 593. 595. 600. major general; deputy governour of massachusetts. 610. though a junior of the magistrates, appointed deputy governour and afterwards governour, in which office he is continued till his death; his character. 611. order of march and pageantry at his funeral. viii. 44. major general of massachusetts. 88. 91. 101. x. 24. 25. commissioner. 59.
- Leverett, john, president of harvard college. iv. 64. 93. 142.
- Leveridge, rev. william, sent out to pascataqua. v. 221. vi. 603. instructs indians at sandwich. viii. 29.
- Levett, rev. r. his questions of conscience to rev. mr. cotton. x. 182.
- Leviston, rev. ———, of ireland. v. 154. his letter. 154. 155.
- Lewesden hill, quoted. iii. 195.
- Lewis, george. iv. 233. 239. 248.
- Lewis, john. iv. 239.
- Lewis, thomas. iv. 187.
- Lewis, ezeziel. x. 27.



- Lewis, rev. ———, of pembroke. iv. 278.
- Lewis, ———, the traveller. ii. 23. x. 131.
- Lewis, ———. i. 108.
- Lexington, battle of. ii. 226. loss of british at. 226. 227. iii. 235. iv. 215. 217.
- Lexington, kentucky, settlement there. vii. 65.
- Ley, lord, comes to new england and returns. v. 262.
- Liberty, religious, in new york. i. 140.
- Liberty of conscience allowed in west indies and somer islands; debates about at boston. 534.
- Lick creek. ii. 15.
- Lidgett, charles. viii. 44.
- Ligonia, or plough patent, purchased by mr. rigby. vi. 368. controversy about. 369. patent of, confirmed to rigby. 510.
- Lincoln, earl of. i. (xxiv.) makes t. dudley his steward, &c. vii. P. 13. 15. makes s. bradstreet his steward. P. 15.
- Lincoln, countess of. v. 47. deputy governor dudley's letter to, about massachusetts colony, and the persons proper to come to it. vii. P. 24.
- Lincoln, general benjamin, remarks on the cultivation of the oak. i. 187. (xxxi.) colonel of militia, member of provincial congress, secretary of provincial congress. iii. 234. one of the committee of correspondence. 234. brigadier, major general, commander of all troops in and near boston and of forces destined for new york; arrives at washington's camp; known and respected by washington; created a major general by congress. 235. his aid, baggage and papers fall into the enemy's hands at bound brook; loses 60 men, killed and wounded; joins the northern army. 236. wounded. 237. rendered important services towards the capture of burgoyne. 238. arrives at charleston, south carolina. 238. attacks the enemy and is repulsed. 239. 240. returns to the north on account of ill health. 240. attacks savannah, and is repulsed. 241. 242. is captured at charleston, south carolina. 244. at the siege of yorktown; secretary at war. 245. returns to his farm at hingham. 246. quells shay's rebellion. 247. lieutenant governor of massachusetts. 249. appointed collector of the port of boston. 249. writings. 250. death. 250. character. 251. 255. mills. vii. 117. x. 79.
- Lincoln, ———. vii. 123.
- Lindell, james. vii. 138.
- Line, thomas, opinion of massachusetts court to malden church, about to censure him for evidence given in the case of rev. marmaduke mathews. viii. 325. 326.
- Lines, justice. ii. 103.
- Linnett, robert. iv. 222. 239. 240.
- Lypothymy. vi. 644.
- Litchfield, new hampshire, its churches and ministers. x. 56.
- Litchfield, experience. iv. 241.
- Literary works produced in germany, in 1792, with the authors living. viii. 274.
- Little, thomas. iii. 184.
- Little, isaac. iv. 293.
- Little, rev. ephraim, of plymouth. iii. 199.
- Little, thomas. iv. 87.
- Little, dr. charles. iv. 87.
- Little, isaac. vii. 165.
- Little, charles. iii. 209.
- Little, ———. iii. 180.
- Little boar's head. iv. 190.
- Little brook. iii. 181.
- Little cambridge, now brighton. iv. 143.
- Little comfort, abington, so called. vii. 114.
- Little compton. x. 66.
- Little harbour, landing there of mr. thompson and the hiltons. v. 214.
- Little herring pond, remarkably cold. iii. 181.
- Little long pond. iv. 253.
- Little meadow. vii. 154.
- Little osage indians. ii. 31.
- Little puckaway. ii. 10.
- Little river, in haverhill. iv. 121.
- Little river, in northampton, new hampshire. iv. 190.
- Little shakalin. ii. 10.

- Little wading. iii. 163.  
 Littlefield, lieut. john, of wells. vi. 600.  
 Littlefield, ensign francis, of wells. vi. 600.  
 Littler, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Littleton, account of detection of witchcraft at. x. 7.  
 Livermore, nathaniel. iii. 279.  
 Livermore, samuel. iii. 269.  
 Livermore, isaac. iii. 269.  
 Livermore, william. iii. 269.  
 Livermore, rev. jonathan, of wilton, new hampshire. iv. 78. viii. 177.  
 Livermore, hon arthur. iii. 116.  
 Livingston, william, his letter to dr. a. eliot. ii. 190.  
 Livingston, col. ii. 241. fails in his attack on quebec. 243.  
 Livingston, thomas. x. 180.  
 Lizard frigate. ii. 237.  
 Lloyd, dr. james. i. 110.  
 Lobdell, isaac, an early planter at plympton. iv. 285.  
 Lock, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Lockwood, capt. vi. 648.  
 Lockwood, ———. vii. P. 60.  
 Locusts at plymouth, how often they appear. iii. 196. very numerous there. v. 194. and destructive there and in massachusetts; said to precede sickness. vii. P. 92.  
 Logan, james, founds a library at philadelphia. ii. 269.  
 Logan, william. ii. 269.  
 Loganian library at philadelphia, account of. ii. 269.  
 Lombard, bernard. iv. 239.  
 Lombard, ———. iv. 260.  
 London, bishop of. i. 154. v. 151. pestilence at. 95.  
 Londonderry, new hampshire, longevity in. x. 181.  
 Lone rock. iii. 77.  
 Long island. i. 141. settled by presbyterians and calvinists. 141. or mattanwake, assigned to the earl of stirling. v. 89. 171. 245. visited by massachusetts people. 171. peopled from connecticut. 171. vi. 668. and by the dutch. 668. within the duke of york's patent of new york. v. 171. lynn people remove to, and have difficulties with the dutch. 245. its indians hostile to english. vi. 449. its produce, fish, and animals. 671. 672. planted. vii. 22.  
 Long island channel. v. 18.  
 Long island, boston harbour. vii. P. 37.  
 Long point. x. 35.  
 Long pond. x. 35. 72.  
 Long, joshua. ii. 177.  
 Long's travels, quoted. x. 144.  
 Longevity. iii. 71. in new hampshire, instances of. x. 176.  
 Long pond. iii. 181.  
 Look, ———. iii. 66.  
 Lord, robert. iv. 170. viii. 107.  
 Lord, robert, jun. viii. 107.  
 Lord, samuel. viii. 107.  
 Lord, rev. joseph. ii. 178.  
 Lord, rev. nathan, of amherst, new hampshire. viii. 176.  
 Lord's supper, a learned quarto published in england against kneeling at. vii. P. 51. 52.  
 Loring, thomas, an early planter at plympton. iv. 285.  
 Loring, rev. israel, of sudbury. iv. 58. 59.  
 Loring, john. iv. 60.  
 Loring, jonathan. iv. 60.  
 Loring, ———, his inn. iv. 270.  
 Loskiel, ———, cited. ii. 2. 13.  
 Loskiel's history of the missions of the united brethren. x. 128.  
 Lothrop, rev. john, of scituate, and barnstable, notice of; different ways of spelling the name; meaning of the name. i. 163. 178. letter from to governour prince. 170. ditto. 173. arrives. iii. 143. iv. 221. 222. 232. 233. 239. 303. vi. 663. See lathrop.  
 Lothrop, thomas. i. 176. 177.  
 Lothrop, samuel. i. 176. 177.  
 Lothrop, joseph. i. 176. 178. iv. 259.  
 Lothrop, benjamin. i. 176. 177.  
 Lothrop, barnabas. i. 176. 177. iv. 259. his cloak. 303. 304.  
 Lothrop, john. i. 176. 177.  
 Lothrop, john, jun. iv. 304.  
 Lothrop, dr. nathaniel. iv. 63. 90. 95.  
 Lothrop, col. iii. 180. iv. 272.  
 Lothrop, isaac, notice of. i. 258. 259. iii. 177. iv. 63.  
 Lothrope, lieut. vii. 55.  
 Loups indians. ii. 33.  
 Louisbourg, expedition against. iii. 192.

- Louisiana. ii. 27.  
 Loveijat, father. viii. 247. letter to the governour of massachusetts. 259.  
 Lovejoy, hannah. x. 177.  
 Lovell, thomas. viii. 107.  
 Lovell, james, of weymouth. vii. 122. 123.  
 Lovell, john, master of boston latin school. i. 230. viii. 286.  
 Lovell, james. i. 230.  
 Lovelace, francis, governour of new york, incorporates edgartown and tisbury. iii. 34. 85. vi. 611. 667.  
 Lovett, christopher, comes to new england with robert gorges. v. 86.  
 Lovewell, ———, the oldest person who has died in new hampshire. x. 181.  
 Lovewell, col. zaccheus. x. 181.  
 Low, john, captain of the ambrose. v. 128.  
 Low, thomas. viii. 107.  
 Lowell, robert. viii. 229.  
 Lowell, john. i. 249.  
 Lowell, john. x. 192.  
 Lowell, rev. charles, of boston. ii. 273. x. 191.  
 Lower ferry at scituate. iv. 224.  
 Lowis, ———, agent of d'aulney to boston. vi. 495.  
 Lowle, richard. viii. 106.  
 Lowle, percival. viii. 106.  
 Low plain island. viii. 174.  
 Lowry, capt. iv. 216.  
 Loyard, father. viii. 248.  
 Loyola, ignatius, pun upon his name. iv. 103.  
 Lucas, james. iii. 119.  
 Lucas, samuel. iii. 189.  
 Lucas, ———. iv. 277.  
 Lucas's brook. iv. 280.  
 Luce, ———. iii. 66.  
 Luce, elijah. iii. 17.  
 Luce, ———. iv. 261.  
 Ludham, ———, his ferry at great, or north river, in pembroke. vii. P. 71.  
 Ludlow, roger, deputy governour of massachusetts. iii. 139. v. 156. vi. 308. 446. vii. P. 1. 3. 6. assistant. v. 131. vii. P. 5. 14. 20. 21. 23. 25. 27. 30. 31. 34. 35. 58. 60. 61. 63. 65. 66. 68. 72. 85. 86. 91—93. arrives. v. 133. settles at dorchester. 135. a founder of that town. vii. P. 14 left out of the assistants. v. 165. notice of vii. P. 14. of plymouth, england. P. 41. complained of by sir r. saltonstall. viii. 42. his letter to w. pincheon, principally about danger from indians. viii. 235. 237.  
 Ludlow, george. vii. P. 4.  
 Ludowick, dr. i. 107.  
 Ludwell, ———. i. 73.  
 Lumbert, ———. iii. 66.  
 Lumbert's cove. iii. 45. 47. 49. 53. 56. 57. 74.  
 Lunenburg, its garrison attacked by indians. i. 184. topographical and historical description of. i. 181. iii. 104.  
 Lurvey, or larvey, corporal james, anecdote of. iv. 51. 52.  
 Lusher, eleazer. iv. 24. captain. vii. 54. major. viii. 88.  
 Lutherans in new york. i. 149.  
 Luz, a pequot indian. viii. 146.  
 Lyford, rev. ———, arrives. v. 91. his character. 92. 94. dismissed plymouth colony. 92. settles at nantasket. 93. settled at cape ann; goes to virginia. 107. 116.  
 Lyman, goodman. viii. 232.  
 Lyman, theodore, esq. iii. 266. his farm, 272.  
 Lyman, george-w. iii. 269.  
 Lyman, theodore. iii. 269.  
 Lynde, simon. viii. 44. 105.  
 Lynde, nicholas. ii. 178.  
 Lynde, joseph. ii. 178.  
 Lyndeborough, new hampshire, ministers and churches. viii. 177.  
 Lynn. i. (ix.) church, being the 6th. gathered; description of. ii. 93. 94. iv. 1. iii. 124. 203. settled. v. 158. vii. P. 68. indians at. v. 32. difficulties in church. 191. 193. some of its people remove to long island, and have difficulties with the dutch. 244. 245. iron factory early at, where, instead of iron bars, are hammered out law suits. vi. 374.  
 Lyon, the ship. v. 130. providential arrival with provisions. 139. w. pierce, captain. vii. P. 18. arrives at salem. P. 10. capt. pierce arrives with j. winthrop, jun. rev. j. eliot, and others; bringing a store of hogs, kids, venison, poultry, geese, and partridges. P. 37. goes to virginia and england.



- P 38. arrives with passengers. P. 67. sails. P. 71.
- Lyon, william, his note on ezekiel cheever. vii. 129.
- Lyon, ———, and lamb ———, first settlers of new london, new hampshire. viii. 175.
- Lyon brook. viii. 173.
- Lytherland, william. iv. 203.
- M.**
- Maccarty, ———. ii. 103.
- Maccarty, rev. thaddeus, of kingston, massachusetts. iii. 209. troubles during his ministry. 209. 210. his farewell sermon; settled at worcester. 210 211.
- Macclure, rev. dr. david, of northampton, new hampshire. iv. 191.
- Machapaugoneck. iv. 267.
- Machias, a trading place of plymouth people. v. 163.
- Machin, thomas, his estimate of the cost of cape cod canal. viii. 193. 196.
- Macinfire, ———, first settler of plainfield. viii. 172.
- Mackerel hill, in waltham. iii. 268.
- Mackerel fishery, at scituate. iv. 230. at plymouth. iv. 232.
- Macklin, robert. x. 176.
- Mæ-sparran, rev. dr. episcopal missionary at narraganset. ii. 200.
- Macy, thomas, first english settler at nantucket. iii. 36.
- Maddox, rev. dr. ii. 212.
- Madeira wine very early imported into massachusetts. viii. 12.
- Madoc, story of; adventures under; sails from wales with a colony; descendants of his colony. ii. 36. 37.
- Magee, capt. james, shipwrecked in plymouth harbour, his narrow escape. iii. 195.
- Magistrate, can he be an elder? vii. 64. a heavy fine imposed on him, who should refuse the office in plymouth colony. P. 75.
- Magistrates, first choice of, by freemen of massachusetts. iii. 128. vii. P. 75. debates about their power in ecclesiastical matters. vi. 532. 536.
- Magna charta, quoted very early, as containing the rights of new england people. vi. 513.
- Magnalia americana, by dr. cotton mather. i. (xxx.) 205. quoted. vi. 541. vii. 132.
- Magnanimity, female, instances of. i. (xxiv)
- Magoon, john. iv. 241.
- Magus, john, indian. i. 180.
- Magus hill. i. 180.
- Mahas indians, residence, language, warriors, account of their king, who is worshipped since his decease. ii. 33. villages. ii. 41.
- Malliccon, or mohegan indians. ii. 6.
- Mahtopanats indians, their residence and numbers. ii. 42.
- Maine, province of, first planted. v. 213. confirmed to sir f. gorges. 232. attempts to plant by plymouth men. 224. sometimes called new somersetshire; government of, transferred by sir f. gorges to massachusetts. 261. called yorkshire; two pretended rights to the government of, one under sir f. gorges, and one under massachusetts. vi. 584. returns to the government of massachusetts; the cause and manner of their return. 593. 600.
- Maitland, col. iii. 239. 241. enters savannah. 241.
- Major's purchase, in pembroke. vii. 141. 142 173.
- Malaga. vi. 526.
- Malden bridge. ii. 167. 171.
- Malden church, fined for settling a minister, without the advice of neighbouring churches, and advice of magistrates, acknowledges its error. vi. 550. 29th church planted at. viii. 15. about to censure mr t. line, for giving evidence in the case of marmaduke mathews, the opinion of massachusetts court sent to it 325.
- Malinson, ———, a fencing master, and stiff independent. ii. 105.
- Maloon, nathaniel. x. 76.
- Malthus, s. printer. ii. 97.
- Malthus, thomas. ii. 98.
- Manamooskeagin, now abington. vii. 122.
- Manatos, or manhadoes, now new york. v. 15. See manhattoes.

- Manawet, an american indian, sent with capt. hobson and others on discovery to new england. ix. 5.
- Manchester, vermont. iii. 236.
- Manchester, earl of. v. 153. ix. 185.
- Mandane villages. ii. 23. 41.
- Mandans indians, residence, number and warriors. ii. 35.
- Maneday, an american indian, sent with capt. h. challons on discovery to new england. ix. 3.
- Maneikshan. iii. 175.
- Manhatan's island. vi. 669.
- Manhattoes, troops raised by massachusetts for its capture, but it surrenders on terms. viii. 94. or manatos, or manhados. v. 15.
- Manitoo, manitoowock, indian words expressive of deity. ii. 112.
- Manitoo asseinah. iii. 201.
- Manitopa indians, their residence, number and warriors. ii. 42.
- Mann, dr. h. iii. 195.
- Mann, dr. iv. 303.
- Mann, ———. iv. 179.
- Manning, thomas. i. 122.
- Manning, dr. joseph. viii. 165.
- Manning, sarah. viii. 165.
- Manomet. iii. 168.
- Manomet point. iii. 164. 196.
- Manomet ponds. iii. 200. iv. 89. 92. 265.
- Manomet bay. iv. 289. 291.
- Manomet river. iv. 291.
- Manor of fordham. i. 144.
- Manowet. v. 39. See manawet.
- Mansell, sir robert, a patentee of new england. v. 217. viii. 208.
- Mansfield, sir john. vii. P. 42.
- Mansker, gasper. vii. 63.
- Manter, ———. iii. 66.
- Manufactures early in massachusetts. v. 374.
- Manure, indians use fish for, and plymouth people learn of them. ix. 60.
- Manuscript copy of hubbard's history, state of. v. (vi.) preserved in library of massachusetts historical society. (vii.)
- Maple sugar early made in new england. viii. 252.
- Maquas, or mawhawks. ix. 236. And see mohawks.
- Maques, or mohawk indians. viii. 238. 239. See mohawks.
- Maramoick. ix. 53.
- Marble manufactory at middlebury, vermont. ix. 129.
- Marble, fine and in abundance at middlebury, vermont. ix. 135. kirby, or pitsford, as fine as parian. ix. 137.
- Marble harbour. vii. P. 34. its tax. P. 57. 60. first called marblehead. P. 93.
- Marblehead, or marble harbour. vii. P. 93. indians at. v. 32.
- March, the first month. vii. 136.
- March, hugh. viii. 106.
- Mares, intended for massachusetts, mostly die at sea. vii. P. 9. brought to massachusetts. P. 61.
- Marie, monsieur, comes to boston as agent of d'aulney. 486. concludes an agreement of peace with massachusetts. 488. sent agent to boston by d'aulney. 495. 497.
- Marine hospital at charlestown. i. 125. ii. 174.
- Marine, ———, a dutch captain, kills indians. vi. 441.
- Mariners on board the first vessel to new england become religious. ii. 85.
- Maritime law, question relating to. iv. 102.
- Mark, its value; used as a denomination of money in mass. vii. P. 34.
- Mark, a negro servant of john codinan of charlestown, executed for poisoning his master; hung in chains. ii. 166.
- Marlborough, one half of, destroyed by indians. vi. 592.
- Marrett, rev. john, of burlington. iv. 197.
- Marriages, laws relating to, in new york. i. 152.
- Marriat, rev. obadiah. ii. 116.
- Marrion, joseph. i. 106.
- Mars, ship. iv. 285.
- Marsh, paul. iii. 119.
- Marsh, ———. iii. 111.
- Marsh, rev. dr. john, tutor. i. 231. iv. 169.
- Marshall, thomas. iv. 110. x. 24.
- Marshall, capt. ii. 116.
- Marshall, capt. william. x. 180.
- Marshfield. iv. 71. in plymouth colony, its settlement begun. vii. P. 75. x. 60.
- Marston, mrs. her confessions. iii. 224.

- Marten, master. ix. 44.  
 Martin, mary, murders her bastard child; is condemned and executed. vi. 529. 530.  
 Martin, ———, a hunter. iii. 99.  
 Martin's vineyard. See martha's vineyard.  
 Martin's meadow hills. iii. 98.  
 Martin's meadow ponds. iii. 99.  
 Marvail, visited by dunton. ii. 119.  
 Mary, princess, daughter of charles i. and mother of william iii. born. vii. P. 54.  
 Mary rose blown up in charles river, and many persons killed. viii. 23.  
 Mary and john, ship. v. 131. arrives at nantasket. P. 10. or mary and jane, arrives with passengers; is cast away. P. 88.  
 Marysville. iv. 68.  
 Maryland, granted by charles i. to cæcilius, lord baltimore, a papist, and so named after his consort, a papist; bounds extend to new england, and privileges are greater. vii. P. 80.  
 Martha's vineyard. iii. 34. 38. harbour much frequented. 39. schools at. 46. ponds, rivers, springs, meadows, &c. 47. climate. 48. soil. 49. produce. 50—53. roads and houses. 53. animals. 53. 54. 59. birds and insects. 54. fishes. 55—57. shell fish. 58. cattle. 59. sheep; wool. 60. manufactures; character of inhabitants; their religion. 61. 62. party spirit; houses, families and religious denominations. 62. 63. emigrations from; diseases. 63. names of first settlers. 66. name of, changed. 80. sometimes called martin's vineyard; origin of name. 80. 88. injured by the revolutionary war. 89. condition of, in different times. 89. indian names. 89. annexed to massachusetts. 82. granted to duke of york; purchased of earl of stirling; independent in government. 85. visited by gosnold. v. 10. indian name. 68. progress of christianity among indians at. vi. 654.  
 Martha's vineyard, indians at, mayhew's success among. iii. 67. mode of catching fish. 81. progress of civilization among. 83. acknowledge themselves subjects of england. 84. acknowledge mr. mayhew as governour, and swear to further the gospel; number of. 86. answer to captain carson. 86. fidelity to the english. 87. formerly lived chiefly by hunting and fishing. 90. wasted away after the arrival of the english, by pestilence (yellow fever.) 91. description of. 91—94. converted to christianity; table of decrease of numbers. 92. presents situation. 93.  
 Masconomo, sagamore of the country toward cape ann, welcomes the english. v. 130. received under jurisdiction of massachusetts. vi. 407.  
 Masham, william. vi. 349.  
 Mashena island. x. 48.  
 Mashne island. iv. 289.  
 Mashpee, schools. ii. 47. description of. iii. 1. its productions and soil. 2. 3. quantity of indian corn per acre, produced at. 2. indians, manner of supporting; under guardians; few of pure race; number and houses. 4. 14. employed in fishing and tilling the ground. 5. schools. 5. 9. are dirty, immoral, intemperate, cunning and false. 5. 6. religion; meeting-house. 6. ministers. 7. 9. superstitions; fables. 7. poverty; privileges. 9. law relating to its indians, passed in 1763. 9. repealed. 10. not to be trusted with power; overseers of; guardians of. 10. state of in 1767. 13.  
 Mashpee river. iii. 1. 2.  
 Mashpee pond. iii. 1.  
 Maske, a bear, or the pole star among indians. ix. 98.  
 Mason, capt. john. v. 40. obtains a grant of naumkeag, and of land between naumkeag and pascatagua. 89. names cape ann. 105. 145. 151. 153. 215. 224. death. 226. separates his interest from that of sir f. gorges. 224. agreement with new england patentees about his territory. 231. heirs complain to his majesty against massachusetts. vi. 612. account of grants made to; copy



- of grant to, from council of plymouth. 614. accuses massachusetts to the privy council, but is foiled. vii. P. 85. 88. 89. aims at the general government of new england. P. 88. governour of a plantation at newfoundland. ix. 7. 8.
- Mason, major john, of connecticut, his brief history of the pequot war, with an introduction and notes, by rev. thomas prince. viii. 120. 153. bred to arms in the netherlands. 121. a relation of capt. john mason, who claimed pascataqua; settled at windsor, connecticut; and the commander of connecticut troops in the pequot war. 121. 122. major general of the colony; served under sir thomas fairfax, and was esteemed by him; deputy governour of connecticut. 124. named deputy governour in the charter of charles ii. uniting new haven with connecticut. 124. 125. sent to relieve saybrook fort, besieged by pequots. 131. again marches against the pequots. 131. and again. 133. attacks and burns pequot fort. 139. captures many pequots. 147. 148. 229. 232. his victory over the pequots. x. 59.
- Mason, henry. iv. 241.
- Mason, mrs. ann, executrix of capt. john mason, sends over joseph mason to look after her interests. v. 225.
- Mason, joseph, sent to new england, by mrs. ann mason, executrix of capt. john mason. v. 225.
- Mason, elias. viii. 106.
- Mason, john. viii. 125.
- Mason, samuel. viii. 125.
- Mason, daniel. viii. 125.
- Mason, robert, grandson of capt. john mason. vi. 614.
- Mason, ———, of boston, an honest christian. ii. 104.
- Mason, capt. john, of new london, connecticut. viii. 125.
- Mason, hon. jonathan. ii. 46.
- Mason, abigail. x. 178.
- Mason, john-a. ii. 178.
- Mason, hon. jonathan, jun. iii. 10.
- Mason, hon. jeremiah. x. 192.
- Mason, rev. daniel, baptist minister at freeport, maine. iv. 183.
- Mason hall, at pascataqua. v. 214. 215.
- Mason, isle of. vi. 615.
- Masquinnipash pond, now merry's pond. iv. 259.
- Massachusetts colony. i. (iv. viii.) money coined in. i. (xi.) some of its clergy defend inoculation for smallpox. 106. first company arrive, july 12, (according to prince, june,) 1630, and land near noddle's island. ii. 86. dr. wilson's donation to, for military stores. 59. their grief at the death of isaac johnson. 87. begin to build boston, gather a church at charles-town, and appoint rev. john wilson, minister. 88. churches flourish. 89. third church at dorchester. 90. fourth church at boston in 1631. 91. fifth church at roxbury. 92. sixth church at lynn. 93. seventh church at watertown. 94. obliged by law to support an orthodox ministry. 202. only one episcopal church in, in 1692, only three in 1727; pass a law respecting the taxation of episcopalians, anabaptists and quakers. 203. 204. letter of its general court to rev. john owen, requesting him to be minister of boston. 265. early passes a law establishing a mint. 274. people begin agriculture. iii. 129. 132. slaves in, in 1754, 1755. 95. brought in debt £5000 by expedition to canada; issues bills to pay this debt. 260. sends troops against pequods. iv. 44. 45. takes the pequod fort. 47. 48. defeats the pequods. 49. capital laws; proceedings of general court against the inhabitants of hingham. 112. sends soldiers to casco bay to prevent the usurpation of andros. 160. general court grant £50 to rev. mr. hubbard for his history. v. (iii.) government of, by patent; tenure of lands by patent in free and common socage; patent brought over. 114. vii. P. 3. reasons of settlement; first covenant of fellowship. v. 116. manner of distributing land among first settlers. 123. government transferred from london to massachusetts. 124. court

held on board the arbella at southampton, england; desirous of avoiding all suspicion of being unfriendly to the church of england. 124. regrets at leaving their friends in england; parting address to the church of england. 125. fleet set sail from england. 129. and all arrive. 132. afflicted by a fatal disease. 132. patentees of, arrive. 133. suffer by fire, scurvy and want of provisions. ii. 87. v. 139. 140. vii. P. 19. 20. disturbed by the claim of sir f. gorges. v. 141. governour and assistants claim to be considered in the light of a parliament. 144. vii. P. 57. complained of by sir c. gardiner and others, as about to throw off their allegiance. v. 145. first court held at charlestown. 146. accusation against, before the king and council; measures for preventing the indians from arming; apprehensions lest their liberties should be invaded. 147. first general court of election in 1631; admit to freedom none but church members; few ships arrive at, in 1631. 148. advertise a reward for sir c. gardiner; forbid the indians to kill him. 149. summoned by the king in council to answer to the complaints of sir c. gardiner and others. 151. ships coming to, stopped by order of privy council. 153. 154. acquitted with honour from the charges brought against them by gardiner and others. 154. vii. P. 85. arrival of more planters at. v. 155. fourth court of election; the whole body of freemen to be present at the court of election only; its freemen first choose deputies. 156. ministers consulted about a body of laws for the state and church. 157. pass a law respecting wages. 158. first use of grand juries in; 1635; manner of proceeding in civil actions. 159. governour of, receives a letter from capt. neal respecting pirates; measures taken to capture them. 160. alarmed by a report of the coming of french jesuits, &c. raise a fort at nantasket, and hasten the planting of ipswich. 161. dis-

turbed by the defacing of the king's colours at salem; punishes mr. endicott for it; freemen jealous of their liberties; magistrates affirmed to be merely ministerial, and negative voice questioned. 165. 166. power of magistrates to make peace without the consent of the people, questioned. 166. a present of cattle to. 170. grant leave to certain inhabitants of watertown and roxbury to remove to connecticut. 177. their difficulty with plymouth men about connecticut. 179. spread themselves into many new plantations. 179. 180. views of church government; owned the church of england a true church. 181. take a middle course between brownism and presbyterianism. 182. 183. notions of the visible church; who are to be considered as members; approve of church covenant. 183. the platform set forth at the synod at cambridge. 184. of the persons bound to, only one instance of perishing by shipwreck. 200. violent storm at, 15th august, 1635. 199. 200. disturbances in, caused by roger williams. 202. 205. 207. 212. gorges and mason attempt to get its patent revoked. 227. 229. banish roger williams. 207. increases rapidly, establishes a standing council, regulates courts of judicature. 234. authority of towns; early regulation of militia; troubles in, during the time of sir h. vane; general court to be held semi-annually. 235. troubles caused by sir h. vane removed by gov. winthrop. 236. low price of cattle, suffering of the colony, in 1640; order the manufacture of woollen cloth; scarceness of provisions in. 238. open traffick with the west indies and wine islands. 239. deputies from towns reduced from three to two; its deputies opposed to the standing council. 244. committee appointed to frame a body of laws, which are adopted. 246. 247. punish extortioners. 248. makes peace with the narragansets and with massachusetts indians. 254. difficulties about the place of holding general court.

258. 259. receives a commission from sir f. gorges to govern the province of maine, or new somerset. 261. quo warranto issued against, and judgment for the king. 272. charter confirmed afterwards by the king; disturbances in, occasioned by rev. mr. wheelright and mrs. hutchinson's religious notions. 280. mr. wheelright convicted of sedition, etc. 283. petitioners in his favour, expelled the colony, go to rhode island. 283. expels mrs. hutchinson. 285. meeting of ministers about church difficulties. 286. general court take into consideration the disputes among the churches. 289. 290. synod called and a day of humiliation appointed. 295. 296. the religious errors then prevalent. 297. first synod at cambridge. 298. banishes anabaptists on account of their seditious opinions. vi. 347. difficulties with mr. burdet of dover. 354. proceedings against underhill. 356. 359. 360. controversy about liguia referred to. 369. hears the cause, but declines jurisdiction. 370. begins to look to its boundaries. 371. purchases jurisdiction of territory adjoining pascataqua; establishes a body of laws. 372. receives exeter under its government; troubled by anabaptists. 373. determines that they have a right to repress heresies. 374. ships seized in boston harbour; distress in, causes many to remove south. 375. 376. passes a law for recording all deeds of conveyance. 380. disputes about the negative votes of the magistrates. 382. 383. difficulties in consequence of scarcity of provisions; early settlers at, agree to support each other. 384. standing council written against. 385. resolves of ministers about the standing council. 387. 388. deputies and magistrates to form two bodies. 391. further disputes about the standing council, deputies, magistrates, &c. 392. 399. troubled by gorton and other familists. 401. sends troops to arrest gorton and his company. 402. 403. books sent to, from england, in fa-

vour of anabaptists. 415. further disturbed by rumours of indian hostilities. 446. 449. makes peace with the narragansets. 453. general court of, ratify articles of confederation with other colonies. 474. transactions of, with the french about acady. 478. 494. makes a present to d'aulney of a curious sedan in reparation of wrong. 496. further troubled by gorton and company. 500. ordered by earl of nottingham and others to allow gorton and company to land, and pass to their residence without molestation. 501. sends agent to england on the subject of s. gorton and company. 502. petitions the earl of warwick and lords commissioners in answer to gorton and others. 502. 506. receives letters from committee of house of lords and commons on the subject of gorton's complaints. 507. 509. substance of petition to, from dr. child and others. 512. argument with dr. child and others on their petition. 515. lays a duty on spanish wine; difficulty in collecting this duty. 520. ship building and trade early flourished in; two ships wrecked on the coast of spain. 524. inflicts the punishment of death on mrs. jones, of charlestown, supposed to be a witch. 530. first law authorizing administrators to sell lands for payment of debts of the deceased. 592. debates about calling a synod; power of magistrates in matters of religion, and liberty of conscience. 532. 536. sends commissioners to maine; orders skilful mathematicians to run the north line of massachusetts; grants the privileges of freemen to maine. 543. first orders laws to be printed. 544. unwilling to engage in war between the dutch and new haven men. 547. adopt the platform of discipline of 1648; fines the church at malden, for settling a minister without the advice of neighbouring churches, and allowance of magistrates. 550. orders, that no minister be settled without the appro-



bation of magistrates, and authorizes county courts to compel the support of ministers. 551. farms out the fur trade with indians; gives 2000 acres of land to harvard college. 555. address to charles ii. on his restoration. 557. answer of the king to this address. 561. disputes about baptism, &c. 562. 570. passes laws against quakers. 571. declaration of its general court on proceedings against quakers. 572. one of its members publishes a book, which the court censures; solemnly proclaims charles ii. king. 575. sends bradstreet and norton to england to represent their loyalty to charles ii. 576. difficulties, debates, &c. on the subjects agitated by the commissioners from charles ii. 578. 583. viii. 55. 110. determines to exercise authority over a part of maine. vi. 584. sends commissioners to portsmouth, dover, and exeter to settle difficulties. 586. court reply to the petition of s. gorton and others to commissioners; presents £500 to his majesty for the accommodation of his navy; further disputes about baptism, &c. 587. attempts to break up a schismatical society of christians. 591. passes a law, authorizing administrators to sell lands for payment of debts of the deceased. 592. sends commissioners to york. 593. order and declaration for the government of yorkshire (york.) 594. authorizes the commissioners to hold courts. 595. further difficulties on the subject of baptism, church government, &c. 601. 602. sends william stoughton and peter bulkley to england, to answer complaints made by heirs of gorges and mason. 613. afterwards sends joseph dudley and john richards with fuller powers. 614. calls a synod of ministers on the subject of public calamities. 621. orders the confession of faith, agreed on at the synod, to be published. 624. bears an unequal share of expense, &c. under the union of the colonies in 1643. vii. 45. why named massachusetts. 75. its military drill-

ed eight days in the year, without exemption, except deacons, ministers, magistrates, and a few timorous persons. 53. arrival of, under gov. winthrop, (prince's advertisement;) loses 200 people by death between april and december of the first year. P. 6. does not permit strangers to plant there. P. 6. seat of government at newtown, now cambridge. P. 8. sufferings for the want of food. P. 10. 18. a day of fast, which is changed into a day of thanksgiving on account of the arrival of provisions, which are distributed according to their necessities. P. 18. each plantation to erect a trucking house for indians. P. 61. every person in, to be provided with arms and ammunition. P. 23. 26. towns taxed for a canal from charles river to newtown. P. 31. question made by watertown people about the power of government to lay taxes. P. 57. general court orders, that the governour, deputy governour and assistants be chosen by the whole court, including freemen, and that the governour be chosen from among the assistants. v. 147. vii. P. 60. general court held once a year. P. 57. people purchased all their land of the indians; small-pox destroys many of its indians. P. 67. sad distresses end with terrible cold winter. P. 75. 76. sickness in; locusts very numerous and destructive. P. 92. reasons why more persons did not come in 1631, 1632—sickness and deaths and want of food in, misrepresentations against, by morton, sir c. gardiner, ratcliff and others. P. 82. emigration to, increases for several years. P. 83. seditious words against its government punished. P. 85. without ploughs. P. 88. is accused to the privy council by gorges and others of throwing off allegiance, and becoming wholly separate from the laws of england. P. 88. and is discharged. P. 89. 91. expected to prove useful to england in furnishing masts, cordage, &c. P. 89. 91. chooses governour, deputy governour and assistants, by general

erection of hands. P. 91. 92. solicited by indians to settle on connecticut river. P. 93. form a company with plymouth people to trade there, which project is given over. P. 94. a committee appointed to make a code of laws for, which is confirmed and printed. viii. 9. 10. very early imports madeira wine; its productions and exports. 12. and manufactures; incorporates shoemakers, and coopers. 13. caterpillars destructive in. 18. loses several ships. 18. 19. complaints about taxes. 24. "pride and excess in apparel" early in. 25. churches send relief to the bermuda church, which was expelled the island. 31. 32. papers delivered to its general court by col. nichols and others, commissioners from charles ii. may 2, 1665. 55. suspects the object of the commissioners to be that of laying taxes; reasons why the commissioners were sent out to. 56. 57. suspected in england of being resolved on independence. 57. charles ii. dissatisfied with answer to his letter. 58. answer of its general court to the commissioners. 59. commissioners answer. 61. accuses the commissioners of a breach of its patent; answer to the commissioners, denying any injury to narraganset and other indians. 63. letter from the commissioners, denying that they had infringed massachusetts patent; oath of allegiance to, by commissioners. 64. letter to the commissioners, giving an account of harvard college, of the law regarding town and grammar schools, with which the colony was well provided, and the number of christian indians in massachusetts. 65. letter to the commissioners, objecting to their power of hearing appeals from its courts, as a breach of its charter; letter to the commissioners about attempts to arrest messrs. whalley and goffe. 67. accused by gorton and others of executing laws in its own name, and of swearing to fidelity to its own government. 68. general court's answer to letter from charles ii.

about repealing laws derogatory to the king's authority, allegiance, the administration of justice in the king's name, use of the common prayer, administration of sacraments, qualification of electors, and the case of capt. thomas breeden. 47. 49. confers an honour on the hon. robert boyle; cautioned by him to use more guarded language. 49. 52. letter from charles ii. about renewing charter, granting general amnesty, laws repugnant to those of england, allegiance, use of the common prayer, administration of sacraments, number of assistants, qualifications of electors, and against tolerating quakers. 52. 55. controversy with king's commissioners on all the points in dispute. 71. 82. summoned to appear before king's commissioners by attorney, in the appeal of the case of the charles of oleron; letter to, from commissioners, complaining of its answer. 82. 84. publishes by sound of a trumpet, a defiance of the king's commissioners. 84. sends troops under capt. endicott and others against the pequots. 131. sends capt. patrick with troops against indians at block island. 143. and under capt. stoughton against the pequots. 145. x. 59. general court's letter or paper from the king's commissioners, col. nichols and others, requiring alterations to be made in the laws of massachusetts. viii. 84. 87. letter to the king's commissioners about boundaries. 87. summons the owners of the charles of oleron, to make good their cause, and gives notice to the king's commissioners. 88. 90. sends £500 as a present to the king for the use of the navy. 90. 91. objections of its committee about appeals to the king's commissioners. 91. 92. a brief narrative of its negotiations with the king's commissioners, col. nichols and others. 92. 96. raises troops for taking manhattoes, under the king's commissioners. 94. copy of the first quo warranto issued against. 96. 97. advantages in trade granted to. 97. holds a day of prayer

owing to questions with the commissioners about allegiance. 98. great number of petitions presented to. 99. debate about appeasing his majesty. 99. 101. required to publish a declaration of war against the french in canada. 101. 102. general court petitioned by boston against disloyalty and in favour of appeasing the king. 103. 105. and by salem, newbury and ipswich to the same effect. 105. answer of general court to charles ii. partly about a letter from the king, which had no seal, &c. 108. 109. a public dispute held in with baptists. 111. 112. papers on andros's administration. 179. 183. letter of general court to joseph dudley, president of the council, complaining of breach of privileges. 179. appoints a committee to take charge of its papers and title deeds. 180. minutes of sir e. andros's council in. 181. 182. all its officers and laws to be continued during sir e. andros's pleasure. 183. an estimate of its expenses in 1764, including forts, salaries, etc. and bounty on wheat. 198. 199. general court, report of its committee about cape cod canal, with estimates of its costs, etc. 193. 196. an account of a part of mr. wilson's gift of ammunition to. 228. 229. its receipt from rates, beaver trade fee, etc. 1632, 1633. 230. 231. its payments during the same period. 232. 233. general court impeach capt. william rous and others for trading with an enemy, who claim a habeas corpus. 240. 242. declares war against norridgewock indians. 254. its troops take norridgewock, and kill father ralle and indians. 254. 255. letter to governour from eastern indians, with fac similes of their seals. 259. 263. opinion of council sent to malden church. 325. general court summons rev. marmaduke mathews before it, for preaching unsafe opinions. 325. 326. its act of privileges; claims for the house of representatives the privileges of the house of commons, about money bills, etc. 326. 327. visited by

plymouth settlers; it is subject to massasoit; its squaw sachem or queen. ix. 57. indian language in. 223. proceedings against samuel gorton. 199. 200. very early insists, that there is no appeal from its proceedings to england. 201. charter from william and mary, referred to. x. 2. general court disfranchises and dismisses three of its members from boston. x. 23. charter privileges usurped by sir edmund andros. 25. towns in, allowed to send two representatives, by the charter of william and mary. 26. legislative proceedings irregular. 26. prepares to make war against the narragansets. 60. insurrection in, headed by shays and day. 79. And see new england, plymouth colony, maine, assistants, commissioners from charles ii., nichols, col. etc.

Massachusetts colony, indians. ii. 66. believe the house of kautantowit to be the abode of the good after death. 113. reduced by mortality from 30,000 to 300. 72. dispute with massachusetts about land. iii. 127. small-pox destroys many. 127. kindness of whites to. 127. 128. on charles river. v. 32. carried off by pestilence just before the arrival of plymouth colony. 51. 54. great mortality among, by small-pox. 194. 195. P. 67. dress and habits. viii. 27. 28. number of, educating at cambridge, and of christian indians in massachusetts. 65. place of residence. ix. 236. And see mashpee, natick, martha's vineyard, narraganset, etc.

Massachusetts, shipping in 1806. iii. 122. register. iii. 163. fires in, from 1701 to 1800. i. 81. insurrection in, headed by shays. iii. 246. quelled. 248. 249. constitution of, formed; adopts the united states constitution. 161. provincial congress of; list of killed and wounded at the battles of concord and lexington. viii. 45.

Massachusetts historical society alphabetical list of its members. i. 8. x. 191. 192. laws and regulations. i. 3. circular letter. 14. ii. 277. donations to. 285. iii.



292. iv. 304. vii. 297. viii. 329. ix. 369. x. 188. library, books deposited in, by old south church. vii. 179. when incorporated. 181. first publishes collections. 182. list of its members recently elected. x. 191.
- Massachusetts medical society, remonstrance against college of physicians. i. 134.
- Massachusetts general hospital, petition for. i. 127.
- Massachusetts indian language, eliot's grammar of, at large. ix. 243, et post.; and mr. pickering's introduction to. 223, et post.
- Massacre of english at virginia by indians. vi. 411.
- Massapee. iii. 175.
- Massaquatucket. vii. 140.
- Massasoit. iii. 177. or woosamequen, chief sachem of wompanoogs. v. 33. comes to plymouth. 59. acknowledges himself a subject of king james, and enters into a league with the pilgrims. 59. 60. 61. or ousamequin. vii. 140. or massasoyt, his habitation at puckanokick. ix. 27. which is near narraganset bay, visited by plymouth settlers. 49. 50. overthrown by the narragansets. 54. 57. with 90 indians spends some days at plymouth. 60. acknowledges himself subject to king james. 68. or massasowat, a friend of plymouth people. 82. 84. 95.
- Massassoomineuk, its meaning. iii. 176.
- Massey, jeffrey. viii. 106.
- Massey, john. viii. 106.
- Massey, rev. edmund. i. 106.
- Masters, john. iii. 266. cuts a passage from charles river to cambridge, for which the court promise payment. vii. P. 30. 60.
- Masters' brook. iii. 262. 265.
- Masterson, nathaniel, appointed marshal of all york. vi. 593. 594. 596.
- Matacut harbour. iii. 20.
- Matakeeset bay. iii. 40. 41.
- Matakeeset, now pembroke. vii. 144. 171.
- Matopan, or dorchester, settled. v. 134. 135. See dorchester, massachusetts.
- Matfield river. vii. 151. 172.
- Mather, rev. richard, of dorchester. i. 204. iii. 150. his preservation from shipwreck; arrives. v. 199. 200. 273. his answer to rev. mr. davenport referred to. vi. 590. his death. 607. vii. 41. viii. 98.
- Mather, rev. samuel, of dublin, ireland. vii. 29. 187.
- Mather, rev. nathaniel. vii. 29.
- Mather, rev. dr. increase. i. 202. visited by john dunton. ii. 100. agent for plymouth colony. iii. 190. visits the confessors of witchcraft, at salem. 221. iv. 93. letter to, on the episcopal controversy in connecticut. 301. his treatise on baptism referred to. vi. 570. vii. 161. his manuscripts. 184. letter to, from anthony wood. 187. his relation of the troubles which happened to new england by the indians, referred to. viii. 125.
- Mather, rev. dr. cotton, his magnalia. i. (xxx) 203. 205. encourages inoculation. 106. visited by john dunton. ii. 101. 133. 147. informs dr. boylston of the manner of inoculating for the small-pox in turkey. 159. letter to, from gov. dudley, giving an account of an uncommon tooth. 263. quoted. iv. 126. 138. his ratio disciplinæ. 180. letter to, on the episcopal controversy in connecticut. 301. v. (v.) quoted. vi. 541. notice of ezeiel cheever. vii. 130. magnalia quoted. 132. 161. quoted. 162. quoted. P. 41. 45. mistake corrected. P. 45. 48. viii. 243. hecatompolis referred to. x. 56.
- Matlack, timothy, his letter to hon. william findley, giving an account of attempts to abolish slavery in pennsylvania and jersey. viii. 184. 193.
- Mattachiest. ix. 83.
- Mattachusetts. See massachusetts.
- Mattacusets. See massachusetts.
- Mattakeset. iv. 222.
- Mattakeset pond. iv. 92. 225.
- Mattaneaug, or windsor, connecticut, settled. vi. 307.
- Mattanwake, or long island. v. 89.
- Mattapoiset. iii. 200. iv. 258. 259. now rochester. 250. 263. x. 31.
- Mattapoiset harbour. iv. 252. x. 36.
- Mattapoiset brook. iv. 254.

- Mattapoiset river. iv. 302. 303. x. 35. 36.
- Mattapoiset village. iv. 255.
- Mathews, capt. john, sent on discovery to new england. v. 13. ix. 5. a true lover of virginia; his farm. 119.
- Matthews, rev. marmaduke. vi. 663. of hull and of malden. viii. 15. "meeter on." 16. of lynn, accused of preaching erroneous and unsafe opinions, is summoned before massachusetts general court. 325. 326.
- Matthews, —. iii. 27.
- Maud, rev. —, of dover, new hampshire, a good man. vi. 364. vii. 33.
- Maushop, a fabulous giant. iii. 43. 46.
- Maverick, rev. john, first minister of dorchester. ii. 91. iii. 150. arrives. v. 133. settles at dorchester. 134. 135. 186. 189. 192. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman. P. 29. mistake about his arrival corrected. P. 39. notice of. P. 40. forms a congregational church at plymouth, england; ordained episcopally in england. P. 41. 66.
- Maverick, samuel. ii. 86. v. 160. vi. 500. vii. P. 4. 5. his house at winnesmet. P. 34. his pinnace. P. 58. receives from bull and others, pirates, a pinnace, in exchange for one captured by them. P. 73. viiii. 233.
- Maverick, samuel, king's commissioner, with col. nichols and others. vii. 92. (And see commissioners, &c. and nichols, col.) at pascataqua. v. 89. vi. 665. at boston. viii. 52. 58. 62. 64. creates disgust at pascataqua. 75. 77. 81. 82. 84. 87. 90. 92. 94. 95. 109.
- Maverick, elias. viii. 233.
- Mawhawks, or maquas. ix. 236. And see mohawks.
- Mawques, or mohawk indians. vi. 629. And see mohawks.
- Maxwell, john, his disposition relative to judge s. sewall's denying a habeas corpus. viii. 241.
- Maydwell, thomas. v. 232.
- Mayes indians, their residence and number. ii. 25.
- May-flower, the ship which brought the pilgrims to plymouth. iii. 174. 208. v. 129. arrives at charlestown. 131. vii. 153. P. 10.
- Mayhew, thomas, governour of martha's vineyard. ii. 64. iii. 33. 34. labours among the indians of martha's vineyard 66. dies at the age of ninety. 69. 86. satisfied with the answer of indians; influence over them. 87. attempts, (with his son,) to civilize indians, 83. prudence in managing with indians. 83. 84. introduces juries among them. 83. grant to, of martha's vineyard; visits indians to preserve peace; obtains commission to recover martha's vineyard, &c. 85. prevents indians from going to war. 86. instructs indians at martin's vineyard. viii. 29. 231.
- Mayhew, rev. thomas, jun. of martha's vineyard; character. iii. 34. 67. first minister of edgartown. 71. labours among the indians. 92. vi. 654. lost at sea on his passage to england. iii. 67. vi. 557. 654. 655.
- Mayhew, matthew, "brief account of the success of the gospel," &c. quoted. iii. 67. magistrate and preacher to the indians at martha's vineyard. 68. 69. 87.
- Mayhew, thomas, a justice of the court of common pleas at martha's vineyard. iii. 68.
- Mayhew, john. iii. 67. a preacher at martha's vineyard; character. iii. 68. preacher at tisbury. 74.
- Mayhew, rev. experience, of martha's vineyard. ii. 47. character and works. 68. 69. death. 69.
- Mayhew, dr. matthew. iii. 69. 70.
- Mayhew, joseph, tutor at harvard college. iii. 69.
- Mayhew, nathan. iii. 69.
- Mayhew, john. iii. 70.
- Mayhew, jeremiah. iii. 70.
- Mayhew, rev. dr. jonathan, of boston, writings on episcopacy. ii. 196. 202. 212. iii. 17. 69.
- Mayhew, zechariah, a preacher to indians. iii. 69.
- Mayhew, thomas, esquire. iii. 17. iv. 87.
- Mayhew, —. iii. 66.
- Maynard, sjr john, a benefactor of harvard college. ii. 108.
- Mayo, rev. john. vi. 663.

- Mayo, mrs. x. 176.  
 Mc call, major hugh. x. 192.  
 Mc clench, mrs. x. 177.  
 Mc clintock, rev. samuel, of green-land, new hampshire. iv. 178.  
 Mc cloud, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Mc clure, robert. x. 179.  
 Mc cormick, ———, shoots a man, is tried and condemned, but is re-prieved. ii. 229.  
 Mc crea, miss, mr. tudor's allusion to. viii. 298.  
 Mc culler, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Mc curdy, lieut. john. x. 178.  
 Mc duffee, col. john. x. 178.  
 Mc farland, rev. asa, of concord, new hampshire. iii. 112.  
 Mc gregore, rev. david, of london-ry, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Mc intire, mrs. x. 177.  
 Mc kean, rev. dr. joseph. i. 248. iii. 287. letter from. 288. v. (vi.) professor of rhetoric and oratory at harvard college; sketch of his life and character. viii. 157. 167. settled at milton. 158. invited to settle in boston; a representative of boston. 160. chosen professor of mathematicks and natural philoso-phy, but does not accept; inaugu-rated professor of rhetoric and ora-tory. 161. dies; buried at the havana; epitaph. 164. 165. list of publications. 166.  
 Mc kean, william. viii. 165.  
 Mc kean, agnes. viii. 166.  
 Mc kean, william. viii. 166.  
 Mc kean, elizabeth. viii. 166.  
 Mc kee, dr. iv. 293.  
 Mc keller, peter. viii. 156.  
 Mc kennie, rev. ———. i. 146.  
 Mc kenzie, ———. ii. 11. 12. 23. his voyages. 43. referred to. x. 131. 143.  
 Mc kenzie, ———, a midshipman. ii. 236.  
 Mc kenzie's river. ii. 43.  
 Mc lean, col. ii. 236.  
 Mc lellan, jane. x. 179.  
 Mc loud, ensign. iv. 219.  
 Mc mullen, capt. lieut. viii. 156.  
 Mc neal, capt. viii. 157.  
 Mc pherson, ———, aid to montgom-ery. ii. 244. slain. 246.  
 Mc pherson, ———, instructor. ii. 249.  
 Mead, dr. i. 108.  
 Mead, elijah. ii. 176. 180.  
 Mead, rev. samuel, of amesbury. iv. 261. x. 37.  
 Mead's pond, in waltham. iii. 265. 266.  
 Meadford. See medford.  
 Means, major thomas. iv. 180.  
 Means, ———. iv. 180.  
 Meautis, thomas. v. 153.  
 Mechanics, to fix their own wages. viii. P. 23.  
 Mecumel. See miantonemo.  
 Mede, ———, his opinion respecting the natives of America. v. 26.  
 Medford, taxed £3 out of £50 in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. tax for the support of ministers. P. 6. tax. P. 57. P. 60. tax. P. 85. tax. viii. 230. witchcraft at. x. 17.  
 Medical dissertations, list of. i. 117. 118.  
 Medical society of massachusetts, terms of admission to. i. 113. ad-dress to, by dr. josiah bartlett. 105. established. 112. its officers in 1812. 114.  
 Medical society (boylston.) i. 127.  
 Medical science, history of its progress in massachusetts. i. 105.  
 Medicinal springs in new england. v. 24.  
 Medulla theologie, of rev. w. ames, quoted. vii. 165.  
 Meech, rev. asa, of bridgewater. vii. 166.  
 Meigs, ———. ii. 22.  
 Meigs, mrs. ii. 231. 234. 238. 242.  
 Meigs, josiah, president of university of georgia. ii. 227.  
 Meigs, major return-j.; journal of his expedition to quebec under col. benedict arnold; account of; hon-oured by congress; his military ex-ploits. ii. 227. captured at quebec. 246. For incidents related in his journal, see arnold, col. bene-dict.  
 Mein's new hampshire register. iv. 79.  
 Mendon settled. vi. 591. destroyed by indians. 592.  
 Mendoza, ———, his treatise of war referred to. vii. 216.  
 Menehighon. See monhegan.  
 Menemsha pond. iii. 42. 44. 45. 49. 58.



- Menemsha bite. iii. 45.  
 Menomene river. ii. 10.  
 Menomene, or fols-avoise, indians, their language, number and residence. ii. 10.  
 Mercer, richard. iv. 134.  
 Mercer, mrs. iv. 134.  
 Merchant, ———. iii. 66.  
 Merchants of boston send relief to his majesty's fleet in distress at caribbee islands. vi. 592.  
 Merchant adventurers, the first in massachusetts. ii. 68.  
 Mercury, packet brig. iv. 285.  
 Mercy, william. viii. 46.  
 Merick, henry. iv. 240.  
 Merrick, william. vii. 138.  
 Merrill, rev. nathaniel, of nottingham west. iv. 78.  
 Merrill, rev. gyles, minister of north parish of haverhill and plaistow. iv. 78. his ordination, death and character. 147. 152.  
 Merrill, rev. nathaniel, of boscawen. x. 74.  
 Merrill, james-c. iv. 147. 169. x. 192.  
 Merrill, samuel. iv. 147. 169.  
 Merrill, rev. nathaniel, of lyndeborough, new hampshire. viii. 177.  
 Merrimack river. iii. 137. 144. iv. 76. 121. v. 17. vii. 18. 66. x. 72. indians at. v. 32.  
 Merrimack, new hampshire, its ministers and churches. viii. 178.  
 Merrimack bridge. iv. 122.  
 Merrimack intelligencer. iv. 126.  
 Merrimack bay, french vessel wrecked at. v. 99.  
 Merrit, henry. iv. 242.  
 Merry, ———, of rochester. iv. 253.  
 Merry, ———. iii. 66.  
 Merry's pond. iv. 253. x. 36.  
 Merry-meeting bay. ii. 229. iii. 118. its indians capture families there. viii. 254.  
 Merton college. i. 165.  
 Meserve, george. iii. 119.  
 Messinger, widow. viii. 197.  
 Metapoiset. vii. 156.  
 Metcalf, ———, printer. ii. 283.  
 Methna, signification of. ii. 267.  
 Mevis, ———. vii. 29.  
 Mexanimo. See miantonemo.  
 Mexico, natives of. v. 27. See new mexico.  
 Miacomit. iii. 26.  
 Miami river. ii. 7.  
 Miamis indians. ii. 6. 7. and the illinois, originally one tribe. 7. attentive to agriculture; their number and annuity. 7. 12.  
 Miantonemo, sachem of the narragansets. iv. 42. or mecumel, comes to boston to make peace. v. 144. 145. 253. 254. conspiracy against the english; character and designs. vi. 446. 447. appears at court at boston; persuades massachusetts people that his intentions are peaceable. 448. attacks uncas and is defeated. 450. is captured and put to death. 451. with the consent of the commissioners of the united colonies. vii. 45. 46. 47. with canonicus, quarrels with ou-samaquin. 75. 76. comes to boston about gorton's affairs. vi. 404. vii. P. 59. or miantonomeh, or mecumeh, kindly treated at boston; his punishment for stealing there. P. 64. 65. or mexanimo, troops sent against. viii. 3. or miantomo. 136. joins capt. mason against the pequots. 122. 136. 148. ix. 182. or myantonemo, captured and put to death by uncas. 202. a friend to rhode island. 202.  
 Michigan lake. ii. 10. 11.  
 Mickasew, its meaning. iv. 275.  
 Middleborough, bills of mortality. ii. 261. iii. 169. vii. 142. cider. 116.  
 Middlebury, vermont, a statistical account of. ix. 123. scenery. 124. alluvial soil. 125. 126. mills and manufactories. 127. marble manufactory. 129. 130. face of country and minerals. 131. iron ore. 133. facilities for manufacturing copperas. 134. valuable marble. 135. water; mineral spring; fertility of soil. 137. price of wood and of wheat at; fruit trees. 138. gardening. 144. catalogue of plants, with their botanical names. 146, et seq.  
 Middlebury river. ix. 123.  
 Middlecot, richard. viii. 44.  
 Middle ground shoal. iii. 45.  
 Middle pond. iii. 118.  
 Middlesex canal. ii. 174. iv. 193.  
 Middletown, new hampshire, description of. iii. 120. incorporation.

121. schools, professional men and inhabitants. 121.
- Midwifery, lectures on. i. 117.
- Mighill, rev. thomas, of scituate. iv. 235.
- Milbourne, peter, captain of the arbella. v. 128.
- Mildew, in new england. vi. 642.
- Mile-and-a-half money. iv. 88.
- Mile-end cove. ix. 198.
- Miles, capt. charles. viii. 46.
- Military officers chosen by the court of assistants. vii. P. 32. 34. chosen by the freemen for life or good behaviour, excepting the major-general, who is chosen annually. viii. 11.
- Military, twenty-six companies of, under massachusetts government; drilled eight days a year; each person fined five shillings for every neglect, without other exemption than ministers, deacons and magistrates. vii. 53. of massachusetts, in 1665. viii. 72. muster early in massachusetts. i. (xxix.)
- Military company, the first about boston, petitions to be incorporated; petition rejected. v. 243. See ancient and honourable artillery company.
- Military affairs, commissioners of, have power of life and limb. v. 164.
- Military hospitals. i. 111.
- Mill brook. iv. 55. 62. or stony brook. x. 65.
- Mill river. iii. 166.
- Miller, rev. john, of rowley, requested to go to virginia, and declines. vi. 410. 663. of yarmouth. vii. 13.
- Miller, ———, says the people of new england are traitors, because they have not the king's colours on the castle; arrested, but dismissed. v. 241.
- Miller, lieut. viii. 157.
- Miller, james. ii. 167. viii. 46.
- Miller, ensign thomas. ii. 175.
- Miller, rev. dr. samuel, of princeton, new jersey. viii. 167.
- Miller, deacon thomas. ii. 171.
- Miller, capt. joseph. ii. 176. 180.
- Miller's retrospect, quoted. viii. 276.
- Milles, john. vii. P. 5.
- Milles, joy, } of the first bap-  
Milles, recompense, } tism in boston.  
vii. P. 5.
- Millford, connecticut, settled. vi. 319.
- Mills, serjeant elisha. viii. 46.
- Mills, amos. viii. 46.
- Mills, samuel-j. missionary to indians. ii. 1. 3. 22.
- Miltimore, rev. william, of falmouth, maine. iv. 181.
- Milton, vaccination at. i. 125.
- Milton hills. iv. 270.
- Mineral substances, mode of collecting. i. 25.
- Minetares indians, their residence and number. ii. 35.
- Ministers questioned about power of the magistrates, and their answers. vi. 396. 400. tax for the support of. vii. P. 6. quarrel about the manner of supporting them. vi. 412. meet at cambridge to consult about books opposed to congregational government. 415. to be supported by their own congregations. v. 304. meeting of, at ipswich. iv. 158. about the standing council; their resolves. vi. 387. 388. of new hampshire, list of, in 1767. iv. 78. of massachusetts, defend inoculation for small-pox. i. 106.
- Ministers of boston, their opinion concerning episcopacy. ii. 133. 137. agree to send clergymen to virginia vi. 410.
- Ministers and churches in new hampshire. x. 54.
- Ministry, a learned, opposed and defended. iv. 12.
- Minks. iii. 2.
- Minot, ———, of dorchester. iv. 91.
- Minot, john, his letter to gov. shute quoted. viii. 265.
- Minot, judge george-r. i. (xii. xviii.) viii. 298.
- Minoway-kautong indians, or gens de lai, their residence and numbers. ii. 40.
- Mint, early in massachusetts. ii. 274.
- Miracle, a pretended. iv. 107.
- Mirrick, james. viii. 106.
- Mirror of the times and general advertiser, extract from. vii. 186.
- Mishawum, or charlestown. ii. 163.
- Mishawumut, its meaning. x. 174.
- Miskenomge, its meaning. iii. 182.
- Misquamacock; carr, &c. decision relating to. vii. 91.

- Misquitucket. iii. 175.  
 Missionaries, english, in america. i. 158. ii. 206. among indians. 48.  
 Missions to indians, probable benefit of. ii. 20. 22.  
 Mississippi. ii. 4. 11. 14. 27. 40. or micissippi. viii. 250.  
 Mississippi territory. fi. 28.  
 Missouri river. ii. 23. 41. 42.  
 Missouri indians, their residence and numbers. ii. 32.  
 Missuckeke. iii. 182.  
 Mistick. ii. 161. its tax. viii. 230.  
 Mistick river. ii. 89. vii. 39.  
 Mistick indians. v. 32.  
 Mistick fight, gained by captain mason and others, over the pequots. viii. 141.  
 Mitchell, experience, a forefather. vii. 138. 147. 148. x. 57. 69.  
 Mitchell, rev. jonathan, of cambridge, his character. i. 205. arrives. v. 199. his death and character. vi. 605. and epitaph. 606. viii. 98. 111. 112.  
 Mitchell, edward. vii. 143. 148. 149.  
 Mitchell, john. vii. 148.  
 Mitchell, thomas. vii. 148.  
 Mitchell, jacob. vii. 148. 159.  
 Mitchell, jacob. vii. 148.  
 Mitchell, thomas. vii. 148.  
 Mitchell, experience. vii. 148.  
 Mitchell, jacob. iii. 208.  
 Mitchell, col. edward. vii. 148. 151. 160.  
 Mitchell, rev. ———, of pembroke, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Mitchell, nathan. vii. 160. 161.  
 Mitchell, elisha. vii. 160. 161.  
 Mitchell, nahum. vii. 160. 161. 170. x. 191.  
 Mitchell, daniel. vii. 160.  
 Mitchell, nathan. vii. 160.  
 Mitchell, cushing. vii. 148.  
 Mitchell, asa. vii. 170.  
 Mitchell, josiah-w. iv. 179.  
 Mitchell, sylvanus-l. vii. 170.  
 Mitchell, ———, iv. 179.  
 Mithridates, that wonderful monument of philological research, by the adelungs, vater and humboldt, referred to. ix. 231. 232. by professor vater. x. 82. 102. 133. 150.  
 Mitten, ———. vi. 529.  
 Mobile river. ii. 15.  
 Mobile bay. ii. 19. 27.  
 Mocquages indians. vii. 81.  
 Moffatt, john. iii. 119.  
 Mogg, a mischievous indian, killed by lieut. tippin. vi. 632. 633.  
 Mohegan indians, friendly to the english. iv. 28. v. 14. about hudson's river. v. 33. their place of residence. viii. 123. ix. 201. at war with the narragansets. 201.  
 Mohegan indian language, rev. dr. edwards's observations on, with an advertisement by j. pickering, esq. x. 81, et seq. (And see index, x. 155. 158.) errors in, corrected. 83.  
 Mohegon, or hudson's river. ix. 99.  
 Molina, his excellent history of chili, referred to. ix. 229. 231. x. 120.  
 Mohootset pond. iv. 272. meaning of the name. iv. 275.  
 Mohawk indians. ii. 6. iv. 130. or moquawes, their league with the english. v. 33. 34. vi. 629. their number, etc. viii. 243. or maques. 238. 239. or mawques. vi. 629. or maquas. ix. 236. language. See index. x. 155. 158.  
 Mompesson, sir giles, a patentee of new england. v. 217.  
 Monamoiet, or chatham. iv. 228.  
 Monckton, general. iii. 192. 194.  
 Monchauset. iv. 265.  
 Monchisses, its meaning. iv. 265.  
 Money coined in massachusetts. i. (xi.) ii. 274.  
 Monhegan, early place for fishing. v. 105. vi. 532. sir f. gorges has a plantation at. ix. 85. mutineers left by capt. rocraft stay a winter at. 9.  
 Monhegan island, colony at. v. 36. which is broken up; account of. 37.  
 Monimet, or back river. x. 47.  
 Monk, george, innholder at boston, notice of. ii. 103.  
 Monk's hill. iii. 163. 204.  
 Monponset, now halifax, massachusetts. iii. 164.  
 Monponset pond. iii. 164. vii. 157. 172. See moonponset pond.  
 Monroe, ———. ii. 247.  
 Monson. iv. 74.  
 Monstreseur, capt. lieut. viii. 156.  
 Montague's prairie. ii. 40.  
 Montezuma. v. 27.  
 Montgomery, general. ii. 237. 238. takes montreal; arrives at quebec,



238. 329, attacks quebec. 243.  
slain; notice of. 246.
- Monthly anthology. i. 255. ii. 273.
- Months, their names changed. iii. 135.
- Montreal, surrenders to gen. montgomery. ii. 238. earthquake at. iv. 73. its donation to boston during its port bill. ix. 161.
- Mont's hill. iv. 163. 282.
- Montvernon, new hampshire, its ministers and churches. viii. 178.
- Monumoy harbour. iii. 33.
- Moodey, mrs. of long island, assaulted by indians. vi. 346.
- Moody, john, accident of his servants. vii. P. 96.
- Moody, rev. joshua. ii. 101. of portsmouth. vi. 608.
- Moody, capt. samuel, of saco; his letter from father ralle. viii. 258. his letters to gov. shute about father ralle's exciting indians against massachusetts. 265. 266.
- Moody, rev. john, of newmarket, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Moody, rev. amos, of pelham, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Moody, elizabeth. x. 179.
- Moody, william. iv. 169.
- Moody, moses-s. iv. 169.
- Moonponset pond. iv. 280. 281.
- Moonponset, its meaning. iv. 281.  
See monponset pond.
- Moore, george. iv. 224. 240.
- Moore, dr. of nova scotia. viii. 284.
- Moore, rev. solomon, of new boston, new hampshire. viii. 176.
- Moore, rev. jonathan, of rochester, notice of difficulties with his people. iv. 262. 263. his manuscripts. iv. 264. x. 32.
- Moore, serjeant samuel. ii. 175.
- Moore, mary. x. 179.
- Moorhead, rev. john, of boston. viii. 176.
- Moose, numerous in new england; indian method of taking, at mount desert. ix. 19.
- Moose mountain. iii. 120.
- Moravians in new york. i. 149. their missionaries to indians. ii. 4. 44.
- Morel, ———, intended to superintend the churches of new england. v. 87. opened his commission too soon. v. 88.
- Morrell, goodman. viii. 233.
- More's forge. vii. 172.
- Morey, ———. iv. 294.
- Morgan, ———, executed. ii. 102.
- Morgan, captain. ii. 230. 234. 236. 239. 242. 244.
- Moria river. ii. 42.
- Morning exercises, continuation of, referred to. ii. 97.
- Morrice, william. vi. 562. secretary of charles ii. his letter referred to. viii. 76. 79. 81. 109.
- Morrill, rev. moses, of biddeford. iv. 188.
- Morrill, rev. robie, of boscawen. x. 74.
- Morrill, joseph, of biddeford, his donation to boston during its port bill. ix. 159.
- Morris, serjeant richard, his pension from massachusetts. viii. 234.
- Morris, roger, esq. viii. 155.
- Morris, lieut. viii. 156.
- Morrison, john. x. 176.
- Morrison, rev. dr. robert, missionary at canton. viii. 167. x. 192.
- Morse, rev. asarelah, of tisbury. iii. 74.
- Morse, sarah. x. 178.
- Morse, rev. dr. j. his new year's sermons referred to. ii. 169. 171. 173. 178. 180. 181. his report on indian affairs quoted. x. 152.
- Morse, leonard. iv. 179.
- Morse, samuel f. b. ii. 178.
- Morse, sidney-e. ii. 178.
- Morse, richard-c. ii. 178.
- Mortality of pilgrims. i. (xxii.)
- Mortimer, ———, of boston. ii. 103.
- Morton, george. v. 82. 83.
- Morton, thomas, host of merry-mount. ii. 90. iv. 35. a master of misrule. a pettifogger of furnival's inn, creates disturbances at mount wollaston. v. 103. 104. sent to england as a culprit; writes against new england; dies at pascataqua. 104. trial and punishment of. 137. 141. complains of massachusetts colony to the king. 145. his railing letter to gov. winthrop. 169. returns to new england, and is brought before the court. vi. 427. his letter against massachusetts people. 428. imprisoned and fined; removes to agamenticus. 430. 662. sent prisoner to england; his letters

- opened by the government of massachusetts. vii. P. 30. his accusations against massachusetts. P. 85. 88.
- Morton, nathaniel, secretary of plymouth colony, his memorial quoted. i. 169. iii. 203. corrected. vii. P. 83. 91. colony records referred to. iii. 178. iv. 86. 91. vii. 190. (prince's advertisement.)
- Morton, john. ii. 173. iv. 91.
- Morton, rev. charles, biography of. i. 158. of charlestown, his publications. 160. of newington green. ii. 100. arrives. 115. described by dunton. 116.
- Morton, ephraim. iii. 190.
- Morton, dr. ii. 115.
- Morton, john, schoolmaster at plymouth. iii. 173. 193. iv. 86. 90. 91.
- Morton, josiah. iv. 293.
- Morton, nicholas. ii. 178.
- Morton, phebe. iii. 193.
- Morton, lieut. nathaniel. iv. 87.
- Morton, ———. iv. 260. 284.
- Mosely, rev. elisha, of new gloucester. iv. 181.
- Moshasuck river, land near granted by canonicus to roger williams. ix. 169.
- Moss, rev. joseph, letter to dr. mather requesting advice, books, &c. on the subject of the episcopal controversy in connecticut. ii. 129. 133. of derby, connecticut. iv. 297.
- Mossieur, ———, a puritan. vii. P. 40.
- Mote, ———. iv. 249.
- Moulton, robert. vii. P. 29. viii. 229.
- Moultonborough, new hampshire. iii. 118.
- Moultrie, general. iii. 239. 249.
- Mounds, alden bradford's account of. i. 103. supposed to have been constructed by madoc. ii. 36.
- Mount aldworth. iii. 80.
- Mount desert, or mount mansell. v. 15.
- Mount hope. iii. 188.
- Mount independence. iii. 237.
- Mount feake. iii. 267. 268.
- Mount mansell, now mount desert. v. 15. viii. 115. the french dislodged from, by sir s. argall. ix. 5.
- indian method of taking moose at, which are numerous there. 19.
- Mount sod. iii. 75.
- Mount wollaston. iii. 285. or braintree, or merry-mount, difficulties and profaneness at. v. 102. 104. people at, sell guns to indians; desert the plantation. 104. vii. P. 66.
- Mountain hill. iii. 179.
- Mountain indians. ii. 43.
- Mountaineers indians, their residence and number. ii. 44.
- Mourt, george, author of mourt's relation. ix. 28. probably one of the merchant adventurers. 29.
- Mourt's relation of the beginning of the plantation of plymouth. ix. 26, et seq. parts left out from the abridgment contained in 8th massachusetts historical collections, first series, are restored. 34, et seq. a copy of, in the city library at philadelphia, of which a transcript is made under the care of mr. du ponceau. 26. quoted. iii. 183. a compilation by several hands. ix. 28. 29. 73.
- Mouse river. ii. 42.
- Mover, william. viii. 107.
- Moxon, rev. ———, of springfield, poetry on. viii. 4.
- Mr. stricken from a man's name by way of punishment. vii. P. 35.
- Muckquachuckquard, an indian deity. ii. 112.
- Muddy river. ii. 141. incorporated by the name of brookline. 145. iii. 203. 284. 285. iv. 101. vii. P. 66.
- Mud pond. iv. 193.
- Mud island. viii. 174.
- Muddy pond. iv. 268.
- Muhhekaneew. See mohegan.
- Muhlenburg, frederic-augustus, speaker of the house of representatives in congress. viii. 316.
- Mulberries. i. (xxi.)
- Mumford, ———. ii. 199.
- Mummy, found at cape cod by the first settlers at plymouth. ix. 35.
- Munhiggen. See monhegan.
- Munroe, dr. i. 108.
- Munroe, robert. viii. 46.
- Munroe, jedidiah. viii. 46.
- Munroe, ebenezer. viii. 46.
- Munroe, timothy. viii. 46.

- Munsey indians. ii. 6.  
 Munster, city. iv. 15.  
 Murdock, john, of plymouth, his be-  
 quest to the poor and schools there.  
 iii. 193. iv. 87. 89.  
 Murdock, thomas. iii. 194.  
 Murdock, ———. iv. 277.  
 Murdock's ponds. iii. 181.  
 Murray, ———. i. 138.  
 Murray, general. ii. 237. quoted.  
 x. 139.  
 Muscley shoals. ii. 15.  
 Muscogeas, or middle creek indians,  
 their language. ii. 18. 19.  
 Muscogee indians. ii. 11.  
 Musick, sacred, anecdote about. iv.  
 301.  
 Muskeget. iii. 19. 34. island, its  
 meaning. iii. 182.  
 Musketaquid, or concord, settled. v.  
 158.  
 Muskoutings indians. viii. 251.  
 Museum, anatomical. i. 117.  
 Musquomacuck. vii. 75.  
 Muzzey, isaac. viii. 46.  
 Muzzy, joseph. viii. 106.  
 Myantonemo. See miantonemo.  
 Myoxeo, an indian. vi. 657. 658.  
 Mystick. See mistick.
- N.
- Nabadachies indians, their residence  
 and number. ii. 24.  
 Nagadoches. ii. 25.  
 Nahant. See nehant.  
 Nahigganset, why so called. vii. 75.  
 See narraganset.  
 Nails manufactured at bridgewater.  
 vii. 176.  
 Nain, on the coast of labrador, mora-  
 vian establishment at. ii. 44.  
 Namakaas indians, their residence,  
 number, language, and warriours.  
 ii. 29.  
 Namaschet, submits to king of eng-  
 land. ix. 68. kingdom of, in new  
 england. 27. visited by plymouth  
 people. 52.  
 Namascheucks, an indian. ix. 52.  
 Namasket, or namaschet, its indian  
 relics. iii. 178. iv. 268. 204. vii.  
 142. 172.  
 Namasket river, source of. x. 35.  
 Namassachusett. vii. 137.  
 Namassakeese river. iv. 227.  
 Namaus, its meaning. iii. 169.  
 Namauskeag river. iii. 169.  
 Names variously spelled. i. 164.  
 Nanahumas neck. iii. 33.  
 Nanamesset. iii. 75. 76.  
 Nanda quees indians, their residence  
 and number. ii. 24.  
 Nanepashemet, king of massachusetts  
 indians, his hut and forts. ix. 58.  
 Nanohigganset. See narraganset in-  
 dians.  
 Nanrantsouak, or norridgewock. viii.  
 252.  
 Nantasket. iv. 282. a trading house  
 established there by plymouth peo-  
 ple. v. 102. its tax. vii. P. 31.  
 a plantation and fort ordered to be  
 begun there. P. 84. which is  
 given over on examination; suffer-  
 ings of gov. winthrop and others at.  
 P. 84.  
 Nanton, sir robert, chief secretary of  
 state, intended for plymouth colo-  
 ny. v. 45.  
 Nantucket, notes on. iii. 19. coun-  
 ty of, how composed. 19. island  
 of; light house and bearings; ponds  
 and wells. 21. climate compared  
 with that of salem. 21. 22. soil.  
 23. productions, plants, fruits,  
 trees. 24. has no fire wood; cat-  
 tle and sheep; common lands; di-  
 visions. 25. fish of superiour qual-  
 ity; town, dwelling houses, stores,  
 &c. windmills. 26. buildings, ma-  
 sonick hall, museum. 27. streets,  
 price of house lots, number of in-  
 habitants. 28. commerce and  
 shipping. 28. 29. whale fishery  
 crews, how paid. 29. manufac-  
 tures. 31. diseases and longevity  
 at. 31. 32. religious denomina-  
 tions; mostly quakers; manners,  
 customs, &c. 32. historical dates;  
 settlement of. 33. patent, confir-  
 mation of. 37. former descriptions  
 of, noticed. 37. 88. granted to  
 duke of york; purchased of earl of  
 stirling. 85. indians. 34. only  
 8 remaining; attempts to convert;  
 anecdotes and fables of. 34. 36.  
 Nantucket shoals. iv. 232. v. 172.  
 Narlow, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Narponset indians. v. 32.  
 Narraganset bay. iii. 163. iv. 281.  
 visited very early by frenchmen. ix.  
 50. charter of. vii. 99. 100. Vide  
 rhode island.



Narraganset hill, tradition about. iii. 174.

Narraganset; indians, mission to; their school. ii. 47. or niantick indians. 66. iv. 23. number of their warriors. 42. are powerful. vi. 67. at war with the pequods; waylay the commissioners of the pequods. 176. make peace with massachusetts. 254. conspire against massachusetts. 446. their plot against the english discovered. 449. make peace with massachusetts. 453. and others; account of the proceedings of the english against, published by order of the commissioners. 454. sachems complain of the english. vii. 81. and mohiggans, battle between. 47. why called nahiganset. 75. make peace with massachusetts. 76. sometimes called king's province. 92. 99. 100. 102. 105. 110. reasons why narraganset should be a part of rhode island, and not of plymouth colony. 103. 105. 107. 111. indians request to be under the jurisdiction of rhode island. 108. claimed by connecticut. 110. abandoned by inhabitants for fear of indians. 111. indians submit to king of england. 99. 105. and sell territory in narraganset. 99. 105. sachems of, address the king. 106. behaviour of the narragansets toward rhode island; cause of their war; provisions of charter touching war with. 111. manuscripts relating to lands. 184. sell corn to massachusetts people. vii. P. 5. quarrel at swoams. P. 53. wars with the pequots; sometimes called anygansets. P. 59. place of residence. viii. 122. an agent sent to, who prevents their joining the pequots. 123. indians join capt. mason against the pequots. 136. indians' sacrifices at. ix. 93. suffered less by disease than other indians. 94. roger williams preaches christianity to, every month, which is listened to. 203. have 4000 fighting men at the time of the first pequot war; much influenced by roger williams. 177. 180. 181. submit to charles i.; at war with the mohegans. 201. are defeated,

and their sachem, miantonimo, put to death. 202. forced to make peace by united colonies. 203. country, settlement begun. 198. place of residence of the narragansets. 235. indians, preparations made to war with. x. 59. 60. at the mouth of connecticut river. v. 33. their government. 33.

Narraganset river, no such river known. vii. 107.

Narrative of old planters. i. (xxix.) by j. scottow. iv. 104.

Narrowbiggonset submits to king of england. ix. 68.

Narrohiggonsetts, or narragansets. ix. 27.

Narrowgansits. See narraganset indians.

Narrows at wareham. iv. 287.

Nash, samuel, his deposition. vii. 142. 138. 139. x. 57. 66. 69.

Nash, ———. vii. 123.

Nashaun island, account of. iii. 75. 76. soil and productions. 76. cheese and deer; owned by hon. james bowdoin. 76. 77. iv. 252.

Nashawenna island. iii. 77.

Nashouohkamuck. iii. 83.

Nashua river. vii. 66.

Nashville. iv. 68. sufferings of first settlers. vii. 65.

Nasitt. v. 54.

Nason, rev. reuben, his account of freeport. iv. 176. ordained at freeport. 181.

Nassowanno, lawrence, an indian. i. 180.

Natardin, or catardin mount, description of. viii. 112. 116. indian superstition about. 116.

Natasket, taxed £1 out of £50 in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. See nantasket.

Natawanute, a great sachem of connecticut river. vii. P. 95.

Natches, indian, language. ii. 18.

Natchitoches. ii. 23. 24. indians. 26. 27.

Natick indians, lecture to. ii. 108. visited and described by j. dunton. 108. 115. manner of living; description of queen; government monarchical. 109. authority of king; revenue, &c. nobility. 110. punishments among. 111. religion.

111. 112. pay homage to certain creatures, in which they suppose some deity to be lodged. 112. account of priests; notions of a future state. 113. squaws; much benefited by rev. j. eliot; covenant, as drawn by rev. j. eliot. 114. conversion of; early had six churches and eighteen assemblies of catechumens. 115. manner of burial; blacken their faces in time of mourning. 122. assist the english. vi. 634. many of them christians. 653.
- Nattawahunt. v. 61.
- Natural history, lectures on. i. 118. professorship of, instituted at harvard university. x. 165.
- Nauduwassies. See sioux. ii. 39.
- Nauhaud, widow, indian. iii. 6.
- Nauhaut, deacon elisha. iii. 17.
- Naumkeag, or naumkeek. i. (iv.) now salem. ii. 163. indians at. v. 32. a few people early at. 102. planters arrive at; named salem. 112.
- Nausamund, in virginia. ix. 119.
- Nauset, kingdom of, in new england. ix. 27. 53. submits to king of england. 68. iii. 220. visited by plymouth people. ix. 53.
- Naushon island. iii. 16. See nashaun island.
- Navigation, english acts of, are observed in massachusetts for some time. viii. 71.
- Navy yard at charlestown. ii. 174.
- Neal, captain, agent at pascataqua. v. 89. agent of sir f. gorges and others, arrives in the ship warwick at pascataqua, to find out the great lake. 137. vii. P. 7. 30. 73. 88. letter about pirates. v. 160. 216. searches for laconia and returns, "non est inventa provincia." 217. 219.
- Neal, rev. daniel, his account of independents alluded to. i. 167. quoted. iv. 233. mentioned. v. (v.)
- Needham, topographical description of. i. 178. mills, meadows and brooks. 179. hills, produce, etc. 180.
- Neensquaes, its meaning. ix. 55.
- Nehant, (nahant,) shipwreck at. vii. P. 20.
- Nelson, horatio, anecdote of. iii. 195.
- Nemausin indians. ii. 38.
- Nepeof, an indian sachem. x. 55.
- Nepess lake. ii. 35.
- Neponset river. vii. 117. 142.
- Netop, an indian word, signifying friend. ii. 119.
- Newbury, walter. viii. 182. 183.
- Newbury. i. (ix.) tenth church gathered at, presbyterian. iii. 114. number of inhabitants. 145. v. 17. indians at. 32. settled. 158. vii. 12. 126. petition to massachusetts general court against disloyalty, and in favor of appeasing charles ii., and the names of the petitioners. viii. 105. 106.
- Newbury falls. v. 32.
- Newburyport, humane society of. i. 121.
- Newcastle, delaware. vi. 675.
- Newcomen, john, murdered. vii. P. 2.
- Newell, capt. eliphalet. ii. 175.
- Newgate, john. x. 24.
- Newichawannicke, assigned to capt. mason. v. 224. saw mill at, set up by capt. mason. 225.
- Newington, new hampshire. iv. 71.
- Newman, francis, governor of new-haven. vi. 330. commissioner to the dutch at new york. vi. 547. his death. 557. covenant signed in his barn. vii. 129.
- Newman, rev. samuel. vii. 10. his concordance. 187.
- Newman, rev. noah, of rehoboth. iv. 84. 245.
- Newman, mrs. iv. 84.
- Newman, thomas. viii. 107.
- Newman, rev. john, of edgartown. iii. 71. 72.
- Newmarch, john. viii. 107.
- Newmarch, elizabeth. x. 177.
- Newspapers at plymouth. iii. 177. in hillsborough county, new hampshire, account of. vii. 71.
- Newport, capt. comes out to virginia with people and provisions, who build jamestown. viii. 203. 204. 208.
- Newport, rhode island, church at, refuse to receive messengers from boston church. vi. 340. vii. 103. rev. mr. clark's church at, sends disputants to argue in favour of anabaptists, at the publick dispute at boston. viii. 112. planted. ix. 181. 182. a man tried and condemned to death at one of its town meetings. 184.

- Newton pond. iii. 51. 58.  
 Newtown, long island. vi. 669.  
 Newtown, or nonantum, afterwards  
 cambridge. ii. 141. iii. 136. set-  
 tled. v. 136. 158. people of, pro-  
 pose to remove to connecticut with  
 rev. mr. hooker; debates and fast  
 about removal. 172. 175. quarrel  
 with watertown people about a  
 piece of meadow. 177. college  
 founded at, by rev. john harvard.  
 237. name changed to cambridge,  
 and harvard college established  
 there. vii. 27. made the seat of  
 government. P. 8. canal to, from  
 charles river. P. 31. governour,  
 deputy governour and assistants  
 agree to build a town there for a  
 seat of government. P. 8. 36. dif-  
 ficulties about building; first minis-  
 ter, rev. mr. hooker. P. 36. a tax  
 laid in massachusetts for a palisado  
 at. P. 56. tax. P. 57. braintree  
 company removes to, by order of  
 general court. P. 66. first meet-  
 ing house erected at, with a bell.  
 P. 75. tax. P. 85. tax. 230.  
 See cambridge.  
 New bedford, vaccination at. i. 125.  
 notes on. iii. 18.  
 New boston, new hampshire, account  
 of ministers and churches. viii.  
 176. 177.  
 New chester pond. iii. 110.  
 New england, forefathers of, notions  
 of government. i. (viii.) firmness.  
 (xxix.) discipline of churches. 200.  
 description of, by capt. smith, al-  
 luded to. (xx.) first settlers of, at-  
 tached to military affairs. (xxix.)  
 church officers, how to act. ii. 54.  
 the cause of its settlement. 50. 52.  
 rules of conduct among first set-  
 tlers. 55. condemn prelacy. 58.  
 history of, by edward johnson. 49.  
 account of, in the life and errors of  
 john dunton. 100. first planters of,  
 well situated in england; embark  
 at southampton. 74. contempt of  
 worldly advantages. 75. farewell  
 of their friends in england. 75. 77.  
 prayers for old england; passage to  
 america costs £12,000. 77. ma-  
 terials brought with them £18,000;  
 artillery, arms, and powder, &c.  
 £22,000; costs of their expedition  
 £192,000; whole costs as much  
 more. 78. preservation through  
 the ocean. 79. approach the coast  
 of new england. 80. discover land.  
 81. perils of voyage. 84. courage  
 of the women; children born during  
 the voyage. 85. laws against im-  
 morality severe. 100. has prayers  
 on training days. 107. towns sup-  
 plied with ministers & schools. 193.  
 foundation of churches. iii. 128.  
 attacked by combined indians. 86.  
 sufferings of first settlers. 130. 132.  
 133. ships bring provisions to. 134.  
 first planting of. 123. relieved by  
 provisions from ireland. 138. en-  
 gagement with the french of cana-  
 da. 256. manner of living among  
 first settlers, and their sufferings.  
 124. 125. first settlers meet with  
 opposition. iv. 4. 20. government  
 and doctrine of churches. 19. 20.  
 civil government. 21. 22. the re-  
 sort of sick foreigners. 102. "new  
 england's jonas cast up at london."  
 107. history of, by rev. william  
 hubbard, vols. 5 and 6; prefato-  
 ry notice of hubbard's history. v.  
 (iii.) discovery of. 8. named by  
 capt. smith. 13. originally a part  
 of virginia. 13. 14. situation,  
 bounds and rivers. 14. air and  
 climate. 19. winters. 20. indians  
 have no records. 26. difficulties  
 and opinions about their origin. 27.  
 language of new england indians  
 unlike any in the eastern world.  
 27. 28. dispositions are kind, but  
 revengeful; treacherous, quick of  
 apprehension. 28. idle; drudgery  
 performed by females; the several  
 nations of; their government abso-  
 lute. 30. food. 31. fertility of  
 soil. 22. indigenous fruits; wild  
 grapes; winter grain would not  
 grow in. 23. medicinal springs,  
 trees and herbs. 24. animals and  
 birds. 25. first planting of; made  
 a colony separate from virginia;  
 settled by patentees of west of eng-  
 land. 35. colony sent to, by sir  
 john popham. 36. indians carried  
 off by a pestilence just before the  
 arrival of plymouth colony. 51. 54.  
 indian chiefs acknowledge king  
 james. 60. 61. disappoints the  
 adventurers. 87. first given  
 by prince charles to the cities of



bristol, exeter, and town of plymouth in the west of england. 84. new planters arrive. 111. patent. 114. subscriptions made for sending a colony to. 121. 122. patentees of, grant to plymouth people sole liberty of trading at kennebeck. 167. attempted division of, defeated. 180. president and council of, in england, grant parts about pascataqua to sir f. gorges and others. 213. grand charter. 217. 219. sir f. gorges and capt. mason attempt to divide it into twelve provinces, under one general government. 227. 229. great city in, proposed by gorges and mason, to contain 40,000 acres. 229. 230. petition of patentees, about to relinquish their charter. 230. 231. agreement about capt. mason's boundaries. 231. copy of a commission for regulating, from lords of council. 264. patent ordered to be forthcoming in england. 268. suspicions that it intended to throw off allegiance. 272. colonies form a confederation. vi. 320. early manner of ordaining in churches. 409. advice to churches by assembly of divines at westminster. 409. reasons of confederation. 465. articles of confederation. 467. plague, or pestilential fever, prevails in. 531. 532. platform of discipline of churches. 537. epidemick cough prevails through. 554. disputes about baptism, &c. 587. further disputes about baptism, church government, &c. 601. 602. mode of settling difficulties in churches. 608. 609. right to soil in, to be determined where the land lies. 620. troubled by indians. 629. success of the gospel among indians. 649. 660. mortality among indians. 656. mildew in. 642. list of ships that arrive at, in 1630. vii. P. 10. united colonies of, send troops against canonicus's sons. viii. 2. 3. johnson's poetry on, touching some of its sins, accidents, leading men, etc. 22, et post.; dress and habits of indians. 27. 28. indians instructed by rev. messrs. wilson, eliot, mayhew and leveridge. 29. new lights in, very early, produced by some

uncommon appearances of the sun. 9. account of indian troubles by increase mather, referred to. 125. "a brief relation of the discovery and plantation of," to the year 1622. ix. 1. cause of publication. 2. 3. president and council of, in england, their dedication to the "brief relation," &c. 1. capt. challons sent on discovery to. 3. capt. popham and r. gilbert sent to begin a plantation in. 3. 4. colony returns to england; project of planting relinquished. 4. french begin a plantation, dislodged by sir s. argall; voyage of discovery under capt. hobson and others. 5. indians sold by hunt for slaves; indians attempt to revenge the conduct of hunt on capt. hobson's ship. 6. capt. john smith, with capt. darmer, sent on an unsuccessful voyage to lay the foundation of a plantation in. 7. capt. rocraft, sent to aid capt. darmer, unsuccessful. 8. 9. capt. darmer, with tasquantum, sent to new england, visits all the coast, as far as virginia. 10. 11. 15. climate of. 17. produce, woods, fish, wild fowl, deer and moose. 18. indians are tractable, unless abused. 18. method among indians of taking moose; commodities, furs, vines, hemp, flax, timber, etc. 19. trade to. 20. proposed form of government for. 21. 22. general laws to be passed by the planters; to be divided into baronies, hundreds, &c.; to choose deputies. 22. trade with virginia colony. 116. good news from, or winslow's relation of things remarkable at the plantation of plymouth. 74. climate and soil; profits of english, dutch and french trade to. 100. 101. united colonies of, force the narragansets to make peace with the mohegins. 202. 203. indian nations in, at first settlement, names and number. 235. indian wars in, in 1675, 1676. x. 172.

New england medical journal. i. 120. New england courant, quoted. viii. 257.

New england's memorial, by morton, quoted. i. 169.

- New england prospect, by wood, referred to. iv. 296.
- New england annals, by prince. vii. 190.
- New england library. vii. 180. 181.
- Newfoundland, capt. whitbourne's book about. viii. 223. 224. names of some who undertook to advance the settlement of. 225. 227. capt. mason, governour of a plantation at. ix. 7. 8. capt. darmer there. 7. 8.
- New-found meadows. iv. 234.
- New hampshire, catalogue of ministers in 1767. iv. 78. ministers in 1741; number of inhabitants and soldiers in 1767 and 1815. 79. first planting of. v. 213. divided into five counties. vii. 65. first government formed. vii. (prince's advertisement.) formerly claimed from connecticut river to lake champlain. ix. 123. donations made by towns in, to boston, during its port bill. 159. 164. sketches of ministers and churches. 367. churches and ministers. x. 54. instances of longevity in. 176.
- New harbour marsh. iv. 224.
- New haven, town of. i. (ix.) notice of, by d. wooster; situation. ii. 217. harbour, trade, shipping and produce. 218. called dead (red?) hills. vi. 323. or quillipiuk, first planted. 317. 318. colony of, becomes a part of connecticut under the charter. 311. 331. towns in. 319. government. 320. have no juries. 320. 332. character of settlers; purchases lands in delaware. 321. loss of ship. 321. 322. difficulties with the dutch and indians. 322. laws in print. 323. sickness and fever and ague at. 324. 325. proposals to remove from, to ireland, &c. 326. mistakes of founders. 322. 333. people purchase of delaware indians. 380. disturbed by the dutch. 432. settled by commissioners. 435. trading house at delaware burnt by the dutch. 434. further difficulties with the dutch. 521. one of its ships, with many passengers of distinction on board, lost at sea. 527. quarrel with the dutch at manhatoes. 545. quarrel settled.
549. capture french forts at st. john's. 549. fourth colony of new england, planted, account of. vii. 6. 8. becomes a part of connecticut colony under the charter of charles ii. ix. 124. 125. colony, settled by mr. eaton, rev. j. davenport and others. 175.
- New holderness, new hampshire, account of. iii. 113. boundaries, soil, and productions. 114. mills, distillery and schools. 115. charter, episcopal church, inhabitants, baptisms, marriages and deaths. 116.
- New ipswich academy. vii. 70.
- New jersey, account of attempts to abolish slavery there. viii. 184. 193. donations made by towns in, to boston, during its port bill. ix. 160. 165.
- New kent. i. 80.
- "New life of virginea." viii. 199. 227.
- New lights in new england very early produced by some uncommon appearances of the sun. viii. 9.
- New london, new hampshire, note on, by j. farmer. viii. 173. 175. situation and boundaries, rivers and brooks, lake and ponds. 173. 174. soil, village, shops, meeting house, school houses, mills, etc. 174. 175. population; formerly called heidleburg; history; first settlers; incorporation. 175.
- New london, connecticut, situation, harbour, trade, and shipping. ii. 219. 220. produce and manufactures; imports exceed exports. 220. v. 19.
- New mexico. ii. 23. 28. 29.
- New netherlands, an early name of new york. See new york
- New plymouth. See plymouth colony.
- New rochelle. i. 141.
- New paltz. i. 141.
- New somersetshire, or province of maine. v. 261.
- New stockbridge indians; schools. ii. 6. 47. or mohegans, observations on. x. 86.
- New wales, name proposed for pennsylvania. vii. 186.
- New york, state of religious liberty in. i. 140. discovered and settled;

- called new netherlands. 140. inhabitants in 1771. 147. denominations of christians in. 146. college at. 152. instructions of governor about conversion of negroes and indians. 154. acts of, respecting the support of episcopacy. 153. administration of oaths. 153. missionary society. ii. 15. "state of religious liberty in," notice respecting author. 270. granted to the duke of york. iii. 85. origin of name; surrendered by dutch to commissioners of duke of york. v. 15. fort surprised and taken by monsieur colve. vi. 611. 667. formerly called new netherlands. 666. plymouth pilgrims from leyden intend to settle at, but are fraudulently prevented 666. 667. surrenders to the english, under col. nichols, king's commissioner. 667. the town described. 670. houses, trade, &c. 669. 670. 671. numbers, &c. of indians in alliance with. viii. 243. 245. historical collections referred to. x. 120.
- Niantick indians. ii. 66. or narragansets. iv. 28. 42. vi. 448.
- Nichols, judge, in the time of queen elizabeth. vii. P. 12.
- Nichols, col. richard, sent with sir. r. carr, george cartwright, and s. maverick, king's commissioners. iv. 102. from charles ii. vi. 577. 596. 598. 665. 674. arrives at new york. vi. 311. 584. of which he effects the surrender to the english. 667. their commission compared. viii. 52. papers presented to massachusetts general court by them. 55. suspected by massachusetts of being sent to raise £5000 and 12*d.* per acre on its improved lands. 56. the reasons and objects for which they were sent. 57. 58. letter from massachusetts general court, accusing them of a breach of its patent. 63. letter from massachusetts general court denying charges of injury to narraganset and other indians. 63. letter from massachusetts general court objecting to their power of holding appeals from massachusetts. 67. letter from massachusetts general court about messrs. whalley and goffe being at large in massachusetts. 67. petition from gorton and others, setting forth their arrest, trial, losses, etc. 68. answer from massachusetts general court about the observance of the acts of navigation. 71. answer from massachusetts general court about government, religious laws, militia, forts and ships. 71. 72. demand whether they should be acknowledged as a court of appeals, etc. 74. 79. their answer from massachusetts general court. 80. summons to joshua scottow about the case of the charles of oleron. 82. require alterations in the laws of massachusetts. 87. notified that the case of the charles of oleron is to be heard before massachusetts general court. 88. 89. remonstrate. 89. 90. conference with a committee of massachusetts general court about appeals. 91. 92. a brief narrative of their negotiation with massachusetts. 92. 96. except col. nichols, return from manhattoes to boston. 95. require all the freemen of massachusetts to be present at boston. 95. 96. go to plymouth, warwick, and pettasquamsuck, from which issue divers warrants, etc. 96. See commissioners from charles ii. &c.
- Nichols, moses, of amherst, new hampshire, notice of. ii. 252.
- Nichols, rev. ichabod, of portland. iv. 181.
- Nichols, benjamin-r. x. 191.
- Nicholas, edward. viii. 55.
- Nicholson, joseph, and jane his wife, quakers, sentenced to death, but suffered to leave the colony. vi. 571.
- Nickanoose. iii. 33.
- Nickispigue lake. iv. 130.
- Nickles, john. viii. 46.
- Nickols, john, a counsellor at law in england. i. 117.
- Nickotawance, sachem of virginia, becomes tributary to the king of england; his visit to jamestown. ix. 117.
- Nicolson, capt. ii. 261.
- Niff, mary, captured by indians. iv. 128.



- Niger, frigate, attacks plymouth. iii. 182.
- Niles, rev. samuel, of abington. vii. 120. 121. iii. 201.
- Nimrod, british gun brig. iv. 251. 288.
- Ninigret. v. 33. sachem of the nar-ragansets, raises troubles against the english. vi. 465. or ninicrete, or ninicraft. 546. -or ninegrad. vii. P. 59. or nynigrett, sachem of the nianticks. viii. 131. 148.
- Nipegon. See winnebago.
- Nipnet indians. v. 33.
- Nippenicket pond. See nunketest.
- Nishokken, a natick indian, part of his sermon on genesis viii. 20. 21. vi. 653.
- Nock, ann. x. 179.
- Noddle, william, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 29.
- Noddle, ———, drowned. vii. P. 63.
- Noddle's island. i. 123. ii. 86. origin of its name. vii. P. 29.
- Nohone island. v. 38.
- Nolichucky river, in east tennessee. vii. 59.
- Noman's land. iii. 43. 63. 70. account of. 79.
- Nonantum, or newtown. ii. 141.
- Nonconformist's oath, a poem. iv. 104.
- Nonconformists and separatists, difference between. v. 118.
- Nonconformists, five silenced in one day, and fifteen in another, by bishop dove. vii. P. 51. 52.
- Noosnippi, its meaning. iv. 275.
- Noosup, its meaning. iv. 275.
- Nope, or martha's vineyard. iii. 89.
- Norridgewock. ii. 231. indian fort, chapel, and father ralle's grave at. 231. father ralle and indians killed at, by capt. harmon and his troops. viii. 245. or nanrantsouak. 252.
- Norridgewock indians. iv. 130. war declared against, by massachusetts. viii. 254. village captured and many killed by massachusetts troops. 254. 255. father ralle's intercepted letter giving an account of their expeditions against the english. 266.
- Norris, rev. edward. iv. 157. ordained at salem. v. 276. vi. 386.
- Norris, ———. iv. 294.
- North, ———, of gardiner's town. ii. 229.
- North american indians, society for propagating the gospel among, account of. ii. 45. 46. incorporated. 46.
- North american indian languages, observations on, by j. pickering, esq. ix. 223. their classes. 233.
- Northampton, settled in consequence of difficulties in the churches of hartford, etc. vi. 316. liberty granted for settling. 543.
- Northampton, new hampshire. iv. 72. sketch of, by rev. j. french; incorporated. 189. formerly north hill; schools and social library; houses, families, and mills. 190. ecclesiastical history. 191. church records lost. 192.
- North carolina, its want of ministers. ii. 193.
- Northfield, or squakhet. v. 18.
- North hill. i. 180.
- North hill, or northampton, new hampshire. iv. 190.
- North kingston, rhode island, r. smith's trading house at. ix. 198.
- North pond, in plainfield. viii. 167.
- North river, massachusetts. iv. 220. 222. 224. 226. 227. 280. vii. 117. 176. ferry. x. 62. 69. bridge. iv. 228.
- Northumberland, duke of. vi. 349.
- North virginia. v. 12.
- Northwood. iv. 71.
- Norton, rev. john, of ipswich, persuades the church of boston to give up their opposition to the synod at cambridge. i. 196. a great divine. ii. 260. arrives. iii. 140. preaches at ipswich. 148. iv. 104. settled there. v. 274. at boston; sent to england to represent the loyalty of massachusetts to charles ii. vi. 576. his death. 602. answers the "sylloge questionum" of rev. apollonius; his character. 640. 641. viii. 53. 55. 56.
- Norton, francis. iv. 25. vii. 55.
- Norton john, of salem. viii. 106.
- Norton, john, of ipswich. viii. 107.
- Norton, freegrace. viii. 107.
- Norton, william. viii. 107.
- Norton, h. a quaker, banished ply-mouth colony. x. 70.
- Norton, professor andrews. x. 162.

- Norton, ———. iii. 66. 80. iv. 261. vii. 123.
- Norton, capt. walter. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman. P. 29.
- Norton's sound. ii. 43.
- Norumbega, or virginia. v. 13.
- Norwich. v. 19.
- Nott, rev. dr. eliphalet, president of union college. viii. 167. x. 192.
- Nova francia. v. 12. 14.
- Nova guena. v. 27.
- Nova scotia, assigned by sir w. alexander, afterwards earl of stirling. v. 89. surrendered by treaty of charles i. to france. vii. P. 78. first congregational or dissenting ordination. viii. 281. c. gannett's account of ecclesiastical affairs. 282. 283. the french dislodged from, by sir s. argall; granted by the king of england to sir w. alexander; a plantation at. ix. 5.
- Novum belgium. v. 13.
- Nowell, alexander, dean of st. paul's. vii. P. 14.
- Nowell increase. iii. 132. iv. 110. 114. assistant. v. 122. 124. teaching elder, and afterwards appointed to civil office. 185. 186. vi. 506. 546. vii. 41. 129. P. 1. 3. 5. 6. viii. 57. 229. secretary of massachusetts. vii. 190, (prince's advertisement.) assistant. P. 5. 21. 23. 27. 30. 31. 32. 34. 35. 38. 58. 60. 61. 63. 65. 66. 68. 69. 71. 72. 85. 86. 91. 92. 93. notice of. P. 14. a principal man at charlestown. P. 14. appointed to prophecy in boston. P. 25.
- Nowell, james. vii. P. 64, "corrections."
- Nowell, samuel. ii. 177. viii. 180.
- Nowell, alexander. ii. 177.
- Noyes, rev. james, of newbury. iii. 144. his book referred to. iv. 120.
- Noyes, nicholas. viii. 106.
- Noyes, rev. nicholas, of salem, described by dunton. ii. 118.
- Noyes, oliver. x. 27.
- Noyes, rev. nathaniel, of southampton, new hampshire. iv. 78. 149.
- Noyes, rev. thomas, quoted. x. 141.
- Noyes, daniel. vii. 170.
- Number 7, necessary to constitute a church. ii. 71.
- Nunketst, or nunketetest, river. vii. 146. 171.
- Nunketst pond. vii. 147. or nippenicket pond. 171.
- Nutten island, new york harbour. vi. 670.
- Nye, rev. philip, one of the assembly of divines at westminster. vi. 534. vii. 188.
- Nye, thomas. vii. 188.
- Nye, ———. iv. 260. 294.
- O.
- Oak, remarks on the cultivation of, by general benjamin lincoln. i. 187. 194.
- Oakes, rev. urian, president of harvard college. vii. 165.
- Oakes, thomas. x. 25. 26. 27.
- Oakes, dr. of boston, described by j. dunton. ii. 105.
- Oakman's ferry. iv. 230.
- Oath taken by bacon. i. 45. tendered to gloucester men. 56. of a nonconformist, a poem. iv. 104. of freemen, form of. 114.
- Oaths, acts about, in new york. i. 153. persons scrupulous about taking, permitted to "engage" in rhode island. vii. 95. 96.
- Obbatinewat, sachem at massachusetts bay, submits to king james. ix. 57. 58.
- Obbatinna. v. 61.
- Obquambud. v. 61.
- Oby river, origin of the name. vii. 63.
- Odlin, john, his deposition about blackstone's sale. iv. 202. 203.
- Odlin, rev. woodbridge, of exeter, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Offences, one hundred, presented to the first grand jury of massachusetts. v. 159.
- Officers of massachusetts historical society. i. 13. military, in massachusetts, how chosen. vii. 55. 56.
- Ogden, major, wounded. ii. 246.
- Oglethorpe, ———. ii. 188.
- Ohio, territory of. i. 186. claimed by indians. ii. 3.
- Ohio river. ii. 15.
- Oil, price of, at nantucket. iii. 29. imported early into new england. vi. 379.

- Olcott, rev. bulkley, of charlestown, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Old colony. (See plymouth colony, lands in, purchased of indians. vii. 143.
- Oldham, john, seditious, expelled from plymouth colony. v. 92. his character. 94. 107. his man accidentally shoots men training at watertown. vii. P. 63. his house burnt at watertown. P. 66. visits connecticut; killed by the pequods. v. 93. 169. 170. 176. 248. 250. viii. 123. discovery of his murder. v. 249. vii. P. 60. said to have been killed by the narragansets. viii. 131. 229.
- Oldham, thomas. iv. 241.
- "Old herring wear" in scituate. iv. 242.
- Oldmixon, ———. i. (xxx.)
- Old town, martha's vineyard. iii. 39. 48. or edgartown, account of. 70. its dwellings, ships, &c. 70. 71.
- Old town harbour. iii. 56. bearings of. 40. 48. 58. 70.
- Old colony club, its coat of arms. iii. 177.
- "Old comers." x. 63.
- Old men's tears, a book by j. scottow. iv. 102.
- Old planters' narrative, by j. scottow. i. (xxix.) iv. 104.
- Old south church, boston, account of books deposited by, in massachusetts historical society's library. vii. 179. 180. used by british as a riding school. vii. 180.
- Oleron, the ship charles of, trial about. iv. 102.
- Oliver, thomas. iii. 285. elder, of boston. v. 188. vii. P. 69. sworn a freeman. P. 92. ordained ruling elder at boston. P. 73. his son killed by accident in felling trees on boston neck. P. 83.
- Oliver, john. vi. 340. vii. P. 70. disfranchised. x. 24.
- Oliver, peter. iii. 285.
- Oliver james. iii. 285.
- Oliver, nathaniel. x. 26.
- Oliver, dr. james. i. 107. iv. 93.
- Oliver, andrew. x. 28.
- Oliver, judge peter, visits president stiles. ii. 260. his manuscript of hubbard's history. 260. 283. resided in middleborough; his pursuits, character and portrait. iii. 169. manuscript of hubbard's history, copied by his own hand. v. (vi.)
- Oliver, dr. peter. iii. 286. his letter to g. eliot. 288.
- Ollyver, thomas. See oliver, thomas.
- Olney, thomas. vii. 93. ix. 170. 197.
- Omikoues indians. viii. 251.
- Omsted, nicholas. viii. 139.
- Oneida indians, their schools. ii. 47. their number, etc. viii. 244.
- Onion, mrs. of roxbury, dies in despair. vi. 423.
- Onions, wild, early found in new england. iii. 130.
- Onkatomka island. iii. 75.
- Onkos, or uncas. viii. 133.
- Onnaquege. iv. 275.
- Onondagua, or onundawgoes indians, their number, etc. viii. 244.
- Ooneleshka. ii. 43.
- Opachancano, or opee Hankenow, indian emperor in virginia. ix. 78. captured by sir william berkeley, governor, and dies. iii. 117.
- Opinion of sir william jones, on the grants made by the council at plymouth. vi. 617.
- Oppelousas indians, their number and residence. ii. 26. 27.
- Orach plant. iii. 24.
- Orchards in massachusetts. vii. 37. 38.
- Orcutt, ———. vii. 155.
- Orcutt, ———. vii. 123.
- Ordination, presbyterian, validity of, doubted. ii. 130. the necessity of, denied by certain baptists at charlestown. ii. 172. early manner of, in new england. vi. 409. vii. 42. of pastor and elder at boston. vii. P. 73. the first dissenting in nova scotia. viii. 281.
- Ord, capt. viii. 156.
- Ordway, rev. nehemiah, first minister of middletown, new hampshire. iii. 121.
- Orme, robert, his account of brad-dock's defeat, with a list of british and american officers killed and wounded. viii. 153. 157.
- Orr, hugh. vii. 160. 161. 176.
- Orr, hector. vii. 170.
- Osega indians, their residence, number and warriors. ii. 42.
- Osgood, mary, her confessions about



- witchcraft to dr. i. mather. iii. 222.
- Osgood, rev. james, of wenham. viii. 176.
- Osgood, rev. dr. david, his sermon before ancient and honourable artillery company. ii. 186.
- Osgood, joshua-b. iv. 169.
- Osgood, isaac. iv. 169.
- Osgood, thomas. ii. 181.
- Osooit, zachary, indian preacher at gay head. iii. 13. 17.
- Ossage river. ii. 23.
- Ossage indian tribes, character, number, residence, warriors and annuity; cede lands to the united states. ii. 31.
- Ossamequin. See ousamaquin.
- Otash, sachem of narragansets. viii. 150.
- Otis, john, of scituate. iv. 228. 242. 248. vii. 122.
- Otis, james, jun. x. 29.
- Otis, samuel-a. iii. 167. 249. clerk of united states senate. viii. 316.
- Ottagaumies indians, their number and annuity. ii. 9.
- Ottawas indians, their number, warriors and annuity. ii. 11. 12.
- Ottawas river. ii. 10. 11.
- Otter pond. viii. 174.
- Otter creek. ix. 123. 125. 126.
- Otters at mashpee. iii. 2.
- Ottoos, indians. ii. 10. their number and language. 32.
- Ouchee indian language. ii. 18.
- Oufiougulas indians. ii. 15.
- Ouisconsin river. ii. 10.
- Oukehae indian language. ii. 18.
- Ousamaquin, quarrel with canonicus and meantinomy. vii. 75. 76. sachem, his deed of duxbury. 139. sachem of pacanacot, flees with his men to sowams, a plymouth trading house. vii. P. 58. x. 66.
- Outagamis indians. viii. 251.
- Outinon fort. ii. 18.
- Overseers of mashpee indians. iii. 10.
- Owanux, pequot word for englishmen. viii. 138.
- Owen, rev. dr. john. i. 203. invited to be minister of the church in boston. ii. 265. prevented by the plague and fire in london; treated with favour and kindness by the king. 266. iv. 104. vi. 590.
- Owen, thankfull. vii. 188.
- Oxenbridge, rev. john, of boston. vi. 603.
- Oxford, massachusetts. iii. 19.
- Oxford, bishop of, sermon before society for propagating the gospel. ii. 190.
- Oxford university, difficulties at, owing to church forms, etc. vii. P. 52. 53. bishop laud its chancellor. P. 52.
- Oyster pond. iii. 33.
- Oyster bed proprietary at plymouth. iii. 191.
- Oyster bank, at scituate. iv. 228.
- Oyster, long island. vi. 669.
- Ozark indians. ii. 28. See arkansas indians.

## P.

- Pacanaukett. iv. 266.
- Pacanas indians, their number and residence. ii. 27.
- Pacatuck river. vii. P. 59.
- Pacheweset island. iv. 289.
- Packanokick, or puckanokick, the seat of massasoyt. ix. 27. journey of plymouth people to. 49. 50. 73.
- Packard, samuel. vii. 148. 149. 154.
- Packard, samuel. vii. 149.
- Packard, zacheus. vii. 149.
- Packard, nathaniel. vii. 149.
- Packard, john. vii. 149. 157.
- Packard, jonathan. vii. 166.
- Packard, rev. elijah, of plymouth. iii. 201. vii. 154. 169.
- Packard, deacon barnabas. x. 44.
- Packard, rev. asa. vii. 154. 170.
- Packard, rev. hezekiah. vii. 154. 170.
- Packard, rev. theophilus. vii. 154.
- Packard, or packer, ———. vii. 151.
- Packer, thomas. iii. 119.
- Packer, or packard, ———. vii. 151.
- Paddy, william. iii. 182. 184. 220. iv. 100.
- Padoucas indians. See tetaus.
- Page, john, house burnt. vii. P. 27.
- Page, capt. nicholas. viii. 44. 105.
- Page, ———, first settler of lunenburg. iii. 104.
- Page, rev. john, of hawke, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Page, david, first settler of lancaster, new hampshire. iii. 103.
- Page, rev. thomas, of hebron, new hampshire. iii. 112.

- Page, col. jonathan. ii. 180.  
 Page, major david, cotton manufactory at middlebury, vermont. ix. 128.  
 Paget, ———. iv. 19.  
 Paine, robert. iv. 25.  
 Paine, rev. thomas, of weymouth. iii. 209.  
 Paine, judge robert treat. iii. 177. 209.  
 Paine, rev. joshua, of charlestown. ii. 171.  
 Paine, ———. vii. 123.  
 Painter, ———, punished. vi. 347.  
 Painter, hon. gamaliel. ix. 134.  
 Painting of the landing of the forefathers. iii. 225. 230.  
 Pakapeneese. iii. 34.  
 Pakeponesso assaults hiacomes, a christian indian. vi. 655. killed. 656.  
 Palace gate of quebec. ii. 245.  
 Palfrey, peter. v. 107. vii. P. 60.  
 Palfrey, ———. viii. 314.  
 Palladium, extract from. iii. 225. 230.  
 Pallinger, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Palmer, abraham. v. 122. vii. P. 4. 60. viii. 146.  
 Palmer, capt. of the st. patrick, difficulty with the lieutenant of the castle. v. 241. presents the king's colours to the castle. 242.  
 Palmer, john, of scituate. iv. 241.  
 Palmer, ———. iv. 266.  
 Palmer, rev. thomas, of middleborough. iii. 197.  
 Palmer, ———. ii. 107. 118.  
 Palmer, dr. iii. 197.  
 Palmer, ann. iv. 91.  
 Palmer, rev. samuel. iii. 16.  
 Palmer, barnabas. x. 178.  
 Palmer, rev. stephen. x. 191.  
 Pamet, submits to the king of england. ix. 68.  
 Pamola, an indian evil spirit, superstition about. viii. 116.  
 Panis, or pawnee, indians. See pawnee.  
 Panis, or towraches, indians. See towraches.  
 Pannaganskeins indians. viii. 246. 247.  
 Panoket island. iv. 289.  
 Panseawen indians. viii. 249.  
 Pantoozuk, included plainfield and other towns. viii. 172.  
 Paomet, or cape cod. ix. 50.  
 Paper money, note on. iv. 99.  
 Papists, their errors. ii. 58. 73.  
 Paris, rev. noyes. iv. 59.  
 Parker, archbishop, opposed to the consecration of churches. vii. P. 51.  
 Parker, rev. robert, a nonconformist. v. 118. 187. 188.  
 Parker, rev. thomas, of newbury, arrives. iii. 144. iv. 120. v. 193.  
 Parker, rev. james, of weymouth, preaches at lower piscataqua. vi. 364.  
 Parker, william. iv. 25.  
 Parker, william. iv. 239.  
 Parker, james. ii. 162.  
 Parker, robert. ii. 162.  
 Parker, thomas. viii. 106.  
 Parker, rev. jonathan, of plympton. iv. 270.  
 Parker, rev benjamin, of haverhill. iv. 150.  
 Parker, zechariah. iii. 111. H2.  
 Parker, john. iii. 119.  
 Parker, asa. viii. 46.  
 Parker, jonathan. viii. 46.  
 Parker, jonas. viii. 46.  
 Parker, mrs. x. 180.  
 Parker, daniel. iv. 169.  
 Parker, isaac, chief justice of massachusetts. viii. 298.  
 Parker, david. iii. 11.  
 Parker, daniel. ii. 180.  
 Parker, leonard-m. ii. 178. 180. 181.  
 Parker, rev. clement, of chester, new hampshire. ix. 369.  
 Parkman, rev. ebenezer, of westborough. iv. 263.  
 Parr, samuel. viii. 106.  
 Parsons, rev. jonathan, of newburyport. ii. 228.  
 Parsons, rev. samuel, of rye, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Parsons, judge theophilus. iv. 99. chief justice of massachusetts. viii. 286. his letter from w. tudor. 287. his character by w. tudor. 289.  
 Parsons, capt. ii. 225. 226. iv. 216.  
 Parsons, general. x. 87.  
 Partrich. See partridge.  
 Partridge, or partrich, rev. ralph, arrives. iv. 2. settles at duxbury. v. 240. vi. 556. a champion for the truth against samuel gorton. 662. 663. vii. 158. x. 57. 65. 68. 69.  
 Partridge, capt. arrives; his heresies; called before the court; ordered to quit the province; goes to rhode

- island. vi. 413. 414. goes to the nar-  
ragansets for tribute. 463.
- Partridge, george. vii. 138. 154.
- Partridge, william. x. 176.
- Partridge neck, in carver. iv. 275.
- Parturition easy among indian women.  
ii. 119.
- Pascataqua, different modes of spell-  
ing. ii. 267. v. 16. indians at.  
32. 78. murder walter bagnall.  
142. vii. P. 35. first settlement  
at. v. 213. parts about granted  
to sir f. gorges and others. 215.  
people in the neighbourhood of,  
form a combination of government  
220. 222. land there owned by  
bristol and shrewsbury people and  
others. 221 religious disturban-  
ces at. 222. vi. 350. 362. 364.  
eight men drowned at. 421. the  
south and east side of the river  
comes under the jurisdiction of  
massachusetts. 542. 543. £60  
per annum raised for harvard col-  
lege by some of its gentlemen.  
543. dispute about lands at. 555.  
men murdered at, by indians 631.  
two wicked fellows of, hung at bos-  
ton for killing their master. 647.  
now new hampshire; formation of  
its government. vii. (prince's ad-  
vertisement.) or pascatoway, go-  
vernour of, comes out under sir f.  
gorges. P. 7. or piscatoway, per-  
sons sent out to, for the purpose of  
making salt. P. 30. or piscataqua,  
or pascatowa, or pascataquack.  
P. 35. mr. trelane's tract of land  
at; fishing places at. P. 35.  
corn sent from, to boston windmill.  
P. 70.
- Pascagaulas indians, their number and  
residence. ii. 27.
- Pason, edward. iv. 110.
- Pasque island. iii. 77.
- Passaconaway and passaquo sell ha-  
verhill. iv. 169. 171. v. 60.
- Passaquo and passaconaway sell ha-  
verhill. iv. 169. 171.
- Pastanownas, or castahanas indians,  
their residence and number. ii. 38.
- Patackosi. iii. 175.
- Patawoenicke river, virginia. ix. 110.
- Patent to mr. white and others, of  
dorchester, england, of land be-  
tween 3 miles north of merrimack  
and 3 miles south of charles river.  
v. 89. of new england, the grand,  
of 1620. v. 80. (And see the ter-  
ritories conveyed, and the parties  
or persons to whom the conveyance  
was made.) of mashpee indians,  
granted. iii. 11.
- Patrick, capt. daniel, shot at stamford.  
vi. 425. sworn a freeman. vii. P.  
29. 34. his pay. P. 85. sent by  
massachusetts with troops against  
indians at block island. viii. 143.  
in the war with capt. mason against  
the pequots. 147. his pension from  
massachusetts. 234.
- Pattasquamscuck, or pettesquamscuck.  
viii. 96.
- Patten, william. ii. 162.
- Patten, rev. william, of halifax. iv.  
282. 283.
- Patten, mary. x. 178.
- Patten, rev. dr. of newport. iv. 283.
- Patten, amos. viii. 115.
- Patterson, widow, } x. 178.
- Patterson, grisel, }
- Patteshall, richard. viii. 105.
- Patteshall, miss. x. 2.
- Pattison, edward. viii. 139.
- Patucket river. x. 171.
- Patuxant river, virginia. ix. 110.
- Patuxet, or plymouth. i. (xx.) v. 37.  
41. 98. ix. 49.
- Patuxet river. vi. 521.
- Paucatuke river. vi. 582.
- Paukopunnakuk hill. iii. 175.
- Paul's point. iii. 45.
- Paunche indians. ii. 35. their number  
and residence. 36.
- Paupers in boston alms-house. i. 131.
- Pauquiaug, or weathersfield. vi. 307.
- Paucatuck river. vii. 91. 92. the  
boundary between rhode island and  
connecticut. viii. 122.
- Pawcatuck bay. viii. 149.
- Pawkunnawkuts, or wampanoags, in-  
dians, their place of residence. ix.  
236.
- Pawnees, language. ii. 26. 28. 29. res-  
idence and number. 33.
- Pawtucket indians, their place of resi-  
dence. ix. 236.
- Pawtucket river. ix. 172.
- Pawtuxet river. ix. 172.
- Pautuxet planted. ix. 182.
- Paybody, john. vii. 138.
- Paybody, william. vii. 138. x. 58. 64.  
66. 68. 71.
- Payne, john. viii. 107.



- Payne, william. x. 27.  
 Payson, rev. edward, of rowley. iv. 142.  
 Payson, samuel. ii. 176. 178. 180.  
 Payson, rev. edward, of portland. iv. 181.  
 Payson, john-l. ii. 178.  
 Peaked mountain. viii. 115.  
 Peakes, william. iv. 241.  
 Pearl river. ii. 16. 17. 43.  
 Pearson, george. i. 121.  
 Peas 10s. sterling a bushel in massachusetts. vii. P. 10.  
 Pease, theophilus, his preservation. iv. 264.  
 Pease, ———. iii. 66. iv. 261.  
 Pease point. iii. 81.  
 Peaslee, col. nathaniel. iv. 153.  
 Peat at nantucket. iii. 24.  
 Peck, rev. robert. iv. 110. ordained at hingham. v. 279. vi. 431. vii. 21.  
 Peck, john, a marine architect. iii. 173. iv. 285. his models for ship building. x. 163.  
 Peck, professor william-d. i. 118. obituary notice of. x. 161. made professor of natural history at harvard college. 165. visits europe. 165. anecdote of. 166.  
 Pecker, ———. iv. 132.  
 Pecker, dr. james. iv. 169.  
 Pecker, jeremiah. iv. 169.  
 Pecoek, or pocock, ———. v. 122.  
 Peekskill. iii. 245.  
 Pegipscoet river. v. 31.  
 Pekash, or pequot. vii. P. 25.  
 Peirce, capt. john, of the ship paragon, employed to obtain a patent for plymouth colony. v. 80. 81. his fraudulent conduct. 81. 82. first patent of plymouth colony taken in his name; richard gardiner's letter to him. ix. 27. his selfish views. 28.  
 Peirce, capt. william, arrives in the ann with passengers. v. 82. 130. arrives in the lyon. 139. saves the ambrose. 140. vii. P. 19. iv. 156. his ship cast away near virginia. v. 202. serviceable in bringing passengers to new england; goes to providence island and is killed. vi. 378. 379. who had been sent to ireland, arrives opportunely at nantasket. vii. P. 18. goes for, and arrives in england. P. 25. arrives in the lyon, which is saluted by boston. P. 37. sails for virginia and england. P. 38. 69. 71. arrives with passengers in the lyon. P. 67. his ship lost, with a part of his men and passengers, and goods, belonging to boston and plymouth. P. 86. 87. his letter about the loss of his ship. P. 87. 88.  
 Peirce, james. vi. 642.  
 Peirce, daniel. iii. 119.  
 Peirson, rev. abraham, removes to long island. v. 245. vii. 22. 23.  
 Pelham, in massachusetts. iii. 247.  
 Pelham, herbert, assistant. iv. 110. v. 122. commissioner. vi. 499. vii. 16. 55.  
 Pelham, william. vii. P. 4.  
 Pellets of clay, a curious discharge of. vi. 646.  
 Pelton, or strayton, george, his bees in virginia. ix. 120.  
 Pemaquid. i. (iv.) v. 11. 15. 16. 89. rifled by pirates. 160. indians at. vi. 629. rifled by bull and other pirates. vii. P. 73.  
 Pemberton, james. vii. P. 4.  
 Pemberton, john. vii. P. 70.  
 Pemberton, rev. ebenezer, of boston. i. (xxx.)  
 Pemberton, dr. ebenezer. viii. 158.  
 Pemberton, john. viii. 185.  
 Pemberton, ———. iii. 13.  
 Pembroke, earl of, a patentee of new england. v. 217.  
 Pembroke, philip, earl of. ix. 185.  
 Pembroke in massachusetts. vii. 141. indian name. 144. 146.  
 Pemigewasset river. iii. 109. 111. 113. 114.  
 Pendleton, major bryan, of sacco. vi. 542. 600. viii. 229.  
 Peneseque island. iii. 78.  
 Pengry, moses. viii. 107.  
 Penguin river. iv. 291.  
 Penhallow, samuel, his account of rev. charles morton. i. 161. indian wars quoted. iv. 129. referred to. viii. 254.  
 Penhallow, richard-w. iii. 119.  
 Penmanmore. vii. 186.  
 Penn, its meaning. vii. 186.  
 Penn, william, his letter to governour hinckley, of plymouth. vii. 185. his letter to richard turner. 186. confirmation of pennsylvania to

- him. 186. countenanced slavery; left a family of slaves. viii. 185.
- Penn, elder james. vii. P. 4. 69. marshal of the courts in massachusetts, his salary. viii. 233. 234. x. 24.
- Pennacooke. v. 242.
- Pennington, isaac. vi. 349.
- Pennington, lieut. viii. 156.
- Pennsylvania, origin of its name, and its etymology; debate about its name. vii. 186. letters on the attempts to abolish slavery there. viii. 183. 192. towns in, their donations to boston during its port bill. ix. 161. 163. 165.
- Penobscot. i. (iv.) plymouth trading house at, rifled by the french. v. 161. or pentagoet. vi. 494. trade to, at the disposal of plymouth people. vii. P. 34. plymouth trading house at, rifled by the french. P. 62. mr. allerton's trading house at, broken, and people killed by the french. P. 74.
- Penobscot indians. iv. 130.
- Penrith. vii. 186.
- Pensacola. ii. 26.
- Pentagoet, or penobscot. vi. 494.
- Pentecost harbour, named. v. 11.
- Pentucket, now haverhill, settled. iv. 126. indian deed of. 169.
- Pepperell, sir william. iv. 185.
- Pepperellborough, now sacco. iv. 185.
- Pequots, at war with the english. i. (xxix.) mortality among. ii. 66. iv. 28. take prisoners near hartford. 28. 30. 42. their cruel disposition. 43. defeated by the english. 47. 49. a warlike race. v. 33. cause of war with the english. 93. kill captains stone and norton. 156. peace made with. 166. 176. murder oldham and declare war against the english. 176. 248. 250. sachem persuades the delawares to sell to new haven men. vi. 380. vii. 81. war with massachusetts. 76. decree in favour of. 92. and other indians, allies of connecticut against the narragansets. 112. or pekash. P. 25. wars with canonicus and miantonemy, chiefs of the narragansets, about territory. P. 58. 59. war with the english. P. 59. 93. kill captains oldham and stone; murder and torture english, and resolve to extirpate them, and tempt the narragansets and mohegans to join them. viii. 123. causes of the war against them detailed. 130. 131. massachusetts sends troops against them under capt. endicott and others. 131. kill people at weathersfield. 132. a brief history of their war by major john mason, with an introduction and notes by rev. t. prince. 120. 153. place of residence. 122. 123. troops sent against by connecticut, under capt. mason. viii. 133. fort attacked and burnt. 139. remove towards manhatoes. 145. many captured by capt. mason. 147. 148. many surrender and are given to uncas, miantonimo and nynigrett; remainder settle in different places. 148. 149. number killed in the war. v. 251. 252. 254. lived principally where stonington and groton, connecticut, now stand; war was the first in new england. ix. 176. in which they were almost extirpated. 177. place of residence. 235. defeated by capt. mason; massachusetts and plymouth send soldiers against. x. 59.
- Pequod river, now thames river. v. 19. 33.
- Percie, george, captain of the fort at jamestown. viii. 209.
- Percy, lord, marches to lexington to assist british troops. ii. 226. iv. 217.
- Peregrinus, his paper on sargent's landing of the forefathers. iii. 225.
- Perfect description of virginia. ix. 105.
- Periwinkle, description of. iii. 58. 59.
- Perkins, william. vii. P. 86.
- Perkins, capt. vii. 54.
- Perkins, william. x. 176.
- Perkins, john. viii. 107.
- Perkins, jacob. viii. 107.
- Perkins, david. vii. 148. 159.
- Perkins, sergeant. vi. 628.
- Perkins, rev. daniel, of bridgewater. vii. 163. 168.
- Perkins, dr. richard. vii. 160. 163. 169.
- Perkins, thomas. vii. 170.

- Perkins, daniel. vii. 163.  
 Perkins, george-w. vii. 163. 169.  
 Perkins, jonas. vii. 170.  
 Perley, rev. samuel, of seabrook, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Peronie, capt. viii. 157.  
 Perry, richard, assistant. v. 121. viii. 97.  
 Perry, william. iv. 240.  
 Perry, seth. viii. 197.  
 Perry, obadiah. x. 54.  
 Perry, capt. john, his book on repairing breaches made by the sea, referred to. iii. 173.  
 Pessacus, sachem of narraganset. vi. 452. 453. flees to rhode island. 463. or pesicus, son of cononicus, troops sent against him; makes peace. viii. 2. 3.  
 Petaquamskocte. See puttequoms-cut.  
 Peters, rev. hugh, of salem, arrives. iii. 153. 154. vi. 363. sent to england. 371. or peter, returns to england. viii. 27. 119. his letter to dorchester. ix. 197.  
 Peters, andrew. viii. 107.  
 Peters, rev. andrew, of middleton. viii. 176.  
 Petersham. iii. 247. disarming at. iv. 209.  
 Peter's pond. iii. 2.  
 Petition for a general hospital. i. 127. for a college of physicians. i. 133.- of brookline, to be incorporated. ii. 144. of inhabitants of hingham. iv. 108. thrown overboard in a storm. 115.  
 Petit, ———. iii. 259.  
 Pettesquamsuck, or pattasquamsuck. viii. 96.  
 Petuck's island. iv. 234.  
 Pharmacopœia of massachusetts medical society, referred to. i. 115.  
 Phebe, a negro servant of john codman, sentenced to be transported for poisoning her master. ii. 166.  
 Phelps, william. vi. 308. vii. P. 60.  
 Phelps, deacon samuel. iii. 104.  
 Phenix society of charlestown. ii. 172.  
 Phi beta kappa society, mr. buckminster addresses. ii. 273.  
 Philadelphia, small-pox at. vii. 73. 74.  
 Philadelphia philosophical society, transactions of its historical and literary committee, quoted. ix. 224.  
 Phillip, king, war with. i. (xxix.) iii. 34. 187. 188. iv. 56. v. 59. vii. 150. 155. 158. anecdote of the gun-lock with which he was killed. iv. 63. a fac simile of his deed to plymouth. 267. cause of his war. v. 71. killed. 59. defeated at bridgewater. vii. 158. x. 66.  
 Phillips, rev. george, first minister of watertown, character. ii. 94. 95. iv. 155. v. 128. of bockstedt, england, arrives in massachusetts. 133. 135. 142. skilled in church government. 186. meets with difficulties. 186. requested to go to virginia, but declines. vi. 410. vii. 19. P. 3. 4. 6. house burnt. P. 3. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. P. 29. 31. 38. notice of. P. 45. 46. dies viii. 17.  
 Phillips, john. vii. P. 4.  
 Phillips, rev. samuel, of rowley. iv. 155.  
 Phillips, nathaniel. vi. 598.  
 Phillips, samuel, bookseller, of boston. ii. 102.  
 Phillips, judge john, of charlestown, his epitaph. ii. 179.  
 Phillips, john, jun. impeached for trading with an enemy, claims habeas corpus. viii. 240. 242.  
 Phillips, rev. samuel, of andover. iv. 155.  
 Phillips, henry. ii. 178.  
 Phillips, john. x. 28.  
 Phillips, col., of the yonkers, new york, his zeal for episcopacy. i. 146.  
 Phillips, hon. william. ii. 46. x. 29.  
 Phillips, lieut. governour samuel. iii. 249. iv. 155.  
 Phillips, major general. iii. 245.  
 Phillips, hon. john, of boston. ii. 167.  
 Phillips, hon. william. ii. 48. lieutenant governour. iv. 155.  
 Phillips, willard. vii. 170.  
 Phillis, a negro servant of john codman, burnt for poisoning her master. ii. 166.  
 Philpot, the martyr, in the time of queen mary, commits his papers to adam winthrop. vii. P. 11.  
 Phinney, elias. ii. 178. 181.  
 Phipps, sir william, governour. iii.



190. expedition to canada. 255.  
 259. his arrival in massachusetts.  
 x. 26.
- I hipps, samuel. ii. 177.
- Phipps, joseph. ii. 180.
- Phipps, major joshua-b. ii. 180.
- Picaneaux indians. ii. 42.
- Pickering, gilbert. vi. 349.
- Pickering, john. viii. 106.
- Pickering, jonathan. viii. 106.
- Pickering, hon. timothy, commissioner to western indians iii. 249.  
 letter to rev. dr. freeman, communicating a letter on the attempts to abolish slavery in pennsylvania. viii. 183.
- Pickering, hon. john, observations on north american indian languages, introductory to eliot's indian grammar. ix. 223. du ponceau's notes and observations on eliot's indian grammar addressed to. 313. supplementary observations on eliot's indian grammar. (xxx.) advertisement to dr. edwards's observations on the mohegan language. x. 81. notes on the same. 98, et post. 191.
- Pickles, jonas. iv. 241.
- Pidcoke, george. iv. 241.
- Pierce, rev. james, of cambridge and exeter in england. vii. P. 69.
- Pierce, capt. john. See peirce.
- Pierce, capt. william. See peirce.
- Pierce, michael. iv. 241. slain by indians. 245.
- Pierce, abraham. vii. 138. x. 69.
- Pierce, daniel. viii. 106.
- Pierce, solomon. viii. 46.
- Pierce, jacob. viii. 46.
- Pierce, rev. john, history of brookline. 140. 161.
- Pierce, hayward, esq. iv. 245.
- Pierce, rev. cyrus. iii. 269.
- Pierce, jacob. ii. 180.
- Pierce, ———. iv. 260.
- Pierson, rev. abraham, rector of yale college. iv. 297. See peirson.
- Pigeons, great flocks of. vii. P. 21. wild, peculiarities of. iv. 256.
- Pike, robert, commissioner to york. vi. 593. 595. 600.
- Pike, rev. james, of somersworth, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Pike, eleanor. x. 179.
- Pike, general, referred to. ii. 9. 11. 12. 23. 25. 28. x. 128. 130, et post.
- Pilgrims, plymouth. See plymouth.
- Pilsbury, capt. george. iii. 195.
- Pilsbury, rev. enoch, of litchfield. x. 56.
- Pilkington, rev. dr. bishop of durham. opposed to the consecration of churches. vii. P. 51.
- Pinn, john. ix. 185.
- Pimesepoese. iv. 291.
- Pinacle hill. iii. 179.
- Pinchin, thomas. iv. 240.
- Pinkeshaw indians, their residence, numbers and annuity. ii. 8.
- Pinkham, lydia. iii. 32.
- Pinkham, ebenezer. iv. 183.
- Pinkham, paul. x. 179.
- Pintard, john, esq. x. 192.
- Piorias indians. ii. 8.
- Pipe, capt. an indian chief, quoted. x. 111.
- Piper, nathaniel. viii. 107.
- Piper, william, first settler of new holderness, new hampshire. iii. 116.
- Piper, thomas, iii. 119.
- Pirates, beyond pascataqua. v. 160. dixy bull and others, the first in new england. vii. P. 73.
- Piscataqua. See pascataqua.
- Piscataquis river. viii. 115.
- Piscataquis mountains. viii. 115.
- Piscataquog. vii. 66.
- Pitcairn, major, marches his troops to concord. ii. 225. 226. iv. 216.
- Pitcher, rev. nathaniel, of scituate. iv. 233. 234.
- Pitman, elizabeth. x. 178.
- Pittsfield. iii. 248.
- Pittsford, or kirby marble, remarkably fine. ix. 136.
- Plague, or pestilential fever, prevails through new england, at st. christopher's, barbadoes, etc. vi. 531. 532.
- Plain dealing. iv. 93.
- Plain instruction for inoculating in small-pox, by dr. heberden, referred to. vii. 74.
- Plainfield, an account of. viii. 167. its extent, etc. 167. geology, mineralogy, and botany, with the times of flowering. 168. 171. curiosity, schools, and library; church and church members. 171. 172. history. 171. x. 41.
- Plaisted, capt. roger. vi. 599. of kit-tery. 600. viii. 96.

- Plank, early price of, in massachusetts. viii. 232. 233.
- Planter, ship, brings ammunition to massachusetts colony. viii. 229.
- Plants at nantucket. iii. 24. at middlebury, vermont, a catalogue of, with their botanical names. ix. 146, et post.
- Platform of 1648. i. (x.) (And see cambridge and synod.) debated and passed by massachusetts general court. vi. 550. set forth by the synod at cambridge. v. 184. vi. 537.
- Platt, ———. iii. 195.
- Platte river, of the missouri. ii. 10. 23. 26. 28.
- Pleasant pond. viii. 173. 174.
- Plein river. viii. 251.
- Plough patent for sagadehock arrives in the ship plough. vii. P. 31.
- Plough patent, or sagadehock. v. 141. 224. or ligonia, purchased by mr. rigbee. v. 368. dispute about. 369.
- Plough, ship, arrives with familists for sagadehock. v. 141. capt. graves arrives. vii. P. 31.
- Ploughs, none in massachusetts. vii. P. 88.
- Plowed hill. ii. 168.
- Plug pond. iv. 122.
- Plums of several sorts found at plymouth. ix. 62.
- Plumb islands. viii. 174.
- Plummer, ebenezer, of glassenbury, connecticut, his donation to boston during its port bill. ix. 159.
- Plymouth beach lottery. iii. 172.
- Plymouth, or accomack, or patuxet. i. (xx.) number of the pilgrims who arrived there, etc. (i. v. viii. xx.) soon after arrival, addressed in english by an indian. ii. 68. church planted at. 59. 66. church records quoted. vii. 163. furnish soldiers against indians. iii. 169. obtain a patent from virginia company. v. 48. difficulties in fixing upon a place to remove to; profits, how to be divided. 48. indians carried off by pestilence just before their arrival. 51. 54. reasons why the pilgrims left holland; propose to go to guiana. 44. negotiate for a settlement in virginia. 45. 47. opinions of church discipline; take their patent from the virginia company in the name of john wincob. 47. to work wholly for the benefit of the partners, and every thing to be divided at the end of seven years. 49. 50. patent from the virginia company lost. 50. are carried to cape cod, instead of hudson's river, by the knavery of the dutch. 50. 53. vi. 666. 667. suffer by cold and savages. 52. enter into a combination for mutual government. 53. 61. 62. choose john carver governour. v. 53. assisted by indians, who knew english. 55. name clarke's island. 57. arrive at plymouth harbour, december 16, 1620. 57. afflicted with sickness, of which many die. 57. 58. addressed by samoset and squanto in english. 58. instructed to plant indian corn; make a league with massasoit. 59. 60. government, by the laws of england. 62. religious worship and discipline. 63. first plant corn; english grain does not succeed. 66. choose w. bradford governour. 67. petition king for new charter. 84. proposed government of. 85. send commissioners to england. 86. assistants increased to five. 90. 91. governour allowed a double voice on the casting vote. 91. cattle first brought to, by edward winslow. 94. religious intolerance. 93. 94. trades with indians at kennebeck. 94. beaver and other furs for england captured by the turks. 95. 96. lamentation at the death of rev. mr. robinson. 96. send isaac allerton to england to negotiate a settlement with the adventurers. 98. make new division of land. 98. obliged to grind corn in mortars; governour affords assistance to the crew of french vessel wrecked in merrimack bay; begin to trade with the dutch at hudson's river. 99. choose edward winslow governour. 100. choose i. allerton assistant. 67. send edward winslow and stephen hopkins to massasoit. 67. send boats to view massachusetts bay. 68. joined by 35 new settlers. 69. receive a snake's skin full of arrows from the

narragansets by way of defiance ; returned full of powder and bullets. 70. erect a meeting-house and fort. 73. plant corn, each for himself, instead of being maintained out of the common stock. 79. procure bass in abundance and ground nuts for bread. 89. obtain a patent from the earl of warwick and sir f. gorges, which is confirmed by the king. 82. obtain a patent for cape ann. 110. indians offer to kill sir c. gardiner; forbidden by governor winthrop. 149. hires the ship hope, of ipswich, to displace the french at penobscot. 162. has a trading place at machias. 163. quarrel about the sole right of trading at kennebeck. 167. 168. informed of connecticut by the dutch. 170. build a trading house on connecticut river. 172. complain of massachusetts about connecticut. 179. pestilential fever at. 194. shallops cast away, and people drowned. 201. refuse mrs. hutchinson and others liberty to plant within its jurisdiction. vi. 336. disputes about baptism among. 338. receive letters from a committee of lords and commons about gorton's complaints. 507. sketch of, from 1633 to 1678. 661. 666. gives an honourable reception to the king's commissioners. 664. hold friendly correspondence with the dutch at new york. 667. claim to narraganset country. \*vii. 103. 105. 107. letter to, from rhode island. 109. colony line run. 122. indian title purchased. 143. scurvy fatal at. P. 19. undertakers. P. 34. trucking house at penobscot rifled by the french. P. 62. sickness at; locusts numerous and destructive at. P. 92. great losses by mr. allerton and the sinking of capt. peirce's ship. P. 87. forms of worship at. P. 70. gradually given up. P. 71. imposes a heavy fine on him who should refuse the office of governor, counsellor or magistrate. P. 75. town nearly abandoned. P. 74. church dismisses duxbury people; duxbury becomes the second church in the colony. P. 74. 75. measures taken to prevent the further decrease of its town. P. 75. first chooses seven assistants. P. 83. which number continues to the end of its government. P. 83. informed of fresh or connecticut river by the dutch. P. 93. 94. set up a trading house at connecticut river; form a company with massachusetts people to trade to that river; project given over. P. 94. 95. opposed in going up the connecticut by the dutch; set up their house at (now) windsor. P. 95. infectious fever at, fatal to whites and indians. P. 96. mount's relation of the beginning and plantation of. ix. 26. et seq. pilgrims about to sail from southampton, letter of advice from rev. john robinson. 30. 32. many die of scurvy. 34. send a boat on discovery from cape cod to fix upon a place to settle. 37. which examines plymouth harbour. 40. 41. see indians for the first time. 43. lose their "great new rendezvous" by fire. 45. bring their goods on shore. 46. choose miles standish captain; are approached in a friendly way by two indians; bring their ordnance on shore. 47. find deer abundant; plant garden seeds. 48. 49. their journey to king massasoit at packanokik. 49. 51. visit namaschet. 52. and nauset. 53. go to namaschet to assist massasoit, and to avenge the supposed death of tisquantum. 54. visit massachusetts bay. 57. first harvest described; use the indian manure, or fish; visited by massasoit with ninety indians. 60. at peace with all indians, who act with good faith. 61. first winter not more cold than in england; without kine, horses or sheep. 61. winslow's relation of things remarkable at the plantation of. 74. differences between the abridgment and original of winslow's relation. 79. pilgrims suffer for want of food. 90. number consisted of about one hundred. 167. x. 58. manners, customs, religious notions, etc. of indians there. ix. 90. 91. becomes a part of massachusetts. x. 2. sends soldiers against the pequots. 59. pre-



pare troops against the narragansets and dutch. 60. pathway to duxbury. 62. 65. 66. taxes of; facts about pilgrims; recognise the compact signed in 1620, and claim the privileges of freeborn englishmen. 68. fine persons for attending a quaker meeting, dancing, disturbing church, shooting on sunday, not attending public worship; raise sixty men against the dutch; troubled by wolves. 69. armed brig general arnold lost in its harbour. iii. 195. peace of, disturbed by indians. 85. arms to be supplied to inhabitants. 183. bridges and brooks. 178. hills. 179. ponds. 180. islands and points. 181. light-houses. 182. notes on; original bounds. 162. census of. 169. streets, wharves, aqueducts. 169. bank, courts, manufactures. 170. remarks on its beach. 171. canal. 172. schools. 173. indian names. 175. newspapers, libraries, museum. 177. chronological details of. 183. fortification. 183. 187. watch-house. 183. expenditures. 184. 186. 187. distressed by wolves. 184. orders of council of war; town meetings. 185. selectmen, grants of money, parsonage house. 186. productions and prices; right of voting regulated. 187. 188. town council; endeavors to obtain a royal charter. 189. water course. 190. oyster proprietary. 191. storm at; fever at; send a company against louisbourg. 192. spring shifted by an earthquake; fire club. 194. market; elms. 195. beach, and scheme for repairing it. 195. 196. church, history of. 198. second church. 200. aborigines; bill of mortality of first parish. 201. of second parish. 202. of third parish. 203. diseases. 203. last female native indian dies. 200. schools. iv. 78. 86. colony vote respecting schools. 79. acts respecting schools. 80. grants to schools. 84. vote regarding harvard college. 85. schoolmasters. 86. slowness of maritime growth. 88. first school-house. 88. 89. school fund. 89. schoolmasters. 90. first barque

built at. 99. town brook. 226. colony law about mackerel. 230. colony line run. 245. deed from king philip. 267. alewife and her-ring fishery. 296. number of indians. 302.

Plymouth council established in the county of devon, england, for ordering the affairs of new england. v. 84. grants to sir henry roswell and others lands between merri-mack and charles river. 108. resigns its charter. 272. grants a part of connecticut to marquis hamilton. vi. 309. grant to capt. john mason of land between naum-keag and merrimack. 614. grant to mason and gorges land between sagadehock and merrimack. 616. from naumkeag to pascataqua. 616. opinion of sir w. jones on these grants. 617.

Plymouth, new hampshire, note on. iii. 109. session of courts. 110. professional men; schools and academy; settlement. 111. ecclesiastical history. 112 church, marriages and deaths. 113.

Plympton. iii. 164. hurricane at. 166. productions. 165. 166. vessels and distilleries. 167. houses and publick buildings. 168. 169. history of. iv. 267. wood. 267. rivers, brooks and ponds. 268. military, manufactures and mills. 269. population; religious societies. 270. including carver & a part of halifax, history of. 283.

Pocanoky. ii. 66.

Pocasset. iii. 14. 16.

Pocklington, dr. his book against the martyrs ordered to be published by bishop laud. vii. P. 50.

Pocock, ———. v. 122.

Pocompheake. vi. 462.

Pocomtuck, or deerfield. viii. 153.

Podpis. iii. 21. 25. 26.

Poem on gov. winthrop. iii. 123. on nonconformist's oath. iv. 104

Poge, cape. iii. 40. 46. 58. 72.

Poge pond. iii. 55. 72.

Point coupee. ii. 23.

Point levi. ii. 236. 238. 239.

Point aux trembles. ii. 238.

Point judith. iii. 46.

Pointer, ———, mistake corrected in. vii. P. 16.

- Pointing, ——— iv. 249.
- Pokanacket indians. v. 32. or pokanoket. 59.
- Pokanauket. vii. 139.
- Pole, capt. iv. 216.
- Pole star, its name among indians. ix. 98.
- Pollard, ———, his mill. x. 65.
- Polly, william. viii. 46.
- Polson, capt. viii. 157.
- Polypody cove in carver. iv. 275.
- Pomeramus. vi. 553.
- Pomham. See punham.
- Pomfret's poems, quoted. iv. 93.
- Pomponoho, or peter, chief of titicut indians. vii. 143. 144.
- Pomroye, edward. viii. 143.
- Poncas, or poncars, indians, their residence and numbers. ii. 34.
- Ponds, village of. iii. 176.
- Ponnakin. iii. 179.
- Pontiac, an indian chief, killed. ii. 8.
- Pool, samuel. vii. P. 4.
- Pool, capt. lot. ii. 180.
- Pool, ———. vii. 123.
- Poonseag, its meaning. x. 171.
- Poor meadow brook. vii. 115.
- Pope, seth. iv. 293.
- Pope, ———. viii. 196.
- Pope's point furnace in carver. iv. 272.
- Popes, felix and gregory, order consecration of churches. vii. P. 77.
- Popham, sir john, chief justice of england, sends a plantation to kennebeck river. v. 13. 15. 36. 37. sends out a ship, under captains t. haman and m. prinne on discovery to new england. ix. 3. dies. 4.
- Popham, sir francis, sends ships to new england. v. 37. a patentee of new england. 217. with others, sends a ship to the settlement begun in new england; sends ships to trade on the coast of new england. ix. 4.
- Popham, capt. george, comes to new england as president of a colony. v. 36. dies at sagadahock. 37. and capt. rawley gilbert, sent with men and ordnance to begin a settlement in new england. ix. 3. 4. dies in new england. 4.
- Popish priests released from prison by king charles, but no puritan. vii. P. 64, "corrections."
- Popmonet family. iii. 8.
- Popos neck in carver. iv. 275.
- Poppone-sett bay. iii. 1.
- Popponessett island. iii. 1.
- Poquan. iii. 44. 58.
- Porey, ———, secretary in virginia. v. 75. ix. 114.
- Portroyal, island of. iii. 241.
- Portroyal, jamaica. iii. 286.
- Portroyal, nova scotia. v. 15. a scotch plantation, sold to the french, who send papists thither, to the trouble of massachusetts. vii. P. 84. surrendered by treaty of charles i. to france. P. 78. attacked by indians. viii. 248. the french dislodged from by sir s. argall. ix. 5.
- Porter, john. vii. 93. viii. 63. 64. ix. 179.
- Porter, john, jun. his protection from king's commissioners. viii. 96.
- Porter, ———. viii. 243.
- Porter, rev. john, of bridgewater. vii. 166. 168.
- Porter, jacob, his account of plainfield, massachusetts. viii. 167. 173. of cummington. x. 41.
- Porter, adam x. 44.
- Porter, john. vii. 166. 170.
- Porter, rev. huntington, of rye, new hampshire. vii. 166. 170.
- Porter, jonathan. vii. 166. 170.
- Porter, rev. dr. eliphalet, of roxbury. i. 248. ii. 152. vii. 166. 170.
- Porter, rev. nathaniel, of conway, new hampshire. iii. 104.
- Porter, rev. experience, of winchester, new hamp-hire. ix. 367.
- Porter, ———. vii. 123.
- Portsmouth, new hampshire, earthquakes at. iv. 70. parsonage house and chapel built at. v. 220. declared to belong to massachusetts. vi. 372. longevity in. x. 181.
- Portsmouth, rhode island, general assembly of providence plantations held at. vii. 82. 103. settled by w. coddington and others. ix. 181. origin of name. 181.
- Post, hannah. iii. 224.
- Post, mary. iii. 225.
- Post angel, paper by j. dunton. ii. 97.
- Pot and pearl ash works at haverhill. iv. 153.

- Potenumacut. iii. 13. 14.  
 Pott, ———. i. 108.  
 Potter, robert. ix. 182.  
 Potter, rev. nathaniel, of brookline. ii. 149. 153.  
 Potter, lieut. iv. 219.  
 Potter, elizabeth. x. 177.  
 Poultry early carried to virginia. viii. 210.  
 Powah, a sort of indian juggler, his occupation. ix. 92. 93.  
 Powder, gun, early preparations for manufacturing in massachusetts. vii. 44. people must provide themselves with. P. 26.  
 Powder hill. vii. P. 73.  
 Powell, ———. vi. 511. not allowed to be settled in boston as minister, but is chosen elder. 551.  
 Powers, rev. peter, of haverhill, new hampshire. iii. 112. iv. 78.  
 Powhatan, sachem of virginia. viii. 203.  
 Pownal, gov. thomas. i. (xxvii.) visits plymouth. iii. 194.  
 Pownal, town. iv. 176.  
 Powwows, indian. iii. 127. v. 34.  
 Prairie de françois. ii. 40.  
 Prairie des chien. ii. 41.  
 Pratt, john, a surgeon, notice of; his apology for misrepresentations against new england. vii. 126. and wife, drowned on the coast of spain. vi. 525.  
 Pratt, phineas. iii. 184. vii. 122. 123.  
 Pratt, benjamin. x. 28.  
 Pratt, seth. vii. 170.  
 Pratt, allen. vii. 170.  
 Pratt, william ii. 181.  
 Pratt, ———. vii. 155.  
 Prayer, for whom is it lawful? x. 182. 183.  
 Prayers on training days at boston. ii. 107.  
 Preble, abraham. iv. 241. 247.  
 Prefatory notice of hubbard's history. v. (iii.)  
 Prelacy, condemned by first planters of new england. ii. 58.  
 Premium for medical dissertations. i. 118.  
 Prence, thomas, gouvernour, &c. See prince, thomas, gouvernour.  
 Prentice, capt. viii. 96.  
 Prentice, rev. nathaniel, of dunstable, new hampshire. x. 55.  
 Prentice, rev. thomas, of charlestown. ii. 171.  
 Prentiss, rev. caleb of reading. iv. 197.  
 Presbyterian ordination, validity of, doubted. ii. 130. iv. 302. ministers prevented from preaching in virginia. ii. 208. general assembly incorporated. iv. 66. ordination in massachusetts excites jealousies. v. 189.  
 Presbyterianism. v. 182.  
 Presbyterians, oppressed by lord cornbury. i. 145. 146. scotch. 150.  
 Prescott, abel, jun. viii. 46.  
 Prescott, judge oliver. x. 79.  
 Prescott, william. x. 179.  
 Prescott, james. x. 79.  
 Prescott, samuel-j. ii. 178.  
 President and council appointed by james ii. to govern massachusetts, new hampshire, maine and narraganset. viii. 180.  
 Presidents of massachusetts medical society. i. 112. of harvard college, where resident; to expound divinity. iv. 64.  
 Preston, dr. vii. P. 15.  
 Preston, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Preston, ———, printer. ii. 252.  
 Prevost, general. iii. 239. 240.  
 Price, richard. viii. 105.  
 Price, capt. iv. 130.  
 Price, rev. ebenezer, of belfast, maine, and boscawen, new hampshire. x. 75. 76.  
 Prieses, a sort of indian jugglers, method of training them. ix. 94. 95. 96.  
 Priestley, dr. i. 138. quoted. (xiv.)  
 Prilete, dr. x. 44.  
 Primer for mohawk children, quoted. x. 101. 102.  
 Prin, martin. See pring, martin.  
 Prince, gov. thomas. i. 170. iii. 173. 178. 184. 220. iv. 80. 86. 93. 100. 220. v. 72. sent to massachusetts as agent for plymouth colony. 162. vi. 556. letter to, from rhode island. vii. 109. x. 62. 63. 65.  
 Prince, samuel, esq. of rochester and middleborough. iii. 169. iv. 302.  
 Prince, rev. thomas, of boston. i. 107. chronology quoted. 169. (xxix.) notice of rev. william



- hubbard. ii. 282. 200. quoted. iii. 86. account of english ministers, &c. quoted. 68, et post. 199. iv. 200. notice of hubbard's history. v. (iv. vi.) 662. 664. notice of, and of his works; collections; chronological annals of new england. vii. 179. bequest of books. and manuscripts to old south church; catalogue of books. 180. annals of new england, volume 2, number 1, republished. 189. P. 1, et post. notes and introduction to Mason's history of the pequot war. viii. 120. 153. x. 39.
- Prince, rev. joseph, of barrington, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Prince james. ii. 175.
- Prince, a black. viii. 46.
- Prince maurice fort at hudson's river. ix. 113.
- Prince william's sound. ii. 43.
- Pring, martin, after visiting martha's vineyard, returns to england with sassafras. iii. 80. his voyage. v. 11. sent on discovery to new england. ix. 3.
- Prinne. See pring.
- Printing of laws first ordered in massachusetts. vi. 544.
- Prior, daniel. x. 57.
- Prior, thomas. iv. 240. 242.
- Prior, j. x. 69.
- Prison, massachusetts state, at charlestown. i. 127. description of. ii. 175.
- Prison brook, now little brook. iii. 181.
- Pritchard, ———. vii. 54.
- Privateering, called by king james *splendendum furtum*. vi. 527.
- Privy council, (england,) summons massachusetts to appear, and answer to charges against them by morton and others. v. 151. 153. discharges the accused; lords of, stop ships coming to massachusetts. 152. 154. appoint lords for governing plantations. 264. its order, discharging massachusetts from the charges of sir f. gorges and others. vii. P. 90. 91.
- Proclamation of lord dunmore mentioned. ii. 224.
- Professional men in hillsborough county, new hampshire. vii. 71.
- Propheying, meaning of, at plymouth. v. 140. meaning of, among dissenters. vii. P. 25. an exercise of publick worship. P. 70.
- Proposition about magistrates' power in matters of religion in massachusetts; debates about this proposition. vi. 536.
- Prospect hill. ii. 168. iii. 267.
- Prospectus of hubbard's history. ii. 281.
- Protestants, french, settle at new york. i. 140. 144. 149.
- Proud's history of pennsylvania referred to. viii. 276.
- Prout, timothy. viii. 180. x. 25. 26.
- Prout, timothy, jun. ship-master, his sufferings at sea. vi. 643. 644.
- Prout, timothy. x. 28.
- Prout's gore. iv. 176.
- Prouty, richard. iv. 229.
- Providence, rhode island, planted by roger williams. vi. 335. ecclesiastical affairs. 335. strange delusions at. 338. 339. anabaptists at, divided in opinion. 343. request massachusetts to give them aid or council; four of its men taken under the jurisdiction of massachusetts. 344. and other lands, obtained of canonicus by governour winthrop and roger williams. vii. 76. planted. 14. plantation, patent to; commission to john clarke, as agent there. 90. 103. form of deeds. ix. 198. historical account of. 166. named and settled by roger williams and twelve others. 170. original association of government. 183. roger williams's letter to, about freedom. 191. first church, formed by roger williams, was congregational, but soon changed to baptist. 196. plantations, including providence and rhode island, incorporation by parliament. 188. 189. code of laws agreed on. 189. liberty of conscience. 190. resolves about toleration of quakers; address to richard cromwell on that subject. 192. letter to sir h. vane, jun.; charter from charles ii. allowing liberty of conscience. 195. See rhode island.
- Providence island, settlement at, captured by spaniards. vi. 377. petitions new england for aid. 378. (one of the summer islands) settle-

- ment of, by massachusetts people, abandoned. vii. 34. 35.
- Province bills note on. iv. 99.
- Provincial congress at salem, concord and cambridge. vii. 160.
- Provincials, a list of those killed and wounded at the battles of concord and lexington. viii. 45.
- Provisions scarce in massachusetts in 1640. v. 238. 246. purchase of, regulated. vii. P. 30. not to be bought on board the ships that arrive, without permission. P. 30.
- Prudden, rev. peter, of milford, connecticut. vi. 319. character. 328.
- Psalms, and gospel of st. john, version of, by experience mayhew. iii. 68.
- Puant, or winebago indians. ii. 9. ferocity and number. 10.
- "Publick friend," against slavery, by langhorne. viii. 185. 186.
- Publick worship, support of, in new york. i. 152. 153.
- Puckanokick. See packanokick.
- Puff fish, described. iii. 55. 56.
- Puffer, rev. dr. reuben, of berlin. iv. 60.
- Pulaski, count. iii. 242. mortally wounded. 242.
- Pullen point. vii. P. 73. 62.
- Pumham, sachem. iv. 169. difficulty with gorton. vi. 404. sachem of showamock, puts himself under jurisdiction of massachusetts. 406. 459. vii. 48. ix. 182.
- Pumpkins. iii. 132. in massachusetts. vii. P. 88.
- Punkapog indians. v. 32.
- Purchas, his pilgrimage, referred to. v. 40.
- Puritans, history of, by neal, referred to. i. 165. rise of. (xiv.)
- Purysburg. iii. 239.
- Putawatamies indians. ii. 5. 12. their numbers. 5. receive an annuity from united states. 5. 6.
- Putnam, nathaniel. viii. 105.
- Putnam, john. viii. 106.
- Putnam, henry. viii. 46.
- Putnam, perley. viii. 47.
- Putnam, gen. israel. iv. 210.
- Putnam col. rufus. iv. 52.
- Putnam, nathan. viii. 46.
- Putnam, aaron. ii. 176. 180.
- Putnam, aaron-h. ii. 178.
- Putnam, judge samuel, his notice of judge thomas. x. 5.
- Puttequomscut. vii. 75.
- Pylarinus, of venice. i. 106.
- Pym, ———. i (xxviii.)
- Pynchon, or pinchon, william, assistant. v. 124. arrives. 133. settles roxbury. 135. springfield. vi. 308. magistrate. vii. 129. assistant. P. 1. 3. 5. 6. 14. notice of; an associate with the original patentees; principal founder of roxbury; first member of its church. P. 14. 21. 23. 25. 27. 30. 31. 32. 34. 35. 58. 60. boat cast away. P. 36. assistant. P. 61. 63-65. 66. 68. 72. 91. 92. treasurer and assistant. P. 85. 86. 93. viii. 97. papers relative to. 227. 249.
- Pynchon, col. john. viii. 44. 181. 237. letter from commissioners of united colonies about sending troops against the indians. 238. letter from thomas wells about the strength of the french in canada, the new england prisoners there, etc. 239. vi. 629.
- Pynchon, joseph. i. 111.
- Pynchon, john, esq. viii. 227.

## Q.

- Quackery punished. vii. P. 21.
- Quadaquina. v. 61.
- Quahaug, fish. iii. 58. iv. 289.
- Quakers in new york. i. 150. 155. in rhode island. vi. 336. not taxed in massachusetts colony for support of other denominations. ii. 201. opposed by roger williams. v. 209. vi. 350. most numerous party in rhode island. 350. punished capitally in massachusetts; laws against in massachusetts defended. 572. arrival of, at boston and rhode island. vii. 82. measures taken against, by united colonies. 82. 85. 86. compelled to train, watch, &c. in rhode island. 83. answers about, from the general assembly of rhode island to the commissioners of the united colonies. 83. 84. troublesome in rhode island. 85. laws against in england; charles ii.'s letter against indulging them in massachusetts. viii. 54. alteration of the laws of massachusetts against them proposed. 86. forbidden by plymouth colony to disseminate

- their opinions. x. 61. a person  
 fined for attending a meeting. 69.  
 disturb plymouth; their opinions.  
 70. 71.  
 Quanset bay. iv. 289.  
 Quantisset. iii. 178.  
 Quarrantine at rainsford island. i.  
 108.  
 Quarrel between new haven people  
 and the dutch at manhatoes. vi.  
 545.  
 Quarrellers, indians. ii. 43.  
 Quarry hill. ii. 168.  
 Quartier, james, a florentine, employ-  
 ed by francis i., his voyage of dis-  
 covery. v. 9.  
 Quashuet river. iii. 2.  
 Quatchet, its meaning. ix. 91.  
 Quayz. iii. 25. 26.  
 Quebec, summoned by col. arnold to  
 surrender. ii. 237. attacked by  
 montgomery. 243. its general hos-  
 pital chapel. 242. iii. 259. vi.  
 639. taken by capt. kirk from the  
 french in 1629. vii. P. 52. sur-  
 rendered by treaty of charles i. to  
 the french. P. 78. sometimes  
 spelled kebec. P. 78.  
 Quelqueshoe river. ii. 27.  
 Queries respecting indians. ii. 1.  
 Quesada indian language. ii. 18.  
 Questions, proposed by massachusetts  
 general court, about baptism. i.  
 197. in massachusetts, relating to  
 church members and baptism of  
 their children, with answers. vi.  
 563. 570. 587. concerning the con-  
 sociation of churches. i. 198. pro-  
 posed by rector of yale college and  
 others, respecting episcopal ordina-  
 tion. iv. 298. of conscience. x.  
 182. 183.  
 Quetequas. See quittaquas and quit-  
 tiquash.  
 Quichichich. iv. 126.  
 Quick's hole. iii. 77.  
 Quicure. ii. 41.  
 Quillipiuk, or quinnepiack, or quinnyp-  
 iag, now new haven, settled. vi.  
 317. 319. See new haven.  
 Quincy, edmund. iii. 285. x. 23.  
 Quincy, hon. edmund. ii. 188. vii.  
 164.  
 Quincy, john. vii. 165.  
 Quincy, samuel, his letter to edmund  
 quincy. ii. 188.  
 Quincy, col. josiah. iii. 234.  
 Quincy, josiah. i. 249.  
 Quincy, hon. josiah. viii. 298.  
 Quinnepiack, or quinnypiaq, now new  
 haven. viii. 146.  
 Quinnibaug river. ix. 201.  
 Quinsey, ———. viii. 243.  
 Quittaquas pond in rochester. iv.  
 253.  
 Quitticus pond. x. 34.  
 Quittiquash hills. iv. 254. 265.  
 Quittiquash brook. iv. 254.  
 Quittiquash island. iv. 266.  
 Quo warranto, issued against new eng-  
 land patent. v. 268. against mas-  
 sachusetts. 272. copy of the first  
 issued against massachusetts. viii.  
 96. 97. sent by sir. e. andros to  
 governour of connecticut. 237.  
 Quorum of assistants altered. vii. P.  
 22.  
 Quennet, or quinnnet, meaning of.  
 iii. 169.  
  
 R.  
  
 R, not articulated by indians. iii.  
 21.  
 Rache-jaune river. ii. 36.  
 Ragged mountain. viii. 174.  
 Rainsford, edward, elder. iv. 199.  
 vii. P. 69.  
 Rainsford's island, hospital at. i. 108.  
 Rainy lake. ii. 12.  
 Rale. See ralle.  
 Raleigh, north carolina, persons from,  
 settle east tennessee. vii. 58.  
 Ralle, rev. sebastian, a french jesuit,  
 killed at norridgewock. ii. 231.  
 letter to his reverend father, written  
 on the day he was slain. viii. 245.  
 249. biographical notice of. 250.  
 257. master of several indian lan-  
 guages. 250. writes indian poetry.  
 250. 251. his dictionary of the ab-  
 nakis language is seized, and placed  
 in harvard college library. 253.  
 letter to capt. moody. 258. papers  
 relating to his inciting indians  
 against massachusetts. 264. 267.  
 an intercepted letter from, detailing  
 the war of norridgewock indians  
 against the english. 266. 267. dic-  
 tionary of the abnaki language re-  
 ferred to. x. 123. 141.  
 Ralley. See ralle.  
 Ralph, rev. john. iii. 13.  
 Ram island. iii. 75.



- Ramsay, dr. david, quoted. iii. 244. viii. 167.
- Ramsdell, abednego. viii. 46.
- Ramsey, dr. alexander, delivers anatomical lectures at fryeburg, maine. i. 126.
- Rand, rev. william, of sunderland, connecticut, afterwards of kingston, massachusetts. iii. 211.
- Rand, rev. john, of lyndeborough, new hampshire. viii. 177.
- Rand, dr. isaac. i. 108. 124. 247. ii. 175. president of massachusetts medical society. 178.
- Rand, rev. asa, of gorham. iv. 181.
- Randal, william. iv. 241.
- Randolph, edward, an enemy of new england, exhibits articles of misdemeanour against general court of massachusetts. iv. 160. letter to j. pyncheon, about a quo warranto sent to connecticut, and requesting his attendance at boston. viii. 237. 238. secretary of sir e. andros's council. 182.
- Randolph, hon. peyton, president of congress. ii. 221.
- Randolph, beverly, commissioner to western indians. iii. 249.
- Ransom, ———. iv. 277.
- Ranters. vi. 626.
- Raphael, his school of athens; his mistake. iii. 229.
- Rariton river. iii. 235.
- Rasdale, ———, a partner with capt. wollaston. v. 104.
- Rasles. See ralle.
- Raspberries, found at plymouth. ix. 62.
- Ratcliffe, philip, creates difficulty in massachusetts; tried and punished. v. 137. 141. complains to the king against massachusetts colony. 145. accusations against massachusetts. vii. P. 58. 88.
- Ratliffe, rev. ———, reads the common prayer in the town-house, boston; notice of. ii. 106.
- Rathbone, rev. ———. iv. 19. 119. vii. 38.
- Rathburn, rev. ———. vii. 168.
- Rattlesnakes, numerous in new england. vii. P. 65.
- Raven's brook. iv. 280.
- Rawlins, nathaniel. iv. 241.
- Rawson, edward, secretary. iv. 24. 158. v. 271. vi. 572. 595. viii. 52. 55. 60. 63. 66. 67. 72. 74. 81. 82. 89. 91. 180. 326.
- Raymond, john. viii. 46.
- Rayner, rev. john, of plymouth. iii. 199. vii. 20. x. 65. at dover, new hampshire. vi. 364. death. 607.
- Rayner, rev. john, of dover. vi. 608.
- Rayns, ———, of york. vi. 600.
- Read, john. x. 28.
- Read, george. viii. 46.
- Read, ———, member of congress from delaware. viii. 316.
- Reading, its church gathered. vi. 416. its church, the 24th, planted; mills, cattle, &c. vii. 51.
- Real estate ascends to the father in massachusetts. vii. 145.
- Reasons showing the lawfulness of removing from england to america. ix. 64.
- Recantations of confessors of witchcraft. iii. 221.
- Recollets, or jesuit's college. ii. 247.
- Red river. ii. 11. 23. 25. 26. 29.
- Red lake. ii. 11.
- Red brook. iii. 175. iv. 287.
- Redman, ———, tried at boston. vi. 443. 444.
- Reed, william. vii. 123.
- Reed, rev. solomon, of middleborough. vii. 163. 167. 168.
- Reed, rev. dr. john, of bridgewater. vii. 163.
- Reed, asahel. viii. 46.
- Reed, ezeiel, his invention to make tacks. vii. 119.
- Reed, jesse, his invention to make tacks. vii. 119.
- Reed, john. vii. 169.
- Reed, daniel. ii. 180.
- Reed, caleb. vii. 169.
- Reed's hill. ii. 168.
- Reeve, ———, a man wounded by col. d. henley. viii. 296.
- Reeves, mrs. x. 197.
- Reformation in the churches. ii. 72.
- Reforming synod, extract from. vi. 627.
- Regards indians, their number, residence, and annuity. ii. 9.
- Regiments, four in massachusetts. vii. 54.
- Registry of deeds early established in massachusetts. vi. 380.
- Rehoboth, north purchase, now attle-

- borough, i. 184. x. 171. history of, needed. iii. 203. x. 60.
- Rehoboth hill, iii. 163.
- Relation of the troubles, which happened to new england by the indians, by increase mather, referred to. viii. 125.
- Relation, a brief, of the discovery and plantation of new england. ix. 1. cause of its publication. 2. 3.
- Relation, mourt's, of the beginning and proceedings of the plantation of plymouth. ix. 26, et seq.
- Relation of things remarkable at the plantation of plymouth (winslow's) ix. 74. 79.
- Religious liberty in the state of new york. i. 140.
- Religious men, only, chosen to office in new england. iv. 26.
- Remarkables of rev. increase mather. i. 206.
- Remonstrance of massachusetts medical society against college of physicians. i. 134.
- Report of physicians respecting the kine-pock. i. 123. of committee on the petition for college of physicians. i. 137. which petition is rejected. 138. respecting western indians, by john-f. schermerhorn. ii. 1. 48. of committee to mashpee indians. iii. 10. 12.
- Representatives, steps taken in massachusetts towards a house of. vii. P. 60. house of, in massachusetts, its bill of privileges, being the same as those of house of commons. viii. 326. 327. of boston, before the revolution. x. 23.
- Republicanism prevalent in new england. i. (xii.)
- Republicans, a tribe of indians. ii. 33.
- Result of the synod at cambridge ordered to be printed. i. 201.
- Revell, or revil, one of the five undertakers, an assistant, returns to england. vii. P. 2. 14.
- Revere, col. paul, his manufactory of bells. iii. 196. viii. 311. 313.
- Revil. See revell.
- Revolution in england. x. 25.
- Reynards indians. ii. 39.
- Reyner. See rayner.
- Reynes, ———. vi. 617.
- Reynolds, ———. iv. 85.
- Reynolds, nathaniel. vii. 160.
- Rhode island. iii. 189. persons expelled massachusetts remove to. v. 283. or aquidneyk, planted. vi. 335. always agreed in religious toleration. 336. errors of opinion in; various sects in. 337. disputes about baptism, &c.; mrs. hutchinson exercises there publicly. 338. delusions at. 341. 342. troubled by nicholas eason. 343. and providence, claimed to be within the patent of plymouth or connecticut. 510. laws, derogatory to the king, required by him to be repealed. vii. 94. state papers 75. how obtained of canonics. 75. 77. early laws. 78. 79. threatened by united colonies for permitting quakers to be amongst them. 82. 85. 86. appeal to protector and council. 87. colony's letter to richard cromwell; patent from parliament. 88. charter from king and parliament. 90. court of assistants made justices of the peace. 93. king's requisitions, touching oath of allegiance, alteration of laws, &c. 94. addresses the king and earl of clarendon, about charter rights. 98. makes purchases of indians. 103. grant to, by lords and commons. 99. 104. narraganset indians request to be under the jurisdiction of 108. general assembly's letter to the governour of plymouth colony. 109. 110. complaints against connecticut. 109. 110. counties; number of white and black inhabitants; towns. 113. letter of general assembly to commissioners of united colonies. 82. form of "engagement" in, under first and second government. 96. 97. provisions for persons scrupulous of taking oaths. 96. obtains a charter to govern narraganset bay; purchases from indians. 99. complains of other colonies. 99. 100. 103. 104. part of, called king's province. 99. 102. other colonies prohibited from exercising jurisdiction in; government of, committed by the royal commissioners to the governour and council of the colony. 100. complaints about bound-

- daries. 100. 104. 105. proposes to grant land to earl of clarendon. 101. addresses the king and lord clarendon about infringement of charter rights. 98. advantages touching trade, &c 102. 109. petition about funds bequeathed in england to propagate the gospel among indians. 102. 103. reasons why king's province should be joined to. 103. 107. royal grant to. 105. sends a plan of connecticut, plymouth and rhode island to england. 100. 105. discovered by massachusetts people. P. 5. viii. 122. charter demanded to be surrendered by sir e. andros. 180. 182. surrendered to the king. 183. 238. donations of towns to boston, during the port bill. ix. 158. planted by people from boston. 178. deed from narragansets to w. coddington and others. 180. original form of government. 183. 184. with providence plantations, etc. incorporated by the name of providence plantations. 184. See providence, &c.
- Rhodes, zechariah. ix. 182.
- Rice, william. viii. 115.
- Rice, ———. viii. 315.
- Rice first planted in virginia. ix. 118.
- Rich, sir nathaniel, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Richards, amos. viii. 96.
- Richards, ———, of hartford, agent to the mohawks. vi. 629.
- Richards, john, agent to england, to answer to complaints of heirs of gorges and mason. vii. 614. representative of boston. x. 25.
- Richards, mrs. iv. 91.
- Richards, elizabeth. x. 178.
- Richards, rev. james, missionary at ceylon. viii. 171. x. 192.
- Richardson, lord chief justice, takes order against wakes and revels. vii. P. 77. 78.
- Richardson, capt. intends to fire at the battery at boston, but is prevented. vi. 477.
- Richardson, lieut. slain by indians. vi. 634.
- Richardson, john, founder of quakers at nantucket. iii. 32.
- Richardson, rev. gideon. iv. 60.
- Richardson, moses. viii. 46.
- Richlieu, cardinal, sends companies to cape sables. v. 161. prime minister of louis xiii. vii. P. 79.
- Richmond, col. iii. 192.
- Richmond, rev. dr. edward, of dorchester. viii. 167.
- Richmond, rev. abel, of halifax, massachusetts. iv. 282. 283.
- Richmond's island, walter bagnall murdered at. v. 142. owned by mr. trelaney. vi. 381. murders at, by indians. vii. P. 35. black will hung at, for the murder of walter bagnall. P. 83.
- Rider, john, of plymouth, kills three deer at a shot. iv. 284.
- Riflemen in east tennessee. vii. 60.
- Rigbee. See rigby.
- Rigby, alexander, purchases plough patent, or ligonia. vi. 363. appears before court at massachusetts in the controversy about ligonia. 369. 370. his patent of ligonia confirmed. 510.
- Rindge, daniel. iii. 119.
- Rindge, isaac. iii. 119.
- Rio del norte. ii. 23. 29. 30.
- Rio grande. ii. 29. 30.
- Ripley, rev. samuel, of waltham. iii. 284. x. 191.
- Ripley, ———. vii. 123.
- Rising of seditious persons in virginia, middlesex county. i. 70.
- River indians. v. 33. or scatacook indians, fugitives from new england in philip's war, their number. viii. 244.
- Rivers, earl of. i. (xxiv.)
- Roache blanche. ii. 40.
- Roaring brook. iii. 45.
- Robbery of an indian, punished with death. vi. 663.
- Robbins, nicholas. vii. 138.
- Robbins, john. viii. 46.
- Robbins, rev. dr. chandler, of plymouth. iii. 17. 176. 177, 198. 199. 200.
- Robbins, mrs. jane. iii. 199.
- Robbins, rev. samuel-p. of marietta, ohio. iii. 138.
- Roberts, ———, president of the court at pascataqua in the place of capt. underhill. vi. 359. 369.
- Roberts, john. viii. 107.
- Robertson's history of america referred to. i. (xx.)
- Robertson, gen. james, agent to indi-



- ans. ii. 15. 22. settles east tennessee. vii. 58. 59. captain of the garrison; agent to the cherokees. 61. explores the lands on cumberland river. 62. 63. account of. 63. visits illinois and kentucky. 63. 64.
- Robertson, mrs. vii. 64.
- Robertson, —. vii. 168.
- Robin's pond. vii. 171. 172.
- Robinson, rev. john, of leyden. i. (ix.) iv. 118. character. v. 42. writes a letter of advice to the plymouth adventurers at their parting in holland. 53. writings about church government. 64. dies at leyden; probable reasons why he did not come to new england. 96. forms of public worship at his church at leyden. vii. 70. 71. letter of advice to the colonists of plymouth, about to sail thither from southampton. ix. 30. 32.
- Robinson, elkanah. i. 175.
- Robinson, isaac. iv. 239.
- Robinson, thomas. iv. 247.
- Robinson, william, a quaker, sentenced to death. vi. 571.
- Robinson, deacon john. ii. 153.
- Robinson, james, secretary of boston board of health. viii. 41.
- Robinson, rev. otis, of salisbury, new hampshire. viii. 178.
- Robinson, —. vii. 155.
- Robinson's hole. iii. 77.
- Roche river. ii. 10.
- Rochester, massachusetts, history of. iv. 250. harbours, soil and produce. 251. shipping and ship-building. 252. islands and brooks. 253. hills, mills, manufactures, salt works and sheep. 254. geographical divisions, fish and birds. 255. moisture of air. 256. population. 257. sends three representatives to general court; history; purchased of the natives. 258. origin of name. 259. ecclesiastical history. 261. fever at, deaths in, great gale and tide at. 264. losses by the gale. 265. first representative under massachusetts; saw mills. 302. epidemick at, in 1815, 1816. 303. description of. x. 29. 30. manufactories. 31. 36. ecclesiastical history. 31. ponds. 34. iron ore. 35. rivers. 36. mills. 36. schools, incorporation, representatives, town clerks, justices of peace. 37. employment of people, police expenses, and population. 38.
- Rochet, —, a protestant of rochelle, arrives at boston, and makes propositions about acady. vi. 478.
- Rock, —. viii. 44.
- Rock island. viii. 174.
- Rocky river. ii. 40. 41.
- Rocky ridge. ii. 42.
- Rocky mountains. ii. 42. 43.
- Rocky indians. ii. 43.
- Rocky nook. ii. 196.
- Rocky neck, in carver. iv. 273. 275.
- Rocraft, capt. v. 40. employed by sir f. gorges. 84. sent to new england to join capt. darmer, in laying the foundation of a plantation; seizes a french barque there; crew conspire against him; goes to virginia, and there his ship is sunk. ix. 8. 9. 10. killed there in a quarrel. 10.
- Rodgers, rev. dr. john, author of brief view of the state of religious liberty in new york. ii. 270.
- Roe, sir thomas, a patentee of new new england. v. 217.
- Rogers, rev. richard, of weathersfield, england. v. 276. seven treatises. vii. P. 42. 44.
- Rogers, rev. john, of dedham, england, the only boanerges of his time. vi. 554.
- Rogers, rev. ezeziel, from yorkshire, england, begins a plantation at rowley. v. 236. 237. ordained at rowley. 276. his epitaph on rev. thomas hooker vi. 541. vii. 12. 13.
- Rogers, rev. nathaniel, arrives, and settles at ipswich. iv. 2. v. 240. 274. death and character. vi. 554.
- Rogers, joseph. vii. 137. x. 58.
- Rogers, john. vii. 138.
- Rogers, nathaniel. viii. 107.
- Rogers, samuel. viii. 107.
- Rogers, ezeziel. viii. 107.
- Rogers, rev. daniel, of littleton. i. 217.
- Rogers, rev. daniel, of exeter, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Rogers, capt. w. of georgetown, his

- donation to boston during its port bill. ix. 163.
- Rogers, dr. john. iii. 111.
- Rogers, abner. ii. 179. his death. 179. 180.
- Rogers, daniel. d. iii. 197.
- Rogerson, rev. robert, of brookline and rehoboth. ii. 149.
- Rolf, ———. viii. 242.
- Rolfe, rev. benjamin, of haverhill, his wife and one child killed by indians. iv. 130. salary. 133. 139. ordination; slain by indians; epitaph. 140.
- Rolle, lord john. ix. 185.
- Rolle, john. ix. 185.
- Romanzow, count. iv. 98. 99.
- Romish church, whether a true one? causes difficulty in the church at watertown. vii. P. 31. 32. concluded not to be a true church. P. 32.
- Roper, walter. viii. 107.
- Rose, ship of war. i. 162. arrives with the charter. ii. 106.
- Roses, of several sorts, found at plymouth. ix. 62.
- Rosier, ———. v. 14.
- Ross, capt. viii. 156.
- Rossillon, monsieur, commander of a fort near cape breton. vi. 162. 163.
- Rossiter, edward. v. 124. 131. assistant; dies. vii. P. 4. 14. a principal founder of dorchester, notice of. P. 14. of plymouth, england. P. 41.
- Roswell, sir henry, and others, have a patent of land from plymouth council in england. v. 108. and others, patentees. vi. 618. viii. 97.
- Round pond. iv. 122.
- Rous, william, impeached for trading with an enemy, claims habeas corpus. viii. 240. 242.
- Rousack island. ii. 229.
- Row, john, esq. iv. 84.
- Row, john. vii. 187.
- Rowley, henry. i. iv. 222. 239.
- Rowley, plantation at, by rev. ezeziel rogers. iv. 236. origin of name. 237. ordination at. 276. vii. 12.
- Roxbury. i. (ix.) church, the fifth in massachusetts, gathered in 1631. ii. 92. description of, by johnson. 92. settled. v. 135. 158. petitions to change the number of deputies from two to three, as formerly, rejected. 243. some of its people settle springfield. vi. 308. taxed £5 out of £50 in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. tax for the support of ministers. P. 6. principal founder and first church member, william pynchon. P. 14. alarm at. P. 24. tax. P. 31. 57. first minister, and members of its church, for some time joined with the church in dorchester. P. 64. tax. P. 85. viii. 230. troops at. x. 3.
- Royal touch. i. 120.
- Royden, capt. marmaduke, with others, sends capt. smith to new england. v. 38.
- Rubio, father torres, referred to. x. 105, et post.
- Rucke, john. viii. 105.
- Rudyard, sir benjamin. ix. 185.
- Ruggles, john, loses his daughter. vii. P. 17. sworn a freeman. P. 63. 69.
- Ruggles, rev. timothy, of rochester. iv. 262. ix. 31. 32.
- Ruggles, nathaniel. iv. 302.
- Ruggles, hon. timothy. iv. 261. of hardwicke, anecdote of; president of congress at new york. 261.
- Ruggles, elisha, representative. iv. 261.
- Ruggles, william. x. 37.
- Rum island in rochester. iv. 253.
- Rumball, daniel. viii. 106.
- Rumney marsh. iii. 285.
- Rupture-wort. iii. 24.
- Rurick, ship of discovery. iv. 98. 99.
- Rush, dr. benjamin. i. 138.
- Russell, hon. richard, his epitaph. ii. 179. treasurer. iv. 24. viii. 88.
- Russell, rev. john, of weathersfield, connecticut, then of hadley, afterwards of barnstable. i. 176. 177. vi. 314.
- Russell, rev. jonathan, of barnstable. i. 176.
- Russell, george. iv. 240. x. 69.
- Russell, john, a wedderdrop'd shoemaker, of woburn, his pamphlet on the synod at boston. vi. 624. dies at boston. 626. viii. 112.
- Russell, chambers, judge of supreme court. ii. 178.
- Russell, daniel. ii. 177. 178.
- Russell, hon. james. ii. 164. 165. gives land for the erection of a monument to general warren. 172.

- Russell, dr. charles. ii. 178.  
 Russell, jason. viii. 46.  
 Russell, seth. viii. 46.  
 Russell, capt. john. iii. 195.  
 Russell, george, sent to north carolina for assistance for east tennessee. vii. 61.  
 Russell, hon. thomas, of charlestown. ii. 46. president of society for propagating the gospel among indians. 48. 165. 167. 170. presents a clock to charlestown. 170. 196. x. 163.  
 Russell, mrs. elizabeth, presents a bell to plymouth. iii. 196.  
 Russell, philemon-r. ii. 180.  
 Russell, james. ii. 178.  
 Russell, ———. iv. 260.  
 Russian voyage of discovery. iv. 98.  
 Rust, henry. iii. 119.  
 Rust, ———. iii. 119.  
 Rutherford, rev. ———. iv. 19.  
 Rutledge, gov. iii. 241.  
 Ryder, ———. iv. 260.  
 Ryshworth, ———, justice of peace in maine. vi. 584.  
 Rysoon, william-johnson, his donation to boston during its port bill. ix. 158.
- S.
- Sabbath, profaned in england. ii. 51. breaking punished. vii. P. 6. 93.  
 Sabine river. ii. 24. 26.  
 Saccanneset, or falmouth. iii. 14.  
 Sacharum, lieut. iv. 98.  
 Sachem, title of the chiefs of the east of new england. v. 29. 30.  
 Sachem's rock. vii. 140.  
 Sachems in massachusetts submit to the english government. vii. 45.  
 Saconet point. iii. 43.  
 Saconoroco, sachem of patuxet, his difficulty with gorton. vi. 404. puts himself under the jurisdiction of massachusetts. 406.  
 Sacrament, king's requisition about, in rhode island. vii. 94.  
 Sacrifice rocks. iii. 201.  
 Sacs, or sauks, indians, a warlike nation, their annuity, residence and number. ii. 8. 9. 13.  
 Saco, description of, by rev. j. coggswell. iv. 184. steep, saco and salnon falls. 185. mills and shipping. 186. schools and library. 187. church gathered; meeting-house, baptisms and church members, baptist society, population and deaths. 188. bridges and harbours. 189. indians at. v. 32.  
 Saco river. iv. 185. v. 16. lands about, granted to capt. bonitham. 224. comes under the jurisdiction of massachusetts. vi. 543.  
 Saffin, jolin. viii. 44. 180. x. 25.  
 Safford, john. viii. 107.  
 Saffyn. See Saffin.  
 Sagadahock. i. (iv.) colony at, broken up; account of. v. 37. or plough patent. 141. patent arrives in the ship plough. vii. P. 31. mutineers left at, by capt. rocraft, after one winter, are carried home to england. ix. 9.  
 Sagamore, title of the chiefs of the west of new england. v. 29. 30. one to every one or two hundred indians. v. 31.  
 Sagamore hill. iv. 234.  
 Sagamores at muddy river (brook-line.) ii. 141.  
 Sagaquabe harbour. v. 56.  
 Sagaquash. iii. 162. 189.  
 Sagard, m. referred to. x. 132.  
 Saggahew. iv. 169. 171.  
 Sailors, of an english vessel, put the officers into a boat at sea; detected, and most of them put to death. vi. 645. 646. their superstition. iii. 141.  
 Sakaweston, an indian, carried to england, and afterwards a soldier in bohemia. v. 38.  
 "Salamander," published by e. winslow in favour of massachusetts. vi. 517.  
 Salem. i. (ix.) settled by gov. endicott and others. ii. 69. planters enter into a covenant; first church gathered at. 71. formerly naumkeag, or naumkeak. 163. account of witchcraft at. iii. 221. iv. 71. indians at. v. 32. the first plantation in massachusetts. 111. 158. name given to naumkeag. 112. first covenant of church fellowship. 117. 119. 120. church disturbed by strictness of discipline. 120. ordination at. 276. ketches belonging to, captured by indians. vi. 635. vii. 51. 52. provincial congress held



- at. 160. taxed £3 out of £50 in massachusetts. P. 1. tax P. 31. 57. petition to massachusetts general court against disloyalty, and in favour of appeasing charles ii.; with names of the petitioners. viii. 105. 106. tax. 230. witchcraft at. x. 11.
- Sales, john. ii. 165.
- Salisbury, capt. governour of albaney. vi. 638.
- Salisbury, earl of, patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Salisbury, plantation at. v. 236. 242. its church, the 18th, planted. vii. 17.
- Salisbury, new hampshire, its ministers and churches. viii. 177. 178.
- Salisbury river. vii. 172.
- Salinanezer. v. 27.
- Salmon falls. iv. 185.
- Salmon, ———, mistake corrected in. vii. P. 16.
- Salt, persons sent to make at pascataqua. vii. P. 30. works at pascataqua in 1630. v. 216.
- Salt-petre houses, orders concerning. vii. 44.
- Salter, malachi. viii. 281. 282.
- Salterne, robert, his voyage, his relation. v. 11.
- Saltonstall, gilbert, esq. of halifax, england. iv. 154. vii. P. 13.
- Saltonstall, sir richard, lord mayor of london. iv. 154. vii. P. 13.
- Saltonstall, samuel, esq. iv. 154.
- Saltonstall, sir richard, begins the settlement of watertown. ii. 94. iv. 155. arrives. iii. 147. patentee of massachusetts. iv. 154. returns to england. 155. a friend to massachusetts colony; liberality of religious sentiments; patentee of connecticut; sends servants to settle connecticut. 156. a patron of harvard college. 157. portrait. 157. letter to messrs. wilson and cotton, in favour of toleration. 171. v. 109. first assistant. 120. 124. 128. settles at watertown. 135. 146. pinnacle lost. 162. sends a barque to connecticut to commence a settlement. 179. one of the five undertakers. vii. P. 2. 3. 5. 6. assistant. P. 21. 23. returns with his wife and three children to england. P. 22. 24. 25. one of the six original patentees of new england; one of the five undertakers; founder of watertown. P. 13. mistake about his arrival corrected. P. 29. 64, "corrections." P. 73. appears before privy council in behalf of massachusetts. P. 89. assistant. P. 92. intended to come out to connecticut. viii. 42. letter to j. wiunthrop, governour of connecticut, requesting to look into certain complaints against r. ludlow and others. 42. 97.
- Saltonstall, richard, son of sir richard, arrives. iii. 147. settles at ipswich; case of conscience solved by mr. cotton; treatise against the standing council causes agitation in the province. iv. 157. 158. assistant. 156. v. 259. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. vii. P. 29. returns to england. P. 38. goes to england; a friend to hamden: benefactor of harvard college. 158. 159. returns to america; his death. 159.
- Saltonstall, henry, m. d. iv. 159.
- Saltonstall, col. nathaniel, assistant. iv. 133. settles at haverhill. 159. 171. chosen assistant; opposed to trials for witchcraft. 159. 160. death. 161.
- Saltonstall, gov. gurdon. iv. 161. 168. minister of new london, connecticut; elected governour of connecticut. 161. agent to address the king; his character; his portrait; a benefactor of harvard college. 162. obituary notice of. 173. character by rev. mr. adams. 175.
- Saltonstall, madam, wife of gov. saltonstall, donations to harvard and yale colleges, and to old south church and the poor of boston. iv. 163.
- Saltonstall, richard, major, son of col. nathaniel, proceedings relating to schools at haverhill. iv. 125. 163. 168.
- Saltonstall, nathaniel, son of col. nathaniel, a tutor of harvard college. iv. 163. 168.
- Saltonstall, hon. richard. 127. 137. receives a colonel's commission; judge of the superiour court; character. 163. 168.

- Saltonstall, nathaniel. iv. 164. 169.  
 Saltonstall, richard, son of judge saltonstall. iv. 164. 169. colonel of a regiment; at the capture of fort henry; escapes from indians; sheriff of essex county; a loyalist. 164. goes to england, and dies there; character. 165. epitaph. 166.  
 Saltonstall, dr. nathaniel, son of judge saltonstall, death and character. iv. 166. 167. 169.  
 Saltonstall, leverett, son of judge saltonstall, a loyalist, enters the british service; dies at new york. iv. 167. character. 168.  
 Salstonstall, leverett, esq. son of dr. n. saltonstall. iv. 169. x. 191.  
 Saltonstall, richard, son of dr. n. saltonstall. iv. 169.  
 Saltonstall's mills at ipswich. iv. 157.  
 Samoset, indian, kind to plymouth colonists; addresses them in english. v. 58. ix. 48.  
 Sampeford, or sanford. vii. P. 58. 69. See sanford.  
 Sampson, abraham. vii. 138. x. 69.  
 Sampson, henry. vii. 138. x. 57. 69.  
 Sampson, rev. ezra, of plympton, afterwards of hudson, new york. iv. 270.  
 Sampson, rev. abishai, baptist minister at tisbury. iii. 74.  
 Sampson's hill. iii. 72.  
 Samson, capt. simeon. iv. 285.  
 Samson, ———. iv. 294. vii. 123.  
 Samson, sachem, a famous hunter. iv. 267. 284.  
 Samson, agonistes, quoted. i. (xi.)  
 Samson's county. iv. 284.  
 Samson's pond. iv. 272. 278.  
 Sanborn, catharine. x. 177.  
 Sanborn, abigail. x. 178.  
 Sanctuit pond. iii. 1, 2, 7.  
 Sand, for oil casks. iii. 24.  
 Sanders, john. v. 76. ix. 87.  
 Sanders, ———. iv. 260.  
 Sandison, ralph, attempts to abolish slavery among the friends. viii. 185. vaux's life of, referred to. 183.  
 Sandusky, upper and lower, residence of indians. ii. 3.  
 Sandwich. iii. 14. 54. church of. iv. 1. viii. 192. effects of the gale of 1815 at. x. 46.  
 Sandy river. ii. 231.  
 Sandy point. iii. 20. 23. 24. 173.  
 Sandy hill. iv. 53.  
 Sandy hook. vi. 670.  
 Sandys, sir edwin, letter to rev. mr. robinson and elder brewster; interested for the plymouth pilgrims. v. 46. governor of virginia company. 47.  
 Sanford, john, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 58. secretary and treasurer of rhode island. P. 69. vii. 77. 82. 84. 87. 93. 110. ix. 179.  
 Sangekantacket. iii. 93.  
 Sangekantacket pond. iii. 39.  
 Sanger, rev. dr. zedekiah, of bridge-water. iii. 198. vii. 165.  
 Sanger, richard. vii. 170.  
 Sanger, zedekiah. vii. 170.  
 Sanger, ralph. vii. 170.  
 Sankoty head. iii. 23.  
 Sanson, joseph, esq. his description of nantucket, mentioned. iii. 38.  
 Saquatuckett, or satucket, or massaquatuckett. vii. 140.  
 Saquisahanuke river, virginia. ix. 110.  
 Sargent, rev. ———, of malden. viii. 15.  
 Sargent, peter. viii. 44.  
 Sargent, rev. christopher, of methuen. iv. 153.  
 Sargent, nathaniel-p. iii. 119. chief justice, notice of. iv. 153.  
 Sargent, rev. ———, of woburn. iv. 197.  
 Sargent, rev. john, preacher to new stockbridge indians. ii. 47.  
 Sargent, paul-dudley. ii. 251.  
 Sargent, henry, his painting of the landing of the forefathers, noticed. iii. 225. 230.  
 Sarsees indians. ii. 43.  
 Sarson, capt. richard. iii. 86. his embassy to indians. 86.  
 Sasacacheh. iii. 25. 26.  
 Sashashawin river. ii. 11. 12. 42. 44.  
 Saskatshawine river. ii. 36.  
 Sassachus, sachem of pequods, killed by mohawks. v. 254. viii. 123. 145.  
 Sassamon. iv. 266.  
 Satucket. See saquatuckett.  
 Satucket pond. vii. 171. x. 61.  
 Satucket river. viii. 172.

- Satuit, or seteat, now scituate. iv. 223.
- Saughtuckquett. vii. 137. 139. 147.
- Saughtuckquett pond. vii. 147.
- Saugus. iii. 126. or cawgust. iv. 3. indians at. v. 32. attacked by taratines, or eastern indians. vii. P. 33. afterwards called lynn. P. 36. tax. P. 31. 67. viii. 230.
- Sauks indians. ii. 39. See sacs.
- Sauliers, or a-wa-ha-was, indians, their residence and number. ii. 35.
- Saunders, ———. iv. 294.
- Saunderson, abner. iii. 268.
- Saunderson, john. iii. 268.
- Saunderson, mrs. submit. x. 180.
- Sausaman, indian. v. 71.
- Saussetons indians, their number and residence. ii. 40.
- Sauters, or fols-avoin, indians. ii. 12. 13.
- Savage, thomas, sen. iii. 285. vii. 54. viii. 105. ix. 179. x. 24. 25.
- Savage, thomas, his account of the expedition to canada in 1690. iii. 256.
- Savage, mrs. elizabeth. iv. 101.
- Savage, ephraim. x. 26. 27.
- Savage, perez. iii. 256.
- Savage, habijah. x. 27. 28.
- Savage, habijah. viii. 286.
- Savage, james, esq. librarian of massachusetts historical society. ii. 285. letter from rev. dr. freeman containing errata in articles furnished by him for these collections. viii. 286. 328. x. 191.
- Savanogee indian language. ii. 18.
- Savannah river. ii. 4.
- Savannah, georgia, captured by the british. iii. 238. british troops at. 241.
- Savory, thomas. iv. 277.
- Savory, anthony. iv. 277.
- Savory, ———. iv. 260. 277. 294.
- Savoy confession of faith. vi. 623.
- Sawaquatoek. See sagadahock.
- Saws for cutting marble. ix. 129. 130.
- Saxons, anglo. i. (xviii.)
- Saxton, rev. ———, of scituate. iv. 233. vii. 22.
- Say, lord, friendly to new england. i. (xxvii.) iii. 151. iv. 156. v. 177. 180. his purchase at pascataqua. 221. dissuades men from coming to new england. vi. 376. 377. vii. P. 12. ix. 185.
- Say, professor, quoted. x. 132. 134. 145.
- Saybrook forest. iii. 151.
- Saybrook, origin of its name. vi. 309.
- Saybrook fort burnt. vi. 530. besieged by pequots. viii. 122. 131.
- Sayle, capt. procures an ordinance of parliament for planting bahama islands. vi. 523. goes to virginia. 524.
- Sayquish. iii. 175. 182.
- Scales, rev. james, of hopkinton, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Scales, stephen, tutor at harvard college. i. 231.
- Scales, jacob. iv. 179.
- Scalped persons in west tennessee. vii. 64.
- Scammel, alexander, his lines for musick. iii. 176. 177. iv. 90. notice of. 95.
- Scanton. iii. 14.
- Scarlett, samnel. viii. 105.
- Scatacook or river indians, fugitives from new england in philip's war, their numbers. viii. 244.
- Scelton. See skelton.
- Schermerhorn, john-f. his account of western indians. ii. 1. 45. remarks on his report concerning western indians, by e. hazard. iv. 65. his report referred to. x. 128.
- Schichmarew, lieut. iv. 98.
- Sciffs, henry. ii. 162.
- "School of athens," by raphael, mentioned. iii. 229.
- Schools, provision for, in massachusetts. i. (xiii.) at plymouth, history of. iii. 173. iv. 79. 86. acts about. 80. early law of massachusetts about publick and grammar. viii. 66.
- School-gate. iv. 87.
- Schuyler, col. president of the council in new york. i. 150.
- Schuyler, gen. iii. 236. x. 3.
- Scilly isles. iv. 107. 116.
- Sciota river. ii. 4.
- Seioux indians. ii. 11. 12. 28.
- Scituate, history of, needed. iii. 203. history of; situation and settlement. iv. 219. disputes about its boundaries. 220. original name. 223. progress of settlement; settled from



- kent, england. 224. topography of; wood. 225. agriculture, rivers and brooks. 225. 226. harbours. 227. light-house; average of deaths. 228. attacked by indians; population at different periods. 229. mackerel fishery. 230. 232. ecclesiastical history. 232. first inhabitants. 239. come to establish a fishing place. vii. P. 85.
- Scoby, william. x. 176.
- Scohegin falls. ii. 230.
- Sconehtoket, or skenectady. vi. 638.
- Seook pond. iii. 175.
- Scotch presbyterians in new york. i. 150.
- Scott, mrs. a relation of mrs. hutchinson, becomes an anabaptist; persuades roger williams to be rebaptized. vi. 338.
- Scott, joseph. iv. 269.
- Scott, sir walter. x. 192.
- Scott's lane, in ipswich. vi. 628.
- Scottow, mrs. thomasine. iv. 101.
- Scottow, thomas. iii. 285. iv. 100. 101.
- Scottow, joshua. iii. 285. memoir of. iv. 100. proceedings against, relating to the charles of oleron; publications. 102. viii. 82.
- Scottow, thomas, jun. iv. 101.
- Scurvey, afflicts massachusetts colony. ii. 87. charlestown people die of. vii. P. 19. very common among first settlers of massachusetts. iii. 129. destructive at boston and charlestown; cured by juice of lemons. v. 139. destroys many people at plymouth and in massachusetts. vii. P. 19. 20. ix. 34.
- Scusset. viii. 192.
- Seabury, samuel. x. 67. 68.
- Seabury, bishop. iii. 116.
- Seabury, barnabas. vii. 165.
- Seaconk, within the bounds of plymouth. ix. 169.
- Seahorse teeth, imported into massachusetts. vi. 379.
- Seal, lord. See say.
- Seals, hunting of. iii. 29.
- Seaman, ———, comes to new england. v. 36.
- Seamans, elder job, of new london, new hampshire. viii. 175.
- Searle, rev. jonathan, of salisbury, new hampshire. viii. 178.
- Sears, col. iii. 195.
- Sears, ———, iv. 260.
- Seatoeket, long island. vi. 668.
- Sea-venture, with sir t. gates and others, cast away at bermuda. viii. 204.
- Seaver, john. ii. 144.
- Seaver, rev. nicholas. iv. 141.
- Seaver, elijah. viii. 46.
- Seaver, benjamin-f. his letter about tristan d'acunha. ii. 125. 128.
- Sebaptists. vi. 626.
- Sebastecook river. ii. 230.
- Seccomb, rev. john, of chester. viii. 281. 283.
- Secombe, rev. joseph, of kingston new hampshire. ix. 367.
- Secker, bishop, remarks on his sermon before the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts, by dr. a. eliot; describes the new england colonies in dark colours. ii. 130. account of the proceedings of the society. 192. mistakes respecting. 194. 195. complains that episcopalians are taxed in new england for the support of independents. 200.
- Secuncke, or sekonk, or rehoboth. iv. 234.
- Sedgwick, major robert. vii. 54. x. 60.
- Seditious words against massachusetts government punished. vii. P. 85.
- Sedley, james. viii. 232.
- Seekers, heresy of. ii. 58. deny the ordinances and worship of christ. 74. v. 65. early at rhode island. vi. 326.
- Seely, robert, sworn a freeman of massachusetts. vii. P. 20. viii. 130. 152.
- Seipican, now rochester. iii. 186. iv. 222. 250. 258. 265.
- Seipican brook. iv. 253.
- Seminoles, or lower creek indians. ii. 18.
- Seneca, or cyniker indians. v. 33. their number, &c. viii. 238. 244.
- Senepetuit pond. iv. 252. 253. 266.
- Senter harbour. iii. 114. 118.
- Sentry hill. iii. 79.
- Sepaconnet. iv. 267.
- Sepaconnet river. iv. 265.

- Separatists. v. 64. distinction between them and nonconformists. 118. 182.  
 Sequasson, sachem of connecticut, at war with uncas. vi. 450. arrested and brought to hartford; is tried and acquitted. 462.  
 Sergeant, william. vii. P. 86.  
 Sergeant, rev. john, quoted. x. 124.  
 Sergeant-major, in massachusetts. vii. 54.  
 Sermons after the death of rev. dr. j. eliot. i. 248.  
 Seteat, or satuit, now scituate. iv. 223.  
 Settlers of massachusetts under gov. winthrop. i. (xxii.) under gov. endicott. (xxii.)  
 Seven, the number necessary to constitute a church. ii. 71.  
 Sever, hon. william, of kingston, massachusetts. iii. 205. 214.  
 Sevier, lieut. john, governour of tennessee. vii. 61.  
 Sewall, chief justice samuel, the elder, statement respecting the author of wonder-working providence. ii. 49. 96. of salem. 116. his character by j. dunton. 117. manuscript journal mentioned. 145. 146. 147. iii. 277. assistant. iv. 203. 236. extract from diary about cape cod canal. viii. 192. letter, mentioning sickness in boston. 242. commissioner, with w. stoughton, from massachusetts, to meet those of the united colonies; letter to col. john pynchon about troops to be sent against indians. 238. his proceedings relative to an habeas corpus in massachusetts. 240. 242.  
 Sewall, samuel, jun. ii. 144.  
 Sewall, j. viii. 243.  
 Sewall, stephen, chief justice. iv. 93.  
 Sewall, samuel. x. 28.  
 Sewall, henry. ii. 157.  
 Sewall, david. iii. 119.  
 Sewall, hull. ii. 157.  
 Sewall, samuel. ii. 157. of brookline, attorney, died at bristol, england. 157.  
 Sewall, professor, with others, goes to penobscot, to observe a transit of venus. x. 79.  
 Sewall, henry, jun. ii. 158.  
 Sewall's point. ii. 151.  
 Seymour, sir edward, a patentee of new england. v. 217.  
 Shad taken in great numbers in charles river by watertown people. vii. P. 59.  
 Shakalin. ii. 10.  
 Shamuit, its meaning. x. 173. 174.  
 Shaomet, or shoamet, named warwick. vi. 507. 509. 512.  
 Sharp, thomas. v. 122. arrives. 133. assistant. 124. returns to england. 140. assistant. vii. P. 5. 8. 14. 17. 20. 21. house burnt. P. 22. returns to england. P. 22. 25. 69.  
 Sharp, samuel. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman. P. 63.  
 Sharp, miss, dies at boston, the first female, as it seems, who died there. vii. P. 17.  
 Sharp, lieut. of brookline, slain by indians. ii. 161. iv. 57.  
 Sharp, william. ii. 144.  
 Sharp, mrs. susanna, her donation of church plate to brookline. ii. 153.  
 Sharp, stephen. ii. 161.  
 Sharp, ———. i. 108.  
 Shashin. See shawshin.  
 Shaukimmo. iii. 25.  
 Shaume river. iii. 173. x. 173.  
 Shaume neck. x. 173.  
 Shaw, john, of plymouth. iv. 93. 277.  
 Shaw, thomas. vii. 92.  
 Shaw, john, of weymouth. vii. 164.  
 Shaw, susanna. vii. 154.  
 Shaw, joseph. vii. 148. 164.  
 Shaw, ———. iv. 272.  
 Shaw, rev. john, of bridgewater. iv. 146. vii. 164. 168. 170.  
 Shaw, deacon. iii. 192.  
 Shaw, rev. oakes, of barnstable. i. 176. vii. 164. 169.  
 Shaw, rev. bezabiel. vii. 164. 169. of nantucket. ix. 162.  
 Shaw, rev. william, of marshfield. iii. 199. vii. 164. 169.  
 Shaw, lieut. joshua. x. 44.  
 Shaw, rev. john, of haverhill, ordination, death and character. iv. 146. vii. 170.  
 Shaw, samuel. vii. 164.  
 Shaw, john. x. 178.  
 Shaw, naphtali. vii. 170.  
 Shaw, william-s. esq. ii. 274. iv. 146. 169.  
 Shaw, rev. john, of carver. iv. 277.

- Shaw, charles, history of boston, quoted. x. 175.
- Shaw, john-a. vii. 170.
- Shaw, zebulon-l. vii. 170.
- Shaw, ———. iv. 277. vii. 123. 155.
- Shawonese language. See index, x. 155. 158.
- Shawmut, or boston. ii. 141. iv. 155. x. 170. purchased of rev. w. blackstone. 171. its meaning. 173.
- Shaw-o-met, or warwick, planted. ix. 182. See shaomet.
- Shawnoes indians. ii. 4. 12. brave warriors; their number; receive an annuity from united states. 4.
- Shawshin, or billerica. iv. 76. commissioners from cambridge to. 76.
- Shawshin river. iv. 76. vii. 39.
- Shays, ———, the rebel. iii. 247. pursued by gen. lincoln, retreats to amherst. 247. his rebellion quelled by gen. lincoln. 248.
- Sheafe, sampson. viii. 44.
- Shearman, rev. john, of lynn, marries a granddaughter of earl rivers. i. (xxiv.)
- Shearman, philip. ix. 179.
- Sheep, plenty in massachusetts. vii. 37. brought to massachusetts. P. 31. dutch, brought to massachusetts. P. 92.
- Sheepscot river. v. 16. (or shipscot.) 31.
- Sheep's head, fish. ix. 126.
- Sheffield. iii. 249.
- Sheffield, lord, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Shelby, isaac, governour of kentucky, overthrows indians at chickamauga. vii. 62.
- Sheldon. iii. 241.
- Shelley, robert. iv. 240.
- Shelter island. iv. 257. vi. 663.
- Shemouahn, its meaning. x. 173.
- Shepard, rev. thomas. iv. 18. arrives. v. 177. settles at newtown, now cambridge. 189. death; notice of. vi. 541. 604. vii. 25. 41. interview with bishop laud, by whom he is forbidden to preach. P. 46. 47. death. viii. 17. 111. 112. his "sincere convert," &c. translated into indian, by eliot. x. 125.
- Shepard, rev. thomas, of charlestown, ii. 171. 260. arrives. iii. 139. 148. 152. his escape. 140. his voyage. 141.
- Shepard, rev. samuel, his death, notice of. vi. 604.
- Shepard, rev. jeremiah, of lynn. ii. 147.
- Shepard, rev. thomas, jun. of charlestown. ii. 171.
- Shepard, ralph. ii. 144.
- Shepard, gen. william, attacked by shays. iii. 247. with gen. lincoln in subduing shays' rebellion. 247.
- Sherburne, henry. v. 220.
- Sherburne, catharine. x. 177.
- Sherley, james, of london, one of the partners in the profits of plymouth colony. vii. P. 74. his letter to gov. bradford. P. 93.
- Sherman, ———. iii. 285.
- Sherman, rev. james, of sudbury. iv. 58.
- Sherman, roger, delegate to continental congress, from connecticut. ii. 223.
- Sherman, joshua. iv. 303.
- Sherman, ———, bookseller. iii. 18.
- Sherman, ———. iv. 260. 277.
- Sherrit, hugh. iv. 170.
- Sherwood, rev. ———, of providence island, sent prisoner to england. vi. 378.
- Sheverick, samuel. vii. 149. 151.
- Shifting cove. iii. 173.
- Shillings of massachusetts described. ii. 275. 276.
- Shimmoah. iii. 25.
- Shimmuo. x. 174.
- Shingle brook. iii. 178.
- Ship, built at cambridge, its fight with an irish man-of-war. vi. 526. built by the foes of massachusetts destroyed in launching. v. 180. belonging to new haven, with many passengers of distinction on board, lost at sea. vi. 527. in charlestown harbour, rocked twelve hours by a witch. vi. 531. seized in boston harbour under pretence of a commission from the admiralty in england. vi. 474. difficulties in consequence of this seizure. 475. or barque, built by gov. winthrop, is launched july 4, 1631. vii. P. 31. sally, the first from beyond the cape of good hope to plymouth. iii. 197. six friends. iii. 259.
- Ship-building, in new england, to be traced perhaps to the dock-yard at chatham, england. iv. 244. and



- trade, early flourish in massachusetts. vi. 524. models for. x. 163.
- Shipping, tons of, in massachusetts, in 1806. iii. 122. in massachusetts, in 1665. viii. 72.
- Ship-timber in united states. i. 190.
- Ships, 198 or 298 in number, employed in conveying passengers to america, previous to 1645. ii. 81. 83. convey to america before that time 21,200 souls. 81. but one miscarried. 83. 84. arrive at massachusetts with provisions. iii. 125. arrive in great numbers. 147. few arrive in massachusetts in 1631. v. 148. near 20 arrive in massachusetts. 157. two dutch, arrive from the texel with flanders mares, &c. 177. arrive in massachusetts laden with provisions. 239. two, belonging to massachusetts, wrecked on the coast of spain. vi. 524. a list of, that arrive in new england in 1630. vii. P. 10.
- Shipscoot. See sheepscoot.
- Shipwreck at plymouth. iii. 195.
- Shirley, james. iv. 220. 249.
- Shirley, gov. william. ii. 187. 206. vote of thanks to, by plymouth, for his negative to the excise act. iii. 194. 234.
- Shirley, william. viii. 154. 156.
- Shirley, james. x. 176.
- Shoals, isle of, fishing ground. iii. 142. under jurisdiction of massachusetts; instigated by gibson to revolt. vi. 381.
- Shoamet. See shaomet.
- Shoemakers, very early incorporated in massachusetts. viii. 13.
- Short, henry. viii. 106.
- Short, anthony. viii. 106.
- Short, rev. matthew, of rehoboth. i. 185.
- Shotton, sampson. ix. 182.
- Shove, ———. iv. 84.
- Shower, rev. john. ii. 116.
- Shrewsbury, account of. i. 162.
- Shrimpton, samuel. viii. 44.
- Shrimson, ———. ii. 260.
- Shurd, abraham, of pemaquid. v. 145. his pinnace blown up. 195. vi. 478. 485. vii. P. 62. ransoms james sagamore's wife. P. 34. or shurt. P. 62. viii. 232.
- Shurt. See shurd.
- Shurtliff, john, killed by lightning. vi. 642.
- Shurtliff, william. iv. 87. 277.
- Shurliff, ———. vii. 168.
- Shurtliff, ———. iv. 276.
- Shute, gov. letter from joseph beath and john minot, about father ralle's exciting the indians against massachusetts. viii. 265. and two others from s. moody on the same subject. 265. 266.
- Siasconsit. iii. 21.
- Sicaock indians. viii. 235.
- Sickness in massachusetts and plymouth. vii. P. 92.
- Sidney, ———. i. (xiv.)
- Siki, or clam, shell fish. iii. 58.
- Silby, dr. ii. 23. 27. 28.
- Sillis, richard. iv. 239.
- Silver, thomas. viii. 106.
- Silvester, richard, of weymouth, his child accidentally shot. vi. 423. vii. P. 4.
- Simon, an indian, sets fire to a house near portsmouth, and takes captive a young woman and child. vi. 631.
- Simons, moses. vii. 138. x. 57. 69.
- Simons, samuel. viii. 88.
- "Simple cobbler of agawam." iv. 138. by nathaniel ward. v. 155. extract from. vi. 624.
- Simpson, lieut. viii. 156.
- Sims. See symmes.
- Sincausin, indian family at mashpee. iii. 8.
- Singing by notes, first used in boston. iv. 301.
- Sion's saviour, &c. See zion's saviour, &c. iii. 123. 161. iv. 1. 51. vii. 1. 58. viii. 1. 39.
- Sioux, or nauduwassies indians, their language and different tribes. ii. 39. 40.
- Sippican lands appropriated to schools at plymouth. iv. 86.
- Sippican river. x. 36.
- Sippiquunnet, signification of. iv. 265.
- Six mile brook. iv. 268. 283.
- Sixpence of massachusetts described. ii. 276.
- Skamgnar, indian word, its meaning. viii. 252.
- Skanton neck. iv. 293.
- Skeensborough. iii. 237.
- Skekets. iii. 182.
- Skelton, buley. v. 38.

- Skelton, rev. samuel, elected exhorting elder of the church at salem. ii. 71. account of. 71. 72. requires women to wear vails, under penalty of noncommunion. v. 117. strictness disturbs his church. 120. of lincolnshire, arrives in new england. 112. 121. 122. 181. 189. his death. 204. vii. P. 4.
- Skelton, mrs. wife of rev. mr. skelton, dies. vii. P. 22.
- Skenectady, or sconehtoket. vi. 638.
- Skiff, mrs. remember. iii. 43.
- Skinner, rev. thomas. ii. 178.
- Skinner, john. ii. 181.
- Skins of birds, directions for preserving. i. 19.
- Skook, its meaning. ix. 92.
- Slany, john, a merchant of london. v. 59. treasurer of the patentees for planting newfoundland. viii. 226.
- Slave indians. ii. 43.
- Slavery, attempts to abolish in pennsylvania. viii. 183. 192. boston instructs its representatives to procure the abolition of. 184. countenanced by william penn; common among quakers. 185.
- Slaves in massachusetts in 1754, 1755. iii. 95.
- Slitting mill, the second in new england, erected at bridgewater. vii. 176.
- Small brook. vii. 143.
- Small long pond, in wareham. iv. 288.
- Small-pox, appears in cambridge. i. 108. prevails in massachusetts. 109. in marblehead. 122. inoculation for, introduced into new england by dr. z. boylston. ii. 159. at charlestown. 165. 166. among indians. iii. 127. 259. and spotted fevers, in massachusetts. iv. 102. brought to new england by the talbot. v. 131. destroys many massachusetts indians. 194. 195. vii. 71. deaths by. 74. See inoculation.
- Smalley, john. iii. 184. 185.
- Smart, mrs. x. 180.
- Smellie, ———. i. 108.
- Smelt pond, in kingston. iii. 207.
- Smelt brook, in brookline. ii. 145. in weymouth. iii. 176. in kingston. iii. 207.
- Smiley, rev. robert, (robinson,) of weathersfield, vermont. i. 258.
- Smith, capt. john, voyage. i. (iv.) history of virginia mentioned. (xx.) description of new england. (xx.) extract from history of virginia. ii. 267. map mentioned. iii. 175. v. 10. 35. quoted. 11. 13. 36. governour of virginia. 12. names new england. 13. 35. comes to new england on a voyage of discovery. 38. captured; history referred to. 40. names tragabizanda, now cape ann, and calls three islands near it, three turks' heads. 105. discovers pascataqua. 214. mistake about corrected. vii. P. 39. with capt. darmer, sent to lay foundation of a plantation in new england, and for trade; captured by a french pirate and detained prisoner. ix. 7. map. 111.
- Smith, sir thomas, governour of virginia company. v. 47. treasurer of virginia. viii. 199.
- Smith, john, of amsterdam. v. 204.
- Smith, rev. ralph, of plymouth. iii. 199. comes to plymouth; minister there; resigns his office. v. 97. arrives. 112. teaching elder at plymouth. 113. conditions required of him previous to his coming to massachusetts. 121. 168. 203. vi. 662.
- Smith, richard, made by the pope titular bishop of chalcedon, and bishop over the catholicks of england. vii. P. 16.
- Smith, dr. warden, of wadham college. vii. P. 52. 53.
- Smith, henry. viii. 229.
- Smith, rev. henry, of weathersfield, connecticut. vi. 307. vii. 21.
- Smith, arthur. viii. 140.
- Smith, john. ix. 170.
- Smith, francis. iv. 110.
- Smith, richard, his trading house at north kingston. ix. 198.
- Smith, john, of plymouth colony. iii. 184. 185.
- Smith, ———, of winnissimmet, killed by indians near york. vi. 631.
- Smith, george. viii. 107.
- Smith, lawrence. i. 69. sent with walklet to suppress the rising in middlesex, virginia. 70. returns. 71.

- Smith, ———, his early project of  
cape cod canal. viii. 192.
- Smith, daniel. viii. 182.
- Smith, rev. ———, episcopal mission-  
ary at providence. ii. 213.
- Smith, lieut. viii. 156.
- Smith, lieut. col. proceeds with troops  
to concord to destroy military stores  
there. ii. 224. 226. his march  
opposed at lexington. 225. exe-  
cutes his purpose. 226. attacked  
at lexington on his return. 226.  
his loss. 227. iv. 215. wounded.  
217.
- Smith, roger, esq. of south carolina,  
his donation to boston during its  
port bill. ix. 162.
- Smith, hannah. x. 177.
- Smith, isaac. x. 180.
- Smith, jenny. x. 179.
- Smith, mary. x. 180.
- Smith, rev. dr. hezekiah, minister of  
the baptist church at haverhill. iv.  
150. his character. 151.
- Smith, rev. isaac, letter from, about  
performances at commencement.  
i. 249.
- Smith, hon. john-c. x. 192.
- Smith, ———. iii. 195.
- Smith, ———, a hunter. iii. 118.
- Smith, gov. jeremiah. iii. 116.
- Smith, rev. jonathan, of chilmark.  
iii. 74.
- Smith, rev. eli, of hollis, new hamp-  
shire. viii. 178.
- Smith, rev. ———. iii. 108.
- Smith, ———. vii. 168.
- Smith, col. isaac. ii. 176.
- Smith, ———. iii. 66.
- Smith's point. iii. 20. 26.
- Smith's river. iii. 110. 118.
- Smith's pond. iii. 118.
- Smith's history of new york, referred  
to. x. 101, et post.
- Snake indians, their number, resi-  
dence, warriors and language. ii.  
38.
- Snake brook. iv. 55.
- Snappet. iv. 226.
- Snell, thomas. vii. 149. 154.
- Snell, joseph. vii. 169.
- Snell, john. vii. 159.
- Snell, deacon ebenezer. x. 44.
- Snell, rev. thomas, of north brookfield.  
vii. 154.
- Snell, bezer. vii. 169.
- Snell, issachar. vii. 170.
- Snelling, nathaniel-g. esq. x. 191.
- Snippet. iv. 226.
- Sniptecot pond. x. 35. 36.
- Sniptecot brook. x. 35.
- Snow, william. vii. 149.
- Snow, joseph. vii. 149.
- Snow, daniel. vii. 160.
- Snow, mrs. of rochester. iv. 264.
- Snow, ———. iv. 260.
- Snow's pond. iv. 253. x. 36.
- Socananocho. vii. 48.
- Society for propagating the gospel  
among indians. i. (xxviii.) em-  
ploys mr. schermerhorn and sam-  
uel-j. mills. ii. 1. account of.  
45. incorporated. 46. number  
of its missionaries and school-  
masters. 193. 197. bequest to.  
vii. 167.
- Society in scotland for promoting  
christian knowledge. ii. 45.
- Soconoco. vi. 459.
- Soderstrom, ———. viii. 323.
- Sohegan river. vii. 66.
- Soil, right to, in new england, to be  
determined in new england. vi.  
620.
- Soldiers, a law of massachusetts rela-  
tive to pressing them, referred to.  
viii. 86.
- Solemn contract. i. (xxi.)
- Soley, john. ii. 176. 177. 179. 181.
- Soley, samuel. ii. 178. 181.
- Somer isles enjoy liberty of con-  
science. vi. 534.
- Somerset, man-of-war. iv. 218.
- Sommerby, anthony. viii. 106.
- Sommerby, abiel. viii. 106.
- Sommers, sir george, comes out admi-  
ral of virginia, with a colony. viii.  
204.
- Soanogee language. ii. 4.
- Sopers, garrison at. vi. 674.
- Sophia, princess, mother of george i.  
her birth and marriages. vii. P. 16.
- Sorel. ii. 240. vi. 639.
- Sossoa, or sochso, a great captain of  
the narragansets. vii. P. 59.
- Souhegan, or amherst, new hampshire.  
ii. 250. viii. 176.
- Souhegan river. ii. 247. 248.
- Soule, george. vii. 137. 138. x. 57.  
67. fined for attending a quakers'  
meeting. 69.
- Soule, john. vii. 144.
- Soule, deacon william. iv. 182.
- Soule, deacon moses, jun. iv. 182.



- Soule, ———. iv. 179.  
 Soumrin, lieut. viii. 157.  
 Souter, capt. iv. 219.  
 South beach. iii. 41. 70. 73.  
 South brook. vii. 171.  
 South carolina, donations of its towns  
 and individuals to boston during its  
 port bill. ix. 162. 167.  
 South church library in boston. vii.  
 180.  
 South meadow. iv. 271. 275.  
 South meadow brook. iv. 272.  
 South meadow precinct. iv. 278.  
 South meadows. iii. 162.  
 South pond. iii. 175. 179. 180.  
 South pond. viii. 167.  
 South river. iv. 224. 227.  
 South sea indians. iii. 8.  
 Southampton, earl of, sends capt.  
 harlow on a voyage to new england.  
 v. 37. a patentee of new england.  
 217. governour of the virginia  
 company in england. ix. 112.  
 Southampton, long island, planted.  
 v. 246. vi. 668. vii. 22.  
 Southcott, ———, captain of a milita-  
 ry company, has permission to go  
 to england. vii. P. 32.  
 Southcot, william. vii. P. 40.  
 Souther, nathaniel. iii. 184. 185.  
 vii. 121.  
 Southey, robert, esq. x. 192.  
 Southold, long island. vi. 319. 668.  
 Southwick, george. viii. 46.  
 Southworth, mrs. x. 67.  
 Southworth, constant. iii. 188. vii.  
 137. 139. his deposition. 142.  
 155. x. 57. 62. 67. 69. 71.  
 Southworth, thomas. iii. 185.  
 Southworth, nathaniel. iii. 188.  
 Southworth, edward. x. 68.  
 Sowame indians. v. 32.  
 So-wames, now warren, rhode island,  
 claimed by plymouth colony. ix.  
 180.  
 Sowams, plymouth trading house,  
 quarrel at, with narragansets. vii.  
 P. 58.  
 Sowans, the seat of massasoyt. v. 59.  
 Spain. makes peace with france. vii.  
 P. 12. and with england. P. 16.  
 at war with holland. P. 17. 81.  
 Spaniards refuse to buy indians for  
 slaves. v. 39.  
 Spanish prize arrives at boston. iv.  
 292.  
 Sparhawk, john. iv. 90. 94.  
 Sparks, john. viii. 107.  
 Sparks, major. viii. 156.  
 Sparrow, jonathan, an early settler of  
 plymouth. iv. 255.  
 Sparrow's hill. iii. 179. iv. 255.  
 Spencer, ———. vii. P. 60.  
 Spencer, dr. elihu, his account of the  
 dissenting interest in the middle  
 states. i. 156.  
 Spendelow, lieut. viii. 156.  
 Sperry, rev. ebenezer-p. of dunstable,  
 his summary. x. 56.  
 Spils-bury, john, forms the first baptist  
 church in england. ix. 197.  
 Splintdorff, capt. viii. 157.  
 Spooner, walter. iii. 10.  
 Spooner, ephraim. iii. 10. iv. 92.  
 Spooner, william-j. x. 192.  
 Sporting anecdote. iv. 284.  
 Spotted fever, early in massachusetts.  
 iv. 102.  
 Sprague, ralph. vii. P. 69. ii. 163.  
 Sprague, richard. vii. P. 69. ii. 163.  
 bequeaths a parsonage to charles-  
 town 170. his tomb. 179.  
 Sprague, william. ii. 163.  
 Sprague, francis. vii. 138. x. 57.  
 66. 69.  
 Sprague, ———. iv. 259. 260.  
 Sprague, samuel. x. 67.  
 Sprague, nathaniel. iv. 302.  
 Sprague, noah. iv. 302.  
 Sprague, noah. x. 32.  
 Sprague, samuel. iv. 302.  
 Sprague, hon. john. iv. 261. x. 37.  
 Sprague, esther. i. 116.  
 Sprague, ———. vii. 123.  
 Sprague's hill. vii. 173.  
 Spring, the first after the arrival at  
 plymouth, was early. v. 58. early  
 in massachusetts. 239.  
 Springfield, arsenal at. iii. 247. or  
 agawam, settled. vi. 308. vii. 57.  
 27th church in massachusetts,  
 planted. viii. 3.  
 Spring hill. iii. 177.  
 Spring lane, boston, origin of its  
 name. x. 175.  
 Springs of boston, note on. x. 175.  
 Spurstow, william. ix. 185.  
 Squakhet, or northfield. v. 18.  
 Squam. iii. 25. 26.  
 Squam ponds. iii. 110. 114.  
 Squannequeest island. iv. 289.  
 Squantum, a god of the indians. ii.  
 66.  
 Squanto, or tisquantum, says "wel-

- come, english," to the plymouth pilgrims. v. 58. kidnapped by capt. hunt and carried to London; teaches the pilgrims to plant corn, &c. 59. 66. 68. 70. 71. dies at manomet. 76.
- Squaws of massachusetts "more modest than some english women." ix. 59.
- Squidecasset, sagamore, murders walter bagnall et al. at richmond's island. vii. P. 35.
- Squipnocket pond. iii. 42.
- Squipnocket bite. iii. 42.
- St. augustine parish. ii. 240.
- St. bernard bay. ii. 25.
- St. charles river. ii. 245.
- St. christopher's, pestilence at. vi. 532. two hundred and fifty men, driven from, come to boston, are relieved, and sent to the caribbee islands. vi. 592.
- St. clair, sir john, deputy quarter-master general. viii. 156.
- St. croix river. ii. 12.
- St. croix. v. 15. the french dislodged from, by sir s. argall. ix. 5.
- St. fee. ii. 25. 29.
- St. fee antonio. ii. 23.
- St. foy. ii. 239.
- St. francis river. ii. 5. 6.
- St. george, attacked by indians. viii. 248. 254.
- St. george's isles. v. 11.
- St. john, oliver. i. (xxiv.) ambassador to holland. ii. 260. vi. 349.
- St. john de creve cœur, hector, letters of. iii. 37.
- St. john's gate. ii. 240. 243.
- St. helen's fire. ii. 99.
- St. hermes, a name given to a fire sometimes seen at the mast head. ii. 99.
- St. lawrence river. ii. 10.
- St. mary's parish. ii. 236.
- St. nicholas, a name given by italians to a flame sometimes seen at the mast head. ii. 99.
- St. patrick, ship. v. 240.
- St. peter's river. ii. 40. 41.
- St. roche. ii. 240. 243.
- St. stephen's fort. ii. 18.
- Stactan indians. ii. 38.
- Stacy, rev. joseph, of kingston, his character. iii. 209. 214. iv. 94.
- Stage point. iii. 182.
- Stagg, capt. captures a vessel in boston harbour. vi. 474. summoned to salem. 476.
- Stahl, ———. i. 108.
- Stamford, connecticut, settled. vi. 319. a woman at, nearly killed by an indian, who is put to death. vi. 462. synod at. i. 140.
- Standish, capt. miles, disperses the indians. ii. 67. iii. 220. 228. v. 63. sent as agent from plymouth to massachusetts. 110. 162. description of. 68. 111. goes to england agent for plymouth. 95. dies. vi. 556. vii. 137. 139. 147. P. 6. assistant at plymouth. P. 83. his stature; a terror to the indians viii. 121. ix. 33. 47. 83. notice of. x. 57. 58. 60. 61. 62. 63. 65. 66. 68.
- Standish, miles. x. 61.
- Standish, alexander. x. 61.
- Standish, josiah, ensign. vii. 147. x. 61. 64.
- Standish, isaiah. iv. 303.
- Standing council of massachusetts. v. 234. disputes about. 244. how chosen. 244. written against. vi. 385. originally appointed for life. 386. ministers' resolves about. 387. 388.
- Standlake, daniel. iv. 240. 242.
- Stanford, daniel, instructor. ii. 249.
- Stanton, thomas, familiar with indian language. vii. 81. viii. 147. 151.
- Starbuck, jethro. iii. 32.
- Starbuck, edward. iii. 33.
- Starbuck's neck. iii. 38. 39. 48. 81.
- Stares, sergeant. viii. 147.
- Stark, archibald. x. 179.
- Stark, gen. john. ii. 252. x. 180.
- Starr, john. vii. 138.
- Starr, dr. comfort. x. 65.
- Starre, ship, capt. newport. viii. 208.
- Start's point. iii. 178.
- State prison at charlestown. i. 127. description of. ii. 175.
- State papers of rhode island. vii. 75.
- Staten island, settled. i. 141. vi. 669. its soil, produce, and wood. 673.
- Statistical account of middlebury, vermont. ix. 123.
- Statistical view of the indian nations, referred to. x. 131.
- Stearns, john. ii. 162.
- Stearns, widow. iii. 274.

- Stearns, rev. josiah, of epping, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Stearns, rev. dr. charles, of lincoln. iii. 223.  
 Stearns, william. ii. 178.  
 Stearns, professor asahel. x. 39.  
 Stearns, rev. silas. iv. 183.  
 Steart's hill. iii. 178.  
 Stebbin, deacon. viii. 153.  
 Stedman, isaac. iv. 239.  
 Stedman, thomas. ii. 144.  
 Stedman, joshua. ii. 144.  
 Stedman, thomas, jun. ii. 144.  
 Stedman, ———. iii. 253.  
 Steel, john. vi. 308.  
 Steel, lieut. ii. 232. wounded. 246.  
 Steel, james. x. 179.  
 Stenkingon. ii. 10.  
 Sterling, earl of. See stirling.  
 Sterling, capt. lieut. viii. 156.  
 Stetson, caleb. iii. 208.  
 Stetson, elisha. iii. 209.  
 Stetson, rev. seth, of plymouth. iii. 201. 202.  
 Stetson, david. ii. 180. 181.  
 Stetson, ———. vii. 123.  
 Steuart, robert, of new york. ii. 36.  
 Stevens, ———, informs against massachusetts; dies. vi. 580.  
 Stevens, ———, a child, killed by drinking rum. vi. 648.  
 Stevens, rev. joseph, of charlestown. ii. 171.  
 Stevens, rev. phineas, of boscawen. x. 74.  
 Stevens, rev. dr. benjamin. ii. 178.  
 Stevens, capt. viii. 157.  
 Stevens, john. ii. 178.  
 Stevens, mrs. x. 180.  
 Stevenson, marmaduke, a quaker, sentenced to death. vi. 572.  
 Stevenson, john. x. 172.  
 Steward, ———, of ipswich. ii. 120. account of. 121. 123.  
 Stewart, capt. viii. 157.  
 Stewart, sarah. x. 177.  
 Stewart, commodore charles. viii. 285.  
 Stewart, ———. iii. 66.  
 Stiles, thomas. viii. 152.  
 Stiles, rev. president ezra, extract from his diary. ii. 260. letter from joel barlow, enclosing one from professor ebeling. viii. 269. manuscript history of connecticut, referred to. 268. letter from professor ebeling, requesting an account of connecticut, and mentioning progress in his works on america, and the number of living authors in germany. 271.  
 Stiles, tryphena. x. 180.  
 Stillman, elias. v. 122.  
 Stillwater, battle of. iii. 237.  
 Stinson, rev. joseph. ii. 178.  
 Stirling, earl of, sells martha's vineyard, nantucket and other islands to charles ii. iii. 82. 85. receives a grant of long island. v. 89. 171. (And see alexander, sir william.) his share of long island. vi. 667.  
 Stock, publick, a committee in massachusetts to confer about. vii. P. 60.  
 Stockbridge, john. iv. 240. 245.  
 Stockbridge, charles. iii. 188. iv. 241.  
 Stockbridge, dr. charles. iv. 245.  
 Stockbridge, joseph. iv. 90. 95.  
 Stockbridge, dr. charles. iv. 245.  
 Stockbridge indians. See new stockbridge.  
 Stockbridge, town of, attacked by insurgents. iii. 248.  
 Stoddard, anthony. x. 24. 25.  
 Stoddard, anthony. x. 27.  
 Stone, capt. killed by pequots. v. 176. 248. 250. insults mr. ludlow, is fined and banished. 156. arrives at boston with cows and salt. vii. P. 92. viii. 123. 130.  
 Stone, rev. samuel. iii. 134. of newtown, or cambridge. 139. removes to hartford, connecticut. 151. iv. 1. arrives. v. 169. vi. 307. has difficulties about baptism. 570. chaplain to major mason in the pequot war. viii. 134.  
 Stone, john. iii. 220.  
 Stone, capt. viii. 157.  
 Stone, john. ii. 180.  
 Stone, rev. isaiah, of new boston, new hampshire. viii. 177.  
 Stone river. ii. 38.  
 Stone wall pond. iii. 42. 49.  
 Stono ferry, battle of. iii. 239. 241.  
 Stony brook. iii. 262. 266. 267.  
 Stony or mill brook. x. 62. 65.  
 Storer, benjamin, of wells, killed by indians. vi. 631.  
 Storer, ebenezer. ii. 46.  
 Storm at plymouth. iii. 192.



- Storm in new england, august 15, 1655. v. 199. 200.
- Storm of september, 1815, its effects at sandwich, buzzard's and barnstable bays and neighbourhood, on trees, grass. x. 49. on salt works. 47. tides. 48. cultivated lands. 50. wells and watering places. 51. soil. 52. 53.
- Story, william. viii. 107.
- Story, hon. judge joseph. x. 191.
- Stoughton, thomas. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman. P. 29.
- Stoughton, israhel. vii. 117. captain, sent by massachusetts against the pequots. viii. 145. 229. x. 59. assistant. v. 259.
- Stoughton, william, sent agent to england to answer the heirs of mason and gorges. vi. 613. 614. viii. 100. 181. 182. 197. commissioner, with s. sewall,—to meet those of the united colonies—their letter to col. pynchon about troops to be sent against indians. 238. deputy governour. ii. 100. iii. 190.
- Straits of magellan. }  
Straits of anian. } v. 27.  
Straits of california. }
- Stratford, connecticut, leather-mitten ordination at. ii. 122.
- Strawberries, early abundant in massachusetts. v. 130. found at plymouth. ix. 62. hints about rearing. 144.
- Strawberry hill. iii. 177. iv. 234.
- Strawberry bank, or portsmouth, a great house built at. v. 219.
- Straw, jack, an indian, who lived with sir walter raleigh, in england, comes to boston. vii. P. 25.
- Straw, elizabeth. x. 179.
- Street, rev. nicholas. vi. 663.
- Strayton, or pelton, george, his bees in virginia. ix. 120.
- Stretton, rev. richard. ii. 100.
- Strong, ———, his treatise on the two covenants, mentioned. v. 299.
- Strong, caleb, governour of massachusetts. ii. 182. iv. 189.
- Strong-bow indians. ii. 43.
- Strong water. See water, strong.
- Straensee, count. i. 177.
- Stuart, capt. viii. 157.
- Students at harvard college, 1651. vii. 29.
- Studson, robert, cornet. iv. 84. 225. 230. 240. 245. vii. 122.
- Study hill. x. 171. 172.
- Sturgis, ———. iv. 304.
- Sturtevant, joseph. iii. 209.
- Sturtevant, col. charles. iv. 303.
- Sturtevant, ———. iv. 260. 282. 284. 294.
- Sturton, capt. sent on discovery to new england. v. 13. ix. 5.
- Stuyvesant, peter, governour of new york. vi. 328. 435. 546.
- Styles, francis, an agent in connecticut. viii. 42.
- Success, ship. v. 120. arrives. 132. attacked by dunkirkers. 140. arrives at salem. vii. P. 10. 19.
- Succession, rights of, among north american indians. v. 34.
- Suckeke. iii. 182.
- Suckieag, or hartford, connecticut. iii. 182. or suckiang. vi. 307.
- Sudbury, account of. iv. 52. incorporated. 52. 60. rivers, brooks, ponds and causeway. 54. mills, mines, and ores. 55. indian affairs. 56. ecclesiastical history. 58. educated men. 59. planted. v. 236. being 19th church. vii. 23. people at. 24.
- Sudbury river. iv. 52. 62.
- Suffolk resolves, approved by congress. ii. 221.
- Sugar loaf. iii. 49.
- Sugar loaf hill. vii. 75.
- Sugar maple. iii. 114.
- Sugar river. viii. 174.
- Sullivan, gen. john. i. 252. iv. 95.
- Sullivan, james, governour of massachusetts, memoir of. i. 252. representative to congress; judge of maritime and of the superiour court. 252. character; elected governour. 253. dies. 254. first president of massachusetts historical society. (xviii.) president of the society for propagating the gospel among indians. ii. 48. 273.
- Summer of 1632 wet and cold. vii. P. 65. its effect on corn, etc. P. 65.
- Summonses may be issued by any assistant. vii. P. 31.
- Sumner, ———. iii. 17.
- Sumner, rev. clement, of keene, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Sumner, rev. j. his account of shrewsbury. i. 162. vii. 178.

- Sun, some uncommon appearances of, give rise to new lights. viii. 9.
- Sunapee mountain. viii. 174.
- Sunapee lake. viii. 173. 174.
- Sunderland, lieut. iv. 219.
- Superb, british ship, burns vessels at wareham. iv. 238.
- Supply, the ship. iv. 107.
- Surgeons' hospital. i. 111.
- Susannah and thomas, ship, a flame seen on her mast. ii. 99.
- Sutcliffe, mathew, a patentee of new england. v. 217.
- Sutliff, abraham. iv. 241.
- Sutherland, rev. david, of bath, new hampshire, his account of bath, new hampshire. iii. 105. 108.
- Sutton, john. iv. 241.
- Swain, ———, of agamenticus, hangs himself. vi. 419.
- Swain, ———, a deserter. iv. 211.
- Swamscot, between dover and exeter, disputes about lands at. vi. 555.
- Swan, rev. josiah, of dunstable. viii. 176. x. 55.
- Swan, james, his essays. iv. 232. major. x. 78.
- Swan, timothy. ii. 173.
- Swan island. ii. 229.
- Swanholt. iii. 164. iv. 274.
- Swansey, abandoned during Philip's war. vii. 156.
- Swasey, major joseph. viii. 166.
- Swearing punished. vii. P. 66.
- Swedes, fort at delaware burnt down. vi. 431. 442. at delaware, within virginia, their trade. ix. 112.
- Sweetser, seth. ii. 178.
- Swett, lieut. commander of a garrison at wells. vi. 632. is defeated and slain. 634. 635.
- Swine, breaking into corn, may be killed. vii. P. 93.
- Swift, ———. viii. 313.
- Swift, henry. viii. 166.
- Swift, benjamin. ii. 181.
- Swift, ———. iv. 260. 294.
- Sycamore shoals, holston river, garrison at. vii. 61.
- Sydenham, ———. i. 108.
- Sylvania, name proposed for pennsylvania. vii. 186.
- Sylvester, ———, a merchant of long island. vi. 668.
- Sylvester, Joseph. x. 179.
- Sylvester, ———. iv. 179.
- Symes, benjamin, a benefactor to the free schools in virginia, "worthy to be chronicled." ix. 119.
- Symmes, rev. zechariah, of charles-town, arrives. i. 169. ii. 171. 177. iii. 145. v. 190. dies. vi. 607. vii. 41. viii. 98. 112.
- Symmes, mrs. sarah. iii. 146.
- Synnes, rev. thomas, of bradford, his sermon on the death of rev. j. brown. iv. 142.
- Symonds, samuel, assistant. vi. 372. commissioner to kittery. 542.
- Synod at cambridge. i. 194. iii. 149. iv. 34. v. 298. questions at. 299. angry feeling of. 302. rev. j. davenport preaches before. 304. vii. 1. condemns eighty errors. ix. 178.
- Synod, the second at cambridge. i. 195. 196. iv. 202. viii. 8.
- Synod called at boston on the subject of publick calamities. vi. 621. agrees on a confession of faith. 623. extract from. 627.
- Synod at Stamford. i. 140.
- Synod at pittsburg. ii. 4. iv. 68.
- T.
- Tachies indians, their residence, number and language. ii. 24.
- Tackosi. iii. 175.
- Tacks, manufactory of. vii. 119.
- Taft, rev. moses, of braintree, now randolph. vii. 165.
- Taggoskit, its signification. iv. 275.
- Tailer, william. viii. 44.
- Takaways, or tankards, indians, their residence and number. ii. 25.
- Talbot, ———, midshipman. viii. 156.
- Talbot, capt. his attack upon plymouth. iii. 182.
- Talbot, deacon ambrose. iv. 182.
- Talbot, ———. iv. 179.
- Talbot, ship, t. belcher commander. v. 128. vice admiral of the fleet for massachusetts. 129. arrives with the small-pox on board. 131. vii. P. 10.
- Talcot, john, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 72.
- Tannery, the first in plymouth. iii. 178.
- Tapahanuke river, virginia. ix. 110.
- Tapley, john. ii. 176.
- Tapowsas indians. ii. 15.

- Tappan, rev. amos, of kingston, new hampshire. iv. 73. ix. 368.
- Tappan, rev. dr. david. iii. 199. professor. iv. 180.
- Tappan bay. iv. 51.
- Tar, manufacture of, restricted. iii. 187. made at plymouth. 188. in massachusetts. vii. 40.
- Tarpawling cove, description of. iii. 76. 78.
- Tarratines, or eastern indians. ii. 66. a cruel people. 70. said to be cannibals. iii. 127. their wars. v. 30. assault the wigwam of the sagamore of agawain. 145. vii. P. 32. 33. attack saugus. P. 33. keep the indians of massachusetts in fear. ix. 57.
- Tashmuit, its meaning. x. 174.
- Tasquantum, one of the indians betrayed by hunt in the service of capt. mason. ix. 7. carried to england by capt. darmer, and thence to new england with him. 10. or tisquantuin, interpreter to plymouth people. 27. 54. 57. 79. 80.
- Tatapanum. x. 66.
- Tatobam, sachem of the pequots. viii. 124.
- Tauchebatchee district. ii. 18.
- Taunek. iii. 175.
- Taunton, history of, needed. iii. 203. vii. 141. 142.
- Taunton, north purchase. vii. 142.
- Taunton river. iv. 253. 281. vii. 117. 143. 146. 172. 173. x. 35. 66.
- Taupowanog, indian priests. ii. 113.
- Ta-wak-enoës, or three cones, indians, their number and residence. ii. 25.
- Taxation and representation, massachusetts rights in, interfered with by the president and council, appointed by the king, which causes a remonstrance. viii. 179.
- Taxes, the power of levying disputed by watertown people. v. 144. remitted to charlestown. ii. 170. for support of publick worship, laws about. ii. 92. 210. for support of ministers, quarrels about. vi. 412. levied on towns in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. 6. 30. 56. 57. 85. 86. power of massachusetts government to levy, questioned. vii. P. 57. the object of the commissioners from charles ii. suspected to be, among other things, that of laying taxes. viii. 56.
- Tay, isaiah. x. 26. 27.
- Taylor, dr. thomas. vii. P. 42.
- Taylor, timothy. vii. 187.
- Taylor, william. viii. 105.
- Taylor, henry. viii. 105.
- Taylor, james. x. 25. 26.
- Taylor, john. i. 249.
- Taylor, thomas. iii. 119.
- Taylor, mrs. x. 177.
- Taylor, william. x. 178.
- Taylor, william. ii. 186.
- Tea-kettles, first cast of iron at carver. iv. 273. of copper, first used at plymouth. 273.
- Teel, jonathan. ii. 180.
- Teightaquid. vii. 137. its other names. 142. 143.
- Telegraphs. iii. 74.
- Temple, sir thomas. viii. 101. governor of nova scotia. 102. 108.
- Tennessee, east, settlement of. vii. 58. partly abandoned; trustees to govern and decide disputes there. 60.
- Tennessee, west, settlement of. vii. 62.
- Tennessee river. ii. 15.
- Tenney, capt. robert. ii. 180.
- Tensa river. ii. 27.
- Tensas indians, their number and residence. ii. 27.
- Terice, ———, ship-master. vi. 574.
- Tertullian, de velandis virginibus, mentioned. v. 205.
- Tetaukimmo. iii. 25.
- Tetaus indians, a warlike people, their residence, number and warriours. ii. 29.
- Teticut river. iv. 268. 280. See teticut.
- Teton river. ii. 41.
- Texas, province of. ii. 24.
- Thacher, rev. thomas, his "brief guide in the small-pox," &c. mentioned. i. 105. 170. vii. 10. 11.
- Thacher, rev. peter, of milton. viii. 243.
- Thacher, rev. peter, of boston. i. 232.
- Thacher, rev. ralph, of chilmark. iii. 74.
- Thacher, oxenbridge. x. 28.



- Thacher, rev. peter, of middleborough. iii. 169.  
 Thacher, rev. rowland, of wareham. iv. 292. 293.  
 Thacher, oxenbridge, jun. x. 29.  
 Thacher, rev. dr. peter, of boston. ii. 152. sketch of dr. boylston mentioned. 160. iii. 12. 199. formerly of malden; donation of his parish to boston during port bill. ix. 162.  
 Thacher, rev. samuel-c. of boston. i. 232.  
 Thacher, dr james. i. 126. iii. 203.  
 Thames river. iv. 239.  
 Thanksgiving in new england. iii. 135. in massachusetts colony, july 8, 1630. v. 132. for arrival of provisions. 140. vii. P. 18. 20. at boston P. 38. in massachusetts, for the success of german protestants, and safe arrival of ships. P. 61. at boston for the success of the king of sweden, and the arrival of a ship. P. 68. for deliverance from the accusations of morton, sir f. gorges and others, and for the arrival of ships. P. 90. 92.  
 Thaxter, john, of hingham. iv. 221. vii. 122.  
 Thaxter, samuel. iii. 278. vii. 165.  
 Thaxter, rev. joseph, of edgartown, letter from. iii. 71. 72.  
 Thaxter, ———. vii. 123.  
 Thayer, rev. ebenezer, of roxbury. ii. 146.  
 Thayer, abraham. vii. 145.  
 Thayer, rev. ebenezer, of hampton, new hampshire. iv. 78. 188.  
 Thayer, rev. dr. elihu, of kingston, new hampshire. ix. 368.  
 Thayer, rev. dr. nathaniel, of lancaster. i. 230.  
 Thayer, ———. vii. 155.  
 Theakiki river. viii. 251.  
 Theft punished. vii. P. 35. 68. 85. 86.  
 Theophemus. v. 24. 31.  
 Thermometer, state of, at nashaun. iv. 256. at edgartown. 257. in hillsborough county, new hampshire. vii. 67.  
 Thievish harbour, in massachusetts bay, origin of its name. ix. 37. 39.  
 Thomas, william. iii. 185. x. 2.  
 Thomas, william. viii. 106.  
 Thomas, nathaniel. iv. 84. 280.  
 Thomas, nathaniel, esq. iv. 87. 89.  
 Thomas, joseph. iv. 269.  
 Thomas, col. nathaniel. iii. 192.  
 Thomas, dr. william. iii. 192.  
 Thomas, gen. x. 3.  
 Thomas, john. iii. 177.  
 Thomas, hon. joshua. iii. 10. memoir of. x. 1.  
 Thomas, isaiah. i. 139.  
 Thomas, james. vii. 160. 170.  
 Thomas, rev. nehemiah, of scituate. iv. 233. 235.  
 Thomas col. john. iii. 213.  
 Thomas, rev. daniel, of abington. vii. 121.  
 Thomkins, rev. isaac, of haverhill, east parish. iv. 150.  
 Thompson, david. ii. 86. agent at pascataqua. v. 89. sent to pascataqua by plymouth merchants to begin a plantation there; moves to boston bay. 105. 214.  
 Thompson, rev. william, of braintree, requested to go to virginia. vi. 410. accepts the invitation; returns. 410. 411. his death; notice of. 607. vii. 1. 11. 24. 25. viii. 2. 29. 30.  
 Thompson, archibald, of marblehead, drowned. vi. 420.  
 Thompson, simon. viii. 107.  
 Thompson, rev. ebenezer, episcopal minister at scituate. iv. 238. 304.  
 Thompson, major william. ii. 181.  
 Thompson, charles, secretary of congress. ii. 221.  
 Thompson, james. vii. 170.  
 Thompson, rev. john, of berwick. viii. 158.  
 Thompson, hon. isaac, his bills of mortality for middleborough. ii. 261. 263.  
 Thompson, daniel. viii. 46.  
 Thompson, timothy. ii. 175. 176. 177. 180.  
 Thompson, deacon, samuel. ii. 172. 180.  
 Thomson, timothy, jun. ii. 168. 183.  
 Thompson, dr. abraham-r. ii. 178. 180. 181.  
 Thompson, henry. ii. 178.  
 Thompson, ———. iv. 282.  
 Thompson's island. ii. 86. 90.  
 Thorn, ———, of oxford university, expelled. vii. P. 52. 53.  
 Thorncomb, ———, bookseller, of boston, notice of. ii. 104.  
 Thorndike, ———. vii. P. 86.

- Thorndike, israel, purchases and presents to harvard college professor ebeling's library. viii. 268.  
 Thornton, timothy. iii. 261. x. 26.  
 Throat-distemper at haverhill. iv. 134.  
 Throckmorton, john. ix. 170. 197. some of his family killed by indians. vi. 345.  
 Throop, rev. benjamin, moderator of connecticut association. ii. 256.  
 Thrumble, ———. viii. 112.  
 Thunder, first heard by settlers at plymouth. ix. 17. and lightning, in a snow storm, january 18, 1671. vi. 648.  
 Thurston, daniel. viii. 106.  
 Thurston, rev. benjamin, of northampton, new hampshire. iv. 191.  
 Tibbets, samuel. iii. 119.  
 Ticknor, william. iv. 241.  
 Ticonderoga and crown point, expedition against. x. 3.  
 Tidd, john. viii. 46.  
 Tide, remarkable, august 15, 1635. v. 199.  
 Tilden, joseph. iv. 242.  
 Tilden, nathaniel. iv. 240. 241. from tenterden, england, a first settler of scituate, notice of. 242.  
 Tilden, thomas, arrives at plymouth in the ann. iv. 242.  
 Tilden, elizabeth. vii. 147.  
 Tilden, ensign joseph. iv. 225.  
 Tiler, mary. iii. 221.  
 Tiler, hannah, her confessions. iii. 221. 223. 224.  
 Tilley, john. ix. 38.  
 Tilley, edward. ix. 38.  
 Tilley, ———. iv. 260.  
 Tillotson, rev. dr. iii. 211. 233.  
 Tilson, edmond. iii. 184.  
 Tilson, ———. iv. 277.  
 Tilton, ———. iii. 66.  
 Timber in united states. i. 190.  
 Timonius, of constantinople. i. 106.  
 Tinker rock spring. iii. 194.  
 Tinkham. iv. 260.  
 Tinsley, samuel. vii. 144.  
 Tionet. iii. 175.  
 Tippecanoe. ii. 5.  
 Tippen, lieut. his bravery. vi. 632. 633.  
 Tirril, william. vii. 123.  
 Tisbury. iii. 38. 46. 53. 58. 60. salt works. 61. 70. account of; buildings. 73. formerly called middletown. 85. 88. 93.  
 Tisdale, lieut. wounded. ii. 246.  
 Tispaquin attacks bridgewater. vii. 156.  
 Tisquantum. See squanto.  
 Titicut river. vii. 141. 142. 172. See teticut.  
 Titicut indians. vii. 142. 143.  
 Titicut purchase. vii. 144. 145.  
 Titicut parish. vii. 167.  
 Tobacco, first used at salem. ii. 70. not to be taken, on penalty. vii. P. 68. smoked very early by plymouth people. ix. 52.  
 Tockamahamon, an indian employed by plymouth people. ix. 52. 54. 55.  
 Toconock falls. ii. 230.  
 Todd, walter. vii. 93.  
 Toleration in religion, argument against. iv. 26.  
 Tolman, daniel. viii. 46.  
 Tolman, dr. viii. 46.  
 Tomb of the mathers. i. (xix.)  
 Tombigbee river. ii. 16. 19.  
 Tompkins, samuel. vii. 138. 147. 149. 150. 151.  
 Tomson, jacob. vii. 164.  
 Tooth, an uncommon one found near hudson's river. ii. 263.  
 Topsfield, settled. vi. 372. iron manufactured at. 375. church gathered at. 416. 417.  
 Torrey, lieut. james. iv. 240. 243. 250.  
 Torrey, william, clerk of the deputies. iv. 25. lieutenant. vii. 54.  
 Torrey, haviland. iv. 87.  
 Torrey, rev. josiah, of tisbury. iii. 74.  
 Torrey, rev. ———, his lawsuit; judgment in his favour, on the ground that he was an orthodox minister. ii. 199. 200.  
 Torrey, william. iii. 119.  
 Torrey, ———. vii. 123.  
 Tory, joseph. viii. 112.  
 Totman, ———. vii. 123.  
 Towam, its meaning. ix. 56.  
 Towanquatick, sagamore. vi. 657. becomes christian. 658.  
 Towle, jeremiah. x. 177.  
 Town proposed to be built and fortified on boston neck. vii. P. 7. but newtown, now cambridge, is agreed on as the seat of government. P. 8.

- Town brook, in plymouth. iii. 177. 181. 201.
- Town creek, in plymouth. iii. 178.
- Town pond. iv. 62.
- Town river. vii. 171.
- Towns in massachusetts, their authority. v. 235. limited to four miles square; conditions on which granted; method of planting. vii. 38. 40. in massachusetts, alarmed. P. 28.
- Town, grace. x. 177.
- Townsend, penn. ii. 103. iii. 261. x. 25. 26.
- Townsend, rev. jonathan, of needham. ii. 149.
- Townsend, lieut. viii. 156.
- Townsend, daniel. viii. 46.
- Townsend, dr. david. ii. 174.
- Townsend, ———. iv. 179.
- Towraches, or panis, indians, their residence and number. ii. 26.
- Tracy, stephen. iii. 162. x. 57.
- Tracy, ———. viii. 101.
- Tracy, john. x. 68.
- Tracy, nathaniel, of newburyport. ii. 228.
- Tracy, thomas. iv. 169.
- Trade with indians. i. (vii.) generally unfortunate. vi. 444. begun between plymouth colony and the dutch at hudson's river. v. 99.
- Tragabigzanda, or cape ann. i. (iv.) v. 105. vi. 614. 615. See cape ann.
- Training field laid out at boston. iv. 203.
- Training green, at plymouth. iii. 183. 201.
- Trainings, at boston. ii. 107. regulated. vii. P. 26. 72. 73. of capt. underhill's company at boston and charlestown, to be weekly; in other towns, once a month. P. 32. fines for absence from. viii. 231.
- Trapp, ———. iii. 81.
- Trask, capt. v. 109. viii. 146. 236.
- Trask, rev. nathan, of brentwood, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Travelling on the lord's day allowed in certain cases at plymouth. iii. 188.
- Treat, joseph. viii. 115.
- Treaty of granville. ii. 4. 5. 7. 8. between united states and wyandots. ii. 4. between charles i. and louis xiii., surrendering to france canada, laccady, &c. vii. P. 78.
- Trees, manner of raising. i. 192. in virginia, list of. ix. 122. in new england, blossom in may. v. 21.
- Trelany, ———. attempts to plant in the province of maine. v. 224. owns richmond island. vi. 381. his trial at pascataqua. vii. P. 35.
- Trevors, ———. v. 151.
- Trevore, capt. iv. 219. v. 146.
- Tribes of indians, tables of their numbers, warriors, annuities, &c. ii. 12. 13. 20. 30. 39. 44.
- Trickey, rebecca. x. 178.
- Tricks, t. drowned in a fit of drunkenness. vi. 648.
- Trimontain, or boston. i. (xxx.)
- Trinity river. ii. 24. 25.
- Tristan d'acunia, account of, by b. f. seaver. ii. 125. 127.
- Tritons, indians. ii. 40. residence, number and warriors; horses. 41.
- Troop of horse in massachusetts. vii. 56.
- Trott, bernard. viii. 165.
- Trout, in mashpee river. iii. 2. benevolent, fable of. 7.
- Trow lieut. bartholomew. ii. 175.
- Trucking with people out of massachusetts jurisdiction, and with indians, forbidden, unless with permission. vii. P. 1. house, to be kept in every plantation in massachusetts for indians. P. 61.
- True, rev. henry, of hampstead, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Trumbull, william. vii. P. 91.
- Trumbull, gov. jonathan. ii. 219. 221. letter to, from gen. gage. 224. iv. 201.
- Trumbull, joseph. viii. 313.
- Trumbull's history, quoted. iv. 156.
- Truro, where the pilgrims first found and drank new england water. x. 174.
- Trustees of episcopal donations. vii. 167.
- Tryal, ship. v. 129. arrives. 132. vii. P. 10.
- Tryon, ———, of boston. ii. 106. 124.
- Tubbs, william. vii. 138.
- Tuckanuck island. iii. 19. 20. 34.
- Tucke, rev. john, of gosport, new hampshire. iv. 78.



- Tucke, rev. john, of epsom, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Tucker, ———, imprisoned at sacco by mr. vines. vi. 369.
- Tucker, ———, a tailor, of isle of shoals, drowned in a fit of drunkenness. vi. 647.
- Tucker, rev. dr. john, of newbury. iv. 145.
- Tucker, mrs. x. 180.
- Tucker, ichabod, esq. x. 191.
- Tudor, john. viii. 285. 286. letter from president adams. 291.
- Tudor, elizabeth. viii. 286.
- Tudor, hon. william. i. 231. biography of. viii. 285. 325. letter to theophilus parsons. 287. character of t. parsons. 289. appointed judge advocate general. 293. made brevet colonel. 297. offices which he held. 305. letters from gen. washington. 307. from gen. knox. 308. from president adams. 309. 311. 313. letters from fisher ames in congress at new york. 316. 317. 318. 320. 322. about a national bank. 323.
- Tudor, william, jun. esq. x. 191.
- Tufts, rev. joshua, of litchfield, new hampshire. x. 56.
- Tufts, abijah. ii. 178.
- Tufts, deacon amos. ii. 171. 176. 181.
- Tufts, peter. ii. 176.
- Tufts, peter, jun. ii. 177. 179. 180.
- Tufts, joseph. ii. 176. 177. 178.
- Tufts, john, esq. ii. 180.
- Tufts, samuel. ii. 180.
- Tufts, nathan. ii. 181.
- Tufts, daniel. ii. 176.
- Tufts, ———, his museum at plymouth. iii. 177.
- Tunicas indians. ii. 26.
- Tunscas indians, their number and residence. ii. 27.
- Tupper, ———. iii. 14. 16.
- Turbot, found by first settlers near plymouth in abundance ix. 41.
- Turell, rev. ebenezzer, of medford, his detection of witchcraft. x. 6.
- Turkey hills, now lunenburg. i. 183. iii. 104.
- Turkey river. ii. 9.
- Turkey swamps. iii. 163.
- Turkish ship captured near the isle of palma. vi. 424.
- Turner, nathaniel. vii. P. 4. sworn. a freeman. P. 63. captain against the pequots. viii. 131. 231.
- Turner, ———, of charlestown, drowns himself. vi. 421.
- Turner, humphrey. iv. 239. 242.
- Turner, john, sen. iv. 240.
- Turner, ephraim. viii. 105.
- Turner, ———. viii. 112.
- Turner, john. iv. 243.
- Turner, joseph, excused from training. iv. 243.
- Turner, george. vii. 149. 151.
- Turner, major. iv. 130.
- Turner, rev. charles, of duxbury. iii. 177.
- Turner, charles, jun. his account of natardin or catardin mountain. viii. 112.
- Turner, rev. edward, universalist minister at charlestown. ii. 172. 180.
- Turner, rev. john, of kingston, new hampshire. ix. 368.
- Turner, ———. iv. 260.
- Tuskegee indian language. ii. 18.
- Twisden, john. iv. 239.
- "Two miles," in scituate. iv. 236.
- Tybee, british armament arrive at. iii. 238.
- Tyler, abraham. iv. 135.
- Tyler, royall. x. 28. 29.
- Tyler, jonas. ii. 180.
- Tyler, ———. iv. 132.
- Tylly, john. v. 106.
- Tyng, capt. william. iii. 285. treasurer. iv. 24. vii. 54. x. 24.
- Tyng, edward, commissioner. vi. 466. 593. 595. 600. viii. 44. x. 25.
- Tyng, jonathan. viii. 181. 182. x. 54.
- Tyng, sarah, afterward winslow, her donation to schools. iv. 196. her death. 198.
- Tyng, hon. john, dies at the age of 93. iv. 197. x. 28.
- Tyngsborough, sketch of, by rev. nathaniel lawrence; situation and extent. iv. 192. ponds, ferries, soil, wood, stores. 193. fruit trees, roads, mills, taverns, trade and schools. 194. social library, state of society, history. 195. church gathered; inhabitants and deaths. 197.
- Tyng's pond. iv. 193.
- Tyrrell, obadiah. vii. 63.
- Tythes, at first unknown in new england. vi. 551.

## U.

Ulrick, mrs. x. 176.  
 Umpame, indian name of plymouth. iii. 175.  
 Uncas, sachem of mohegins, comes to boston. v. 255. hated by the narragansets. vi. 446. 449. at war with sequasson; attacked by miantonemo; gains a victory over him. 450. captures seven indians. 547. account of his quarrel with miantonemo. vii. 45. 46. examined by the general court at boston. 46. fights with miantonemo. 47. miantonemo taken prisoner, carried to hartford, and put to death, with the consent of the colonial commissioners. 47. 81. ix. 202. the friend of the english against the pequots. viii. 123. 124. 133. 148. 149.  
 Uncertainty of indian history. ii. 3.  
 Uncoway. vi. 455.  
 Underhill, capt. john. iii. 285. brought before the court and church at boston for opinions and bad conduct. vi. 351. 353. goes to exeter and dover. 353. 354. 355. governour of pascataqua; summoned by the court to come to boston. 356. comes to boston. 358. further misconduct at pascataqua. 359. comes again to boston, and, in open assembly, confesses himself an adulterer, &c. 359. 360. sentence of banishment and excommunication taken off on his repentance. 360. takes part in the quarrel between messrs. knollis and larkham. 362. 363. released from censure. 363. leaves pascataqua; goes to boston, and afterwards to the dutch settlements; a brave warrior. 365. assists the dutch. 441. 442. brings sir c. gardiner a prisoner to boston. vii. P. 27. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. P. 29. required to train his company. P. 32. goes with gov. winthrop to satigus and salem. P. 36. 66. prepares his soldiers for an indian war. P. 67. 69. his pay. P. 85. sent against the pequots. viii. 131. 133. 140. 143. his pension from massachusetts. 224. x. 23.

Undertakers of massachusetts, their number and names. vii. P. 2. their losses. P. 9.  
 Uniformity, act of. i. (xxix.)  
 Union bridge. iv. 229.  
 United colonies, reasons of their confederation. vi. 465. 466. and articles of. 467. called a usurpation by the king's commissioners. 92.  
 United States, constitution of, adopted by massachusetts. vii. 161. geography and history of, by professor eheling, referred to. viii. 269. 271. 272. 273. 276.  
 Unkatemi island. iii. 75.  
 Unset bay. iv. 289.  
 Updike family house. ix. 198.  
 Upham, rev. caleb. vii. 164.  
 Urbana. ii. 4.  
 Usher, hezekiah. viii. 44. 90.  
 Usher, john, merchant of boston. ii. 102. viii. 181. 182.  
 Utas indians, their residence, number, and warriors. ii. 29.  
 Utley, samuel. iv. 241.

## V.

Vaccination. i. 123. in america, table of, by dr. francher. iv. 97.  
 Vaccine institution. i. 124.  
 Vaccine inoculation. ii. 160.  
 Vail, jacob, of carver, manufacturer of baskets. iv. 276.  
 Valentine, john, his deposition relative to chief justice sewall's refusal of a habeas corpus. viii. 241.  
 Valentine's day, celebration of, questioned. x. 182. 183.  
 Van swieten, ———. i. 108.  
 Van twilly, gualter, dutch governour of manhatoes. v. 171.  
 Vandyke's paintings. iii. 180.  
 Vane, sir henry, sen. controller of the king's household, opposed to his son's coming to new england. v. 178. of the privy council. 240.  
 Vane, sir henry, jun. governour of massachusetts. i. 194. his house in boston still standing. (xxx.) arrives. iii. 147. iv. 1. v. 177. chosen governour of massachusetts. 233. 240. troubles in massachusetts in his time; returns to england, and is executed at tower hill. 235. 236. gives a feast to the comman-

- ders of vessels in boston harbour. 240. 255. difficulties in obtaining leave to go to england. 257. 258. returns to england. 259. 260. 262. governour of massachusetts. 287. some of his religious notions. 289. difficulties with the ministers. 290. vi. 386. 491. vii. 136. ix. 185. writes to providence plantations. 194. x. 23.
- Vassall, william. iv. 115. 221. 222. 228. of scituate. 240. assistant. 244. 246. account of; an episcopalian. 244. assistant. v. 121. 124. arrives. 133. patentee and assistant, account of his hostility to massachusetts. vi. 500. author of "jonah cast on dry land." 517. 518. associate with the original patentees of new england; an assistant; notice of; goes back to england. vii. P. 14. viii. 97. x. 65.
- Vassall, samuel, assistant. v. 121. subscribes £50 for massachusetts colony. 122. viii. 97. ix. 185.
- Vassall, lieut. john. iv. 225. 241. 244.
- Vassall, judith. iv. 244.
- Vassall, frances. iv. 244.
- Vater, professor, one of the authors of mithridates. ix. 231.
- Vater's mithridates. x. 82. 102.
- Vaughan, dr. william, sends colonists to newfoundland. viii. 226.
- Vaughan, ———. iv. 277.
- Vaux, robert, lives of say and sandison, referred to. viii. 183.
- Veazie, rev. samuel, his house destroyed by fire. iv. 181.
- Vegetables, method of collecting. i. 23.
- Veils, to be worn by salem women, under penalty of noncommunion. v. 117.
- Ven, capt. john, assistant. v. 120. viii. 97.
- Venus, a transit of, observed. x. 79.
- Venus mercenaria. iii. 44.
- Vera cruz. ii. 25.
- Verplanck, gulian-c. esq. x. 192.
- Verrin, ———, of rhode island, forbids his wife to attend roger williams's preaching; difficulties on this account. vi. 337. 338.
- Vesey, ———, merchant. vii. P. 70.
- Vetch, samuel, impeached for trading with an enemy, claims habeas corpus. viii. 240. 242.
- Vicars, ———. x. 182.
- Vinall, stephen. iv. 240.
- Vinall, john. iv. 241.
- Vincennes. ii. 8.
- Vincent, thomas. vii. 188.
- Vincent, ———. iii. 66. 81.
- Vines, richard. iv. 187. agent for gorges at sacco. v. 224. vi. 361. 368. calls a court at sacco; imprisons mr. tucker. 369. 484.
- Vineyard, martha's, or martin's. See martha's vineyard.
- Vineyard sound. iii. 45.
- Vining, george. viii. 171.
- Vining, ———. vii. 123.
- Virginea, the new life of. viii. 199. 227.
- Virginia, indian proceedings in. i. 27. indian commissioners in, slain. 28. indian cruelties in. 30. history of, by capt. smith, extract from; articles necessary to be provided with by those going there. ii. 267. iii. 175. first planted. v. 9. 12. further discoveries of, by gosnold. 10. bounds. 12. north, ancient name. 12. 13. divided into first and second colonies. 13. climate. 19. 20. made a colony separate from new england; patent; settled under london patentees. 35. who negotiate with the plymouth pilgrims for a settlement in their colony. 45. 46. 47. dissensions among. 47. massacre at. 73. letters patent. 84. sends mr. bennet to boston for a supply of ministers. vi. 410. viii. 29. orders all dissenters from the episcopal church to leave the state; massacre of english at, by indians. vi. 411. viii. 30. great mortality at. vi. 412. people brought by capt. newport build jamestown. 203. productions. 203. 204. officers killed and wounded at brad-dock's defeat. 157. colony brought by t. gates and sir g. sommers. 204. confusion in. 205. lord delaware comes out as governour, but returns to england. 206. sir thomas dale brings out additional colonists to, and revives the spirits of the adventurers. 207. 208. early laws; number of people and



- forts; sir t. gates sent with more settlers to. 208. 209. hospital at; poultry, conies, goats, hogs and horned cattle carried there by sir t. dale and sir t. gates. 210. indian slaughter of the whites at, revenged by sir george early. ix. 78. indians become tributary to the english. 117. perfect description of; number of english in. 105. number of kine, horses, &c.; fish, fowls, beasts and fruit. 106. trees, roots, herbs, maize, or virginia corn, bees, tobacco, indigo, hemp and flax, iron ore. 107. wind mills, water mills, horse mills, number of ships that lade there. 103. pitch and tar; mulberry trees for silk worms; vines. 109. profit of raising tobacco; capes, rivers and bay; settlements principally on james' river. 110. smith's map of, referred to; abundance of lime; indians, since the massacre, driven far off, and their king captured by sir william berkeley, governor; want of artificers, &c.; government, consisting of governor, council, and yearly assemblies; has ten counties; churches. 111. ministers, how paid; thought to be near the pacifick ocean, over which it is proposed to visit china; swedes settle there. 112. the dutch at hudson's river, within its limits; attempt of the spaniards to injure; its fruitfulness. 113. furs, gums, silk grass. 114. discouragements; patent taken away by the influence of the spaniards. 114. 115. threatened by indians. 115. trade with new england. 116. indians become tributary to the english. 117. rice succeeds there. 118. cleared land; ploughs; apples; abundance of wild crab apple trees; free schol, founded by benjamin symes. 118. 119. mock birds and parraketoes; list of beasts. 120. of birds and fish. 121. trees and fruits enumerated. 122. list of donations made by towns and individuals in, to boston during its port bill. 159. 162. 163.
- Vobes, or fobes, ———. vii. 151.  
 Vote of harvard college on the death of dr. j. eliot. i. 239.  
 Voyage of capt. smith mentioned. i. (iv.) of discovery, under lieut. kotzebue. iv. 98.  
 Vroe, john. ii. 162.  
 Vulture, sloop of war. iv. 51.
- W.
- Wabash river. ii. 4. 5. 7. 8.  
 Wabinga indians. ii. 6.  
 Wache, thomas de. v. 216.  
 Wachusets, sachems, received under the jurisdiction of massachusetts. vi. 408.  
 Wade, ———, subscribes £50. for massachusetts colony. v. 122.  
 Wade, nicholas. iv. 240.  
 Wade, nicholas. vii. 165.  
 Wadding, rev. ———, imprisoned. i. 56.  
 Wadley, ———, of exeter, suit against, respecting lands formerly conveyed by plymouth council, determined by sir william jones. vi. 617.  
 Wadsworth, william, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 72. viii. 153.  
 Wadsworth, christopher. vii. 138. x. 58. 67. 69.  
 Wadsworth, capt. samuel, of milton, killed by indians. ii. 161. iv. 56. epitaph on. 57.  
 Wadsworth, john. x. 68.  
 Wadsworth, rev. benjamin, of boston. ii. 147. iv. 57.  
 Wadsworth, joseph. x. 27.  
 Wadsworth, john, tutor. i. 231.  
 Wagaus. iv. 292.  
 Wagoner, capt. viii. 157.  
 Wagutuquab pond. iii. 33.  
 Wahgumacut, a sachem of connecticut, comes to boston; offers his territory to be settled by english; at war with pequots; treacherous. vii. P. 25.  
 Wainman, sir ferdinando, comes out to virginia. viii. 206.  
 Wainwright, francis. viii. 107.  
 Wainwright, capt. simon, killed by indians. iv. 130.  
 Wainwright, john. iv. 163.  
 Wait, benjamin, ransoms in canada captives taken by indians. vi. 637. his difficulties. 638. his mohawk guide. 638.  
 Waite, return. viii. 44.

- Wake, sir isaac, makes a treaty between charles i. and louis xiii. vii. P. 52. 78.
- Wakes, forbidden; connected with the consecration of churches. vii. P. 77. 78.
- Wakeman, samuel, sworn a freeman. vii. P. 65.
- Waldo, cornelius. x. 54.
- Waldo, samuel. x. 28.
- Waldrene. See waldron.
- Waldron, william, a vicious man, drowned. v. 222. vi. 528.
- Waldron, richard, commissioner to york. v. 222. vi. 593. 595. 600. viii. 91.
- Wales, colony from, under madoc. ii. 37.
- Wales, ———. vii. 123.
- Walford, thomas. ii. 163. v. 220.
- Walgrave, ———. v. 122.
- Walker, dr. a learned civilian. v. 15.
- Walker, rev. ———, of london. vi. 402.
- Walker, lieut. iii. 126. vii. 55. P. 33.
- Walker, john. ix. 179.
- Walker, robert, his deposition about blackstone's sale. iv. 202. 203.
- Walker, richard. viii. 107.
- Walker, rev. zachariah, of woodbury, connecticut. ii. 132.
- Walker, rev. timothy, of rumford, now concord. iv. 78.
- Walker, nathaniel, } their donation to  
Walker, josiah, } boston during the  
port bill. ix. 161.
- Walker, thomas. x. 180.
- Walker, charles. ii. 249.
- Walker, major timothy. ii. 180. 181. erects an academy at charlestown. 170.
- Walker, samuel. iv. 169.
- Walker, dr. william-j. ii. 178.
- Walklet, ———, sent to suppress a rebellion. i. 70.
- Wallace, mary. x. 178.
- Walley, rev. thomas, of barnstable, i. 176.
- Walley, hon. john. iii. 255. 258. viii. 182.
- Walley, rev. john, of ipswich and bolton. ii. 148.
- Wallingford, thomas. iii. 119.
- Wallis, dennis. viii. 46.
- Walnut hill. ii. 178.
- Walpole, new hampshire, account of. vii. 124. charter, schools, inhabitants, manufactures. 125.
- Walsh, robert. x. 192.
- Walter, rev. nehemiah. ii. 149.
- Waltham, description of. iii. 261. factory. 263. 265. mortality in. 271. morality amongst mechanicks. 264. rivers, pond and brooks. 265. schools. 269. educated men. 269. houses and population. 270. country seats. 272. chronology. 273. contentions. 274. baptisms and marriages. 284.
- Walton, rev. ———. iii. 161.
- Walton, george. v. 223.
- Wampameag, the knowledge of making it taught to indians by the dutch at hudson's river. v. 100. (And see wompomeag.) at kennebeck. 168. white, and blue. 171.
- Wampanoags indians. iii. 83. or pawkunnawkuts, their place of residence. ix. 236.
- Wampatuck, josiah, sale of land. vii. 144. alias chickatabut, sale of land. x. 70. See chickatabut.
- Wampum, joseph, anecdote of. iv. 292.
- Wampum's war. iv. 292.
- Wanachniamak, sachem. iii. 33.
- Wanami indians. ii. 6.
- Wanascotucket. iv. 267.
- Wancenquag river. iv. 265.
- Wanconquag brook. iv. 272. 287.
- Wankinquag brook. iii. 184.
- Wannerton, thomas. v. 215. 220. vi. 484. killed. 485.
- Wanton, edward. iv. 241. 245.
- Wanton, michael. iv. 245.
- Wantowaganash. iv. 292.
- Wapanachki, or abenaki. ix. 240.
- Waqua point. iii. 41.
- Waquash, an indian convert to christianity, poisoned by indians. vi. 652.
- Waquoit. iii. 53.
- War, general, of indians against colonists. iii. 86.
- Warburton, rev. dr. ii. 215.
- Ward, rev. john, of haverhill, england. iv. 139.
- Ward, rev. nathaniel, of ipswich. iii. 141. 143. iv. 2. 138. 139. author of the simple cobbler of agawam. 139. or theodore de la guard, author of the simple cobbler of agawam. v. 155. 193.

- Ward, andrew. vi. 308.  
 Ward, rev. john, of haverhill, massachusetts. iv. 126. his salary. 133. 134. 138. character. 139. 170. 171. vi. 416. viii. 2. poetry on. 2.  
 Ward, ———, of salem, drowned. vi. 421.  
 Ward, enoch. iv. 90. 94.  
 Ward, gen. artemas. iv. 210.  
 Ward, rev. ephraim, of brookfield. x. 161.  
 Ward, rev. nathan, of plymouth, new hampshire. iii. 112. iv. 78.  
 Ward, capt. ii. 232. 233.  
 Ward, william. x. 44.  
 Ward, artemas. ii. 177.  
 Ward, rev. jonathan, of alna. iii. 111.  
 Ward, ———. iv. 277.  
 Wardwell, john. x. 178.  
 Ware for taking fish on charles river. vii. P. 59.  
 Ware, rev. henry, jun. x. 192.  
 Wareham. iii. 15. 16. business of. 164. history of. iv. 285. incorporated. 285. rivers, brooks and ponds. 286. dwellings. 287. ship yards; whale fishery; vessels burnt by the british. 288. islands, fish, mills and factories. 289. population. 289. 290. sheep; deer. 290. effects of gale of 1815. 292. church history. 292. its bills of mortality; history. 293. purchased of the indians. 293.  
 Wareham, rev. john, of dorchester. ii. 91. removes to hartford. iii. 151. v. 133. 135. 186. 189. removes to windsor, connecticut. vi. 307. vii. P. 4. sworn a freeman. P. 29. 66. notice of. P. 40. forms a congregational church at plymouth, england. P. 41. ordained episcopally in England. P. 41.  
 Warner, john. ix. 182.  
 Warner, daniel. vii. 107.  
 Warner, samuel. x. 54.  
 Warner, madam. x. 176.  
 Warner, ensign. ii. 231.  
 Warner, col. daniel. vii. 67. 70.  
 Warrants may be issued by any assistant. vii. P. 31.  
 Warren, maine. iv. 71.  
 Warren, or so-wames, rhode island, claimed by plymouth colony. ix. 180.  
 Warren, richard. v. 100. ix. 38.  
 Warren, joseph. iii. 184. iv. 293.  
 Warren, capt. james. iv. 87. 89.  
 Warren, dr. joseph, killed at bunker hill. i. 110. ii. 167. a monument erected to his memory by the freemasons; its inscription. 171. 172. master of freemasons' lodge for north america. 172. x. 78. 79.  
 Warren, mrs. iv. 248.  
 Warren, dr. john. i. 116. ii. 165. viii. 166.  
 Warren, isaac. ii. 181.  
 Warren, dr. john-c. i. 116. 247.  
 Warren, john, his cotton manufactory at middlebury, vermont. ix. 128.  
 Warren, isaac. ii. 178.  
 Warwick, countess of, appoints s. bradstreet her steward. vii. P. 15.  
 Warwick, earl, his letter of congratulation to gov. winthrop. v. 169. a patentee of new england. 217. his grant of connecticut. vi. 309. 310. confirms rhode island privileges. vii. 88. ix. 185.  
 Warwick, bark, arrives at pascataqua. vii. P. 7. arrives at nantasket; sails for virginia. P. 58.  
 Warwick, planted. vi. 335. or shawomet. 512. court of commissioners held at. vii. 82. 87. 91. king's commissioners hold a session at. 92. 93. 103. or shaw-o-met, planted. ix. 182. 188. gorton and others captured at. 199.  
 Washas tribes. ii. 26.  
 Washbrook. iv. 55.  
 Washburn, john. vii. 138. 147. 153. x. 69.  
 Washburn, john, jun. vii. 138. 147. 149. 157. 164.  
 Washburn, john. vii. 149.  
 Washburn, samuel. vii. 149. 157.  
 Washburn, joseph. vii. 149. 165.  
 Washburn, thomas. vii. 149. 157.  
 Washburn, jonathan. vii. 149.  
 Washburn, john. iii. 208.  
 Washburn, nehemiah. vii. 159. 160.  
 Washburn, ebenezer. iii. 213.  
 Washy, ———, a chinese. iii. 197.  
 Washington, east tennessee, erected into a county of this name, and called washington district. vii. 61.  
 Washington society at charlestown. ii. 172.  
 Washington benevolent society at charlestown. ii. 173.



- Washington, george. i. 111. ii. 227. 229. funeral solemnities in honour of, at charlestown. 173. thinks highly of gen. lincoln. iii. 235. letter to gen. lincoln. 236. iv. 96. aid de camp to gen. braddock; behaviour at braddock's defeat, at which he was wounded. viii. 154. 155. his letter to gov. j. baydoin. 193. letter to w. tudor. 307. takes command of the troops at cambridge. x. 3.
- Washington hall at charlestown, description of. ii. 181.
- Washington hall association. ii. 181. incorporated. 163. 181.
- Washpecoate indians, their residence and number. ii. 41.
- Washpetong indians, or gens de ficules, their number and residence. ii. 40. 41.
- Washqua point. iii. 19. 72. 73.
- Washqua outlet. iii. 40.
- Wason, thomas. x. 177.
- Wataspool. iv. 266. 267.
- Watauga river, settlement on. vii. 58.
- Watches to be kept every night at dorchester and watertown. vii. P. 25. 26. and at boston, roxbury and charlestown. P. 32.
- Watepahatoes indians, their residence and number. ii. 38.
- Water, strong, not to be sold without leave; indians not to have. vii. P. 93.
- Waterhouse, dr. benjamin. i. 116. ii. 174.
- Waterman, richard. ix. 170. 182.
- Waterman, rev. thomas, of charlestown, instructor. ii. 171.
- Waterman, ———. iv. 282.
- Waters, richard. viii. 106.
- Watertown. i. (ix.) church, the 7th in new england, gathered; settlement by sir r. saltonstall; described by johnson. ii. 94. iii. 136. early plan of. 268. church covenant. iv. 155. v. 135. meeting at, for the purpose of fixing on a seat of government. 136. disturbed by richard brown. 142. meeting of the court at, to settle difficulties. 143. settled. 158. quarrel with newtown people about a meadow. 177. ordination at. 276. fish in its pond swim to the shore and die. vi. 648. people settle weathersfield, connecticut. 307. taxed £11 out of £50 in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. taxes for the support of ministers. P. 6. fire at. P. 3: 6. 27. meeting at, about a place for a fortified town. P. 7. alarm created by. P. 23. 25. 26. difficulties in church. P. 31. 38. tax. P. 31. 57. accident at one of its trainings. P. 63. fire at. P. 66. objects to pay taxes. P. 57. erects a ware on charles river, where many shad are taken. P. 59. tax. P. 85. viii. 230.
- Watsham, capt. viii. 156.
- Watson, william. viii. 229.
- Watson, george. iv. 293.
- Watson, ———, a lawyer of boston. ii. 114.
- Watson, elkanah. iii. 189.
- Watson, john. iv. 87.
- Watson, george. iii. 169. 170. 196. iv. 163.
- Watson, abigail. iv. 163.
- Watson, richard, bishop of landaff, letter to dr. eliot. i. 250.
- Watson, john. iii. 187.
- Watson, elkanah. x. 192.
- Watts, rev. dr. isaac. ii. 187. letter from. x. 39.
- Waumbekket, its meaning. ii. 267.
- Waumbekketmethna, or white hills. ii. 266. 267.
- Wave, its meaning. x. 171.
- Wawepoonseag, its meaning. x. 171.
- Wawwunnekesseag, its meaning. iv. 232.
- Way, henry. vii. P. 68. his shallop captured and men killed by eastern indians; loses another shallop. P. 63.
- Way, richard, sergeant. vi. 546.
- Way of the churches in new england, by rev. mr. cotton. v. 182.
- Wayne, gen. anthony. ii. 227.
- Wayquoit bay. iii. 1. 2.
- Wayte, thomas. viii. 107.
- Weas indians, their annuity. ii. 7. number. 12.
- Weathersfield, connecticut, planted. v. 177. or pauquiaug, settled. vi. 307. difficulties in its church. 313. 314. planted. viii. 122. people killed by pequots. 132.
- Webb, goodman. viii. 231.
- Webb, rev. joseph, of fairfield. iv. 297.

- Webb, rev. john, of boston. i. 232.  
 Webb, jotham. viii. 46.  
 Webb, samuel. x. 178.  
 Webster, noah. iv. 201.  
 Webster, dr. redford. iv. 52. 63.  
 Webster, william. iii. 113.  
 Webster, stephen-p. iv. 169.  
 Webster, daniel. x. 192.  
 Webster, mores. iv. 89. 169.  
 Wecapaug brook. vii. P. 59.  
 Wecketuket brook. iii. 163.  
 Wecketuket, its meaning. iii. 163.  
 Wedderdroppers, a name of anabaptists. vi. 624. 626.  
 Weeks, rev. holland, of abington. vii. 120.  
 Welby, william. viii. 199.  
 Weld, rev. thomas, of roxbury. iii. 129. 130. arrives. v. 188. sent to england. vi. 371. vii. 61. 64. P. 68. sworn a freeman. P. 72. first minister of roxbury. P. 64. notice of; returns to england. P. 77. viii. 27.  
 Weld, joseph. vi. 491.  
 Weld, john, killed by indians. vi. 631.  
 Weld, rev. thomas, of dunstable. x. 54.  
 Weld, mary. x. 55.  
 Weld, sarah. viii. 197.  
 Weld, rev. habijah, of attleborough, his note on attleborough. i. 185. x. 55.  
 Weld, rev. ———, of braintree. iv. 278. x. 161.  
 Welden, capt. robert, buried with military honours. vii. P. 20.  
 Welles, isaac. iv. 240.  
 Welles, samuel. x. 27. 28.  
 Wellingsly brook. iii. 178.  
 Wellingsly. iii. 184.  
 Wellington, rev. charles. iii. 269.  
 Wells, ———, grant to, in narraganset, cancelled. vii. 104.  
 Wells, ———, (weld, edmund?) vii. 29.  
 Wells, john, sen. of roxbury. iv. 236.  
 Wells, comes under the jurisdiction of massachusetts. vi. 543. men killed at, by indians. 631. 633.  
 Wells at martha's vineyard. iii. 48.  
 Wellsted, leonard, agent for planting a colony in newfoundland. viii. 225.  
 Welsh, mrs. x. 180.  
 Welsh, samuel. x. 180. 181.  
 Welsh, dr. thomas. ii. 175. his eulogy, on hon. n. gorham. 177. 178.  
 Welsh indians. ii. 36.  
 Welsh bible, supposed to have been found among indians. ii. 37.  
 Welstead, rev. william. iii. 280.  
 Wenatuket river. iii. 163.  
 Wenaumet neck. iv. 254.  
 Wendell, hon. oliver. ii. 48.  
 Wenham. ii. 119. 25th church gathered. vii. 52.  
 Wenham pond. iv. 272. 283.  
 Wennanetonomy. vii. 77.  
 Wensley, ———. iii. 180.  
 Wentworth, sir. thomas, deputy of ireland. v. 240. made a viscount on sabbath day. vii. P. 64, "corrections."  
 Wentworth, william. v. 223.  
 Wentworth, benning, governour of new hampshire, grants the charter of amherst, new hampshire. ii. 250. and of lancaster, new hampshire. iii. 103.  
 Wentworth, mark-h. iii. 119.  
 Wentworth, john, governour of new hampshire, farm at wolfeborough. iii. 119.  
 Wentworth, thomas. iii. 119.  
 Wentworth, george. iii. 119.  
 Wepeckets islands. iii. 77.  
 Wepquish family. iii. 8.  
 Wequash accompanied capt. mason in the pequot war. viii. 138.  
 Wermall, joseph. iv. 240.  
 Wesappicoasset. iv. 258.  
 Wesko. iii. 21. 34.  
 Wesquobs river. iv. 291.  
 Wessaguscus, or weymouth, taxed £2 out of £50 in massachusetts. vii. P. 1. its tax. P. 31. 60. its tax. P. 57. viii. 230.  
 Wessagusquasset, or weymouth. v. 72.  
 Wessagusquasset indians. v. 32.  
 West augustus, or weymouth. v. 192.  
 Westbrook, in sudbury. iv. 55. 62.  
 West chop. iii. 73. 93.  
 West florida. ii. 26.  
 West india company. i. 140.  
 West indies, touched at, by gosnold. v. 10. early trade with massachusetts. 239. enjoy liberty of conscience. vi. 534.  
 West meadow brook. vii. 171.  
 West mud pond. viii. 174.  
 West newland. iv. 228. 244.

- West point. i. 68. surrenders to grantham. 77. iv. 51.  
 West river. iv. 121.  
 West springfield. iii. 247.  
 West sunape pond. viii. 174.  
 West, capt. francis, appointed admiral by the plymouth council, arrives in new england. v. 86. ix. 78.  
 West francis. vii. 138. x. 57.  
 West, john. viii. 106.  
 West, thomas. viii. 106.  
 West, peter. iii. 209.  
 West, elisha. iii. 208.  
 West, rev. thomas, of rochester. iv. 263. x. 32.  
 West, rev. dr. samuel, of boston. iii. 70. iv. 261. viii. 160. x. 37.  
 West, benjamin, iv. 261. x. 37.  
 West, ———. iii. 66.  
 Westcott, stukely. ix. 170. 197.  
 Westfield. vi. 592.  
 Westfield river. viii. 168. formerly agawam river. x. 41. 42.  
 Westminster assembly of divines, their advice to new england churches. vi. 409. its confession of faith approved by synod at cambridge and boston. vi. 623.  
 Weston, lord treasurer, a principal man in the ministry of charles i. dies a papist. vii. P. 79. 80. his chapel consecrated by bishop laud; his daughter married by bishop laud to the duke of lenox. P. 79. 80.  
 Weston, t. v. 47. 48. his difficulties at weymouth. 87. his plantation there. 72. And see weymouth.  
 Weston, francis. ix. 170. 182.  
 Weston, edmund. vii. 138. x. 57.  
 Weston, rev. daniel, of gray. iv. 181.  
 Westwood, william. vi. 308.  
 Wetherell, rev. william, of scituate. iv. 235. 236.  
 Wethrell, james. iii. 192.  
 Wetmore, rev. james, of north haven, embraces episcopacy. ii. 129. 131. iv. 299.  
 Wewantic, its meaning. iii. 164.  
 Wewantic river. iv. 271. 286. 289. 294.  
 Weweni, its meaning. iii. 164.  
 Wewensett. iv. 266. 267.  
 Wey, henry, killed by indians. v. 193. See way.  
 Weyborne, thomas. iv. 240.  
 Weymouth, capt. thomas, on the coast of america; takes savages; names pentecost harbour; discovers kennebeck river. v. 11. 12. 14.  
 Weymouth, england, a ship from, arrives with passengers and cows; the former settle in dorchester. vii. P. 69.  
 Weymouth landing. vii. 115.  
 Weymouth river. vii. 117.  
 Weymouth pond. vii. 118.  
 Weymouth path. vii. 121.  
 Weymouth, or wessagusquasset, mr. weston's plantation at. v. 72. hanging at. 77. patent of. 72. sufferings at; people steal from the indians. 77. plantation broken up. 78. (And see weston, t.) settled. 158. or west augustus, church gathered at. 192. difficulties in its church. 274. 275. fifteenth church gathered. vii. 10. or wessaguscus. vii. P. 1.  
 Whakepee pond. iii. 2.  
 Whale, the ship. v. 129. attacked by dunkirkers. 140. arrives at charlestown. 131. vii. P. 10. 19. arrives with passengers and cows. P. 61.  
 Whale fishery of new bedford, its origin and increase. iii. 18. of nantucket. 29.  
 Whales, killed on the south side of long island. vi. 668. 669. 673. very numerous on the coast of new england. ix. 20. and near cape cod. 36.  
 Whalley, major-general. i. 73. 75. and goffe, arrive; warrant sent by charles ii. to arrest them. iv. 158. viii. 67. 68.  
 Wharburton, gen. viii. 157.  
 Wharton, phillip lord. vi. 349. ix. 185.  
 Wharton, richard. viii. 105. 181. 182.  
 Wheat, meal 14s. sterling a bushel in massachusetts. vii. P. 10. bounty on in massachusetts, 1764. viii. 199. at middlebury, vermont, gives forty bushels to the acre. ix. 137. price of, there. 138.  
 Wheeler, rev. william-w. episcopal minister at scituate. iv. 238. 304.  
 Wheeler, jonas. x. 178.  
 Wheeler, elisha. ii. 181.  
 Wheelwright, rev. john, excites disturbance. i. 194. v. 280. with



- others, plants exeter, new hampshire. v. 242. dispute with massachusetts about the title to hampton. 242. 261. ordered out of massachusetts jurisdiction. 276. convicted of sedition and contempt of authority. 282. petitioners in his favour disfranchised, or expelled massachusetts. 282. 283. most of whom went to rhode island. 283. some of his opinions. 286. difficulties about settling him in boston church. 286. 287. settled at mount wollaston. 287. takes part with rev. mr. cotton. 293. his questions to the synod at cambridge. 299. settles exeter, new hampshire. 223. vi. 351. goes to wells. 351. 365. petitions to be relieved from banishment. 366. 367. granted. 368. removes to hampton; goes to england; returns; is settled at salisbury, and dies. 368. settled at hampton. 544. vii. 24.
- Wheelwright, john. x. 28.
- Whetcomb, simon, assistant. v. 121. subscribes £85 for massachusetts colony. 122. viii. 97.
- Whetcombe, robert. iv. 241.
- Whetcombe, james. viii. 44. 105.
- Whipcutt, (nipnet?) iii. 268.
- Whipping, illegally, an assistant fined for. vii. P. 6.
- Whipple, ———. iv. 25.
- Whipple, john, jun. viii. 107.
- Whipple, john, 3d. viii. 107.
- Whipple, joseph. viii. 107.
- Whipple, john. viii. 197.
- Whirlwind at cape ann. vi. 623.
- Whiston, john. iv. 241.
- Whiston, dr. ii. 265.
- Whitaker, william, taken prisoner by indians. iv. 128.
- Whitaker, abigail. x. 179.
- Whitbourne, capt. his book about newfoundland ordered to be distributed; copy right granted him by the king. viii. 223. its recommendation by the privy council. 224.
- Whitcomb, rev. elihu, of sacco. iv. 188.
- White, john, his voyage. v. 9.
- White, rev. john, of dorchester, england. v. 87. 88. requests rev. mr. higginson to come to new england. 112. persuades people to settle at cape ann. 106. a founder of massachusetts. 107. 108. 116. said to have drawn up the declaration of massachusetts planters on their leaving england. 126. viii. 119.
- White, ———, an english lawyer, advises the first settlers of new england. ii. 63.
- White, william, his letter to gov. winthrop. iv. 198. 200.
- White, william. iv. 132. 133. 170. 171.
- White, emanuel. iv. 302.
- White, resolved. iv. 240. 244.
- White, peregrine. iv. 244. born near cape cod and before settling at plymouth; of marshfield. vii. 122. 147. ix. 37.
- White, rev. nathaniel. viii. 31.
- White, paul. vii. 106.
- White, ———, of boston. ii. 103.
- White, samuel. iv. 259.
- White, john. x. 26.
- White, joseph. ii. 144.
- White, benjamin. ii. 144.
- White, rev. john, of gloucester. ii. 156.
- White, benjamin, jun. ii. 144. 153.
- White, rev. ebenezer, of attleborough. i. 185.
- White, major edward, of brookline. ii. 156. 157.
- White, timothy. iv. 168.
- White, peter, emancipates his slaves. viii. 187.
- White, rev. ebenezer, of marshfield. ii. 156.
- White, samuel, his donation to brookline. ii. 150.
- White, benjamin. ii. 157.
- White, col. ebenezer. iv. 302.
- White, joseph. ii. 153.
- White, john. iv. 169.
- White, mrs. ann, her donation of church plate to brookline. ii. 153.
- White, caleb. ii. 158.
- Whith, john. iv. 169.
- White, leonard. iv. 169.
- White, ———. ii. 142. iii. 102. iv. 132. 260. 294. vii. 123.
- White-angel, ship, arrives at sacco with provisions, hogs, goats, and cows. vii. P. 30. lands heifers at boston. P. 32. 34.
- White river. ii. 3. 36. 41.
- White top mountains. vii. 58.
- White earth river. ii. 42.
- White hills, indian names of. ii. 266.

- iv. 185. visited by darby field, an irishman, in 1642; described. vi. 381.
- White island pond. iii. 181. 288.
- White flat. iii. 195.
- White's pond. iv. 231.
- Whiten, ———. vii. 123.
- Whitfield, rev. henry, comes to guilford, connecticut. vi. 319. 327. letter from. 655. vii. 21.
- Whitfield, rev. george. iii. 209. 210.
- Whiting, ———. v. 221.
- Whiting, rev. samuel, of lynn, marries a daughter of oliver st. john. i. (xxiv.) iv. 2. 3. v. 194. viii. 98. 112.
- Whiting, ———, of connecticut. vi. 521.
- Whitman, thomas. vii. 148. 152.
- Whitman, robert. viii. 107.
- Whitman, john. vii. 149. 152. 157.
- Whitman, nicholas. vii. 150. 152.
- Whitman, ebenezer. vii. 150. 152.
- Whitman, thomas. vii. 150.
- Whitman, jonas. vii. 170.
- Whitman, levi. vii. 170.
- Whitman, kilbourn. vii. 170.
- Whitman, benjamin. vii. 170.
- Whitman, ezekiel. vii. 170.
- Whitman, capt. isaac. vii. 157.
- Whitman, noah. vii. 170.
- Whitman, eliab. vii. 170.
- Whitman, nathaniel. vii. 170.
- Whitman, daniel. vii. 170.
- Whitman's mill. vii. 140. 172.
- Whitmarsh, ezra. iv. 90. 94.
- Whitmarsh, ———. vii. 123.
- Whitney, rev. aaron, of petersham. vii. 177.
- Whitney, rev. peter, of northborough. his history of worcester county, quoted. iv. 234. notice of. vii. 177.
- Whitney's hill. iii. 274.
- Whiton's tavern. vii. 117.
- Whitson bay. iii. 80.
- Whittelsey, rev. samuel, of wallingford, embraces episcopacy. ii. 129. iv. 298. 299.
- Whittemore, capt. samuel. viii. 46.
- Whittemore, rev. aaron, of pembroke, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Whittier, thomas. iv. 133.
- Whittier, john. iv. 169.
- Whittier, ———. iv. 132.
- Whittingham, william, gathers the first congregational church at geneva. iv. 163.
- Whittingham, lieut. vii. 55.
- Whytt, ———. i. 108.
- Wickataquay pond. iii. 39.
- Wickenden, william. ix. 170. 197. elder at providence, form of a deed to him. 198.
- Wickes, john, a petitioner with gorton and others to king's commissioners. viii. 68. ix. 182.
- Wickes, francis. ix. 198.
- Wickford, broken up by indian war. vi. 312.
- Wicks, ———. iii. 66.
- Wideman, capt. viii. 156.
- Wiggan, capt. thomas, agent at pascataqua. v. 89. his letter about an indian murder. 142. agent of lords say and brooke at pascataqua. 168. 217. 220. 221. his purchase near pascataqua. 221. commissioner to kittery. vi. 542. 555. assists massachusetts against the accusations of gorges and mason. vii. P. 85.
- Wight, rev. john-b. viii. 166. of east sudbury. iv. 62.
- Wignall, ———, his fine. viii. 231.
- Wigwams burnt; punishment for. vii. P. 21. 22.
- Wilbore, samuel. ix. 179.
- Wilbraham. iii. 247.
- Wilcox, ———. ix. 198.
- Wild amonoostuk river. iii. 106.
- Wild pigeons, peculiarities of. iv. 256.
- Wild turkeys at plympton. iv. 269.
- Wilder, edward. iv. 221.
- Wilder, rev. john, of attleborough. i. 185.
- Wilford, capt. taken by beverly. i. 63.
- Wilkins, dr. i. 159.
- Wilkins, richard, of boston. ii. 100. 101. 118. 123. 124. character of his wife. 124.
- Wilkins, mrs. comfort. ii. 119.
- Wilkins, rev. daniel, of amherst, new hampshire. ii. 250. iv. 74. 77. viii. 176.
- Wilkins, john. ii. 250. iv. 74.
- Will, the blind, saganmore at pascataqua, killed by mohawks. vi. 630.
- Will, black, an indian, hung for the murder of w. bagnall. vii. P. 83.
- Willard, capt. simon. iii. 156. vii. 55. major. viii. 88.
- Willard, george. iv. 240.
- Willard, rev. samuel, of boston. ii. 101.

- Willard, josiah, secretary of massachusetts. iv. 136. viii. 267.
- Willard, rev dr. john. iii. 104.
- Willard, rev. dr. joseph, tutor. i. 231. president. iv. 149.
- Willard, rev. joseph, of wilbraham. iii. 104. and of lancaster, new hampshire. 104.
- Willet, thomas. iv. 100. 293.
- William iii. his liberality of sentiment. ii. 211.
- William, the ship, arrives at plymouth and scituate. iv. 219. vii. P. 85.
- William and francis, ship. v. 129. arrives. 132. vii. P. 10. 61.
- William and jane, ship arrives, with passengers and cows. vii. P. 88.
- Williams, rev. roger, of salem. i. 196. baptized. 209. v. 116. 164. a rigid separatist. 165. causes disturbance in massachusetts. 166. in 1634. 202. arrives. 202. sketch of; writes the "bloody tennent;" refuses to join the church in boston; goes to salem; goes to plymouth; remains two years as an assistant to rev. ralph smith. 203. returns to salem. 204. difficulties there by his singular opinions. 205. 207. persuades people to cut the cross from the king's colours. 205. maintains that it is unlawful for an unregenerate man to pray, or to hear a minister of the church of england, and that magistrates must not meddle with matters of the first table. 206. vii. P. 26. banished. v. 207. removes to providence; becomes an anabaptist. 207. turns seeker. 208. admonished by the boston church. 208. opposes quakers. 209. cause of his banishment. 209. preaches against the patent. 210. denies lawfulness of taking land from indians. 210. refuses to take oath of fidelity. 211. 250. 251. 253. plants providence. vi. 335. is rebaptized by holman, who is rebaptized by williams. 338. sick of his second baptism. 339. refuses to commune, except with his wife; deserted by some of his followers. 340. letter from the duke of northumberland and others to the governor and assistants of massachusetts, requesting their good offices. 348. governor of rhode island and providence; publishes against the quakers. 350. makes peace with the dutch and indians. 442. 461. 463. deposition. vii. 75. beloved by cononicus and others. 75. 76. 93. and gov. winthrop, obtain providence and other lands from cononicus and others. 76. P. 4. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. P. 29. notice of; arrives in 1631. P. 47. 48. 70. his letter to gov. s. bradstreet, concerning a book he was about to publish, and an answer to gorton, which he had relinquished. viii. 196. 198. arrives; minister at salem; removes to plymouth, and back to salem. ix. 168. banished, and removes to seaconk; warned to depart by plymouth colony; goes to moshasuck; his grant there from cononicus. 169. settles with twelve persons; names providence, and forms a church there. 170. extremely poor. 171. purchases a large tract of land of cononicus. 172. obtains a grant of rhode island from mr. coddington and others. 180. his "key unto the languages of america," quoted. 231. 237. acquainted with the indian languages. 177. his original government for providence. 183. sent agent to england to procure a patent for rhode island and providence. 184. introduces liberty of conscience into rhode island. 190. letter to providence about freedom. 191. quoted. 193. 195. forms a congregational church, which soon becomes baptist. 196. his key, &c. referred to. x. 111, et post. 139.
- Williams, francis, at pascataqua. v. 89. sent over to take charge of salt works at pascataqua, becomes governor there. 219. 220.
- Williams, thomas, his ferry at winnesimet; his charges. vii. P. 29.
- Williams, robert. ix. 170.
- Williams, john, of scituate. iv. 239.
- Williams, ———, of dorchester. vi. 423.
- Williams, thomas. iii. 184. 185.
- Williams, providence, said to be the



- first child born at providence. ix. 174.
- Williams, thomas, of taunton. vii. 162.
- Williams, isaac. viii. 106.
- Williams, rev. john, of deerfield. iii. 281.
- Williams, nathaniel, his dissertation on the small pox. i. 107. dies. 107.
- Williams, rev. warham, of waltham. iii. 273. 280. 281.
- Williams, rev. abraham, of sandwich. iii. 15.
- Williams, leonard. iii. 269.
- Williams, rev. ebenezer, of falmouth. iv. 180.
- Williams, rev. samuel. iii. 269.
- Williams, rev. simon, of windham, new hampshire. iv. 78.
- Williams, col. iv. 211.
- Williams, william-t. esq. x. 192.
- Williamson, ———. viii. 156.
- Willis, richard. vii. 152.
- Willis, william, of scituate. iv. 240. 247.
- Willis, john. vii. P. 69.
- Willis, henry. vii. 152.
- Willis, nathaniel. vii. 138. 147. 149. 152. 157.
- Willis, john. vii. 138. 144. 147. 149. 150. 152. 157. 159. 163.
- Willis, lawrence. vii. 152.
- Willis, john. vii. 149. 150. 157.
- Willis, john. vii. 169.
- Willis, elkanah. vii. 149.
- Willis, comfort. vii. 149. town troop-er; his manuscript. 157.
- Willis, benjamin. vii. 149. 157. 161. 169.
- Willis, rev. eliakim. ii. 46. of malden, donation of his parish to boston. ix. 161.
- Willis, rev. zephaniah, of kingston. iii. 212. 213. vii. 152. 170.
- Willis, ———. iv. 260.
- Willis' pond. iv. 55.
- Willoughby, francis, his conversation with dr. childs. vi. 518. deputy governour. 581. 591. viii. 88. 97. 98. 99.
- Willy, ———, of boston. ii. 103.
- Wily, lieut. edward. viii. 44.
- Wilmot, new hampshire, incorporated. viii. 175.
- Wilson, dr. gives £1000 for the purchase of artillery for new england. [but judge davis—i. (xxix.)—says rev. john wilson.] ii. 59. vii. 56. brother of rev. j. wilson; mistake about his gift of £1000 to massachusetts, corrected. P. 39. an account of a part of his gift of ammunition to mass. viii. 228. 229.
- Wilson, rev. john, of boston, first minister. ii. 88. 171. kindness to indians. iii. 127. goes to england and returns. 130. 131. 285. iv. 45. 156. of sudbury in england. v. 133. 135. 140. appoints gov. winthrop and deputy gov. dudley to prophesy during his absence. 140. 168. 171. 180. vii. P. 25. ordination in england considered valid. v. 185. 190. religious opinions. 289. speech about religious differences in the churches. 290. 291. meets with opposition. 291. visits sagamore john in his last sickness, and takes home his child. 651. sermon on the power of magistrates in ecclesiastical matters. 536. dies; character. 604. vii. 28. 41. 128. P. 4. 5. 6. object of his going to england. P. 38. mistake about his arrival corrected. P. 39. son of dr. w. wilson, prebendary of st. paul's, etc.; nephew of archbishop grindall. P. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. returns from england. P. 61. sworn a freeman. P. 63. his meeting-house and home begun at boston by a subscription of £120 in the congregation of boston and charlestown. P. 65. 66. 69. goes on foot to plymouth with gov. winthrop. P. 70. 71. formerly teacher, is ordained pastor of boston church. P. 73. instructs indians. viii. 29. 98. 229.
- Wilson, theophilus. viii. 107.
- Wilson, sarah, her confessions. iii. 221. 224.
- Wilson, rev. john, of chester, new hampshire. iv. 78. ix. 363.
- Wilson, james. x. 176.
- Wilson, capt. jonathan. viii. 46.
- Wilson, jason. viii. 46.
- Wilson, jabez. viii. 46.
- Wilson, thomas. viii. 46.
- Wilson, luey. x. 180.
- Wilson, hubbard. iii. 103.
- Wilton, davis. viii. 231.
- Wilton, new hampshire, its ministers and church. viii. 177.

- Winchester, john. ii. 144. 146.  
 Winchester, josiah. ii. 144.  
 Winchester, henry. ii. 144.  
 Winchester, josiah, jun. ii. 144.  
 Winchester, john, jun. ii. 144.  
 Winchester, elhanan, notice of. ii. 147.  
 Winchester, rev. jonathan, of ashburnham. ii. 157.  
 Winchester, rev. elhanan, jun. his writings and character. ii. 147.  
 Winchester, isaac. ii. 158.  
 Winchester, ———. ii. 142.  
 Winchester, new hampshire, its ministers and churches. ix. 367.  
 Wincob, john, plymouth patent from the virginia company made in his name. v. 47.  
 Windmill, the first at scituate. iv. 224. at boston, corn sent to be ground at, from pascataqua. vii. P. 70.  
 Windmill hill, in boston. v. 196.  
 Windebank, ———, secretary. v. 151. 153. a papist. P. 80.  
 Windows, at plymouth, made of paper dipped in linseed oil. ix. 63.  
 Windsor, connecticut, or mattaneaug, or cufchankamaug, settled. vi. 307. a trading house of plymouth people at. vii. P. 95. settled. viii. 122.  
 Wine, duty on; imported into boston in great quantities. vi. 520.  
 Wine islands, early trade with massachusetts. v. 239.  
 Winebago lake. ii. 10.  
 Winebago indians. ii. 9. 10. 13. their ferocity and number. 10.  
 Wing, john. iv. 259. 302.  
 Wing, ———. iv. 260.  
 Wingate, rev. paine, of hampton falls, new hampshire. iv. 78.  
 Wingate, joshua. iv. 169.  
 Winipie lake. ii. 11. 38. 40. 42. 44.  
 Winipiseogee river. iii. 100.  
 Winipiseogee lake. iii. 110. 115. its trout and islands. 118. iv. 128.  
 Winna, its meaning. iv. 275.  
 Winnatuckset brook. iv. 268. 275.  
 Winnatuxet brook. iv. 280.  
 Winnatuxet meadows. iv. 284.  
 Winnetuxet. vii. 172.  
 Winniconet, or hampton, planted. v. 242.  
 Winnicot river. iv. 190.  
 Winnicot mills. iv. 191.  
 Winnisimmet. vi. 531. its tax for the support of ministers. vii. P. 6. its tax. P. 31. 57. 60. viii. 230. ferry, its charges. vii. P. 29.  
 Winnyuckquett. vii. 137.  
 Winslow, edward. i. 108. governour of plymouth colony. 170. ii. 67. relation, quoted. iii. 81. 177. 180. 184. iv. 87. 92. "hypocrisie unmasked," referred to. 107. book against s. gorton. 116. 118. 120. agent for plymouth to england. v. 91. brings the first cattle to plymouth. 67. 73. 94. 100. 168. 179. vi. 661. goes to england to answer complaints of morton and gardiner. 662. commissioner. 467. publishes in england the "salamander," in favour of massachusetts. 502. 517. hearing before the lords commissioners. 507. vii. 117. arrives. P. 61. sent to england to take the place of mr. allerton, who had been discharged for breach of orders. P. 64, "corrections." P. 83. comes to boston about a company to trade at connecticut. P. 94. sent to england. viii. 7. ix. 38. letter from plymouth, describing the first harvest, and advising new comers what to bring. 60. probably the author of the journey to packanokik. 73. his good news from new england, or relation of things remarkable in the plantation of plymouth. 74. 79. x. 59. an agent to treat with massachusetts about union of four colonies. 61. 62. 65. 66. 68. 69.  
 Winslow, john. iii. 174. iv. 93. vii. 153. viii. 105.  
 Winslow, josiah, governour of plymouth. vi. 556. 664. vii. 143. 144. 162. 190. (prince's advertisement.) x. 2. his funeral at publick expense. x. 66. 70.  
 Winslow, kenelm. iv. 259.  
 Winslow, susanna. vii. 153.  
 Winslow, mercy. vii. 155.  
 Winslow, hon. isaac. iii. 180. vii. 165.  
 Winslow, job. iv. 259. 260.  
 Winslow, gen. john, of marshfield. iii. 177. 180. iv. 284.  
 Winslow, isaac. i. 214.  
 Winslow, edward, jun. iii. 176.

- Winslow, madam sarah, formerly sarah tyng, her donation, iv. 196. 198.
- Winslow, gen. john, of boston. ii. 186.
- Winslow, richard. viii. 115.
- Winslow, ———. iv. 260, 294.
- Winston, rev. ———. vii. P. 12.
- Winter, severe in 1632. ii. 165. cold in massachusetts. iii. 130. in new england. v. 20. vii. 33. late in 1630. v. 138. severe in mississippi valley. vii. 64. of 1630, sets in very cold. P. 7. very severe in massachusetts. P. 75. 76.
- Winter hill. ii. 163.
- Winter, ———. v. 224.
- Winter, john. iv. 241.
- Winter harbour. v. 16. vi. 642.
- Winthrop, adam, ancestor of the family. vii. P. 11.
- Winthrop, adam, a lawyer in the time of henry viii. vii. P. 11. his brother has committed to him the papers of philpot the martyr, in the time of queen mary. vii. P. 11.
- Winthrop, adam, father of first gov. john. vii. P. 11.
- Winthrop, john, governour of massachusetts i. (xxii. xxix.) his journal referred to. (xxix.) 169. ii. 260. first governour of massachusetts. 87. grants an order to robert keine and others. 185. arrives at charlestown. 164. iii. 66. kindness to indians. 127. 128. 132. journal quoted. 175. deputy governour. iv. 1. governour. 21. 110. 126. 155. 157. 169. letter from william white. 198. 200. manuscript journal discovered. 200. 201. 203. plan of watertown. iii. 266. 268. v. 8. 109. chosen governour of massachusetts colony on board the arbella at southampton. 124. his farewell. 125. 128. arrives in the arbella at salem. 130. goes in search of a place of settlement. 131. removes to boston. 133. 134. builds a house in boston. 136. 140. goes to watertown to settle disputes. 143. 148. 149. letter to gov. w. bradford about sir c. gardiner. 150. 168. vii. P. 27. letter of congratulation from earl warwick. v. 169. builds the bark "blessing of the bay." 171. deputy governour. 233. governour. 236. 237. 259. removes the evils caused by sir h. vane. 236. presented with £200 by the church of boston. 261. attention paid to him in his journeys. 261. ordered to send home the charter of new england to england. 268. which he declines. 269. 271. religious opinions. 289. governour. vi. 372. 373. 499. 518. deputy governour. 374. troubled by hingham men. 374. writes to lord say. 377. opposes the claim of the deputies to judicial authority; treatise on arbitrary government. 401. president of the commissioners of the united colonies. 462. letter to, from r. barton, in behalf of gorton's company at shaomet. 511. denies right of appeal to england. 514. dies; notice of. 519. governour. vii. 12. 16. 35. 44. deputy governour. 51. and roger williams, obtain providence and other lands from cononicus and others. 76. 125. 126. magistrate of massachusetts. 129. manuscript journal found in old south steeple. 184. first governour of massachusetts; with the colony of the isle of wight; his manuscript; his place of residence in boston. 190. with the colony of 1500 people at the isle of wight. (prince's advertisement.) P. 1. 3. 5. 6. 7. 8. 20. 23. 28. one of the five undertakers. P. 2 removes to boston. P. 6. notice of; a lawyer; a justice of peace in england at eighteen years of age; his estate; first member of the church in charlestown and boston. P. 11. 12. 21. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 30. appointed to prophesy in boston. P. 25. chosen governour by general court of massachusetts. P. 28. 30. 31. 32. 34. 35. launches his bark, the "blessing of the bay," on the 4th of july, 1631. P. 31. builds at newtown, but removes back to boston, which produces uneasiness in some. P. 36. 37. loses a child; his wife arrives in massachusetts. P. 37. goes, with others, to watertown, to settle church difficulties. P. 31. declines to receive presents, though he receives no salary. P. 47. 59. 60.



61. 63. 64. 65. with the assistants, summons watertown people for their refusal to pay taxes. P. 57. receives a grant of conant's island, or governour's garden. P. 58. takes order about the apprehension and trial of the murderers of walter bagnal. P. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 72. 73. reconciled to deputy gov. dudley. P. 66. visits plymouth. P. 70. 71. 84. 85. 86. visits nantasket, and resolves not to fortify there; accident at. P. 84. loss by the wreck of capt. pierce's ship. P. 87. he, with massachusetts government, are discharged from the accusations of gorges, gardiner and others, and commended by sir t. jermin. P. 89. his letter to gov. bradford. P. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. grant of £100 made to, for charges of office. P. 93. viii. 1. 6. 11. 14. dies. 16. 228. 229. 234. ix. 168. 200. x. 70. 77. 173. his letter from henry dunster about harvard college. 187.
- Winthrop, mrs. iv. 77. wife of governour winthrop of massachusetts, arrives. vii. P. 27.
- Winthrop, john, first governour of connecticut. iv. 156. 199. sent by the court to plant ipswich. v. 161. goes to england. 180. arrives with power from lords say and brook to settle and govern connecticut, which he begins. 177. 178. goes agent to england and obtains a charter for connecticut. vi. 310. 311. arrives in massachusetts. vii. P. 37. sworn a freeman of massachusetts. P. 58. assistant. P. 60. 61. 63. 65. 66. 68. 72. 91. 92. first governour of connecticut. P. 69. begins the plantation of agawam with twelve men. P. 84. 86. assistant. P. 85. 93. his letter from sir richard saltonstall. viii. 42. correspondent and friend of sir robert boyle. 49. agent in england. 56. advice about invasion of nova scotia. 101.
- Winthrop, stephen. iv. 77. recorder. vi. 491.
- Winthrop, henry, arrives in the talbot; drowned the day after. v. 131.
- Winthrop, william. vii. P. 66.
- Winthrop, fitz-john, governour of connecticut. iv. 161.
- Winthrop, wait. viii. 181. 182.
- Winthrop, adam. iii. 261. x. 26.
- Winthrop, adam. x. 27.
- Winthrop, professor john. viii. 277. 313. x. 77. 79.
- Winthrop, james, judge. viii. 277. x. 57. biography of. 77.
- Winthrop, william, of cambridge. ii. 177. viii. 265. x. 191.
- Winyaw. iii. 168.
- Wippanaps indians. ii. 66.
- Wise, rev. john, first minister of chebacco (ipswich) author of a book on the new england churches. viii. 166.
- Wise, henry. viii. 166.
- Wiswall, rev. ichabod. iii. 190. 221. iv. 84. 86. agent in england. x. 68.
- Wiswall, rev. samuel, of edgartown. iii. 71.
- Wiswall, peleg, instructor. i. 230.
- Wiswall, noah. viii. 46.
- Witch, one rocks a vessel twelve hours in charlestown harbour. vi. 531. one capitally punished. 530.
- Witchcraft, recantations of its confessors. iii. 221. punished by death in rhode island. vii. 79. detection of. x. 6.
- Withington, rev. ebenezer, of plympton. iv. 270.
- Wobsacuck, its meaning. ix. 92.
- Woburn, settled by charlestown people; church gathered at. vi. 408. 23d church gathered at. vii. 38. 51. form of its church covenant. 41.
- Woenuncke, its meaning. iv. 275.
- Wolaston, capt. owner of mount wolaston, afterwards braintree. v. 102. vii. 24. See mount wolaston.
- Wolcot, henry. vii. P. 4.
- Wolf river. ii. 34.
- Wolf traps. iii. 184.
- Wolfe, gen. ii. 237. anecdote of. iii. 192. 193.
- Wolfe's cove. ii. 237.
- Wolves, numerous in massachusetts. vii. P. 6. 9. reward offered for killing. P. 6. viii. 232. distress the inhabitants of plymouth. iii. 184.
- Women, to wear veils at salem, under penalty of noncommunion. v. 117. exercise their gifts in boston. 304.
- Wompanoog indians. v. 32.

- Wompatuck, josiah, sachem of matta-  
keeset. iv. 222.
- Wompissacuck, its meaning. iv. 275.
- Wompompeag not made by indians  
of nantucket. iii. 35. See wam-  
pampeag.
- Wonasquam, indian town, account of.  
ii. 122.
- Woncenquag, its meaning. iv. 275.
- Wonder-working providence, by ed-  
ward johnson, referred to. i. (xxv.  
xxx.) reprinted. ii. 49. 95. iii.  
123. 161. iv. 1. 51. vii. 1. 58.  
viii. 1. 39.
- Wood's "new england prospect," re-  
ferred to. iv. 296. x. 175.
- Wood, henry. iv. 277.
- Wood, stephen. iv. 277.
- Wood, anthony. i. 163. 164. his  
letter to rev. dr. i. mather. vii.  
187.
- Wood, anthony, of ipswich. viii.  
108.
- Wood, rev. abraham, of chesterfield,  
new hampshire. iv. 60.
- Wood, rev. dr. sannel, of boscawen,  
new hampshire. iii. 112. x. 73.  
75. 76.
- Wood, nathan, and company, their  
grist mill at middlebury, vermont.  
ix. 127.
- Wood, price of, at martha's vineyard.  
iii. 53.
- Wood's hole. iii. 75. iv. 252.
- Woodale, william. ix. 182.
- Woodberry, john, at naumkeag. v.  
107. 109.
- Woodbridge, rev. john, of andover.  
iv. 138. viii. 14. vi. 416.
- Woodbridge, john. viii. 106.
- Woodbridge, benjamin. viii. 106.
- Woodbridge, rev. timothy. ii. 128.
- Woodbridge, col. iii. 237.
- Woodbury, samuel. viii. 46.
- Woodcock, william. viii. 105.
- Woodham, john. viii. 107.
- Woodman, rev. joseph, of sanbornton,  
new hampshire. iii. 112.
- Woodmansey, john. viii. 105.
- Woods, rev. dr. leonard. ii. 186.
- Woodstock. iii. 178.
- Woodville, george. i. 121.
- Woodward, edward. viii. 107.
- Woodward, thomas. ii. 144.
- Woodward, capt. viii. 157.
- Woodward, thomas, his gift of church  
plate to brookline. ii. 154.
- Woodward, mary, her gift of church  
plate to brookline. ii. 154.
- Woodward, jane. x. 180.
- Woodworth, walter. iv. 239.
- Woodworth, benjamin. iv. 229.
- Woollen cloth ordered by general  
court of massachusetts to be manu-  
factured. v. 238.
- Woolman, john, writes against slavery.  
viii. 183. 190. 191.
- Woolrich, ———. viii. 231.
- Woosamequen, or massasoit, chief  
sachem of the wompanoogs. v. 33.  
or ousamequin. vii. 140.
- Wooster, col. david, his letter to j-  
trumbull about new haven. ii.  
217.
- Worcester, rev. noah. iii. 108.  
112.
- Worcester, rev. thomas, of salisbury,  
new hampshire. iii. 108. 112. viii.  
178.
- Worcester turnpike. i. 180.
- Worcester county, history of, referred  
to. vii. 178.
- Worms destroy corn in massachusetts  
in 1632. vii. P. 65.
- Wormskild, a danish naturalist iv.  
98.
- Worstenhouse, sir john, one of the  
virginia company. v. 47.
- Worth, capt. iii. 167.
- Worth, ———. iii. 66.
- Woster, rev. ———. vii. 18.
- Wrifford, ———. iv. 89.
- Wright, nathaniel, assistant. v. 121.  
viii. 97.
- Wright, richard. vii. P. 60. his  
pinnacle blown up. v. 195. vii. P.  
62.
- Wright, capt. viii. 157.
- Wright, abigail. x. 177.
- Wright, ———. iv. 284.
- Wroth, sir thomas, a patentee of new  
england. v. 217.
- Wuckan. ii. 10.
- Wutohkekum, its meaning. x. 174.
- Wuttatash, its meaning. x. 174.
- Wuttatashmuit, its meaning. x. 174.
- Wyandots indians. ii. 3. 6. 12. mis-  
sion to receive an annuity from  
united states. 4. iv. 68.
- Wyer, peter, clerk of the writs at  
york. vi. 596.
- Wyer, david. ii. 178.
- Wyman, capt. ii. 146.
- Wyman, seth. ii. 176. 180.

Wyman, capt. nehemiah. ii. 180.  
Wywatick creek. iii. 44. 45.

## Y.

Yale college, difficulties at, on account of the episcopal controversy. ii. 137. hoped to be sound in doctrine in case of a change in our mother harvard; "groans out ichabod." 297.  
Yanktons indians, their residence, number and warriors. ii. 140. their horses. 41.  
Yarmouth. vii. 13.  
Yates, j. van ness, esq. x. 192.  
Yattasies indians, their residence and numbers. ii. 24.  
Yazoos indians. ii. 15.  
Yazon river. ii. 16.  
Yeardley, capt. ix. 111  
Yearly, sir george. ix. 114.  
Yellow fever among indians. iii. 91.  
Yellow medicine river. ii. 41.  
Yellow stone river. ii. 36.  
Voghum, capt. x. 85.  
York, or agamenticus, comes under jurisdiction of massachusetts. vi. 543. order and declaration of massachusetts general court for the government. 594. court of commissioners meet with difficulty at; men there refuse obedience to massachusetts commissioners. 597. indian murders at. 631. 633.

York, archbishop of. v. 153.  
York, duke of. i. 140. obtains a grant of new york, martha's vineyard, nantucket, and other islands. iii. 85.  
York, ———, of boston. ii. 104. 124.  
Yorkshire, former name of province of maine. vi. 584.  
Yorktown, siege of. iii. 245. iv. 96.  
Yorktown, or york, maine. v. 153.  
Young, sir john, subscribes £50 for massachusetts colony. v. 122. viii. 97.  
Young, welcome. vii. 170.

## Z.

Zane, sally. viii. 185.  
Zane, isaac. viii. 186.  
Zane, robert, disowned by the "friends" for opposing slavery. viii. 186.  
Zanesville. ii. 4.  
Zeisberger, rev. ———, referred to x. 104, et post.  
Zeno, a negro. x. 178.  
Zion's saviour, wonder-working providence of. See sion's saviour, &c.  
Zouche, lord, a patentee of new england. v. 217.  
Zouche, sir edward, a patentee of new england. v. 217.

## OFFICERS OF THE SOCIETY.

*Continued from Vol. I. p. 13.*

## PRESIDENTS.

Christopher Gore, . . . . 1818.  
John Davis, . . . . 1818.

## STANDING COMMITTEE.

James Winthrop, . . . . 1821.  
John Davis, . . . . 1818.  
Thomas L. Winthrop, 1810.  
Abiel Holmes, . . . . 1813.

VOL. X.

51

James Freeman, . . . 1812.  
John Pierce, . . . . 1813.  
James Savage, . . . . 1818—1820.  
William Tudor, . . . 1820.  
Francis C. Gray, . . . 1821.

## TREASURERS.

Josiah Quincy, . . . . 1820.  
James Savage, . . . . 1820.



## CORRESPONDING SECRETARIES.

John Eliot, . . . . . 1813.  
Abiel Holmes, . . . . 1813.

## RECORDING SECRETARIES.

Joseph Mac-kean, . . . . 1818.  
Charles Lowell, . . . 1818.

## LIBRARIANS.

Joseph Tilden, . . . . . 1814.  
James Savage, . . . . 1814—1818.  
Nathaniel G. Snelling, 1818—1821.  
Elisha Clap, . . . . . 1821—1823.  
William Jenks, . . . . 1823.

## CABINET KEEPER.

Redford Webster, . . . 1810.

## COMMITTEES OF PUBLICATION.

*1st Volume.*

John Davis,  
Redford Webster,  
Alden Bradford,  
John Pierce.

*2d Volume.*

Abiel Holmes,  
Thaddeus M. Harris,  
Josiah Quincy,  
Joseph Mac-kean.

*3d Volume.*

James Freeman,  
Alden Bradford,  
Josiah Quincy,  
James Savage.

*4th Volume.*

John Davis,  
Joseph Mac-kean,  
William Tudor,  
James Savage.

*5th Volume.*

Abiel Holmes,  
Joseph Mac-kean,

*6th Volume.*

Abiel Holmes,  
Joseph Mac-kean.

*7th Volume.*

John Davis,  
Abiel Holmes,  
Joseph Mac-kean,  
William Tudor.

*8th Volume.*

Abiel Holmes,  
Alden Bradford,  
Elisha Clap,  
James Savage.

*9th Volume.*

James Freeman,  
John Pickering,  
William Tudor,  
James Savage,  
Francis C. Gray.

*10th Volume.*

Abiel Holmes,  
John Pickering,  
James Savage,  
Benjamin R. Nichols.

---

*Table of Contents, Index of Authors,  
List of Officers, &c.*

James Freeman.

*Chronological Table.*

James Bowdoin.

*General Index.*

James C. Merrill,  
James Bowdoin,  
James Savage.

## MEMBERS DECEASED SINCE THE PUBLICATION OF THE FIRST SERIES.

## RESIDENT MEMBERS.

Josiah Bartlett, M. D.  
 Rev. William Bentley, D. D.  
 Rev. Joseph S. Buckminster.  
 Rev. John Eliot, D. D.  
 Rev. William Emerson.  
 Caleb Gannett, Esq.  
 Hon. Benjamin Lincoln.  
 Professor Mac-kean.  
 Rev. Stephen Palmer.  
 Eben Parsons, Esq.  
 Professor Peck.  
 James Perkins, Esq.  
 Isaac Rand, M. D.  
 Hon. Caleb Strong.  
 Hon. Joshua Thomas.  
 Hon. William Tudor.  
 Rev. Peter Whitney.  
 John Williams, Esq.  
 Hon. James Winthrop.

## CORRESPONDING MEMBERS.

Benjamin S. Barton, M. D.  
 Elias Boudinot, LL. D.  
 President Dwight.  
 Professor Ebeling.  
 Anthony Fothergill, M. D.  
 Ebenezer Hazard, Esq.  
 John C. Lettsom, M. D.  
 Rev. David Mac-clure.  
 David Ramsay, M. D.  
 Benjamin Count Rumford.  
 Rev. Benjamin Trumbull, D. D.  
 Hon. Jonathan Trumbull.  
 Bishop Watson.  
 President Wheelock.  
 Jonathan Williams, Esq.  
 Dr. Hugh Williamson.  
 Caspar Wistar, M. D.

## ERROURS CORRECTED.

Vol. I. p. 81. l. 9. read *Strawberry Bank*, and *Nathaniel Rodgers*. p. 87. l. 6. from bottom, r. *Lankton*. p. 92. l. 17. for *M. r. At.* p. 94. l. 7. for *How's*, r. *Howe's*. p. 95. l. 4. r. *Tracy*. p. 108. l. 24. r. *Gelston*. p. 170. l. 9. strike out the comma after *Morton*, and insert it after *days*. r. *children*. p. 171. l. 13. for *towards*, r. *touching*. p. 174. l. 19. for *primer*, r. *firmer*. p. 181. l. 14. for 1400, r. 14000.

Vol. II. p. 107. l. 4. from b. for 1630, r. 1636. p. 281. l. 14. from b. for *February*, r. *June*.

Vol. III. p. 32. l. 11. r. *there are*. p. 173. l. 27. for *the*, r. *we*. p. 243. l. last, for *Army*, r. *America*.

Vol. IV. p. 14. l. 15. for LXII. r. XLII. p. 85. Note, l. 4. from b. r. *Reyner*. p. 90. in the list of schoolmasters, after 1713, add as follows—

1717 *Samuel Osborn*  
 18 *Ichabod Wiswall*  
 19 *Nathan Prince*  
 21 *Edward Jackson*  
 30 *Isaac Lothrop, jun.*  
 33 *Joseph Kent*

p. 91. Note, l. 10. from b. r. *Rickard*. p. 95. Note, l. 4. from b. for *time*, r. *town*. p. 98. l. 21. r. *Ezscholz*. p. 103, l. 2. from b. for *addition*, r. *edition*. p. 149. l. 4. from b. for *the late President Willard*. r. *Rev. Joseph Willard, afterwards settled at Boxboro'*. p. 155. l. 7. from b. for 1630. r. 1631. p. 157. l. 4. from b. for

*Morris*, r. *Norris*. p. 235. beginning at l. 12. from b. read as follows—

*Rev. William Wetherell*, Sept. 1645,  
died 9 April, 1684.

*Thomas Mighill*, 15 Oct. 1684,  
died 26 Aug. 1689.

*Deodat Lawson*, Nov. 1694,  
dismissed Sept. 1698.

p. 240. l. 7. from b. and p. 247. l. 4. from b. for *Willis*, r. *Wills*. p. 251. Note, l. 3. from b. for *Charles' Neck*, r. *Great Neck*. p. 252. l. 23. for 8000 r. 3000. p. 253. l. 2. r. *Ram Island*. p. 255. Note, r. *Richard Sparrow*. p. 264. l. 25. r. Sept. 23. p. 267. l. 3. from b. r. *pertained*. p. 268. l. 20. for *three*, r. *there*. p. 274. l. 6. from b. r. *north-east*. p. 275. l. 7. r. *Aunkuck*. p. 277. l. 2. for *Burrows*, r. *Barrows*. l. 11. from b. r. to *Tiverton*. p. 284. l. 15. for *was*, r. *were*. p. 288. l. 12. for the *Vineyard*, r. *Harwich*. p. 290. l. 4. for *families*, r. *houses*. p. 292. l. 1. for *Wantoo*, r. *Wuttoo*. l. 2. from b. for *Röwland*, r. *Roland*.

Vol. V. p. 111. l. 2. for *Perise*, r. *Peirse*; so Hubbard spells *Peirce*. p. 129. l. 7. for *argued*, r. *agreed*. l. 14. for *mariners*, r. *masters*. p. 138. l. 18. for *Garn*, r. *Garrett*. p. 241. l. 2. for *aboard*, r. *abroad*. p. 245. l. 2. for *Fothead*, r. *Forrett*. p. 248. l. 11. for *F. P. r. E. P. i. e.* Edward Palmer.

Vol. VI. p. 322. l. 1. *walt?* *crank*. p. 323. l. 9. for *Dead*, r. *Red*. p. 337. l. 7. and p. 243. l. 10. and 26. for *Eason*, r. *Easton*. p. 370. l. 8. for *coaction*, r. *coercion*. p. 388. l. 2. for *transient*, r. *transcendent*. p. 394. l. 2. for *free*, r. *true*. l. 4. for *nine*, r. *four*. p. 399. l. 7. for *caution*, r.

*conceive*. \*p. 502. l. last, for *had*, r. *held*. p. 503. l. 23. for *vanity*, r. *variety*. p. 504. l. 5. for *our*, r. *your*. p. 505. l. 5. for *despised*, r. *dashed*. p. 506. l. 5. for *difference*, r. *distance*. p. 509. l. 3. for *next neighbours*, r. *just rights*. p. 511. l. 9. from b. r. *humble request*. p. 648. l. 7. from b. for 1676. r. 1670. There are many other errors, of names and dates, in Hubbard's History; but they are omitted, because it may be they were in his original manuscript, as well as in the copy, from which our impression was taken.

Vol. VII. p. 117. Note, l. 4. from b. for *Marshfield*, r. *Mansfield*. p. 119. l. 18. for *Pembroke*, r. *Hanover*. p. 138. l. 11. for *Frisk*, r. *Irish*.

Vol. VIII. p. 182. l. 6. and 7. Daniel Smith and Nathaniel Clarke were of Plymouth colony.

Vol. IX. p. 61. l. 2. from b. of the text, for *othus* r. *others*, and erase the note. In Eliot's Grammar, Notes, p. xix. l. 9. for *Nacama*, r. *Nekama*. p. xxiii. l. 4. from b. for *conjunction*, r. *adverb*. p. xxvii. l. 14. for *I abtschi*, r. *Iabtschi*. p. xxxv. l. 6. from the b. in the text, for *getannellowitall*, r. *getunittowitall*. p. xl. l. 24. for *to honour*, r. *to be honoured*. l. 8. from b. for *awemens*, r. *amemens*. p. xlvii. l. 27. for *meal*, r. *meat*.

---

Other Errours are noted in Vol. I. back of Table of Contents. Vol. II. back of Title Page. Vol. III. back of Table of Contents. Vol. IV. p. 74. 302. Vol. VIII. p. 328. Vol. IX. back of Table of Contents.



## CONCLUSION OF THE TWENTIETH VOLUME.

THE Massachusetts Historical Society have now completed Twenty Volumes of their collections, containing three hundred and eighty-one Articles in the First Series, and two hundred and ninety-two, in the Second Series. In the General Tables of Contents, annexed to the First and Second Decades, these Articles are arranged, either in chronological or geographical order, according to their subjects. Another arrangement of the Historical Papers, in which the numbers should be placed under the head of the Countries and States to which they belong, would be convenient to those, who are disposed to consult these volumes. As it will not occupy much room, we give it as follows.

## NORTH AMERICA.

- I. Series. 9.  
II. Ser. 144.

## CANADA.

- II. Ser. 108. 135

## CAPE BRETON.

- I. Ser. 73. 75. 76.

## NOVA SCOTIA.

- I. Ser. 77

## UNITED STATES.

- I. Ser. 83—93. 94. 96. 97. 104—106.  
109. 113—118. 122. 123. 125. 127.  
130. 134.  
II. Ser. 121. 126—132. 145. 162.  
163.

## NEW ENGLAND.

- I. Ser. 72. 75. 76. 129.  
II. Ser. 14.

## MAINE.

- I. Ser. 17. 100. 119.

## NEW HAMPSHIRE.

- I. Ser. 52.  
II. Ser. 149. 164. 168.

## MASSACHUSETTS.

- I. Ser. 10—15. 18. 23—35. 37—39.  
41—48. 62—65. 67—71. 78—82.  
94. 95. 98. 99. 101—103. 107. 110  
—112. 120. 121. 124. 126. 128. 132.  
133.  
II. Ser. 15. 16. 18—26. 30. 32—34.  
37—39. 47. 48. 50. 59—86. 88—  
92. 97. 99. 103—118. 120. 122—  
125. 127. 136. 139—143. 148. 150  
—153. 160. 161. 167.

## RHODE ISLAND.

- I. Ser. 21. 36. 40. 49—51. 54—61.  
131.  
II. Ser. 31. 40—46. 49. 51—58. 70.  
93. 96. 98. 101. 137. 138.

## CONNECTICUT.

- I. Ser. 20. 53. 89. 90. 108. 115.  
II. Ser. 27—29. 154—159. 166.

## NEW YORK.

- I. Ser. 22. 82. 96.  
II. Ser. 165.

## PENNSYLVANIA.

- I. Ser. 83—85.  
II. Ser. 100. 102. 146. 147.

## MARYLAND.

- I. Ser. 74.

## VIRGINIA.

- I. Ser. 66. 83—86.  
II. Ser. 13. 17. 36. 94. 95. 134.

## TENNESSEE.

- II. Ser. 133.

## GEORGIA.

- II. Ser. 119.

The following Numbers, classed under other heads in the General Tables of Contents, relate *in part* to the History of the Countries and States, under which they are arranged.

## NEWFOUNDLAND.

- I. Ser. 135. 250.

## CANADA.

- I. Ser. 252—258.

## NOVA SCOTIA.

- I. Ser. 259—262.  
II. Ser. 196.

## UNITED STATES.

- II. Ser. 189. 197. 214. 215.

## NEW ENGLAND.

- I. Ser. 364—369. 371.  
II. Ser. 210. 279.

## MAINE.

- I. Ser. 264—266. 268. 269. 272. 273.  
II. Ser. 181. 201.

## NEW HAMPSHIRE.

- I. Ser. 275. 276. 278.  
II. Ser. 225.

## MASSACHUSETTS.

- I. Ser. 144. 145. 153—155. 157. 158.  
162—167. 172. 175—177. 188. 203.  
279—283. 285—287. 290. 291. 294  
—298. 300—302. 306. 308. 309. 315.  
317. 319. 320. 327. 340.  
II. Ser. 11. 12. 170. 172. 175. 177.  
183. 184. 188. 233. 234. 236. 238—  
240. 242. 247. 254—257. 259—261.  
265. 270. 271. 278.

## RHODE ISLAND.

- I. Ser. 148. 149.

## CONNECTICUT.

- I. Ser. 345. 346. 349.  
II. Ser. 273. 274.

## NEW YORK.

- II. Ser. 213.

## JAMAICA.

- I. Ser. 370.

## SURINAM.

- I. Ser. 357.

The following Numbers relate *in part* to

## THE INDIANS.

- I. Ser. 10. 11. 20. 24. 25. 27—34. 39.  
40—48. 72. 74. 82. 84. 96. 250.  
269. 272. 273. 279. 286. 290. 301.  
302. 308—311. 313. 316. 317. 319.

327. 329. 333. 334. 336. 337. 340. 343. 345. 346. 349. 352. 353. 355 —358.	NATURAL HISTORY.
II. Ser. 15. 16. 23. 29. 36. 37. 41. 49. 67. 95. 96. 98. 99. 101. 106. 107. 117. 118. 133. 137. 181. 216. 233. 236. 254. 256. 257. 259. 260. 265. 270. 271.	I. Ser. 10. 66. 222. 235. 250. 260. 263. 266. 267. 270. 278. 279. 284. 287. 301. 308. 310. 312—314. 316. 319. 321—324. 328. 329. 332. 337. 339. 343. 350. 351. 355—358.
The following Numbers relate in part to	II. Ser. 14. 15. 36. 99. 207. 208. 216. —224. 226. 227. 232. 252—254. 256. 259—263. 265. 266. 270. 271. 276. 277.

END OF THE SECOND DECADE.







